

4° B. gr. 200 h (4

J. F. Welch Williams

Apr: 22 1870

~~copy~~ with index gratis attached

357

245

[Bible, NT.]

THE

NEW TESTAMENT

OF OUR LORD AND SAVIOUR

JESUS CHRIST,

In the Original Greek:

WITH

INTRODUCTIONS AND NOTES,

BY

Christopher
CHR. WORDSWORTH, D.D.

CANON OF WESTMINSTER;

PROCTOR IN CONVOCATION FOR THE CHAPTER; VICAR OF STANFORD IN THE VALE, BERKS,
AND RURAL DEAN IN THE DIOCESE OF OXFORD.

THE GENERAL EPISTLES, BOOK OF REVELATION,
AND INDEXES.

NEW EDITION.

LONDON:

RIVINGTONS, WATERLOO PLACE.

1862.

A/68/181

NEW TESTAMENT

OF THE NEW AND OLD TESTAMENT

NEW TESTAMENT

NEW TESTAMENT

LONDON :

GILBERT AND RIVINGTON, PRINTERS,

ST. JOHN'S SQUARE.

Bayrische
Staatsbibliothek
München

THE GENERAL PRINCIPLES OF EVANGELISM

AND THE

NEW TESTAMENT

THE NEW TESTAMENT

CONTENTS.

	PAGE
PREFACE	v
CHRONOLOGICAL TABLE FROM THE BIRTH OF CHRIST TO THE END OF THE FIRST CENTURY .	ix
INTRODUCTION TO THE EPISTLE GENERAL OF ST. JAMES	1
GENERAL EPISTLE OF ST. JAMES	13
INTRODUCTION TO THE FIRST EPISTLE GENERAL OF ST. PETER	36
FIRST EPISTLE GENERAL OF ST. PETER	46
INTRODUCTION TO THE SECOND EPISTLE GENERAL OF ST. PETER	70
SECOND EPISTLE GENERAL OF ST. PETER	82
INTRODUCTION TO THE FIRST EPISTLE GENERAL OF ST. JOHN	98
FIRST EPISTLE GENERAL OF ST. JOHN	107
INTRODUCTION TO THE SECOND EPISTLE OF ST. JOHN	127
SECOND EPISTLE OF ST. JOHN	131
INTRODUCTION TO THE THIRD EPISTLE OF ST. JOHN	133
THIRD EPISTLE OF ST. JOHN	134
INTRODUCTION TO THE EPISTLE GENERAL OF ST. JUDE	136
GENERAL EPISTLE OF ST. JUDE	140
INTRODUCTION TO THE BOOK OF REVELATION	147
THE BOOK OF REVELATION	166
INDEX OF WORDS	1
INDEX OF MATTERS	14
INDEX OF AUTHORS	48

CONTENTS.

1802	1	1802
1803	2	1803
1804	3	1804
1805	4	1805
1806	5	1806
1807	6	1807
1808	7	1808
1809	8	1809
1810	9	1810
1811	10	1811
1812	11	1812
1813	12	1813
1814	13	1814
1815	14	1815
1816	15	1816
1817	16	1817
1818	17	1818
1819	18	1819
1820	19	1820
1821	20	1821
1822	21	1822
1823	22	1823
1824	23	1824
1825	24	1825
1826	25	1826
1827	26	1827
1828	27	1828
1829	28	1829
1830	29	1830
1831	30	1831
1832	31	1832
1833	32	1833
1834	33	1834
1835	34	1835
1836	35	1836
1837	36	1837
1838	37	1838
1839	38	1839
1840	39	1840
1841	40	1841
1842	41	1842
1843	42	1843
1844	43	1844
1845	44	1845
1846	45	1846
1847	46	1847
1848	47	1848
1849	48	1849
1850	49	1850
1851	50	1851
1852	51	1852
1853	52	1853
1854	53	1854
1855	54	1855
1856	55	1856
1857	56	1857
1858	57	1858
1859	58	1859
1860	59	1860
1861	60	1861
1862	61	1862
1863	62	1863
1864	63	1864
1865	64	1865
1866	65	1866
1867	66	1867
1868	67	1868
1869	68	1869
1870	69	1870
1871	70	1871
1872	71	1872
1873	72	1873
1874	73	1874
1875	74	1875
1876	75	1876
1877	76	1877
1878	77	1878
1879	78	1879
1880	79	1880
1881	80	1881
1882	81	1882
1883	82	1883
1884	83	1884
1885	84	1885
1886	85	1886
1887	86	1887
1888	87	1888
1889	88	1889
1890	89	1890
1891	90	1891
1892	91	1892
1893	92	1893
1894	93	1894
1895	94	1895
1896	95	1896
1897	96	1897
1898	97	1898
1899	98	1899
1900	99	1900
1901	100	1901
1902	101	1902
1903	102	1903
1904	103	1904
1905	104	1905
1906	105	1906
1907	106	1907
1908	107	1908
1909	108	1909
1910	109	1910
1911	110	1911
1912	111	1912
1913	112	1913
1914	113	1914
1915	114	1915
1916	115	1916
1917	116	1917
1918	117	1918
1919	118	1919
1920	119	1920
1921	120	1921
1922	121	1922
1923	122	1923
1924	123	1924
1925	124	1925
1926	125	1926
1927	126	1927
1928	127	1928
1929	128	1929
1930	129	1930
1931	130	1931
1932	131	1932
1933	132	1933
1934	133	1934
1935	134	1935
1936	135	1936
1937	136	1937
1938	137	1938
1939	138	1939
1940	139	1940
1941	140	1941
1942	141	1942
1943	142	1943
1944	143	1944
1945	144	1945
1946	145	1946
1947	146	1947
1948	147	1948
1949	148	1949
1950	149	1950
1951	150	1951
1952	151	1952
1953	152	1953
1954	153	1954
1955	154	1955
1956	155	1956
1957	156	1957
1958	157	1958
1959	158	1959
1960	159	1960
1961	160	1961
1962	161	1962
1963	162	1963
1964	163	1964
1965	164	1965
1966	165	1966
1967	166	1967
1968	167	1968
1969	168	1969
1970	169	1970
1971	170	1971
1972	171	1972
1973	172	1973
1974	173	1974
1975	174	1975
1976	175	1976
1977	176	1977
1978	177	1978
1979	178	1979
1980	179	1980
1981	180	1981
1982	181	1982
1983	182	1983
1984	183	1984
1985	184	1985
1986	185	1986
1987	186	1987
1988	187	1988
1989	188	1989
1990	189	1990
1991	190	1991
1992	191	1992
1993	192	1993
1994	193	1994
1995	194	1995
1996	195	1996
1997	196	1997
1998	197	1998
1999	198	1999
2000	199	2000
2001	200	2001
2002	201	2002
2003	202	2003
2004	203	2004
2005	204	2005
2006	205	2006
2007	206	2007
2008	207	2008
2009	208	2009
2010	209	2010
2011	210	2011
2012	211	2012
2013	212	2013
2014	213	2014
2015	214	2015
2016	215	2016
2017	216	2017
2018	217	2018
2019	218	2019
2020	219	2020
2021	220	2021
2022	221	2022
2023	222	2023
2024	223	2024
2025	224	2025
2026	225	2026
2027	226	2027
2028	227	2028
2029	228	2029
2030	229	2030
2031	230	2031
2032	231	2032
2033	232	2033
2034	233	2034
2035	234	2035
2036	235	2036
2037	236	2037
2038	237	2038
2039	238	2039
2040	239	2040
2041	240	2041
2042	241	2042
2043	242	2043
2044	243	2044
2045	244	2045
2046	245	2046
2047	246	2047
2048	247	2048
2049	248	2049
2050	249	2050
2051	250	2051
2052	251	2052
2053	252	2053
2054	253	2054
2055	254	2055
2056	255	2056
2057	256	2057
2058	257	2058
2059	258	2059
2060	259	2060
2061	260	2061
2062	261	2062
2063	262	2063
2064	263	2064
2065	264	2065
2066	265	2066
2067	266	2067
2068	267	2068
2069	268	2069
2070	269	2070
2071	270	2071
2072	271	2072
2073	272	2073
2074	273	2074
2075	274	2075
2076	275	2076
2077	276	2077
2078	277	2078
2079	278	2079
2080	279	2080
2081	280	2081
2082	281	2082
2083	282	2083
2084	283	2084
2085	284	2085
2086	285	2086
2087	286	2087
2088	287	2088
2089	288	2089
2090	289	2090
2091	290	2091
2092	291	2092
2093	292	2093
2094	293	2094
2095	294	2095
2096	295	2096
2097	296	2097
2098	297	2098
2099	298	2099
2100	299	2100
2101	300	2101
2102	301	2102
2103	302	2103
2104	303	2104
2105	304	2105
2106	305	2106
2107	306	2107
2108	307	2108
2109	308	2109
2110	309	2110
2111	310	2111
2112	311	2112
2113	312	2113
2114	313	2114
2115	314	2115
2116	315	2116
2117	316	2117
2118	317	2118
2119	318	2119
2120	319	2120
2121	320	2121
2122	321	2122
2123	322	2123
2124	323	2124
2125	324	2125
2126	325	2126
2127	326	2127
2128	327	2128
2129	328	2129
2130	329	2130
2131	330	2131
2132	331	2132
2133	332	2133
2134	333	2134
2135	334	2135
2136	335	2136
2137	336	2137
2138	337	2138
2139	338	2139
2140	339	2140
2141	340	2141
2142	341	2142
2143	342	2143
2144	343	2144
2145	344	2145
2146	345	2146
2147	346	2147
2148	347	2148
2149	348	2149
2150	349	2150
2151	350	2151
2152	351	2152
2153	352	2153
2154	353	2154
2155	354	2155
2156	355	2156
2157	356	2157
2158	357	2158
2159	358	2159
2160	359	2160
2161	360	2161
2162	361	2162
2163	362	2163
2164	363	2164
2165	364	2165
2166	365	2166
2167	366	2167
2168	367	2168
2169	368	2169
2170	369	2170
2171	370	2171
2172	371	2172
2173	372	2173
2174	373	2174
2175	374	2175
2176	375	2176
2177	376	2177
2178	377	2178
2179	378	2179
2180	379	2180
2181	380	2181
2182	381	2182
2183	382	2183
2184	383	2184
2185	384	2185
2186	385	2186
2187	386	2187
2188	387	2188
2189	388	2189
2190	389	2190
2191	390	2191
2192	391	2192
2193	392	2193
2194	393	2194
2195	394	2195
2196	395	2196
2197	396	2197
2198	397	2198
2199	398	2199
2200	399	2200
2201	400	2201
2202	401	2202
2203	402	2203
2204	403	2204
2205	404	2205
2206	405	2206
2207	406	2207
2208	407	2208
2209	408	2209
2210	409	2210
2211	410	2211
2212	411	2212
2213	412	2213
2214	413	2214
2215	414	2215

PREFACE.

THE CATHOLIC or GENERAL EPISTLES,—probably so called because they are not inscribed to any particular Churches¹,—have an intimate connexion with the Epistles of St. Paul, and with each other.

The Epistles of St. Paul, as has been already observed², ought not to be regarded as separate compositions without mutual coherence, but as connected together, and as forming an harmonious system of Apostolic instruction in Christian Faith and Practice.

Accordingly, those Epistles will be studied with the greatest profit, when read in chronological order.

The Epistles of St. Paul receive also additional light from the Catholic Epistles, and reflect much light upon them.

The Epistles of St. Paul to the Galatians and Romans, for example, cannot be duly understood, unless they are viewed in connexion with the General Epistle of St. James; and on the other hand, the Epistle of St. James may perhaps be liable to misapprehension, unless set in juxtaposition with the Epistles of St. Paul to the Galatians and to the Romans.

But when those Epistles of the two holy Apostles are placed together, they will be found to be adjusted to each other, and to fit in to each other with nice accuracy and exact precision; and, when thus combined, they form a complete body of Apostolic doctrine on the great article of Justification; and they afford a sufficient safeguard against erroneous teaching from two opposite sides, by which that doctrine has been assailed. This will be more fully demonstrated in the Introduction to the Epistle of St. James³.

In like manner, the two General Epistles of St. Peter have a near relation to the Epistles of St. Paul. They add strength and support to them, and are strengthened and supported by them.

St. Peter's First General Epistle bears a remarkable resemblance to St. Paul's Epistle to the Ephesians; and St. Peter's Second General Epistle occupies a similar

¹ *Æcumenius*, Proleg. in Epist. *Jacobi*. *Leontius* de sectis, c. 2.

² See above, the Preface to St. Paul's Epistles, p. vii, and the *Introduction* to the First Epistle to the Thessalonians, p. 5.

³ See below, pp. 1—3.

place to that which is filled by St. Paul's Epistle to the Colossians. In the doctrinal substance of his teaching, and in the practical application of the great principles of the Christian Faith to moral and social Duty, St. Peter, in his First Epistle to the Jewish Christians, exhibits his perfect agreement with the Apostle of the Gentiles in his exhortations to the great Gentile Church of Ephesus. In his Second General Epistle, St. Peter adds force and solemnity to the warnings of St. Paul to the Churches of Phrygia, concerning the immoral consequences arising from heretical denials or perversions of those Christian doctrines, which were propounded by St. Paul in his Epistle to the Ephesians, and by St. Peter himself in his First General Epistle.

Thus the two great Apostles, St. Peter and St. Paul, are seen standing side by side teaching the same divine verities, and uttering the same cautions against corruptions of the Faith.

The proof of this statement will be submitted to the reader's consideration in the Introduction to the Second Epistle of St. Peter¹.

On one grave question St. Peter had, upon one occasion, differed from St. Paul. That difference arose in a discussion concerning the terms and conditions upon which the Gentile converts were to be received into the Christian Church.

The circumstances of that controversy between the two Apostles have been narrated by St. Paul in one of his Epistles, the Epistle to the Galatians².

St. Peter addressed his First Epistle to the Asiatic Christians; and he particularizes the *Galatians* as among those to whom he writes³.

It is remarkable, that in this Epistle St. Peter adopts the very words which are used by St. Paul in his Epistle to the Galatians, concerning that same question which had formerly been an occasion of altercation between them⁴.

It is also observable, that St. Peter, in his Second Epistle, written to the same parties as the first⁵, and written also a little before his own death⁶, and, consequently, a little before the death of his brother Apostle, St. Paul, who suffered martyrdom at Rome about the same time as St. Peter⁷, declares his own affectionate regard for his "*beloved brother Paul*," and commends "*all his Epistles*" as "*Scripture*"⁸.

Thus the Holy Spirit, speaking by the mouth of St. Peter a little before his decease, declares the divine Inspiration of St. Paul's Epistles; and by the gifts and graces of faith and love, peace and joy, patience and courage, poured into St. Peter's heart, He enabled him to unite with his brother Apostle, St. Paul, in preaching the same Faith, and in sealing that testimony with his blood.

The Catholic or General Epistles possess also a peculiar interest in their relation to each other.

¹ See below, pp. 70—72.

² See Gal. ii. 11—21, and the Review of that chapter in the notes at the end of it.

³ 1 Pet. i. 1.

⁴ See below, *Introduction* to St. Peter's First Epistle, and note on 1 Pet. ii. 16.

⁵ 2 Pet. iii. 1.

⁶ 2 Pet. i. 13, 14.

⁷ See below, *Introduction* to St. Peter's First Epistle, p. 44.

⁸ See note below on 2 Pet. iii. 15, 16.

The writer of the first of these Epistles is St. James, the Lord's brother, the first Bishop of Jerusalem, who died a Martyr to the faith in that city¹.

St. James, as we have seen, connects the Catholic Epistles with St. Paul's; and St. Peter in his First Epistle often adopts the language of St. James².

The Holy Spirit, writing by St. Jude, the brother of St. James, frequently reiterates the language of St. Peter's Second Epistle³; and displays the fulfilment of the prophecies which had been delivered in that Epistle of St. Peter.

There is also good reason to believe, that the Second Epistle of St. John has an intimate relation, of a very interesting kind, to the First Epistle of St. Peter⁴.

Thus the Catholic Epistles are connected together in a sacred network, and are woven together in a beautiful texture of substance and expression.

Each of these General Epistles performs also its appointed and appropriate work.

St. James confutes the errors of those who imagined that a speculative knowledge of religion and theoretical profession of belief, is acceptable to God, irrespectively of practical piety; and he exhibits Christian Faith in its true character as the essential energizing principle of Christian Life.

St. Peter, in his First Epistle, follows St. James, and builds up, as it were, a systematic structure of moral duty on the solid foundation of Christian Faith. He applies the doctrines of the Gospel to the social and domestic relations of Rulers and Subjects, Husbands and Wives, Masters and Servants.

In his Second Epistle, St. Peter condemns the erroneous tenets of heretical Teachers, who denied the doctrines of Christ's Godhead and Incarnation, and of the Atonement made by Him on the Cross, and he exposes the immoral consequences of those tenets, and displays the licentious profligacy of those Teachers and their adherents.

St. Jude in his Epistle completes the work of St. Peter. He recalls the attention of the Church to St. Peter's prophetic warnings, and points out the fulfilment of St. Peter's Apostolic forebodings⁵.

St. John also, in his Epistles, had a special work to perform.

His brother Apostles, St. Peter and St. Jude, had denounced the proud presumption, the anarchical lawlessness, and the carnal sensuality of heretical Teachers. St. John deals with the Heresies concerning the Manhood and Divinity of Christ⁶, in their theological bearings on the whole body of Christian Doctrine. He shows that those Heresies corrode and fret away, like a canker, the very vitals of Christian Theology, and destroy the very essence of Christian Faith, Hope, and Charity.

"Whosoever denieth the Son, the same hath not the Father⁷." "He that hath the Son hath life; and he that hath not the Son of God, hath not life⁸." "This is His commandment, that we should believe on the name of His Son Jesus Christ, and love

¹ A.D. 62. See below, *Chronological Table*, p. xi, and *Introduction* to St. James, p. 12, and *Chronological Synopsis* prefixed to the Acts of the Apostles, p. 25, new edit., or p. xxxvii, 1st edit.

² See below, p. 12, note, and on 1 Pet. i. 16.

³ See the *Introduction* to St. Jude's Epistle, p. 136.

⁴ See below, *Introduction* to St. John's Second Epistle, p. 127

⁵ Jude 17.

⁶ Described below, in the *Introduction* to St. John's First Epistle, pp. 98—101.

⁷ 1 John ii. 23.

⁸ 1 John v. 12.

one another¹." "Herein is love, not that we loved God, but that He loved us, and sent His Son to be a propitiation for our sins. Beloved, if God so loved us, we ought also to love one another²." Here is the strongest motive to Christian holiness. "Behold, what manner of love the Father hath bestowed upon us, that we should be called the sons of God. Beloved, now are we the sons of God, and it doth not yet appear what we shall be: but we know that when He shall appear, we shall be like Him; for we shall see Him as He is. And every one that hath this hope in Him purifieth himself, even as He is pure³."

The Catholic Epistles, thus contemplated, in relation to St. Paul's Epistles, and to each other, are recognized as mutually auxiliary and suppletory to each other; and minister salutary cautions to every age, against heretical error, sectarian divisions, and antinomian licence; and constitute a divinely-organized system of instruction in Christian Doctrine and Practice; and approve themselves to be works of the same Divine Spirit, "dividing to every one severally as He will⁴."

Thus the Holy Apostles of Christ are seen standing together like beautiful statues, each in its own niche, on the front of some venerable Minster; and join together in the harmonious consent of one Faith, and in grateful ascriptions of glory to God, the Father, Son, and Holy Ghost. "HOLY, HOLY, HOLY, Lord God of Sabaoth; Heaven and Earth are full of Thy Majesty. The glorious Company of the Apostles praise Thee."

The further elucidation of this subject in detail is reserved for the *Introductions* prefixed to the several Epistles.

The relation of the APOCALYPSE, or REVELATION of St. John, to the other parts of Holy Scripture, will be considered in the Introduction and Notes to that Book⁵.

Passing events appear to be imparting a fresh interest of solemn importance to some portions of the Apocalypse. "Blessed is he that readeth, and they that hear the words of this prophecy⁶."

The Editor now reverently commits the last portion of his labours on the New Testament to the gracious favour and blessing of the Divine Author of Holy Scripture, with a devout tribute of thankfulness to Him for His great mercy and goodness in enabling him to bring the work to a close, and with fervent and earnest supplication and prayer, that He would vouchsafe to accept it as an offering of praise, and that He would be pleased to make it subservient and ministerial to His own glory, and to the salvation of souls, through Jesus Christ our Lord.

¹ 1 John iii. 23.

⁴ 1 Cor. xii. 11.

² 1 John iv. 10, 11.

⁵ Below, pp. 147—162.

³ 1 John iii. 1—3.

⁶ Rev. i. 3.

CHRONOLOGICAL TABLE.

FROM THE BIRTH OF CHRIST TO THE END OF THE FIRST CENTURY.

Birth of JESUS CHRIST probably A.U.C. 749, four years *before* the common era. See on Matt. ii. 20.

Our Lord's Presentation in the Temple, forty days after the Nativity.

Visit of the Wise Men.

Flight into Egypt.

Herod's death, a little before the Passover, A.U.C. 750.

Settlement at Nazareth.

On the sequence of these events, see above on Matt. ii. 9.

A.D.

8. Jesus is catechized in the Temple at the Passover (Luke ii. 42—49).
14. Death of the Emperor Augustus (19th August). Tiberius succeeds.
26. Jesus Christ begins His Ministry (Luke iii. 23; cp. notes on Matt. ii. 9. 20).
30. The Crucifixion of Christ at the Passover.
His Ascension, forty days after His Resurrection.
The Descent of the Holy Spirit at the Feast of Pentecost fifty days after the Passover.
- 31, 32. The Events described in Chapters iii.—vi. of the Acts of the Apostles.
33. St. Stephen's Martyrdom (Acts vii.). *Saul* was then a *young man, veavlas* (vii. 58).
St. Philip's Missionary Journey (Acts viii. 5—40).
St. Peter and St. John at Samaria. Simon Magus (Acts viii. 14—24).
34. Saul's Conversion (Acts ix. 1—22): cp. *Euseb. H. E.* ii. 1; and see note below on 1 Tim. i. 13.
Saul retires to Arabia (Gal. i. 17).
36. Pontius Pilate is recalled from his procuratorship in Judæa (*Joseph., Ant.* xviii. 4. 2).
Damascus occupied by Aretas, who appoints an Ethnarch there.
37. "After *many days*" (ix. 23), Saul escapes from Damascus.
Goes up to Jerusalem; where he remains *fifteen days*, and sees Peter and James (Gal. i. 18, 19. Acts ix. 26, 27); and disputes with the Grecians; Saul is sent to Tarsus (ix. 30).
The Emperor Tiberius dies 16th March; Caligula succeeds.
- 38—41. "Rest of the Churches" (Acts ix. 31).
St. Peter's Missionary Journey (ix. 32—43). He tarries at Joppa *many days* (ix. 43).
Conversion and Baptism of Cornelius and other Gentiles at Cæsarea (Acts x. 1—48).
41. The Emperor Caligula dies 24th January, and is succeeded by Claudius.
St. Matthew's Gospel written probably about this time (cp. *Introduction*, pp. xlix—lii, and note on Acts i. 4).
43. Euodius, first Bishop of Antioch (*Euseb. Chron.* ii. p. 269. *Clinton, F. R. App.* ii. p. 548).
The Disciples first called CHRISTIANS at Antioch (Acts xi. 26).
44. The Apostle St. James, the brother of John, is killed with the sword (Acts xii. 2), and St. Peter is imprisoned by Herod Agrippa, before Easter (xii. 4). Peter is delivered; and Herod is smitten by an Angel, and dies at Cæsarea (xii. 23).
St. Peter departs from Jerusalem "to another place" (xii. 17).

- A.D.
44. Saul and Barnabas having been deputed by the Christians at Antioch (xi. 27—30) to bring supplies to the brethren in Judæa, on account of the anticipation of the famine foretold by Agabus, which “came to pass in the reign of Claudius Cæsar” (xi. 28), i. e. after January, A.D. 41, returned from Jerusalem to Antioch, with John Mark, who was connected with Peter (xii. 12), and with Barnabas. (See on xv. 39.)
45. The *Ordination* of Saul and Barnabas, at Antioch, to the *Apostleship* of the *Gentiles*. (See on xiii. 1.) *Saul* is henceforth called *Paul*. (See Acts xiii. 9.) St. Paul’s “Visions and Revelations of the Lord” seem to have been vouchsafed to him about this time. (See on 2 Cor. xii. 2, 3.)
- Their *first Missionary Journey* to Cyprus (Paphos), and Pisidia, and Perga in Pamphylia (xiii. 4—13), whence Mark returns to Jerusalem. They visit Antioch in Pisidia, Iconium, Lystra; return to Perga in Pamphylia, and thence come back to the place of their ordination, Antioch, where they remain a considerable time with the disciples (Acts xiv. 26—28).
49. A controversy arises at Antioch concerning the obligation of the Ceremonial Law (xv. 1, 2).
- Paul and Barnabas, and some others, are deputed to go from Antioch to Jerusalem, “to the Apostles and Elders,” concerning this matter (xv. 2, 3).
- 50, 51. Council of Jerusalem, at which Peter and James, Paul and Barnabas, are present (xv. 6—29).
- Paul and Barnabas return to Antioch, where they remain some time (xv. 35, 36). Dispute of St. Paul and St. Peter at Antioch, concerning the Ceremonial Law. St. Peter is rebuked by St. Paul (Gal. ii. 11—13).
- The altercation and separation of Paul and Barnabas (Acts xv. 39).
- Paul takes Silas (xv. 40) on his *second Missionary Journey*, and afterwards Timothy also at Lystra (xvi. 1).
- 52—54. St. Paul passes through Phrygia and Galatia to Troas (xvi. 6, 8). Thence crosses over to Philippi (xvi. 12), Thessalonica (xvii. 1), Berea (xvii. 10); thence to Athens (xvii. 15). *St. Luke’s Gospel* written probably about this time. See the *Introduction* to that Gospel, p. 168, and notes on 1 Thess. v. 2, 27, and 2 Cor. viii. 18; and cp. *Clem. Alex.* in *Euseb.* vi. 14.
- St. Paul comes to Corinth, where he spends *a year and six months* (xviii. 1, 11).
- Aquila and Priscilla come to Corinth.
- St. Paul writes his *two Epistles to the Thessalonians*. See the *Introduction* to those Epistles, pp. 1, 2, and 25.
- St. Paul’s *Epistle to the Galatians* written probably about this time from Corinth. See the *Introduction* to that Epistle, pp. 36—41.
- St. Paul sets sail from Cenchreæ in the spring for Ephesus, on his way to Jerusalem, for the Feast, probably Pentecost (xviii. 18, 19).
- The Emperor Claudius dies (13th October, A.D. 57), and Nero succeeds.
- After a short visit at Jerusalem (xviii. 21),
- St. Paul returns by way of *Antioch*, where he spends some time (xviii. 22), and *Galatia* and *Phrygia*, where he confirms all the disciples (xviii. 23), and by the *upper regions* of Asia Minor (xix. 1) to Ephesus; where he spends *three years* (xx. 31)—*three months* in the Synagogue, and *two years* in the school of Tyrannus (xix. 8—10).
57. St. Paul’s *first Epistle to the Corinthians*. See *Introduction* to that Epistle, pp. 75—77.
- St. Paul, after three years’ stay at Ephesus, quits it for Macedonia (xx. 1).
- St. Paul’s *second Epistle to the Corinthians*. See *Introduction* to that Epistle, p. 143.
- Comes into Hellas, and spends *three months* there (xx. 3).
58. St. Paul’s *Epistle to the Romans*, written at Corinth or Cenchreæ. See *Introduction* to it, p. 203.
- St. Paul returns to Macedonia in the Spring, and arrives at Philippi for Easter (xx. 6).
- Passes over to Troas (xx. 6). Touches at Miletus, where he bids farewell to the Presbyters of Ephesus, and gives them an Apostolic charge (xx. 17), and Tyre (xxi. 3), and lands at Cæsarea (xxi. 8). Comes to Jerusalem *after several years* (xxiv. 17), for the Feast of Pentecost (xx. 16; xxi. 17), and brings with him the *alms* (Acts xxiv.) which he had been collecting in Asia and Greece for the *poor saints at Jerusalem*. (Rom. xv.

A.D.

25, 26. 1 Cor. xvi. 1; see on 2 Cor. viii. 18; ix. 1—12.) He is accompanied by *St. Luke* now and till his arrival in Rome, A.D. 61; see also below on A.D. 67.

58. St. Paul is arrested by Jews at Jerusalem in the Temple (xxi. 28).

Is conveyed to Cæsarea (xxiii. 23—33).

58—60. Remains *two years* in detention at Cæsarea (xxiv. 27).

Epistle General of St. James. See below, p. 12.

St. Paul is sent by Festus, in the Autumn of A.D. 60, by sea toward Rome (xxvii. 1); is accompanied in his voyage by St. Luke and Aristarchus.

Winters at Malta (xxviii. 11).

61. Spring; St. Paul arrives, with St. Luke, at Rome.

62. Martyrdom of St. James the Bishop of Jerusalem, at the Passover. See below, p. 12, and *Chronological Synopsis* prefixed to the Acts, p. 25.

62, 63. St. Paul is at Rome, where he writes the *Epistles* to the *Ephesians*, *Colossians* (see *Introduction* to *Ephesians*, p. 269), and to *Philemon*, in which he calls himself "*Paul the aged*" (Philem. 9. See above on A.D. 33), and that to the *Philippians* at the close of his imprisonment, A.D. 63.

Is detained at Rome for "*two whole years*," till the Spring of A.D. 63 (xxviii. 30); where the History of the "*ACTS of the APOSTLES*" concludes: cp. *Euseb.* ii. 22.

64. St. Paul, after his liberation from his first imprisonment at Rome, goes probably to Spain, and perhaps even to Britain. See on Rom. xv. 24. 28, and the *Introduction* to the Pastoral Epistles, pp. 418—421.

Writes the *Epistle to the Hebrews*.

In the Summer of A.D. 64, the first Persecution of the Christians at Rome under the Emperor Nero begins. See *Introduction* to the Epistles to Timothy, p. 417, note.

St. Peter, at Babylon, writes his *First General Epistle*; and soon afterwards travels westward towards Rome. See the *Introduction* to *St. Peter's First Epistle* below, pp. 36—44. *St. Mark* and *Silvanus*, or *Silas*, are with him, when he writes his First Epistle. See on 1 Pet. v. 12, 13, and pp. 43, 44.

65—67. St. Paul returns from the West in his way to Jerusalem, probably with Timothy (Heb. xiii. 23). Perhaps leaves Titus at Crete in his way to Jerusalem; and after his visit to Jerusalem performs his promise of visiting Colossæ in Phrygia (Philem. 22).

On his way to Macedonia, to visit Philippi, according to his promise (Phil. ii. 24), he commands Timothy to "*abide at Ephesus*" as chief Pastor there (1 Tim. i. 3).

St. Paul's first Epistle to Timothy, Bishop of Ephesus. See the *Introduction* to that Epistle, p. 420.

St. Paul's Epistle to Titus, Bishop of Crete.

St. Paul passes a winter at Nicopolis in Epirus (Tit. iii. 12).

Probably visits Corinth, where Erastus was left in charge (2 Tim. iv. 20).

Comes to Asia, where he left Trophimus at Miletus (2 Tim. iv. 20).

Perhaps saw Timothy at Miletus. Cp. 2 Tim. i. 3.

St. Paul is arrested, probably near Miletus, and is sent a prisoner to Rome. See the *Introduction* to the Pastoral Epistles, and notes on 2 Tim. i. 4. 13; iv. 13—17.

Touches at Troas (2 Tim. iv. 13) in his way to Rome.

St. Paul, in close custody at Rome, writes the *Second Epistle to Timothy*. St. Luke is with him, and he sends for St. Mark (2 Tim. iv. 11).

St. Peter's Second General Epistle written about this time. See below, p. 69.

St. Mark's Gospel written probably about this time. See *Introduction* to that Gospel, p. 112.

68. Martyrdom of St. Peter and St. Paul at Rome. See the *Introduction* to the Epistles to Timothy, pp. 423, 424.

The Emperor Nero dies on the 9th of June, in the thirty-first year of his age; is succeeded by Galba.

69. The Emperor Galba dies on the 15th January, and is succeeded by Otho.

The Emperor Otho dies on the 20th April, and is succeeded by Vitellius.

The Emperor Vitellius dies on the 24th December, and is succeeded by Vespasian.

70. JERUSALEM taken by Titus, the son of Vespasian; the Temple burnt. Cp. notes on Luke xix. 43, 44; xxi. 20.

- A.1
71. Triumph of Vespasian and Titus for the conquest of Judæa.
79. The Emperor Vespasian dies on the 23rd June, and is succeeded by his son Titus.
81. The Emperor Titus dies on the 13th September, and is succeeded by his brother Domitian.
- 81—94. *St. Jude's General Epistle*, and *St. John's Gospel and Epistles* written probably in this interval of time.
95. Second Roman Persecution of the Christians.
St. John writes the *Apocalypse*, or *Revelation*. See *Introduction* below, pp. 156—158.
96. The Emperor Domitian dies on the 18th September, and is succeeded by Nerva, who rescinds many of his predecessor's acts. See *Introduction* to *St. John's Gospel*, p. 267.
98. The Emperor Nerva dies at the end of January, and is succeeded by Trajan.
100. The Apostle and Evangelist St. John dies about this time.

INTRODUCTION

TO

THE EPISTLE GENERAL OF ST. JAMES.

I. *On the Design of the Epistle.*

It is asserted by S. Augustine¹, that this Epistle is in some respects supplementary to the Epistles of St. Paul to the Galatians, and to the Romans.

This opinion appears to be well-grounded, and has been adopted by many later theologians².

St. Paul's design in those two Epistles had been to prove from the Hebrew Scriptures, that the hopes of Justification, which were built by many of the Jews on a presumption of their own obedience to the works of the Mosaic Law, and their own righteousness in the eye of God, were illusory and vain; and that the only meritorious cause of Justification is the Death of Christ; and that the proper organ on our side, by which the merits of that Death are to be laid hold on, and applied, is Faith; and that we are justified and accepted as righteous by God, on account of Christ's Death, through Faith in Him, apart from the works of the Law³.

Thus St. Paul had confuted the notions of those, who sought "to establish their own righteousness;" and he had asserted the virtue of Faith in the merits of the sacrifice of Christ, as opposed to all human pretensions; and had shown the futility of all human claims, as contrasted with God's free grace in Christ⁴.

But, on the other hand, a different form of error prevailed among some Judaizing Christians, and required correction; and they who propagated it, may have endeavoured to derive some pleas on its behalf, from the arguments of St. Paul, asserting the justifying efficacy of Faith in the merits of Christ.

Many among the Jews relied on their descent from Abraham, as entitling them to God's favour⁵; and boasted their own superior knowledge of spiritual things, and trusted in that knowledge, as sufficient to salvation.

They were instructed in the Will and Word of God; they had faith in His Revelation; and they contrasted their own intelligence and faith with the ignorance and unbelief of the Gentile world⁶; and they flattered themselves, that God would accept and reward them on account of their knowledge and faith.

Many of the Jews, who passed from the Synagogue into the Church, were infected with these notions; and their acceptance of the Gospel as a Revelation from God, considered merely in a speculative light, as increasing their *knowledge* of divine things, and as enlarging the sphere of their *faith*, but *not* as influencing their *practice*, served to foster their pride and hypocrisy, and to cherish a vain and presumptuous conceit, that they could commend themselves to God, and attain everlasting salvation, by a formal profession of faith, unfruitful in good works.

It has been affirmed by ancient writers, that these theorists in religion appealed to the authority

¹ S. Augustine, de Fide et Operibus, vol. vi. pp. 307—310, and in Psalm xxxi., vol. iv. p. 245.

² Among our own Divines, may be mentioned Dr. Barrow, Serm. v., on Justifying Faith, vol. iv. p. 123, and Bp. Bull on Justification, Diss. ii. ch. iv., and Strictures i. § 4.

³ See the texts quoted above in the Introduction to the Epistle to the Romans, pp. 198—200.

⁴ Rom. x. 3.

⁵ Compare Bp. Bull, Harmonia Apostolica, Diss. ii. chap. vi.

⁶ Matt. iii. 9. John viii. 33, and compare Bp. Bull's remarks VOL. II.—PART IV.

on this notion, and on what he calls their "Solifidianism," in his Harmonia Apostolica, Diss. ii. chap. xvii. Both these errors are refuted by St. James.

⁷ Compare St. Paul's own statement of their case as compared with that of the Gentiles, "Thou art called a Jew, and *restest in the Law*, and makest thy boast of God, and *knowest His Will*, and approvest the things that are more excellent, being *instructed out of the Law*;" and his remonstrance with them on their hypocritical profession, apart from moral practice, Rom. ii. 17—29. St. Paul has there anticipated the argument of St. James.

of St. Paul, asserting that we are justified by Faith in Christ, apart from the works of the Law¹; and that they took advantage of his arguments, in order to fortify themselves in their assumption, that they might claim an eternal reward from God on the ground of the clearness of their knowledge, and the orthodoxy of their faith, irrespectively of holiness of life, and of fruitfulness in good Works.

It was also supposed by some in early times, that St. Peter alludes to this antinomian perversion of St. Paul's doctrine, when, referring to St. Paul's Epistles, he says that there are "some things hard to be understood, which *they that are unlearned and unstable wrest unto their own destruction*."²

The notions just described were current in Apostolic times, especially among the Jewish Christians³; and this presumption of the sufficiency of a speculative faith, independently of practical holiness and charity, developed itself, even in the first century of the Christian Church, into the moral lawlessness of the Gnostic Teachers, such as Simon Magus, Cerinthus, and the Nicolaitans; who, under the plea of superior knowledge and illumination in spiritual mysteries, dispensed with the practice of Christian virtue, and indulged themselves and their votaries in voluptuous and riotous excesses of libertinism and debauchery, and provoked the severe censure and stern condemnation, with which they are denounced by the Holy Spirit in the Second Epistle of St. Peter, and in the Epistle of St. Jude, and the Apocalypse, or Book of Revelation.

The Epistle of St. James holds a middle place between the Epistle of St. Paul to the Romans and those just mentioned, of St. Peter, St. Jude, and the Apocalypse.

It does not deal, as they do, with those monstrous extravagances of doctrine and manners, which exhibited themselves afterwards in their hideous deformity in the deadly heresies and foul practices of the Gnostics. But St. James exposes the *unprofitableness* of a dry barren faith. He does not refute the errors of heterodoxy, but condemns the sin of hypocrisy⁴. Thus the present Epistle occupies a place of its own. It warns the Church of every age against the delusive notion, that it is enough for men, to have religious emotions, to talk religious language, to have religious knowledge, and to profess religious belief, without the habitual practice of religious duties, and the daily devotion of a religious life.

In modern times, it has been sometimes said, that some ingenuity is required, in order to *reconcile* St. Paul and St. James.

Such was *not* the language of Christian Antiquity. St. Paul and St. James do not disagree; and therefore they do not need to be reconciled. The Holy Spirit of God speaks by each of them; and provides a remedy against two different spiritual maladies by the instrumentality of both; and the work done by St. James completes the work done by St. Paul.

If we attend to the mode of the working of the Spirit by means of the two Apostles, we shall recognize the proper uses of the doctrine of both.

This has been well stated by S. Augustine⁵, whose words may be adopted here;

"Many persons boast of their good works; and some decline to become Christians on this account. A good life is necessary. 'Yes,' they say, 'it is; but I already lead a good life. What will Christianity teach me? I do not commit murder. I do not steal, I do not covet. I am not guilty of adultery. Let any one find any thing in my life to reprove, and let him, who reproves me, make me a Christian.' The man who speaks thus has glory, but not in the eyes of God. Not so Abraham. He was not justified by works. For what saith the Scripture? 'Abraham *believed* God, and it was counted to him for righteousness'.⁶ Abraham therefore was justified by *Faith*.

"But here" (adds *Augustine*) "is a whirlpool, in which we may be swallowed up, if we are not on our guard. Abraham was not justified by Works, but by Faith. Another man listens to this statement, and says, 'Well, then, I will live as I like; and then, although I have not good Works, and only *believe* in God, yet it will be counted to me for righteousness.' If a man speaks thus, and makes up his mind to live thus, he will be drowned in the whirlpool.

"I therefore take the case of Abraham, and cite concerning him what I read in the Epistle of another Apostle, who desired to set those right, who had misunderstood the Apostle St. Paul, I refer to St. James, and his Epistle, which he wrote against those who *presumed on their faith*, and

¹ Rom. iii. 28; iv. 6.

² See note below, 2 Pet. iii. 15, 16.

³ See the testimony of *Justin Martyr* in his Dialogue with Trypho the Jew, § 141, p. 460, ed. *Otto*, "Ye deceive yourselves, and others, who are like to you in this respect, deceive themselves, by saying, that although they are sinners, yet *if they know God, He will not impute sin unto them.*"

⁴ As is well observed by *Ittig* in his excellent work "De Hære-

siarchis ævi Apostolici," p. 37, "Jacobi Epistola non tam contra Simonem quàm contra Pseudo-Christianos scripta est, qui doctrinâ de justificatione sinistrè acceptâ Justitiæ opera contemnebant. Non enim Jacobus fidem *heterodoxam* sed tantùm *hypocriticam* et bonis operibus vacuam impugnât."

⁵ *S. Augustine*, in Ps. xxxi. For brevity's sake, some sentences are abridged or omitted in the above translation.

⁶ Rom. iv. 3. Gen. xv. 6.

would not do *good Works*; and in which he commends Abraham's *Works*, as Paul had commended Abraham's *Faith*.

"The two Apostles are not opposed to each other. St. James commends Abraham's work—a work known to all—the offering of his son Isaac¹. '*Magnum opus, sed ex Fide.*' A great *work* indeed that was, but it was a work growing out of *Faith*. I praise the superstructure of the work, but I see the foundation of *Faith*. I praise the fruit of the work, but I recognize the root of it in *Faith*. If Abraham had done this work without a sound *Faith*, it would have been of no use, whatever the work might be. On the other hand, if Abraham had faith in such a sort, that when God had commanded him to offer up his son, he had said, 'No, I will not do it, and yet I *believe* that God will save me, although I slight His commands,' then his *Faith*, being without *Works*, would have been dead, and would have remained barren and dry, like a root without fruit.

"Abraham, then, was justified by *Faith*; but although *Works* did not *go before Faith*, yet they *came after* it. Shall your *Faith* be barren? No; it will not be barren, unless you yourself are barren. '*Tene ergo fidem.*' Have therefore *Faith*; have faith, as one who is about to work. But you may say, This is not St. Paul's doctrine. Yes, I reply, it is. I do not appeal from St. Paul to St. James; but I appeal from St. Paul to St. Paul. What does he say? He says, 'In Christ Jesus neither Circumcision availeth any thing, nor Uncircumcision; but *Faith* which *worketh* by Love².' And again he says, 'The end of the Law is *Charity*³.' And again, 'Although I have *Faith*, so that I could remove mountains, but have not *Charity*, it profiteth me nothing⁴.' And yet he says, 'that a man is justified by *Faith* without the works of the Law.' And why? Let the Apostle himself reply. On the one hand I would teach thee (he says) not to presume on thy works, as if thou hadst received the free gift of faith through any merit of thy own; therefore rely not on thy works done *before faith*. Let no one boast of his works done *before faith*. On the other hand, let no one be slothful in good works, after he has received faith. '*Nemo jactet bona opera sua ante fidem; nemo sit piger in operibus bonis, acceptâ fide*⁵.' Good works do not go before him who is yet to be justified by *Faith*, but they follow him who has been justified⁶. And the *Faith* which is described by St. Paul is not *any* sort of *Faith*, by which we believe in God; but it is *that* healthful, evangelical *Faith*, whose *Works* spring from Love. And therefore St. Paul teaches that the *Faith* which some men deem sufficient for salvation, *profiteth nothing*, because it is without Love⁷.

"St. Paul therefore agrees with the rest of the Apostles in asserting that eternal life is given only to those who live well. But St. James is vehemently indignant against those who imagine that *Faith* without works is sufficient to salvation; and he even likens them to the devils themselves. 'Thou believest that God is one; thou doest well; the devils also believe and tremble.' And he affirms that *Faith* without works is *dead*⁸. How great therefore is the delusion of those who rely on *dead faith* as the means of *eternal life*⁹!"

Thus the teaching of each of the two Apostles, St. Paul and St. James, illustrates and confirms that of the other.

St. Paul, in his Epistle to the Romans, had refuted all presumptuous notions of human merit, and had established the doctrine of God's free grace to all, and the plenary virtue of Christ's sufferings endured once for all on the Cross.

St. James vindicates the true character and genuine functions of *Faith*, as the energetic principle and vivifying spring of a holy life; and strips off the disguises, and detects the delusions, of empty professions of belief, and of speculative spiritual knowledge, and declares that such professions of faith and knowledge are hypocritical and vain. He teaches that the propitiatory sufferings of Christ's meritorious Death are availing only to those who follow the blessed steps of His holy life; and that those sufferings were endured, in order to redeem us from the power, as well as from the guilt and penalty, of sin; and will only aggravate the punishment of those, who pervert them into a plea for neglect of His grace, and for violation of His laws.

Thus the two Apostles lend their aid in establishing the doctrine, that the *Faith* by which we are justified is that living principle of the soul, which fixes its eye on God's power and love in His dear Son, and lays its hand on Christ; and lives and moves in constant harmony with His revealed Will and Word¹⁰.

¹ James ii. 21.

² Rom. xiii. 10.

³ S. Augustine in Ps. xxxi.

⁴ "Sequuntur justificatum, non præcedunt justificandum." S. Augustine, De Fide et Operibus, xiv.

⁵ 1 Cor. xiii. 2.

⁶ Gal. v. 6.

⁷ 1 Cor. xiii. 2.

⁸ James ii. 19, 20.

⁹ S. Augustine, De Fide et Operibus, xiv.

¹⁰ In the Epistle to the Hebrews (as Theodoret has remarked on Heb. xiii. 7), St. Paul appears to be referring to St. James, after his decease; and it is not unworthy of remark that he there uses the words "whose *faith* follow." See note on Hebrews

II. In another respect the Epistle of St. James holds a peculiar place.

At first, perhaps, a reader may be surprised, that it contains so little of explicit statement of the peculiar doctrines of Christianity, as distinguished from natural religion, or from the Mosaic Law.

But, on further consideration, the reason of this will appear.

St. James was writing an Epistle, not only for the use of Christians, but of Jews¹; and of Jews who at that time were exasperated against Christianity.

In this respect the Epistle of St. James may be compared to the speech of St. Stephen, pleading the cause of Christ before the Sanhedrim at Jerusalem.

That holy Martyr had the love of Jesus in his heart; but the *name* of Jesus never broke forth from his lips, till the close of his speech, when his murderers were stoning him, and he cried, "Lord JESUS, receive my spirit²."

So St. James. He has the faith of Christ in his heart; and writes from a deep inner feeling of love to Christ; and inculcates those Christian virtues, which are genuine fruits of faith working by love. He has also, like St. Stephen, a solemn message to deliver to the Jews, who did not believe.

Hence he practises a holy and reverential reserve; and like that blessed Martyr, he will not expose that holy Name to contumelious blasphemy³.

He has a warning to speak to them from Christ. "Ye killed the Just One, He no longer resisteth you⁴." "The Judge standeth at the door⁵."

Almighty God gave to the Jews a period of forty years for repentance, after the Crucifixion of Christ. That period was now near its end. Doubtless many of the Jews, who came to Jerusalem for the three Annual Festivals, had heard and received the Gospel from the Apostles and other Preachers of Christianity. And many at Jerusalem itself, even of the Priests themselves, had become 'obedient to the faith⁶.' But the Jewish Nation, as represented by its Rulers, remained obdurate. They had imprisoned Peter and John, and murdered Stephen, and persecuted the Church⁷, and had slain James the brother of John, and endeavoured to kill Peter⁸, and to destroy St. Paul⁹, and in a short time they would conspire against and kill this other James, the writer of this Epistle¹⁰.

In the last century of its existence, especially in the period of forty years after the Crucifixion, the City of Jerusalem was the scene of the worst crimes. It was torn by intestine factions, agitated by tumultuous riots, maddened by the wild fanatical phrenzy of false Christs and false Prophets, and deluged by blood shed by the hands of assassins¹¹. There St. James dwelt; like Lot in Sodom.

Amid such circumstances as these, he, the Apostle and Bishop of Jerusalem, wrote this Epistle; an Epistle of warning to Jerusalem; the last warning it received from the Holy Spirit of God. He thus discharged the work of a Hebrew Prophet, and a Christian Apostle. He came forth as a Christian Jeremiah, and a Christian Malachi¹². A Jeremiah in denouncing woe; a Malachi, sealing up the roll of Divine Prophecy to Jerusalem: and not to Jerusalem only, but to the Jews throughout the world, who were connected with Jerusalem, by religious worship, and by personal resort to it on its great festal anniversaries. The Epistle of St. James is the farewell voice of Hebrew Prophecy.

It has been well said by some¹³, that its intrepid language of stern rebuke exasperated the leaders of the Jews, and hastened the writer's Martyrdom. And ancient authors were of opinion, that the shedding of the blood of St. James was the filling-up of the sins of Jerusalem, and made its cup of guilt to overflow¹⁴.

Its short and impassioned sentences, darted forth with vehement ejaculations, and almost with sobbings of grief, and throbings of indignation, express the anguish of his soul¹⁵, as he beholds the obstinate ingratitude, and malignant virulence of the Rulers of Jerusalem against the Just One, who had shed His blood to save them, and whom they still persecuted in His Church¹⁶; and as he looks forward to the tremendous chastisement which would soon be inflicted by God's retributive justice on the guilty City. "Your gold and silver is cankered, and the rust of them

xiii. 7. And St. Paul strongly inculcates in his *last* Epistles the same doctrine concerning good works, as that taught by St. James. See the *Introduction* to the Pastoral Epistles, p. 422, and compare also what has been said above on the same subject in the *Introduction* to the Epistle to the Romans, pp. 200—202.

¹ See chap. v. 6.

² Acts vii. 59. See note above on Acts vii. 1, 2, and below on James v. 6.

³ Cp. James ii. 7.

⁵ v. 9.

⁷ Acts vii. 59; viii. 1.

⁴ James v. 6.

⁶ Acts vi. 7.

⁸ Acts xii. 1—3.

⁹ Acts xxiii. 13—22; xxv. 2, 3.

¹⁰ See below on chap. v. 6.

¹¹ The *sicarii*. See on iv. 1, 2, and notes on Matt. xxi. 13; xxiv. 15, 24, and the account of the insurrections, in Acts v. 36; xxi. 38.

¹² See note on iv. 3.

¹³ E. g. by *Lardner*, chap. xvii.

¹⁴ *Hegesippus*, *Euseb.* ii. 23. *Origen*, c. *Celsus*, i. c. 48; ii. c. 13. *Jerome*, *Scr. Eccl.* c. 2.

¹⁵ See iv. 4—9.

¹⁶ Cp. Acts ix. 4.

shall be a witness against you, and shall eat your flesh as fire: ye heaped treasure together for the last days¹."

Perhaps there is not a nobler specimen of heroic courage and holy eloquence, and of poetical fervour, sublimity and pathos, in the range of Hebrew Prophecy, than is to be found in the last chapter of this Epistle. There the writer, having declared the indignation of God against His people, who had rebelled against Him, suddenly changes his tone, and turns with an aspect of love and gentleness, and comforts those who were obedient, and suffering under persecution for His sake. "Be *patient* therefore, *brethren*, unto the coming of the Lord. Be ye *patient*, stablish your hearts: for the Coming of the Lord draweth nigh. Behold, we count them happy which endure²."

III. Viewed in this light, the Epistle of St. James possesses a special interest and importance for Christian nations and Christian citizens, even to the end of time.

The last days of Jerusalem are, as we know from Christ Himself, prophetic and typical of the last days of the World³. The sins of the last days of Jerusalem will be the sins of the last days of the World. Hollow professions of religion⁴, empty shows and shadows of Faith, partiality and respect of persons⁵, slavish idolatry of riches, observance of some of God's commandments, together with open and impious defiance of others⁶; arrogant assumption of the office of religious teaching, without due call and authority; encouragement and patronage of those who set themselves up to be spiritual guides⁷; sins of the tongue, evil speaking against man and God⁸; envying and strife, factions and party feuds, wars and fightings⁹; adulteries¹⁰, pride, and revelry¹¹; sordid worldliness, and presumptuous self-confidence; a Babel-like building up of secular plans and projects, independently of God's will, and against it¹²; vainglorious display of wealth; hard-heartedness towards those by whose industry that wealth is acquired¹³; self-indulgence and sensuality¹⁴; an obstinate continuance in that evil temper of unbelief which rejected and crucified Christ¹⁵; these were the sins of the last days of Jerusalem as described by St. James: for these she was to be destroyed by God; for these she was destroyed; and her children were scattered abroad, and have now been outcasts for near two thousand years.

Here is a prophetic picture of the World's state in the last days. Here is a prophetic warning to men and Nations, especially to wealthy commercial Nations in the last times.

Here also is instruction and comfort for those who endure patiently, and look beyond the transitory things of this world, like husbandmen waiting for the harvest¹⁶; and who live in habitual preparation for the second Coming of the Lord, to judge the quick and dead.

IV. Concerning the Author of this Epistle

The writer calls himself JAMES.

No ancient author ascribes this Epistle to James the son of Zebedee, and brother of John, who was martyred by Herod Agrippa, about fourteen years after the Ascension¹⁷.

It is generally agreed, that the writer of this Epistle was James, "the *brother of our Lord*," and *Bishop of Jerusalem*¹⁸.

That a James was *our Lord's brother* is evident from Holy Writ¹⁹; that James the Lord's brother was appointed Bishop of Jerusalem soon after the Ascension, is affirmed in the early records of the Church²⁰; that a James was Bishop of Jerusalem appears from Holy Scripture itself, especially from the Acts of the Apostles²¹, as elucidated and confirmed by the consent of Christian Antiquity; and the concurrent tradition of early ecclesiastical writers ascribing this Epistle to James the Lord's brother, Bishop of Jerusalem, called also James the *Less*²² and James the *Just*²³, and also *Oblias*²⁴,—is confirmed by the internal evidence of the Epistle itself, which is addressed to

¹ This unique character of the Epistle of St. James, as distinguished from all the other twenty Epistles in the New Testament, shows itself in this particular respect, that it alone (with the exception of the first Epistle of St. John, which has no Epistolary address) has no *Benediction* or *Message of Peace*, either at the beginning or end. He was writing, not only to Christians, but to Jews; he was writing at Jerusalem, and to Jerusalem; and though her name was the *City of Peace*, yet since she had killed the true Melchizedek, the King of Righteousness, and *King of Peace* (Heb. vii. 2), and would not repent of her sins, "the things belonging to her peace were now hid from her eyes." Luke xix. 42.

² James v. 7—11.

³ See notes above on Matt. xxiv. 8—30.

⁴ James i. 22—27; ii. 14—26.

⁵ ii. 1—9.

⁷ iii. 1.

⁶ ii. 10—13.

⁸ iii. 2—13; iv. 11.

⁹ iv. 1—3.

¹¹ iv. 6—10.

¹³ v. 1—4.

¹⁵ v. 6.

¹⁷ Acts xii. 2.

¹⁸ Euseb. ii. 23. S. Hieron. Script. Eccl. c. 2.

¹⁹ Matt. xiii. 55.

²⁰ Euseb. ii. 1; ii. 23.

²¹ See Acts xii. 17; xv. 13, and particularly xxi. 18; and cp. Gal. i. 19; ii. 12.

²² Mark xv. 40. Cp. note below on i. 9.

²³ Clemens Alex. in Euseb. ii. 1, and Euseb. ii. 23.

²⁴ A word which *Hegesippus* (in Euseb. ii. 23) interprets as equivalent to *περιόχη τοῦ λαοῦ*. The word *περιόχη* is often used by the Septuagint for a strong *fortress* and *rock* (see Ps. cvii. 11. 2 Kings v. 9. 1 Chron. xi. 7); and *Oblias* is probably derived from *ὄφελ* (*ophel*), *hill*, or *fortress* (Isa. xxxii. 14. Micah iv. 8),

¹⁰ iv. 4.

¹² iv. 13—16.

¹⁴ v. 5.

¹⁶ v. 7.

Jews and Jewish Christians of the dispersion, and pre-announces in prophetic language the woes coming on Jerusalem.

There remain, however, two questions to be considered in regard to the Author of this Epistle.

I. Was the writer the same person as the James who is described in the Gospels as *son of Alphæus*, and who was one of the *Twelve Apostles*¹?

II. What is the meaning of the appellation by which James is distinguished as the "*Lord's Brother*?"

I. As to the first of these questions, it seems most probable that he was an *Apostle*.

(1) The Apostle St. Paul, in his Epistle to the Galatians, when asserting his own claims to be received as an *Apostle* of Christ, on a par with the other *Apostles*, relates that after his Conversion he did not go up to Jerusalem, to those who were *Apostles* before him, but went to Arabia; and thence returned to Damascus, and after three years went up to Jerusalem to see *Peter*, and remained with him fifteen days, but that he saw none other of the *Apostles*, "save *James*, the *Lord's brother*²."

The whole drift of St. Paul's argument here is to show, that he himself "was an *Apostle* not of men, or by men," and had *learnt nothing* from any other *Apostle*: that he had indeed gone up to Jerusalem to see *Peter*, and had remained with him a short time, but had not seen any *other Apostle* there, but *James* the *Lord's brother*.

The natural inference from these words, especially when taken in connexion with the context, is this; that *James*, the *Lord's brother*, was an *Apostle*; and that he was an *Apostle* in the *same sense* as *St. Peter* was an *Apostle*, namely, as *one of the Twelve*.

(2) This inference is confirmed by the terms in which this same *James* is mentioned by St. Paul. He says that "*James*, *Cephas*, and *John*" were pillars of the Church; he places *James* before *Peter* and *John*; which he hardly would have done, if *James* had not been one of the *Apostles* as well as *Bishop* of Jerusalem.

(3) The Apostolic Catalogues in St. Luke's Gospel and in the Acts of the Apostles mention *James* the son of *Alphæus*, and mention "*Jude*³, brother⁴ of *James*." And in several places of the Acts of the Apostles, a *James* is presented to us in the character of a Chief Pastor at Jerusalem⁵. But no intimation whatever is given in that History, that *this James* is a different person from *James* the son of *Alphæus*, who had been specified in the same book as one of the *Twelve*, and as having a brother called *Jude*.

(4) *St. Jude* in his Epistle calls himself the servant of Jesus Christ, and *brother of James*. Since there was a *Jude* who was an *Apostle*, and had a brother called *James*, it seems most probable, that the *Jude* who wrote the Epistle would have added some discriminating token by which his own brother *James* might be distinguished from the *Apostle* bearing the same name, if the *James*, whose brother *Jude* was, was not the same as *James* the *Apostle*.

(5) In the catalogue of the Apostles we find this combination, "*Jude brother of James*⁶." And if we refer to the beginning of the Epistle of St. Jude, we there read "*Jude brother of James*."

The *Jude* who wrote that Epistle is called an *Apostle* by ancient writers⁷, and by the Church of England in the title to her Collect for his festival⁸; and he would hardly have designated himself as "*brother of James*," if the *James* whose brother he was, had been a different person from *that James*, who, when St. Jude wrote, was celebrated in Christendom as the *Lord's brother*, and *Bishop* of Jerusalem, and a blessed Martyr for Christ. That *James* was *the James* who was best known in the Church. Since therefore St. Jude designates and distinguishes himself as "*the brother of James*," therefore the *James* whose brother he styles himself, was the most conspicuous person of all who bore that name; viz. the brother of our Lord, and *Bishop* of Jerusalem; and if *Jude* was an *Apostle*, as is also asserted by ancient testimony, then since *Jude* the *Apostle* had a brother called *James*, who was also an *Apostle*; therefore the *James* who was *Bishop* of Jerusalem, and is claimed as a brother by St. Jude, was also one of the *Apostles*.

tower (2 Kings v. 24. 2 Chron xxvii. 3), and *אָמ* (*am*), *people*. Cp. Neander, Pflanzung, &c. ii. p. 486, and the remarkable passage of Eusebius, ii. 23, quoted below in the note on chap. v. 3. And if this is the true etymology, it is worthy of remark, that he who, for his sanctity and eminence, was called a *bulwark of the people*, and was a pillar of the Church (Gal. ii. 9), was called also, probably by his own modest desire, "*James the Less*."

¹ Matt. x. 3.

² See Gal. i. 16—19, and the note there.

³ Luke vi. 16. Acts i. 13.

⁴ This appears to be the correct interpretation of the words *Ἰούδας Ἰακώβου*. See note on Acts i. 13.

⁵ See Acts xii. 17, 18; xv. 13; xxi. 18.

⁶ Luke vi. 16. Acts i. 13.

⁷ See Tertullian, de cult. fem. 3. Origen in Rom. lib. v. p. 549. De Princ. iii. 2. Epiphanius, Hær. 26. Hieron. in Tit. c. 1.

⁸ "St. Simon and St. Jude Apostles." See on Acts i. 13, 2nd edit., and below, Introduction to the Epistle of St. Jude.

(6) James the *Apostle* is described by St. Matthew as "son of *Alphæus*¹." *Alphæus* is the same name as *Cleophas*², or *Clopas*. The wife of *Clopas* was called *Mary*³; and *that Mary* was ἀδελφὴ of *Mary* the mother of *Jesus*⁴; and⁵ we find that this *Mary*, the wife of *Clopas*, was mother of *James* called the Less, and *Joses*; and *James* and *Joses* and *Simon* and *Jude* are mentioned as the names of our Lord's ἀδελφοὶ in the Gospels⁶; where our Lord is called the ἀδελφὸς of *James* and *Joses* and *Jude* and *Simon*. Hence we may infer, that *James* the ἀδελφὸς of our Lord and Bishop of Jerusalem, who had a brother called *Jude*, and who was son of *Clopas*, which is the same name as *Alphæus*, was the same person as *James* who is called the Son of *Alphæus* by St. Matthew⁷ and St. Mark⁸, and who had a brother called *Jude*⁹, and who was an *Apostle*.

(7) These inferences are confirmed by records of primitive Ecclesiastical testimony. Papias, a disciple of St. John, makes the following statement on this subject. He says that there are four *Marys* mentioned in the Gospel, namely,

1. "Mary the Mother of our Lord."

2. "Mary the wife of Cleophas or Alphæus; and mother of James the Bishop and Apostle, and of Simon, and Thaddæus (*Jude*)¹⁰."

3. "Mary Salome, the wife of Zebedee."

4. "Mary Magdalene."

"These four," he adds, "are mentioned in the Gospel. James, and Jude, and Joseph (or Joses) were sons of our Lord's Mother's sister¹¹."

(8) In the Gospel according to the Hebrews, which was of very early date, the following incident was recorded: "Soon after His Resurrection from the Dead, the Lord went to James and appeared to him. For James had sworn that he would not eat bread from the hour in which he had drunk the Cup of the Lord, until he could see Him rising from among them that sleep. . . . And the Lord took bread and blessed and brake it, and gave it to *James the Just*, and said to him, 'My brother, eat thy bread, for the Son of Man is risen from among them that sleep'¹²."

It is evident, that the writer of this narrative believed *James the Just* to be an *Apostle*; for the first Holy Eucharist was administered to the Twelve alone.

(9) In the Acts of the Apostles¹³, we have the following list of names among the Twelve; "*James* the son of *Alphæus*, and *Simon Zelotes*, and *Jude* the brother of *James*;" and the same list of names thus arranged occurs in the catalogue of *Apostles* in St. Luke's Gospel¹⁴.

In the Gospels of St. Matthew¹⁵ and Mark¹⁶ we have the following three names of "our Lord's brethren;" "*James*, *Simon*, and *Jude*;" arranged in this order.

The name *Simon* is only another form of *Symeon*¹⁷. We learn also from Ecclesiastical History, that *Symeon* (or *Simon*) the son of *Clopas* (or *Alphæus*), and one of the Lord's brethren, succeeded his brother *James* in the Bishopric of Jerusalem¹⁸: and the ground on which he was appointed to that office appears to have been, that he was a brother of our Lord.

These circumstances are confirmatory of the opinion, that "*James*, *Simon*, and *Jude*," who are mentioned in the Apostolic Catalogue, are the same as "*James*, *Simon*, and *Jude*" who are mentioned as "our Lord's brethren"¹⁹.

We arrive therefore at the conclusion that *James*, the Author of this Epistle, and brother of our Lord, and Bishop of Jerusalem, was also an *Apostle*.

Against this opinion it has been objected²⁰,

¹ Matt. x. 3.

² See note on Matt. x. 3.

³ John xix. 25.

⁴ John xix. 25.

⁵ On comparing John xix. 25 with Matt. xxvii. 56, and Mark xv. 40.

⁶ In Matt. xiii. 55. Cp. Mark vi. 3.

⁷ x. 3.

⁸ iii. 18.

⁹ Luke vi. 16. Acts i. 13.

¹⁰ The same name as *Jude*. See on Matt. x. 3, compared with Luke vi. 16. Acts i. 13.

¹¹ This fragment of Papias may be seen in Grabe, Spicilegium ii. pp. 34, 35. Routh, Reliq. Sacr. i. p. 16, and above in the note on Matt. xii. 46. See also Dr. W. H. Mill "On the Brotherhood of Jesus," p. 238. Compare the authorities cited in the notes above, on Matt. x. 3; xiii. 55; xxviii. 1. Mark iii. 18. John xix. 25. Acts xii. 17; xxi. 18. 1 Cor. ix. 5, and on Gal. i. 19, and Professor Ellicott's note there. The genuineness of the fragment has been questioned by some, because it exists only in

Latin; but this is the case with many portions of the earlier Fathers, e. g. *Hermas*, *Polycarp*, and *Irenæus*.

¹² Jerome, Scr. Eccl. 2.

¹³ i. 13.

¹⁴ vi. 15, 16.

¹⁵ xiii. 55.

¹⁶ vi. 3.

¹⁷ See Acts xv. 14.

¹⁸ See Euseb. iii. 11, and iii. 22.

¹⁹ See further on this subject, in the Introduction to St. Jude's Epistle.

²⁰ The objections hereinafter recited may be seen in the critical observations on this question by Herder, Mayerhoff, Credner, Schaaf, De Wette, Neander, Kern, and others, cited by Winer, R. W. B. i. p. 527. See also Davidson, Intr. vol. iii. pp. 302-307. Alford, Proleg. to this Epistle, sect. i. Huther, Einleit. p. 2.

On the other hand, the identity of *James* the son of *Alphæus*, the Apostle, with *James* the Bishop of Jerusalem, has been maintained in recent times by other continental critics, such as Baumgarten, Semler, Gabler, Pott, Bertholdt, Guericke, Schnecken-

1. That St. John records the following speech of St. Peter to Christ, "Lord, to whom shall we go? Thou hast the words of eternal life; and *we have believed* (πεπιστεύκαμεν) and *know* (ἐγνώκαμεν) that Thou art the Christ." Jesus answered, "Did I not choose you Twelve, and one of you is a Devil?" He was speaking of Judas Iscariot, for he was about to betray Him, being one of the Twelve¹.

In the next Chapter to this, St. John narrates, that 'the Feast of Tabernacles was at hand;' and "His *brethren* said to him, Depart hence and go into Judæa, that Thy disciples also may behold Thy works which Thou doest; for no one doeth any thing in secret, and seeketh to be himself in public; if Thou doest these things, manifest Thyself to the world; for not even were His *brethren believing* (ἐπίστευον) on Him."

Here then the question arises—How could it be said by St. Peter, in the name of the *Twelve*, that they *believed* in Christ, and yet be asserted by the Evangelist, that "not even His brethren *were believing* on Him,"—if *two* of His brethren were of the number of the *Twelve*?

This objection has been considered by some in recent times to be decisive against the opinion that James, the brother of our Lord, was one of the Twelve.

But it does not seem of sufficient force to invalidate the arguments above adduced.

Peter says—"we have believed and know that Thou art the Christ," and he was speaking of the Twelve. But he was not aware what was in the hearts of those, concerning whom he was speaking. Our Lord Himself corrected his assertion. "One of you is a devil." Judas was one of the Twelve, and betrayed Christ; Peter himself denied Him; the rest of the Twelve forsook Him and fled; they did this, after they had seen many more of His mighty works than they had seen at the time of St. Peter's speech; and they did this in about twelve months after that speech was uttered.

Besides, although it is said by St. John *a few verses only* after this speech of St. Peter, that our Lord's brethren *were not then believing*² on Him, yet the fact is, that nearly *half a year* elapsed between St. Peter's speech, and that of our Lord's brethren. The one was spoken at a *Passover*³, the other was not spoken till the approach of the *Feast of Tabernacles*, that is, after an interval of nearly *six months*.

If now it was true, that notwithstanding Peter's profession of *belief* on the part of the Twelve, all of them were very weak in faith⁴, one of the Twelve betrayed Him, and another denied Him, and the rest deserted Him, in about twelve months' time after that profession was made, is there any great reason for surprise, that at a particular time, at a period of six months after that profession, some of that number were not *believing on Him*? Besides, it might be quite possible for persons to believe Him to be the Christ, and yet not have *that* belief in His true character as a *suffering* Messiah, whose kingdom was not of this world, which alone could justify the Evangelist in saying that they *were believing* on Him⁵.

2. It has been said that *none* of our Lord's brethren—and therefore not James—could have been Apostles; because we read in Acts i. 14, "*These all*" (the eleven Apostles) "*were continuing with one accord in prayer with the women, and with Mary the mother of Jesus, and with His brethren.*"

But to this it may be replied,—we do not say, that *all* our Lord's ἀδελφοὶ were Apostles; and the assertion of the Sacred Historian communicates the fact, that those of that number, who were not Apostles, were then gathered together with the Apostles. And even if all of them had been Apostles, this specification of them would not create any difficulty. We here read of *Mary*, in addition to *the women*; and in another place we read "*the rest of the Apostles, and the brethren of the Lord, and Cephas*"⁶, who certainly was an Apostle.

3. It has been alleged, that if we suppose that St. James, who was placed as Bishop at Jerusalem, was also one of the Twelve, we are adopting an hypothesis which is not consistent with the general commission to the Apostles, to go and teach *all nations*⁷.

But to this it may be replied, that the Apostles were first to be witnesses to Christ at Jerusalem⁸, and that they remained at Jerusalem many years after the Ascension⁹; and that, as far as we know, James, the other Apostle of that name, the son of Zebedee, never left Jerusalem¹⁰.

burger, Kern, Meier, Steiger, and others. See Winer, R. W. B. i. 527. Guericke, Einleit. p. 483.

¹ John vi. 68—71.

² ἐπίστευον, the *imperfect* tense, which is to be noted.

³ See John vi. 4.

⁴ See concerning Thomas, John xiv. 5, and Philip, 8—11, and of Jude, John xiv. 22, 23, and the question of the Apostles after the Resurrection, Acts i. 6.

⁵ Cp. Westcott, Introduction to the Gospel, p. 122.

⁶ 1 Cor. ix. 5.

⁷ Matt. xxviii. 19.

⁸ Acts i. 8.

⁹ See note on Acts viii. 1.

¹⁰ Acts xii. 2. Compare Hooker, VII. iv. 2, who notices this point, and declares his own opinion, that St. James the Bishop of Jerusalem was also an Apostle.

It is probable, that Peter was placed, for a time at least, as Bishop at Antioch, as Origen (hom. in Luc. vi.), Eusebius (iii. 36), and others affirm; and St. John seems to have resided, as Metropolitan, at Ephesus; and the Apostles would have been acting in accordance with the long-suffering of Christ towards Jerusalem, if they had placed one of their own number there, as Chief Pastor "of the lost sheep of the House of Israel".

Besides, we find notice of the ordination of St. Matthias to the Apostolic office, in the Acts of the Apostles². We find, in the same book, a notice of the ordination of Saul and Barnabas to the same office³. And in like manner, if James, Bishop of Jerusalem, had not been already ordained to the Apostolic office, we might reasonably expect to find, in the Acts of the Apostles, some notice of his ordination to that office at Jerusalem, of which he is already exercising the functions, when he is presented to us in the Acts of the Apostles⁴. But there is no notice of any such ordination. Therefore we may presume that he had been already ordained to that office, i. e. that he was already an Apostle at the time when the history of the Acts begins.

4. It has been alleged, that if James, the brother of our Lord, had been an Apostle, and Jude, his brother, an Apostle, then we should not have the names of the sons of Cleophas and Mary arranged in the following order by two Evangelists, in the New Testament. "James, and Joses, and Simon, and Jude"; and again, "James, and Joses, and Jude, and Simon"; but that Jude would have been placed before Joses.

But to this it may be answered, that those Evangelists are citing the names as spoken by the people of Nazareth, who were disparaging the credit of Christ, and would care little, and perhaps did not know, who among His brethren were Apostles, and who were not.

It is true, that the Evangelists themselves sometimes describe Mary, the wife of Cleophas, or Clopas, as the mother of "James, and Joses," who was not an Apostle, to the omission of Jude⁷, and she is sometimes described as the mother of James only⁸. Perhaps Jude was the youngest of her sons; and however this may be, the allegation in question does not affect the claim of James, the brother of our Lord, who is always placed first in the list⁹, to be recognized as an Apostle.

5. It is also true, that the testimonies of the writers of the second, third, and fourth centuries are not uniform and consistent on this question.

Some were of opinion that James, the Lord's brother, was not the same as James the son of Alphæus, and was not an Apostle¹⁰. But after passing through a period of doubt and discussion, the Western Church seems to have been settled in the opinion that James the Lord's brother, the author of the Epistle, was also an Apostle¹¹; and this opinion has been adopted in many Ancient Versions¹² of this Epistle, and is embodied by the Church of England in her Liturgical offices for the Festival of St. Philip and St. James¹³.

¹ Matt. xv. 24.

² Acts xiii. 1, 2.

³ See Matt. xiii. 54.

⁴ Mark vi. 3.

⁷ Matt. xxvii. 56. Mark xv. 40.

⁸ Mark xvi. 1. Luke xxiv. 10.

⁹ See below, Introduction to St. Jude's Epistle.

¹⁰ So Gregory Nyssen. de Resurr. orat. ii. vol. iii. p. 413. Chrysost. in Matt. hom. 5, and in Act. hom. 33. Jerome, in Isa. xvii., and in Gal. i. 19.

¹¹ He is called an Apostle by Clement of Alexandria, Pædag. ii. c. 2, quoted by Tillemont, i. p. 283, and in Eusebius ii. 1. Clement is quoted as saying, that there were two persons called James, one the James who was beheaded (i. e. the son of Zebedee), the other, James the Just, the Bishop of Jerusalem, and he is called 'an Apostle' by Origen, in Rom. lib. iv. pp. 535, 536, and by Athanasius, c. Arian. iii. p. 511, and by Theodoret, in Gal. i. 19.

See also Jerome ad Paulin. ep. 50, "Jacobus, Petrus, Joannes, Judas, Apostoli," and c. Helvid. c. 7. He is constantly called *Apostolus* by S. Augustine.

¹² E. g. the Vulgate, Syriac, Arabic, and Æthiopic, where this Epistle is entitled the Epistle of James the Apostle.

¹³ See the Collect and Epistle for that day. Compare Bp. Pearson in Act. Apostolorum, Lect. iv. p. 350, ed. Churton, where he expresses himself in favour of the opinion that St. James the Bishop of Jerusalem was an Apostle. It is also maintained with force and clearness by the late Editor of an Analysis of Bp. Pearson's Work on the Creed, Dr. W. H. Mill, in his dissertation on the Brotherhood of Jesus, p. 240; and by one of Bp. Pearson's worthiest successors in the Chair of the Lady Margaret's Professorship of Divinity at Cambridge, the Rev. J. J. Blunt, whose

VOL. II.—PART IV.

words may be cited here. (Lectures on the History of the Early Church, p. 70.)

"St. James, another of the Apostles of the greatest distinction, was yet more circumscribed in the range of his personal services, Jerusalem itself being the compass within which they were confined. There were two of this name amongst the Apostles: the one, the son of Zebedee and brother of John, sufficiently distinguished from any other by his parentage and relationship, and soon ceasing to create any confusion in the Annals of the Twelve by disappearing from the scene altogether, being killed of Herod by the sword (Acts xii. 2); the other, presented to us in the Sacred History under several designations, but still the identity of the individual under them all probably admitting of being proved. Among the women who stood watching the crucifixion, were, according to St. Mark, 'Mary Magdalene, and Mary the mother of James the Less' (Mark xv. 40). According to St. John, 'Mary Magdalene, and Mary the wife of Cleophas' (John xix. 25); therefore we conclude that Mary the mother of James the Less was the same as Mary the wife of Cleophas, or, in other words, that James the Less was the son of Cleophas. But James the Apostle, according to St. Matthew, was the son of Alphæus (Matt. x. 3), which is merely another pronunciation of the same Hebrew name; so that James the Apostle and James the Less were one and the same person, the son of Mary the wife of Cleophas, who is further described in the passage of St. John already referred to, as Jesus' mother's sister, and accordingly St. James is discovered to be the cousin of our Lord, or, as he is elsewhere called in the language of the Hebrews, 'The Lord's brother' (Gal. i. 19); a circumstance which perhaps secured to him the primacy of the Church of Jerusalem, as episcopal chairs were afterwards assigned to the grandsons of St. Jude, related in the same degree to our Lord, for a similar reason. (Hegesipp. apud Eus. iii. c. 20.) In

II. On the designation of St. James as "*the Lord's brother.*"

What is the relationship to Christ, which is indicated by this title?

On this point there were *two* opinions in *ancient* times, viz.;—

1. That "the Lord's Brethren" were children of Joseph by a former marriage¹.
2. That they were children of Cleophas and Mary the ἀδελφή of our Lord's mother; and so were ἀδελφοὶ of Christ; and that the word ἀδελφοὶ, as applied to them, does *not* mean children of the same parent or parents, but *near kinsmen* or *cousins*².

It has been alleged by some, that this opinion is not earlier than the age of S. Jerome. But the testimony cited above from Papias, shows that it is of a more ancient date.

3. A *third* opinion has been adopted by some in *recent* times³, viz. that James and his brothers, Jude, Joses, and Simon, and also his *sisters*, mentioned Matt. xiii. 56, Mark vi. 3, were children of Joseph and Mary the Mother of our Lord; and so were literally *brothers* and *sisters* of our Lord.

This third opinion, however, has no ground in the testimony of primitive Christian Antiquity. Not a single Christian writer who lived in the Apostolic age, or for two hundred years after the Apostles, can be cited as saying that James the Bishop of Jerusalem, or any of those who are called our Lord's brothers and sisters in the New Testament, were children of Mary the Mother of our Lord. And when the opinion, that they were her children, was first broached, as it was by Helvidius in the fourth century, it was condemned as novel and erroneous by S. Jerome⁴, who wrote a Treatise against it, and it has been proscribed by the general consent of the Eastern and Western Churches⁵, and by the most learned and judicious divines of our own Church⁶; and this notion of Helvidius, and of those who were called *Helvidians*, was even included by S. Augustine in a catalogue of heresies⁷.

Besides, if the blessed Virgin had several children living at the time of the Crucifixion, and one of them, St. James, of such approved piety as to be called James the Just, and to be appointed Bishop of Jerusalem,—and all of them were united in prayer with the Apostles and Blessed Virgin on the day of the Ascension of Christ⁸,—it seems improbable, that our Lord should not have commended His Mother to the care of St. James, or to that of any other of her children, His own brothers by blood; and that He should have said to His Mother, "Woman, behold thy son," meaning thereby *St. John*; and that from that hour she should have been taken by *him* to *his* own home⁹.

Jerusalem, then, he exercised his high functions, and from Jerusalem he wrote his Catholic Epistle, the internal evidence of which indicates a date later than the death of St. James the brother of St. John, to whom some have ascribed it, an event which must have occurred as early as A.D. 43 or A.D. 44. For that Epistle deals with errors and defects of the Church as if they were already chronic, and, moreover, anticipates, from no great distance it may be thought, the calamity which was coming on the country in the downfall of Jerusalem,—'Go to now, ye that say, To-day or to-morrow we will go into such a city, and continue there a year, and buy and sell, and get gain: whereas ye know not what shall be on the morrow;' and again yet more significantly, 'The coming of the Lord draweth nigh.' Still, however far the decrees established at Jerusalem might reach, and whatever might be the circulation of his Epistle, in Jerusalem, as I have said, he constantly abode, and thus gave still more vital force to the action of that heart of Christendom, till death, in his case a violent one, overtook him. For the Jews, incensed at the progress of Christianity, and profiting by the anarchy of the moment, when, Festus dead, and his successor not yet appointed, they could do what seemed good in their own sight, urged St. James to address the people of Jerusalem at the Passover, numbers being assembled, and a riot apprehended, and inform them rightly concerning Jesus, disabusing them of their confidence in Him, and allaying the feverish expectation of His advent. In order that he might be the better heard, they set him on a wing of the temple; but when the reply of James to their violent and importunate appeal proved to be, 'Why question ye me concerning Jesus the Son of Man? He is now sitting in the heavens at the right hand of power, and is about to come in the clouds of heaven,' they put him effectually to silence, by casting him down headlong, and afterwards despatching him with a fuller's club." *Euseb. Eccl. Hist. ii. c. 23.*

¹ *Origen* in Matt. xiii., in *Johann. ii.* *Euseb. ii. 1*, ὅτι δὲ καὶ αὐτὸς τοῦ Ἰωσήφ ὀνόμαστο παῖς. *Epiphanius* hæres. 28 and 88. *Hilary* in Matt. i. Compare *Lardner*, ch. xvi., and *Dr. W. H. Mill*, pp. 260—269, who supposes that this opinion took its origin from Apocryphal Gospels; as also the other opinion that St. James, the brother of our Lord, was not an Apostle.

² This is the statement of St. John's disciple *Papias* (see on Matt. xii. 46), and of *Jerome* c. *Helvid. c. 7* and *c. 8*, and in Matt. xii., and *Script. Eccl. 4*, and of *Theodoret* in *Galat. i. 19*, who says that James was the son of an ἀδελφή of the Blessed Virgin, and was an ἀνεψιὸς of Jesus Christ. Cp. *S. Augustine* in *Joann. Tract. 28*, contra *Faustum* xxii. 45.

See also the authorities cited above in the notes on Matt. x. 3; xiii. 55. Mark iii. 18. John xix. 25. Acts xii. 17. Gal. i. 19. 2 Cor. ix. 5.

³ E. g. *Herder*, *Credner*, *Meyer*, *De Wette*, *Wiesinger*, *Huther*, *Einleitung*, p. 7. *Alford*, *Proleg. to St. James*, sect. i.

The opinion that they were *cousins* of our Lord has been defended by many recent continental writers, *Schneckenburger*, *Olshausen*, *Glöckler*, *Kühn*. See *Winer*, *R. W. B. i. p. 566*.

⁴ *S. Jerome* adv. *Helvidium*, tom. iv. p. 130.

⁵ In the words of *Lardner*, chap. xvi., "It has been the opinion of all Christians in general, that Mary never had any children by Joseph."

⁶ It may suffice to refer to *Bp. Pearson* on the Creed, Art. iii. pp. 328—333, and *Hooker*, V. xlv. 2, and *Dr. W. H. Mill's* Dissertation on the Brotherhood of Jesus, pp. 221—316.

⁷ *S. Augustine*, hæc. 84, "*Helvidiani* exorti sunt ab Helvidio; ita Virginitati Mariæ contradicunt, ut eam post Christum alios quoque liberos de viro suo Joseph peperisse contendunt." See also *Prædestinat. de hæc. 84*.

⁸ Acts i. 13.

⁹ John xix. 27. This argument has been already stated by ancient Christian writers. *S. Hilary* in Matt. i., writing against some whom he condemns in strong language for saying that James was the son of Mary, the mother of our Lord, thus speaks, "Verum homines pravissimi hinc præsumunt opinionis suæ auctoritatem, quod plures Dominum nostrum fratres habuisse traditum est; qui si Mariæ filii essent, nunquam in tempore passionis Joanni Apostolo transcripta esset in matrem." The same argument is urged by *S. Chrysostom* in Matt. hom. 5, and *S. Epiphanius*, Hæc. 78.

Again, we know from the Gospels that—

- (1) Mary the wife of Cleophas, or Clopas, was the ἀδελφὴ of Mary the mother of Christ¹;
 (2) and that Mary the wife of Cleophas had sons whose names were *James* and *Joses*; and probably also *Jude*²;

- (3) and that three of *our Lord's* ἀδελφοὶ were also named *James*, *Joses*, and *Jude*³.

It is therefore highly probable from this identity of three names, and from the relationship between Mary the mother of our Lord, and Mary the wife of Cleophas, that the James, Joses, and Jude, who were sons of Mary the wife of Cleophas, were no other persons than the James, Jude, and Joses, who are called "brethren of the Lord."

But here it may be said, it is not likely that two *sisters* should both be called by the same name *Mary*, and therefore James and our Lord could not have been first cousins.

If this be allowed, it may be suggested, that when Mary the wife of Clopas is called the ἀδελφὴ of Mary the Blessed Virgin, as she is by St. John⁴, the word ἀδελφὴ is not to be taken in its literal acceptation of *sister in blood*, but according to Scripture use, means a *cousin*, or near relative.

This is probable; and this use of ἀδελφὴ in *her* case, would also explain the use of the word ἀδελφοὶ in the case of her children James, Joses, and Jude. They are called in Scripture ἀδελφοὶ of our Lord; she is called in Scripture the ἀδελφὴ of His mother. Perhaps Mary their mother was the *cousin* of the Virgin Mary His mother: and they were second cousins of her Ever-blessed Son.

V. The questions which have been now examined (namely, whether St. James the Less was an Apostle, and what is the precise relationship which is expressed by his appellation "the Lord's brother⁵"), exercised the ingenuity of many learned writers in the earlier ages of the Church, who possessed ancient documentary aids for the solution of them, which are not now extant.

It would therefore be presumptuous to dogmatize upon these two points.

Rather we may reasonably believe, that a providential purpose may be subserved even by the uncertainty which surrounds them. The Holy Spirit, if He had been so pleased, might have made them perfectly clear by a few additional words in Holy Scripture; but He has not done so. He foreknew the doubts which would arise in the Church in regard to these questions. There is therefore a moral in His reserve; there is a meaning in His silence.

And what is that? Perhaps by such difficulties as these He designed to make us more thankful for those essential verities of saving doctrine, which *are fully revealed* to us in Holy Writ. There seems also to be a special lesson to be learnt from the particular questions which have now passed under review. The Holy Spirit has thrown a veil over the personal history of the Blessed Virgin. He has not clearly disclosed to us the precise nature of the relationship which is indicated in Holy Scripture by His own words "the Lord's brethren," "the Lord's sisters." And why was this? Might it not be, in order to wean our hearts from laying too much stress on carnal relationships even to Christ Himself? Might it not be, for the purpose of reminding us of the high and holy nature of our own privileges as brethren and sisters of Christ, by virtue of our own incorporation in His *mystical body*, and our relation to our *heavenly Father by filial adoption* in His Ever-blessed Son? Might it not be, for the sake of inculcating more forcibly that holy and joyful truth, which Christ Himself vouchsafed to declare to us, when He said, "Who is *My Mother*? and who are *My Brethren*? And He stretched forth His hand toward His *disciples*, and said, Behold My mother and My brethren! For *whosoever shall do the will of My Father* which is in heaven, the same is My brother, and sister, and mother⁶."

This divine truth—that brotherhood to Christ consists in obedience to His heavenly Father,—is the sum and substance of this Epistle written by St. James, the Lord's Brother.

VI. Concerning the Authority and Inspiration of the Epistle of St. James.

The canonical authority, and Divine Inspiration of this Epistle, are abundantly attested by

¹ John xix. 25.

² Matt. xxvii. 56. Mark xv. 40. Luke xxiv. 10, compared with Jude 1.

³ Matt. xiii. 55. Mark vi. 3.

⁴ xix. 25.

⁵ Since this Introduction was written, the author has had the pleasure of finding its statements and reasonings confirmed in an excellent article on St. James by the Rev. F. Meyrick, in *Dr. W. Smith's Dictionary of the Bible*.

⁶ Matt. xii. 48—50. See also His saying in Luke xi. 27, 28.

early Christian writers¹, and by the consent of the ancient Church Universal²; and the fact that many sentences of it were adopted and incorporated by St. Peter in his first Epistle³, is a sufficient proof of the esteem in which it was held by the Apostles.

VII. *On the date of the Epistle.*

The *date* of the Epistle must be placed before the Passover of A.D. 62, when St. James was martyred⁴ by the rulers of the Jews, who were disappointed and exasperated by the escape of St. Paul from their hands, A.D. 61, and turned their rage against St. James, who remained at Jerusalem⁵; and it was posterior to St. Paul's Epistle to the Romans, which was written A.D. 58; and it is not unlikely that the fury of the Jews, which vented itself in the murder of St. James, was excited by the publication of this Epistle⁶; and it bears internal evidence of having been written at a time when the sins of Jerusalem were being filled up to the brim, and the period of her probation was drawing near to its close⁷, and the day of her destruction at hand. It was probably written about A.D. 60 of the common era. The events of that period may be seen in the *Chronological Table* prefixed to this Volume, p. xi, and in the *Chronological Synopsis* prefixed to the Acts of the Apostles.

¹ See the references to it more or less clear by *Clemens Romanus*, *Hippolytus*, *Hermas*, *Clemens Alexandrinus*, *Origen*, *Eusebius*, cited by *Lardner*, *Athanasius*, *Jerome*, and others. *Kirchhofer*, pp. 258—367. *Guericke*, pp. 495—497. *Davidson*, *Introd.* p. 331. *Huther*, *Einleitung*, § 4. *Alford*, *Proleg.* sect. v.

² After some hesitation in some quarters,—a circumstance which gives greater force to the subsequent universal consent. On this point, which is of great importance for the complete establishment of the proof of the Canonical Authority of the Epistles of St. James, St. Peter, St. John, and St. Jude, more will be said below, in the *Introduction* to the *Second Epistle* of St. Peter.

³ See note below on 1 Pet. i. 16.

Compare James i. 1		1 Pet. i. 1.
i. 2		i. 6.
i. 10, 11		iv. 12.
i. 18		i. 3.

Compare James i. 21		1 Pet. { i. 23.
ii. 7		ii. 1, 2.
iii. 13		iv. 14.
iv. 1		ii. 12.
iv. 6		ii. 11.
iv. 7		v. 5, 6.
iv. 10		v. 9.
v. 20		v. 6.
		iv. 8.

⁴ When, it seems, Judæa was without a Roman Governor. "Such a season left the Jews at liberty to gratify their licentious and turbulent dispositions, and they were very likely to embrace it. We may therefore very reasonably place this event at that juncture." *Lardner*, chap. xvi. See above, *Chronological Tables* prefixed to the Acts of the Apostles, and to St. Paul's Epistles.

⁵ See *Euseb.* ii. 23.

⁶ Cp. below, v. 10.

⁷ See v. 1—6. 8, 9.

ΕΠΙΣΤΟΛΑΙ ΚΑΘΟΛΙΚΑΙ.

ΙΑΚΩΒΟΥ ΕΠΙΣΤΟΛΗ.

I. ¹ ^a ἸΑΚΩΒΟΣ, Θεοῦ καὶ Κυρίου Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ δοῦλος, ταῖς δώδεκα φυλαῖς ταῖς ἐν τῇ διασπορᾷ χαίρειν. ² ^b Πᾶσαν χαρὰν ἡγήσασθε, ἀδελφοί μου, ὅταν πειρασμοῖς περιπέσητε ποι-

a John 7. 35.
Acts 2. 5. & 8. 1.
& 15. 21.
1 Pet. 1. 1.
b Matt. 5. 11, 12.
Acts 5. 41.
Rom. 5. 3. Heb. 10. 34. 1 Pet. 1. 6.

1. Ἰάκωβος] *James, a servant of God, and of the Lord Jesus Christ.* Concerning the Author of this Epistle, see above, *Introduction*, pp. 5—11; and on the *date*, see p. 12.

He does not call himself an *Apostle*. Neither does St. Paul, in his Epistles to the Thessalonians, Philemon, and the Philip-
pians (see on 1 Thess. i. 1, and Phil. i. 1). Nor St. John, in his Epistles, or Apocalypse.

It cannot, therefore, be hence inferred, that James, the author of this Epistle, was not an *Apostle*. He might be induced to forego the Apostolic title by feelings of modesty, a grace which specially characterizes the writer, "James the *Less*" (Mark xv. 40), who does not speak to his readers as his *children*, but as his *brethren*, see below on v. 2.

He might also be induced to *withhold* the Apostolic title, because he did not *go forth* as an Apostle, to preach to those whom he addresses, but remained stationary at Jerusalem until his death in that city.

He also foregoes two *other* titles, which belonged to him, viz. "the Lord's brother" (cp. Jude 1) and "Bishop of Jerusalem" (see Acts xxi. 18).

— ταῖς δώδεκα φυλαῖς] *to the twelve tribes that are in the dispersion.* On the various *diaspora*, or *dispersions* of the Jews, see above, note on Acts ii. 9—11.

The address is *general* to the twelve tribes; not *only* to the Jewish Christians, but to the *Jews* also, to whom some of the latter portions of the Epistle are specially applicable, see iv. 1. 4. 8, v. 1—6, and above, *Introduction*. As is observed here by *Bede*, "James writes not only to those who *suffered persecution* for righteousness' sake, nor only to them who *believed* in Christ, but were *not careful* to *maintain good works*: but he writes also to those who *persecuted* the believers; and he exhorts the unbelieving Jews to repent of their guilt in crucifying Christ, and in their other criminal acts, in order that they may escape the Divine Vengeance now hanging over their heads." So *Estius*, *Grotius*, *Hammond*, *Lardner*, and others. Hence in the beginning of this Epistle there is *no announcement* of *Grace*, *Mercy*, and *Peace*, nor is there any such expression at its close. In this respect this Epistle stands alone in the New Testament. See above, *Introduction*, pp. 4, 5.

James the "brother of the Lord,"—who came to the lost sheep of the house of Israel (Matt. x. 16), and Bishop of Jerusalem, had a special labour of love to perform to the twelve tribes. "Jure Jacobus circumcisionis Apostolus his qui ex circumcisione sunt scribit" (*Didymus*). The reader may observe throughout this Epistle many points of resemblance to the Gospel of *St. Matthew* (see below, i. 26, 27; ii. 13; iii. 1. 18; iv. 9; v. 6. 12, 13), the Gospel specially designed for the *Jews*, see above, *Introduction* to the Four Gospels, p. xli, and to *St. Matthew*, pp. xlix—lii. In the Synopsis Scripturæ inserted in the works of *S. Athanasius* (tom. ii. p. 55), there is mention of a tradition that "Evangelium secundum Matthæum hebraicâ dialecto conscriptum et editum Hierosolymis, et interpretante Jacobo fratre Domini secundum carnem expositum, qui et primus à sanctis Apostolis Herosolymarum Episcopus constitutus est."

The Epistle is addressed *to the twelve tribes in the dispersion*. How,—it may be asked,—could copies of it be trans-

mitted to those twelve tribes, scattered abroad throughout the world? See John vii. 35.

The answer is, By God's good providence, the Temple at Jerusalem was allowed to stand for forty years after the Crucifixion. Jews and Jewish Christians resorted to it year after year for the great annual Festivals (cp. Acts xviii. 21). St. James remained at Jerusalem as Bishop of that city (Acts xxi. 18). Thus he could communicate with them; and they could carry copies of the Epistle to their several homes throughout the world; and so in this respect, as in many others, the pilgrim tribes of the Law became preachers of the Gospel. See above on Acts ii. 1.

— χαίρειν] *salvere; greeting.* This form of salutation is used in the apostolic decree of the Council of Jerusalem, framed, probably, by St. James, Bishop of Jerusalem (Acts xv. 23), and is not employed by any other writer of the N. T.

2. πᾶσαν χαρὰν ἡγήσασθε] *count it all joy.* Do not deem it sorrow, but regard it rather as joy—joy unmixed with sorrow; "*merum gaudium existimate*;" like a vessel containing pure and agreeable beverage, and *filled up* to the brim; count even sorrow to be joy, and only joy, as the Apostles did, Acts v. 41, and as St. Paul did, Col. i. 24, and as our Lord commands his disciples to do, Luke vi. 22, 23.

On this use of πᾶς, see *Huther* here, who quotes *Homer*, Od. xi. 507, πᾶσαν ἀλήθειαν μυθήσομαι, and cp. *Winer*, § 18, p. 101. So *merus* in Latin: "*accipies meros amores*" (*Catull.* xiii. 9), and "*mera libertas*," "*æugo mera*," "*sermo merus*" (*Horat.*).

This precept, inculcating patience under trial, was suggested by the circumstances of the Jewish Christians to whom St. James was writing, and who were exposed to peculiar hardships and sufferings from the malice of their Jewish fellow-countrymen, treating them as Apostates; and were thus tempted to faint and falter in the faith. This their condition has been already presented to our view in the Acts of the Apostles, see on ii. 44, and in the first Epistle to the Thessalonians (1 Thess. ii. 14, 15), and in the Epistle to the Hebrews. See Heb. iv. 1; vi. 1—10; x. 34, and *Introduction* to that Epistle, toward the end.

Besides,—the *Twelve Tribes* in the *dispersion*, who were without home, or nation, and were soon about to witness the destruction of the Temple and City of Jerusalem, to which they had hitherto resorted at stated times, needed special consolation. They were to be cheered by the assurance that, wherever they were, they might find a home in Christ, and a Jerusalem in the Christian Church,—"*ipsis debuit consolatio præstari, qui maxime videbantur affligi.*" *Cassiodorus*.

Hence St. James begins with inculcating the duty of *patience*; and the blessedness of endurance under *temptation*.

St. James says, *Count it all joy when ye fall into divers temptations, or trials*; but he also warns them against the notion that they are at liberty to *run into* temptation, or that *temptation* is *from God* (see below, v. 13). No, they must pray that He would not lead them into temptation (see on Matt. vi. 13), and *no temptation is directly from God* (see below, v. 13). But God sometimes *allows* His servants to be tempted, as He did Job (i. 12; ii. 5), and St. Paul (2 Cor. xii. 7), in order that His grace may be magnified in them and by them, and that they may

c Rom. 5. 3.
1 Pet. 1. 7.
d Prov. 2. 3.
Matt. 7. 7.
& 31. 22.
Mark 11. 24.
John 14. 13.
& 15. 7. & 16. 23.
1 John 3. 22.
& 5. 14.
e Matt. 21. 22.
Mark 11. 22, 24.
1 Tim. 2. 8.

κίλοις, ³ γινώσκοντες ὅτι τὸ δοκίμιον ὑμῶν τῆς πίστεως κατεργάζεται ὑπομονήν. ⁴ ἡ δὲ ὑπομονὴ ἔργον τέλειον ἐχέτω, ἵνα ᾗτε τέλειοι καὶ ὁλόκληροι, ἐν μηδενὶ λειπόμενοι.

⁵ Εἰ δέ τις ὑμῶν λείπεται σοφίας, αἰτείτω παρὰ τοῦ διδόντος Θεοῦ πᾶσιν ἀπλῶς, καὶ μὴ ὀνειδίζοντος, καὶ δοθήσεται αὐτῷ. ⁶ Αἰτείτω δὲ ἐν πίστει, μηδὲν διακρινόμενος· ὁ γὰρ διακρινόμενος ἔοικε κλύδωνι θαλάσσης ἀνεμιζομένῳ

attain an increase of glory by overcoming the Tempter, as Christ did. And therefore they may well count it all joy when they fall into divers temptations, for these trials are the occasions of their triumphs: they are the leaves and flowers of which their heavenly crown is to be woven.

— χαίρειν—χαράν] One of the characteristics of the style of this Epistle is, that, after the introduction of a leading word, the Author follows it up by some precept growing out of that word; a mode of writing called by grammarians *anadiplosis*; see here the repetition of the word ὑπομονή, v. 3; and cp. λειπόμενοι, v. 4 and 5; and διακρινόμενος, v. 4, cp. v. 13, and following; and v. 19. 21, 22, 26, and Bengel's note.

— ἀδελφοί μου] *my brethren*; an address occurring oftener in this Epistle than in any other of its size: i. 16. 19; ii. 1. 5. 14; iii. 1. 10. 12; iv. 11; v. 7. 9, 10. 12. 19; in three of which places (viz. i. 16. 19; ii. 5) it is joined with ἀγαπητοί, *beloved*. The *Jews* were addressed as ἀδελφοί by the Apostles (see Acts xxii. 1, and note xxii. 5). And this address is very suitable in an Epistle like the present, characterized by the language of stern rebuke; inspired, like the reproof of St. Stephen, by the Spirit of Love. James the "Lord's brother," having the spirit of the Lord, addresses even them as *brethren*; for they were "beloved for the fathers' sake." Rom. xi. 28. Cp. Rom. ix. 1—5.

3. γινώσκοντες] *since ye know*. Such an appeal to the knowledge of believers is characteristic of this and the other Catholic Epistles, designed to correct the errors and presumption of the knowledge falsely so called (1 Tim. vi. 20) of the Gnostic false Teachers, and also of those who relied on knowledge apart from practice, see below, ii. 20; iii. 13; iv. 4. 17; v. 20; 2 Pet. i. 20; iii. 3. 1 John ii. 3—5. 13.

— τὸ δοκίμιον] *the trial*. Herodian ii. 10, δοκίμιον στρατιωτῶν κάματος, that which is grievous in *opere*, is joyous in *fructu*. See Heb. xii. 11, and cp. Prov. xvii. 3; xxvii. 21. δοκίμιον is a word specially applied to *metals*, cp. 1 Pet. i. 7. See also below, v. 12, where another metaphor is used.

4. ἡ δὲ ὑπομονή] *but let patience have her perfect work*, in firm endurance unto the end, for "he that endureth to the end shall be saved," Matt. xxiv. 13; an exhortation necessary for those whom St. James addressed, cp. Heb. iii. 6. 14; vi. 11. On this text see the sermon of *S. Augustine*, Sermon 159, and compare the treatises of *Tertullian* and *S. Cyprian* "De Patientiâ."

— ὁλόκληροι] A word properly applied to those who are *heirs* to the whole inheritance (κληρος), and thence applied in a moral sense to what is *sound and entire* in all its parts. Hence it is used by *Josephus* (Ant. iii. 12. 2) to describe the *sacrificial victims* which must be without blemish; and so *Philo* ap. *Loesner*, p. 452; and the ancient lexicographers interpret it by σῶος and ὑγιής, *sound and healthful*. Cp. Acts iii. 16; and 1 Thess. v. 23.

5. εἰ δέ τις] *but if any of you lacketh wisdom*, namely, is deficient in that moral wisdom, which may qualify you to bear up patiently and thankfully under your sufferings, and to refute the cavils of your adversaries, who gainsay the truth as it is in Christ: such was the σοφία of St. Stephen. Acts vi. 10.

See the treatise of *Lactantius* "on true and false Wisdom," and the distinction drawn between γνῶσις (*mere theoretical knowledge*) and σοφία (*practical wisdom*) by *Etym. Mag.*

Every man needs wisdom, and εἰ τις is not to be understood as if there were any exceptions to this statement; but the hypothetical conjunction "if" is often used, not as if the supposition were doubtful, but to introduce a precept built on an acknowledged fact. 'If I am a Father, where is My honour?' Malachi i. 6, and εἰ τις, εἴαν τις, εἴαν μή τις, are often employed, where *quicumque* would be used in Latin, and in English 'whosoever.' See John iii. 3. 5, and on Phil. iv. 8.

This text (as *Bede* observes) contains a warning against the erroneous notion of Pelagianism, that men may obtain wisdom by their own free will, without Divine grace. Cp. v. 16, 17.

The word λείπομαι occurs only in this Epistle in the New Testament, see v. 4, and 11, 12.

— αἰτείτω, κ.τ.λ.] *let him ask it from God* (as Solomon did, 1 Kings iii. 11; cp. Proverbs ii. 6) *who giveth to all men*, not as the *Jews* give, only to their own nation, but to *all*; and who giveth ἀπλῶς, *liberally*, that is, *sinu laxo*, expanding the lap of His bounty, and pouring forth its contents 'good measure, pressed

down, shaken together, and running over' into your bosom. Luke vi. 38. Cp. 2 Cor. viii. 2; ix. 11, and the use of the word ἀπλοῦν, *dilatate*, by the LXX in Isaiah xxxiii. 23; and therefore the word ἀπλῶς is rendered *affluenter* here by the Vulgate, and *copiously* by the Syriac Version.

A second sense of ἀπλῶς, *sincerely*, when a gift is given with a single eye, and without any sinister view to self, may also be admitted here. Cp. note above on Rom. xii. 8. God gives ἀπλῶς, and they who pray, must pray ἀπλῶς.

The description of the Divine bounty is like a summary of our Lord's words, exhorting to prayer. Matt. vii. 7—12.

— καὶ μὴ ὀνειδίζοντος] *and upbraideth not*. And in this respect also God is not like *human* benefactors, who often upbraid the recipients of their bounty by an humiliating and invidious commemoration of the benefit ("exprobratio beneficii," *Terent.* Andr. i. 1) conferred by them, and of the inadequate returns which they receive for them. "After thou hast given, upbraid not," says the son of Sirach (*Eccclus.* xli. 22), μετὰ τὸ δοῦναι μὴ ὀνειδίζε.

This text presents the strongest motives to genuine liberality, as *Bishop Andrewes* says to the wealthy of his own age. It concerneth your homage, which is your trust in God, that you trust Him with your service of body and soul, Who hath trusted you with His plenty and store, and hath made you in that estate that you are trusted with matters of high importance both at home and abroad. For it is the argument of all arguments to the true Christian, because God hath given him, saith St. James, "without exprobration;" and given "all things," without exception of any; and that "to enjoy," which is more than competency; and that "plenteously," which is more than sufficiency; therefore, even therefore, to trust in Him only. If there be in us the hearts of true Christians, this will show it, for it will move us to place our trust in that God Who beyond all our deserts giveth; if we respect the quantity, "all things;" if the manner, very "plenteously;" if the end, "to joy" in them; yet so, that our joy and repose end in Him—a very blessed and heavenly condition. *Bp. Andrewes* (Sermons, v. p. 31).

6. αἰτείτω δὲ ἐν πίστει] *but let him ask in faith*. To adopt the words of *Bp. Sanderson*, "If any man lack wisdom," saith St. James, "let him ask of God, that giveth to all men liberally: and it shall be given him." A large and liberal promise; but yet a promise most certain, and full of comfortable assurance, provided it be understood aright, viz. with these two necessary limitations: *if God shall see it expedient, and if man pray for it as he ought*. Thou mayest pray with an humble and upright affection, and put to thy best endeavours withal, and yet not obtain the gift thou prayest for, because, being a common grace, and not of absolute necessity for salvation, it may be withheld by the wisdom of God, who best knoweth what is best, and when *not expedient* for thee, or not for His Church, at that time, and in that manner, or measure. *Necessary graces*, such as are those of sanctification, pray for them absolutely, and thou shalt absolutely receive them.

But if it be expedient, it will not yet come for asking, unless it be asked aright. *But let him pray in faith*, saith St. James. Whoso doth not, *let not that man think to receive any thing of the Lord*. Now, *that man* only prayeth in faith, who looketh to receive the thing he prayeth for, upon such terms as God hath promised to give it; for Faith ever looketh to the promise. And God hath not made us any promise of the end, other than conditional; viz. upon our conscionable use of the appointed means. And the means which He hath ordained both for the obtaining and the improving of spiritual gifts, are *study and industry*, and *diligent meditation*.

To make all sure, then, here is your course. Wrestle with God by your fervent prayers; and wrestle with Him too by your faithful endeavours: and He will not, for his goodness sake, and for His promise sake He cannot, dismiss you without a blessing. But omit either, and the other is lost labour. Prayer without study is presumption, and study without prayer is Atheism. *Bp. Sanderson* (Sermon. ii. p. 92).

— μηδὲν διακρινόμενος] *nothing doubting; for he that doubteth is like a wave of the sea driven by the wind and tossed*. At one time he is raised aloft by hope, at another he sinks downwards, in

καὶ ῥιπιζομένῳ. ⁷ Μὴ γὰρ οἰέσθω ὁ ἄνθρωπος ἐκεῖνος, ὅτι λήψεται τι παρὰ τοῦ Κυρίου, ⁸ ἂν ἡρ δίψυχος ἀκατάστατος ἐν πάσαις ταῖς ὁδοῖς αὐτοῦ.

⁹ Καυχάσθω δὲ ὁ ἀδελφὸς ὁ ταπεινὸς ἐν τῷ ὕψει αὐτοῦ, ¹⁰ ὁ δὲ πλούσιος, ἐν τῇ ταπεινώσει αὐτοῦ· ὅτι ὡς ἄνθος χόρτου παρελεύσεται· ¹¹ ἀνέτειλε γὰρ ὁ ἥλιος σὺν τῷ καύσωνι, καὶ ἐξήρανε τὸν χόρτον, καὶ τὸ ἄνθος αὐτοῦ ἐξέπεσε, καὶ ἡ εὐπρέπεια τοῦ προσώπου αὐτοῦ ἀπώλετο· οὕτω καὶ ὁ πλούσιος ἐν ταῖς πορείαις αὐτοῦ μαρανθήσεται. ¹² Μακάριος ἄνθρωπος ὃς ὑπομένει πειρασμόν· ὅτι δοκιμὸς γενόμενος λήψεται τὸν στέφανον τῆς ζωῆς, ὃν ἐπηγγείλατο ὁ Κύριος τοῖς ἀγαπῶσιν αὐτόν.

¹³ Μηδεὶς πειραζόμενος λεγέτω, ὅτι ἀπὸ Θεοῦ πειράζομαι· ὁ γὰρ Θεὸς ἀπεί-

f ch. 4. 8.
Matt. 6. 22, 24.
2 Pet. 2. 14.
& 3. 16.
g Job 4. 2.
Ps. 102. 12.
& 103. 15.
Eccl. 14. 18.
Isa. 40. 6.
1 Cor. 7. 31.
ch. 4. 14.
1 Pet. 1. 24.
1 John 2. 17.
h Job 5. 17.
Prov. 3. 11.
Matt. 10. 22.
& 19. 23, 29.
2 Tim. 4. 8.
Heb. 12. 5.
1 Pet. 5. 4.
Rev. 3. 19.

the abysses of despair; as St. Peter did in the storm, *when he doubted*. See Matt. xiv. 30, 31. Then the Apostolic Petros or stone became like a wave of the sea; but afterwards he was settled in faith, and was set for ever as a foundation-stone of the Church. Rev. xxi. 14.

The word *ῥιπιζόμενος* is applied, as here, to the sea agitated by winds, by *Philo*, de Mundo, § 18, and by *Dio Chrys.* xxxii. p. 368.

7, 8. *μὴ γὰρ οἰέσθω* for *let not that man suppose that he will receive any thing of the Lord*—being, as he is,—a two-minded man, unstable in all his ways. On the construction, see *Winer*, § 59. 10, p. 472. A similar apposition is in 1 Cor. v. 7. 2 Cor. vii. 6. Rom. viii. 24; and so *Wiesinger* and *Huther*.

This exhortation of St. James to faith in prayer, and this warning against *double-mindedness*, appear to have been before the eyes of a primitive writer, the author of "The Shepherd," *Hermas*, in his Mandates viii.—xi. (referred to in the Ancient *Catena* here, p. 4), where he says, "Cast away from thyself *double-mindedness* (*διψυχίαν*); be not in any wise *two-minded* (*μὴ διψυχῆς*) in asking of God; say not, how can I ask of God, and obtain it, when I have sinned so much against Him? Nay, but rather turn with thy *whole heart* to the Lord, and ask of Him without hesitation, and thou shalt feel the abundance of His mercy, for He is not like men, who remember injuries; but if thou doubttest in thy heart, thou wilt receive nothing from Him, for they who *doubt* concerning God, are the *double-minded* men, and obtain none of their requests." *Hermas*, Pastor, Mandat. ix. p. 596, ed. *Dressel*. The whole of that and the following chapter appears to be an expansion of the precept of St. James in this place. Compare also the words of the Apostolic Father *S. Clement*, c. 23, where the word *δίψυχος* is used in the same sense as here, and below, iv. 8; and so *Barnabas*, Epist. c. 19.

9. *καυχάσθω* let the brother of low degree glory in his exaltation: having been made a son of God by adoption in Christ (John i. 12), and an heir of His glory and kingdom, which are promised to the meek and lowly of heart (Matt. v. 3; xxiii. 12. Luke vi. 20); and which raise the lowliest of earth above the princes of this world, and make them *Kings* and *Priests* to God. Cp. Rev. i. 6.

This is an appropriate exhortation from St. James, who had been exalted to the high dignity of Bishop of Jerusalem, and was called *Oblias* (or "high fortress of the people," see above, *Introduction*, p. 5), and was a pillar of the Church, Gal. ii. 9, and took the title 'the Less' (Mark xv. 40), not only to distinguish himself from the other James, but as a moral memento to himself that he should not be elated by his exaltation, but remember that he "that humbleth himself shall be exalted." Matt. xxiii. 12; cp. below, iv. 6, and on Acts xiii. 9, on the name of *Paul*. Cp. 1 Cor. xv. 9. Eph. iii. 8.

10. ὁ δὲ πλούσιος] but let the rich man glory in his abasement; let him not be grieved by it, as too many are; let him not be distressed, because as a Christian he suffers ignominy and reproach from Jewish friends and relatives, and from the world; and is shunned and hated, and reviled by them, and perhaps is spoiled of his goods (Heb. x. 34), and endures violence and persecution (Heb. x. 32), and is thus debased and brought low in the eyes of men. No, let him glory in his low estate; let him rejoice and be exceeding glad in his humiliation; for he is thus delivered from the snares of wealth and worldliness, and from placing his trust in what is fickle and fleeting (v. 11), and from perishing as *Dives* did, who despised *Lazarus* (Luke xvi. 19), and is led to look up to God, and to trust in Him alone; and he is made like to Christ in suffering, and will be made like to Him hereafter in glory. Cp. Heb. xii. 3; xiii. 13.

Some Expositors render ὁ δὲ πλούσιος κ.τ.λ., but the rich man rejoiceth in that which is his debasement; i. e. his affluence

and luxury; but this interpretation seems to be forced and unnatural.

— ὅτι ὡς ἄνθος] because he will pass away as the flower of grass, that is, the rich man, as such, will fade away. See v. 11.

11. ἀνέτειλε γὰρ ὁ ἥλιος] for the sun arose. The aorists here give liveliness to the picture, and signify that no sooner the sun arose than the flower suddenly faded. See *Winer*, § 40, p. 248, who compares *Cæsar's* words *veni, vidi, vici*: *ibid.* p. 417, note.

— σὺν τῷ καύσωνι] with the burning heat. See Matt. xx. 12. Luke xii. 55. Some interpreters suppose *καύσων* to mean the dry parching east-wind (C̄), as in Job xxvii. 21. Jonah iv. 8; but this does not seem to be the sense here, for St. James is speaking of what is usual, and not of what is partial and casual, as the rise of a particular wind. Accordingly, in the *Vulgate*, *Syriac*, *Arabic*, and *Æthiopic* Versions, the word is rendered *burning heat*, as in the English Bible.

— ὁ πλούσιος—μαρανθήσεται] the rich man will fade away. He does not mean that the rich brother, i. e. Christian, will fade away; no, he οὐ μαρανθήσεται, but will have an *amaranthine* crown (1 Pet. v. 4); he will himself bloom for ever as a spiritual *amaranth*; for he will lay up treasure in heaven (Matt. vi. 20), and make to himself friends of the mammon of unrighteousness, who will receive him into the bosom of *Abraham*, who was a rich man and yet "the friend of God" (see Luke xvi. 22. 25, note), and into the everlasting habitations of heaven. (Luke xvi. 9.) But the rich man, as far as he is rich in this world, and trusts in his earthly riches, will fade away like the flower of the field. Compare *Wisdom* v. 8, 9. 1 Pet. i. 24, and especially Mark x. 23, 24, the best comment on this text. With ὁ πλούσιος here compare τὸν πτωχόν, the poor, as such, ii. 6.

— ἐν ταῖς πορείαις αὐτοῦ] in his ways—another lively picture: he will fade away in his ways; when actively engaged in some worldly pursuit or pleasure, when hastening eagerly in the course after some wished-for prize, he will suddenly be cut off.

12. δοκιμὸς γενόμενος] when he has become approved, like an athlete or racer. This allusion was not strange to the Jewish mind. Cp. 1 Cor. ix. 24—27, and Phil. iii. 14; and so *Philo* *Judæus* uses the word *δοκιμασθεῖς*. Cp. *Loesner*, p. 454; and so *Krebs*, *Augusti*, and others here.

— τὸν στέφανον τῆς ζωῆς] the crown of life. Observe the contrast. The rich man, as such, is only a fading flower (v. 10) withered by the sun; but he who stands the scorching heat of trial, shall receive the crown of life, which never fadeth away. (Rev. ii. 10. 1 Pet. v. 4.) Earthly trials are the flowers of which the heavenly garland is made. The worldly man is suddenly cut off in his earthly course after his earthly prize, but the Christian will reach the heavenly goal, and will receive a heavenly crown. Therefore, blessed is he who endureth trial, for when he is approved, he shall receive the crown of life. Cp. *Wisdom* v. 17.

— ὁ Κύριος] the Lord: these words are not found in A, B, nor in N.

13. μηδεὶς πειραζόμενος λεγέτω] let no man, being tempted, say, I am being tempted of God; ἀπὸ marks the immediate cause of temptation. Cp. Matt. iv. 1, and *Huther* here.

St. James here anticipates and answers an objection which might be raised on his previous declaration, that they were to consider it all joy, when they fell into divers temptations (v. 2).

If this is so, then, it might be rejoined, that temptation is a good thing, and from God; or, if it is an evil thing, then God is the author of evil. No, says the Apostle, no one is tempted of God, for God is neither tempted nor tempts.

— ὁ γὰρ Θεὸς ἀπείραστός ἐστιν κακῶν] for God is not capable of being tempted, as the Devil is, by evil things, whether moral, such as pride and envy; or physical, such as pain; and being not affected by these things in Himself, but being perfectly and eternally holy, and infinite in wisdom and love, and felicity, He is not

c Rom. 5. 3.
1 Pet. 1. 7.
d Prov. 2. 3.
Matt. 7. 7.
& 31. 22.
Mark 11. 24.
John 14. 13.
& 15. 7. & 16. 23.
1 John 3. 22.
& 5. 14.
e Matt. 21. 22.
Mark 11. 22, 24.
1 Tim. 2. 8.

κίλοις, ³ γινώσκοντες ὅτι τὸ δοκίμιον ὑμῶν τῆς πίστεως κατεργάζεται ὑπομονήν· ⁴ ἡ δὲ ὑπομονὴ ἔργον τέλειον ἐχέτω, ἵνα ᾦτε τέλειοι καὶ ὁλόκληροι, ἐν μηδενὶ λειπόμενοι.

⁵ Εἰ δέ τις ὑμῶν λείπεται σοφίας, αἰτείτω παρὰ τοῦ διδόντος Θεοῦ πᾶσιν ἀπλῶς, καὶ μὴ ὀνειδίζοντος, καὶ δοθήσεται αὐτῷ. ⁶ Αἰτείτω δὲ ἐν πίστει, μηδὲν διακρινόμενος· ὁ γὰρ διακρινόμενος ἔοικε κλύδωνι θαλάσσης ἀνεμιζομένῳ

attain an increase of glory by overcoming the Tempter, as Christ did. And therefore they may well count it all joy when they fall into divers temptations, for these trials are the occasions of their triumphs: they are the leaves and flowers of which their heavenly crown is to be woven.

— χαίρειν—χαράν] One of the characteristics of the style of this Epistle is, that, after the introduction of a leading word, the Author follows it up by some precept growing out of that word; a mode of writing called by grammarians *anadiplosis*; see here the repetition of the word *ὑπομονή*, v. 3; and cp. *λειπόμενοι*, v. 4 and 5; and *διακρινόμενος*, v. 4, cp. v. 13, and following; and v. 19, 21, 22, 26, and *Bengel's* note.

— ἀδελφοί μου] *my brethren*; an address occurring oftener in this Epistle than in any other of its size: i. 16, 19; ii. 1, 5, 14; iii. 1, 10, 12; iv. 11; v. 7, 9, 10, 12, 19; in three of which places (viz. i. 16, 19; ii. 5) it is joined with *ἀγαπητοί*, *beloved*. The *Jews* were addressed as *ἀδελφοί* by the Apostles (see Acts xxii. 1, and note xxii. 5). And this address is very suitable in an Epistle like the present, characterized by the language of stern rebuke; inspired, like the reproof of St. Stephen, by the Spirit of *Love*. James the "*Lord's brother*," having the spirit of the Lord, addresses even them as *brethren*; for they were "beloved for the fathers' sake." Rom. xi. 28. Cp. Rom. ix. 1—5.

3. γινώσκοντες] *since ye know*. Such an appeal to the *knowledge* of believers is characteristic of this and the other Catholic Epistles, designed to correct the errors and presumption of the *knowledge* falsely so called (1 Tim. vi. 20) of the Gnostic false Teachers, and also of those who relied on *knowledge* apart from practice, see below, ii. 20; iii. 13; iv. 4, 17; v. 20; 2 Pet. i. 20; iii. 3. 1 John ii. 3—5, 13.

— τὸ δοκίμιον] *the trial*. *Herodian* ii. 10, *δοκίμιον στρατιωτῶν κάματος*, that which is grievous in *opere*, is joyous in *fructu*. See Heb. xii. 11, and cp. Prov. xvii. 3; xxvii. 21. *δοκίμιον* is a word specially applied to *metals*, cp. 1 Pet. i. 7. See also below, v. 12, where another metaphor is used.

4. ἡ δὲ ὑπομονή] *but let patience have her perfect work*, in firm endurance unto the end, for "he that endureth to the end shall be saved," Matt. xxiv. 13; an exhortation necessary for those whom St. James addressed, cp. Heb. iii. 6, 14; vi. 11. On this text see the sermon of *S. Augustine*, Sermon 159, and compare the treatises of *Tertullian* and *S. Cyprian* "*De Patientiā*."

— ὁλόκληροι] A word properly applied to those who are *heirs* to the whole *inheritance* (*κληρος*), and thence applied in a moral sense to what is *sound and entire* in all its parts. Hence it is used by *Josephus* (Ant. iii. 12, 2) to describe the *sacrificial victims* which must be without blemish; and so *Philo* ap. *Loesner*, p. 452; and the ancient lexicographers interpret it by *σῶος* and *ὑγιής*, *sound and healthful*. Cp. Acts iii. 16; and 1 Thess. v. 23.

5. εἰ δέ τις] *but if any of you lacketh wisdom*, namely, is deficient in that moral wisdom, which may qualify you to bear up patiently and thankfully under your sufferings, and to refute the cavils of your adversaries, who gainsay the truth as it is in Christ: such was the *σοφία* of St. Stephen. Acts vi. 10.

See the treatise of *Lactantius* "on true and false *Wisdom*," and the distinction drawn between *γνώσις* (*mere theoretical knowledge*) and *σοφία* (*practical wisdom*) by *Etym. Mag.*

Every man needs wisdom, and *εἰ τις* is not to be understood as if there were any exceptions to this statement; but the hypothetical conjunction "if" is often used, not as if the supposition were doubtful, but to introduce a precept built on an acknowledged fact. "If I am a Father, where is My honour?" Malachi i. 6, and *εἰ τις*, *ἐάν τις*, *ἐὰν μή τις*, are often employed, where *quicunque* would be used in Latin, and in English "*whosoever*." See John iii. 3, 5, and on Phil. iv. 8.

This text (as *Bede* observes) contains a warning against the erroneous notion of Pelagianism, that men may obtain wisdom by their own free will, without Divine grace. Cp. v. 16, 17.

The word *λείπομαι* occurs only in this Epistle in the New Testament, see v. 4, and 11, 12.

— αἰτείτω, κ.τ.λ.] *let him ask it from God* (as Solomon did, 1 Kings iii. 11; cp. Proverbs ii. 6) *who giveth to all men*, not as the *Jews* give, only to their own nation, but to *all*; and who giveth *ἀπλῶς*, *liberally*, that is, *sinu laxo*, expanding the lap of His bounty, and pouring forth its contents 'good measure, pressed

down, shaken together, and running over' into your bosom. Luke vi. 38. Cp. 2 Cor. viii. 2; ix. 11, and the use of the word *ἀπλῶς*, *dilatate*, by the LXX in Isaiah xxxiii. 23; and therefore the word *ἀπλῶς* is rendered *affluenter* here by the Vulgate, and *copiously* by the Syriac Version.

A second sense of *ἀπλῶς*, *sincerely*, when a gift is given with a single eye, and without any sinister view to self, may also be admitted here. Cp. note above on Rom. xii. 8. God *gives ἀπλῶς*, and they who pray, must pray *ἀπλῶς*.

The description of the Divine bounty is like a summary of our Lord's words, exhorting to prayer. Matt. vii. 7—12.

— καὶ μὴ ὀνειδίζοντος] *and upbraideth not*. And in this respect also God is not like *human* benefactors, who often upbraid the recipients of their bounty by an humiliating and invidious commemoration of the benefit ("*exprobratio beneficii*," *Terent.* Andr. i. 1) conferred by them, and of the inadequate returns which they receive for them. "After thou hast given, upbraid not," says the son of Sirach (*Ecclus.* xli. 22), *μετὰ τὸ δοῦναι μὴ ὀνειδίσεις*.

This text presents the strongest motives to genuine liberality, as *Bishop Andrewes* says to the wealthy of his own age. It concerneth your homage, which is your trust in God, that you trust Him with your service of body and soul, Who hath trusted you with His plenty and store, and hath made you in that estate that you are trusted with matters of high importance both at home and abroad. For it is the argument of all arguments to the true Christian, because God hath given him, saith St. James, "*without exprobration*;" and given "*all things*," without exception of any; and that "*to enjoy*," which is more than competency; and that "*plenteously*," which is more than sufficiency; therefore, even therefore, to trust in Him only. If there be in us the hearts of true Christians, this will show it, for it will move us to place our trust in that God Who beyond all our deserts *giveth*; if we respect the quantity, "*all things*;" if the manner, very "*plenteously*;" if the end, "*to joy*" in them; yet so, that our joy and repose end in Him—a very blessed and heavenly condition. *Bp. Andrewes* (Sermons, v. p. 31).

6. αἰτείτω δὲ ἐν πίστει] *but let him ask in faith*. To adopt the words of *Bp. Sanderson*, "*If any man lack wisdom*," saith St. James, "*let him ask of God, that giveth to all men liberally: and it shall be given him*." A large and liberal promise; but yet a promise most certain, and full of comfortable assurance, provided it be understood aright, viz. with these two necessary limitations: *if God shall see it expedient, and if man pray for it as he ought*. Thou mayest pray with an humble and upright affection, and put to thy best endeavours withal, and yet not obtain the gift thou prayest for, because, being a common grace, and not of absolute necessity for salvation, it may be withheld by the wisdom of God, who best knoweth what is best, and when *not expedient* for thee, or not for His Church, at that time, and in that manner, or measure. *Necessary graces*, such as are those of sanctification, pray for them absolutely, and thou shalt absolutely receive them.

But if it be expedient, it will not yet come for asking, unless it be asked aright. *But let him pray in faith*, saith St. James. Whoso doth not, *let not that man think to receive any thing of the Lord*. Now, *that man* only prayeth in faith, who looketh to receive the thing he prayeth for, *upon such terms* as God hath promised to give it; for Faith ever looketh to the promise. And God hath not made us any promise of the *end*, other than conditional; viz. upon our conscionable use of the appointed means. And the *means* which He hath ordained both for the obtaining and the improving of spiritual gifts, are *study and industry*, and *diligent meditation*.

To make all sure, then, here is your course. Wrestle with God by your fervent prayers; and wrestle with Him too by your faithful *endeavours*; and He will not, for his goodness sake, and for His promise sake He cannot, dismiss you without a blessing. But omit either, and the other is lost labour. Prayer without study is presumption, and study without prayer is Atheism. *Bp. Sanderson* (Sermon ii. p. 92).

— μηδὲν διακρινόμενος] *nothing doubting; for he that doubteth is like a wave of the sea driven by the wind and tossed*. At one time he is raised aloft by hope, at another he sinks downwards, in

καὶ ῥιπιζομένῳ. ⁷ Μὴ γὰρ οἰέσθω ὁ ἄνθρωπος ἐκεῖνος, ὅτι λήψεται τι παρὰ τοῦ Κυρίου, ⁸ ἄνῃρ δίψυχος ἀκατάστατος ἐν πάσαις ταῖς ὁδοῖς αὐτοῦ.

⁹ Καυχάσθω δὲ ὁ ἀδελφὸς ὁ ταπεινὸς ἐν τῷ ὕψει αὐτοῦ, ¹⁰ ὁ δὲ πλούσιος, ἐν τῇ ταπεινώσει αὐτοῦ· ὅτι ὡς ἄνθος χόρτου παρελεύσεται· ¹¹ ἀνέτειλε γὰρ ὁ ἥλιος σὺν τῷ καύσωνι, καὶ ἐξήρανε τὸν χόρτον, καὶ τὸ ἄνθος αὐτοῦ ἐξέπεσε, καὶ ἡ εὐπρέπεια τοῦ προσώπου αὐτοῦ ἀπώλετο· οὕτω καὶ ὁ πλούσιος ἐν ταῖς πορείαις αὐτοῦ μαρανθήσεται. ¹² Ἡ Μακάριος ἄνῃρ ὃς ὑπομένει πειρασμόν· ὅτι δόκιμος γενόμενος λήψεται τὸν στέφανον τῆς ζωῆς, ὃν ἐπηγγείλατο ὁ Κύριος τοῖς ἀγαπῶσιν αὐτόν.

¹³ Μηδεὶς πειραζόμενος λεγέτω, ὅτι ἀπὸ Θεοῦ πειράζομαι· ὁ γὰρ Θεὸς ἀπεί-

f ch. 4. 8.
Matt. 6. 22, 24.
2 Pet. 2. 14.
& 3. 16.
g Job 4. 2.
Ps. 102. 12.
& 103. 15.
Eccl. 14. 18.
Isa. 40. 6.
1 Cor. 7. 31.
ch. 4. 14.
1 Pet. 1. 24.
1 John 2. 17.
h Job 5. 17.
Prov. 3. 11.
Matt. 10. 22.
& 19. 28, 29.
2 Tim. 4. 8.
Heb. 12. 5.
1 Pet. 5. 4.
Rev. 3. 19.

the abysses of despair; as St. Peter did in the storm, *when he doubted*. See Matt. xiv. 30, 31. Then the Apostolic Petros or stone became like a wave of the sea; but afterwards he was settled in faith, and was set for ever as a foundation-stone of the Church. Rev. xxi. 14.

The word ῥιπιζόμενος is applied, as here, to the sea agitated by winds, by Philo, de Mundo, § 18, and by Dio Chrys. xxxii. p. 368.

^{7, 8.} μὴ γὰρ οἰέσθω] *for let not that man suppose that he will receive any thing of the Lord—being, as he is,—a two-minded man, unstable in all his ways.* On the construction, see Winer, § 59. 10, p. 472. A similar apposition is in 1 Cor. v. 7. 2 Cor. vii. 6. Rom. viii. 24; and so Wiesinger and Huther.

This exhortation of St. James to faith in prayer, and this warning against *double-mindedness*, appear to have been before the eyes of a primitive writer, the author of "The Shepherd," *Hermas*, in his Mandates viii.—xi. (referred to in the Ancient *Catena* here, p. 4), where he says, "Cast away from thyself *double-mindedness* (διψυχίαν); be not in any wise *two-minded* (μὴ διψυχήσης) in asking of God; say not, how can I ask of God, and obtain it, when I have sinned so much against Him? Nay, but rather turn with thy *whole heart* to the Lord, and ask of Him without hesitation, and thou shalt feel the abundance of His mercy, for He is not like men, who remember injuries; but if thou doubttest in thy heart, thou wilt receive nothing from Him, for they who *doubt* concerning God, are the *double-minded* men, and obtain none of their requests." *Hermas*, Pastor, Mandat. ix. p. 596, ed. Dressel. The whole of that and the following chapter appears to be an expansion of the precept of St. James in this place. Compare also the words of the Apostolic Father *S. Clement*, c. 23, where the word δίψυχος is used in the same sense as here, and below, iv. 8; and so *Barnabas*, Epist. c. 19.

^{9.} καυχάσθω] *let the brother of low degree glory in his exaltation: having been made a son of God by adoption in Christ* (John i. 12), and an heir of His glory and kingdom, which are promised to the meek and lowly of heart (Matt. v. 3; xxiii. 12. Luke vi. 20); and which raise the lowliest of earth above the princes of this world, and make them *Kings* and *Priests* to God. Cp. Rev. i. 6.

This is an appropriate exhortation from St. James, who had been exalted to the high dignity of Bishop of Jerusalem, and was called *Oblitas* (or "high fortress of the people," see above, *Introduction*, p. 5), and was a *pillar* of the Church, Gal. ii. 9, and took the title '*the Less*' (Mark xv. 40), not only to distinguish himself from the other James, but as a moral memento to himself that he should not be elated by his exaltation, but remember that he "that humbleth himself shall be exalted." Matt. xxiii. 12; cp. below, iv. 6, and on Acts xiii. 9, on the name of *Paul*. Cp. 1 Cor. xv. 9. Eph. iii. 8.

^{10.} ὁ δὲ πλούσιος] *but let the rich man glory in his abasement; let him not be grieved by it, as too many are; let him not be distressed, because as a Christian he suffers ignominy and reproach from Jewish friends and relatives, and from the world; and is shunned and hated, and reviled by them, and perhaps is spoiled of his goods* (Heb. x. 34), and endures violence and persecution (Heb. x. 32), and is thus debased and brought low in the eyes of men. No, let him *glory* in his low estate; let him *rejoice* and be *exceeding glad* in his *humiliation*; for he is thus delivered from the snares of wealth and worldliness, and from placing his trust in what is fickle and fleeting (v. 11), and from perishing as *Dives* did, who despised Lazarus (Luke xvi. 19), and is led to look up to God, and to trust in Him alone; and he is made like to Christ in suffering, and will be made like to Him hereafter in glory. Cp. Heb. xii. 3; xiii. 13.

Some Expositors render ὁ δὲ πλούσιος κ.τ.λ., *but the rich man rejoiceth* in that which is his *debasement*; i. e. his affluence

and luxury; but this interpretation seems to be forced and unnatural.

— ὅτι ὡς ἄνθος] *because he will pass away as the flower of grass, that is, the rich man, as such, will fade away.* See v. 11.

^{11.} ἀνέτειλε γὰρ ὁ ἥλιος] *for the sun arose.* The *aorists* here give liveliness to the picture, and signify that no sooner the sun arose than the flower *suddenly faded*. See Winer, § 40, p. 248, who compares Cæsar's words *veni, vidi, vici*: *ibid.* p. 417, note.

— σὺν τῷ καύσωνι] *with the burning heat.* See Matt. xx. 12. Luke xii. 55. Some interpreters suppose καύσων to mean the dry parching east-wind (قارون), as in Job xxvii. 21. Jonah iv. 8; but this does not seem to be the sense here, for St. James is speaking of what is usual, and not of what is partial and casual, as the rise of a particular wind. Accordingly, in the *Vulgate*, *Syriac*, *Arabic*, and *Æthiopic* Versions, the word is rendered *burning heat*, as in the English Bible.

— ὁ πλούσιος—μαρανθήσεται] *the rich man will fade away.* He does not mean that the rich brother, i. e. Christian, will fade away; no, he οὐ μαρανθήσεται, but will have an *amaranthine* crown (1 Pet. v. 4); he will himself bloom for ever as a spiritual *amaranth*; for he will lay up treasure in heaven (Matt. vi. 20), and make to himself friends of the mammon of unrighteousness, who will receive him into the *bosom* of *Abraham*, who was a *rich man* and yet "the friend of God" (see Luke xvi. 22. 25, note), and into the *everlasting habitations* of heaven. (Luke xvi. 9.) But *the rich man*, as far as he is rich in *this world*, and trusts in his *earthly riches*, will fade away like the flower of the field. Compare Wisdom v. 8, 9. 1 Pet. i. 24, and especially Mark x. 23, 24, the best comment on this text. With ὁ πλούσιος here compare τὸν πτωχόν, *the poor*, as such, ii. 6.

— ἐν ταῖς πορείαις αὐτοῦ] *in his ways*—another lively picture: he will fade away in *his ways*; when actively engaged in some worldly pursuit or pleasure, when hastening eagerly in the course after some wished-for prize, he will suddenly be *cut off*.

^{12.} δόκιμος γενόμενος] *when he has become approved*, like an athlete or racer. This allusion was not strange to the Jewish mind. Cp. 1 Cor. ix. 24—27, and Phil. iii. 14; and so *Philo Judæus* uses the word δοκιμασθεῖς. Cp. *Loesner*, p. 454; and so *Krebs*, *Augusti*, and others here.

— τὸν στέφανον τῆς ζωῆς] *the crown of life.* Observe the contrast. The rich man, as such, is only a *fading flower* (v. 10) withered by the sun; but he who stands the scorching heat of trial, shall receive *the crown of life*, which never fadeth away. (Rev. ii. 10. 1 Pet. v. 4.) Earthly trials are the flowers of which the heavenly garland is made. The worldly man is suddenly cut off in his earthly course after his earthly prize, but the Christian will reach the heavenly goal, and will receive a heavenly crown. *Therefore, blessed is he who endureth trial, for when he is approved, he shall receive the crown of life.* Cp. Wisdom v. 17.

— ὁ Κύριος] *the Lord*: these words are not found in A, B, nor in N.

^{13.} μηδεὶς πειραζόμενος λεγέτω] *let no man, being tempted, say, I am being tempted of God; ἀπὸ* marks the immediate cause of temptation. Cp. Matt. iv. 1, and *Huther* here.

St. James here anticipates and answers an objection which might be raised on his previous declaration, that they were to consider it *all joy*, when they fell into *divers temptations* (v. 2).

If this is so, then, it might be rejoined, that temptation is a good thing, and from God; or, if it is an evil thing, then God is the author of evil. No, says the Apostle, *no one is tempted of God, for God is neither tempted nor tempts.*

— ὁ γὰρ Θεὸς ἀπειραστός ἐστὶν κακῶν] *for God is not capable of being tempted, as the Devil is, by evil things*, whether moral, such as pride and envy; or physical, such as pain; and being not affected by these things in Himself, but being perfectly and eternally holy, and infinite in wisdom and love, and felicity, He is not

1 Hos. 13. 9.
Matt. 5. 28.
& 15. 18, 20.
k Job 15. 35.
Ps. 7. 14.
Rom. 6. 21.

1 Prov. 2. 6.
John 3. 27.

1 Cor. 4. 7. Mal. 3. 6. Rom. 11. 29.

ραστός ἐστι κακῶν, πειράζει δὲ αὐτὸς οὐδένα· ¹⁴ ἕκαστος δὲ πειράζεται, ὑπὸ
τῆς ἰδίας ἐπιθυμίας ἐξελκόμενος καὶ δελεαζόμενος· ¹⁵ εἶτα ἡ ἐπιθυμία συλλα-
βοῦσα τίκτει ἁμαρτίαν· ἡ δὲ ἁμαρτία ἀποτελεσθεῖσα ἀποκύει θάνατον.

¹⁶ Μὴ πλανᾶσθε, ἀδελφοί μου ἀγαπητοί, ¹⁷ πᾶσα δόσις ἀγαθὴ καὶ πᾶν

like the Tempter. He tempteth no one. *Αὐτός, Ipse*, is emphatic. He is not tempted by any thing, and *He Himself* tempteth no one.

This is the sense given to the word ἀπειράστος in the *Syriac* and *Arabic* Versions, and by the ancient Greek Expositors, such as *Æcumenius* and *Theophylact*, who cite the saying of an ancient heathen writer to this effect, that τὸ θεῖον οὔτε πράγματα ἔχει, οὔτε ἄλλοις παρέχει, the Divinity neither is troubled nor troubles any one. Compare *Ecclus. xv. 11*, "Say not thou, It is through the Lord that I fell away; for thou oughtest not to do the things that He hateth; say not thou, He hath caused me to err;" and *v. 20*, "He hath commanded no man to do wickedly, neither hath he given any man licence to sin." And so *Bp. Andrewes*, "God is not tempted with evil, and He doth not tempt to evil. Ascribe it not to the *Father of lights*, but to the Prince of Darkness. But ascribe *all good*, from the smallest spark to the greatest beam, from the least '*good giving*' to the best and most perfect *gift* of all, to Him, the Father of Lights." (*Bp. Andrewes*, *Serm. iii. pp. 363. 373.*) And so *Theile* and other modern Expositors.

Some interpreters render ἀπειράστος *unversed* in, *inexperienced* in; that is, God does not make *experiments* in evil things. This sense is consistent with grammatical usage (see *Winer*, p. 175), and St. James may perhaps refer to the false tenet of some of the heretics of the early Church, who said that it was the duty of men to have *experimental knowledge of all evil*, in order to the attainment of perfection. See below on 1 John i. 6. But the other sense seems best to suit the context, and there is evidently a connexion between the words ἀπειράστος and πειράζει; and the fundamental sense, that of *temptation*, is to be preserved throughout. On the form of the word ἀπειράστος, *intentatus*, or *intentabilis*, see *Winer*, § 16. 3, p. 88; and on the structure with the genitive, see *ibid.* § 30, p. 175, where he compares *Soph. Antig. 847*, ἀκλαυτος φίλων: so *Eurip. Hippol. 962*, ἀκήρατος κακῶν. Cp. *Kühner*, *Gr. Gr.* § 513.

Thus St. James delivers a caution against errors which afterwards showed themselves in the heresies of *Apelles*, *Hermogenes*, *Valentinus*, *Marcion*, and the *Manichæans*, which represented God as the *author* of evil, or as *subject* to evil, and unable to resist and overcome it.

S. Augustine raises a question on this passage. If God *tempts no one*, how is it that he is said in Scripture to *tempt Abraham* (*Gen. xxii. 1*)? To which he replies that St. James is speaking of temptations arising from *evil motives*, with a view to an *evil end*. No such temptations are from God. But God is said to have tempted, that is, to have *tried* Abraham, from a good motive and for a good end. He tried him in love to him and to all men, in order that he might become the Father of the faithful, and be an example of obedience to all ages of the world. See also *Tertullian de Orat. c. 8*, who says, "God forbid, that we should imagine, that He tempts any one, as if *He were ignorant* of any man's faith, or desired to make any one fall. No; such ignorance and malice belong not to God, but to the Devil. Abraham was commanded to slay his son, not for his temptation, but for the *manifestation of his faith*, as a pattern and proof to all, that no pledges of love, however dear, are to be preferred to God. Christ, being tempted by the Devil, showed *who* it is that is the author of temptation, and *who* it is that is our Guardian against it." Cp. *Augustine*, *Tractat. in Joann. 43*; and *de Consensu Evang. ii. 30*; and *Bp. Andrewes*, *Sermons*, vol. v. pp. 443—447.

¹⁴ ἐξελκόμενος καὶ δελεαζόμενος] *being drawn away* from doing good, and lured, as a fish, by a bait (δέλεαρ) to evil. Cp. *Philo de Agric. p. 202*, πρὸς ἡδονῆς δελεασθὲν ἐλκυσται, and p. 888, Ε, πρὸς ἐπιθυμίας ἐλαύνεται, ἢ ὑφ' ἡδονῆς δελεάζεται. (*Loesner*.) Cp. *Aristot. Polit. v. 10*, παρὰ τῆς γυναικὸς ἐξελκυσθεὶς, and in *Test. xii. Patrum*. Joseph says of Potiphar's wife, πρὸς πορνείαν με ἐφειλκίσατο. (*Kypke*.)

If temptations prevail against us, St. James tells us where to lay the blame—not on God, for *He tempteth no man*; nor even on the Devil, for though he can *tempt* us to evil, he cannot *compel* us. But every man, when he is tempted *cum effectu*, so as to be overcome by temptation, is tempted of *his own lust*; drawn away by affrightments from doing good, or enticed by allurements to do evil. The common saying holdeth most true in temptations, "no man taketh harm but from *himself*." *Bp. Sanderson*, i. p. 408.

No man is tempted by God; but "sibi cuique Deus fit dira cupido." *Virgil, Æn. ix. 185.*

¹⁵ τίκτει ἁμαρτίαν] *bringeth forth sin*. Concupiscence is here personified, as doing the work of an unchaste woman, soliciting (*πειράζουσα*: cp. *Ruhnken*, *Tim. v. πειρώντα*, p. 210) man to sin, and inducing him to comply with her allurements (cp. *Prov. vii. 7—23*), and giving birth to sin, the offspring of their illicit union.

St. James traces the progress of Temptation, which has three steps. "1. *Suggestio*, 2. *delectatio*, 3. *consensus*: suggestio est hostis; delectatio autem, vel consensus, est nostræ fragilitatis." *Bede*, who says, "Si delectationem cordis *partus* sequitur pravæ actionis, nobis jam mortis reis victor *hostis* abscedit." Joseph was tempted by Potiphar's wife, but he did not give way to the "suggestio hostis," and gained glory from his temptation. David was tempted, and yielded to the temptation, and became guilty before God. Temptation may be the occasion of death, but blessed is he who endureth it, for he shall receive a crown of life.

— ἀποκύει θάνατον] *bringeth forth death*. The word ἀποκύνω, or ἀποκνέω, is "propria prægnantium, quæ foetum maturum emittunt." *Schleusner*, see also *Welstein*, p. 662; and below, v. 18.

¹⁶ μὴ πλανᾶσθε] *be not ye deceived*. The formulas μὴ πλανᾶ, 'be not thou deceived,' and μὴ πλανᾶσθε, 'be not ye deceived,' are the preambles used in Scripture and by ancient Fathers, in order to introduce cautions against, and *refutations* of, some popular error, as here. Cp. 1 Cor. vi. 9; xv. 33. Gal. vi. 7. *S. Ignat. Ephes. 16. Phil. 3. Smyrn. 6. S. Hippol. Phil. p. 286*, with notes by the present Editor.

— πᾶσα δόσις ἀγαθὴ] *every giving that is good, and every gift that is perfect, is from above, coming down from the Father of lights, with whom is no variableness, nor shadow of turning*. It would seem as if St. James designed to give more currency to this sacred axiom, by presenting the first portion of it in the form of an Hexameter verse, the last syllable in δόσις being lengthened by the arsis, as *Winer* remarks, § 68, p. 564. Cp. note above on Heb. xii. 13—15, for similar examples of *metrical structure* in the New Testament.

Δόσις may perhaps be distinguished here from δῶρημα. Δόσις may mean *donatio* or *giving* (cp. *Phil. iv. 5*), δῶρημα is *donum* or *gift*; and so the Geneva Bible and *Bp. Andrewes*, who has two Sermons on this text, iii. 361, and v. 311, and observes (v. 313) that δόσις ἀγαθὴ, *donatio bona*, or *good giving*, represents rather that *act* of giving which bestows things of *present use* for this life, whether for our souls or bodies, in our journey to our heavenly country; but δῶρημα τέλειον, or *perfect gift*, designates those unalloyed and enduring treasures which are laid up for us in Eternity. They all come from one source. They are from above, and come down from the *Father of Lights*. There are divers stars, and one star differeth from another in glory. (1 Cor. xv. 41.) So there are diversities of gifts (1 Cor. xii. 4), but God is the Author of them all. *Philo* makes a distinction between δόσις, δόμα, and δῶρον, δωρεᾶ, which may be applicable here; the latter being more perfect than the former: see *Philo*, *Cherub. § 25, Leg. Alleg. iii. 70*; accordingly the stronger epithet τέλειον is assigned by St. James to δῶρημα.

Observe the present participle καταβαῖνον, *coming down*, always descending in a perpetual stream of love. Observe also the plural number, *lights*. God is not the author of any evil, but He is the author of all good.

The ministry of *good* is directly and indirectly from God; but *evil* comes only *per accidens*, indirectly and mediately, for the correction of man, who is chastened by suffering. *Didymus*.

God is the Father of all lights; the light of the natural world, the sun, the moon, and stars, shining in the heavens; the light of Reason and Conscience; the light of His Law; the light of Prophecy, shining in a dark place; the light of the Gospel, shining throughout the world; the light of Apostles, Confessors, Martyrs, Bishops, and Priests, preaching that Gospel to all nations; the light of the Holy Ghost, shining in our hearts; the light of the heavenly city: God is the *Father* of them all. He is the Everlasting Father of the Everlasting Son, Who is the "Light of the World." John ix. 5.

Father is something more than Author or Giver. All Lights are His offspring.

δώρημα τέλειον ἄνωθέν ἐστι, καταβαῖνον ἀπὸ τοῦ Πατρὸς τῶν φώτων, παρ' ᾧ οὐκ ἔνι παραλλαγή ἢ τροπῆς ἀποσκίασμα. ^{18 m} Βουλευθεὶς ἀπεκύησεν ἡμᾶς λόγῳ ἀληθείας, εἰς τὸ εἶναι ἡμᾶς ἀπαρχὴν τινα τῶν αὐτοῦ κτισμάτων.

m John 1. 13.
& 3. 3.
1 Cor. 4. 15.
Gal. 4. 19.
1 Pet. 1. 23.
Matt. 20. 15.
Jer. 2. 3.

To cite the words of two learned English Bishops: "As the Sun, who is the father of lights in the natural world, whereunto St. James alludes, giveth light to all, and nowhere causeth darkness, so God communicateth goodness to every thing He produceth, so that He cannot produce any thing at all but what is good. Let no man therefore say when he hath done evil, that it is God's doing. God is not the cause of any evil, either in sin or punishment; but He is the cause of all the good that there may be in a sinful action, or that may arise from the infliction of evil by way of punishment. We are unthankful if we impute any good but to Him, and we are unjust if we impute to Him any thing but good." *Bp. Sanderson* (iii. 150).

Though of *man* it be truly said by Job, "he never continueth in one stay" (Job xiv. 2); though the *lights of Heaven* have their parallaxes, yea, "the *Angels of Heaven*, He found not steadfastness in them" (Job iv. 18); yet, for *God*, He is subject to none of them. He is *Ego sum Qui sum* (Ex. iii. 14); that is, saith Malachi, *Ego Deus, et non mutor* (Mal. iii. 6). We are not what we were awhile since, what we shall be awhile after, scarce what we are; for every moment makes us vary. With God it is nothing so. "He is that He is; He is and changeth not." He changes not His tenor; He says not, Before Abraham was, *I was*; but, "Before Abraham was, *I am*." (John viii. 58.)

Yet are there "varyings and changes," it cannot be denied. We see them daily. True, but the point is *per quem*, on whom to lay them? Not on God. Seems there any recess? It is we forsake Him, not He us. (Jer. ii. 17.) It is the ship that moves, though they that be in it think the land goes from them, not they from it. Seems there any variation, as that of the night? It is *umbra terræ* makes it, the light makes it not. Is there any thing resembling a shadow? A vapour rises from us, and makes the cloud, which is as a penthouse between, and takes Him from our sight. That vapour is our lust, there is the *apud quem*. Is any tempted? It is *his own lust* doth it; that entices him to sin; that brings us to the shadow of death. It is not God. No more than He can be tempted, no more can He tempt any. If we find any change, the *apud* is with us, not Him: we change, He is unchanged. "Man walketh in a vain shadow." (Ps. xxxix. 6.) His ways are the truth. He cannot deny Himself.

Every evil, the more perfectly evil it is, the more it is from below; it either rises from the steam of our nature corrupted; or yet lower, ascends as a gross smoke, from the *bottomless pit*, from the prince of darkness, as full of varying and turning into all shapes and shadows, as God is far from both, Who is uniform and constant in all His courses. . . . The "lights" may vary, He is invariable; they may change, He is unchangeable, constant always, and like Himself.

Now our lessons from these are—

1. Are they (the gifts) *given*? Then, *quid gloriaris*? let us have no boasting. Are they given, why forget the Giver? Let Him be had in memory, He is worthy so to be had.

2. Are the "*giving*" as well as the "*gift*," and the "*good*" as the "*perfect*," of gift, both? Then acknowledge it in both; take the one as a pledge, make the one as a step to the other.

3. Are they from somewhere else, not from ourselves? Learn then to say, and to say with feeling, *Non nobis, Domine, quia non à nobis*. (Ps. cxv. 1.)

4. Are they from on high? Look not down to the ground, then, as swine to the acorns they find lying there, and never once up to the tree they come from. Look up; the very frame of our body gives that way. It is nature's check to us, to have our head bear upward, and our heart grovel below.

5. Do they descend? Ascribe them then to purpose, not to time or chance. No table to fortune, saith the Prophet. Isa. lxx. 11.

6. Are they from the "Father of lights?" (Jer. x. 12,) then never go to the children, *à signis cæli nolite timere*: "neither fear nor hope for any thing from any light of them at all."

7. Are His "gifts without repentance?" (Rom. ii. 29.) Varies He not? Whom He loves, doth "He love to the end?" (John xiii. 1.) Let our service be so too, not wavering. O that we changed from Him no more than He from us! Not from the light of grace to the shadow of sin, as we do full often.

But above all, that which is *ex totâ substantiâ*, that if we find any want of any giving or gift, good or perfect, this text gives us light, whither to look, to whom to repair for them; to the "Father of Lights." And even so let us do. *Ad Patrem lumen cum primo lumine*: "Let the light, every day, so soon as we see it, put us in mind to get us to the Father of Lights."

VOL. II.—PART IV.

Ascendat oratio, descendet miseratio, 'let our prayer go up to Him that His grace may come down to us,' so to lighten us in our ways and works, that we may in the end come to dwell with Him, in the light which is *φῶς ἀνέσπερον*, 'light whereof there is no even-tide,' the sun whereof never sets, nor knows tropic—the only thing we miss, and wish for in our lights here, *primum et ante omnia*. *Bp. Andrewes* (Sermons, iii. p. 374).

Cp. *Bp. Bull*, Harm. Apostol. Diss. ii. ch. xv., who supposes that St. James here refers to the Pharisaic notion of the influence of the changes of the heavenly bodies upon human actions.

God is always in the meridian. *Wetstein*.

18. *Βουλευθεὶς* by the act of His own will He brought us forth: not by any necessity or caprice, but by the deliberate act of His divine Will—a proof of His freedom, power, and love. See above on Eph. i. 11. Titus iii. 5.

Here is an Apostolic protest against two errors prevalent among the Jews,

(1) that men are what they are either by *necessity*, as the Pharisees held, or else,

(2) as the Sadducees taught, by the unaided action of their *own will*, independently of *Divine grace*. See *Maimonides* in his Preface to Pirke Aboth, and *Josephus*, Antiq. xiii. 5. 9; xviii. 1. 3. *Bp. Bull*, Harm. Apost. Diss. ii. ch. xv. Thus they disparaged the dignity of the *Divine Will*.

— *ἀπεκύησεν ἡμᾶς* He brought us forth. A remarkable word, made more striking by its use in v. 15, and by the contrast there. It is properly used, as there, of *maternal* conception and production (cp. *ἐγκυος*, Luke ii. 5), and we may learn from its use here, as compared with its use there (the only two places in the New Testament where the word occurs), that while, as to *sin*, the *conception* is in the concupiscence of our appetite, which is impregnated by the consent of our Will, and so brings forth sin, and sin (*ἀποκύει*) gives birth to death, it is *God and God alone* Who acts in our *new birth*.

With reverence be it said, in the work of our *Regeneration*, He is both our Father and Mother; and this statement well follows the declaration of the Apostle that *every good giving and every perfect gift is from above*, coming down from the *Father of Lights*. He is a *Father*, the *Father* of lights, and He is like a *Mother* also, and gives birth to us by the word of truth. "Deus nobis Ipse Patris et Matris loco est." *Bengel*.

Compare the use of the *maternal* word *ᾧδίνω*, *parturio*, used by St. Paul in one of his tenderest expressions of affectionate yearning for his spiritual children. Gal. iv. 19.

By this word *ἀπεκύησεν*, *He brought us forth*, St. James declares God's *maternal love* for our souls. "Can a woman forget her sucking child, that she should not have compassion on the son of her womb? yea, they may forget, yet will I not forget thee." (Isa. xlix. 15.) "When my father and my mother forsake me, the Lord taketh me up." Ps. xxvii. 12.

— *λόγῳ ἀληθείας* by the word of truth. So St. Peter declares (1 Pet. i. 23), that we have been born again, not of corruptible seed, but incorruptible, by the *Word* of the Living God.

Some ancient Expositors interpret the Word here as signifying the *Eternal Word*, Who for our sakes became *Incarnate*, and by being *Incarnate* gave "to those who receive Him, power to become sons of God," who are born, not of *blood*, nor of the *will of the flesh*, but of God (John i. 13), and through whom we cry, "*Abba, Father*" (Rom. viii. 15. Gal. iii. 26), and become "partakers of the Divine nature." (2 Pet. i. 14.)

This is the sense assigned to this passage by *S. Athanasius* (contra Arianos iii. § 61, p. 483), who thus speaks, "Whatsoever the Father determines to create, He makes and creates by Him (the Word), as the Apostle (St. James) says, *By His will* He brought us forth by the Word. Therefore the Will of the Father, which concerns those who are born again, or which concerns those things that are made by any other way, is in the Word, in whom He makes and regenerates what He thinks fit." So *S. Bernard*, Serm. ii. ad Fratres, in Ps. xxiv. 6, and Serm. xvi. in Cantica, and *Æcumenius* and *Theophylact* here.

The sense of the word *Λόγος*, signifying a *Divine person*, was already familiar to the readers of St. James, from their paraphrases of the Old Testament, and from the writings of such authors as *Philo* (see above on John i. 1); and accordingly it is found in those portions of the New Testament which are addressed, as this Epistle is, to *Jewish Christians*. See above on Heb. iv. 12.

Bp. Pearson says (p. 219), "this use of the term *Word* was familiar to the Jews, and this was the reason that *St. John* de-

n Prov. 17. 27.
Eccl. 5. 1, 2.

19ⁿ Ὡστε, ἀδελφοί μου ἀγαπητοί, ἔστω πᾶς ἄνθρωπος ταχύς εἰς τὸ ἀκοῦσαι,

livered to them so great a mystery in *so few words*," as he has done at the beginning of his Gospel; and the same remark is applicable to the language of *St. James*. See also *Bp. Bull*, *Defensio Fidei Nicænæ*, book i. chap. i. § 17—19, and his *Harmon. Apost. Diss.* ii. ch. xv., where he declares the meaning of *St. James* to be that our Christian graces proceed from "the good pleasure of God through Christ, and from the regeneration which the Holy Spirit works in us through the Gospel." And cp. *Westcott*, *Introd. to the Gospels*, pp. 136—141.

This sense, as will be seen, gives force to the Apostle's words, who appears to use the term λόγος in a *twofold sense*, and to pass by a natural transition from the *incarnate Word* to the *spoken Word*; from *Christ Incarnate* to *Christ preached*; as does *St. Paul*, *Heb.* iv. 12, where see note; and on *Eph.* v. 26, and *Titus* i. 3. And *St. Paul* unites the *two senses* of λόγος when he says that in preaching the Word of God again to the Galatians he is *in travail* with them, till *Christ* be formed in them. (*Gal.* iv. 19.)

Our Lord Himself seems to make a transition of this kind, when some were blessing His holy Mother, who had conceived in her womb Him Who is the Eternal Word. "Blessed rather are they who hear the Word of God and keep it" (*Matt.* xii. 50. *Luke* xi. 27), a speech to which *St. James* seems to allude. (See v. 25.)

"Adoro Scripturæ plenitudinem," I adore the fulness of Scripture, said an ancient Father (*Tertullian* c. *Hermog.* c. 22); and it seems to be inconsistent with sound and enlightened Criticism to restrain that fulness, by limiting the terms employed by the Holy Ghost, to *one sense* exclusively, instead of conceding to them that freedom and richness of meaning which is their peculiar characteristic. See above, note on *Rom.* xii. 19.

We may rather suppose, that as our Lord said many things to His disciples in His teaching which could not be understood by them at the time when they were spoken, but afterwards became clear (see above, the Review, &c. at the end of *John* vi. p. 302); so the Holy Ghost, writing by *St. James* and other Apostles, used expressions of a prophetic kind, which were not altogether perspicuous to those who first read their Epistles, but afterward were more fully explained. They, whom *St. James* addressed, being born again by adoption, and created anew in *Christ Jesus*, the Eternal Word (*Eph.* ii. 10), might well be said to be designed by God to be a *first-fruit of His creatures*, for they were *new creatures* in *Christ* (*Gal.* vi. 15. *2 Cor.* v. 17), Who is the *first-begotten* of every creature (*Col.* i. 15), the beginning of the creation of God (*Rev.* iii. 14), by whom all things were created (*Col.* i. 16). By virtue of His Incarnation, and of their Incorporation and Filiation in Him, who is the *First-born* among many brethren (*Rom.* viii. 29), they were made the *first-fruits* of Creation, being advanced to a high pre-eminence and primacy, beyond that which was given to Adam before the Fall (*Gen.* i. 28), and even above the Angels themselves; cp. *Heb.* i. 5—13; ii. 5. 7—16.

This secondary and higher sense of the word ΛΟΓΟΣ is illustrated by the theological statements of early Christian writers on this subject. With *St. James* they affirmed, that God is the Father of all, the πηγή or Fountain of all. The Logos or Word is ἐνδιὰθετος and συναϊδιος, coeternally existing with Him, and eternally coming forth by His Will, as προφορικὸς, or produced from Him, and as προπηδῶν κατ' ἐνέργειαν and κατὰ συγκατάβασιν, and sent forth in His προέλευσις or going forth, to create the World, and to become Incarnate, and so being πρωτότοκος or first-born of all things.

Thus *Irenæus* says (ii. 25. 3), "Thou, O man, art not uncreated, nor wert thou always coexistent with God, like His own Word, but thou art gradually learning from the Word the dispensations of God who made thee." See also *Clemens Alexandrin.* *Protrepticon*, p. 68, "The Word who at first gave us life has manifested Himself as our Instructor, and has taught us to live well; that, as God, He might give us eternal life."

Tertullian, in a passage which illustrates the word ἀπεκύησεν, says, "Christus primogenitus et unigenitus Dei propriè de vulvâ cordis Ipsius" (c. *Praxean.* c. 7), and so *S. Athanasius* (*orat.* c. *Arianos*, v. § 24) speaks of the Logos as coming forth from the Father, from His heart, and begotten of His womb. *Novatian* (*de Trin.* 31) says, "There is one God, without any origin, from whom the Word, the Son, was born. He, born of the Father, dwells ever in the Father." And *Theophilus* of Antioch says (§ 10), "God, having His Own Word indwelling in His own bowels (σπλάγχχνος), begat Him, having breathed Him forth before all things, and through Him He hath made all things; and

He is called the Beginning, because He is the Principle and Lord of all things which were created through Him." See also § 22, and *Bp. Bull*, *Defensio Fidei Nicænæ*, book ii. ch. vi., and book iii. ch. v., and ch. vii., on the language of the Fathers, describing the Word as "insitum et inclusum visceribus Dei;" he well observes (*book* iii. ch. ii.), that the Son of God, born from *Eternity*, is said by the Fathers to have certain other births in time. He was born into the world when He came forth to create the world. He was born again in a wonderful manner, when He descended into the womb of the Virgin, and united Himself to His creature. He is daily born in the hearts of those who embrace Him by faith and love.

S. Hippolytus, in his recently recovered treatise (*Philos.* p. 334), thus speaks,—The one Supreme God generates the Word in His own mind. The Word was in the Father, bearing the Will of the Father Who begat Him; and when the Father commanded that the World should be created, the Word was executing what was pleasing to the Father. The Word alone is of God, of God Himself; wherefore He is God. The Word of God regulates all things, the First-born of the Father. Christ is God over all, Who commanded us to wash away sin from man; regenerating the old man, and having called man His image from the beginning; and if thou hearkenest to His holy commandment, and imitatest in goodness Him who is good, thou wilt be like Him, being honoured by Him, for God has a longing for thee, having divinized thee also for His glory.

In the present Editor's *S. Hippolytus*, pp. 278—302, some other ancient authorities on this subject are collected.

The Eternal Generation of the Divine Logos or WORD, and His subsequent Incarnation in time, and our filial adoption in Him before the foundation of the world, were acts of the Divine Volition, and were effected with the co-operation and instrumentality of the Divine Logos Himself, and it may well be supposed that the Holy Spirit, in writing this Epistle, had these transcendental mysteries of Christian Theology in His mind when He said by *St. James*, that "by His Will He brought us forth by the Word of Truth, that we might be a kind of first-fruit of His creatures."

This higher sense of λόγος includes also the lower one, God brought us forth by the Word of Truth, preached to the World. See further below on v. 21, and on *1 Pet.* i. 23—25.

— εἰς τὸ εἶναι ἡμᾶς ἀπαρχήν] that we should be a kind of first-fruit ("quasdam quasi primitias") of His creatures. The whole Creation partakes in the blessings of Redemption, and waits with hope for a more glorious state thereby; see on *Rom.* viii. 19—22, which is the best exposition of this passage. See also below, *2 Pet.* iii. 13. But man, redeemed by Christ, who has taken human nature, and has restored to us the free use of all the creatures (see on *1 Cor.* iii. 22, 23; vi. 12), and has united our nature to God, and raised it from the grave, and carried it to God's right hand, is the first-fruits of the glorious harvest. Man in Christ is the wave sheaf of the harvest. See *1 Cor.* xv. 20—23.

Some Expositors limit ἀπαρχή to the earliest Christian converts; but this seems too narrow a view.

— αὐτοῦ] A, C have ἐαυτοῦ; and so N from a correction.

19. Ὡστε] wherefore, my beloved brethren, let every man be swift to hear. Since we are born again by the Word of God revealed to us, and dwelling in us, let us be swift to hear it.

Instead of Ὡστε B, C have ἴστε, ye know, or know ye, and A has ἴστε δέ, for ἔστω. B, C have ἔστω δέ. N has ἴστω (ex emend. ἴστε) ἂδ. μ. ἂ. ἔστω δέ. This variety is very worthy of notice. ἴστε, ye know, may seem to be preferable in one respect, on internal grounds, because *St. James* is dealing with persons who boasted much of their knowledge (see on i. 3; iv. 4. 17); and he is endeavouring to convince them that knowledge without practice is vain. "If ye know these things, happy are ye if ye do them." (*John* xiii. 17. See below, v. 22.)

ἴστε is received by *Lachmann* and *Alford*, and was adopted by *Tischendorf* in his earlier editions, but in his last edition he has Ὡστε, and this reading is sanctioned by G, H, and by the great body of the cursive MSS., and by the Syriac, Æthiopic, and Arabic Versions, and by *Theophyl.*, *Æcumen.*, and the *Catena*, and there seems to be a strong objection to ἴστε introduced at the beginning of the sentence, without any adjunct specifying what is the thing known. The only other instance where this word occurs thus placed in N. T. is *Heb.* xii. 17, where it is followed by ὅτι, and in *Eph.* v. 5 it is preceded by τοῦτο γάρ. On the whole, therefore, it seems better to retain the received reading. On this use of Ὡστε, wherefore, see *1 Pet.* iv. 19, and *Winer*, § 41, p. 269.

βραδὺς εἰς τὸ λαλῆσαι, βραδὺς εἰς ὀργήν· ²⁰ ὀργὴ γὰρ ἀνδρὸς δικαιοσύνην ὡς Eccl. 7. 9. Θεοῦ οὐ κατεργάζεται.

²¹ Διὸ ἀποθέμενοι πᾶσαν ῥυπαρίαν καὶ περισσεΐαν κακίας ἐν πραύτητι δέξασθε τὸν ἔμφυτον λόγον τὸν δυνάμενον σῶσαι τὰς ψυχὰς ὑμῶν.

²² Γίνεσθε δὲ ποιηταὶ λόγου, καὶ μὴ ἀκροαταὶ μόνον, παραλογιζόμενοι ἑαυτοὺς. ²³ Ὅτι εἴ τις ἀκροατὴς λόγου ἐστὶ καὶ οὐ ποιητὴς, οὗτος ἔοικεν ἀνδρὶ κατανοοῦντι τὸ πρόσωπον τῆς γενέσεως αὐτοῦ ἐν ἐσόπτρῳ· ²⁴ κατενόησε γὰρ ἑαυτὸν καὶ ἀπελήλυθε, καὶ εὐθέως ἐπελάθετο ὅποιος ἦν.

p Col. 3. 8.
1 Pet. 2. 1.
Ps. 25. 9.
Acts xiii. 26.
Rom. 1. 16.
q Matt. 7. 21.
Luke 11. 28.
Rom. 2. 13.
1 John 3. 7.
r Luke 6. 46.

20. ὀργὴ γάρ] for the wrath of man worketh not the righteousness of God, produceth not that fruit of righteousness (Heb. xii. 11) which cometh forth from God, and is pleasing in His sight.

21. διὸ ἀποθέμενοι] wherefore, having put away all filthiness, and superabundance of malice, which are like rank weeds in a foul soil, which cumber the ground, and render it unfit to receive the seed sown, and must therefore be first purged away, or, like wild branches of unpruned trees, which must be cut away before the graft is inserted, receive ye with meekness τὸν ἔμφυτον λόγον.

The meaning of this expression (τὸν ἔμφυτον λόγον) has been the subject of much controversy.

Ἐμφυτος is properly innate, τὸ ἐν φύσει (Hesych.). Xenophon asks (Mem. iii. 7. 5), "Are not modesty and fear ἔμφυτα in men?" and κακία is described as ἔμφυτος in evil men, in Wisdom xii. 10, and ἔμφυτος was a term used in the ancient schools of Philosophy to describe whatever was, or became a part of the natural constitution of man; see Wetstein, p. 663; and St. Paul uses the word σύμφυτος to signify connate, i. e. with Christ. See above on Rom. vi. 5.

This is the sense given to ἔμφυτον here in the Syriac Version, and so the word seems to be used by St. Barnabas (Epist. 9), where he says, οἶδεν ὁ τὴν ἔμφυτον δωρεὰν τῆς διδασκαλίας αὐτοῦ θέμενος ἐν ἡμῖν, and in cap. 1, "naturalem gratiam accepistis," and so Ignat. ad Ephes. 1, ὃ κέκτησθε φύσει δικαίᾳ, κατὰ πίστιν καὶ ἀγάπην ἐν Ἰησοῦ χριστῷ.

We are here exhorted by St. James to put away all filthiness and malice, because they will choke the growth of the heavenly seed of the Word in our hearts; and we are admonished to receive with meekness the innate Word,—that Word which has been born in our nature. In the highest sense, a sense which may reasonably be supposed to have been in the mind of the Apostle, that Word is Christ. Let us receive Him with meekness, because to all who receive Him, He giveth power to become sons of God (John i. 12), and St. Paul's exhortation is, "as ye have received Christ, so walk ye in Him" (Col. ii. 16), "be ye holy, as He is holy:" see 2 Cor. vi. 18; vii. 1; cp. 1 Pet. i. 15, 16. 1 John iii. 3.

Here, with reverence be it said, is the solution of the difficulty which otherwise would perplex us in interpreting this passage. For, if the λόγος here mentioned is only the written or spoken word, or Gospel preached, it can hardly be said to be innate in us, nor even if we adopt the other rendering, sometimes given to ἔμφυτος, and say that it here signifies engrafted, or implanted, or sown, can it be explained how we are to receive what is already inserted in us; or what is already sown in another soil.

By not confining the sense of λόγος to the word spoken, but by enlarging and elevating its signification, and by applying it to Christ, the difficulty is removed.

For while it is true that Christ by His Incarnation is properly said to be ἔμφυτος, innate, born in us, and to be indeed Emmanuel, God with us, God manifest in our flesh, God dwelling for ever in the nature of us all; or, if we adopt the other sense of ἔμφυτος, while it is true, that Christ is indeed grafted in us as our Netser or Branch (see on Matt. ii. 23), yet will not this avail for our Salvation, unless we receive Him by faith. We must be planted in Him, and He in us by Baptism (Gal. iii. 27), and we must dwell in Him and He in us, by actual and habitual Communion with Him in the Holy Eucharist, and we must abide and bring forth fruit in Him, by lively faith, fervent love, and hearty obedience. Christ, Who is the Branch (Zech. vi. 12), is engrafted on the stock of our Nature; but a scion grafted on a tree will not grow unless it is received and take root in the stock; so His Incarnation will profit us nothing, unless we receive Him into our hearts, and drink in the sap of His grace, and transfuse the life-blood of our wills into Him, and grow and coalesce with Him, and bring forth fruit in Him.

Compare the remarks of A. Lapide here, who observes that in a primary sense, this precept is to be interpreted of reception of Christ the Incarnate Word, but may be adapted also to the reception of the Inspired Word of God. See also Bp. Andrewes (i. 16), who says that we must apprehend Christ, that is, with

St. James, we must lay hold of, or receive *insitum Verbum*, the Word which is daily grafted into us. For "the Word" He is, and in the Word He is received by us.

Compare also the note above on Acts xx. 32, "I commend you to God, and to the WORD of His grace, which (Word) is able to build you up, and to give you an inheritance among those who are sanctified." The expressions there, τῷ λόγῳ τῷ δυναμένῳ κ.τ.λ., are very similar to these words here, τὸν λόγον τὸν δυνάμενον σῶσαι, see also note above on v. 19, and on Heb. iv. 13, and below on 1 Pet. i. 23—25.

In all these passages, the sense doubtless includes the word written or preached, but may not be limited and restricted to it, without violence to the context, and loss of its meaning; and ought to be extended to the Incarnate Word: see on v. 18.

St. James here,—as the other Apostles do (see Heb. iv. 12, 13),—takes advantage of the double sense of the word λόγος, and passes by a natural transition from the one sense to the other.

22. γίνεσθε δὲ ποιηταὶ λόγου] but become ye doers of the word, and not hearers only; for, says St. Paul, Rom. ii. 13, "not the hearers of the law are just before God, but the doers of it shall be justified." Cp. below, iv. 17, where St. James says, that "to him who knoweth to do good, and doeth it not, there is sin," and thus the two Apostles unite in censuring the notion prevalent among many of the Jews, who relied on their descent from Abraham (Matt. iii. 8, 9), and imagined that the knowledge of the law, apart from the practice of it, would secure their acceptance with God, and procure them the rewards of heaven; see further above, Rom. ii. 27—29. This was specially the case with the zealots of that age; see Josephus, B. J. vii. 30, and above, Introduction, p. 2.

On this text see the sermon of Bp. Andrewes, v. p. 195. "As S. Augustine saith, *accedat ad verbum*, unto the word that we hear let there be joined the element of the work, that is, some real elemental deed; *et sic fit magnum sacramentum pietatis*, and so shall you have 'the great mystery,' or sacrament 'of godliness.' For indeed godliness is as a sacrament; hath not only the mystery to be known, but the exercise to be done; not the word to be heard, but the work also to be performed. Which very sacrament of godliness is the manifesting of the Word in the flesh; which itself is lively expressed by us when we are doers of the word; as it is well gathered out of our Saviour Christ's speech to them which interrupted Him in His sermon and told Him, 'His mother was without.' 'Who is my mother?' saith He (Matt. xii. 50). These here that hear and do My word are My mother, they 'travail' of Me till I am fashioned in them (Gal. iv. 19). Hearing they receive the immortal seed of the word (1 Pet. i. 23); by a firm purpose of doing they conceive; by a longing desire they quicken, by an earnest endeavour they travail with it; and when the work is wrought, *verbum caro factum est*, they have incarnate the Word (John i. 14). Therefore to the woman's acclamation, 'Blessed be the womb that bare Thee' (Luke xi. 27), True, saith Christ, but that blessing can extend only to one and no more. I will tell you how you may be blessed too; blessed are they that so incarnate the written word by doing it, as the blessed Virgin gave flesh to the eternal Word by bearing it." See also Bp. Sanderson, iii. p. 360.

23, 24. ὅτι εἴ τις] for if a man be a hearer of the word, and not a doer, he is like a man who considers his natural face in a glass (or mirror); for he considered himself, and is gone away (perfect tense, and he remains absent), and straightway he forgot what manner of man he was, as reflected in the glass.

On the use of the aorists here, see above, v. 11, and Winer, p. 249, and on the word ἐσόπτρον, a mirror, see above, on 1 Cor. xiii. 12. The perfect ἀπελήλυθεν is introduced between the two aorists to denote that the absence is continual.

The Apostle has been insisting on the duty of hearing (v. 19), and now he guards against the notion that it is enough to hear. Hearing is necessary; but it is not enough. To hear and not to do, is self-deceit. He who hears the Word is like a man who considers his natural face in a mirror. For the Word of God is the mirror of the soul. It shows us to ourselves as we

s 2 Cor. 3. 18.
ch. 2. 12.
John 13. 17.
Luke 6. 47.

t Ps. 34. 13.
ch. 3. 6.
1 Pet. 3. 10.
Matt. 15. 11, 18.
u Isa. 1. 16, 17.
& 58. 6, 7.
Rom. 12. 2.
a Lev. 19. 15.
Deut. 1. 17.
& 16. 19.
2 Chron. 19. 7.
Prov. 24. 23.
& 28. 21.
Ecclus. 42. 1. Matt. 22. 16.

25 ^s Ὁ δὲ παρακύνσας εἰς νόμον τέλειον τὸν τῆς ἐλευθερίας, καὶ παραμείνας, οὗτος οὐκ ἀκροατὴς ἐπιλησμονῆς γενόμενος, ἀλλὰ ποιητὴς ἔργου, οὗτος μακάριος ἐν τῇ ποιήσει αὐτοῦ ἔσται.

26 ^t Εἴ τις δοκεῖ θρησκός εἶναι, μὴ χαλιναγωγῶν γλῶσσαν αὐτοῦ, ἀλλὰ ἀπατῶν καρδίαν αὐτοῦ, τούτου μάταιος ἢ θρησκεία. 27 ^u Θρησκεία καθαρὰ καὶ ἀμίαντος παρὰ Θεῷ καὶ Πατρὶ αὕτη ἐστίν, ἐπισκέπτεσθαι ὀρφανοὺς καὶ χήρας ἐν τῇ θλίψει αὐτῶν, ἄσπιλον ἑαυτὸν τηρεῖν ἀπὸ τοῦ κόσμου.

II. 1 ^a Ἀδελφοί μου, μὴ ἐν προσωποληψίαις ἔχετε τὴν πίστιν τοῦ Κυρίου

are. Especially does it show our *πρόσωπον γενέσεως*, our natural face; our *faciem nativitatis* (*Vulg.*), our condition by nature. It, and it alone, reveals to us what we are by nature in the first Adam, and what we become by grace in the Second Adam. Cp. Augustine in Ps. 118, vol. iv. p. 1834.

So far he does well. But the Word of God is something more than a mirror to be looked into, it is a perfect Law (v. 25) to be obeyed. And whosoever hears it and does not obey it, treats it only as a mirror, and looks at himself in it; and goes forth from hearing the Scripture or the Sermon in the Church, and mingles with the world; or passes from reading the Bible to other books and to other pursuits; and forgets what manner of man he is: how frail and sinful in God's sight; he forgets his need of repentance, and of pardon, and of grace; and the warnings of Death and Judgment that he has heard in the Sermon, or read in the Bible; and the promises of heavenly glory, and the threats of future punishment, pass away from his mind and disappear from his memory, like evanescent reflexions from a glass.

25. ὁ δὲ παρακύνσας] but he who turneth aside from all earthly contemplations, and bends his eyes downward and rivets them on the Word of God,—not like one who looks at the reflexion of his face in a glass; but who knows it to be the rule of his life, and the perfect law, the law of liberty, and who abideth therein, and doth not become a forgetful hearer, but a doer of the work, he shall be blessed in his doing. On this meaning of the word παρακύνσας see 1 Pet. i. 12, and Wetstein i. p. 823, and the use of the word ἐγκύπτειν, applied to studying the Scriptures, by S. Clement, i. 40, and i. 53, and by S. Polycarp, Phil. 3. The sense of παρὰ in παρακύνσας is explained by παρὰ in παραμείνας. It indicates also that the law of God is a fixed object; like a book or chart, which lies before his eyes, and below them, and on which he rivets them. "O Lord, how I love Thy law! all the day long is my study in it." Ps. cxix. 97. Cp. Ps. i. 2. Josh. i. 8.

— νόμον τέλειον τὸν τῆς ἐλευθερίας] the perfect law—that of liberty. Christ has redeemed us by His blood from the slavery of sin and Satan into the glorious Liberty of the Sons of God. See on Gal. v. 1—13. Rom. viii. 21. He has redeemed us from the curse of the Law (Gal. iii. 13), and purchased us to Himself (1 Cor. vi. 20; vii. 23), and has thus made us free (John viii. 36), and has conveyed to us these blessings effected by the operation of the Holy Ghost, which is therefore called God's free Spirit (Ps. li. 12. 2 Cor. iii. 17); and has revealed to us these things in the preaching of the Gospel, which is the perfect Law of Liberty, the Law of emancipation from evil, and of obedience to God, whose service is perfect freedom, and has bound us to obey the Law of Love, and to serve one another thereby (Gal. v. 13) as servants of God (1 Pet. ii. 16). So that while we are all free by faith, we must all serve by love. And let him take heed to obey this law of liberty, for by it he will be judged (ii. 12). See below on 1 Pet. ii. 16, and Theophylact here, and Bp. Sanderson, Sermon. iii. 276.

He who binds himself to study and to observe this Law, and does not become a hearer of forgetfulness, that is, a hearer who is not characterized by obeying, but by forgetting what he hears (on this use of the Genitive, see below, ii. 6, and above on 1 Thess. ii. 13, and on Matt. xxi. 11. Luke xviii. 6. Acts ix. 12), but a doer of the work, is blessed in his doing. There seems to be a reference to our Lord's own speech, Matt. xii. 46—48. Luke xi. 27, 28, and cp. the close of the Sermon on the Mount, vii. 24—27.

26. εἴ τις δοκεῖ θρησκός εἶναι] if any one deemeth himself to be religious, or devout; or "would be holden" for such, as Bp. Andrewes renders it (iii. 216). On this sense of δοκεῖ, putat se (*Vulg.*), see Mark x. 42. Luke xxii. 24. 1 Cor. x. 12. Winer, § 65, Art. 7, p. 540.

θρησκός is applied specially to external acts of religious worship, and public exercises of devotion (see Acts xxvi. 5. Col. ii. 18), and is, therefore, explained by εὐσεβής, and even by δεισιδαίμων, by Hesychius. See Trench, Synonyms N. T. xlviii., and below, note on v. 27.

— μὴ χαλιναγωγῶν] not bridling his tongue; a moral duty of primary necessity in God's sight, without which all professions of piety and devotion are odious to Him. On this text see Bp. Butler, Sermon iv., and Dr. Barrow, Sermon. xiii. vol. i. p. 283.

On the metaphor cp. Ps. xxxi. 1, and Philo ap. Loesner, p. 459, and below, iii. 2, 3.

27. θρησκεία καθαρὰ] worship that is pure and undefiled before God (whatever it may seem in the sight of men) . . . is this, To visit the fatherless and widows in their affliction. ἐπισκέπτεσθαι, to visit, is the word specially applied to visiting the sick and needy. See Matt. xxv. 36. 43.

St. James uses the word θρησκεία, repeated from θρησκός in v. 26, to show that no external acts of worship are of any avail without Charity, and that mercy and charity itself are the devotion and the worship which God most loves. See Matt. ix. 13; xii. 7, and on Luke xvii. 15. Compare Isa. lviii. 6, 7, "Is not this the fast that I have chosen,—to deal thy bread to the hungry?"

This declaration of the Apostle may suggest guidance to Christian Pastors, for such a regulation of the frequency of the public services of religion in their Parishes, conformably with the Laws of the Church, as will leave sufficient and ample time for the visitation of the sick and needy in their flocks. Compare the precept below, v. 14, and S. Polycarp there cited using the word ἐπισκέπτεσθαι in the same relation as St. James does here.

By the words παρὰ τῷ Θεῷ, before God, St. James intimates, that, however fair may be the appearance of devotion separate from Charity, in the sight of men, it is unclean in the eyes of God; and he designates God here as the Father, because God is God of the widow, and Father of the fatherless, Ps. lxxviii. 5; cxlvi. 9. Further, St. James thus teaches the important lesson that works of benevolence—such as concern Orphans and Widows—are not profitable unless they are done as acts of worship; i. e. for the love of God. Otherwise, they are dead works. Heb. ix. 14. Cp. Mark xii. 31. 1 John iv. 19—21.

The exhortation of St. James concerning widows and orphans was rendered specially appropriate by the circumstances of the Jewish Christians at this time. See Acts ii. 44; vi. 1.

— καθαρὰ—ἀμίαντος—ἄσπιλον] pure—undefiled—unspotted. St. James, by using these words, studiously indicates the duty of the true θρησκεία or worship, as distinguished, in its purity and holiness, from that of those who relied on external acts of purification in ceremonial washings and cleansings, as the Jews did (Mark vii. 4. 8. Heb. ix. 10), who made long prayers, and devoured widows' houses (Matt. xxiii. 25, 26), and laid much stress on other ritual observances in the eyes of men, and cared little for the holiness of heart in the sight of God, and whose lives were fair externally like whited sepulchres, but within were full of uncleanness (Matt. xxiii. 27).

— ἄσπιλον ἑαυτὸν τηρεῖν] to keep himself unspotted. There is no καὶ prefixed to this clause. St. James (like the Hebrew Prophets, e. g. Isaiah i. 18, "Wash ye, make you clean," &c.) loves asyndeta. See v. 6. "Cleanse your hands, ye sinners; purify your hearts, ye double-minded" (iv. 8). See Theophylact here.

He also here delivers a protest against that hypocritical religion of formal and speculative professions of knowledge, which characterized some of those to whom he is writing, and who are thus described by one of the Apostolic Fathers: "They have no care for the widow, nor for the orphan, nor for the afflicted, nor for the hungry and thirsty." S. Ignatius, ad Smyrn. 6. S. Polycarp ad Phil. 6, exhorts the Clergy to be faithful, in "visiting the sick, not neglecting the widow or the fatherless."

CH. II. 1. Ἀδελφοί μου] My brethren. He begins with a memento of brotherhood, in order to correct their infractions of its laws. On these verses, 1—10, see S. Augustine's Epistle to S. Jerome, Ep. clxvii., vol. v. p. 890.

— μὴ ἐν προσωποληψίαις] hold not ye the faith of our Lord Jesus Christ of glory, in respectings of persons. Ye, who boast of your faith,—hold not the faith of Christ, the faith delivered by

ἡμῶν Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ τῆς δόξης. ² Εὰν γὰρ εἰσέλθῃ εἰς τὴν συναγωγὴν ὑμῶν ἀνὴρ χρυσοδακτύλιος ἐν ἐσθῇτι λαμπρᾷ, εἰσέλθῃ δὲ καὶ πτωχὸς ἐν ῥυπαρᾷ, ἐσθῇτι, ³ καὶ ἐπιβλέψῃτε ἐπὶ τὸν φοροῦντα τὴν ἐσθῆτα τὴν λαμπρὰν, καὶ εἴπητε αὐτῷ, Σὺ κάθου ὧδε καλῶς, καὶ τῷ πτωχῷ εἴπητε, Σὺ στήθι ἐκεῖ, ἢ κάθου ὧδε ὑπὸ τὸ ὑποπόδιόν μου,—⁴ καὶ οὐ διεκρίθητε ἐν ἑαυτοῖς, καὶ ἐγένεσθε κριταὶ διαλογισμῶν πονηρῶν;

⁵ Ἀκούσατε, ἀδελφοί μου ἀγαπητοί· οὐχ ὁ Θεὸς ἐξελέξατο τοὺς πτωχοὺς

b Luke 6. 20.
& 12. 21.
John 7. 48.
1 Cor. 1. 26, &c.
1 Tim. 6. 18, 19.
Exod. 20. 6.

Him, and of which He is the object, Who took the nature of us all, and Who, although He is the Lord of glory, vouchsafed to become poor for your sakes; and in Whom there is neither rich nor poor, and Who will judge all without respect of persons, and Who has made you all brethren in Himself, and Who will reward with heavenly *glory* works of love done to the least of His brethren in love to Him (Matt. xxv. 40),—hold not ye *that faith* in *respectings* of persons, so as to distinguish one brother, and fellow-member of Christ, from another, in *spiritual* matters, in His sight; and thus to contravene the primary principles of communion and fellowship in the body of Christ.

Be not ye guilty of such *inconsistency* as this. Mark the contrast between *faith* and *respect of persons*; similar to that in Rom. i. 18, "holding the *truth* in *unrighteousness*;" and so *S. Polycarp* (Phil. 6), "bearing the name of the Lord in *hypocrisy*."

This *partiality*, of which St. James speaks, is similar to that censured by St. Paul (1 Cor. xi. 21) in regard to personal distinctions in *spiritual* matters. We are commanded to render *honour* to those to whom honour is due. (Rom. xiii. 7.) Differences are fitly made between man and man in regard to *social* order and degree, but not in *spiritual* respects, such as the administration of the Lord's Supper, of which St. Paul is speaking, and in Christian assemblies for public worship, to which St. James refers. Such differences are differences between *brother* and *brother* in the very condition of Christian *brotherhood*. See *Bp. Sanderson's* remarks, i. 78, and compare those of *S. Augustine*, Epist. 167 (cited by *Bede* and *Lapide*), censuring the preferment of personal *friends* and *relatives*, as *such*, to ecclesiastical dignities.

Observe, τῆς δόξης, of *glory*, placed *emphatically* at the end of the sentence; and so translated by the *Vulgate*, *Arabic*, and *Æthiopic* Versions. The words τοῦ Κυρίου may be so extended as to apply to τῆς δόξης, the Lord Jesus Christ of *glory*.

This separation of the *genitive*, τῆς δόξης, from the word on which it depends, Κυρίου, by a *trajection*, need not create any difficulty; and it adds force to the sentence. The words 'of *Glory*,' are purposely reserved for the end, for the sake of the argument which they contain; and they follow Κυρίου, as ὁργῆς follows τέκνα in Eph. ii. 3. Cp. the collocation of the words in Phil. ii. 10. 2 Pet. iii. 2; and *Wiesinger* here; and *Winer*, p. 172; and Acts vii. 2, ὁ Θεὸς δόξης, the God of *Glory*.

Contemplate the Lord of *Glory* (1 Cor. ii. 8), who humbled Himself, and took the poor man's nature, and joined all in Himself, and promises glory to humility. (Luke xiv. 11. James iv. 10.)

This consideration is the groundwork of the Apostle's argument and exhortation. This is the *glory* which Christ Himself offers to you,—not the *vain glory* of this world, which ye seek by preferring the rich to the poor, and by having men's persons in admiration for the sake of advantage to yourselves. (Jude 16.)

2. εἰς τὴν συναγωγὴν ὑμῶν] into your place of assembly; the assembly of you who are all brethren, and which is held for the purpose of manifesting your brotherhood in Christ. St. James uses the word συναγωγή, *synagogue*, to show that he is speaking of a place of assembly which was to them Christians, what the Jewish *synagogue* was to the Jews, a place for *religious worship*. Cp. *Huther*, p. 92. This word is very appropriate here, as showing to the Jewish and Jewish-Christian readers of this Epistle, that the Christian religion is not *contrary* to the Mosaic Law, and that the worship of the Church is the legitimate expansion of that of the Synagogue. Compare the word ἐπισυναγωγὴ (Heb. x. 25), applied to the assembling together of Christians for religious exercises. There were *synagogues* of various nations at Jerusalem (see Acts vi. 9), and at the time when this Epistle was written, the Christians had not wholly severed themselves, as a distinct religious body, from the Jews. The Christians, in a spirit of charity and wisdom, did all in their power to retain unbroken the unity and the continuity of the Church of God—the Church of Abraham, Moses, and the Prophets. Evidence of this desire is seen in the conduct of St. Paul, always resorting to, and preaching in, the *synagogue* of the great cities which he visited; and in his language to the Jews at Jerusalem (Acts xxii. 5); and in this expression of St. James applying the word *synagogue* to a Christian

Church. The Christian places of worship at Jerusalem were "*synagogues of Christians*." The word συναγωγὴ passed from the mouth of Jews into that of Christians. See *Suicer*, in v. Συναγωγὰι means *religious meetings of Christians* in *Ignatius*, ad Polyc. 4.

Some Expositors suppose that συναγωγὴ here means a *civil* assembly; but in *civil* assemblies personal distinctions are fit and necessary (see above on v. 1), and such an interpretation is inconsistent with the Apostle's argument here.

— χρυσοδακτύλιος] literally, *golden-ringed*; making an ostentatious display of *golden rings* on his hands, as the rich and effeminate did; "digiti omnes onerantur annulis," says *Pliny*, H. N. xxxiii. 6; and "per digitos currit levis annulus omnes," *Martial*, v. 11; and cp. *Juvenal*, vii. 140.

3. κάθου] sit thou; for κάθησο, Matt. xxii. 44. Luke xx. 42. Acts ii. 34; not found in classical Greek. *Winer*, § 14, p. 75.

4. καὶ οὐ διεκρίθητε ἐν ἑαυτοῖς] and were ye not contentious among yourselves? did ye not thus become litigants among yourselves? The καὶ is not in A, nor in R, nor in B**, C, but, if genuine, it is here used with an abrupt burst of vehement indignation. And, while ye were making, by your practice, such an invidious and uncharitable distinction between the poor man and the rich, in your *religious* assemblies, what was it that you were doing all the while? did you not thus constitute yourselves virtually into parties in a suit?

The aorist here has a special fitness, as marking a thing done already, while another action was going on. While ye were making these distinctions ye made yourselves to become like disputants in a law-suit.

This aorist (διεκρίθητε) of the passive form has a middle sense, as ἀπεκρίθην in the New Testament, and numerous other words; indeed, διεκρίθην itself, Matt. xxi. 21. Mark xi. 23. Rom. iv. 20; see *Lobeck*, Phrynich. p. 108; *Winer*, § 39, p. 233, and διακρίνομαι has this sense of litigation in the LXX, Jer. xv. 10, ἄνδρα διακρινόμενον, a *disputatious person*; and so διακριθήσομαι, I will contend. Ezek. xvii. 20. Joel iii. 2. Cp. Ezek. xx. 36, διεκρίθην πρὸς τοὺς πατέρας ὑμῶν.

The sense therefore is, By such partiality as this, did ye not convert the Christian Church—where all are brethren—into a court of assize? and did ye not abdicate your character of brotherhood for that of litigants with those who are your brethren, and thus wage an intestine warfare among yourselves?

Some interpreters suppose that οὐ διεκρίθητε ἐν ἑαυτοῖς signifies, and did ye not, by such inconsistent conduct as this, put yourselves at variance with yourselves? but the former exposition is more consistent with the usual meaning of διακρίνομαι, and with the context.

There are two distinct grounds of censure—

(1) That by this partiality they become like *disputants* in a law-suit (cp. 1 Cor. vi. 6, ἀδελφὸς μετὰ ἀδελφοῦ κρίνεται), instead of being brethren: this is the rebuke in this clause.

(2) That they thus constitute themselves into *Judges*; this is developed in what follows.

— καὶ ἐγένεσθε κριταὶ δ. π.;] and did ye not become judges—not acting calmly on principles of equity, but swayed passionately by the party-bias of *evil surmises* and *contentious cogitations*?

The genitive διαλογισμῶν is the genitive of the *quality*. See above, i. 25; and compare Luke xvi. 18, τὸν οἰκονόμον τῆς ἀδικίας; and xviii. 6, ὁ κριτὴς τῆς ἀδικίας. The sense of the word διαλογισμοί is best illustrated by St. Paul's use of it, Rom. xiv. 1, where see note.

5. ἀκούσατε, ἀδελφοί μου ἀγαπητοί] *Hearken, my beloved brethren*. After a vehement rebuke, St. James changes his tone, and reasons with them. These contrasts, frequent in this Epistle, impart to it the liveliness of a spoken address, and place before our eyes the sacred writer in a clear light. Cp. below, on v. 6, 7.

The same may be said of the rapid succession of short questions (see here v. 6, 7), and brief apothegms (see iv. 7—9), and sharp reproofs (see v. 5, 6), and the introduction of other parties speaking, as in a dramatic dialogue (see ii. 15—18); all these

τῷ κόσμῳ, πλουσίους ἐν πίστει, καὶ κληρονόμους τῆς βασιλείας, ἧς ἐπηγ-
 c 1 Cor. 11. 22. γειλατο τοῖς ἀγαπῶσιν αὐτόν; ⁶ ὑμεῖς δὲ ἡτιμάσατε τὸν πτωχόν. Οὐχὶ οἱ
 πλούσιοι καταδυναστεύουσιν ὑμῶν, καὶ αὐτοὶ ἔλκουσιν ὑμᾶς εἰς κριτήρια;
⁷ Οὐκ αὐτοὶ βλασφημοῦσι τὸ καλὸν ὄνομα τὸ ἐπικληθὲν ἐφ' ὑμᾶς;
 d Lev. 19. 18. ⁸ ^d Εἰ μέντοι νόμον τελεῖτε βασιλικὸν κατὰ τὴν γραφήν, Ἀγαπήσεις τὸν
 Matt. 22. 39. πλησίον σου ὡς σεαυτὸν, καλῶς ποιεῖτε ⁹ ^e εἰ δὲ προσωποληπτεῖτε, ἁμαρτίαν
 Mark 12. 31. ἐργάζεσθε, ἐλεγχόμενοι ὑπὸ τοῦ νόμου ὡς παραβάται.
 Rom. 13. 8, 9. ¹⁰ ^f Ὅστις γὰρ ὅλον τὸν νόμον τηρήσῃ, πταιίσῃ δὲ ἐν ἐνὶ, γέγονε πάντων
 Gal. 5. 14. ἔνοχος. ¹¹ ^g Ὁ γὰρ εἰπὼν, Μὴ μοιχεύσης, εἶπε καί, Μὴ φονεύσης· εἰ δὲ
 e Lev. 19. 15. οὐ μοιχεύσεις, φονεύσεις δὲ, γέγονας παραβάτης νόμου.
 Deut. 1. 17. ¹² ^h Οὕτω λαλεῖτε καὶ οὕτω ποιεῖτε, ὡς διὰ νόμου ἐλευθερίας μέλλοντες κρί-
 Deut. 5. 17.
 h ch 1. 25.

features of this Epistle give to it a character of freshness, vigour, energy, earnestness, and sometimes of oratorical sublimity.

— τοὺς πτωχοὺς τῷ κόσμῳ] *those who are poor to the world, i. e. in the eyes of the world*, opposed to πλουσίους ἐν πίστει, *rich in faith*. The dative κόσμῳ is in A*, B, C*, N, and *Vulg.*, and may be compared with its use in Acts vii. 20, ἀστειὸς τῷ Θεῷ, and 2 Cor. x. 4, δυνατὰ τῷ Θεῷ, and so *mihi* in *Horat.* (1 Ep. xvi. 66), "*liber mihi non erit unquam*." *Elz.* has the ge- tive τοῦ κόσμου τούτου. Cp. 1 Cor. i. 27.

6. ὑμεῖς δὲ ἡτιμάσατε τὸν πτωχόν] *but ye dishonoured the poor man: τὸν πτωχόν, the poor man, as such, ye dishonoured him for his poverty.* Cp. δ πλούσιος, i. 11; "*pauperem exhonora- rāstis*." (*Vulg.*) ἀτιμάζω is more forcible than *despise*: it is to *degrade* from the condition of honour, which he has as a member of Christ, Who vouchsafed to wear the garb of poverty (2 Cor. viii. 9); and it is to *reduce* him to a state of ἀτιμία, as by an ignominious sentence of condemnation in a law-suit, and to dis- franchise him of his Christian citizenship.

— οὐχὶ οἱ πλούσιοι] *Do not the rich drag you into courts of justice?* Do they not do this on account of your Christian pro- fession, as if you were disturbers of the public peace? as the Jews did to St. Stephen at Jerusalem (Acts vii. 12); and to St. Paul at Thessalonica (Acts xvii. 5), and at Corinth (xviii. 12). Cp. *Justin Martyr*, *Apol.* i. c. 31.

7. βλασφημοῦσι] *they blaspheme that Name; especially in their synagogues.* Cp. Acts xxvi. 11, and note above on 1 Cor. xii. 3; and *Justin Martyr*, c. Tryph. c. 16, with *Otto's* note, p. 57.

— τὸ καλὸν ὄνομα] *the glorious Name which was invoked over you: especially when ye were baptized into it* (Matt. xxviii. 29); and which is invoked in all the benedictions which are pro- nounced over you in the holy offices of those religious assem- blies, which you desecrate by unchristian partialities. Cp. Acts ix. 14. 21. Rom. x. 12. 1 Cor. i. 2. 1 Pet. i. 17. *Clemens R.* i. 58, πάση ψυχῇ ἐπικεκλημένη τὸ ἅγιον ὄνομα αὐτοῦ. "*The Name*" is emphatically the Name of Christ, see 3 John 7.

Some read ἐπικληθὲν ὄνομα ἐφ' ὑμᾶς, the name by which ye are called, and this sense is authorized by Hebrew use, Gen. xlviii. 16. 2 Sam. vi. 12. 1 Kings viii. 43; but the words ἐπικα- λείσθαι ὄνομα are often used in the sense of *invoking a name* in the LXX, and this sense seems preferable; and so *Bede* renders the words in his note on v. 5, "*Nonne blasphemant bonum no- men quod invocatum est super vos?*"

Indeed, there appears to be a contrast between the blas- phemy of that Name in the Jewish synagogues on the one side (1 Cor. xii. 3), and the invocation of it on the other, in the Christian συναγωγαί; and this sense is sanctioned by the sacred language of the Christian Church, applying the word ἐπικλησις to the act of solemn invocation of the Most Holy Name in her Liturgies. *Bingham*, *Eccl. Ant.* xv. 1.

8. εἰ μέντοι] *if, however, ye are fulfilling the law (as ye imagine and profess that ye are doing), then, indeed, ye are doing well, but—.* μέντοι is *adversative* here, as usual. John iv. 27; vii. 13; xx. 5. 2 Tim. ii. 19. "*Si tamen*," *Vulg.*

— νόμον βασιλικόν] *the law royal; either as given directly by the King, Christ, and as such distinguished from the Levitical Law, given by the ministry of the servant, Moses* (Heb. iii. 5); or as being the *first and great commandment*, the sovereign law under which all other laws concerning moral duty to man are ranged, and from which they are derived. (Matt. xxii. 39, 40. Rom. xiii. 8—10.) Cp. *Bp. Andrewes*, iii. p. 111. *Bp. Sanderson*, ii. 276; iv. 153.

— κατὰ τὴν γραφήν] *according to the Scripture.* Lev. xix. 18. Matt. xxii. 39.

10. ὅστις γὰρ ὅλον τὸν νόμον τηρήσῃ] *for whosoever shall have kept the whole law (if this were possible), but have offended in one precept, has become guilty of all.*

Almighty God declared in the Levitical Law. "Cursed is every one that continueth not in *all* things which are written in the book of the Law to do them." (Deut. xxvii. 26. Gal. iii. 10.) And though the *rigour* of this curse is now taken away by Christ, yet the *obligation to obedience* remains. See notes above on Gal. iii. 12; and on 2 Cor. v. 4.

Whosoever, therefore, *willingly and wilfully* allows himself in the indulgence of *any sin*, which is the breach of God's law (Rom. iv. 15), is guilty of breaking the *whole law of God*.

Although men may be diligent therefore in the observance of many portions of God's service, yet if they knowingly and deliberately neglect any other part of it, they virtually observe *no part*. The same God who gave one commandment, gave all; and whosoever *breaks one wilfully, keeps none truly*. Whoever allows himself in the breach of one part of the law, convicts himself of loving and serving himself, more than the Lawgiver. Whoever loves and prizes one of God's commandments, will love and prize all; for real obedience is grounded in love to Him Whom we obey; and whoever disobeys Him wilfully and habi- tually in one respect, proves that he does not really love God; and therefore his observance of other parts of God's Law is not grounded on a right foundation, it is not true obedience, and so he is guilty of all, and therefore cannot expect a reward from God for obedience, Who will give a *crown of glory* to them, and them only, *who love Him* (i. 12), and who *prove their love* by obedience. John xiv. 15.

On this text the reader may compare *S. Augustine's* Epistle above quoted (who understands the word ἐνὶ, *one*, as applicable to the *one law*, that of *love*) with the remarks of *Bp. Bull*, *Harmon. Apostol.* Diss. ii. ch. vii., and *Dean Jackson* on the Creed, bk. iv. ch. v., and bk. xi. ch. xxx. and ch. xxxiii.

The connexion of the Apostle's reasoning is this: he had blamed them for *partiality* with regard to *God's children*, their own brethren, in their acts of religion; he had shown them that such acts of partiality were inconsistent with the *royal law of brotherly love*, and he now censures them for *partiality* with respect to *God's precepts*, and warns them, that however care- ful they might be in their own *devotional exercises* in those *public religious assemblies* (cp. i. 27), and however scrupulous they might be in the observance of *other parts* of Christian duty, yet by such acts of partiality they are guilty of *sin*, and are *convicted by the law as transgressors* (v. 9), and vitiate all their other works, and show that those works are built on a wrong foundation, and not on love to God; and that they violate the whole law by this wilful violation of *one part*, especially so *fundamental* a part as that of *love*.

This declaration would have had a peculiar pertinency for the *Jewish Christians*, who were in danger of being led astray by the errors of Pharisaic teachers, who were accustomed to inquire, "*Which is the great commandment in the Law?*" and who imagined that if a man took pains to observe *some portion*, espe- cially the ceremonial portion of the Law, he might safely indulge himself in the neglect of others, and in the commission of acts contrary to the spirit and letter of the Law. See above on Matt. xxii. 23. 36, and xxiii. 13, and cp. *Bp. Bull* (*Harm. Apost. Diss.* ii. chap. xvi.), and *Dr. Pococke* (on Hosea xiv. 2), who recite the rabbinical saying, that "*God gave so many commandments, in order that by doing any of them they might be saved*," in oppo- sition to what St. James teaches, that by wilfully *breaking any of* them, they are guilty of the *breach of all*.

νεσθαι· ¹³ ἡ γὰρ κρίσις ἀνέλεος τῷ μὴ ποιήσαντι ἔλεος· κατακαυχᾶται ἔλεος κρίσεως.

i Matt. 6. 15.
& 18. 35.
& 25. 41, 42.
Luke 16. 25.

¹⁴ τί τὸ ὄφελος, ἀδελφοί μου, ἐὰν πίστιν λέγῃ τις ἔχειν, ἔργα δὲ μὴ ἔχῃ; μὴ δύναται ἡ πίστις σῶσαι αὐτόν; ¹⁵ Ἐὰν δὲ ἀδελφὸς ἡ ἀδελφὴ γυμνοὶ ὑπάρχωσι, καὶ λειπόμενοι ὦσι τῆς ἐφημέρου τροφῆς, ¹⁶ εἶπη δέ τις αὐτοῖς ἐξ ὑμῶν, Ὑπάγετε ἐν εἰρήνῃ, θερμαίνεσθε καὶ χορτάζεσθε, μὴ δώτε δὲ αὐτοῖς τὰ ἐπιτήδεια τοῦ σώματος, τί τὸ ὄφελος; ¹⁷ οὕτω καὶ ἡ πίστις, ἐὰν μὴ ἔχῃ ἔργα, νεκρά ἐστι καθ' ἑαυτήν. ¹⁸ Ἀλλ' ἐρεῖ τις, Σὺ πίστιν ἔχεις, καὶ γὰρ ἔργα ἔχω· δείξόν μοι τὴν πίστιν σου χωρὶς τῶν ἔργων, καὶ γὰρ δείξω σοι ἐκ τῶν ἔργων μου τὴν πίστιν.

k Matt. 7. 26.
ch. 1. 23.
l Luke 8. 11.
l John 3. 17.
m l John 3. 16—18.

¹⁹ Σὺ πιστεύεις ὅτι εἷς ὁ Θεὸς ἐστι; Καλῶς ποιεῖς· καὶ τὰ δαιμόνια πιστεύουσιν, καὶ φρίσσουσιν.

n ch. 3. 13.
Matt. 7. 17.
Rom. 8. 1.
2 Cor. 5. 17.
& 7. 1.
l Thess. 1. 3—10.
o Matt. 8. 29.
Mark 1. 24.
Acts xix. 15.

12. οὕτω λαλεῖτε] *so speak ye, and so do ye, as being to be judged by the law of liberty*; which has made you all dear children and brethren in Christ (i. 25), and therefore *by love serve one another* (Gal. v. 13), and prove, by obedience, your love to Him Who redeemed you by His own blood, from bondage into the glorious liberty of the sons of God. (Rom. viii. 21.)

13. ἡ γὰρ κρίσις] *for the judgment* (observe the article ἡ), i. e. the future judgment, will be without mercy to him who did not show mercy; *mercy glorieth against judgment*; triumphs over it. "Blessed are the merciful, for they shall obtain mercy" (Matt. v. 7). See iii. 14, and the Parable of the Heavenly King, Who, when His servant had nothing wherewith to pay, *freely forgave* the debt of the 10,000 talents, and thus set an example to His servants how they are to deal with their fellow-servants, namely, in such a spirit, that mercy may triumph over sternness and severity; and also gave a warning of the woe which will overtake them if they are not merciful to others, as He has been merciful to them. (Matt. xviii. 23—35). *Elz.* has καὶ before κατακαυχᾶται, but it is not in B, C, G, H. Cp. i. 27.

Some Expositors understand this sentence as declaring that mercy shown on man's side to his brother man, has power to triumph over, and disarm, the justice of God. See *Augustine* in Ps. cxliii., and so *Chrysostom* in an eloquent passage cited here in the *Catena*, p. 13: "Mercy is dear to God, and intercedes for the sinner, and breaks his chains, and dissipates the darkness, and quenches the fire of hell, and destroys the worm, and rescues from the gnashing of teeth. To her the gates of heaven are opened. She is the queen of virtues, and makes men like to God, for it is written, 'Be ye merciful as your Father also is merciful' (Luke vi. 36). She has silver wings like the dove, and feathers of gold, and soars aloft, and is clothed with divine glory, and stands by the throne of God; when we are in danger of being condemned, she rises up and pleads for us, and covers us with her defence, and enfolds us in her wings. God loves mercy more than sacrifice." (Matt. ix. 13.)

The lines of Shakspeare on the quality of Mercy (*Merchant of Venice*, act iv. sc. 1) may have been suggested by this passage of St. James. Cp. *Bp. Andrewes*, iii. 152; v. 3.

On the form ἀνίλεως see *Winer*, § 16, p. 91.

These words ἡ γὰρ κρίσις—ἔλεος are quoted by *S. Hippolytus* de Consummatione Sæculi, c. 47.

14. τί τὸ ὄφελος] *What is the profit, my brethren, if a man say that he has faith, but have not works? can his faith (ἡ πίστις) save him?* Can a mere speculative belief, apart from the good works which are the natural fruit of faith, save him?

St. James had been showing above, that *external* acts of worship (θρησκεία), unaccompanied with works of *charity*, are of no avail; and that love and holiness constitute the religion which God requires (i. 27), and that acts of partiality toward the rich, for the sake of worldly advantage to ourselves, and of disdain of our poorer brethren, especially in religious respects, are infractions of God's Law, as a whole, and cannot be compensated by any obedience to single precepts of it.

He now proceeds to show that professions of *faith*, distinguished from religious *practice*, are null; and thus he counteracts and corrects the erroneous notion prevalent among Jews and Jewish Christians, that they might be justified in God's sight by superiority of *religious knowledge* and *theoretic belief*.

The error, with which St. James had to contend, is thus described by *Tertullian* (de Pœnit. c. 5): "Some persons imagine that they have God, if they receive Him in *heart and mind*, and do little for Him *in act*; and that therefore they may commit sin, without doing violence to faith and fear; or, in other words, that they may commit adulteries, and yet be chaste, and may poison their parents, and yet be pious! At the same rate they who commit sin and yet are godly, may also be cast into hell and

yet be pardoned! But such minds as these are offshoots from the root of hypocrisy, and are sworn friends of the Evil One." Cp. *S. Jerome* (in Michæam iii. 5) inveighing against those who said, "If you have *faith*, it matters little what your *life* is."

St. James in this Epistle is censuring those religionists who relied on faith, not bringing forth the fruit of good works. St. Paul in his Epistles to the Galatians and Romans, had corrected those who supposed that they could obtain justification from God by *their own works*, done by their own strength, irrespectively of the meritorious obedience and sufferings of Christ and the grace procured by Him, and independently of *faith* in His death as the sole efficient cause of man's justification with God. By a consideration of the different *designs* of these two Apostles, all difficulties in their respective statements may easily be cleared away. See above, *Introduction* to this Epistle, pp. 1—3, and to the Epistle to the Romans, pp. 298—303.

17. οὕτω καὶ ἡ πίστις] *so also faith, if it have not works, is dead by itself*; it is dead, not only as regards the signs of external fruitfulness, but it is dead *in itself*. A tree in *winter* may not have *signs* of life, but is not dead *in itself*; it will put forth shoots and leaves in the spring. But faith has no *winter*: if it has not works, it has no life in it, and ought not to be called Faith, for (as *Didymus* says here) dead faith is no faith. Faith without works is dead; and works without faith are dead also. *S. Cyril* (in Conc. Ephes. p. 3, c. 43).

There is *opus fidei* (says *Bp. Andrewes*, i. p. 194), the *work of faith*; *fides quæ operatur*, faith that worketh; that is St. Paul's faith (1 Thess. i. 3. Gal. v. 6); and faith that can *show itself* by working; that is St. James's faith (ii. 18). And without works it is but a dead faith, the carcase of faith; there is no spirit in it. No spirit, if no work; *spectrum est, non spiritus*: a flying shadow it is, a spirit it is not, if work it do not. Having wherewith to do good, if you do it not, talk not of faith, for you have no faith in you, if you have wherewith to show it and show it not. (*Bp. Andrewes*, v. 36.)

18. ἀλλ' ἐρεῖ τις] *Nay, some man will* rightly say. Ἀλλὰ means *sanè, imò*, and introduces a new and cumulative argument. 1 Cor. vi. 6. John viii. 26; xvi. 2. Acts xix. 2. *Winer*, pp. 392. 400.

—χωρὶς] *apart from*. So the best MSS. and *Griesb., Scholz, Lach., Tisch., Alf.*—*Elz.* has ἐκ.

19. σὺ πιστεύεις] *thou believest that God is one*: thou hast more light and knowledge than the Heathen, who worship *gods many and lords many* (1 Cor. viii. 5), *thou doest well*, but this is *not enough*, for *even the devils* (even those false gods themselves which the heathen worship, 1 Cor. x. 20), *they believe* this, and show their belief by fearing Him; they believe *and tremble*. They said to Christ, "Art thou come to torment us before the time?" "I adjure Thee that Thou torment me not." "I know Thee who Thou art, the Holy One of God. Thou art Christ the Son of God" (Matt. viii. 29. Mark i. 24. 34; v. 7. Luke iv. 41), and thus they showed their *fear* and their *belief*. But (as *Augustine* well says in Joann. Tract. 29, and in Psalm. 130), "*Aliud est credere Illi, aliud credere Illum, aliud credere in Illum*. Credere Illi est credere verum esse quod loquitur; credere Illum est credere quòd Ipse sit Deus; sed credere in Illum est diligere Illum. Credere Ipsum esse Deum, hoc et dæmones potuerunt;" but to *believe in God*, this is what is done only by those who *love God*, and who are not only Christians *in name*, but *in deed*, and *in life*. See above on Matt. xviii. 6.

For without love, faith is void. The only true faith is the faith which *worketh by love* (Gal. v. 6). The faith that is joined with love is the faith of Christians, but the faith that is without love is the faith of devils. An infidel who does not believe in Christ is not so far advanced in knowledge as the devils are. And they who believe Christ, but do not love Him, they fear the

²⁰ θέλεις δὲ γινῶναι, ὃ ἄνθρωπε κενέ, ὅτι ἡ πίστις χωρὶς τῶν ἔργων νεκρά ἐστιν ; ²¹ ὁ πατήρ ἡμῶν οὐκ ἐξ ἔργων ἐδικαιώθη, ἀνενέγκας Ἰσαὰκ τὸν υἱὸν αὐτοῦ ἐπὶ τὸ θυσιαστήριον ; ²² βλέπεις ὅτι ἡ πίστις συνήργει τοῖς ἔργοις αὐτοῦ, καὶ ἐκ τῶν ἔργων ἡ πίστις ἐτελειώθη ; ²³ καὶ ἐπληρώθη ἡ γραφή ἡ λέγουσα, Ἐπίστευσε δὲ Ἀβραὰμ τῷ Θεῷ, καὶ ἐλογίσθη αὐτῷ εἰς δικαιοσύνην, καὶ φίλος Θεοῦ ἐκλήθη.

p Gen. 22. 9—12,
16—18.
q Heb. 11. 17.

r Gen. 15. 6.
2 Chron. 20. 7.
Isa. 41. 8.
Rom. 4. 3.
Gal. 3. 6.

²⁴ Ὁρᾶτε ὅτι ἐξ ἔργων δικαιοῦται ἄνθρωπος, καὶ οὐκ ἐκ πίστεως μόνον.

s Josh. 2. 1.
& 6. 23.
Heb. 11. 31.

²⁵ Ὁμοίως δὲ καὶ Ῥαὰβ ἡ πόρνη οὐκ ἐξ ἔργων ἐδικαιώθη, ὑποδεξαμένη τοὺς ἀγγέλους, καὶ ἐτέρα ὁδῷ ἐκβαλοῦσα ;

punishment of Hell as the devils do, but do not love the heavenly crown. See also *Augustine* in Joann. Tract. vi. 21, and *Serm.* 53, and *Bede* here.

A has εἰς ἐστὶν ὁ θεός, and so N.

20. θέλεις δὲ γινῶναι] *but wilt thou to know? is it thy will to know?* Thou professest great zeal for γινῶσις, knowledge, and gloriest in knowledge, but is it really thy will to have knowledge? Cp. v. 20.

—κενέ] *vacue; vain;* for thy faith is only a hollow profession; a mere void without solidity.

—χωρὶς τῶν ἔργων] *apart from the works* (observe the article τῶν), which are its natural fruit.

Faith is the root which turns the rain of grace into fruit. (Cp. *Augustine* in Ps. 139.) Faith cleaves to the soil of the soul, as a root which has received the shower of divine grace, in order that when it is tilled it may shoot forth branches and bear the fruit of good works. The root of righteousness does not grow from works; but the fruit of works grows from the root of righteousness, that is to say, from that root of righteousness whereby God accepts righteousness without work, namely, from Faith; see *Origen* in Rom. vol. iv. p. 523, cited by *Bp. Beveridge* (on Article xii. “of Good Works”), who says, “Though it be for our faith only, and not for our works that God accepts us, yet our works as well as faith are acceptable unto God, yea, and they necessarily spring out from a true and lively faith, so that it is as impossible there should be true faith without good works, as that there should be good works without true faith; for as without faith our works are bad, so without works our faith is dead. And therefore a true faith may be as evidently known by its works, as a tree is clearly discerned by its fruit. If I see fruit growing upon a tree, I know what tree it is, upon which such fruit grows. And so if I see how a man lives, I know how he believes. If his faith be good, his works cannot but be good too; and if his works be bad, his faith cannot but be bad too. For wheresoever there is a justifying faith there are also good works; and wheresoever there are no good works there is no justifying faith.”

This last statement needs some qualification. For suppose the case of a person who has been baptized, and has a lively faith and earnest resolve to serve God, and that he is suddenly taken away from this life, without having time to show his faith by his works. Or suppose the case of an infant dying after baptism. Then *Faith saves*. No man can do good works without Faith; but Faith without works saves a man, if God thinks fit to remove him out of this life, without giving him time for working, and if God knows that he would have worked, if he had had time for working. Indeed in such a case, *Faith itself is work*; according to our Lord's saying, This is the work of God, that ye believe on Him whom He sent (John vi. 28, 29).

BC* have ἀργή here for νεκρά, which is in A, and N, and in G, I, and other good copies.

21. Ἀβραὰμ] *Abraham our father, was not he justified by works, when he offered Isaac his son at the altar?* On ἐδικαιώθη, was justified, see note above, Rom. iii. 26. Abraham, the Father of the faithful, united in his own person those qualities which were necessary to be commended both by St. James and by St. Paul (Rom. iv. 2—16).

Abraham is cited by St. James as an example of practical faith, in opposition to the hollow conceits of those who imagined that knowledge would suffice, without the fruits of obedience.

Abraham is also appealed to by St. Paul, as showing that faith in God, as the sole spring of all good, and firm reliance on His word, and entire self-devotion to His will, in contradistinction to any conceit of any thing in himself as enabling him to work, and entitling him to reward, is on man's side the cause of justification with God.

The example of Abraham therefore stands forth in the Epistle of St. James, as a warning against a barren speculative faith; and is adduced by St. Paul as a protest against proud and presumptuous self-righteousness.

This example of the Father of the Faithful is displayed by both these Apostles as an encouragement to that genuine Faith, which, forgetting and sacrificing self, and building on the foundation of God's Power, and Love, and Truth, and cleaving and clinging to that, rises up in the goodly superstructure of Obedience, in a sober, righteous, and religious life, dedicated to His glory and service. “Abraham believed in God, and it was counted to him for righteousness,” but he proved his faith by his obedience when, having been commanded by God to slay his son, he offered him (ἀνήνεγκεν) at the altar. See Heb. xi. 17.

It has been said by some modern interpreters that ἀνενέγκας ἐπὶ τὸ θ. does not mean having offered up at the altar, but simply having led up, brought up, to the altar; but such an interpretation weakens the sense; and the usage of the word in the N. T. (Heb. vii. 27; xiii. 15. 1 Pet. ii. 5), and the authority of the Ancient Versions,—*Syriac, Vulgate, Ethiopic, and Arabic*,—confirm the interpretation adopted above, which is that of our Authorized Version. The preposition ἐπὶ with the accusative offers no difficulty. See *Winer*, § 49, l. p. 362.

22. ἡ πίστις συνήργει] *faith was working together with his works: his faith was itself a fellow-worker with his works. Faith is a worker and a work.* John vi. 28, 29. Cp. *Irenæus* iv. 16. 2, citing these words to show that Justification is not to be had by observance of the ceremonial law.

24. ἐξ ἔργων] Justification, pardon, acceptance with God spring out of works (ἐξ ἔργων). But these works themselves are ἐκ πίστεως, they spring out of faith; as branches spring from their root; and as a stream springs out of its source.

St. James does not deny that a man is justified by faith (διὰ πίστεως), which is St. Paul's assertion (Rom. iii. 22), and which is never contravened in the least degree by St. James. But he asserts that a man is not justified ἐκ πίστεως μόνον, from out of faith only: that is, he affirms that Justification does not grow out of that kind of faith which does not work when it has the means of working, and which therefore does not deserve the name of faith,—being dead, v. 20. 26. See above, *Introduction*, pp. 1—3.

25. ὁμοίως δὲ καὶ Ῥαὰβ] *in like manner even Rahab, the harlot, was not she justified from out of works?* In her case did not Justification grow out of works? Yes, certainly: because they grew out of a lively faith in God, working by love to man, for she said, “I know that the Lord hath given you this land . . . therefore swear unto me that ye will save alive my father and my mother, and my brethren, and my sisters, and all that they have, and deliver our lives from death.” Josh. ii. 9—13.

The word πόρνη is applied to Rahab, as an “argumentum ad verecundiam.” See above on Heb. xi. 31. To such religionists as those who are censured by St. James, the words of our Lord apply; Matt. xxi. 31, 32.

St. James cites an example from Rahab a proselyte, such as were many in the dispersions to which he wrote. (*Wetstein*.) Rahab received the spies, who were sent before Joshua, the type of Jesus, and who were types of the Apostles of Christ, and she hearkened to their message, and sent them forth in speed (ἐκβαλοῦσα) by a cord, by another way (other than that by which they had come), viz., by the window, from which she tied the scarlet cord by which they were let down (Josh. ii. 15—18), and thus obtained deliverance for herself and family by her faith, when her city was destroyed. Thus she was an example very applicable to those whom St. James addressed, who, by receiving the Gospel preached by the Apostles, might escape the woes impending on Jerusalem, as she escaped those which fell upon Jericho (cp. Heb. xi. 31), and who would be overwhelmed in that destruction, if they neglected so great salvation. (Heb. ii. 3.)

The Author of the Epistle to the Hebrews refers to and corroborates the teaching of St. James the Bishop of Jerusalem; compare what is said of Abraham in Heb. xi. 17—19 with what is here said, v. 21, concerning the offering up of Isaac. Cp. below, iii. 18.

²⁶ Ὡσπερ γὰρ τὸ σῶμα χωρὶς πνεύματος νεκρὸν ἐστίν, οὕτω καὶ ἡ πίστις χωρὶς τῶν ἔργων νεκρά ἐστίν.

III. ¹ ^a Μὴ πολλοὶ διδάσκαλοι γίνεσθε, ἀδελφοί μου, εἰδότες ὅτι μείζον κρίμα ληψόμεθα. ² ^b πολλὰ γὰρ πταίμεν ἅπαντες.

Εἴ τις ἐν λόγῳ οὐ πταίει, οὗτος τέλειος ἀνὴρ, δυνατὸς χαλιναγωγῆσαι καὶ ὅλον τὸ σῶμα. ³ ^c Εἰ δὲ τῶν ἵππων τοὺς χαλινούς εἰς τὰ στόματα βάλλομεν πρὸς τὸ πείθεσθαι αὐτοὺς ἡμῖν, καὶ ὅλον τὸ σῶμα αὐτῶν μετάγομεν.

⁴ Ἴδου καὶ τὰ πλοῖα, τηλικαῦτα ὄντα, καὶ ὑπὸ ἀνέμων σκληρῶν ἐλαυνόμενα, μετάγεται ὑπὸ ἐλαχίστου πηδαλίου, ὅπου ἂν ἡ ὁρμὴ τοῦ εὐθύνοντος βούληται.

⁵ ^d οὕτω καὶ ἡ γλῶσσα μικρὸν μέλος ἐστὶ, καὶ μεγαλαυχεῖ.

Ἴδου ἡλίκον πῦρ ἡλίκην ὕλην ἀνάπτει. ⁶ ^e Καὶ ἡ γλῶσσα πῦρ, ὃ κόσμος τῆς

a Matt. 7. 1.
& 23. 8.
Rom. 2. 20, 21.
b Eccles. 7. 20.
Prov. 20. 9.
Ecclus. 14. 1.
& 19. 16.
& 25. 11.
Matt. 12. 37.
ch. 1. 26.
1 Pet. 3. 10.
c Ps. 32. 9.
d Ps. 12. 3, 4.
& 73. 8, 9.
Prov. 12. 18.
& 15. 2.
e Prov. 15. 1.
& 16. 27.
& 26. 20, 21.
Isa. 30. 27.
Matt. 15. 11, 18, 19.

In many respects, the Epistle to the Hebrews illustrates and confirms this Epistle, and displays the unity of the teaching of its Author, and of St. James. Cp. *Introduction*, p. 3.

CH. III. 1. μὴ πολλοὶ διδάσκαλοι] *Become not ye many teachers*: set not up yourselves for Teachers, without due call and mission. Such assumption of authority was a prevalent vice among the Jews, who loved to be called *Rabbi, Rabbi* (Matt. xxiii. 7), and affected to be teachers of the Law (1 Tim. i. 7), and were confident of their ability to be guides to the blind. (Rom. ii. 19.) Thence the contagion passed into the Church, and many, especially of the Jewish Christians, distracted the Church by diversity of *psalms and doctrines* (1 Cor. xiv. 26), and rent it into parties, which called themselves by names of different leaders. (1 Cor. i. 12.)

Such were those whom St. James had censured at the Council of Jerusalem (Acts xv. 24), and who seem to have given out that they came from him, when they went down to Antioch and troubled the Church there. (Gal. ii. 12.)

St. James in like manner, at the close of his Epistle, inculcates the obligation of maintaining a due respect for the office and persons of those who are *regularly ordained* to the work of the Christian Ministry, and of not intruding into their office, or of encouraging any who usurp it. "Is any one sick among you? let him send for the *Elders of the Church*," v. 14. On the necessity of a due mission, see Acts xix. 15. Rom. x. 15. Heb. v. 5.

— μείζον κρίμα ληψόμεθα] *we shall receive greater condemnation*, by setting ourselves up for Teachers. He says "we shall receive;" and again he says, "in many things *we offend all*," thus condescending to the infirmities of the weak, giving an example of that meekness and mildness of language which he commends (v. 2. 17, 18). So St. Paul; see on 1 Cor. vi. 12.

2. πολλὰ γὰρ πταίμεν ἅπαντες] *for in many things we offend all*. This avowal does not in any way invalidate the writer's claim to *Inspiration*. Moses "spake unadvisedly with his lips" at the waters of strife. (Ps. cvi. 33.) St. Paul was betrayed into a hasty speech before the Sanhedrim. (Acts xxiii. 5.) St. Peter was condemned at Antioch because he walked not uprightly. (Gal. ii. 11—14.) But notwithstanding these human infirmities in the persons of those who were employed by God as instruments in writing the books of the Bible, there is no flaw or blemish in those *Scriptures* which the *Holy Ghost* wrote by their instrumentality, and which have been received by the *Church of God* as the Word, not of man, but of God. They had this treasure of *Inspiration* in *earthen vessels*, "in order that the excellency of the power of the Gospel might be seen to be not of man, but of God." 2 Cor. iv. 7. See above on Acts xv. 38; and on Gal. ii., note at end of chapter, sect. vi.

— εἴ τις ἐν λόγῳ] *if any man offend not in word he is a perfect man*,—*תָּמִים* (*tamim*).

These words (says *Dr. Barrow* in an excellent sermon on this text) assert that man, who offends not in speech, to be *perfect*, and they imply that we should strive to avoid offending therein; for to *be perfect*, and to *go on to perfection*, are precepts the observance whereof is incumbent on us. (Deut. xviii. 13. Matt. v. 48; xix. 21. Luke vi. 40. 2 Cor. xiii. 11. Heb. vi. 1.)

To *offend* originally signifies to *infringe*, to stumble upon somewhat lying across our way, so as thereby to be cast down, or at least to be disordered in our posture, and stopped in our progress: whence it is well transferred to our being through any incident temptation brought into sin, whereby a man is thrown down, or bowed from his upright state, and interrupted from prosecuting a steady course of piety and virtue. By an apposite manner of speaking (Ps. xxxvii. 23, 24), our tenor of life is called

a way, our conversation *walking*, our actions *steps*, our observing good laws *uprightness*, our transgression of them *tripping, faltering, falling*. By *not offending in word*, we may then conceive to be understood such a constant restraint and such a careful guidance of our tongue, that it doth not transgress the rules prescribed by Divine law, or by good reason; that it thwarteth not the natural ends and proper uses for which it was framed, to which it is fitted; such as chiefly are promoting God's glory, our neighbour's benefit, and our own true welfare.

By a *perfect man* is meant a person accomplished and complete, one of singular worth and integrity, who, as to the continual tenor of his life, is free from all notorious defects and heinous faults (Acts xiii. 22); like David, *fulfilling all God's will*, and *having respect to all God's commandments* (Ps. cxix. 6); like Zachary and Elizabeth, *walking in all the commandments and ordinances of the Lord blameless*. (Luke i. 6.) Thus was Noah (Gen. vi. 9), thus was Abraham, thus was Job *perfect*. (Job i. 1.) This is the notion of *perfection* in Holy Scripture: not an absolute exemption of all blemish of soul, or blame in life; for such a perfection is inconsistent with the nature and state of man here, where none with modesty or truth can say, *I have made my heart clean, I am pure from my sin* (Prov. xx. 9); where every man must confess with Job, *If I justify myself, mine own mouth shall condemn me: If I say I am perfect, it shall prove me perverse*. (Job ix. 20.) For *there is not*, as the preacher assures us, *a just man upon earth, that doeth good, and sinneth not* (Eccles. vii. 20); and, *In many things we offend all*; that is, there is no man absolutely perfect: but *if any man offend not in word* (that is, if a man constantly govern his tongue well), *that man is perfect*: perfect in such a kind and degree as human frailty doth admit; he is eminently good; he may be reasonably presumed upright and blameless in all the course of his practice; *able*, as it follows, *to bridle the whole body*, that is, qualified to order *all his actions justly and wisely*. So that in effect the words import this: that a constant governance of our speech according to duty and reason, is a high instance and a special argument of a thoroughly sincere and solid goodness. *Dr. Barrow*.

3. εἰ δέ] *But if*. So A, B, G, K, and *Lach.*, *Tisch.*, *Alf.*, *Winer*, p. 528. C has *ἴδε*. *Elz.* has *ἴδου*, *behold*.

St. James follows up the metaphor of the preceding verse with an argument *à fortiori*. *If we put bits into horses' mouths, we turn, not only their mouths, but also their whole body*. We can rule irrational animals with a bit; how much more ought we to be able to govern ourselves! And if we rule our *tongues*, we do in fact govern the whole man; for the tongue is to man what a bit is to horses, and a rudder is to ships; it rules the whole; let it therefore be governed aright.

5. ἴδου ἡλίκον πῦρ] *behold, what a great forest* (ὕλην, *materia*) *what a little fire makes to blaze!*

For ἡλίκον C**, G, K have ὀλίγον, a little; but ἡλίκον is in N, A**, B, C*, and *Vulg.*, and is received by *Lach.*, *Tisch.*, and *Alford*, and so *De Wette*, *Huther*, and others. Cp. *Theocrit.* iv. 5, ὅσσιχόν ἐστι τὸ τίμμα, καὶ ἄλίκον ἄνδρα δαμάσδει, and *Seneca* (Controv. v. 5), "*quàm lenibus initiis quanta incendia oriantur*." The word '*matter*' in the English Version here, is only an adaptation of the Latin *materies* (ὕλη), wood, considered as fuel. The *Vulgate* has *silvam*. Cp. the use of the word '*matter*' in Ecclus. xxviii. 10.

The conflagration of a large forest even by a casual spark was not a rare event in the countries where the readers of this Epistle lived. See *Wetstein*, p. 670, citing *Homer*, Il. xi. 115. *Plutarch*, Sympos. viii. p. 730. *Pindar*, Pyth. iii. 66; to which may be added the poetical description in *Virgil*, Georgic ii. 303:

"Nam sæpe incautis pastoribus excidit ignis,
Qui furtim pingui primum sub cortice tectus

E

ἀδικίας· ἡ γλῶσσα καθίσταται ἐν τοῖς μέλεσιν ἡμῶν ἡ σπιλοῦσα ὅλον τὸ σῶμα, καὶ φλογίζουσα τὸν τροχὸν τῆς γενέσεως, καὶ φλογιζομένη ὑπὸ τῆς γεέννης.

7 Πᾶσα γὰρ φύσις θηρίων τε καὶ πετεινῶν, ἐρπετῶν τε καὶ ἐναλίων, δαμάζεται καὶ δεδάμασται τῇ φύσει τῇ ἀνθρωπίνῃ· 8 τὴν δὲ γλῶσσαν οὐδεὶς δύναται ἀνθρώπων δαμάσαι· ἀκατάστατον κακὸν, μεστὴ ἰοῦ θανατηφόρου. 9 Ἐν αὐτῇ εὐλογοῦμεν τὸν Θεὸν καὶ Πατέρα, καὶ ἐν αὐτῇ καταρώμεθα τοὺς ἀνθρώ-

f Ps. 140. 3.

g Gen. 1. 26, 27.
& 5. 1. & 9. 6.

1 Cor. 11. 7.

Robora comprehendit, frondesque elapsus in altis
Ingentem coelo sonitum dedit; inde secutus
Per ramos victor, perque alta cacumina regnat,
Et totum involvit flammis nemus; et ruit atram
Ad coelum piceâ crassus fuligine nubem;
Præsertim si tempestas à vertice sylvis
Incubuit, glomeratque ferens incendia ventus."

This description, *mutatis mutandis*, displays a lively picture of the incendiary ravages produced in human society by the Tongue.

6. ὁ κόσμος τῆς ἀδικίας] *that world of iniquity*, that universe of mischief, as containing within it the *elements* of all mischief; as the World contains within itself mineral combustibles, and volcanic fires, and electric fluid, which may blaze forth into a conflagration.

After ἀδικίας *Elz.* has ὁρῶς, *thus*: and this is sanctioned by the *Syriac* and *Arabic* Versions and by some *Cursives*; but it is not in A, B, C, K, and is rejected by *Lach.*, *Tisch.*, and *Alford*. The sense is as follows:—

— ἡ γλῶσσα καθίσταται] *the tongue makes itself in our members* (acting in them as in an intestine war) *the polluter of the whole body*. The Apostle is reprobating, with holy indignation, the sin of those who abuse the tongue, "the best member that they have" (Ps. cviii. 1), and *make it to be the worst*, so as even to defile all: "Corruptio optimi fit pessima."

The word καθίσταται (as *Huther* observes) is used here as in iv. 4, ἐχθρὸς τοῦ Θεοῦ καθίσταται, *makes himself an enemy of God*. So the Tongue, by acting in the members, makes itself to be the defiler of the whole body. And this confusion takes place ἐν τοῖς μέλεσιν ἡμῶν, which, as their name (μέλος) intimates, ought to move in harmonious *melody* and concert with each other; and so glorify their Maker. But the Tongue mars their music by its discord. It is even like an intestine Volcano: and sends forth a dark stream of lava, and a murky cloud of smoke, and a shower of ashes, and is thus a cause of pollution, *sully*ing and *staining*, as with foul blots (σπιλοῦσα), the beauty of all around it; and also, like a Volcano, it emits a flood of fire. See next note.

— φλογίζουσα τὸν τροχὸν τῆς γενέσεως] *setting on fire the wheel of nature*. On the accent of τροχὸς see *Winer*, p. 51.

The τροχὸς γενέσεως is the wheel of nature, the *orbis terrarum*, the world itself, in its various revolutions; in which one generation follows another, and one season succeeds another; and so τροχὸς γενέσεως is used by *Simplicius* in *Epictet.* p. 94, and other like expressions in authors quoted here by *Wetstein*, p. 670.

In a secondary sense, this τροχὸς γενέσεως is the wheel of *human nature*, of *human life*, of *human society*, which is compared to a wheel by Solomon (Eccl. xii. 6); and so *Greg. Nazianz.* (in *Sentent. ap. A. Lapide*), and *Silius Ital.* iii. 6, "rota volvitur ævi," and *Boethius* (de *Consol.* ii. pr. 1), "hæc nostra vita est; rotam volubili orbe versamus." This wheel is ever rolling round, ever turning apace, whirling about, never continuing in one stay, seeking rest and finding none. So these words of the Apostle are expounded by *Æcumen.*, *Bede*, and *Bishop Andrewes*, i. 361; ii. 294. 319.

The functions of a wheel, set on fire by the internal friction of its own axis, are deranged; and so the organization of human Society is disturbed and destroyed by the intestine fire of the human Tongue; a fire which diffuses itself from the centre, and radiates forth to the circumference by all the spokes of slander and detraction, and involves the social framework in combustion and conflagration.

This inner fire consumes every thing, and is itself kindled from hell—the lake of fire. And its punishment is accordingly. "What reward shall be given unto thee, O thou false tongue? Sharp arrows of the mighty, with hot burning coals" (coals of rethem. Ps. cxx. 2).

The Rich Man in torment desires that "Lazarus may dip his finger in water and cool his tongue;" for he is tormented in a flame (Luke xvi. 24); and St. James says that the tongue is set on fire of hell. At the tables of the rich, men are often tempted to sins of the tongue, and tongues there set on fire of hell, may hereafter be scorched, and have no water to cool them.

By the faculty of speech man is distinguished from the rest of creation: by it his thoughts are borne, as upon eagles' wings, to the remotest shores, and are carried to distant ages; by it they are endued with the attributes of omnipresence and immortality; by it men are reclaimed from savage ignorance; cities are built and peopled, laws promulgated, alliances formed, leagues made; by it men are excited to deeds of heroic valour, and to prefer eternity to time, and the good of their country to their own; through it the affairs of the world are transacted; it negotiates the traffic of commerce, and exchanges the produce of one soil and climate for that of another; it pleads the cause of the innocent, and checks the course of the oppressor; it gives vent to the tenderest emotions; it cheers the dreariness of life. By it virtuous deeds of men are proclaimed to the world with a trumpet's voice; by it the memory of the dead is kept alive in families. It is the teacher of arts and sciences, the interpreter of poetic visions, and of subtle theories of philosophy; it is the rudder and helm by which the state of the world is steered; it is the instrument by which the Gospel of Christ is preached to all nations, and the Scriptures sound in the ears of the Church, and the world unites in prayer and praise to the Giver of all good, and the chorus of Saints and Angels pours forth hallelujahs before His throne.

Such being the prerogatives of speech, it is a heinous sin to pervert the heavenly faculty, to insult the name of the Giver Himself, or to injure man, made in the image of God. The true Christian will put away profane and impure language, calumny, and slander, injurious to God's honour, the welfare of society, and his own eternal salvation. He will abhor it worse than a pestilence; and will pray to Him from whom are the preparations of the heart, and who maketh the dumb and the deaf, the seeing and the blind, who quickened the slow speech of His servant Moses, and put words of fire into his mouth, and whose Spirit on the Day of Pentecost descended in tongues of fire on the Apostles, and filled them with holy eloquence, so to direct his thoughts and words, that both now and hereafter they may ever sing His praise.

7. πᾶσα φύσις—δαμάζεται καὶ δεδάμασται] *Every nature of wild beasts, &c., is being tamed, and hath been tamed, by the nature of man*: the work of taming is being repeated often, and has been completed successfully.

On the dative of the agent, τῇ φύσει τῇ ἀνθρωπίνῃ, see *Winer*, p. 196. Cp. below, v. 18, σπείρεται τοῖς ποιοῦσιν εἰρήνην.

Observe the contrast between the φύσις of *beasts* and the φύσις of *man*. The one is made subordinate to the other by God. (Gen. i. 26. 28.)

8. τὴν δὲ γλῶσσαν οὐδεὶς δύναται ἀνθρώπων δαμάσαι] *but the tongue can no man tame*. No one among men can tame his own tongue; to do this work we require the *grace of God* (*Augustine* and *Catena*, p. 22); but St. James does not therefore excuse those who do not tame their tongues, for he says, "these things ought not so to be" (v. 10).

Or the sense may be; Men can tame savage animals, but no one can tame the tongue of the slanderer, liar, and blasphemer; it is more furious than the wild beasts; they may be subdued and pacified, but not it; it is an evil which cannot be controlled (*Petr. Damian.* Epist. ii. 18), being full of deadly poison. The slanderer and liar "have sharpened their tongues like a serpent; adders' poison is under their lips." (Ps. cxl. 3.) Such was the tongue of Doeg the Edomite, of which the Psalmist speaks in that Psalm and in Ps. cxx. Cp. 1 Sam. xxii. 9-19.

This interpretation (as *Estius* has observed) seems to offer the best solution of the Pelagian objections examined by *Augustine*, De Nat. et Grat. c. 15.

Both the above interpretations are specified by ancient Expositors, e. g. *Bede*, p. 184.

— ἀκατάστατον] *not to be quieted*, or composed. So A, N, and B, and *Lach.*, *Tisch.*, *Alf.* *Elz.* has ἀκατάσχετον, *uncontrollable*.

9. ἐν αὐτῇ] The whole course of nature is contravened and disturbed by sins of the Tongue. *With the tongue we bless our Lord and Father*: and this is the proper office of the Tongue, to praise God; and *with it we curse men who have been made after the image of God*. This unnatural inconsistency is censured Ps. l. 16-20, "What hast thou to do to declare My statutes; whereas

πους τοὺς καθ' ὁμοίωσιν Θεοῦ γεγονότας· ¹⁰ ἐκ τοῦ αὐτοῦ στόματος ἐξέρχεται εὐλογία, καὶ κατάρα. Οὐ χρὴ, ἀδελφοί μου, ταῦτα οὕτω γίνεσθαι. ¹¹ Μήτι ἡ πηγὴ ἐκ τῆς αὐτῆς ὀπῆς βρῦει τὸ γλυκὺ καὶ τὸ πικρὸν; ¹² μὴ δύναται, ἀδελφοί μου, συκὴ ἐλαίας ποιῆσαι, ἢ ἄμπελος σῦκα; οὔτε ἄλυκὸν γλυκὺ ποιῆσαι ὕδωρ.

¹³ ^h Τίς σοφὸς καὶ ἐπιστήμων ἐν ὑμῖν; δειξάτω ἐκ τῆς καλῆς ἀναστροφῆς τὰ ἔργα αὐτοῦ ἐν πραύτητι σοφίας. ¹⁴ ⁱ Εἰ δὲ ζῆλον πικρὸν ἔχετε καὶ ἐριθείαν ἐν τῇ καρδίᾳ ὑμῶν, μὴ κατακαυχᾶσθε καὶ ψεύδεσθε κατὰ τῆς ἀληθείας. ¹⁵ ^k Οὐκ ἔστιν αὕτη ἡ σοφία ἄνωθεν κατερχομένη, ἀλλ' ἐπίγειος, ψυχικὴ, δαιμονιώδης. ¹⁶ ^l ὅπου γὰρ ζῆλος καὶ ἐριθεία, ἐκεῖ ἀκαταστασία καὶ πᾶν φαῦλον πρᾶγμα. ¹⁷ ἡ δὲ ἄνωθεν σοφία πρῶτον μὲν ἀγνή ἐστίν, ἔπειτα εἰρηνικὴ, ἐπιεικὴς, εὐπειθής, μεστή ἐλέους καὶ καρπῶν ἀγαθῶν, ἀδιάκριτος καὶ ἀνυπόκριτος. ¹⁸ ^m Καρ-

^h Gal. 6. 4.
ch. 1. 21.
Eph. 5. 8.
ⁱ Rom. 13. 13.
^k 1 Cor. 2. 6, 7.

^l 1 Cor. 3. 3.
Gal. 5. 20.

^m Prov. 11. 18.
Hos. 10. 12.
Matt. 5. 9.
Phil. 1. 11.
Heb. 12. 11.
^a Rom. 7. 23.
1 Pet. 2. 11.

IV. ¹ ^a Πόθεν πόλεμοι καὶ πόθεν μάχαι ἐν ὑμῖν; οὐκ ἐντεῦθεν, ἐκ τῶν ἡδονῶν ὑμῶν τῶν στρατενομένων ἐν τοῖς μέλεσιν ὑμῶν; ² Ἐπιθυμεῖτε, καὶ οὐκ ἔχετε φονεύετε καὶ ζηλοῦτε, καὶ οὐ δύνασθε ἐπιτυχεῖν· μάχεσθε καὶ πολεμεῖτε, οὐκ

thou givest thy mouth to evil; thou sittest and speakest against thy brother? Whoso offereth Me praise, he glorifieth Me; and to him that ordereth his conversation right will I show the salvation of God." Thus the Psalmist offers the clue to the connexion of the reasoning of St. James here, and in what follows (v. 13), "Let him show from his good conversation (i. e. behaviour) his works with meekness of wisdom."

From this sentence it is clear, that though the image of God in man was marred by the Fall, it was not destroyed. See also Gen. ix. 6, where murder is forbidden after the flood, on the ground that man was made in the image of God. And the divine image, defaced in Adam, has been restored in Christ. (Col. iii. 10. Eph. iv. 24.)

Man's intellectual nature presents an image of God; and from a consideration of that image, as seen in man, we may derive some clear and cogent evidences of the Being and Attributes of God,—a proposition excellently proved in *Dr. Barrow's Sermon* vii. on Gen. i. 27, vol. iv. p. 163.

11. ὀπῆς] The ὀπῆ of a fountain is its eye, and the word itself is connected with ὄψ, ὄπτομαι, to see, and so the word *Ænon* (the place of springs) is derived from the Hebrew עַיִן (*ayin*), an eye. (John iii. 33.)

12. οὔτε ἄλυκὸν γλυκὺ] nor can water that is salt produce what is sweet. So A, B, C, and *Lach.*, *Tisch.*, *Alf.—Elz.* has οὕτως οὐδεμία πηγὴ ἄλυκὸν καὶ γλυκὺ.

13—15. τίς σοφὸς καὶ ἐπιστήμων ἐν ὑμῖν] who is wise and knowing among you? Many among you lay claim to wisdom and knowledge; let such prove the justice of their claim by their good conversation in meekness of wisdom; for where meekness is not, there is no real wisdom; if ye have bitter envy and party-spirit (see on Gal. v. 20; cp. 2 Cor. xii. 20. Rom. ii. 8, and on Phil. i. 17) in your heart (whatever pretence there may be to knowledge in the intellect), boast ye not, and lie not against the truth, which is the only genuine end and object of wisdom. This is not the wisdom that is coming down from above (see i. 17), but is earthly, carnal, devilish; it is earthly and allures the eye; it is carnal, not spiritual (see 1 Cor. ii. 14. Jude 19), and stimulates the lust of the flesh; and it is devilish, and ministers to pride. See the threefold division 1 John ii. 16.

On the difference between ἐπιστήμη, knowledge, natural or acquired, of facts, and σοφία, the higher faculty of using knowledge in wise and virtuous practice, see Acts xix. 15; below, iv. 14. Eph. i. 8. Col. i. 9.

16. ὅπου γὰρ ζῆλος] for where envy and party-spirit is, there is perturbation, disorder, disorganization, disruption of all that is constituted and settled in society, ecclesiastical and civil. See 1 Cor. xiv. 33. 2 Cor. xii. 20. Phil. ii. 3. Strife and party-spirit would destroy Sion, and can build up nothing but Babel. Cp. *Bp. Sanderson*, i. pp. 214. 350, and see *Clemens R.* i. capp. 3—9.

17. ἡ δὲ ἄνωθεν σοφία] but the wisdom that is from above, is first pure ('sancta,' holy, free from taint, and hallowed to God), then peaceable, equitable (see on 1 Tim. iii. 3), compliant (*Xenophon*, Mem. iii. 4. 8), full of mercy and good fruits, not partial, not censorious, not taking upon itself the office of judging (Matt. vii. 1); and perhaps the meaning may also be, not contentious, not disputatious (see on ii. 4). And it is not

hypocritical; neither making any pretensions to what it is not, nor disguising what it is; without semblance and without dissimulation. Being ἀδιάκριτος, it does not spy out moles in a brother's eye, and being ἀνυπόκριτος, it does not hide the beam in its own. Cp. Luke vi. 42, where partiality and hypocrisy are coupled together.

On the active sense of such adjectives as ἀδιάκριτος see *Winer*, p. 88.

18. καρπὸς δικαιοσύνης] the fruit of righteousness is sown by them who make peace. The fruit of righteousness; the genitive of apposition, as κόκκος σινάπεως, σίτου (Matt. xiii. 31. John xii. 24. 1 Cor. xv. 37), and καρπὸς δικαιοσύνης, Phil. i. 11, and Heb. xii. 11, a chapter in which St. Paul appears to be inculcating the lessons taught in this Epistle by St. James. Cp. above, on ii. 25. This fruit is sown by them who make peace. The fruit is, as it were, contained in the seed; and they who sow the seed enjoy the fruit. "Whatsoever a man soweth, that shall he also reap." (Gal. vi. 7.) The dative is the dative of the agent, as in v. 7. Compare the beatitude in Matt. v. 9. This beautiful picture of true Wisdom may be placed side by side with that of Charity portrayed by St. Paul (1 Cor. xiii.).

CH. IV. 1. πόθεν πόλεμοι] whence are wars and whence are fightings among you? Whence are wars? from lusts, warring in you; warring against the soul (1 Pet. ii. 11). He refers to the feuds and factions, prevalent among the Jews and Jewish proselytes at that time; and a main cause of the Fall of Jerusalem. See above, note on Matt. xxiv. 15, and the authorities from *Josephus* there quoted. This passage seems to be imitated by *S. Clement*, Rom. i. 46, ἵνα τί ἔρεις . . . πόλεμός τε ἐν ὑμῖν.

2. φονεύετε] ye commit murder: which was specially true of those bands of λῆσται, sicarii, robbers and assassins, who, under the name of zealots, infested Jewish society at this time, and at last made the Temple itself a den of assassins. See Matt. xxi. 13. Evidences of the blood-thirsty spirit of rage, which now like a fiend possessed the heart of large numbers of the people, may be seen in the murderous plots and violent and frequent outbreaks at this period, mentioned in *Josephus* (cp. *Whitby* here) and in the Gospels and Acts, such as that of Barabbas (Matt. xxvii. 16. John xviii. 40), and of Judas of Galilee, and Theudas (Acts v. 36, where see the notes), and the Egyptian (Acts xxi. 38), and the conspiracy against St. Paul (Acts xxiii. 12—14). There may also be a reference here to the cry of the multitude assembled from all parts of the Jewish dispersions at the Passover, "Crucify Him" (Mark xv. 13, 14). See below, v. 6, ἐφονεύσατε τὸν δίκαιον.

The writer himself of this Epistle, St. James, fell a victim to this murderous spirit. See below, v. 6.

It is observed by *Dr. Hammond*, that the Epistle of St. James, the Bishop of Jerusalem, and especially the latter part of it, was designed for the use of Jews as well as of Christians. St. James was revered by the Jews (as appears from the passage of *Hegesippus* in *Euseb.* ii. 23); his censures of sins, and his warnings of coming calamities were specially applicable to them; and after his death, when his prophetic denunciations had been fulfilled in the destruction of Jerusalem, his words would be carefully noted, and a fresh argument would thence arise in behalf of the cause of the Gospel which he preached.

b Job 27. 9.
& 35. 12.
Ps. 66. 18.
Prov. 1. 28.
Isa. 1. 15.
Jer. 11. 11.
& 14. 12.
Ezek. 8. 18.
Zech. 7. 13.
Mic. 3. 4.
Rom. 8. 26.
1 John 3. 22.
& 5. 14.
c Ps. 73. 27.
John 15. 19.
& 17. 14.
Gal. 1. 10.
1 John 2. 15.
d Gen. 6. 5.
& 8. 21.
e Job 22. 29.
Prov. 3. 34.
& 29. 23.
Matt. 23. 12.
Luke 1. 52.
& 14. 11. & 18. 14.
1 Pet. 5. 5.
f Eph. 4. 27.
1 Pet. 5. 9.
g 2 Chron. 15. 2.
Isa. 1. 16.
ch. 1. 8. h Matt. 5. 4. i Job 22. 29. Prov. 29. 23. Matt. 23. 12. Luke 14. 11. & 18. 14. 1 Pet. 5. 6. k Matt. 7. 1. Luke 6. 37. Rom. 2. 1. 1 Cor. 4. 5.

ἔχετε δὲ, διὰ τὸ μὴ αἰτεῖσθαι ὑμᾶς· ³ ^b αἰτέιτε, καὶ οὐ λαμβάνετε, διότι κακῶς αἰτεῖσθε, ἵνα ἐν ταῖς ἡδοναῖς ὑμῶν δαπανήσητε.

⁴ ^c Μοιχαλίδες, οὐκ οἴδατε ὅτι ἡ φιλία τοῦ κόσμου ἔχθρα τοῦ Θεοῦ ἐστίν; Ὅς ἂν οὖν βουλευθῇ φίλος εἶναι τοῦ κόσμου, ἐχθρὸς τοῦ Θεοῦ καθίσταται.

⁵ ^d Ἡ δοκεῖτε ὅτι κενῶς ἡ γραφὴ λέγει; Πρὸς φθόνον ἐπιποθεῖ τὸ πνεῦμα ὁ κατώκησεν ἐν ἡμῖν; ⁶ ^e Μείζονα δὲ δίδωσι χάριν διὸ λέγει, Ὁ Θεὸς ὑπερ-
ηφάνοις ἀντιτάσσεται, ταπεινοῖς δὲ δίδωσι χάριν. ⁷ ^f Ὑποτάγητε οὖν τῷ Θεῷ. Ἀντίστητε τῷ Διαβόλῳ, καὶ φεύζεται ἀφ' ὑμῶν. ⁸ ^g Ἐγγίσατε τῷ Θεῷ, καὶ ἐγγιεῖ ὑμῖν. Καθαρίσατε χεῖρας, ἁμαρτωλοὶ, καὶ ἀγνίστατε καρδίας, δίψυχοι. ⁹ ^h Ταλαιπωρήσατε καὶ πενθήσατε καὶ κλαύσατε. Ὁ γέλως ὑμῶν εἰς πένθος μεταστραφήτω, καὶ ἡ χαρὰ εἰς κατήφειαν. ¹⁰ ⁱ Ταπεινώθητε ἐνώπιον τοῦ Κυρίου, καὶ ὑψώσει ὑμᾶς.

¹¹ ^k Μὴ καταλαλεῖτε ἀλλήλων, ἀδελφοί· ὁ καταλαλὼν ἀδελφοῦ, καὶ κρίνων τὸν ἀδελφὸν αὐτοῦ, καταλαλεῖ νόμου, καὶ κρίνει νόμον· εἰ δὲ νόμον κρίνεις, οὐκ εἶ

4. μοιχαλίδες] *Ye adulteresses.* A bold figure, used with vehement indignation, characteristic of this Epistle, in which St. James speaks in the δεινότης and stern language of a Hebrew Prophet in denouncing sin. Ye were espoused to God: "Thy Maker is thy husband" (Isa. liv. 5), but where is the love of thine espousals? (Jer. ii. 2.) Ye are as a wife that committeth adultery (Ezek. xvi. 32). Ye are an adulterous generation (γενεὰ μοιχαλίδος) (Matt. xii. 39; xvi. 4. Mark viii. 38).

Some MSS., K, L, and many Cursives, have μοιχοὶ καὶ μοιχαλίδες, and so *Elz.* But the feminine μοιχαλίδες placed alone (which is the reading of A, B, and N, and is received by *Lach., Tisch., Alf.*), is more expressive, as describing the conjugal relation of the soul to God: cp. St. Paul's language 2 Cor. xi. 2, I have espoused you as a chaste *Virgin* to Christ; and the feminine does not present a bolder figure here than in the passage of St. Peter, ὀφθαλμοὺς ἔχοντες μεστοὺς μοιχαλίδος (2 Pet. ii. 14), which affords the best illustration of this text.

Accordingly, the words are expounded in a spiritual sense by *Augustine*, Serm. 15, and Serm. 162, and are applied to souls lured by earthly love from loyalty and fealty to God, which are guilty of spiritual harlotry and adultery; see Matt. xii. 39, and Ps. lxxiii. 26, Thou hast destroyed all them that commit fornication against Thee. Cp. Rev. ii. 20—22; xvii. 1. 5. 15; and so *Theophylact* and *Bede*.

The censure of St. James is also to be applied to Communities which break their troth to God. Cp. *Wiesinger* and *Huther*.

4—9.] Observe in these verses, the rapid succession of questions, and of short pungent sentences, like arrows drawn forth from a quiver, and discharged in a thick volley from the bow, by the hand of the spiritual archer.

After the vehement and indignant emission of this sacred artillery against the enemies of the truth, the Apostle changes his tone, and in calm and gentle accents, made more touching by the contrast, he exhorts and encourages the faithful. Compare the similar strain in v. 1—6, 7—19, with which he concludes.

— οὐκ οἴδατε] *Know ye not?* Ye who profess knowledge, and rely on that. See ii. 20; iv. 17; v. 20.

— καθίσταται] *makes himself.* See above, iii. 6.

5. ἡ δοκεῖτε] *Do ye imagine that the Scripture speaketh in vain?* Ye boast that ye have the Scripture committed to you. That is your highest privilege (see Rom. iii. 2). Do ye imagine that the words of the Scripture are mere idle illusions? Hath God spoken, and shall He not do it? (Numb. xxiii. 19. 1 Sam. xv. 29.) He has said that ye shall not follow after other gods, but serve the Lord only. (Deut. x. 20. 1 Sam. vii. 3.) He has condemned the love of this world; He has said that "ye cannot serve two masters, God and Mammon." He has said that "the love of the world is enmity with God;" and He has declared that "all his enemies shall feel His hand, and be made His footstool." Do ye suppose that such declarations as these, uttered by God Himself in Holy Scripture (see Ps. lxxiii. 27. Matt. vi. 24. Ps. xxi. 8; xcii. 9), are mere empty sounds, uttered in vain? This cannot be.

For examples of λέγω, to *speak*, without any special recital of the words spoken, see Rom. iii. 5; xi. 13. 1 Cor. x. 15; xv. 34. 2 Cor. vi. 13; vii. 3; viii. 8; xi. 21.

This is the first question. Next follows a second;

— πρὸς φθόνον ἐπιποθεῖ] *Doth the Spirit, which took up His abode in you, lust to envy?* Ye have been made Temples of the

Holy Ghost. Ye are builded together for an habitation of God through the Spirit (1 Cor. iii. 16; vi. 19. 2 Cor. vi. 16). Doth that good Spirit, with "which ye were sealed unto the day of redemption" (Eph. iv. 30), yearn toward envy? No: surely the Spirit of God is a loving, peaceable Spirit: it longs for the good of others, it teaches you to seek their benefit, and to edify them in love (1 Cor. x. 24. 33; xiii. 5. Phil. ii. 4), and to lay down your lives for the brethren (1 John iii. 16). Ye say, that ye have the Spirit. Prove the truth of your vauntings by bringing forth the fruits of the Spirit, "love, joy, peace, long-suffering, goodness, gentleness" (Gal. v. 22). Or if the Spirit that took up his abode in you, does lust unto envy, then be assured it is not the Spirit of God; but it is the spirit of the Devil who "was a murderer from the beginning" (John viii. 44. 1 John iii. 15).

Some MSS. (A, B) have κατέκτισεν; but κατέκρησεν seems to be preferable, with the sense *came and took up his abode in you.* See Eph. iii. 17.

The punctuation of these two clauses, as *two distinct questions*, removes all the difficulty, which some have found in this verse; and such a punctuation had already been suggested by earlier interpreters, e. g. *Bede*, p. 191, and cp. *Whitby* here, and *Bp. Wilson*.

6. μέζονα δὲ δίδωσιν χάριν] No; the Spirit does not lust to envy, but He is giving greater grace. If therefore ye really have the Spirit, as ye profess to have, then the proof of it will be seen in your continual growth in grace. For the Spirit is ever giving fresh accessions of grace to those who really have him, that is, to all who use his gifts; whosoever hath, to him shall be given, and he shall have more abundance (Matt. xiii. 12). But if the graces of the Spirit, which are peaceable, amiable, and gentle, are not seen in your actions, and if on the contrary ye bring forth the works of the flesh, which are adultery, hatred, variance, wrath, strife, envyings (Gal. v. 19—21), then ye convict yourselves of not having the Spirit, and prove that all your professions are vain.

— διὸ λέγει] *wherefore He saith.* See Ps. cxxxviii. 6. Prov. iii. 34. Matt. xxiii. 13.

8. δίψυχοι] *ye double-minded; ye two-minded men.* The word is here used in a larger sense than above, i. 8. A man with two minds is one who prays to God, and yet has a secret yearning for some darling sin, which he will not leave; and therefore has an inward sense that his prayers are vain, and does not pray with faith. A man with two minds is one who desires to rejoice with the world now, and to reign hereafter with God. A man with two minds is one, who in doing good to men looks not to the glory of God, but to the praise of the world. Such an one is unstable in all his goings (i. 8); and of him it is said, "Woe to the sinner that goeth two ways." Eccus. ii. 12. Cp. *Bede* here.

9. πενθήσατε] *mourn ye.* Cp. Matt. v. 4. Luke vi. 25.

— ἡ χαρὰ εἰς κατήφειαν] *Let your joy be turned into sadness;* shown by a pensive downcast look of shame and sorrow, and produced usually by some sudden shock. See *Loesner*, p. 466, and *Wetst.*

11. μὴ καταλαλεῖτε ἀλλήλων] *speak not against one another.* Cp. *S. Clement*, ii. 4.

— καταλαλεῖ νόμου] *he speaketh against the Law, and judgeth the Law;* which is summed up in one word, 'Love,' and that is set at nought by thee who judgest thy brother. See ii. 8. Rom. xiii. 8, 9. Gal. v. 14.

ποιητῆς νόμου, ἀλλὰ κριτῆς. ¹² ¹ Εἷς ἐστὶν ὁ νομοθέτης ὁ δυνάμενος σῶσαι καὶ ἀπολέσαι· σὺ τίς εἶ, ὃς κρίνεις τὸν ἕτερον ;

¹³ ^m Ἀγε νῦν, οἱ λέγοντες, Σήμερον καὶ αὔριον πορευσόμεθα εἰς τήνδε τὴν πόλιν, καὶ ποιήσομεν ἐκεῖ ἐνιαυτὸν ἓνα, καὶ ἐμπορευσόμεθα, καὶ κερδήσομεν.

¹⁴ ⁿ οἷτινες οὐκ ἐπίστασθε τὸ τῆς αὔριον. Ποία γὰρ ἡ ζωὴ ὑμῶν ; ἀτμὶς γάρ ἐστε ἡ πρὸς ὀλίγον φαινομένη, ἔπειτα ἀφανιζομένη. ¹⁵ ^o ἀντὶ τοῦ λέγειν ὑμᾶς, Ἐὰν ὁ Κύριος θελήσῃ, καὶ ζήσομεν, καὶ ποιήσομεν τοῦτο ἢ ἐκεῖνο. ¹⁶ ^p Νῦν δὲ καυχᾶσθε ἐν ταῖς ἀλαζονείαις ὑμῶν. Πᾶσα καύχησις τοιαύτη πονηρά ἐστίν.

¹⁷ ^q Εἰδότες οὖν καλὸν ποιεῖν, καὶ μὴ ποιοῦντι, ἁμαρτία αὐτῷ ἐστίν.

V. ¹ ^a Ἀγε νῦν, οἱ πλούσιοι, κλαύσατε ὁλολύζοντες ἐπὶ ταῖς ταλαιπωρίαις

1 Matt. 10. 28.
Rom. 14. 4.
m Prov. 27. 1.
Luke 12. 18.
n Job 7. 7.
Isa. 40. 6.
1 Cor. 7. 31.
ch. 1. 10.
1 John 2. 17.
o Acts 18. 21.
1 Cor. 4. 19.
Heb. 6. 3.
p 1 Cor. 5. 6.
q Luke 12. 47.
John 9. 41.
Rom. 1. 20, 21, 32.
& 2. 17, 18, 23.
a Prov. 11. 28.
Amos 6. 1.
Luke 6. 24.
1 Tim. 6. 9.

12. εἷς ἐστὶν ὁ νομοθέτης] *One only is the Lawgiver, who is able to save and to kill; and thou invadest His office when thou presumest to judge the servant of Him Who will judge thee.*

This text is important as a caution against the sin of those who usurp the prerogative of God, and assume a dominion over the Conscience.

This is done by many in the following ways,

(1) by enacting laws as of force to bind the Conscience by their own proper vigour ;

(2) by dispensing with any of the Divine Laws ;

(3) by enacting any thing contrary to the Law of Him Who is the Supreme Legislator, and Who alone has power to kill and to destroy.

This divine declaration is therefore condemnatory—

(1) Of sundry assumptions of the Papacy. See Matt. xv. 9. 2 Thess. ii. 2. 1 Tim. iv. 3. Rev. xiii. 5.

(2) Of all enactments of civil powers, *contravening* the Law of God. See Matt. v. 32.

(3) Of all theories of policy and government which represent human societies of men as *sources* of power. Such theories contradict the affirmation of St. James, and disparage the Supremacy of God, and encourage usurpations of His prerogatives.

Human laws, which are *not contrary* to God's Law, and which are enacted by competent lawful authority, do not oblige the conscience by any thing *inherent* in themselves, but they oblige the conscience by reason of the power which lawful authority derives from God, "the only Legislator who is able to save and to destroy." See above on Rom. xiii. 1—3; and the Lecture of Bp. Sanderson on this text, de Consc. Prælect. iv., vol. iv. § 9, p. 65; and Præl. v. § 23, p. 109.

The words of St. James (he says) assert, that there is but *one* Lawgiver—not one selected out of *many*, nor *one* above all the rest, but one *exclusively*; that is, *one*, and but *one alone*, who is able to save and destroy.

What was usually applied to the prerogatives of Kings, may be justly said of the Conscience of every man, that *it is subject to none but God, and knows no superior upon earth*. Memorable is the observation of the Emperor Maximilian, *To offer to domineer over the conscience, is to assault the citadel of Heaven. That man is a plunderer of the Divine glory, and an invader of the authority that belongs to God, whosoever he be, that claims a Right over the consciences of men, or usurps upon them. Let the Popes of Rome, and the train of Canonists, Jesuits, and Sycophants, that flatter and fawn upon them, clear themselves, if they can, of this sacrilege; and let such as submit their Consciences to the power of any creature, which only ought to be subject to God, be careful lest by transferring the honour of that service that belongs to God, to any creature upon earth, they make a God of that creature, and so, in effect, become guilty of idolatry.*

From this first conclusion thus proved, follows this remarkable inference, that the *proper rule* of the Conscience is that which God, the Supreme Lawgiver, hath prescribed to it; and besides that, there is no other that ought to be admitted.

Yet this hinders not, that there may be other Lawgivers of an *inferior order*, who by authority *derived* to them from the Supreme Power, may have a just right to make laws, and consequently to bind the Conscience to obedience. We do not say that God has committed to the Magistrate a power to oblige the Consciences of his people by Laws, but rather (to speak with more care and propriety) that God has given to the Magistrate a jurisdiction to make Laws, which by virtue alone of the Divine authority, do oblige the Consciences of the subject; for properly speaking, the Magistrate does not oblige the Conscience to obey the Law, but God obliges the Conscience to obey the Magistrate. Bp. Sanderson.

—τὸν ἕτερον] *thy neighbour*. See Rom. ii. 1; xiii. 8. 1 Cor. vi. 1. Gal. vi. 4.

13. ἄγε νῦν, οἱ λέγοντες] *Go to now, ye that say*. Cp. v. 1.

On the use of the singular ἄγε, with the plural noun or participle, see Hom. Il. i. 62, and passim; so "age," in Latin: see Wetst., p. 676.

14. ἀτμὶς γάρ ἐστε] *for ye are a vapour*. Elz. has ἐστί, *it is* (i. e. your life is) a vapour; but the reading ἐστε, *ye are*, authorized by many MSS., and received by Lach., Tisch., Huther, is more expressive. Not only your life, but *ye yourselves* are a vapour. Cp. i. 10. B has ἐστε; and A, K have ἔσται, which is probably the same reading as ἐστε (αι and ε being often confused in MSS.), and either ἐστε or ἔσται are in numerous MSS. and some Versions. Compare Horat. (Od. iv. 7. 16), "Pulvis et umbra sumus."

15. ἀντὶ τοῦ λέγειν ὑμᾶς] *instead of your saying*. This is to be construed with v. 13, *Woe unto you who say, 'To-day and to-morrow we will set forth to that city,' instead of saying (as ye ought to do), If the Lord will, we shall both live, and shall do this or that.*

On the reading and construction cp. Winer, p. 256, who does not however seem to be aware that A, B have both ζήσομεν and ποιήσομεν, in the future. This reading (which is received by Tisch., Lach., Alf.) makes both life and action to depend on the will of God.

16. νῦν δὲ καυχᾶσθε] *but now ye are glorying* (not in the Lord, as ye ought to glory, 1 Cor. i. 31, but) *in your own vain vauntings*; in your own confident and presumptuous boastings, of your own wisdom and power. On the sense of ἀλάζων, see Rom. i. 30. 2 Tim. iii. 2. Cp. 1 John ii. 16.

17. εἰδότες οὖν] *to him therefore who knoweth to do good, and doeth it not, there is sin*.

This conclusion of St. James is added as the summing-up of the argument, in the same manner as the aphorism with which St. Paul closes his reasonings concerning a *doubting conscience*, where he says, "Whatsoever is not of faith, is sin;" that is, whenever a man *does* any thing without *being persuaded* in his mind that he *may* lawfully do it, he is guilty of sin. Rom. xiv. 23.

St. James appears to have his eye here on this statement of St. Paul.

St. James adds to it another maxim of general import, viz. that whensoever a man *omits* to do any thing which he is persuaded in his own mind that he *ought* to do, he is guilty of sin.

Thus these two Apostolic verdicts, delivered in a similar manner, constitute two fundamental rules of human action, as to what men are *bound to forbear* doing, and as to what *they are bound to do*.

Those persons whom St. Paul addressed, were tempted to do many things, which they did not, in their consciences, approve; and the Apostle warns them, that if they do any thing against their conscience, they commit sin.

They to whom St. James wrote, were vainglorious of their religious *knowledge*; but they were not careful to show forth their religious knowledge by religious *practice*; and the Apostle teaches them that their knowledge will only increase their guilt, unless they *do* what they *know* to be right.

Hence, while it is a sin to shun knowledge, and there is *some* sin of ignorance (cp. Augustine, vi. 661), and it is a sin to shut the ears to instruction; and it is a duty to *get knowledge*, to *increase* in knowledge, to *abound* in knowledge, we must beware not to *rest* in knowledge. We must *add* to our *knowledge*, *temperance*, *patience*, *godliness*, *brotherly kindness*, *charity*. Without these *knowledge* is unprofitable; nay, will only increase our condemnation. See Bp. Sanderson, iii. p. 232—4. Cp. Luke xii. 47. John ix. 41; xv. 22; and see the woes pronounced on Chorazin and Capernaum, Matt. xi. 21.

CH. V. 1. ἄγε νῦν, οἱ πλούσιοι] *Go to now, ye rich, weep and howl*. He continues his address to the Jews, and especially the Sadducees, noted for wealth and worldliness. Among the *Christians* few were rich (see above, ii. 5—7), and therefore this portion

- ^b Matt. 6. 19, 20. ὑμῶν ταῖς ἐπερχομέναις. ² ^b Ὁ πλοῦτος ὑμῶν σέσηπε, καὶ τὰ ἱμάτια ὑμῶν
^c Rom. 2. 5. σητόβρωτα γέγονεν. ³ ^c ὁ χρυσὸς ὑμῶν καὶ ὁ ἄργυρος κατίωται, καὶ ὁ ἰὸς
αὐτῶν εἰς μαρτύριον ὑμῖν ἔσται, καὶ φάγεται τὰς σάρκας ὑμῶν ὡς πῦρ· ἔθησαν-
ρίσατε ἐν ἐσχάταις ἡμέραις.
^d Lev. 19. 13.
Deut. 24. 14.
Job 24. 10, 11.
Mal. 3. 5.
Ecclus. 34. 21, 22. ⁴ ^d Ἴδου, ὁ μισθὸς τῶν ἐργατῶν τῶν ἀμνησάντων τὰς χώρας ὑμῶν, ὁ ἀπεστε-
ρημένος ἀφ' ὑμῶν κράζει· καὶ αἱ βοαὶ τῶν θερισάντων εἰς τὰ ὦτα Κυρίου
Σαβαὼθ εἰσελήλυθαν.
^e Job 21. 13.
Luke 16. 19, 25. ⁵ ^e Ἐτρυφήσατε ἐπὶ τῆς γῆς, καὶ ἐσπαταλήσατε. Ἐθρέψατε τὰς καρδίας
^f ch. 2. 6. ὑμῶν ἐν ἡμέρᾳ σφαγῆς. ⁶ ^f Κατεδικάσατε, ἐφονεύσατε τὸν Δίκαιον· οὐκ ἀντι-
τάσσεται ὑμῖν.

of the Epistle is not to be restricted to *them*; see v. 6. St. James, like a Christian Jeremiah, is uttering a divine prophecy, of the woes that are coming on Jerusalem and on the Jews throughout the world.

2. ὁ πλοῦτος ὑμῶν] *your wealth is mouldering in corruption, and your garments (stored up in vain superfluity in your wardrobes) are become moth-eaten.* Although they may still glitter brightly in *your* eyes, and may dazzle men by their brilliance when ye walk the streets, or sit in the high places of this world; yet they are in fact *already* cankered. They are loathsome in *God's sight*. The divine anger has breathed upon them and blighted them; they are already withered and blasted, as being doomed to speedy destruction: for *ye lived delicately on the earth* (see v. 5), and have not laid up treasure in *heaven*, where neither *moth* nor *rust* doth corrupt (Matt. vi. 20).

— ὁ χρυσός] *your gold and your silver are eaten up with rust.* The sentence is *figurative*, and is *shown* to be such by this expression. Literally *gold* does not contract *rust* (see *Theognis*, 451. *Pliny*, N. H. xxxiii. 19, and other authorities in *Wetstein*, p. 678): but those precious metals, which *naturally* are incapable of rust, do, by being *abused*, or not rightly *used*, morally and spiritually contract rust; and not only so, but are, as St. James says, *eaten up with rust*. Even while shining in your coffers, they are, in God's eye, sullied and corroded, and they will not profit you in the day of trial, but be consumed by His indignation; and the rust they have contracted by lying idle as κτήματα, and not having been used as χρήματα, will be a *witness against you* at the Great Day; and will pass from you by a plague-like contagion, and *devour your flesh as fire*.

3, 4. ἐθησαυρίσατε] *ye laid up treasure in the last days.* He speaks of this laying up *as past*, and as done in the last days.

Such is the divine language of *prophecy*. The Holy Spirit, speaking by St. James, utters a voice as it were from the Divine Throne and from the Day of Judgment.

The judicial sentence is pronounced, and is as good as executed, in the eye of God. A sublime and awful picture. God is seated on His throne. *The wages* of the poor, defrauded by their *proud and wealthy* oppressor, have cried aloud, and their cries have *entered* into the ears of God, styled here by His awful and majestic title in authentic Hebrew words, to make it more striking to the Jews,—The Lord of SABAOTH; the LORD of Hosts of Angels, with which He cometh to execute judgment.

St. James here takes up the prophetic warnings of Malachi (iii. 5), where God declares that He will “come near to them to judgment, and that He will be a swift witness against the adulterers and false swearers, and against those that oppress the hireling in his wages” (τοὺς ἀποστεροῦντας μισθὸν μισθωτοῦ: cp. Ecclus. xxxiii. 27), the widow and the fatherless (see above, i. 27), and “that fear not Me, saith The LORD of Hosts.” “For I am the Lord, I change not” (see above, i. 17). And now we call the proud happy! (Mal. iii. 15.)

On this use of ἀπὸ, *on your part, by you*, after the passive verb ἀπεστερημένος, see above, i. 13, ἀπὸ Θεοῦ πειράζομαι, *Winer*, p. 332, note, and above on Luke vi. 18. Some expositors connect κράζει with ἀφ' ὑμῶν, *cries from out of your hands, or coffers*, in which it is detained; but this seems to be a forced interpretation, and not authorized by any Ancient Version.

5. ἐτρυφήσατε ἐπὶ τῆς γῆς] *ye revelled upon earth.* Ye have not had your treasure in *heaven*. Ye have not found delight in spiritual things, such as God's sabbaths (Isa. lviii. 13), and in the pleasures of His house (Ps. cxii. 1; lxxv. 4), and in doing His statutes (Ps. cxix. 72. 97), but in what is *earthly* and *perishable*: ye have had *your* good things in this life, and therefore ye will suffer loss and torment in the life to come. Luke xvi. 25.

— ἐσπαταλήσατε] instead of devoting your worldly wealth—which was God's gift—to God's service, *ye lavished it* in luxury and riot, and indulgence on yourselves.

On the word σπαταλῶ, from σπάω, *distraho*, σπαθῶ, *dissipo*, cp. 1 Tim. v. 6. Prov. xxix. 21. Amos vi. 4, and *Wetstein*, ii. p. 340.

— ἐν ἡμέρᾳ σφαγῆς] *in a day of slaughter.* A striking contrast. Ye feasted jovially as in a *day of sacrifice*, when abundance of flesh of the sacrificed animals is on the table at the sacrificial banquet. Ye ought to have offered *yourselves* a reasonable sacrifice to God (Rom. xii. 1), but ye sought not His glory, but your own gratification; Ye ought to have ruled the people gently and mildly; but ye “have fed yourselves and not the flock,” ye *nourished your own hearts* and not those of your people; ye have sacrificed and devoured them like sheep or calves of the stall fattened for the pampering of your own appetites. Cp. Ezek. xxxiv. 1—10. *Cyril*, in *Caten*. p. 33.

Therefore your sacrifices are offensive to God; and *ye yourselves* are like *victims* appointed to be sacrificed in the day of the Lord's vengeance, which is often compared by Hebrew prophets to a sacrifice; see below on Rev. xix. 17. Cp. *Æcumenius* and *Theophylact* here.

This was signally verified by the event. The Jews from all parts of the world came together to the *sacrifice* of the *Passover*, A.D. 70, and they themselves were then *slain as victims* to God's offended justice, especially in the *Temple*. See above on Matt. xxiv. 1. 15; and particularly the *rich* among them, as recorded by *Josephus* in B. J. vi. *passim*. Their wealth excited the cupidity and provoked the fury of the factious zealots against them, and they fell victims in a day of slaughter to their own love of mammon; what was left of their substance was consumed by the flames which burnt the city. *Josephus* vii. 29. 32. 37.

Elz. inserts *ὡς*, *as*, before ἐν ἡμέρᾳ, but *ὡς* is not in A, B, and is rejected by *Lach.*, *Tisch.*, *Alf.*

6. κατεδικάσατε] *ye condemned, ye murdered the Just One; Christ* (*Cassiodor.*, *Æcumen.*, *Bede*, *Bengel*): this was your crowning sin, the cause of your coming woe: and after many years of long-suffering on God's part, ye have not been brought to repentance; “ye denied the Holy One and the Just, and killed the Prince of Life.” (Acts iii. 14, 15.) Ye have also slain His faithful witness St. Stephen (Acts vii. 59), and St. James the brother of John (Acts xii. 2), and thus ye prove yourselves the children of your fathers who slew the prophets, who “pre-announced to you the coming of the JUST ONE (τοῦ Δικαίου) of whom ye became the betrayers and murderers” (φονεῖς, Acts vii. 52), as was said to the Jewish Sanhedrim by the first Martyr, St. Stephen, in the speech which seems to have been in the mind of St. James when he wrote these words.

It has been alleged by way of objection to this interpretation, that the Jews of the age in which this Epistle was written, could not be charged with having condemned and killed *Christ*, who had been crucified about thirty years before. But this objection is of little weight. Our Lord asserts that they who persecuted Him had even killed *Zacharias the son of Barachias*, slain many centuries before (Matt. xxiii. 35).

Those words, like many other sayings of Christ, especially these recorded in the Gospel of St. *Matthew*, seem to have been in the mind of St. James when he wrote this Epistle. The *just* blood of the *just* Abel, and of all the other just men slain from the beginning, were drops in their cup of guilt, which overflowed at the shedding of the blood of the JUST ONE, typified by Abel, and by all the Martyrs to the days of Zacharias; see the note on that passage; ὅπως ἔλθῃ ἐφ' ὑμᾶς πᾶν αἷμα δίκαιον ἀπὸ τοῦ αἵματος Ἀβὲλ τοῦ δικαίου, ἕως τοῦ αἵματος Ζαχαρίου υἱοῦ Βαραχίου ὃν ἐφονεύσατε, whom ye slew. By clinging to the sins of their fathers the Jews *identified themselves with them*; they committed *their* sins. They who persecuted the *Christians* after the Ascension persecuted *Christ* (Acts ix. 4, 5). Hence *Justin Martyr*, writing a century after St. James, says to the Jews, “Ye killed the Just One and His prophets before Him.” *Dialog*. c.

^{7 s} Μακροθυμήσατε ουν, ἀδελφοὶ, ἕως τῆς παρουσίας τοῦ Κυρίου. Ἴδου, ὁ ^g Deut. 11. 14. γεωργὸς ἐκδέχεται τὸν τίμιον καρπὸν τῆς γῆς, μακροθυμῶν ἐπ' αὐτῷ, ἕως ἂν λάβῃ ὑετὸν πρῶϊμον καὶ ὄψιμον. ⁸ μακροθυμήσατε καὶ ὑμεῖς, στηρίζατε τὰς καρδίας ὑμῶν, ὅτι ἡ παρουσία τοῦ Κυρίου ἥγγικε.

^{9 h} Μὴ στενάζετε κατ' ἀλλήλων, ἀδελφοὶ, ἵνα μὴ κριθῇτε ἰδοὺ, ὁ Κριτὴς πρὸ ^h ch. 4. 11. ^h Matt. 24. 23. τῶν θυρῶν ἔστηκεν.

Tryphon. c. 16. The same may still be said to the Jews even at this day.

Observe the eloquent vehemence (δεινότης) of this grand appeal, made more forcible by the omission of all connecting particles; an example of *asyndeton* well deserving the notice of any Christian Longinus, who may write a treatise "on the sublime" (περὶ ὑψους), as displayed in Holy Writ, *Ye nourished your hearts in a day of sacrifice; ye condemned, ye murdered the JUST ONE; He doth not resist you.* Cp. above, vv. 4—9. *He doth not resist you.* His long-suffering is exhausted, He no longer strives with you. *He lets you alone* (Hos. iv. 17). This is the worst punishment of all; He leaves you to yourselves. *Your house* (no longer *His house*) *is left* to you desolate (Matt. xxiii. 38). He chooses your delusions (Isa. lxvi. 4), and chastises you by your own devices (Jer. ii. 19), and gives you over to a reprobate mind (Rom. i. 28), and your cup of guilt and punishment has now brimmed over, and all the righteous blood shed by your fathers will be required of this generation (Luke xi. 50, 51). A warning and prophecy rendered more striking by the fact that he who uttered it was called by the Jews "James the Just," and was murdered by them at Jerusalem at a time of sacrifice, as a victim at the *Passover* (as his Master was before him), when great multitudes came up to Jerusalem (A.D. 62).

Eight years after that murder, and also at a *Passover*, Jerusalem itself was destroyed. *Hegesippus*, ap. *Euseb.* ii. 23. Cp. *Euseb.* iii. 7, where he speaks of God's long-suffering toward the Jews for *forty years* after the death of Christ, and of His mercy to the Jews in allowing holy men to remain at Jerusalem, especially *James*, the first bishop of Jerusalem, the Lord's brother, who was to the city like a very strong bulwark (ἔρκος ἐχυρώτατον. Cp. his name *Oblias*, see above, *Introduction*, p. 5), while God's providence was still *bearing long* (μακροθυμοῦσης) with them if haply they would repent. By killing St. James they stripped themselves of that strong defence, and provoked the overflowing of God's wrath upon them.

The words of *Eusebius* (ii. 23), quoting the narrative of *Hegesippus*, concerning the death of St. James, deserve to be cited at large; they are thus rendered by *Lardner*, *History of the Apostles* (ch. xvi. vol. iii. p. 36), "When *Paul* had appealed to *Cæsar*, and *Festus* had sent him to *Rome*, the Jews being disappointed in their design against him, turned their rage against *James*, the Lord's brother, to whom the Apostles had assigned the episcopal chair of *Jerusalem*. And in this manner they proceeded against him. Having laid hold of him, they required him in the presence of all the people to renounce his faith in Christ. But he with freedom and boldness beyond expectation, before all the multitude, declared our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ to be the Son of God. They not enduring the testimony of a man, who was in high esteem for his piety, laid hold of the opportunity when the Country was without a Governor, to put him to death. For *Festus* having died about that time in *Judea*, the province had in it no Procurator. The manner of the death of *James* was shown before in the words of *Clement*, who said that he was thrown off from the pediment of the temple (see on Matt. iv. 5. Luke iv. 9), and then beat to death with a club. But no one has so accurately related this transaction as *Hegesippus*, a man in the first age after the Apostles, in the fifth book of his commentaries, whose words are to this purpose,—James the brother of our Lord, undertook together with the Apostles the government of the Church. He has been called *the Just* by all from the time of our Saviour to ours. Some of the seven sects, which there were among the Jews, asked him, Which is the Door of Jesus: or, What is the Door of salvation? And he said: Jesus is the Saviour, or the way of salvation. Some of them therefore believed that Jesus is the Christ. . . . And when many of the chief men also believed, there was a disturbance among the Jews and among the Scribes and Pharisees, who said that there was danger, lest all the people should think Jesus to be the Christ. They came therefore to *James* and said: We beseech thee, restrain the error of the people. We entreat thee to persuade all that come hither at the time of *Passover* to think rightly concerning Jesus. For all the people, and all of us put confidence in thee. . . . Stand therefore upon the pediment of the temple, in order that, being placed on high, thou mayest be conspicuous, and thy words may be easily heard by all the people. For because of the

Passover, all the tribes are come hither and many Gentiles. Therefore the Scribes and Pharisees before named placed James upon the pediment of the temple, and cried out to him, and said: O just man, whom we ought all to believe, since the people are in an error following Jesus who was crucified, tell us what is the door of Jesus? And he answered with a loud voice: Why do you ask me concerning the Son of Man? He Himself sitteth in heaven at the right hand of the great power, and will come upon the clouds of heaven. And many were fully satisfied, and praised God for the testimony of *James*, saying, Hosanna to the Son of David. But the Scribes and Pharisees said to one another: We have done wrong in procuring such a testimony to Jesus. Let us go up and throw him down, that the people being terrified may not give credit to him. . . . They went up presently and cast him down, and said, Let us stone *James* the Just. And they began to stone him, because he was not killed with the fall. But he turning himself kneeled down, saying: I entreat thee, O Lord God the Father, forgive them, for they know not what they do. As they were stoning him one said, Cease, What do ye? the just man prayeth for you. And one of them, a fuller, took a club with which he was used to beat clothes, and struck him on the head. Thus he suffered martyrdom. And they buried him in that place, and his monument still remains near the temple. This *James* was a true witness to Jews and Gentiles that Jesus is the Christ. Soon after this *Judea* was invaded by *Vespasian*." So writes *Hegesippus* at large, says *Eusebius*, agreeably to *Clement*. *James* was so excellent a man, and so much esteemed by many for his virtue: that thoughtful men among the Jews were of opinion, that his death was the cause of the siege of Jerusalem which followed soon after his martyrdom. These are the things which are related of *James*, whose is the first of the epistles called catholic. (*Eusebius*, ii. 23.)

The narrative in *Josephus* (xx. 9. 1) contains several things at variance with this account, but it may admit of a doubt whether the words τὸν ἀδελφὸν Ἰησοῦ τοῦ λεγομένου Χριστοῦ, Ἰάκωβος ὄνομα αὐτοῦ are not interpolated. Cp. *Lardner*, c. xvi. They are enclosed in brackets in *Richter's* edition, Lips. 1826.

7. μακροθυμήσατε οὖν, ἀδελφοί] *be ye patient, therefore, brethren.* Remember what the Lord suffered, and how He was made perfect through suffering; and that He will soon come to visit those who persecute you.

St. James here turns himself from the Jews to the Christians; and preaches to them patience: an exhortation requisite in their circumstances; compare the similar language of St. Paul, Heb. xii. 1—28, which is like an enlargement of this admonition of St. James: and see also Heb. vi. 7. 11, 12, where St. Paul compares the hearts of the faithful to good soil which drinketh in the rain, and produceth herbage meet for the use of those for whom it is tilled (γεωργεῖται), and receives blessing from God; and exhorts them to show earnestness for the full assurance of hope unto the end; in order that they may be imitators of them who "through faith and *patience* (μακροθυμία) inherit the promise." Observe the repetition here of the word μακροθυμία, v. 8, and μακροθυμία, v. 10, as if the Apostle would leave this admonition to long-suffering and patience as a parting bequest to the faithful.

Probably St. Paul had St. James in his mind, and thought of his martyrdom, when he wrote to the Hebrews,—in the interval between the death of St. James and the destruction of Jerusalem,—"Remember your *spiritual Guides*, who spoke to you the word of God; whose faith follow ye (μιμῆσθε), contemplating the end of their conversation." Heb. xiii. 7, where see note.

— μακροθυμῶν ἐπ' αὐτῷ] *bearing long with it; showing long-suffering towards it; see Matt. xviii. 7.*

— ὑετὸν πρῶϊμον καὶ ὄψιμον] *the early and latter rain: the early rain was that which fell in the autumn; the latter that of the spring about the end of April; see Jerome in Amos iv. 7, and the commentators on Ezek. xxvii. 17, and Joel ii. 23. Zech. x. 1. Hos. vi. 4, and the rabbinical citations in Wetstein, p. 678.*

9. κριθῇτε] So the best MSS. and editions. *Elz.* has κατακριθῇτε.

— ἰδοὺ, ὁ κριτὴς πρὸ τῶν θυρῶν ἔστηκεν] *behold, the Judge standeth before the door.* Cp. Matt. xxiv. 33, ἐγγύς ἐστιν ἐπὶ θύραις, and in a different sense Rev. iii. 20, ἔστηκα ἐπὶ τὴν θύραν. Christ is at hand, He is even now at the Door, ready to

i Matt. 5. 12.

k Num. 14. 18.
Job 1. 21, 22.
& 42. 10.
Ps. 103. 8.
Matt. 5. 11.1 Matt. 5. 34, &c.
2 Cor. 1. 17, 18.m 2 Chron. 33. 12.
Ps. 50. 16.
Eph. 5. 19.
Col. 3. 16.
n Mark 6. 13.
& 16. 18.

¹⁰ i Ὑπόδειγμα λάβετε, ἀδελφοὶ, τῆς κακοπαθείας, καὶ τῆς μακροθυμίας, τοὺς Προφῆτας, οἱ ἐλάλησαν τῷ ὀνόματι Κυρίου. ¹¹ k Ἰδοὺ, μακαρίζομεν τοὺς ὑπομένοντας. Τὴν ὑπομονὴν Ἰώβ ἡκούσατε, καὶ τὸ τέλος Κυρίου εἶδετε· ὅτι πολὺ σπλαγχνός ἐστιν ὁ Κύριος καὶ οἰκτίρμων.

¹² l Πρὸ πάντων δὲ, ἀδελφοί μου, μὴ ὀμνύετε, μήτε τὸν οὐρανὸν μήτε τὴν γῆν, μήτε ἄλλον τινὰ ὄρκον· ἥτω δὲ ὑμῶν τὸ ναὶ, ναὶ, καὶ τὸ οὐ, οὐ· ἵνα μὴ ὑπὸ κρίσιν πέσητε.

¹³ m Κακοπαθεῖ τις ἐν ὑμῖν; προσευχέσθω· εὐθυμεῖ τις; ψαλλέτω. ¹⁴ n Ἀσθενεῖ τις ἐν ὑμῖν; προσκαλεσάσθω τοὺς πρεσβυτέρους τῆς ἐκκλησίας· καὶ προσ-

execute vengeance on the guilty city of Jerusalem for her sins (*Ecumen.*). This saying: The Judge standeth at the *Door*, suggests a reference to the remarkable incident recorded by *Hegesippus* (see on v. 6), that the religious sects at Jerusalem were accustomed to ask St. James "which is the *Door* of Jesus?" and that at a Passover (that of A.D. 62) they placed him on a lofty eminence of the temple and cried out, The people are gone wild after Jesus who has been crucified, tell us, which is the *Door* of Jesus?

This question was doubtless put in bitter irony and malignant mockery: as is proved by the murder of St. James perpetrated by those who uttered it. The saying is an enigmatical one. Perhaps this passage in this Epistle may explain it.

This latter portion of the Epistle contains a solemn prophecy of the woes coming on the Jews for the murder of the *Just One*: and denounces their sins and predicts their punishment (see vv. 1—6). It then proceeds to announce that the presence of the Lord is at hand, and that, behold, the *Judge* standeth at the *Door*.

This Epistle, published abroad throughout the world, and thus pre-announcing the doom impending on Jerusalem for the sin of its Rulers in crucifying Jesus, would be as offensive to Jews, especially the great and wealthy among them, as the prophetic roll of Jeremiah was to the King and Princes of Jerusalem (Jer. xxxvi. 10—32). And the language of this chapter may serve to explain their malignant menaces and blood-thirsty rage against the Apostle. It was to them what the speech of St. Stephen had been to the Sanhedrim; and probably St. James, as well as St. Stephen, was a victim of the wrath excited by his courageous rebukes of their sins, and by the constancy of his testimony to Jesus.

The words of St. James, "Behold! the Judge standeth at the *door*," perhaps became current among them. Perhaps those words may have also excited the question put in a tone of derision, "which is the *Door* of Jesus?" at *what* Door is He standing? By *what* Door will He come? show Him to us and we will go out to meet Him.

This supposition is confirmed by the reply of St. James, "Why do ye ask me concerning the Son of Man? He sitteth in heaven; and *will come* in the clouds of heaven." *There is His Door*. The words of the murderous flatterers to St. James, as recorded by *Hegesippus*, seem to contain another similar ironical reference to the rebukes of this Epistle, "Thou art *no respecter of persons*" (πρόσωπον οὐ λαμβάνεις). No, forsooth! thou hast preached to the world to make no difference between rich and poor, and to show no *respect* to persons (see above, ii. 1—9). Therefore doubtless *thou* wilt speak the truth.

Other interpretations of that saying, "Which is the Door of Jesus?" may be seen in *Bp. Pearson* on *S. Ignatius*, ad Philadelph. 9, αὐτὸς ὡν θύρα τοῦ πατρὸς, with reference to John x. 7—9. *Valesius* and others on *Euseb.* ii. 23. *Lardner*, Hist. of Apostles, ch. xvi. *Credner*, Einleit. ii. p. 580. *Gieseler*, Church Hist. § 31; and *Delitz*, on the Epistle to the Hebrews, p. 673.

10. τοὺς προφῆτας] *the Prophets*, Elijah, Isaiah, Jeremiah, Daniel. Take them as an example of patient suffering of injuries. Thus he shows that the Gospel of Christ is in harmony with the Old Testament; and guards against the cavil of the Jews that it would undermine the authority of their Scriptures.

11. Ἰώβ] *Job*, the patriarch of the ancient Church, not of the stock of Abraham. Thus all unite—Prophets, Patriarchs, and Apostles—in teaching the duty of Patience. The Patriarch Job is propounded here as an example by the Apostle St. James. Hence we may conclude that the book of Job is *not* (as some have supposed) an *allegory*, but a *true history*, and this is further evident from the words of Ezekiel, combining Job with two other historical personages, Noah and Daniel. Ezek. xiv. 14. 20.

—τὸ τέλος Κυρίου εἶδετε] *ye saw the end of the Lord*, His dealings with Job, by which he "was more blessed at his latter end than at the beginning," Job xlii. 12: cp. *Augustine*, de Symbolo, 10.

12, 13. πρὸ πάντων] *but above all, my brethren, swear not.*

The connexion of this precept with the preceding may be stated in the words of *Bp. Sanderson* (Lectures on Oaths, vii. 11). "Set the examples of antient Prophets, and holy men before your eyes. If ye suffer adversity, imitate their patience. If in all things you cannot attain to that perfection, yet thus far at least, except ye be very negligent, you may go with ease; above all things, take heed lest too impatient of your grief, or too much transported with your joy, ye break forth into rash oaths, to the dishonour of God, and shame of Christian conversation. But rather contain yourselves, whether troubled or rejoicing, within the bounds of Modesty: mingle not Heaven and earth, let not all things be filled with your oaths and clamours; if you affirm a thing, let it be with calmness, and a mere affirmation or negation. But if either of these passions be more impetuous, and strive to overflow the narrow channels of your bosoms, it will be your wisdom to let it forth unto the glory of God. Do you demand by what means? I will tell you: *Is any amongst you afflicted?* Let not his impatience break forth into Oaths and Blasphemies, the Flood-gates of wrath; but rather let him pray; and humbly implore God that he would vouchsafe him Patience, till His heavy hand be removed. *Is any merry?* Let him not bellow it forth in Oaths, like a Bacchanalian, but rather sing it in Hymns and Psalms unto the Praise of God; who hath made his cup to overflow, and crowned him with happy days." *Bp. Sanderson*.

In these words St. James doth not mean universally to interdict the use of oaths: for that in some cases is not only lawful, but very expedient, yea needful, and required from us as a duty; but *that* swearing which our Lord had expressly prohibited to His disciples, and which thence, questionless, the *brethren* to whom St. James did write, did well understand themselves to forbear, having learnt so in the first catechisms of Christian institution; that is, *needless and heedless swearing in ordinary conversation*, a practice then frequent in the world, both among Jews and Gentiles; the invoking of God's name, appealing to His testimony, and provoking His judgment, upon any slight occasion, in common talk, with vain incogitancy, or profane boldness. From such practice the holy Apostle dehortheth in terms importing his great concernedness, and implying the matter to be of highest importance: for, *Before all things, my brethren, do not swear*; as if he did apprehend this sin of all other to be one of the most heinous and pernicious. Could he have said more? would he have said so much, if he had not conceived the matter to be of exceeding weight and consequence? *Dr. Barrow*, Sermon. xv. vol. i. p. 329.

On the subject of Oaths, see above, notes on Matt. v. 34. Heb. vi. 16, and the expositors of Art. XXXIX. of the Church of England.

12. μήτε τὸν οὐρανόν] *neither by heaven, nor by earth*, lest ye give to the creature the honour due only to the Creator, see *Caten.* p. 36, for an oath is an act of *worship* to be paid only to God. Cp. Matt. v. 34.

14. προσκαλεσάσθω τοὺς πρεσβυτέρους τῆς ἐκκλησίας] *Let him call to himself the Elders of the Church, and let them pray over him*. Observe the plural "Elders;" let him call for them, in order that by *united* prayer they may prevail (Matt. xviii. 19), and that they may be *witnesses* of the effects of prayer.

Our Lord sent forth His twelve Apostles and His seventy Disciples *two and two* (Mark vi. 7. Luke x. 1), and St. James prescribes that the sick should send for the Elders of the Church.

Where, however, only *one* Elder can answer the call, this precept enjoins that he should be sent for; and it can hardly be supposed that in some cases the Elders would be summoned in a body to a sick room; but the precept is general, and the application of it in particular circumstances is left to be determined by the wisdom and piety of the faithful.

Here is remarkable evidence of the diffusion of the Gospel and extension of the Church, and of the existence of the order and Ministry of the Christian Priesthood in divers parts of the world in that early age. This Epistle was written before A.D.

ευξάσθωσαν ἐπ' αὐτὸν, ἀλείψαντες αὐτὸν ἐλαίῳ ἐν τῷ ὀνόματι τοῦ Κυρίου.
 15 ° καὶ ἡ εὐχὴ τῆς πίστεως σώσει τὸν κάμνοντα, καὶ ἐγερεῖ αὐτὸν ὁ Κύριος.
 καὶ ἁμαρτίας ἡ πεποιηκὼς, ἀφεθήσεται αὐτῷ.

o Isa. 33. 24.
 Prov. 15. 29.
 Gen. 20. 17.
 Num. 11. 2.
 Josh. 10. 12.

62, when St. James died; it was addressed to the twelve tribes dispersed throughout the world (i. 1), and it gives them this precept,—“Is any sick among you? Let him *send for the Elders of the Church*.”

This admonition would not have been given, if it could not be complied with. In the Acts of the Apostles we see St. James the Bishop of Jerusalem surrounded by, and presiding over, his *Presbyters*, or Elders, there (xxi. 18), and we may infer from his words in this place that Apostles and Apostolic men had now gone forth into a great part of the world (cp. Titus i. 5, and note before 1 Tim. iii.), and had ordained *Presbyters* in the principal cities.

In the Apocalypse we see in each case, *one Person* at their head (see on Rev. ii. 1); as their Angel, or Bishop.

The sick are enjoined to send for the *Presbyters* of the Church. It follows, therefore, that it is a necessary part of the Priest's duty to *visit the sick*. St. James had before asserted, not without reference to this duty, that “pure worship in the sight of God is to *visit* the orphans and widows in their affliction” (i. 27), and he here enjoins the sick to send for the *Presbyters* of the Church, and comforts the faithful with the assurance that the ministry of God's Priests, in prayer and other offices of religion, will be conducive to their comfort in soul and body.

Hence the Church of England prescribes, that “when any person is sick, notice shall be given thereof to the Minister of the Parish” (Order for the Visitation of the Sick); and she specifies it as part of “the Office of a Deacon, to search for the *sick*, &c., and to intimate their names unto the Curate.” (Form, &c., of making Deacons.)

S. Polycarp, the Bishop of Smyrna, a disciple of St. John, and martyr, referring, it would seem, to the words of St. James, gives this ministerial direction (ad Philipp. c. 5), “*Let the Presbyters be tender-hearted, merciful to all, converting the erring* (see below, v. 19), *visiting all who are sick* (ἐπισκεπτόμενοι πάντας ἀσθενεῖς); not neglecting the *widow or orphan or needy* (see above, i. 27), and providing always what is good in the *sight of God*, abstaining from all respect of persons (see above, ii. 1. 9), not sharp in judgment, knowing that *we are all sinners*” (see above, iii. 2). These words of *S. Polycarp* show that he was familiar with this Epistle of St. James.

— προσευξάσθωσαν ἐπ' αὐτόν] *let them* (the Presbyters) *pray over him*, the sick man. There is therefore a special efficacy in the prayers of those whom God has set apart for that office.

Every Priest being taken from among men is ordained for men in things pertaining to God (Heb. v. 1), that he may offer prayers; the prayers he offereth he offereth *out of his office*, and so, even in that respect there is, *cæteris paribus*, a more force and energy in them, as coming from him whose *calling* it is to offer them, than in those that come from another whose *calling* it is not so to do. *Bp. Andrewes*, Sermons, v. 230, 231.

The authority of the Priest's *calling* is a furtherance, because if God have so far received him into favour as to impose upon him by the hands of man that office of blessing the people in His Name, and making intercession to Him in theirs, which office He hath sanctified with His own most gracious promise, and ratified that promise by manifest actual performance thereof, when others before in like place have done the same; is not his very Ordination a seal, as it were, to us, that the self-same Divine Love that hath chosen the Instrument to work with, will by that Instrument effect the thing whereto He ordained it, in blessing His people, and accepting the prayers which His servant offereth up unto God for them? *Hooker*, V. xxv. 3.

— ἀλείψαντες αὐτὸν ἐλαίῳ] *anointing him with oil*.

A question here arises;

Why the Church of England has not retained the practice of Anointing the Sick, as here prescribed by St. James?

And if the Early Church discontinued doing so, when and why?

St. Mark says of the Apostles (vi. 13), “They cast out devils, and *anointed with oil* many that were sick, and healed them.”

From a comparison of this passage with the parallel places in St. Matthew (x. 1—8) and St. Luke (ix. 1—6), it appears that they did this in the exercise of the *extraordinary* and *miraculous* powers of Healing bestowed on them by Christ.

The application of oil to the body of the Sick was a visible proof that they who applied it (viz. the Apostles) were Instruments employed by God for the conveyance of those benefits which accompanied its application.

It was a manifest evidence that Miracles of Healing were

wrought by God through their agency; it was like a credential to their mission; and it served to call attention to the Doctrine taught by them, as coming from God.

The miraculous powers of Healing given to the Apostles were for some time continued in the Church.

Thus St. Paul says (1 Cor. xii. 8, 9), “To one is given by the Spirit the word of wisdom; to another the word of knowledge by the same Spirit; to another the *gifts of healing*; to another prophecy; to another tongues;” and again (1 Cor. xii. 28), “God hath set some in the Church, first Apostles, secondarily Prophets, thirdly teachers, after that Miracles, then gifts of healing. . . . Have all the *gifts of healing*? Do all speak with tongues?”

Our Lord Himself promised this gift to His disciples (Mark xvi. 18): “They shall lay hands *on the sick*, and they shall *recover*.” This was done by the Apostles in the time of our Lord's ministry (says *Æcumenius* here): they anointed the sick with oil and *healed* them.

It appears that St. James is speaking with reference to this *miraculous power of healing* then existing in the Church, when he says (v. 14), “Is any sick among you? let him call for the elders of the Church; and let them pray over him, *anointing him with oil* in the name of the Lord; and the prayer of faith *shall save the sick*, and the Lord shall raise him up, and if he have committed sins, they shall be forgiven him.” That is to say, If any one is sick, let him avail himself of the gifts which God has bestowed upon His Church; let him send for the Presbyters of the Church, and let them pray over him; and the prayer of faith (i. e. the faithful prayer made in full trust that God will do what *is best for the sick*) will (if it be God's good pleasure) save the sick, and God will *raise him up*, and restore him to health; and if he has committed sins, and if he is penitent for his sins, and has faith in Christ, they shall be forgiven him.

Whatever was instituted by Christ or by His Apostles, under His guidance and that of the Holy Ghost, for the purpose of *conveying grace* to the *soul*, and for the attainment of *everlasting glory*, is of *perpetual and universal obligation*; for all men need grace, and all men desire glory. Such things are the Two Sacraments and Confirmation. See on Acts viii. 16, 17.

But things which were practised and prescribed by Christ Himself and His Apostles are *not of perpetual obligation*, unless they are conducive to an *end* which is of *perpetual necessity*, namely, to the bestowal of *spiritual grace* to the *soul*, and to its everlasting salvation. If such is not their character, they are mutable, and may be omitted or foregone by the Christian Church, according to the wisdom and discretion with which God has endued her. See this proved at large by *Hooker*, I. xv., and III. x., and xi. 15—18.

This is evident from the non-use of *feet-washing*, a thing done and enjoined by Christ Himself (see on John xiii. 14), and from the discontinuance of the *holy kiss* prescribed by His Apostles. (1 Thess. v. 26. Rom. xvi. 16. 1 Pet. v. 14.)

There is no evidence that *anointing with oil* was ever used in primitive times as a *sacrament* for the conveyance of *spiritual grace* to the sick in danger of death.

For a considerable time the Church retained the gift of healing (*Irenæus*, v. 6. *Tertullian*, de Bapt. c. 10. *Euseb.* v. 7. *S. Jerome*, vit. *Sulp. Sever.* vit. Martini, c. 15), and the practice of anointing with oil, with a view to *recovery from sickness*, was continued in the Eastern and Western Churches. Indeed (as may be seen in the Greek Euchologium), it is continued in the Eastern Church to this day for *this purpose*; see *Dr. Covel* on the Greek Church, 308. 340.

The Latin Church has adopted a different course.

She perceived in course of time that the *effect* mentioned by St. James (“the Lord shall *raise up* the sick”) did not ordinarily ensue from the anointing with oil; she saw that the *miraculous* and *extraordinary* powers of healing granted by Christ to the Apostles and other primitive disciples in the Apostolic ages, had gradually been withdrawn, as was the case with those *other* miraculous gifts, coupled with that of healing by St. Paul (1 Cor. xii. 28), viz., the gift of *tongues*.

But she would not lay aside the practice of anointing the sick. She *retained* the practice, but she abandoned the *design* for which the practice had been instituted.

At length, in the twelfth and thirteenth centuries, the Latin Church had diverted the practice into a direction quite contrary to the purpose for which it was originally prescribed.

The Apostle St. James had enjoined the practice with a view

p 1 Kings 17. 1.
& 18. 42, 45.
Luke 4. 25.
Acts 14. 15.
q 1 Kings 18. 41,
&c.

¹⁶ Ἐξομολογεῖσθε ἀλλήλοις τὰ παραπτώματα, καὶ εὐχεσθε ὑπὲρ ἀλλήλων, ὅπως ἰαθῇτε· πολὺ ἰσχύει δέησις δικαίου ἐνεργουμένη. ¹⁷ Ἡλίας ἄνθρωπος ἦν ὁμοιοπαθὴς ἡμῖν, καὶ προσευχῇ προσηύξατο τοῦ μὴ βρέξαι· καὶ οὐκ ἔβρεξεν ἐπὶ τῆς γῆς ἑνιαυτοὺς τρεῖς καὶ μῆνας ἑξ. ¹⁸ καὶ πάλιν προσηύξατο, καὶ ὁ οὐρανὸς ὑετὸν ἔδωκε, καὶ ἡ γῆ ἐβλάστησε τὸν καρπὸν αὐτῆς.

to the recovery of the sick; as Cardinal Caietan^{us} allows, in his note on the passage, where he says, "Hæc verba non loquuntur de Sacramentali unctione extremæ unctionis;" but the Church of Rome prescribes, in the Councils of Florence (A.D. 1438) and Trent (A.D. 1551), that the anointing should *not* take place *except* where recovery is *not* to be looked for (Council of Trent, Sess. xiv., "qui tam periculosè decumbunt ut in exitu vitæ constituti videantur"), and therefore she calls this anointing "*extreme unction*," and "*sacramentum exeuntium*," and she regards it as a *Sacrament* for conveying grace to the soul.

Thus, on the one hand, the Greek Church is a witness by her present practice, that the Anointing was designed with a view to *bodily recovery*; and the Roman Church, on the other hand, is a witness, that the *miraculous* effects on the *body*, which were wrought in primitive times by God through the instrumentality of those who anointed the sick, and which accompanied that unction, *have ceased*.

In the first Prayer Book of King Edward VIth, the Church of England (in her Office for the Visitation of the Sick) provided that "*if the sick man desired it*," he might be *anointed* with a view to his recovery. But on further consideration of the matter, and reflecting (it may be supposed) that the anointing of the sick implied something of a claim to the exercise of *miraculous* powers of healing, and might be chargeable with presumption, and with ignorance of God's dispensations in regard to miraculous powers, and might tempt men to rely for grace and pardon on an outward ceremony administered to them in a state of insensibility; she has thought fit to lay aside the sign, now that the thing signified has *ceased*, and to limit herself soberly and wisely to what is certain and indisputable, and what is the main thing for the sick man to consider, viz., that if he avails himself, as he ought to do in his sickness, of the ministry of his spiritual Guide, the prayer of faith will save the sick, and (if it be most expedient for him) God will raise him up; and if he has committed sins, they will, on his faith and repentance, be forgiven him, and that he will receive pardon, and grace, and peace, through the merits of Christ, and by the love and mercy of God, especially as conveyed, dispensed, and applied in the reception of the blessed and most comfortable *Sacrament of the Body and Blood of Christ*, which she enjoins, in a special Office, to be ministered to the sick.

Compare *Dr. Hammond* here and *Dean Comber's* remarks in his "*Companion to the Temple*," in the Introduction to the Office of Visitation of the Sick.

¹⁶. ἐξομολογεῖσθε ἀλλήλοις] *Confess your transgressions one to another*. Observe the word παραπτώματα, offences, breaches of law: here particularly the law of love: and ἀλλήλοις, one to another, as friends and brethren; and compare our Lord's precept, "If thy brother trespass against thee, rebuke him, and if he repent forgive him, and if he trespass against thee seven times in a day, and seven times in a day turn again unto thee saying, I repent, thou shalt forgive him" (Luke xvii. 3, 4).

The doctrine of *private* confession preparatory to the reception of the Holy Communion, and as a part of the discipline of Repentance, cannot rightly be grounded on this text.

Public confession of sins to Almighty God has ever been a necessary part of Christian religion and worship; but *private* confession to a Minister of the Church was never *enforced* in the earliest ages of the Church. The Church of England gives her *advice* to the penitent, in certain cases, and under certain circumstances, "to open his grief to some *discreet* and *learned* Minister of God's Word" (not indiscriminately to *any one* who may claim a right to hear confession, without due qualification for the difficult work of guiding the conscience aright), "that by the ministry of God's Holy Word he may receive the benefit of Absolution, together with ghostly counsel and advice, to the quieting of his conscience and avoiding of all scruple and doubtfulness." See *Hooker*, VI. iv. 4, and VI. iv. 6.

— ὅπως ἰαθῇτε] *that ye may be healed* in body and soul, Matt. xiii. 15. Luke iv. 18; ix. 2. Heb. xii. 13, where St. Paul seems to refer to this precept.

Observe the connexion of this sentence with what goes before. "The greatest thing that made men forward and willing to *confess* their sins, and in no wise to be withheld from this confession by any fear of disgrace or contempt which might ensue, was their fervent desire to be helped with the prayers of God's faithful people, wherein as St. James doth exhort unto *mutual* confession,

alleging this for a reason, that *just men's devout prayers* are of great avail with God, so it hath been heretofore the use of penitents for that intent to unburthen their minds even to private persons and to crave their prayers." *Hooker*, VI. iv. 7, referring to *Ter-tullian* de Pœnit. c. 10, and *S. Ambrose* de Pœnit. ii. 10.

— πολὺ ἰσχύει] *Great is the efficacy of the prayer of a righteous man working inwardly*. Do not imagine, as many do, that prayer will avail without holiness of life. Some make long prayers and devour widows' houses (Matt. xxiii. 14), and therefore shall receive greater damnation (Luke xx. 47). The sacrifice of the wicked is abomination (Prov. xv. 8; xxi. 27), but the prayer of the *righteous* availeth much.

Again, some may suppose, that the prayers of the *lips* will avail, without the inner working of the *heart*. They draw nigh to God with their lips, but their heart is far from Him (Matt. xv. 8). "They use vain repetitions in prayer, and think that they will be heard for their much *speaking*." (Matt. vi. 7. Cp. *Eccles.* vii. 14.) But ye shall not be so. It is the *inner working of the heart*, moved by a spirit of love, that prevails with God. The wrestlings of Jacob in prayer, the yearnings of Hannah's heart, these gain a blessing from Him. "Hæc vis Deo grata est." *Ter-tullian*.

On the word ἐνεργουμένη, *inwardly energizing* in devotion and love to God, so as to produce *external effects* in obedience; see 1 Thess. ii. 13. Gal. v. 6. 2 Cor. i. 6. Col. i. 29. Eph. iii. 20; and see the note of *Maximus* here (in *Catenâ*, p. 37), where he says the "power of prayer is not in words when it comes forth from the tongue in an empty sound of the voice;" such a prayer is ἀργὴ καὶ ἀνυπόστατος, but a prevailing prayer is that which is ἐνεργος καὶ ζῶσα, *energetic and living, animating obedience*.

Observe, therefore, how happily the two emphatic words δικαίου and ἐνεργουμένη are reserved for the *end of the sentence*, to give weight and force to the whole; and to make it sink into the ears and hearts of hearers and readers of the Epistle; and to teach the faithful of every age, that it is *holiness of life and devotion of heart* which give efficacy to Prayer.

The martyrdom of St. James himself affords a beautiful comment on these words (see *Euseb.* ii. 23, quoted above on v. 6), especially where it is related that after St. James had been cast down by his enemies from the pediment of the Temple, and they were stoning him, he fell on his knees and *prayed* for them, and some, who stood by, said, adopting the very words of this Epistle,—"Hold, what do ye? εὐχεται ὑπὲρ ὑμῶν ὁ δίκαιος," "the just man is *praying* for you."

¹⁷. Ἡλίας ἄνθρωπος ἦν ὁμοιοπαθὴς ἡμῖν.] *Elias was a man of like passions with us*; and once his *patience* failed him (1 Kings xix. 4. 10. 14), yet God heard his prayer; and gave him power to shut and open heaven (1 Kings xvii. 1; xviii. 42. 45. Cp. *Rev.* xi. 6). It is not indeed expressly affirmed in the Holy Scriptures of the Old Testament, that Elijah's prayers were the *cause* of the drought for three years and a half, and of the *rain* at their close; but his own declaration that there should not be *rain* but according to his *word* (1 Kings xvii.), and also his actions on Mount Carmel (xviii. 42), first praying to God for the acceptance of his sacrifice, and then casting himself down upon the earth, putting his face between his knees, though they might not lead an *uninspired* Expositor to the inference drawn here by the inspired Apostle St. James, yet they find a very apt exposition in that inference which we may thankfully accept at his hand.

When the prophet Elias said, that the gift of rain should depend on his word, he could not mean the word of *command*, but the word of *prayer*. Be not ye therefore disheartened. Serve God and Pray earnestly; and He will protect you.

— προσευχῇ προσηύξατο] *he prayed with prayer*, there was true ἐνέργεια in his prayer. This is marked by the Hebraistic addition of the substantive to the verb. Cp. on Acts iv. 17, and on 2 Pet. iii. 3.

— τοῦ μὴ βρέξαι] *that it should not rain*. On the infinitive see on Acts xxvii. 1, and on *Rev.* xii. 7, and on the word βρέχω, to *rain*, Matt. vii. 25. 27.

— ἑνιαυτοὺς τρεῖς καὶ μῆνας ἑξ.] *three years and six months*; equal to 42 months, or 1260 days,—a chronological period of *suffering*. See above on Luke iv. 25, and below on *Rev.* xi., note at the end of the chapter.

19 ^r Ἀδελφοὶ, εἰάν τις ἐν ὑμῖν πλανηθῇ ἀπὸ τῆς ἀληθείας, καὶ ἐπιστρέψῃ τις ^r Matt. 18. 15.
 αὐτὸν, 20 ^s γνωσκέτω ὅτι ὁ ἐπιστρέψας ἁμαρτωλὸν ἐκ πλάνης ὁδοῦ αὐτοῦ, σώσει ^s Rom. 11. 14.
 ψυχὴν ἐκ θανάτου, καὶ καλύψει πλῆθος ἁμαρτιῶν. ^s 1 Cor. 9. 22.
^s 1 Tim. 4. 16.
^s 1 Pet. 4. 8.

19, 20. ἀδελφοὶ—ἁμαρτιῶν] Brethren, if any man among you shall have strayed from the truth, and any one shall have converted him,—brought him back to the way of the truth from which he had gone astray,—let him know, that he who hath turned a sinner from the error of his way, shall save a soul from death, and shall cover a multitude of sins.

20. γνωσκέτω] let him know. This is genuine γνῶσις, or knowledge, that by imitating Christ's love, we are made partakers in His work, and in His glory. By doing the work of Christ in seeking to save that which is lost (Matt. xviii. 11. Luke xix. 10), the Christian will be admitted to be a sharer in the dignity and office of Christ; he will save a soul from death. So Timothy is said by St. Paul to save those who hear him, i. e. by applying the means instituted by Christ for their salvation (1 Tim. iv. 16. Cp. Rom. xi. 14. 1 Cor. vii. 16; ix. 22. Jude 23). And so Christ Himself gave His own title to His ministers when He said "Ye are the Light of the world" (Matt. v. 14. Cp. John ix. 5). Therefore he who has turned a sinner from the error of his way will have a saving office and dignity, because he will have applied those means which God has instituted for the salvation of sinners. Cp. Bp. Pearson on the Creed, Art. ii. p. 139.

Nor is this all; he will cover a multitude of sins, and in this respect also will be admitted to be a fellow-worker with Christ; and have a share in another of His glorious titles. Christ alone is the true Propitiatory, or Mercy Seat; He is the Covering of the Ark on which God sits (Ps. lxxx. 1), as on a Throne of Grace, to which we must flee for mercy (Heb. iv. 16; cp. Mather on the Types, pp. 407, 408. 411), and which covers the sins of the whole world. Christ, and Christ alone, in that primary sense, covers a multitude of sins; see Heb. ix. 5, and on Rom. iii. 21—26, and Rom. iv. 7; which afford the best exposition of this text. "Blessed is the man whose iniquities are forgiven, and whose sins are covered; blessed is the man to whom the Lord will not impute sin." (Ps. xxxii. 1, 2.)

The contrast is in the words of Nehemiah, iv. 5, "O God, cover not their iniquity, and let not their sin be blotted out from before Thee."

That man, therefore, who has reclaimed a sinner from the error of his way, and has brought him back to Christ, and to the use of those means which God has instituted in the Church for his salvation in Christ, may be justly said to cover a multitude of

sins by means of the Saviour's righteousness; and he who has thus done the work of Christ, according to the command of Christ, will hear the joyful speech at the great Day, "Well done, thou good and faithful servant, enter thou into the joy of thy Lord." (Matt. xxv. 21.)

This covering of a multitude of sins by Christ, and the ministerial application of the means instituted by Him for the casting of this covering of Christ's righteousness over a multitude of sins, is a different work from that of saving the sinner, specified in the former clause.

For, if we suppose the sinner to be pardoned and saved, and yet the remembrance and record of his sins to be not covered, but to be ever visible to his own eyes, and to the eyes of men and Angels, and of God, in Eternity, this consideration would much abate his happiness in another world.

But the comfort which is administered by the words of the Psalmist, "Blessed is the man whose iniquities are forgiven, and whose sins are covered" (Ps. xxxii. 1, 2), and again (Ps. lxxxv. 2), "Lord, thou hast forgiven the offence of thy people, and covered all their sins," and which is here proffered in God's name by St. James, is this—that by reclaiming an erring brother from the ways of sin, and by bringing him to Christ, we may not only save an immortal soul from eternal death, but may be instrumental in casting over his sins—however great their multitude, and however foul their stains—the spotless robe of Christ's righteousness, so that they may be covered for ever, and be hidden from the sight even of God's Omniscience, by the mantle of Christ's merits.

Here is one of the strongest motives to the work of Christian love, in endeavouring to convert the sinner from the error of his way.

With this precept St. James ends his Epistle; and in the practice of it he ended his life, when, according to the example, and in the words of his Saviour, dying on the cross for the salvation of the souls of all men, and for the covering of their sins from the wrath of God, St. James prayed for his murderers, "I pray Thee, Lord, God and Father, forgive them, for they know not what they do." (Euseb. ii. 23. See above on v. 6.)

There are no salutations nor benedictions at the close of this Epistle for the reason stated above on i. 1.

INTRODUCTION

TO

THE FIRST EPISTLE GENERAL OF ST. PETER.

I. *On the place from which the Epistle was written : and on St. Peter's history and Apostolic acts.*

When the Holy Ghost came down from heaven, on the Day of Pentecost, St. Peter stood up with the Eleven, and preached to the Jews and Proselytes, who had come from all parts of the civilized world to Jerusalem for that Festival.

They whom he addressed are enumerated by the Historian of the Acts of the Apostles in the following order :

1. *Parthians, Medes, and Elamites, and the dwellers in Mesopotamia, and in Judæa.*
2. *Cappadocia, Pontus and Asia, Phrygia and Pamphylia.*
3. *Egypt, the parts of Libya towards Cyrene ; and strangers of Rome, Jews and Proselytes, Cretes and Arabians.*

These Three Classes of persons, as has been shown in another place ¹, represent the principal *Dispersions*, as they were called, of the Jews, scattered abroad in the countries to the East, North, West, and South of Jerusalem.

St. Peter was their Apostle, the Apostle of the Circumcision ², as St. Paul was of the Gentiles. And as St. Paul performed the office of Apostle to the Gentiles, by preaching in person, and also by writing Epistles to the Gentile Churches, and by appointing others, such as Timothy and Titus,—his “own sons in the faith,”—to be Pastors and Bishops in their Cities, so St. Peter did to those of the Circumcision.

He did that work in *regular order*.

The Commission which had been given by Christ to His Apostles had specified certain stages of missionary progress ; “ye shall be witnesses unto Me in *Jerusalem*,” this was the first stage ; “and in all *Judæa*,” this was the second ; “and in *Samaria*,” this was the third ; and, lastly, “unto the *uttermost part of the Earth* ³.”

The Apostle St. Peter had received from Christ a solemnly repeated charge, “Feed My sheep ⁴.” He discharged the duties of the pastoral office entrusted to him, and he performed them according to the *order* prescribed by Him who gave the charge.

He bore witness to Christ, first, in *Jerusalem*, and in *Judæa* ; next, “in *Samaria* ⁵ ;” and, lastly, he bore witness to Christ unto the *uttermost part of the Earth*.

This final and extended witness, to the *uttermost part of the Earth*, is that which is presented to us in his Epistles, and in his Martyrdom.

He preached the Gospel and wrote his first Epistle in the *eastern* territory of the Roman world ; and his Martyrdom took place in the *West*. This Epistle was written from the Eastern Babylon ; and he bore witness to Christ by dying for Him in the Western Babylon,—Rome ⁶.

¹ See on Acts ii. 9—11, and below, 1 Pet. i. 1, and v. 13.

² Gal. ii. 7—9.

³ Acts i. 8.

⁴ John xxi. 16, 17.

⁵ Acts viii. 14—25. Cp. ix. 32.

⁶ See below, p. 39. Whether St. Peter was ever at Rome before the time of his martyrdom in that city is doubtful.

Justin Martyr (Apol. ii. c. 26) asserts that Simon Magus came to Rome in the time of *Claudius* ; and after *Justin Martyr* it is said in the *Chronicon* of *Eusebius*, ad A.D. 42, that he was encountered there by St. Peter ; and so *Euseb.* ii. 14. Cp. *Euseb.* ii. 15—17.

But the silence of Holy Scripture, and especially the absence of any reference to St. Peter in St. Paul's Epistles written to

Thus he completed his testimony to Christ, "in Jerusalem, and in all Judæa, and in Samaria, and unto the uttermost part of the Earth." (Acts i. 8.)

II. The place from which this Epistle is dated is *Babylon*¹.

Reasons will be assigned hereafter for adherence to the opinion, that the *literal* interpretation of that word is the *true* one; and that this Epistle was written from the site of the Assyrian City, on the river Euphrates; the city celebrated of old in the history of the Jewish nation.

Reserving the further details of the evidence on this point for the note on that passage, we may here content ourselves with observing that the Historian of the Acts places the *Parthians*, *Medes*, and *Elamites*, and dwellers in *Mesopotamia* as the *first* in order among those strangers scattered abroad, who had come up to Jerusalem for the Feast of Pentecost, and who were then addressed by *St. Peter*. No less a number than three thousand of them received his word and were baptized²; being the first-fruits of many similar spiritual Harvests which would be gathered in by *St. Peter* and others on many like occasions at Jerusalem, at the Jewish Festivals in succeeding years.

It might reasonably be anticipated that *St. Peter*, the Apostle of the Circumcision, would go in person and visit those to whom he had preached, and whom he had converted by his preaching, and see how they fared³.

Among all the cities in the region of the *Parthians*, *Medes*, and *Elamites*, and dwellers in *Mesopotamia*, none had been so renowned as *Babylon*.

III. An announcement from *St. Peter*, that the Cross of Christ had been planted in *Babylon*, and that there was an *Elect*⁴ Church,—a Christian Sion,—in that place, which had been the cause of so many woes to Jerusalem, would indeed be joyous tidings to the faithful Israelites throughout the world. "The land of Zebulun and the land of Naphtali, Galilee of the Gentiles," which had been the first to endure the calamities inflicted by the Assyrian invasion, were the first to enjoy the blessings of the Gospel, and the gracious presence of the Messiah; and "the people which sat in darkness saw a great light" in the glorious Advent of Him Who is the Light of the world⁵. And if now it could be said, that by the preaching of *St. Peter*, a Galilæan fisherman, *Babylon*, the land of the captivity of Judah, had heard the sound of an Evangelical Jubilee, this intelligence would be hailed with gladness by all faithful Israelites; and would impart consolation to them for the distresses which their forefathers had endured at *Babylon*; and would be like the opening of a door of hope, that all their brethren, wheresoever scattered abroad over the face of the earth, would find a home in the Gospel, and a Jerusalem in the Church of God; and it would be an earnest and a pledge of future victories to be achieved by the Cross of Christ over all the *Babylons* of this world.

There is a beautiful analogy in this respect between *St. Peter* and the Hebrew Prophet, from whose book *St. Peter* adopts his form of benediction in both Epistles (see on i. 2)—the prophet *Daniel*. *Daniel* wrote at *Babylon*, when the City and Temple of Jerusalem were in ruins, and the Jews were captives and exiles in *Babylon*, and in the neighbouring regions. He comforts them in their distress, with prophecies of Christ, of His first Advent, and finally of His Second Coming in Glory, and of the full and final establishment of Christ's kingdom,—the only kingdom that will never be destroyed. This blessed work of prophetic consolation commenced by the Hebrew Prophet

Rome and from Rome, and the scantiness and ambiguity of other testimony on that subject, render it at least very doubtful, whether *St. Peter* was at Rome before his last visit in the reign of Nero, which ended in his martyrdom there. Cp. *Basnage*, *Annales* ad A.D. 42, vol. i. p. 525.

It is probable that he encountered *Simon Magus* at *that* time; *Nicephorus* (Chronog. in Scaliger. Thesaurus Temp. p. 308) assigns two years to *St. Peter's* Episcopate at Rome, and those two years are, in all likelihood, coincident with *St. Peter's* visit to Rome at the close of Nero's reign, when *St. Paul* was also at Rome; and this opinion is confirmed by the testimony of some authors, *S. Cyril*, *Cateches*. 6. *Sulpic. Sever.* ii. p. 369, who represent that *Simon Magus* was encountered at Rome by *St. Paul* as well as *St. Peter*. See *Ittig*, *Hæres*. p. 28, and the testimony in the recently-discovered work of *S. Hippolytus*, which is of more importance from the author's connexion with Rome, p. 178. "This *Simon*," says he, "bewitched many in Samaria with his sorceries, and afterwards came as far as Rome, and entered into conflict with the Apostles; and *Peter* greatly resisted him when he was seducing many by his magical arts." Cp. *Basnage*, *Ann.* A.D. 64, vol. i. p. 731, and the authorities in *Winer*, *R. W. B.* ii. p. 238. *Davidson*, *Intr.* iii. pp. 352—362.

The *obscurity* in which the history of *St. Peter* is involved after his delivery from his imprisonment in A.D. 44 (Acts xii. 17)

is very remarkable. It seems providential. It may be ascribable to the same causes as the *silence* of Holy Scripture with regard to the Blessed Virgin Mary. It is like a prophetic protest against the errors which grew up afterwards in the Church, and fastened themselves with a semblance of reverence on his venerable name; like ivy, which injures the tree which it dresses up with its foliage. If *St. Peter* had been the Supreme head of the Church of Christ, and had possessed sovereign authority over all the Apostles, it is not at all probable that his personal movements for a period of *twenty years* would have been involved in obscurity as they are. How much would the advocate of Papal Supremacy have made of the Acts of the Apostles, if the person who is there brought most prominently forward had been *St. Peter*, instead of *St. Paul*! If we knew as much of *St. Peter's* history as we do of *St. Paul's*, how many arguments would thence have been derived in favour of that Supremacy! There is therefore, it is probable, an eloquent significance in this silence.

¹ See below on this Epistle, v. 13.

² Acts ii. 41.

³ This was the Apostolic rule. Acts xv. 36—41. Cp. Acts xviii. 23.

⁴ See below in the notes on this Epistle, v. 13.

⁵ Isa. ix. 1—3. Matt. iv. 13—16.

Daniel at Babylon, would be continued with peculiar force and propriety by the Christian Apostle, St. Peter, in the same City.

These and other considerations, which will be stated in the proper place¹, lead us to adopt the literal interpretation of St. Peter's words, and to believe that he was at *Babylon* when he wrote this Epistle.

IV. This interpretation, it will be found, imparts clearness and beauty to its contents.

To specify some particulars;

The Epistle itself is sometimes cited by ancient Authors, as "*Epistola ad Ponticos*," an Epistle to those of *Pontus*. The reason is, that among the regions specified by the Apostle at the beginning of this Epistle, the *first* place is assigned to *Pontus*.

Pontus was the most *eastern* region of Asia Minor. This circumstance confirms the opinion above stated, that the place in which the Epistle was written, did *not* lie to the *west* of Asia Minor, —and therefore was *not Rome*, as some have supposed, —but lay to the *east* of Asia Minor.

Still further, on examining the *order* in which the Asiatic regions are arranged in the commencement of this Epistle, we find that they are placed in such a geographical series as that in which they would present themselves naturally to the mind of a person writing from the *east* of Asia Minor; and thus also we were confirmed in the opinion that the word *Babylon* at the close of the Epistle is to be received in its natural sense, and means the celebrated Assyrian City bearing that name.

V. If, again, we refer to the recital in the Acts of the Apostles concerning the preaching of St. Peter, on the day of Pentecost, to the Jewish strangers who had flocked to Jerusalem for that Festival, we find that *after* the mention of those who had come from Parthia and its neighbourhood, namely, from Babylonia and the regions about it, those who are *next* specified are the dwellers in *Judæa*³, *Cappadocia*, *Pontus*, and *Asia*, Phrygia and Pamphylia.

St. Peter went forth from Jerusalem and preached in *Judæa*. Suppose him now to be at Babylon, which was then under the sway of the *Parthians*⁴, and to have confirmed in the faith of Christ those believing Jews who were scattered in Media, Elam, that is Persia, and Mesopotamia. It was very reasonable that he should *next* turn his eyes and his thoughts toward those who formed the second group of the dispersed Israelites; namely, to those of *Pontus*, *Cappadocia*, and *Asia*, who were an offshoot of the Babylonish dispersion, and are placed next to it by St. Luke in the Acts of the Apostles.

What more natural, therefore, than that, being at *Babylon*, he should write an *Epistle* to those of *Pontus* and *Asia*?

He had received a charge to show his love to the Good Shepherd, Who had laid down His life for His sheep; and the manner in which that love was to be proved was by *feeding His sheep*⁵. "The lost sheep of the house of Israel" were committed to his special charge. They were *scattered* abroad throughout the world as sheep without a shepherd. But *they were gathered* together from time to time as in a sheepfold at Jerusalem at the three great annual Festivals. St. Peter *had* fed them *there*.

But he must also *go forth* to feed them.

It was ordered, providentially, that though the sheep of the house of Israel were scattered upon the mountains of the world, yet, if we may venture so to speak, there were certain great spiritual sheep-walks in which they ranged, like the nomad and migratory flocks of the Patriarchs in Arabia, stretching themselves in their pastoral encampments far and wide over the hills, and along the valleys. And when Christian folds had been formed in these great spiritual sheep-walks, ready means were afforded of spiritual communication among them; and they might in fine be gathered as one flock under one Shepherd⁶ in the Church of Christ.

The *first* of these great spiritual sheep-walks was in *Babylonia* and the adjacent countries to which the Ten Tribes had been carried captive. There St. Peter was, when he wrote this *Epistle*.

The *second* of these spiritual sheep-walks was in *Asia Minor*.

The *third* was in *Egypt*⁷.

Therefore, being at *Babylon*, and tending the sheep of the Good Shepherd there, St. Peter next directed his attention to those sheep of the house of Israel who were scattered abroad in *Asia Minor*.

¹ On 1 Pet. v. 13.

² See below on i. 1.

³ John xxi. 16, 17.

⁴ Acts ii. 9.

⁶ John x. 16.

⁵ See below on 1 Pet. v. 13, and *Introduction* to the Second Epistle of St. John.

⁷ Acts ii. 9, 10

of whom not a few had heard his voice in Jerusalem, and had perhaps been already visited by him in the interval between the day of Pentecost and the date of this Epistle¹.

Thus he performed the double work enjoined him by Christ, that of *tending* and *feeding* His sheep. He *tended* them by his presence; and he *fed* them by his Epistles, which afford a constant supply of spiritual nourishment to the sheep of Christ².

VI. The mention of "*Marcus his son*," in the salutation from *Babylon*³, supplies another illustration here.

"*Marcus his son*," is doubtless the Evangelist St. Mark, whose Gospel was written under the eye of St. Peter, his father in the faith⁴.

This salutation itself proves, that St. Mark was known to the Asiatic Jewish Christians, whom St. Peter is addressing in the Epistle. This inference is confirmed by the mention of St. Mark by St. Paul, when writing from Rome in his Epistle to the Asiatic Church of Colossæ⁵. And it may probably be concluded from the request of St. Paul, writing from Rome to Timothy,—his own son in the faith, whom he had placed as Bishop at Ephesus,—to bring with him *Mark*, "for he is profitable to me for the ministry⁶;" that Mark was afterwards again at Rome, before the martyrdom of that Apostle.

Subsequently, St. Mark is presented to our notice in Ecclesiastical History as Bishop of Alexandria, the capital of *Egypt*, and as having been sent thither by St. Peter⁷. Egypt and its neighbouring countries was the third great spiritual sheep-walk of the dispersed of Israel: and Alexandria was their central fold⁸. Accordingly, *Egypt and the parts of Libya toward Cyrene* are mentioned in the third place by the Historian of the Acts of the Apostles, in his enumeration of those to whom St. Peter preached on the Day of Pentecost.

St. Peter, as far as we know, never went in person into Egypt, nor did he ever write an Epistle to the inhabitants of that country; but he sent thither "*Marcus his son*," and fed the flock there by *his* instrumentality, both by his Gospel, written under St. Peter's superintendence, and by the pastoral ministrations of St. Mark, the first Bishop of Alexandria.

VII. Thus then, in another sense, St. Peter executed Christ's commission to him, "*Feed My Sheep*," "*Tend My Sheep*." And he did this in the same order as that which is set down by the Holy Spirit in the Acts of the Apostles, describing St. Peter's first preaching, as the Apostle of the Circumcision, when he had just been empowered to preach by the "*Holy Ghost sent down from heaven*," and when he gathered in that spiritual harvest of souls, which may be regarded as the first-fruits of his labours.

The Tending of Christ's flock by personal presence, and preaching; the Feeding of Christ's flock with the healthful food of sound Doctrine, in the writing of Epistles, to endure for all ages after his decease¹⁰; the continual Oversight of Christ's flock by the appointment of Chief Pastors to be continued in succession;—these were the acts of this Apostolic Shepherd, done in obedience to the pastoral charge of the Chief Shepherd and Bishop of our souls¹¹. And by doing these things St. Peter set an example to all Christian Bishops and Pastors, and ever cheers them with a blessed hope, that if they follow him, as he followed Christ, then, when "*the chief Shepherd shall appear*, they will receive a crown of glory that fadeth not away¹²." May we not say, that this view, which exhibits St. Peter, the Apostle of *Israel*, preaching at Babylon in *Assyria*, and also sending "*Marcus his Son*" into *Egypt*, to found a Church there,—a Church which flourished greatly for some centuries, and was a glorious light to Christendom,—displays a fulfilment in part of the remarkable prophecy of Isaiah, "*In that day shall Israel be the third with Egypt and with Assyria, even a blessing in the midst of the land*¹³?"

VIII. But the crowning act of St. Peter's pastoral Ministry still remained to be performed.

The Good Shepherd *layeth down His life for the sheep*¹⁴, and Peter had received a commission from the Good Shepherd, "*Follow thou Me*¹⁵." He would imitate the Good Shepherd, and obey

¹ As is asserted by Origen in Euseb. iii. 1.

² Christ commanded St. Peter ποιμαίνειν and βόσκειν (John xxi. 16, 17). The word ποιμαίνειν, to *tend*, implies the *presence* of the ποιμήν, or Shepherd. But βόσκειν is a work which he may perform when absent, as well as when present. St. Peter ἐποιμαίεν at Babylon; and when there he ἐβόσκειν those of Asia. He ἐποιμαίεν by his presence, and ἐβόσκειν by his writings. He *tended* Christ's sheep when he was alive; but he is *always feeding* them in his *Epistles*.

³ 1 Pet. v. 13.

⁴ See the authorities cited above in the *Introduction* to St. Mark's Gospel, pp. 112—114.

⁵ Col. iv. 10. Philem. 24.

⁶ 2 Tim. iv. 11.

⁷ See Euseb. ii. 16. Epiphani. Hær. li., and the authorities quoted above in the *Introduction* to St. Mark, p. 112.

⁸ See on Acts ii. 9—11.

⁹ 1 Pet. i. 12.

¹⁰ See 2 Pet. i. 15.

¹¹ 1 Pet. ii. 25.

¹² 1 Pet. v. 1—4.

¹³ Isa. xix. 24.

¹⁴ John x. 11—15.

¹⁵ John xxi. 22.

His command. When he had become old, he had provided for the oversight of the lost sheep of the house of Israel, scattered abroad in Parthia, in Asia, and in Egypt. But his commission was not yet fulfilled. It extended to the *uttermost parts of the earth*. He had been to the *East*, to Chaldæa; he must also go to the *West*, to Italy; he had been to the *Eastern Babylon*; he must also go to the *Western Babylon*; he must visit *Rome*.

Here also he followed the order set down by the Apostolic Historian. There the mention of Mesopotamia is succeeded by the mention of Asia, and the mention of Asia is succeeded by that of Egypt, and the mention of Egypt is succeeded by that of Rome¹. At Rome his course was to end.

Our Lord had charged him to prove his love to Him by feeding His lambs, and by tending His sheep, and by feeding His sheep². And immediately after the delivery of this charge to St. Peter, Christ proceeded to utter a prophecy concerning the manner of St. Peter's death: "This He spake, signifying by what manner of death he would glorify God³. And when He had spoken this, He said, *Follow thou Me*." So it came to pass. After St. Peter had tended Christ's sheep by his presence and preaching, and had fed Christ's sheep by his doctrine and writings, and by the ministry of Marcus his son, it remained only that he should perform the finishing work of a Christian Shepherd, in following Him Who is the Good Shepherd, and Who showed His love for His sheep by laying down His life for them⁴. "*Follow thou Me*," were the words of Christ to him; and Christ pre-announced to Peter that he would have grace to follow His Master, not only in His death, but in the manner of it⁵, and would thus prove his love for the Great Shepherd of the Sheep, and would glorify God.

This the blessed Apostle did, in the great city of the West, the Metropolis of the world⁶—Rome. St. Peter himself declares⁷ that he foresaw his death approaching, and probably it was not without divine direction that he went to *that* place, where the evidence of his own love for Christ, in dying after His example, would be most edifying to the Christian Church. His Master had gone up to *Jerusalem to die*; St. Peter went for the same purpose to *Rome*.

Thus he fulfilled the pastoral commission which he had received from Christ, and completed the work which had been given him to do, and which had been delineated in outline by the divine record of his preaching on the Day of Pentecost, when he received the gifts of the Holy Ghost, which enabled him to feed the flock committed to his care.

IX. St. Peter's First Epistle derives special interest from his personal history.

One of its characteristics is its quiet tone of Christian gentleness and humility. This is the more remarkable, because the Author was distinguished among the Apostles by the eager forwardness and fervid vehemence of his character. This natural impetuosity seems to be subdued and chastened, in his Epistle, by an inward self-restraint. That self-restraint was probably produced by a recollection of the former confidence of his professions, and by the disastrous result of that self-reliance, in the hour of trial. He seems to write under the remembrance of the transactions of the High Priest's hall, at the arraignment of Christ⁸. His Epistle breathes the spirit of Christian meekness and humility, and of submission for Christ's sake. "If ye be reproached for Christ's sake, happy are ye⁹." "If any man suffer as a Christian, let him not be ashamed; but let him glorify God on this behalf¹⁰." Memorable words from one who had denied his Master.

The example of Christ's demeanour in the last days of His earthly ministry, which St. Peter had seen, seems to have wrought its full effect in his heart.

"Be ye clothed with humility," writes St. Peter¹¹. The word there used¹² by the Apostle has been aptly illustrated by a reference to our Saviour's action and demeanour, when He took a towel and girded Himself, like a servant, and poured water into a basin, and washed His Apostles' feet¹³. St. Peter's language on that occasion, as recorded by St. John¹⁴, shows that he was much affected by that gracious act of humility; and in his Epistle he seems to refer to it, and to commend it for imitation.

The patient bearing of our Lord before Caiaphas and the Sanhedrim, which St. Peter had

¹ Acts ii. 9, 10.

² John xxi. 15—17.

³ *πολὴν θανάτου*, John xxi. 19.

⁴ John x. 15.

⁵ John xxi. 18.

⁶ Probably in A.D. 68. See the ancient authorities cited above at the end of the *Introduction* to the Epistles of St. Paul to Timothy and to Titus, pp. 423, 424.

⁷ 2 Pet. i. 13, 14.

⁸ Matt. xxvi. 69—75. Mark xiv. 66—72. Luke xxii. 57. John xviii. 25.

⁹ For examples of this see iii. 8—10. 15; iv. 14; v. 5.

¹⁰ iv. 14. 17.

¹¹ v. 5.

¹² *ἐγκομβώσασθε*.

¹³ John xiii. 5.

¹⁴ John xiii. 6—8.

witnessed, is also presented as a pattern to his readers. "Even hereunto were ye called: for Christ also suffered for us, leaving you an *example*, that ye should follow His steps; Who did no sin, neither was guile found in His mouth; Who being reviled was not reviling¹ again; when He was suffering, He was not threatening; but was committing Himself to Him that judgeth righteously²." And again, "It is better, if the will of God be so, that ye suffer for well doing, than for evil doing. For Christ also once suffered for sins, just for unjust, that He might bring us to God³." And again, "Forasmuch then as Christ suffered for us in the flesh, arm ye yourselves also with the same mind⁴."

All these exhortations come with special force from him who was a witness of Christ's sufferings⁵, and received a solemn charge from Him, "Follow thou Me;" and who had been commanded by Christ to "strengthen his brethren⁶."

X. Other characteristics also of this Epistle receive light from St. Peter's personal history.

The Epistle itself contains frequent intimations of the near approach of "a fiery trial" of severe persecution; and of the exposure of Christians to indignities and sufferings for Christ⁷. But the Apostle was not dismayed by what he foresaw. He not only manifests a spirit of resignation under suffering, but even of joy and exultation. The mention of trial is ever coupled in this Epistle with the language of triumph. The source of that language is to be found in his personal intercourse with Christ.

St. Peter had been with Christ on the Mountain of Transfiguration. Our Lord then talked with Moses and Elias, who appeared in glory. He conversed with them concerning that future event which, though sorrowful and shameful in itself, was to be His passage to *glory*. He talked of His death⁸ which He should accomplish at Jerusalem. After the accomplishment of that decease, St. Peter was a witness of Christ's victory and majesty in His Ascension into heaven.

Accordingly, in his Epistle, St. Peter views all the *sufferings* of Calvary as *glorified* by triumph. He sees Christ's decease, he sees his own decease, he sees the decease of all Christ's faithful followers, as invested with a heavenly radiance, by the light of the Transfiguration. He writes his Epistle⁹ in the joyful light of that prophetic Vision of Glory. And soon after the date of the Epistle¹⁰ he went to Rome, and proved the sincerity of his words by dying joyfully for Christ.

At the time of the Transfiguration St. Peter had attempted to dissuade Christ from suffering¹¹, and in the hour of human frailty he had shrunk from bearing witness to Christ, and denied his Master. But when he wrote this Epistle, he rejoiced in the prospect of *suffering* for Christ, because he saw the "*glory* that would follow¹²;" and he teaches others to do the same. Great indeed was the spiritual change which had now been wrought in him by the Holy Ghost; and we may thence derive a blessed assurance, that the same Divine Comforter, whose perpetual presence was promised to the Church by Christ¹³, will never fail to shed His gracious influences on the soul, and inspire it with courage in distress.

XI. One of the most interesting characteristics of St. Peter's history is his connexion with *St. John*. In the Gospel history the riper age of St. Peter is blended in happy combination with the youthful years of St. John; and the ardour of the one is mellowed by the calmness of the other. The one is the Apostle of practical energy, the other of quiet contemplation. And both are joined together in tender bonds of fraternal love. What Mary and Martha were as sisters, St. John and St. Peter were as Apostles. By the side of the Lake of Galilee, after the Resurrection of Christ, they are seen together in the society of their risen Lord, Who uttered a prophecy concerning the future lot of both¹⁴. And in the Acts of the Apostles, this holy pair of Apostolic friends and brothers is joined together by the Holy Spirit in a sacred union. They go up to the Temple together; they pray together; they preach to the people together; they are sent to prison together; they are delivered together; they go to Samaria together¹⁵. Then, as far as the Sacred History is concerned, their union seems to cease. But there is reason to believe that this union subsists for

¹ The *imperfect* tenses,—used here in the original,—bring out more clearly than the aorist, the *sustained* meekness of our Great Exemplar, and show more forcibly the deep impression made thereby on the writer's mind.

² 1 Pet. ii. 21—23.

³ 1 Pet. iii. 17, 18.

⁴ 1 Pet. iv. 1.

⁵ 1 Pet. v. 1.

⁶ Luke xxii. 32.

⁷ See i. 7; iii. 13; iv. 1, especially iv. 12—19; v. 8, 9.

The Neronian persecution followed soon after the burning of

VOL. II.—PART IV.

Rome in the summer of A.D. 64. Compare the *Introduction* to St. Paul's Epistles to Timothy, and note below on 2 Pet. iii. 1.

⁸ *ἐξοδόν*, a remarkable word. See on Luke ix. 31. Compare St. Peter's use of this same word, 2 Pet. i. 15.

⁹ Compare notes below on 1 Pet. i. 7, 8.

¹⁰ See on 2 Pet. iii. 1.

¹¹ Matt. xvi. 22.

¹² 1 Pet. i. 11.

¹³ John xiv. 16.

¹⁴ See on John xxi. 18—22.

¹⁵ See on Acts iii. 1; viii. 14.

ever in their Epistles in Holy Scripture. St. Peter wrote his Epistle from Parthia to the Churches of St. John's province—Asia Minor; and St. John, it would seem, wrote from Asia to the Christians of Parthia, after St. Peter's death. And if this was so, then this circumstance confirms the arguments already adduced, to prove that the Babylon of St. Peter's first Epistle is the Assyrian city of that name. The evidence of this Epistolary intercourse will be produced hereafter¹; in the mean time, let it be enough to have submitted it here for the reader's consideration.

XII. This Epistle, also, possesses a special interest and value in regard to the relation of St. Peter, the Apostle of the Circumcision, to *St. Paul*, the Apostle of the Gentiles.

St. Peter received the Keys from Christ²: and he was the first to unlock the door of the Church to the Jewish and Gentile world.

He admitted the Jews of the Dispersions, by the ministry of the Word and Sacraments³, on the Day of Pentecost. He afterwards admitted the Gentiles in the house of Cornelius at Cæsarea⁴.

After this initiatory work had been performed by St. Peter, a division of missionary labour was made between him and St. Paul.

"He that wrought effectually in Peter to the Apostleship of the Circumcision," says St. Paul⁵, "was mighty in me also toward the Gentiles⁶."

About five years after this partition, a difference arose between St. Paul and St. Peter, at the Syrian Antioch.

Whether St. Peter was Bishop of Antioch⁷ at this time, is uncertain; but he had great influence in that city. In a moment of vacillation he yielded to the solicitations of those, who, in their zeal for the ceremonial Law, desired to impose it on the Gentile Christians; and he withdrew himself from the communion of those who declined to receive that Law as necessary to salvation.

In this critical emergency, St. Paul came forward to plead the cause of Evangelical Liberty, and to maintain the plenary and all-sufficient efficacy of Christ's Sacrifice, as the only cause of Justification, and to demonstrate the transitory and preparatory character of the Levitical Ritual, and its fulfilment in Christ; and he openly resisted and rebuked St. Peter⁸.

About four years after this difference, St. Paul, in the vindication of his own Apostolic claims, and in the maintenance of the doctrine of Christian Liberty, and of Justification by faith in Christ, was constrained to make a report of the circumstances of that controversy in writing his Epistle to the Churches of Galatia; which had been seduced by Judaizing Teachers from the foundation, on which he had settled them, of faith in Christ Crucified⁹.

Here was a severe trial for St. Peter.

He, to whom Christ had given the Keys; he who had been admitted to His nearest intimacy and most private retirements; he, whose house at Capernaum had harboured Christ¹⁰; he who had preached to the Jews and Jewish strangers on the Day of Pentecost; he whose preaching had been sealed with sanctions and benedictions from heaven; he who had been twice miraculously delivered from prison by an Angel; he who had opened the door of the Church to the Gentiles; he was publicly reproved at Antioch—perhaps his own Episcopal city—by one who had not been of the Twelve, and had been a Persecutor of the Church; and the narrative of this rebuke had been communicated to the world by his reprover in an Epistle addressed to the Churches of Galatia, and was openly read in Christian Congregations.

Yet further, many persons, especially the Judaizing Christians, were jealous of St. Paul's influence, and were zealous for St. Peter. They were desirous of claiming him as their champion, and of setting him up as a rival to St. Paul. And the fervid spirit and impassioned temper of St. Peter may have led them to expect that he would have been stung to the quick by the rebuke of St. Paul, and would be ready to accept the leadership which his partizans would have assigned to him.

What, then, was the conduct of the blessed Apostle St. Peter under these circumstances?

¹ In the *Introduction* to the Second Epistle of St. John.

² Matt. xvi. 19.

³ Acts ii. 14—38. 41, 42.

⁴ Acts x. 34—48. See also St. Peter's own statement at the Council of Jerusalem, Acts xv. 7.

⁵ Gal. ii. 8.

⁶ St. Paul's Ordination to the Apostleship to the Gentiles probably took place about five years after the Conversion of Cornelius, the first-fruits of the Gentile world. See the *Chronological Tables* prefixed to the Acts, and to St. Paul's Epistles.

⁷ The testimonies concerning the Episcopate of St. Peter at Antioch may be seen in *Euseb.* iii. 22 and 36. *S. Hieron.* de Scr. Eccl. c. 1, and c. 16, and in Gal. ii. 11.

⁸ See Notes above on Gal. ii. 11—14, and the Review of the controversy, in the note at the end of that chapter.

⁹ See *Introduction* to that Epistle, and the note at the end of the Second Chapter.

¹⁰ Matt. viii. 14. Mark i. 29. Luke iv. 38. 40. Cp. Matt. xvii. 24—27.

This is an interesting inquiry ; and, happily, St. Peter's Epistles supply the answer.

The question debated between him and St. Paul was concerning Christian Liberty ; and the circumstances of that debate had been narrated by St. Paul, the Apostle of the Gentiles, in his Epistle to the Gentile Christians of Galatia, and were doubtless familiar to other Churches of Asia.

St. Peter, the Apostle of the Circumcision, wrote this his First Epistle to the Jewish Christians of Asia—"Pontus, Galatia, Cappadocia, Asia, and Bithynia."

In it he delivers a memorable precept concerning Christian Liberty.

That sentence is as follows ; it consists of three clauses—

1. "*As free ;*
2. "*And not using your liberty for a cloke of maliciousness ;*
3. "*But as servants of God*¹."

Turn now to St. Paul's Epistle to the Gentile Christians of Galatia.

There also we find a precept concerning Christian Liberty. That sentence is as follows ; it also consists of three clauses—

1. "*Brethren, ye were called to Liberty ;*
2. "*Only use not your Liberty as an occasion to the flesh ;*
3. "*But by love serve one another*²."

Thus we see in both these Epistles the same triple division ; the same assertion of Liberty ; the same caution against its abuse ; the same rule for its use.

The resemblance between these paragraphs from these two Epistles is more remarkable, because they were addressed by the two Apostles to the same Countries ; and because they concern that very question of *Christian Liberty*, on which those two Apostles had formerly been *at variance* ; and because the history of that altercation had been communicated by one of them, St. Paul, in his Epistle to the Galatians, who are also specially addressed by St. Peter in this Epistle.

St. Peter therefore, we see, did not manifest any resentment toward St. Paul for the rebuke given at Antioch, and for the publication of its history to the world. He frankly comes forward and adopts *St. Paul's own language* on that *very question* which had been the subject of their dispute.

Here is a noble specimen of victory over self, and of generous confession of error ; here is a beautiful practical application of his own precepts concerning Christian humility, meekness, and gentleness, and of love for the sheep whom Christ purchased with His blood.

Would to God that they who call themselves St. Peter's successors would copy St. Peter's example !

Here also was clear evidence to the Jewish and Gentile Christians, and to the world in every age, that the two great Apostles, of the Circumcision and of the Gentiles, who had formerly differed at Antioch, were now in perfect unity with each other, in preaching the great doctrines of Evangelical Liberty, and of the all-sufficient efficacy of the Death of Christ ; and in guarding their hearers against abusing that Doctrine, and in exhorting them to regulate their use of Liberty by the law of Love.

XIII. Again ; *St. Paul* had addressed another Epistle to the greatest Gentile Christian city of those Asiatic regions to which St. Peter was now writing—the Epistle to the *Ephesians*.

The Holy Spirit, who had spoken by St. Paul in that Epistle, now speaks by St. Peter to the Jewish Christians of the same country. He proclaims here the same doctrines ; and applies them in the same way to the inculcation of the same duties, and almost in the same language as He had done by the agency of St. Paul in the Epistle to the Ephesians.

He declares, that our Regeneration, and filial Adoption in Christ, by the Love of our heavenly Father, sending His only begotten Son to take our nature, and to incorporate us into Himself, and to reconcile us to God by His blood shed for us on the Cross, are the very source and well-spring of all Christian *Duty*, of man to God, and of man to man ; of subjects to kings ; of servants to masters ; of wives to husbands ; and of husbands to wives ; and are the origin of all personal holiness, and of all comfort under sufferings on earth, and of all hope of future glory and endless felicity in heaven.

This great argument had been handled by the Apostle of the Gentiles, St. Paul, in his Epistle

¹ 1 Pet. ii. 16.

² Gal. v. 13.
G 2

to the Gentile Christians of Asia¹; it is now treated by the Apostle of the Circumcision, St. Peter, in this Epistle to the Jewish Christians of the same country².

Thus the consent of Apostolic Teaching on the fundamental verities of Christian Faith and Practice is manifested to the world.

XIV. This brotherly unity exhibits itself also in incidents of a private character.

The person chosen by *St. Peter* to be the bearer of this Epistle to the Asiatic Churches is *Silvanus*³. *Silas*, or *Silvanus*, had been taken by *St. Paul* as his companion in his second missionary tour in Asia⁴; and he had been associated by that Apostle with himself in writing his two earliest Epistles⁵.

St. Peter's choice of *Silvanus* as a messenger for the conveyance of this Epistle to the Jewish Christians of Asia Minor, and his designation of him "as the faithful brother," are happy expressions of his own love, not only to *Silvanus*, but to *St. Paul*.

The value of this testimony is enhanced by the addition of another name to that of *Silvanus*, at the close of this Epistle. *Silvanus*, "the faithful brother," is joined with "*Marcus my son*"⁶.

Some years before, *St. Paul* had declined to take *Mark* with him into Asia, because *Mark* "had formerly departed from him in Pamphylia⁷;" and the person who was then taken by *St. Paul* with him into Asia, in the place of *Mark*, was no other than *Silas*,—as he is called in the Acts,—or, as he is called by *St. Paul*, *Silvanus*⁸. But now *St. Mark* had returned to the work, and was in much esteem with *St. Paul*⁹; and he is honoured by *St. Peter* with the affectionate title—"Marcus my son."

Here then we have another indication of the fraternal relation of *St. Peter* to *St. Paul*; and of the graces of love, joy, and peace shed by the Holy Spirit on their hearts, and on those of their friends; graces which soothed every angry passion, and joined them together in Christ.

XV. The *Second Epistle* of *St. Peter* was written soon after the first, and it was addressed to the same persons as the First Epistle¹⁰; and the reference which he makes at its close to "all the Epistles" of his "beloved brother *Paul*," and the testimony which he bears to his wisdom, and to the divine inspiration of those Epistles¹¹, complete the evidence of *St. Peter's* affectionate regard for the Apostle of the Gentiles; and of his perfect agreement with him in the holy doctrine which he taught.

XVI. Finally, Almighty God, Who had called these two great Pastors of his flock, and had assigned to each of them his proper work, in tending and feeding the sheep which He had purchased to Himself with the precious blood of His dear Son, was pleased to bring them together in their old age to the same place¹².

That place was the capital of the world, Rome¹³. The Apostle of the Circumcision was united

¹ See above, *Introduction* to the Epistle to the Ephesians, p. 276.

² Compare, for example, their statements of fundamental doctrine;

1 Pet. i. 1—3.

Πέτρος ἀπόστολος Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ ἐκλεκτοῖς . . . κατὰ πρόγνωσιν Θεοῦ Πατρὸς ἐν ἁγιασμῷ Πνεύματος, εἰς ὑπακοὴν καὶ ῥαντισμὸν αἵματος Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ· χάρις ὑμῖν καὶ εἰρήνη. . .

Εὐλογητὸς ὁ Θεὸς καὶ Πατὴρ τοῦ Κυρίου ἡμῶν Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ ὁ κατὰ τὸ πολὺ αὐτοῦ ἔλεος ἀναγεννήσας ἡμᾶς.

Eph. i. 1—7.

Παῦλος ἀπόστολος Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ τοῖς οὖσιν ἐν Ἐφέσῳ καὶ πιστοῖς ἐν Ἰησοῦ Χριστῷ· χάρις ὑμῖν καὶ εἰρήνη ἀπὸ Θεοῦ Πατρὸς ἡμῶν καὶ Κυρίου Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ.

Εὐλογητὸς ὁ Θεὸς καὶ Πατὴρ τοῦ Κυρίου ἡμῶν Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ ὁ εὐλογήσας ἡμᾶς ἐν πάσῃ εὐλογίᾳ πνευματικῇ ἐν Χριστῷ, καθὼς ἐξελέξατο ἡμᾶς ἐν αὐτῷ πρὸ καταβολῆς κόσμου . . . κατὰ τὸ πλοῦτος τῆς χάριτος αὐτοῦ . . . ἐν τῷ ἡγαπημένῳ ἐν ᾧ ἔχομεν τὴν ἀπολύτρωσιν διὰ τοῦ αἵματος αὐτοῦ.

Compare also 1 Pet. ii. 4 and Eph. ii. 20—22.

Compare also the practical application of the doctrine;

1 Pet. ii. 13.

ὑποτάγητε πάσῃ ἀνθρωπίνῃ κτίσει διὰ τὸν Κύριον.

Eph. v. 22.

αἱ γυναῖκες τοῖς ἰδίοις ἀνδράσιν ὑποτάσσεσθε ὡς τῷ Κυρίῳ.

1 Pet. v. 5.

πάντες ἀλλήλοις [ὑποτασσόμενοι].

ii. 18.—οἱ οἰκέται ὑποτασσόμενοι ἐν κυρίῳ φόβῳ τοῖς δεσπόταις.

iii. 1.—αἱ γυναῖκες ὑποτασσόμεναι τοῖς ἰδίοις ἀνδράσιν.

³ 1 Pet. v. 12. On his history see the notes on 1 Thess. i. 1. Phil. i. 1.

⁴ Acts xv. 40. He is called *Silas* in the Acts; and *Silvanus* by *St. Paul* in his Epistles.

⁵ The two Epistles to the Thessalonians, both commencing with the words "*Paul and Silvanus*."

⁶ 1 Pet. v. 12, 13.

⁷ See Acts xv. 38.

⁸ Acts xv. 40.

⁹ See Col. iv. 10. Philem. 24. 2 Tim. iv. 11. "Take *Mark*, for he is profitable to me," &c.

¹⁰ See on 2 Pet. iii. 1.

¹¹ See below on 2 Pet. iii. 15, 16.

¹² As to *St. Paul's* age see Philem. 9, and as to *St. Peter's*, see John xxi. 18.

¹³ The evidence concerning *St. Peter's* journey to Rome, and martyrdom there, may be seen in the testimony of *Dionysius*, Bp.

Eph. vi. 1.

τὰ τέκνα, ὑπακούετε τοῖς γονεῦσιν ὑμῶν ἐν Κυρίῳ.

Cp. vi. 7.—δουλεύοντες ὡς τῷ Κυρίῳ.

v. 21.—ὑποτασσόμενοι ἀλλήλοις ἐν φόβῳ Κυρίου.

vi. 5.—οἱ δοῦλοι, ὑπακούετε τοῖς κυρίοις μετὰ φόβου.

v. 22.—αἱ γυναῖκες τοῖς ἰδίοις ἀνδράσιν ὑποτάσσεσθε.

there with the Apostle of the Gentiles in a blessed martyrdom for Christ; and thus the great Head of the Church vouchsafed to manifest to the world their perfect brotherhood in life, doctrine, and death; and He commended their example to the imitation of all Pastors and People; and taught the world, by their means, that temporary failings of our frail humanity may, under the gracious influence of the Holy Ghost, be corrected by watchfulness and prayer, humility, gentleness, meekness, and charity, and be made occasions of spiritual victories; and He has displayed a cheering vision of that blessed consummation, when Jew and Gentile will be brought together into one fold under one Shepherd, Jesus Christ our Lord.

of Corinth, in the 2nd Century, in *Euseb.* ii. 25. *Irenæus* iii. 1; and in *Euseb.* v. 8, and *Tertullian* de Præscr. hæc. c. 36; de Baptismo, 4; *Marcion* iv. 5; *Scorpiac.* 15; *Caius* in *Euseb.* ii. 25, and *Origen* in *Euseb.* iii. 1. *Cyprian* ad Antonianum, Ep. 55, and ad Cornelium, Ep. 59. *Lactantius*, Inst. iv. 21; De Morte Persecut. c. 2. *Euseb.* H. E. ii. 22. 25; iii. 2; *Demonst. Evang.* iii. p. 116. From these authorities it may be concluded that St. Peter came to Rome at the end of his Apostolic career, and there suffered martyrdom by crucifixion; see also above, *Introduction* to St. Paul's Epistles to Timothy, p. 424.

ΠΕΤΡΟΥ Α.

I. ¹ ^a ΠΕΤΡΟΣ, ἀπόστολος Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ, ἐκλεκτοῖς παρεπιδήμοις διασπορᾶς Πόντου, Γαλατίας, Καππαδοκίας, Ἀσίας, καὶ Βιθυνίας, ² ^b κατὰ πρόγνωσιν Θεοῦ Πατρὸς, ἐν ἁγιασμῷ Πνεύματος, εἰς ὑπακοὴν καὶ ῥαντισμὸν αἵματος Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ, χάρις ὑμῖν καὶ εἰρήνη πληθυνθείη.

a John 7. 35.
Acts 2. 5, 9, 10.
James 1. 1.
b Eph. 1. 4.
ch. 2. 9. & ver. 14.
Rom. 8. 29.
& 16. 26. & 1. 7.
2 Thess. 2. 13.
Heb. 12. 24. 2 Pet. 1. 2.

CH. I. 1. Πέτρος ἀπόστολος] *Peter, an Apostle of Jesus Christ, to the elect sojourners of the dispersion of Pontus, Galatia, Cappadocia, Asia, and Bithynia.*

Concerning the *authorship* and *design* of this Epistle see the *Introduction*.

They, to whom St. Peter writes, are addressed as *elect*;

The *Jews* gloried in being the *elect* people of God (see Deut. iv. 37; vii. 6. Ps. cv. 6. 43); and St. Peter assures them that by becoming *Christians*, they do not cease to be God's favoured people, but are a *chosen generation* in Christ. (See ii. 9.)

He also declares that they are *at home* in Christ's Church, although they are *sojourners* and *strangers* in the world (*παρεπίδημος* = *παροικος*, *Hesych.*), being removed far away from Jerusalem and Judæa, as their fathers were, by their exile in Babylon, from which place St. Peter is now writing; and although they are *scattered* abroad in many *heathen* lands.

Upon this their condition as *pilgrims* in *this* world he grounds an admonition to them as *strangers* and *sojourners* (ii. 11; cp. Heb. xi. 13) to abstain from fleshly lusts, having their conversation, or intercourse, honest *among the Gentiles*, among whom they are commingled in their *Dispersions*, and to set their affections on their heavenly inheritance, their "promised land" above. Cp. Phil. iii. 20. Heb. xiii. 14.

He addresses them *all* as *elect*, according to the *foreknowledge of God*; and thus he teaches, that *all* members of the visible Church, who profess the Faith, and partake in the Sacraments of Christ, are to be regarded by men as *elect*, and *foreknown* by God in Christ. Vocation presupposes election; and wherever we see men called, we are to presume them to be elect.

In the same manner St. Paul addresses the Ephesian Christians, as chosen in Christ by God the Father, before the foundation of the world, and as *predestined* to the adoption of sons in the *Beloved*, according to the gracious purpose of God's will in Him. See on Eph. i. 3—5, and the *Introduction* to the Epistle to the Romans, p. 195.

But though the members of the Visible Church are *elect*, and are addressed by the Apostle as such, they are *not* yet *finally assured* of salvation; but they are exhorted by St. Peter "to give diligence to make their calling and *election sure*." (2 Pet. i. 10.)

— ἐκλεκτοῖς—διασπορᾶς] *to the elect—of the dispersion.* Observe the contrast: They are like seeds *scattered* (δισπαρμένοι) every where among the Gentiles, and yet they are *picked out*, as it were, by the divine mercy, and gathered together as a *chosen Seed* in Christ.

— Πόντου] *of Pontus*; placed first among the Asiatic regions here specified; whence this First Epistle of St. Peter is cited by some ancient Fathers as addressed "*ad Ponticos*." *Tertullian*, *Scorp.* c. 12. *Cyprian*, *Lib. Test.* iii. 36, 37.

— Πόντου, Γαλατίας, κ.τ.λ.] *of Pontus, Galatia, Cappadocia, Asia, and Bithynia.* The Jewish Christians to whom St. Peter writes in his two Epistles (as is affirmed by the ancient Expositors, *Euseb.* iii. 4, *Didymus* in loc., *Hieron.* Cat. Scr. i., *Æcumenius*, and others) are specially those of the *Asiatic dispersion* (see here and 2 Pet. iii. 1); and he enumerates them in the *order* in

which they would occur to the mind of a writer addressing them from the *east*. (See below on v. 13.) This consideration confirms the opinion, that *Babylon*, from which this Epistle is dated (v. 13), is not any city *west* of Asia Minor, as Rome, but the literal, Assyrian, *Babylon*. See *Introduction*, p. 37.

This observation is illustrated and confirmed by a passage in the writings of St. Peter's brother Apostle, St. John. St. John, writing his Revelation from *Patmos* to the Christian Churches of Asia, specifies them in their geographical order, from *West* to *East* (see Rev. i. 11; ii. 1; iii. 14, inclusive). *Here* they are reckoned by St. Peter in the opposite order, i. e. from *East* to *West*. St. John was writing from the *West* of Asia, namely, from *Patmos*; St. Peter is writing from the *East*, namely, from *Babylon*. Hence the difference.

St. Peter, on the Day of Pentecost, at Jerusalem, had preached to the various *Dispersions* of Jews who had come up to Jerusalem to that Feast. (Acts ii. 9—14.) Those several Dispersions are thus enumerated in the Acts of the Apostles:—

- (1) *Parthians, Medes, &c.*, i. e. the *Babylonish* Dispersion.
- (2) *Cappadocia, Pontus, Asia*; i. e. the *Asiatic* Dispersion.
- (3) *Ægypt*, and the parts of *Libya* toward Cyrene; i. e. the *Alexandrine* Dispersion.
- (4) *Strangers of Rome*; those especially which had been carried thither by Pompey the Great.

See above, note on Acts ii. 9—11.

St. Peter, as a wise master-builder, is now consolidating the work which, by the aid of the Holy Ghost, he had begun at Jerusalem on the day of Pentecost. He did this as follows:—

(1) He went in *person* to Babylon (v. 13), and edified the Assyrian Dispersion of *Parthians, Medes, and Elamites*, and dwellers in *Mesopotamia*.

(2) From Babylon, he wrote this Epistle to the *Asiatic* Dispersion of the *strangers scattered abroad in Pontus, Galatia, Cappadocia, and Asia*, i. e. *Proconsular Asia*. See above on Acts xvi. 6; xix. 10; and below on Rev. i. 4.

(3) He afterwards sent St. Mark, *Marcus his son* (v. 13), to preach to the *Ægyptian*, or *Alexandrine*, Dispersion. See above, *Introduction* to St. Mark's Gospel, p. 112.

(4) Finally, he himself strengthened the faith of the *Roman* Dispersion, by visiting Rome, and dying as a martyr there.

Thus St. Peter completed the work which he had begun on the day of Pentecost. Thus this Fisher of men (Luke v. 10) drew the net of the Gospel through the sea of the world to the shore of eternal life, and enclosed therein a large multitude, and finished the labour, symbolized by the miraculous draught of fishes, after the Resurrection of Christ. See above on John xxi. 1—14; and *Introduction* to this Epistle, pp. 35—40.

2. ἐν ἁγιασμῷ Πνεύματος] *by the sanctification of the Holy Spirit.* See next note.

— εἰς ὑπακοὴν καὶ ῥαντισμὸν αἵματος] *unto hearkening to the Gospel, and joyful acceptance of it* (see Rom. i. 5; xv. 18; and below, vv. 14. 22), *and unto the sprinkling of the blood of Jesus Christ.* St. Peter had begun with a recital of privileges; here is a declaration of *duty*. Ye are *elect*, according to the *foreknowledge of God the Father*, Whose paternal love is the source of all

³ Εὐλογητὸς ὁ Θεὸς καὶ Πατὴρ τοῦ Κυρίου ἡμῶν Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ, ὁ κατὰ τὸ πολὺ αὐτοῦ ἔλεος ἀναγεννήσας ἡμᾶς εἰς ἐλπίδα ζώσαν δι' ἀναστάσεως Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ ἐκ νεκρῶν, ⁴ εἰς κληρονομίαν ἀφθαρτον καὶ ἀμίαντον καὶ ἀμάραντον, ⁵ τὴν ἐν οὐρανοῖς εἰς ὑμᾶς, τοὺς ἐν δυνάμει Θεοῦ φρουρουμένους διὰ

c John 3. 3, 5.
1 Cor. 15. 20.
2 Cor. 1. 3.
James 1. 18.
d Col. 1. 5.
2 Tim. 1. 12.

e John 10. 28, 29.
& 17. 11, 12, 15.
Jude 1, 24. Eph. 2. 8.

good to men; but ye are *elect*, not to any presumptuous self-assurance, much less to any recklessness of living; but ye are elect to *hearkening* unto His word; ye are elect to *obedience*; or, as St. Paul expresses it (Eph. i. 3—5), ye are elect and predestined to *holiness in love*, to the praise and glory of His grace; ye are elect to the *sprinkling of the blood of Jesus Christ*, which was once shed on the cross, and was actually and personally applied to you by the sanctifying operation of the Holy Spirit, and was sprinkled on you, the covenanted people of God; as the blood of bulls and goats, and the ashes of an heifer sprinkling the unclean under the Law, sanctified to the purifying of the flesh. See Heb. ix. 12—14, and compare x. 22. Exod. xxiv. 8.

That blood was sprinkled upon you, and was made effectual for your salvation, when you professed your *faith* in Christ, Who *sprinkleth many nations* (Isa. lii. 15), and cleanseth from all sin (1 John i. 7); and when you received the Sacrament of Baptism, which derives its efficacy from Christ's blood; and it is ever and anon sprinkled on you,—at your sincere repentance,—in the administration of the Holy Communion of His body and blood, and saves you, the true Israel of God, from the wrath to come, as the blood of the Paschal Lamb, when *sprinkled* on the lintels and door-posts of the Israelites, procured their deliverance from destruction (see Exod. xii. 22, 23); and it makes atonement with God for your sins, as the *sprinkling of the blood of the sin-offerings*, which was sprinkled seven times *before the Lord*, i. e. towards the veil (Lev. iv. 4—6); and on the great day of atonement was sprinkled *within* the Veil, upon, and before, the Mercy Seat. Lev. xvi. 14. For, as St. Paul says to the Ephesians, they have redemption *through His blood, even the forgiveness of sins*, according to the *riches of His grace*.

These blessings which flow from the love of God the Father, through the mediation of God the Son, are applied personally to each believer by the *sanctification of the Spirit*,—God the Holy Ghost. Thus, as is observed by Cassiodorus, each of the Three Persons of the *ever-Blessed Trinity* is here presented to us by the Apostle, as co-operating in the work of our salvation. Compare the words of St. Paul, 2 Thess. ii. 13, "God from the beginning chose you to salvation through sanctification of the Spirit and belief of the truth, whereunto he called you by our Gospel, to the obtaining of the glory of our Lord Jesus Christ," and Eph. ii. 17, 18; and note on 2 Cor. xiii. 14.

The preamble of St. Paul's Epistle to the greatest Church of Asia, Ephesus, bears a remarkable resemblance, in the exuberant flow, and majestic splendour of its diction, and in the sublime grandeur of its substance, to that of this Epistle of his brother Apostle, St. Peter, to the Jewish Christians of the same country. These two Epistles throughout present clear evidence of the unity of teaching of the two Apostles on the doctrines of *Universal Redemption, Election, and Predestination*. See above on Eph. i. 1—8, and the Introduction to this Epistle of St. Peter, p. 43, and below, Introduction to the Second Epistle.

— χάρις—πληθυνθεῖν] *Grace to you and Peace be multiplied*. This salutation of the Apostle from Babylon recalls to the mind the greeting sent forth from the same City to all its provinces, by the *two Kings* of the two successive Dynasties,—the Assyrian and Medo-Persian,—under the influence of the Prophet Daniel, and other faithful men of the first Dispersion. They proclaimed in their royal Epistles the *supremacy* of the One true God, the God of Israel. "Nebuchadnezzar the king to all people . . . to you *Peace be multiplied*" (εἰρήνη ὑμῖν πληθυνθεῖν, Dan. iv. 1). Darius the king wrote to all people, "to you *Peace be multiplied*." (Dan. vi. 25.)

Daniel and the three children turned the hearts of Nebuchadnezzar and Darius, and moved them to declare the glory of the true God in Letters written "to all people." The Apostle St. Peter now carries on the work of the ancient Prophets, and writes an Epistle from Babylon, by which he builds up the Christian Sion in all ages of the world (cp. 2 Pet. i. 1, 2, and below on v. 13), and proclaims to all, "Peace be multiplied unto you!" See above, p. 37. On this *Oriental* salutation, very suitable to be used in an Epistle from the East, see Schoettgen here. *Grace* is put before *Peace*, because *Peace* is the fruit of *Grace*.

3. εὐλογητός] *Blessed be God, Who is also the Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, and Who of His great mercy has begotten us again to a living hope, through the Resurrection of Jesus Christ from the dead.*

God the Father is the Fountain of all Blessing; and all

Blessing descends *through* God the Son; and is applied *by* God the Holy Ghost; and so St. Paul teaches, Eph. i. 3—17; cp. note above, 2 Cor. xiii. 14.

St. Peter presents to us the three several ways in which we are sons of God. He is our Father—

(1) By *Creation*. (See v. 2.)

(2) By *our New Birth* in Baptism, when the Blood of Christ was sprinkled on us, and we were delivered from death. (See v. 2.)

(3) And now we, who have been already born again into a life of *Grace*, are born again into a living hope of future and *everlasting Glory*, by the *Resurrection of Christ*.

By *that Resurrection*, we, who are in Christ, our Representative and Head, were publicly declared by God to be pardoned and accepted; for *He rose again* for our *Justification*. (See on Rom. iv. 25.) We are already the sons of God, and "we know that, when He appears, we shall be like Him." (1 John iii. 2.) We have been baptized into His death,—that is, into conformity to it, and to a participation in its benefits; and if we have become *concrete*, or *born together* (σύνφυτοι), with Him by the likeness of His Death, we shall also be born together with Him in the likeness of His Resurrection. See above on Rom. vi. 5. Cp. Bp. Andrewes, ii. pp. 198. 266. 322; and Bp. Pearson on the Creed, Art. i. p. 50; and on the analogies between *Birth*, and *Baptism*, and *Resurrection*, see below, Rev. xx. 5.

— εἰς ἐλπίδα ζώσαν] *to a living hope*: to a *hope* that *liveth*; and which, as *living*, and *bearing fruit*, is contrasted with the state of *death* in which we once were, "*having no hope*, and being without God in the world" (Eph. ii. 12), "and having fellowship with the *unfruitful* works of darkness" (Eph. v. 11).

This is the hope which springs forth from the *Grave*, by the *Resurrection of Christ* our "First-fruits" (1 Cor. xv. 20), Who "was dead and is *alive*, and *liveth* for evermore" (Rev. i. 18).

This hope therefore never dies, as earthly hopes do; and it is not like the hope of those among your fathers, who looked only for an *earthly Canaan* (*Theophyl.*), but the hope of the true Israel is a hope which is ever growing, till it is consummated in everlasting fruition in the heavenly Jerusalem; and by "this hope we are saved" (Rom. viii. 24).

3, 4.] On these two verses see the exposition of Bp. Andrewes, Sermons, vol. ii. pp. 364—382.

4. εἰς κληρονομίαν ἀφθαρτον] *to an inheritance incorruptible, undefiled, unfading*; the first of these epithets concerns the inner *being* of the inheritance; the second, its *unalloyed* being; the third, the *continuance* of its *beauty*. The Heavenly Inheritance is perfect in every one of these three respects; but all *earthly inheritances* are imperfect in them all. Cp. Bp. Andrewes, ii. p. 378. The *inheritance* of the earthly Canaan was an object of earnest desire to your fathers; and they were settled in the allotments of their *κληρονομία* by Joshua; but you, though scattered abroad, have a better inheritance than they, an inheritance typified by theirs, and one in which the true Joshua will settle you for ever. *Didymus* (the master of S. Jerome) in his note on this passage says, "Since the inheritance which the Apostle here propounds to our desires is in *heaven*, and is *eternal*, surely they (the Millenarians), who put before us the hope of an *earthly Jerusalem* for a *thousand years*, propose to us what is unsatisfying and vain."

— τετηρημένην] *reserved in heaven for you, or unto you*.

The Inheritance is *reserved*; therefore do not look for it *now*; but wait patiently, and strive earnestly for it; and it is reserved in *heaven*, and therefore it is *safe* from all changes and chances of *earth* (cp. 2 Tim. iv. 8). God Himself is your portion. Here is another contrast to the hopes of those who have their portion in *this life*. Ps. xvii. 14. Cp. Bp. Sanderson's Sermons, i. p. 379. Elz. has ἡμᾶς here; but ὑμᾶς is in A, B, C, G, K, and is received by Griesb., Scholz, Lach., Tisch., Alford.

5. τοὺς ἐν δυνάμει Θεοῦ φρουρουμένους] *you who are being guarded by the power of God*; as sheep are safely guarded in a fold against the wolf; or, as citizens are securely garrisoned in a fortress against the enemy, so ye are protected from your ghostly Enemy by the power of God, in the Fold and City of His Church. "The name of the Lord is a *strong tower*: the righteous runneth into it, and is *safe*" (Prov. xviii. 10). Salvation will God appoint for *walls and bulwarks* (Isa. xxvi. 10). And ye are guarded, *not* as *prisoners* to be brought out εἰς ὄλεθρον, to *execution*, but ye are guarded for *salvation*; ye are caught and kept

f Rom. 12. 12.
2 Cor. 4. 17.
ch. 5. 10.
Wisd. 3. 5.
g Prov. 17. 3.
Isa. 48. 10.
1 Cor. 3. 13.
James 1. 3.
ch. 4. 12.

πίστεως εἰς σωτηρίαν, ἐτοιμήν ἀποκαλυφθῆναι ἐν καιρῷ ἐσχάτῳ· ⁶ ἐν ᾧ ἀγαλλιάσθε, ὀλίγον ἄρτι, εἰ δέον ἐστὶν, λυπηθέντες ἐν ποικίλοις πειρασμοῖς, ⁷ ἵνα τὸ δοκίμιον ὑμῶν τῆς πίστεως, πολὺ τιμιώτερον χρυσίου τοῦ ἀπολλυμένου, διὰ πυρὸς δὲ δοκιμαζομένου, εὗρεθῇ εἰς ἔπαινον καὶ δόξαν καὶ τιμὴν, ἐν ἀποκαλύψει

in the Net of the Church, but ye are there *ζωγρούμενοι*, caught and kept alive, and in order to live for ever (see on Luke v. 10). And ye are kept *through faith*; if ye hold fast the beginning of your confidence unto the end. (Heb. iii. 14.) Faith is a second cause of your preservation; because it *applies* the first cause, which is the power of God. Cp. 1 John v. 4, and *Abp. Leighton* here.

6. ἐν ᾧ ἀγαλλιάσθε] in which ye exult, though now for a little while, if need be—for ye are not chastened by God without need, but for your profit—and He doth not afflict willingly, nor grieve the children of men (Lam. iii. 33. Heb. xii. 10),—ye were grieved in manifold temptations.

Ye exult in the last season (cp. *Æcumen.*), because ye do not live in the present season, but ye look forward, and dwell by faith on the glory that shall be revealed in you hereafter (cp. v. 8), and ye compare its greatness with the light afflictions of this transitory time (Rom. viii. 18), which lead you on to, and qualify you for, a far more exceeding and eternal weight of glory (2 Cor. iv. 17), and ye “rejoice and are exceeding glad,” even in persecution, because “great is your reward in heaven” (Matt. v. 10). “Blessed are ye that weep now, for ye shall laugh” (Luke vi. 21).

— ποικίλοις πειρασμοῖς] by divers temptations, see James i. 2. By this phrase and by many others in the beginning of this Epistle, St. Peter connects his own Epistle with that of his brother Apostle, St. James. See *Introduction* to it, p. 12. Some of these parallelisms between the two Epistles may be cited here.

1 Pet. i.

v. 6, ποικίλοις πειρασμοῖς.

v. 7, τὸ δοκίμιον τῆς πίστεως.
v. 12, παρακύψαι.

James i.

v. 2, πειρασμοῖς ποικίλοις.

v. 3, τὸ δοκίμιον τῆς πίστεως.
v. 25, παρακύψας.

These are the only two passages in the Epistles of the N. T. where the word παρακύπτω occurs.

1 Pet. i. 17, πατέρα ἐπικαλεῖσθε τὸν ἀπροσωπολήπτως κρίνοντα . . .

Compare James ii. 1, against προσωποληψία.

v. 7, τὸ ὄνομα τὸ ἐπικληθέν.

And against the practice of judging, as an invasion of the office of God, see James iv. 11; v. 9.

v. 23, ἀναγεγεννημένοι διὰ λόγου ζῶντος . . .

James i. 18, ἀπεκύησεν ἡμᾶς λόγῳ ἀληθείας.

v. 24, πᾶσα σὰρξ ὡς χόρτος . . . ἐξηράνθη ὁ χόρτος, καὶ τὸ ἄνθος αὐτοῦ ἐξέπεσε.

James i. 10, ὡς ἄνθος χόρτου παρελεύσεται . . . ὁ ἥλιος ἐξήρανε τὸν χόρτον, καὶ τὸ ἄνθος αὐτοῦ ἐξέπεσε . . .

Cp. also 1 Pet. ii. 11 . . .

ii. 12 . . .

iv. 8 . . .

iv. 12 . . .

v. 5 . . .

v. 6 . . .

v. 9 . . .

James iv. 1.

iii. 13

v. 20.

i. 2.

iv. 6.

iv. 10.

iv. 7.

St. Peter does not mention St. James by name; indeed the writers of Holy Scripture seem purposely to have abstained from lauding one another with personal eulogies. St. Peter's reference to St. Paul in his second Epistle (iii. 15), is an exception, produced by special considerations which render it more remarkable. See the note on that passage.

But St. Peter, in this Epistle, adopts much of the substance, and often the words, of St. James; and thus he shows his reverence for that Apostle, and commends his Epistle to the thankful acceptance and pious meditation of the Church; and gives a precept and example of unity to all Christians, and especially to Christian Ministers.

This remark may be extended to the allusions which St. Peter makes to St. Paul's Epistles.

Cp. i. 5 . . .

i. 21 . . .

ii. 1 . . .

ii. 6 . . .

ii. 13, 14 . . .

ii. 16 (see note) . . .

ii. 18 . . .

Gal. iii. 23.

Rom. iv. 24.

Col. iii. 8.

Rom. ix. 33.

Rom. xiii. 1—4.

Gal. v. 13.

Eph. vi. 5.

Cp. ii. 21 . . .

iii. 1 . . .

iii. 3 . . .

iii. 8, 9 . . .

iii. 22 . . .

iv. 1, 2 . . .

iv. 10, 11 . . .

v. 1 . . .

v. 8 . . .

v. 14 . . .

Phil. ii. 25.

Eph. v. 22.

1 Tim. ii. 9.

Rom. xii. 10.

{ Rom. viii. 34.

{ Eph. i. 21, 22.

Rom. vi. 7.

Rom. xii. 6—8.

Rom. viii. 18.

1 Thess. v. 6.

{ Rom. xvi. 16.

{ 1 Cor. xvi. 20.

{ 1 Thess. v. 26.

This silent interweaving of one Apostolic Epistle with another, and of one Gospel with another (see *Introduction* to the Four Gospels, p. xlv), may serve to remind the Christian reader, that all the Books of the New Testament form one harmonious whole. They are like the coat of Christ, woven throughout, without seam (John xix. 23). Although written by the instrumentality of different men, they come from the same Divine Author,—the Holy Ghost.

— ἐστίν] Not found in N, nor in B.

7. ἵνα τὸ δοκίμιον] in order that the trial of your faith, being much more precious than gold, which is perishing (even in the using; cp. John vi. 27. Col. ii. 22), but is tried by fire, and is purified by it, and passes through the fire, and endures (cp. Job xxiii. 10. Prov. xvii. 3, and note above on 2 Cor. viii. 2), may be found to redound to the praise, and honour, and glory of God, the Giver of all the graces, by which you endure trial; and to your own praise and honour, and glory, and endless felicity in the day of the revelation of Jesus Christ the Judge of all.

A, C have πολυτιμώτερον here, and so *Griesb.*, *Scholz*, *Tisch.*, *Lach.*, *Alf.* That form is, indeed, in harmony with the style of St. Peter, who loves composite words. But B (see *Mai*), G, K, and *Vulg.*, and the major part of the cursive MSS., and *Clement*, *Origen*, and the other Fathers, have πολὺ τιμιώτερον, and see the passage quoted below from *S. Polycarp's* Martyrdom.

Observe, it is the trial itself, δοκίμιον, which is said here to be more precious. Compare 2 Cor. viii. 2, and James i. 3, “the trial (δοκίμιον) of your faith by temptations worketh patience.” Δοκίμιον is the test or touchstone by which a thing is tried (see the examples in *Wetstein*, p. 682). Hence it describes afflictions and calamities which are the trials of virtue; as here.

Some Interpreters suppose δοκίμιον here to mean the thing proved and purged by trial; the smelted ore of faith, tested and cleansed by the fire of affliction. But this seems to be rather a strained exposition. Δοκίμιον is the trial; it is not the residuum after suffering, but it is the suffering itself, which tries and proves (δοκιμάζει) the faith. St. Peter's words seem to be formed on those of the Psalmist, “Precious (τίμιος) in the sight of the Lord is the death of His Saints” (Ps. cxvi. 15). The Apostle appears to allude here to that passage, and to adopt the word τίμιος from it. Our very sufferings, which are our trials, even they are precious in God's sight, Who knows to what they lead. The trial, says *Bp. Andrewes* (v. p. 443), of our faith is more precious than gold, as in Abraham; or when He trieth our patience, as in Job; for while we live in this world, we are made a spectacle to men and angels (1 Cor. iv. 9).

Do not therefore imagine, that even your present trials are not glorious. They make you like to Christ, they are seen and prized by God. He putteth all your tears into His bottle, they are all noted in His book (Ps. lvi. 8. 10), and will one day redound to your everlasting glory.

St. Peter acted in the spirit of this declaration when he departed from the presence of the Jewish Council, rejoicing that he was counted worthy to suffer for Christ's sake (Acts v. 41). For Christ had said, “Blessed are ye when men shall persecute you, Rejoice, and be exceeding glad” (Matt. v. 11, 12). And in a like spirit, Paul and Silas in prison, at midnight, sang praises to God (Acts xvi. 25), and St. Paul glories in tribulations (Rom. v. 3), and is exceeding joyful in them (2 Cor. vii. 4), and takes pleasure in persecutions for Christ (2 Cor. xii. 10). And St. Peter himself bids them rejoice, in that they are partakers of Christ's sufferings,—and if any one suffer as a Christian, let him glorify God (1 Pet. iv. 13—16).

In a like spirit of Evangelical piety, one of St. Peter's successors at Antioch, the Martyr *S. Ignatius*, calls his chains, his

Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ. ⁸ ὃν οὐκ ἰδόντες ἀγαπάτε εἰς ὃν, ἄρτι μὴ ὁρῶντες, πιστεύοντες δὲ, ἀγαλλιᾶσθε χαρᾷ ἀνεκλαλήτῳ καὶ δεδοξασμένῳ, ⁹ κομιζόμενοι τὸ τέλος τῆς πίστεως ὑμῶν, σωτηρίαν ψυχῶν. ¹⁰ περὶ ἧς σωτηρίας ἐξεζήτησαν καὶ ἐξηρένησαν προφῆται οἱ περὶ τῆς εἰς ὑμᾶς χάριτος προφητεύσαντες, ¹¹ ἐρευνῶντες εἰς τὴν ἡ ποῖον καιρὸν ἐδήλου τὸ ἐν αὐτοῖς Πνεῦμα Χριστοῦ, προμαρτυ-

h John 20. 29.
2 Cor. 5. 7.
Heb. 11. 1, 27.

i Gen. 49. 10.
Dan. 2. 44. & 9. 24.
Hag. 2. 8.
Zech. 6. 12.
Matt. 13. 17.
Luke 10. 24.
k Ps. 22. 7.

Isa. 53. 3, &c. Dan. 9. 24. Luke 24. 26.

"spiritual pearls" (Ignat. Ephes. ii.), and S. Cyprian, speaking of the dress of *Virgins*, says, that when Christian women suffer Martyrdom with faith and courage, then their sufferings are like "pretiosa monilia," costly bracelets. The garb of suffering for Christ is a robe of beauty, precious in God's sight; far more lovely than any gilded attire; and therefore the instruments of torture by which the Martyrs suffered death (such as the sword of St. James the Great, and the fuller's club of St. James the Less, and the sword of St. Paul, the cross of St. Peter, and the lance of St. Thomas, and the gridiron of St. Laurence), are associated with them for ever in their pictures as the noblest badges of their glory. Cp. note below, v. 8.

This passage seems to be imitated by *Hermas*, "Aurea pars vos estis; sicut enim per ignem aurum probatur, et utile fit, sic et vos probamini; qui igitur permanserint et probati fuerint, ab eis purgabuntur; et sicut aurum emendatur, et remittit sordem suam, sic et vos abjicietis omnem tristitiam (ὁλίγον λυπηθέντες) et emendabimini in structuram turris." *Hermas*, Pastor, lib. i. Visio iv. p. 440, ed. Dressel.

See also *Martyr Polycarp*, c. 15, and c. 18, where there is a description of the body of the holy Martyr in the flames, "like gold or silver tried in the furnace;" and after his decease his bones are gathered up as τιμιώτερα λίθων πολυτελῶν καὶ δοκιμώτερα ὑπὲρ χρυσόν.

The words of St. Peter are appropriately inserted by the Church of England in her Office for the Visitation of the Sick.

8. ὃν οὐκ ἰδόντες, ἀγαπάτε] *Whom though ye saw Him not on earth, as I have done, ye love, as I do*, John xxi. 15—17.

Elz. has εἰδότες with A, G, K, but ἰδόντες is in N, B, C, and several cursives, and in the Syriac, Æthiopic, and Arabic Versions; and St. Peter seems to refer to our Lord's saying, "Blessed are they who have not seen, and yet have believed" (John xx. 29), which he himself heard; and S. Polycarp thus quotes this passage in his Epistle to the Philippians (cap. i.), εἰς ὃν, οὐκ ἰδόντες (where the old translation has *videntes*) πιστεύετε, πιστεύοντες δὲ ἀγαλλιᾶσθε χαρᾷ ἀνεκλαλήτῳ καὶ δεδοξασμένῳ, εἰς ἣν πολλοὶ ἐπιθυμοῦσιν εἰσελθεῖν, εἰδότες ὅτι χάριτί ἐστε σεσωσμένοι, οὐκ ἐξ ἔργων, ἀλλὰ θελήματι Θεοῦ διὰ Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ. Cp. Eph. ii. 8, 9. It is worthy of remark that this Apostolic father, S. Polycarp, a disciple of St. John, and a Bishop of a Church in Asia, Smyrna, blends together two passages from two Apostolic Epistles to the Christians in Asia,—namely, from this Epistle of St. Peter, and from St. Paul's Epistle to the Ephesians. On S. Polycarp's references to this Epistle, see further below on v. 13.

S. Irenæus (iv. 9. 2) also, in the West, refers to this passage, "Petrus ait in Epistolâ suâ, Quem non *videntes* diligitis." And again (v. 7), "Quem, quum non *videritis*, diligitis; in quem, nunc quoque, non *videntes*, creditis, credentes autem exultabitis gaudio inenarrabili."

—χαρᾷ—δεδοξασμένῳ] *with joy unspeakable and glorified: with joy unutterable,—so great is it; and with joy even now invested with glory; such as shone in the face of the first Martyr St. Stephen, at his passion (Acts vi. 15), and such as shone in the raiment and countenance of our Lord Himself, which St. Peter saw, when Christ was conversing with Moses and Elias concerning His Death. See on Luke ix. 31.*

St. Peter throughout this Epistle represents the *present sufferings* of the Christian as occasions for *joy*; he seems to write the Epistle with a vivid recollection of the glory which he saw at the *Transfiguration*, which revealed the splendour of Christ made perfect by *sufferings*, and of all Christians who suffer for Him; and which is reflected upon them, even in *this life*, by lively Faith in Him. Therefore, he adds, that even *now* they are *receiving the end of their faith, the salvation of their souls*. Even whilst they are sowing in tears, they see, with the eye of Faith, the future harvest of joy; even now they reap it with the hand of Hope. See above, *Introduction*, pp. 40, 41.

He now proceeds to describe the blessedness of that Harvest of salvation through Christ; and proves its felicity by two arguments,

(1) that this salvation was the object of the earnest inquiries, and longing desire, of all the *Ancient Prophets*; and,

(2) that the *Angels* of heaven themselves desire to stoop down and look into it.

VOL. II.—PART IV.

Be sure, therefore, that the Gospel of Christ is not, as some of your Jewish fellow-countrymen allege, a *novelty*. No, the Hebrew Prophets inquired after it, and foretold it. And it is a thing of surpassing excellence, because they were employed in ministering to it; and the Angels of heaven are engaged in admiring it. Cp. *Abp. Leighton* here.

9. σωτηρίαν ψυχῶν] *the salvation of your souls*. Your enemies imagine, that you *lose* your ψυχὰς (lives) by dying for Christ; but by so doing you *save* them. Matt. xvi. 25. Mark viii. 35. Luke ix. 24.

10. περὶ ἧς σωτηρίας] *Concerning which salvation the Prophets, who prophesied concerning the grace of the Gospel which has come to you, did seek and search diligently*. The Prophets of old *prophesied*, but were not enabled fully to *understand* and *interpret* their own *prophecies*. "To say that the Scriptures, and the things contained in them, can have no farther meaning, than those persons thought or had, who first recited or wrote them, is evidently saying that those persons were the original, proper, and sole authors of those books, that is, that they are *not inspired*." *Bp. Butler*, Analogy, Pt. ii. c. 7.

The question is not, what the *persons*, who wrote, meant, but what *God* meant, Who wrote by them.

God revealed Himself to the Prophets of old, not so much for the sake of *themselves*, but for *others* who were to come after them. Cp. *Hengstenberg*, Christology, §§ 238. 249, on the Nature of Prophecy, and the present Editor's Five Lectures on the Interpretation of the Bible, Lect. iii. See below on 2 Pet. i. 20, 21, which text is the best comment on this passage.

The Prophets had some intimation of the grace and glory which was to be revealed afterwards in the Gospel, which has been preached to you; and they were informed that they were ministering to you, and not to *themselves*, those things which are now declared to you by those who have preached the Gospel to you by the Holy Spirit Who spake of old in the Prophets, but has *now been sent down from heaven to us*. So great are your privileges. Cp. Matt. xiii. 17.

11, 12. ἐρευνῶντες] *searching*. So great is the blessedness of the salvation purchased for you by the sufferings of Christ, and to be obtained by you, treading in the road of suffering, which led Him to glory, that the ancient Prophets *sought* and *inquired diligently, what season, and what manner of season* (whether one of distress or joy, *Theophyl.*), the Spirit of Christ that was in them was signifying, when it was testifying beforehand the sufferings that were appointed for Christ (*Winer*, p. 174), and were to be laid upon Christ (εἰς Χριστόν), on whom "God laid the iniquities of us all;" for, "He bare our griefs and carried our sorrows" (Isa. liii. 4—6); and the glories (*plural*, both of Him and of us) that would follow after, as *fruits* and *rewards* of those sufferings: see Phil. ii. 8, 9. Rom. xiv. 9. Col. ii. 15. Heb. ii. 9, 10. 14; ix. 7—13; and cp. the exposition of *Æcumenius*, *Erasmus*, *Hottinger*, *Knapp*, and others.

The Spirit of CHRIST, Who is the everlasting LOGOS, and declares God's will (John i. 1. 18) by the Holy Ghost, spake in the Prophets concerning His sufferings and glory. "The divine Prophets," says *Ignatius* (ad Magnes. 8), "lived according to Jesus Christ, being inspired by His grace." The Prophets pre-announced the Gospel, and had their hopes fixed on Christ, and waited for Him, and by belief in Him they were saved. They were in the unity of Christ; and were attested by Christ, and were numbered together with us in the Gospel, which is the common hope of all. S. *Ignatius* (ad Phil. 5). Cp. *Justin Martyr*, Apolog. i. p. 49; ii. p. 76; and compare *Didymus* here, who refers to Matt. xiii. 17. Heb. xi. 26.

Here therefore is a clear proof of Christ's Pre-existence and Godhead. "The very Truth itself, the Son of God, the Mediator of God and Man, the Man Christ Jesus, spake first by the Prophets, then by Himself, and afterwards by His Apostles," says S. *Augustine*, de Civ. Dei (xi. 2).

St. Peter here asserts the procession of the Holy Ghost from the Son, as well as from the Father. See *Bp. Pearson* on the Creed, Art. viii. pp. 601, 602, and notes; and above, notes on John xv. 26, and Gal. iv. 6. Rom. viii. 9.

The Holy Spirit presignified by the Prophets that the Messiah should suffer, and so enter into His glory. (Luke xxiv. 26.)

St. Peter himself had once been slow to admit this truth.

H

1 Dan. 12. 9, 13.
Acts 2. 4.
Eph. 3. 10.
Heb. 11. 13, 39.
m Luke 12. 35.
& 21. 34.
Rom. 13. 13.
Eph. 6. 14.
1 Thess. 5. 6.
n Rom. 12. 2.
ch. 4. 2.
o Lev. 11. 44.
& 19. 2. & 20. 7.
Luke 1. 74, 75.
2 Cor. 7. 1.
p Lev. 11. 44.
& 19. 2. & 20. 7.
q Deut. 10. 17.
2 Chron. 19. 7.
Job 34. 19.
Acts 10. 34, 35.
Rom. 2. 10, 11.
2 Cor. 5. 6. & 7. 1.

ρόμενον τὰ εἰς Χριστὸν παθήματα, καὶ τὰς μετὰ ταῦτα δόξας· ¹² οἷς ἀπεκα-
λύφθη ὅτι οὐχ ἑαυτοῖς, ὑμῖν δὲ διηκόνουν αὐτὰ, ἃ νῦν ἀνηγγέλη ὑμῖν διὰ τῶν
εὐαγγελισαμένων ὑμᾶς ἐν Πνεύματι ἁγίῳ ἀποσταλέντι ἀπ' οὐρανοῦ, εἰς ἃ ἐπι-
θυμοῦσιν ἄγγελοι παρακύψαι.

¹³ Διὸ ἀναζωσάμενοι τὰς ὀσφύας τῆς διανοίας ὑμῶν, νήφοντες τελείως
ἐλπίζατε ἐπὶ τὴν φερομένην ὑμῖν χάριν ἐν ἀποκαλύψει Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ· ¹⁴ ὥς
τέκνα ὑπακοῆς, μὴ συσχηματιζόμενοι ταῖς πρότερον ἐν τῇ ἀγνοίᾳ ὑμῶν ἐπι-
θυμίαις· ¹⁵ ἀλλὰ κατὰ τὸν καλέσαντα ὑμᾶς Ἅγιον, καὶ αὐτοὶ ἅγιοι ἐν πάσῃ
ἀναστροφῇ γενήθητε· ¹⁶ διότι γέγραπται, Ἅγιοι ἔσεσθε, ὅτι Ἐγὼ ἅγιος.

¹⁷ Καὶ εἰ Πατέρα ἐπικαλεῖσθε τὸν ἀπροσωπολήπτως κρίνοντα κατὰ τὸ

"That be far from Thee!" he had said to Christ, and had been rebuked by Him for that remonstrance. (Matt. xvi. 22, 23.)

But his eyes were now enlightened by the Holy Ghost; and he who had endeavoured to dissuade Christ from suffering, rose up after the day of Pentecost, and declared to all the people at Jerusalem, that "these things which God before had showed by the mouth of all His Prophets that Christ should suffer, He hath so fulfilled" (see Acts iii. 18). He now preaches this truth to the world; and he refers to his own illumination by the Holy Ghost sent down from heaven on the day of Pentecost, Who enabled him to interpret the Prophecies of the Old Testament (see below on 2 Pet. i. 20, 21), and to preach those things which the Prophets were ministering of old, not to themselves, but to the Church, and which they desired to see (Matt. xiii. 17); and which the Angels themselves longed to look into.

Thus St. Peter, the Apostle of the Circumcision, vindicates the Gospel of Christ from Jewish allegations that it was a new religion, and that it was contrary to the Law and the Prophets; as his brother Apostle St. Paul has done in the Epistle to the Romans (see Introduction, pp. 186—198), and in the Epistle to the Hebrews (see Introduction, pp. 366—368).

On the sense of the word παρακύψαι, to bend aside, and stoop, and rivet the eyes down upon, see James i. 25; and the citation of this passage by S. Hippolytus, who reads ἐγκύψαι, p. 220, Mai, p. 185, Lagarde. And on the wonderful announcement, that the Angels themselves derive heavenly knowledge from the Holy Scriptures, in the hands of the Church, see above on Eph. iii. 10; and cp. 1 Tim. iii. 16.

This high and holy Mystery, which represents the Angels themselves bending over the Word of God enshrined in the Ark of the Church, was symbolized by the figures of the Cherubim of glory spreading their wings, and bending their faces, and shadowing the Mercy seat, in the Holy of Holies, upon the Ark, in which were kept the Tables of the Law written by God (Exod. xxv. 18—22. Heb. ix. 4, 5); and by the side of which was the Pentateuch. Deut. xxxi. 24—26.

St. Peter's declaration that the Prophets were ministering to us (διηκόνουν), is adopted by S. Hippolytus (de Antichristo, c. 31), addressing the Prophets, τὰ τοῦ Θεοῦ λόγια διηκονήσατε πάσαις γενεαῖς. Cp. his Philosophumena, p. 336, in his imitation of 2 Pet. i. 20, quoted below on that passage.

12. ὑμῖν] So A, B, C, G, and Griesb., Scholz, Lach., Tisch., Alf. Elz. has ἡμῖν.

13. διὸ ἀναζωσάμενοι] Wherefore,—since the salvation purchased for you is so glorious a prize,—gird up the loins of your mind. He keeps up the metaphor of pilgrims, i. 1; see also ii. 11. Gird up the loins of your mind. Keep your affections from trailing on the earth (cp. Phil. iii. 20). And be sober, and hope constantly; run onward, as it were, on the wings of hope, in your Christian course, unto the grace which is being brought to you—it is not of your own earning, but a free gift of God, "to which ye bring nothing but thirst," cp. Rev. xxii. 17—in the revelation of Jesus Christ; cp. 2 Pet. iii. 12, σπεύδοντες τὴν παρουσίαν.

He addresses them as strangers, journeying onward in hope to their home, and exhorts them to gird up the loins of their mind, and to have a clear intellectual view of the glory which is before them, and a resolute endeavour of volition to attain it. On this twofold sense of διάνοια, see Matt. xxii. 37. Eph. ii. 3; iv. 18. Col. i. 21. Heb. viii. 10. 2 Pet. iii. 1. 1 John v. 20.

So S. Polycarp, writing to the Philippians, c. 2, ἀναζωσάμενοι τὰς ὀσφύας ὑμῶν δουλεύσατε τῷ Θεῷ . . . ἀπολιπόντες τὴν κενὴν ματαιολογίαν, πιστεύσαντες εἰς τὸν ἐγείραντα τὸν Κύριον ἡμῶν Ἰησοῦν Χριστὸν ἐκ νεκρῶν (see v. 21), καὶ δόντα αὐτῷ δόξαν . . . ὃ δὲ ἐγείρας αὐτὸν καὶ ἡμᾶς ἐγερεῖ, ἐὰν πορευόμεθα ἐν ταῖς ἐντολαῖς αὐτοῦ, ἀπεχόμενοι πάσης ἀδικίας.

It is interesting to observe, that S. Polycarp, the disciple of St. John, and Bishop of Smyrna, the great city of Asia, appears to have been familiar with the present Epistle of St. Peter (as Eusebius has observed, iv. 14), the beloved friend and companion of St. John, who governed the Asiatic Churches, and lived and died at Ephesus. (Acts iii. 1. 3. 11; viii. 14.) S. Polycarp's testimony to it is more important, because this Epistle is addressed to the Churches of Asia. He often adopts its words, and incorporates them in his own Epistle (see here and below, ii. 11, 12. 17. 22. 24; iv. 7); as he does also St. Paul's Epistle to the Asiatic Church of Ephesus. Cp. Eph. ii. 8, with Polycarp, Ep. c. 1; Eph. iv. 26, with Polycarp, c. 12; and Eph. v. 1, with Polycarp, c. 2.

— τελείως ἐλπίζατε] hope ye perfectly, without any wavering of doubt, and with perseverance to the end. Observe the aorist, ἐλπίζατε. Their whole life is to be one act of hope. On this use of the aorist, see below, v. 2.

— φερομένην] being borne: present tense. Hope ye on to the grace that is being borne toward you, in and by the Revelation of Jesus Christ. Christ is ever at hand; He is ever bringing grace and glory to you; and ye must ever be hastening on to Him with hope and desire.

14. τέκνα ὑπακοῆς] children of obedience; to whom Obedience is as a Mother, communicating her nature to yours; and thus ye are prepared to invoke God as your Father, v. 17; contrast κατὰρας τέκνα, 2 Pet. ii. 14.

— μὴ συσχηματιζόμενοι] not conforming yourselves to your former lusts. An allusion probably to St. Paul's precept, Rom. xii. 2, which is further imitated below, ii. 5.

— ἐν τῇ ἀγνοίᾳ ὑμῶν] in your ignorance. See Eph. iv. 14. This word ἀγνοία, ignorance, may seem to intimate that this portion of the Epistle is addressed also to Gentiles. Many of St. Peter's readers were proselytes, and had been Gentiles. But ignorance is also predicated of the Jews. See Matt. xxii. 29; xxiii. 16—24. John ix. 39. Acts iii. 17. Rom. ii. 4; x. 3; xi. 25. 2 Cor. iii. 14. 1 Tim. i. 13. Indeed, all, whether Jew or Gentile, are in a state of ignorance, before they come to Christ. Cp. below on v. 18, and ii. 10.

15. ἀλλά] nay, rather.

16. ἔσεσθε] ye shall be. So A, B, C (and N has ἔσεσθαι), and Lach., Tisch., Alf. Elz. has γένησθε. N has διότι ἔ. ἃ. καὶ εἰ —, and A, B* also have not εἰμι, which is added after ἅγιος by Elz.

17. καὶ εἰ Πατέρα ἐπικαλεῖσθε] and if—(as ye do in the Lord's Prayer: cp. on Acts xxi. 14, as to its primitive use)—ye call upon Him as Father, Who judgeth without respect of persons according to each man's work, pass ye the time of your sojourning here in fear. "Meditemur timorem Dei; Dominus non accepta personā judicat mundum; unusquisque secundum quod facit accipiet." S. Barnabas (Ep. 4).

Here is a connected series of arguments and motives to holiness, derived from a consideration,

(1) Of the holy nature of Him Whom we invoke as Father, Whose children we are, Whom therefore we are bound to imitate and to obey.

(2) Of His office as Judge, rewarding every man according to his work; Whom therefore we ought to fear.

(3) Of Christ's office as Redeemer, and of His nature as an all-holy Redeemer, paying the costly price of His own blood to ransom us from a state of unholiness, and purchasing us to Himself with His blood. Therefore we are not our own, but His; and being His, bought by His blood, we owe Him, Who is the Holy One, the service of love and holiness. See above on 1 Cor. vi. 19, 20. Eph. i. 7. 14; and cp. Clem. Rom. i. 7, ἀτενίσωμεν εἰς τὸ αἷμα τοῦ Χριστοῦ, καὶ ἴδωμεν ὡς ἔστι τίμιον τῷ Θεῷ πατρὶ αὐτοῦ, ὅτι διὰ τὴν ἡμετέραν σωτηρίαν ἐκχυθέν. Cp. S. Augustine, Sermon 36.

ἐκάστου ἔργον, ἐν φόβῳ τὸν τῆς παροικίας ὑμῶν χρόνον ἀναστράφητε, ¹⁸ εἰ-
 δότες ὅτι οὐ φθαρτοῖς, ἀργυρίῳ ἢ χρυσίῳ, ἐλυτρώθητε ἐκ τῆς ματαίας ὑμῶν
 ἀναστροφῆς πατροπαραδότου, ¹⁹ ἀλλὰ τιμίῳ αἵματι, ὡς ἀμνοῦ ἀμώμου καὶ
 ἀσπίλου, Χριστοῦ, ²⁰ προεγνωσμένου μὲν πρὸ καταβολῆς κόσμου, φανερω-
 θέντος δὲ ἐπ' ἐσχάτου τῶν χρόνων δι' ὑμᾶς, ²¹ τοὺς δι' αὐτοῦ πιστεύοντας εἰς
 Θεὸν, τὸν ἐγείραντα αὐτὸν ἐκ νεκρῶν, καὶ δόξαν αὐτῷ δόντα, ὥστε τὴν πίστιν
 ὑμῶν καὶ ἐλπίδα εἶναι εἰς Θεόν.

²² Τὰς ψυχὰς ὑμῶν ἡγνικότες ἐν τῇ ὑπακοῇ τῆς ἀληθείας εἰς φιλαδελφίαν
 ἀνυπόκριτον, ἐκ καθαρᾶς καρδίας ἀλλήλους ἀγαπήσατε ἐκτενῶς. ²³ ἀναγεγεν-
 νημένοι οὐκ ἐκ σπορᾶς φθαρτῆς, ἀλλὰ ἀφθάρτου, διὰ Λόγου ζῶντος Θεοῦ καὶ

Eph. 4. 3. 1 Tim. 1. 5. Heb. 13. 1. ch. 2. 17.

y John 1. 13. & 3. 3, 5. James 1. 18. 1 John 3. 9.

r 1 Cor. 6. 20.
 & 7. 23.
 s John 1. 29, 36.
 Acts 20. 28.
 1 Cor. 5. 7.
 Heb. 9. 12, 14.
 1 John 1. 7.
 Rev. 1. 5. & 5. 9.
 t Acts 2. 24.
 Rom. 3. 25.
 & 16. 25.
 Eph. 1. 9. & 3. 9.
 Gal. 4. 4.
 Col. 1. 26.
 2 Tim. 1. 9.
 Tit. 1. 2.
 Heb. 1. 2.
 Rev. 13. 8.
 u Acts 2. 33.
 Phil. 2. 9.
 x Acts 15. 9.
 Rom. 12. 10.

(4) Of our *transitory* condition in this life. On the special
 allusion in *παροιμία*, *sojourning*, see below, ii. 11.

(5) Of the gift of the Spirit of holiness.

(6) Of our new birth by the living Word of God.

18. ἐλυτρώθητε] *ye were redeemed* by the payment of a price
 of infinite value, namely, the blood of Christ, Who gave Himself
 to God as a λύτρον, ἀντίλυτρον, or ransom, for the redemption of
 you and the whole world. See Matt. xx. 28. Mark x. 45. Rom.
 iii. 24. Eph. i. 7. 14. Heb. ix. 12. 1 Tim. ii. 6.

Know you not that Christ redeemed you, not by silver or
 gold, but by His precious blood? You have been redeemed by
 Him, and therefore you owe Him service as your Lord and as your
 Redeemer. *S. Ambrose*, de Isaac, c. 3.

He is a Lamb without blemish and without spot; "white,
 and yet ruddy," says the spouse in the Canticles (v. 10); white
 in spotless innocency, red in His bloody death, and He is her well
 beloved, because He redeemed her thereby. *Cp. Abp. Leighton*
 here.

— πατροπαραδότου] *delivered by your fathers*—a passage
 which has been supposed by some to intimate that this Epistle,
 designed primarily for Jewish Christians, was intended for Gentile
 Christians also. *Cp. ii. 10; iv. 3.* Doubtless many of St. Peter's
 readers had been originally *Gentiles*, and had then become *Jewish*
Proselytes, and so passed into the Church. The Proselytes were
 the "seminarium Ecclesiæ." See *Introduction* to the Acts, p. 9.
 But this statement of the Apostle may also have been designed
 to declare to the Jewish Christians that all their ἀναστροφή, or
 conversation, as delivered to them by tradition from their fathers,
 was vain without Christ, Who redeemed them from the curse of
 the Law (see Gal. iii. 13), and delivered them from the yoke
 which, as St. Peter himself says (Acts xv. 10), neither they nor
 their fathers were able to bear. *Cp. above on v. 14.*

The numerous quotations in this Epistle from the *Hebrew*
Scriptures (*cp. v. 24*), show that it was not addressed to *Gentiles*.
Cp. note above, on 1 Thess. i. 9.

19. ἀμώμου] *without blemish*: as the sacrifices offered under
 the Law were required to be. Levit. iii. 1. 6; xiv. 10; xxi.
 18; xxii. 20. Num. vi. 14. He tells them that this Lamb with-
 out blemish, the Lamb of God, was anterior to all sacrifices of
 the Levitical Ritual; that He was fore-ordained before the foun-
 dation of the world (*cp. Rev. xiii. 8*); and that therefore the
 Gospel is *not a new religion* (as the Jews alleged), but older than
 the Law; and he declares that they are delivered by the blood of
 Christ the true Passover (John xix. 36. 1 Cor. v. 7), as their
 fathers were from the destroying Angel by the blood of the
 Paschal Lamb. Exod. xii. 13.

Observe the distinction between ἀμώμου and ἀσπίλου. Christ,
 the true Passover (1 Cor. v. 7), had no blemish of sin in Himself,
 nor did he contract any stain, or spot of sin, from the world.

20. προεγνωσμένου] *foreknown*. *Cp. St. Peter's* language on
 the same subject in his speech in Acts ii. 23.

— ἐσχάτου] So A, B, C. On this *substantive* sense of
 ἐσχάτου, see Acts i. 8; xiii. 47. *Elz.* has ἐσχάτων.

Christ was manifest in the last times (see Heb. i. 2), in the
 end of the world (Heb. ix. 26). The Paschal Lamb was slain in
 the evening. (Exod. xii. 6.)

21.] See the passage of *S. Polycarp* quoted above on v. 13.

On the meaning of πιστοὺς εἰς Θεόν, see on Matt. xviii. 6.
James ii. 19.

22. ἀληθείας] *Elz.* has διὰ Πνεύματος, not in A, B, C, nor
 in N.

— ἐκτενῶς] *earnestly, intensely*. Let your love for one
 another be ἐκτενής, stretched out continuously and intently,
 without interruption or relaxation. See below on iv. 8.

23. ἀναγεγεννημένοι] *having been born again, not of corrupti-
 ble seed, but of incorruptible, through the Word of God which
 liveth and endureth for ever.*

Λόγου is not to be coupled with Θεοῦ, but with ζῶντος (so
Didymus, Luther, Bengel, De Wette, Huther, and others), in
 contrast with σπορᾶς φθαρτῆς, *corruptible seed*; and the partici-
 ples are thus placed for the sake of *emphasis*, to declare that the
 Word here mentioned, is not like *man's* word, a thing that dies
 and disappears, but that it is the Word of God; the Word that
 liveth and abideth. So ii. 4, λίθον ζῶντα, the stone that liveth;
 namely, Christ.

St. Peter reminds them that they had been born again of
 incorruptible seed, even of God Himself; as St. John says, "they
 were the sons of God, because they believed on His Name, and
 had been born, not of blood, nor of the will of man, but of God."
 (John i. 12, 13.)

God had made them His own children in Christ by virtue—

(1) Of Christ's eternal Sonship;

(2) Of His Incarnation; and

(3) Of their Faith and baptismal Incorporation in Him.

For Christ was sent "that He might bring many sons to
 God" (Heb. ii. 10); so that Christ says to the Father, "Behold,
 here am I, and the children which God hath given Me" (Isa. viii.
 18); and so "per Filium filii," by this Son they are sons. *Bp.*
Andrewes (i. p. 298). Thus was Christ born in Sion (Ps. lxxxvii.
 4), and He is even born in the Morians' Land; for in every place
 that receiveth the Word of Him Who is the Incarnate Word of
 God, there is He born. (See *ibid.* pp. 298, 299.) *Cp. 1 John*
iii. 1.

They are born again of God, διὰ λόγου ζῶντος, *through the
 living Word*; that is, through the Word preached, and especially
 through Christ the Incarnate Word. As *Didymus* here says,
 "The Word is living and abiding; that Word which was in the
 beginning with God, the Word of God." Our first birth is by
 Adam, our second birth is by Christ.

Some Expositors here limit the Word to the Word written
 or preached.

But though this sense was doubtless in the Apostle's mind
 when he wrote this passage, yet it seems an error to suppose that
 this was all that was in his mind.

Christ is the Word (John i. 1). "His Name is the Word of
 God." Rev. xix. 13. By virtue of His Eternal Sonship, and by
 the condescension of the Word to become flesh, and to pitch His
 tent in our Nature (John i. 14), and to become our Emmanuel,
 God manifested in our flesh (1 Tim. iii. 16), and by our faith and
 baptismal incorporation in Him, *we are born again*. As to our
flesh, considered in itself, we are but grass, and all our glory is
as the flower of grass. But since our flesh has become the flesh
 of Him Who is the Word of God, and Who liveth for ever, we
 are partakers of the divine nature (2 Pet. i. 4); and if we en-
 deavour to be holy as He is holy, we shall be partakers of His
 glory.

On examining carefully the chapter of Isaiah—the fortieth
 —which St. Peter is quoting here, we see reason for believing
 that these truths were in St. Peter's mind when he wrote these
 words; and we shall be confirmed in this opinion by the con-
 sideration that one of the main purposes of this Epistle is to
 show the benefits which result to all mankind from the Eternal
 Sonship of the Word of God, and from His susception of our
 Flesh. Isaiah is first pre-announcing the preparatory witness of
 "the Voice crying in the wilderness," and he contrasts that
 transitory testimony of the Voice with the permanence of Him
 Who is the Word; he contrasts the ministry of him who pre-
 pared the way of our God with the Eternity of Him Who is the
 Way (John xiv. 6); he is contrasting the perishable nature of
 human flesh, which is as grass, and the goodness of it as the
 flower of the field, with the glory of the Lord—the glory of Him
 Who is the only-begotten of the Father, full of grace and truth
 (John i. 14), and with the glory of the salvation which all flesh
 should see revealed in Him. . . Behold your God! v. 9.

z Ps. 103. 15.
Eccles. 14. 18.
Isa. 40. 6.
1 Cor. 7. 31.
James 1. 10.
& 4. 14.
1 John 2. 17.
zz Ps. 102. 12, 26.
Isa. 40. 8.
Luke 16. 17.
a Matt. 18. 3.
Rom. 6. 4.
1 Cor. 14. 20.
Eph. 4. 22, 25. Col. 3. 8.

μένοντος²⁴ διότι πᾶσα σὰρξ ὡς χόρτος, καὶ πᾶσα δόξα αὐτῆς ὡς
ἄνθος χόρτου· ἐξηράνθη ὁ χόρτος, καὶ τὸ ἄνθος ἐξέπεσε·²⁵ τὸ δὲ
ῥῆμα Κυρίου μένει εἰς τὸν αἰῶνα.

Τοῦτο δέ ἐστι τὸ ῥῆμα τὸ εὐαγγελισθὲν εἰς ὑμᾶς.

II. ¹ Ἀποθέμενοι οὖν πᾶσαν κακίαν καὶ πάντα δόλον, καὶ ὑποκρίσεις, καὶ
φθόνους, καὶ πάσας καταλαλιὰς, ² ὡς ἀρτιγέννητα βρέφη, τὸ λογικὸν ἄδολον

He then passes on to describe Him as a Judge, and the Shepherd of His flock (vv. 10, 11).

That portion of Holy Scripture, which is fitly appointed by the Church as the Epistle for St. John Baptist's Day, is a prophecy of the Incarnation of Christ, the Everlasting God, and of His offices to us, and of our blessedness in Him. St. Peter, in citing that prophecy here, doubtless intended that it should serve as a commentary on his own words, and be used to elucidate them; and that his words, on their part, should also illustrate that prophecy. It would seem, therefore, to be a narrow view of his meaning, to imagine that he intended here to speak *only* of God's Word as *preached or written*.

It is, unhappily, a characteristic of modern Biblical interpretation, to pare down the rich exuberance and beautiful efflorescence of Holy Scripture, and to lop off and amputate its ramifications of meaning, and if we may venture so to speak—to reduce them to the bare trunk and stunted pollard of a single sense.

In this way, much of the goodness and fruitfulness of Scripture is in danger of being lost to the present generation.

The Apostles and Evangelists proceeded on a very different plan in interpreting the Old Testament, and in expounding our Lord's words. They do not *confine* them to *one* sense only. Thus St. Matthew applies the prophecy of Isaiah (liii. 4) to Christ's acts of mercy to the body; and St. Peter adapts it to His vicarious and expiatory sufferings for the salvation of their souls. (Cp. Matt. viii. 17. 1 Pet. ii. 24.) Cp. Acts xiii. 33, with Heb. i. 5; v. 5.

St. John quotes our Lord's saying, which the Evangelist himself had recorded (John xvii. 12), "Those whom Thou gavest me I have kept, and none of them is lost," and which was spoken of their faith and adherence to Him; and applies it to the care which Christ took of the safety of His disciples, when He Himself was arrested in the Garden. (John xviii. 9.)

The primitive Interpreters of Holy Scripture pursued a similar method of exposition, and many of our own Divines, who were reared under their discipline, followed in their steps.

Thus Dean Jackson, commenting on this passage, says, "If Christ's flesh and blood be the seed of Immortality, how are we said to be born again by the Word of God, which liveth and abideth for ever? Is this Word, by which we are born, the same with that immortal seed of which we are born? It is the same, not in nature but in Person. May we not, in that speech of St. Peter, by the Word, understand the word preached unto us by the Ministers who are God's seedsmen? In a *secondary* sense we may, for we are begotten and born again by preaching, as by the instrument or means. Yet born again we are by the *Eternal Word* (that is, by CHRIST Himself), as by the proper and efficient cause of our new birth. . . . And Christ Himself, Who was put to death for our sins, and raised again for our justification, is the Word which we all do or ought to preach.

"The Son of God manifested in the flesh, was that Word which, in St. Peter's language, is preached by the Gospel. And if we do not preach *this Word* unto our hearers,—if all our sermons do not tend to one of these two ends, either to instruct our auditors in the articles of their creed concerning Christ, or to prepare their ears and hearts that they may be fit auditors of such instructions, we do not preach the Gospel unto them, we take upon us the name of God's ambassadors, or of the ministers of the Gospel in vain." (Dean Jackson on the Creed, book vii. ch. xxviii. vol. vii. p. 270.)

See also A Lapidé here, who says, "This sense is a genuine and sublime one; because in our Regeneration, Christ Himself is personally communicated to us, so that the Deity thenceforth dwells in us as in a Temple, and we are made partakers of the Divine Nature, 2 Pet. i. 4." Cp. note above on James i. 18—21.

The Word preached is the preparatory instrument for the conveyance of the divine principle of life, which, flowing from God in Christ, is infused into the heart of man by means of the Holy Sacrament. It is the Ministry of the Word which brings men to the Sacraments; as was shown in the example of St. Peter himself, who preached to the Jews of the dispersion on the day of Pentecost, and then in answer to their question, "What shall we do?" he said, "Repent, and be baptized every one of you, in

the Name of Jesus Christ, for the remission of sins, and ye shall receive the gift of the Holy Ghost." (Acts ii. 38.)

This order of things is not in any way at variance with what was done in the extraordinary case of Cornelius the first-fruits of the Gentiles, when the Holy Ghost fell on all them which heard the word; and Peter said, "Can any forbid water, that these should not be baptized?" and he commanded them to be baptized in the Name of the Lord." (See note above on Acts x. 44—48.) See also the case of St. Philip and the Ethiopian, who having heard the word, asked, "What doth hinder me to be baptized?" (Acts viii. 36.)

This is what is briefly expressed by St. Paul in the Epistle to the Ephesians; which St. Peter appears to be studiously imitating and confirming in this Epistle (see above, i. 1, 2). Christ loved the Church, and gave Himself for it, that He might sanctify it, having cleansed it by the washing of Water with the Word. Eph. v. 25, 26, where see note.

After μένοντος Elz. has εἰς τὸν αἰῶνα, but this is not in A, B, C, and is rejected by Griesb., Scholz, Lach., Tisch., Alf.

24. πᾶσα σὰρξ] all flesh is as grass. The life of flesh considered as flesh, is contrasted here with the spiritual life imparted to the sons of God, by their adoption into the "Word made flesh," and by their participation in the divine nature, in Him. See above on v. 23. Cp. John i. 12, 14, and 2 Pet. i. 4.

The ὡς, as, before χόρτος is not in A, and has been erased from R.

For αὐτῆς Elz. has ἀνθρώπου, but αὐτῆς is the reading of A, B, C, G, K, and is received by Griesb., Scholz, Lach., Tisch., Alf. The quotation here is almost literally from the Septuagint, Isa. xl. 6—8. And this is the case with almost all the quotations from the Old Testament in this Epistle, see

ii. 6 cp. Isa. xxviii. 16,
ii. 7 Ps. cxviii. 22,
ii. 9 Exod. xix. 6,
iii. 10—12 Ps. xxxiv. 12—16.

25. τὸ δὲ ῥῆμα] But the thing spoken by the Lord endureth for ever. (Cp. Matt. iv. 4. Luke i. 37.) Λόγος is the Word, coming forth from God, and energizing by His Divine Power; and hence is applied to the everlasting Son of God.

This entire passage may be compared with, and is best illustrated by, the words of the same Apostle St. Peter, in his speech at Caesarea, see Acts x. 36, where is a similar transition from λόγος to ῥῆμα.

The transition from the Incarnate Word to the spoken or written Word, and vice versa, is, as might be anticipated, of not unfrequent occurrence in Holy Writ: see on Heb. iv. 12. James i. 18—23. Observe, also, that St. Peter here returns to the principal Person, Christ, and speaks of Him, who is the Living Word, as being also the Living Stone, ii. 4.

CH. II. 1. ἀποθέμενοι οὖν] Put away, therefore, all malice and all guile: which ye renounced in your baptism, when ye put on the new man; see Eph. iv. 22. Col. iii. 9, 10, and James i. 2, imitated by Clemens Romanus, i. 13.

On the difference of these words S. Augustine says, "Malitia malo delectatur alieno; invidia bono cruciatur alieno; dolus duplicat cor; adulatio duplicat linguam; detractio vulnerat famam."

2. ὡς ἀρτιγέννητα βρέφη] as new-born babes. He had been speaking of their baptismal new birth from the divine seed of immortality in Christ (i. 23), and he now exhorts them to crave earnestly the unadulterated rational (not carnal) milk, as babes yearn for the milk of their mothers' breasts, and to suck it in with eagerness; in order that they may grow thereby to salvation. The words εἰς σωτηρίαν are omitted by Elz., but are in A, B, C, K, and are received by Griesb., Scholz, Lach., Tisch., Alf.

On the word λογικὸν cp. Rom. xii. 1, λογικὴν λατρείαν, interpreted by Chrys. as πνευματικὴν, spiritual.

By this mention of milk, as contrasted with strong meat, he teaches them a lesson of humility. Cp. 1 Cor. iii. 2. Heb. v. 12, 13.

This metaphor from milk, and its adulteration, is adopted by an ancient writer quoted by S. Irenæus (iii. 17), "In Dei lacte gypsum malè miscetur" (cp. Routh, R. S. i. pp. 48. 62). Here

γάλα ἐπιποθήσατε, ἵνα ἐν αὐτῷ αὐξηθῆτε εἰς σωτηρίαν ^{3 b} εἶπερ ἐγεύσασθε ^b Ps. 34. 9.
ὅτι χρηστὸς ὁ Κύριος.

^{4 c} Πρὸς ὃν προσερχόμενοι, λίθον ζῶντα, ὑπὸ ἀνθρώπων μὲν ἀποδοκιμασμένον, παρὰ δὲ Θεῷ ἐκλεκτὸν, ἔντιμον, ^{5 d} καὶ αὐτοὶ ὡς λίθοι ζῶντες οἰκοδομεῖσθε, οἶκος πνευματικὸς, ἱεράτευμα ἅγιον, ἀνενέγκαι πνευματικὰς θυσίας, εὐπροσδέκτους τῷ Θεῷ διὰ Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ. ^{6 e} Διότι περιέχει ἐν τῇ γραφῇ, Ἰδοὺ, τίθημι ἐν Σιών λίθον ἀκρογωνιαίον, ἐκλεκτὸν, ἔντιμον καὶ ὁ πιστεύων ἐπ' αὐτῷ οὐ μὴ κατασχυνηθῇ. ^{7 f} Ὅτι τὴν οὖν ἡ τιμὴ τοῖς ^f Ps. 118. 22. Eph. 2. 20. d Isa. 61. 6. & 66. 21. Hos. 14. 2. Mal. 1. 11. Rom. 12. 1. Eph. 2. 21, 22. Phil. 4. 18. Heb. 3. 6. & 12. 28. & 13. 15. Rev. 1. 6. & 5. 10. e Isa. 28. 16. Rom. 9. 33. f Ps. 118. 22. Isa. 8. 14. Matt. 21. 42. Luke 2. 34. Acts 4. 11. Rom. 9. 33.

is implied a protest against adulterations of the pure nourishment of divine truth, by the admixture of human corruptions, and a precept of vigilance against them. Cp. 2 Cor. ii. 17.

3. εἶπερ ἐγεύσασθε] if indeed—as it is to be supposed that ye did, when ye drank in the milk of the divine Word; see this use of εἶπερ Rom. viii. 9. 2 Thess. i. 6—ye tasted that the Lord is gracious. Cp. Ps. xxxiv. 9, LXX.

Observe the aorist, ἐγεύσασθε, pointing to a particular time, viz. their baptism, when they tasted the goodness of the Lord. And on this spiritual application of the word γεύσασθαι, see note above on Heb. vi. 4. Therefore an ancient Bishop, commenting on St. Peter's words, thus addressed those who had been just baptized; "These words are specially applicable to you, who are yet fresh in the infancy of spiritual regeneration. For to you mainly the Divine Oracles speak, by the Apostle St. Peter, *Having laid aside all malice, and all guile, as new-born infants, earnestly desire ye the 'rationabile et innocens lac, ut in illo crescatis ad salutem,'* if ye tasted that the Lord is gracious (dulcis). And we are witnesses, that ye have tasted it. . . . Cherish, therefore, this spiritual infancy. The infancy of the strong is humility. The manhood of the weak is pride." S. Augustine, Sermon. 353.

Hence an argument may be derived for Infant Baptism. These converts of St. Peter are compared to ἀρτιγέννητα βρέφη, new-born babes. They had been conceived by nature of unclean seed (Job xiv. 4), in a sinful womb (Ps. li. 5), and there is not an infant of a day old, who needs not the baptismum lavacri. "Let them all be baptized, men and infants all." Bp. Andrewes, iii. p. 244.

4. λίθον ζῶντα] a stone that liveth, even by Death; and giveth life, making others also to be stones that live, by union with Him, and participation in His life, and death; for He says, "Because I live, ye shall live also" (John xiv. 19).

Thus, by a prophetic protest, Peter disclaims all notion of being what some would represent him to be, the Rock of the Church (see Matt. xvi. 18). He was indeed a true Petros, hewn out of the Divine Petra, and founded upon it (cp. 1 Cor. iii. 11). He was one of the Apostolic foundations of the heavenly city (Rev. xxi. 14), whose builder and maker is God (Heb. xi. 10).

Tertullian, speaking of the twelve wells at Elim, and the Twelve precious stones on the breast-plate of Aaron, and the Twelve stones taken from Jordan by Joshua, as typical of the Twelve Apostles, says that Christ gave to Simon the name Peter, as a derivative from His own name; because Christ is the Rock (Petra) and Stone; and is set for a stone of stumbling and rock of offence. Tertullian (c. Marcion. iv. 13). See further, v. 8, and Introduction to this Epistle, and above, notes on Matt. x. 1, 2, and on Matt. xvi. 18.

5. οἰκοδομεῖσθε] ye are being built. Observe the present indicative. The work of building is still going on, ye are not yet finally established, as are the stones in the heavenly Temple; Rev. xxi. 14. 19. Eph. ii. 22; and cp. the present participle σωζομένων, Acts ii. 47, and S. Ignatius, ad Ephes. c. 9, ὄντες λίθοι ναοῦ Πατρὸς ἡτοιμασμένοι εἰς οἰκοδομὴν Θεοῦ. The literal Jerusalem is tending towards destruction, but ye, who compose the true Sion, are being built up.

— οἶκος πνευματικὸς, ἱεράτευμα ἅγιον] a house that is spiritual, a priesthood that is holy. Observe the position of the substantive. In Christ ye are not only living stones, making a spiritual temple,—far more glorious than the material house at Jerusalem,—but ye are also a holy priesthood (see below, v. 9), ministering to God in the oblation of spiritual sacrifices, which are more precious than the carnal victims of the Levitical Temple at Jerusalem, and are acceptable to God in Christ.

These sacrifices are offered by you in prayer and praise, and in the oblation of the Holy Eucharist (see on Heb. xiii. 10. 15), and in the offering of your alms (Heb. xiii. 16), and in the presentation of yourselves, your souls and bodies, as a living sacrifice, holy, acceptable to God, which is your rational worship and service (Rom. xii. 1, 2).

Therefore be not dismayed because ye are cut off from the

service and worship of the literal Temple at Jerusalem, which will soon be destroyed: for ye yourselves are a spiritual Temple, ye are a holy Priesthood, ye offer sacrifice and oblations well-pleasing to God through Christ the One Mediator, and Everlasting High Priest. See Heb. xiii. 15. Col. iii. 17.

Some persons (the Schwenckfieldians and others of modern days) have perverted this text into an argument, that all Christians are Priests; and that there ought to be no Priests or distinct orders of Ministers in the Christian Church.

But to this allegation it may be replied, that the words "ye are a holy priesthood," were applied also to the Jews in the Old Testament (Exod. xix. 6), and yet, "Korah and his company" were punished by God for saying that "all the congregation is holy," and for invading the office of the Priesthood (Num. xvi. 3—40). And Uzziah the King was smitten for presuming to offer incense (2 Chron. xxvi. 18), and the Apostle St. Jude declares that the sin of the gainsaying of Korah may be committed in Christian times (Jude 11).

The special ministration of God's Word and Sacraments is committed to certain persons, who accordingly have, in Scripture, special designations, as being separated for the work whereunto they are called (Acts xiii. 2); and "Ecclesia non est," says S. Jerome (adv. Lucif.), "quæ non habet Sacerdotes" (cp. S. Ignatius, ad Trall. 3), χωρὶς τούτων Ἐκκλησία οὐ καλεῖται. Christ gave not all, but some to be Apostles, and some to be Prophets, for the work of the ministry (Eph. iv. 11, 12). "Are all Apostles? are all Prophets? are all Teachers?" (1 Cor. xii. 29.) No, every one in his own order. And St. James would not have commanded Presbyters to be sent for (James v. 14), and St. Peter would not have enjoined Presbyters to feed the flock committed to their care (1 Pet. v. 1), if every one was a Priest. And if all men are equally Priests, then all men are equally Kings. For the Scripture says that Christ hath made us Kings and Priests (Rev. i. 6), and according to this notion all civil order must be abolished.

But the true exposition is, that all Christians are to be distinguished from the world, as the Jews were distinguished from other nations, and as Priests are distinguished from those to whom they minister; and that all persons who are Christians, and distinguished as such from those who are not Christians, are to be a holy priesthood, and to consecrate their souls as altars to God, and to offer themselves as living sacrifices to Him. See Augustine, Tract. in Joan. 51.

6. περιέχει ἐν τῇ γραφῇ] it is extant in the Scripture: περιέχει is used in a middle sense, as many other verbs in the N. T. (see on Mark xiv. 72. Luke xv. 12), and so περιέχει in Josephus (Ant. xi. 4. 7), καθὼς ἐν αὐτῇ ἐπιστολῇ περιέχει. Winer, p. 225. The verb ὑπερέχω in ii. 13, is an example of similar usage, and παρεδίδου in ii. 23.

— λίθον] stone. See Ps. cxviii. 22, LXX. Matt. xxi. 42. Cp. Barnabas (Epist. 6, p. 10, Dressel), who appears to imitate these verses of this Epistle.

Here also is another parallel between this Epistle of St. Peter (ii. 4—8) and St. Peter's speeches as recorded by St. Luke in the Acts. See there, iv. 10—12.

7. ὑμῖν οὖν ἡ τιμή] to you therefore, who believe in Him, the worth of this stone is imparted. The sense is well expressed in the Syriac Version, "Vobis igitur datus est hic honor," and so the Vulg. and Arabic, "Vobis igitur est honor." That is to say, ye are not put to shame as unbelievers will be (v. 6), but are made sharers in the honour and value (τιμή) which belongs to this living stone, Christ, which is precious and honourable (ἐντιμος).

This honour and value are imparted to you on your profession of faith, in your baptism, by which ye are cemented in Him; and by your steadfast adherence and continuance in belief in Him, you, coming to Him who is the Living Stone, became also living stones. See Didymus here.

Ye are not dead stones, like the stones of the material Temple at Jerusalem, which will soon be cast down, and not "one stone be left upon another" (Matt. xxiv. 2. Luke xix. 44). And ye are not diseased stones, like the stones infected with leprosy,

πιστεύουσιν ἀπειθοῦσι δὲ, λίθον ὃν ἀπέδοκίμασαν οἱ οἰκοδομοῦντες, οὗτος ἐγενήθη εἰς κεφαλὴν γωνίας, καὶ λίθος προσκόμματος καὶ πέτρα σκανδάλου, ⁸ οἱ προσκόπτουσι τῷ λόγῳ ἀπειθοῦντες, εἰς ὃ καὶ ἐτέθησαν.

⁹ ἡ ὧς ὁ γένος ἐκλεκτὸν, βασιλείον ἱεράτευμα, ἔθνος ἅγιον, λαὸς εἰς περιποίησιν, ὅπως τὰς ἀρετὰς ἐξαγγείλητε τοῦ ἐκ σκότους ὑμᾶς καλέσαντος εἰς τὸ θαυμαστὸν αὐτοῦ φῶς. ¹⁰ οἱ ποτὲ οὐ λαὸς, νῦν δὲ λαὸς Θεοῦ· οἱ οὐκ ἡλεημένοι, νῦν δὲ ἐλεηθέντες.

¹¹ ἡ ἀγαπητοὶ, παρακαλῶ ὡς παροίκους καὶ παρεπιδήμους, ἀπέχεσθε τῶν σαρκικῶν ἐπιθυμιῶν, αἵτινες στρατεύονται κατὰ τῆς ψυχῆς, ¹² τὴν ἀναστροφὴν

which were to be taken out of the wall of the house (Lev. xiv. 40—44). Ye are *living, healthful* stones, joined together in unity, and compacted and *growing* in Christ; and being built up in Him ye have been made to be sharers and partakers of His glory, so that by your inedification on Him, who is set in *Sion* as the *Stone elect, precious*, ye become like the *jewels and precious* stones in the wall of the heavenly Jerusalem (Rev. xxi. 19). Thus His honour and *worth* (τιμὴ) is given to you, who believe; it is given to you by virtue of your faith in Him; for those who serve Him will His Father honour (John xii. 26).

As to the sense of the dative participle, cp. *Winer*, p. 485.

— ἀπειθοῦσι δέ] *But to those who are disobedient, the stone which the builders rejected, this became the head of the corner.* That is, it was exalted and glorified, notwithstanding their rejection of it; nay, more, even by means of their rejection of it, it became more glorious; for the glory of Christ is due to His suffering, and He cements His Church with His own blood, shed on the cross, and by His Death He lives, and overcame Death, and delivers us from Death, and gives eternal life to all who believe. See Phil. ii. 9. Heb. ii. 14.

— εἰς κεφαλὴν γωνίας] *to the head of the corner.* See Matt. xxi. 42. 44. Acts iv. 11, *St. Peter's* own speech: cp. Eph. ii. 20.

— καὶ λίθος προσκόμματος] *and a Stone of stumbling, and Rock of offence to them who stumble at the word*, i. e. at the preaching of the cross (ὁ λόγος τοῦ σταυροῦ), which is to the Jews a *stumbling-stone*. (1 Cor. i. 18.)

8. εἰς ὃ καὶ ἐτέθησαν] *to which they were also set*, or appointed. Christ is the Stone who is set for the fall, and for the rise, of many in Israel. (Luke ii. 34.) Christ is set for the rise of all who believe in Him; and He is set for the fall of all who disobey Him.

No man is set for disobedience; but all, who are disobedient, are set for a fall; and whosoever falleth on this stone shall be broken, and on whomsoever it shall fall, it shall grind him to powder. (Matt. xxi. 44.) Cp. Jude 4, and *Didymus* here, who says, that their *voluntary unbelief* was the cause of their appointed fall; and see the remarks above, *Introduction* to the Epistle to the Romans, p. 194; and *Dr. Hammond* here.

9. ὑμεῖς δέ] *but ye*, who are believers in Christ, are Israelites indeed, and enjoy all the titles and privileges which are promised by God in the Old Testament to His chosen People. (See above, i. 2.) The *literal Israel* who reject Christ have fulfilled the prophecies, which declared that the *elect corner stone* (Isa. xxviii. 16) would be also a *stone of stumbling*, and a *rock of offence* to some (Isa. viii. 14); and that the stone which the builders, or chief workmen in God's Temple in Jerusalem, refused, should become the *Head of the corner*. Do not therefore be staggered by that rejection; nor imagine that ye have forfeited any privileges by embracing the Gospel. Ye are now God's people indeed, a *chosen generation*, a royal priesthood, being members of the mystical body of Him Who is the everlasting Priest and King, and being partakers of the holy unction of His *Royalty* and *Priesthood*: ye are a *holy nation*, a *peculiar people*, *lads* εἰς περιποίησιν (from LXX, Exod. xix. 5. Deut. vii. 6. Cp. Isa. xliii. 21. Mal. iii. 17); i. e. literally, a *people for a purchasing*, or acquisition, *segullah*, *peculium*, and specially for the purchase effected by the precious blood of Christ.

The peculiar people, or people for the purchase, is the Universal Church which Almighty God has purchased to Himself by the precious blood of His dear Son. Cp. Acts xx. 28; and see above on Titus ii. 14, and Eph. i. 14.

— ἀρετὰς] *virtues*, God's attributes and works of love and mercy to you in Christ. Cp. 2 Pet. i. 3. St. Peter is adopting the language of Isaiah (xlii. 12), τὰς ἀρετὰς αὐτοῦ ἐν ταῖς νήσοις ἀπαγγελοῦσι.

10. οἱ ποτὲ οὐ λαὸς] *who were formerly not a people*; for ye are scattered in all lands, and have no king or country; but now ye are a people, for ye have a home in the Church, and a King in Christ. St. Peter is appropriating the words of Hosea (ii. 23), where God is pre-announcing His reconciliation with Israel; a circumstance which may serve as an evidence that these words do not show (as some have supposed) that this Epistle was written to Gentiles. See above, i. 14. 18.

— οἱ οὐκ ἡλεημένοι, νῦν δὲ ἐλεηθέντες] Observe the difference of tense in these two participles, the perfect and aorist; the former describing a state, the latter an act. Ye were formerly not ἡλεημένοι, not pitied by God; ye were continuing in that state, one of remoteness from God's mercy; but ἡλεήθητε, ye were made an object of mercy by His act of free grace to you in Christ. Cp. *Winer*, § 45, p. 307.

11. ἀγαπητοί] *Beloved, I beseech you as strangers and pilgrims.* He had been speaking of their new birth in Christ (i. 23), and had just been describing them as a people redeemed and purchased by God to Himself; redeemed from the captivity of Satan, and purchased by the blood of Christ to Himself, and to the hope of an eternal inheritance in the heavenly Canaan.

The mercies they now enjoy are the antitypes of those vouchsafed to their fathers, the Israelites of old, when they were redeemed out of the house of bondage in Egypt, and saved from the destroying angel by the blood of the Paschal Lamb; and became God's peculiar people, dedicated to Him, and were made inheritors of the land of Promise. Cp. 1 Cor. x. 1—6.

St. Peter had exhorted them to sing praises to God for their deliverance out of darkness into light (ii. 9), as Moses and Miriam sang praises to Him for the salvation of the people out of Egypt, after their passage through the Red Sea (Exod. xv. 1—22), the type of Baptism. And now by a happy connexion he exhorts them to march onward in their journey, as the Israelites did in their pilgrimage through the wilderness; and to abstain from *fleshly lusts*, which they had renounced in their baptism, and which war against the soul; and to be warned by the fate of their fathers, whose carcasses fell in the wilderness; and to remember the fires of Taberah, and the judgments of Kibroth-hattaavah, the graves of them that lusted. Num. xi. 4—34. Ps. cvi. 14. 1 Cor. x. 6.

This address to them as *strangers and pilgrims* was specially pertinent to the first readers of this Epistle (see above on i. 1 and 17); but is also applicable to all, who have no continuing city here, and seek for a home above. See Heb. xi. 13—15. Cp. Phil. iii. 20. 1 John ii. 15.

— ἀπέχεσθε] *abstain ye.* The imperative mood. *Elz.* has the infinitive here, ἀπέχεσθαι, and so B, K, and most editors. But the imperative, ἀπέχεσθε, is sanctioned by A, C, G, and many Cursives, and the Syriac, Coptic, and *Æthiopic* Versions; and *Didymus*, *Cyprian*, and *Leo*; and this direct address gives more life and force to the appeal. Compare the similar passage of St. Paul, Rom. xii. 2, and note there; and the like structure in this Epistle, v. 1, παρακαλῶ τοὺς ἐν ὑμῖν πρεσβυτέρους, ποιμάνετε.

— αἵτινες] *quippe quæ*—more expressive than *which*: it implies the reason why we are to abstain from them; viz. because they war against the soul. On this use of ὅστις, see Rom. i. 25. 32; ii. 15; vi. 2. 1 Tim. i. 4; vi. 9.

— στρατεύονται] *are warring*: he refers to James iv. 1, "lusts warring in your members."

12. τὴν ἀναστροφὴν] *having your conversation* (social intercourse and behaviour, Gal. i. 13. Eph. iv. 22. James iii. 13) *honest among the Gentiles*, among whom ye are dispersed and scattered abroad, as a holy leaven to leaven the world, in order that in the very respect in which (ἐν ᾧ, see iii. 16) they speak against you as evil-doers, by calling you disloyal to Rulers, but

ὑμῶν ἐν τοῖς ἔθνεσιν ἔχοντες καλὴν, ἵνα ἐν ᾧ καταλαλοῦσιν ὑμῶν ὡς κακοποιῶν,
ἐκ τῶν καλῶν ἔργων ἐποπτεύοντες δοξάσωσι τὸν Θεὸν ἐν ἡμέρᾳ ἐπισκοπῆς.

¹³ Ὑποτάγητε οὖν πάσῃ ἀνθρωπίνῃ κτίσει διὰ τὸν Κύριον, εἴτε βασιλεῖ, ὡς ^{m Rom. 13. 1.}
^{Tit. 3. 1.} ὑπερέχοντι, ¹⁴ εἴτε ἡγεμόσιν, ὡς δι' αὐτοῦ πεμπομένοις εἰς ἐκδίκησιν κακο- ^{n Rom. 13. 3, 4.}
ποιῶν, ἔπαινον δὲ ἀγαθοποιῶν ¹⁵ ὅτι οὕτως ἐστὶ τὸ θέλημα τοῦ Θεοῦ, ἀγαθο- ^{o Tit. 2. 8.}

finding you when tried most loyal to them (see v. 15), *they may, from your good works*, of which they are *spectators* (ἐποπτεύοντες, so B, C), *glorify God in the day of visitation*; that is, in the day when ye are visited by God, the Inspector and Judge of all, and when ye are tried by afflictions (see Luke xix. 44. Isa. x. 3. Jer. vi. 15; viii. 12), and are manifested in your true light by Him, in the eyes of the world, especially of your slanderers and detractors; then in "the time of visitation shall ye shine, for grace and mercy is to His saints and ἐπισκοπῇ to His elect." Wisd. iii. 7. 9; iv. 15. Ecclus. ii. 14; xviii. 20.

The *day of Visitation* may also be understood more generally as describing God's Judicial Visitations, such as the impending War in Judæa, and other Wars, Famines, Earthquakes, Plagues, and Pestilences. Matt. xxiv. 7.

In such trials as those, the faith and love of the Christians were displayed in striking contrast with the Jews and Heathens.

A memorable instance of this may be seen in the history of the Plague at Carthage, in S. Cyprian's Episcopate, as described by his Deacon, Pontius, p. 6. "The majority of our brethren," says Pontius, "took care of every one but themselves; by nursing the sick, and watching over them in Christ, they caught the disorder which they healed in others, and breathed their last with joy; some bare in their arms and bosoms the bodies of dead saints; and, having closed the eyes of the dying, and bathed their corpses, and performed the last obsequies, received the same treatment at the hands of their brethren. But," he adds, "the very reverse of this was done by the Gentiles: those who were sinking into sickness, they drove from them; they fled from their dearest friends; they threw them expiring into the streets, and turned from their unburied corpses with looks of execration." See also S. Cyprian's words in his treatise published on that occasion, De Mortalitate, sive Peste, capp. 9, 10, "Mortalitas ista, ut Judæis et Gentilibus et Christi hostibus pestis est, ita Dei servis salutaris excessus est."

The words ἐποπτής and ἐποπτεύειν are applied to spectators of actors in a drama, or of wrestlers in athletic games, or who are admitted to view some sacred Mysteries. See above on 1 Cor. ii. 6, and Wetstein, p. 687.

The Christians in their sufferings were a *spectacle* (θέατρον) to the world (1 Cor. iv. 9), and the heroism and patience with which they endured them, excited the admiration and elicited the applause of the Heathen; and this applause redounded to the glory of God, Who gave them grace to suffer as they did. Thus the Martyrdoms of Christians were instrumental in the conversion of Heathens, and in the Propagation of the Faith.

This passage is quoted by S. Polycarp, ad Phil. c. 10, "omnes vobis invicem subjecti estote (1 Pet. v. 5), conversationem vestram irreprehensibilem habentes in gentibus, ut ex bonis operibus vestris et vos laudem accipiat, et Dominus in vobis non blasphemetur."

¹³ ὑποτάγητε οὖν] *be ye subject therefore*. A practical application of the general precept just enunciated.

— ὑποτάγητε πάσῃ ἀνθρωπίνῃ κτίσει] *be ye subject, submit yourselves, to every power, to every ordinance appointed by man*.

The ruling Power, to which they are to submit, is called here κτίσις ἀνθρωπίνη, an ordinance of man; because the choice of the particular form of Government in a State, whether it is to be Monarchical or Republican, is commonly determined by men; and the persons who are appointed to govern,—whether by hereditary succession, or election,—are often designated by men.

But the Authority (ἐξουσία) itself, which Rulers have and exercise, when they have once been appointed by men, is not derived from man, but it is from God alone. (See Rom. xiii. 1—3.)

This important proposition, which is plainly set forth in Holy Scripture, by St. Peter here, and by St. Paul (Rom. xiii. 1—4), and which declares the true grounds of all allegiance and obedience to Rulers and all in authority, may be thus illustrated;

Water may be made to assume different forms, in fountains and cascades, and be made to flow in different channels or aqueducts, by the hand of man; but the Element itself, which flows in them, is from God. So again, Marble may be hewn by man's hand into different shapes; under the sculptor's chisel it may become a statue, a frieze, or a sarcophagus; but the Marble itself is from the quarry, it is from the creative hand of God.

So it is with *Civil Power*. The *Form* which Power may assume, and the *Person* who may be appointed to exercise it, may be κτίσις ἀνθρώπινη, ordinances of man: but the *Authority* itself (ἐξουσία) is from God.

Consequently, as St. Peter teaches, we are bound to submit to every ordinance of man, "for the Lord's sake," Whose ministers and vicegerents our Rulers are; and as St. Paul declares, "he that resisteth the Authority, resisteth the ordinance of God, and they that resist, shall receive to themselves damnation." See notes above on Rom. xiii. 1—3.

"All the Kingdoms and Governments of the whole earth are Thy ordinance, O Lord (Rom. xiii. 2), albeit an institution of man (1 Pet. ii. 13)," says Bp. Andrewes (Private Devotions, p. 48, ed. 1830). Cp. Bp. Sanderson, Præl. vii. 15. Abp. Bramhall and Bp. Horsley in Christian Institutes, iii. 39. Abp. Leighton here, and Hooker (VIII. ii. 6), who says, "Unto kings by human right, honour by very divine right is due."

Obedience therefore is to be paid to Authority in all commands that are not contrary to divine law. As to our duty in those cases where the human Governor commands any thing which is forbidden by God, or forbids any thing which God commands, St. Peter's own conduct may be our guide. See above, Acts iv. 19, 20; v. 29.

There is a particular emphasis in the word πάσῃ here, every ordinance of man; because some Jewish Christians, and especially the Gnostics, held and taught that they were exempt from submission to human rule, particularly to heathen rule. See on 1 Tim. ii. 1—3. Titus i. 10; iii. 1, and below, ii. 16, and on 2 Pet. ii. 10, and Jude 16, for corrections of this notion.

St. Paul uses the same word, in order to teach that no one is exempt from the duty of subjection to Rulers. "Let every soul" (πᾶσα ψυχή), he says, "be subject to the higher powers." (Rom. xiii. 1.)

St. Peter himself here teaches the duty of submission to lawful authority. But they who call themselves "successors of St. Peter," have set themselves above, and in opposition to, lawful authority, and have often encouraged others to rebel against it. See above, on 2 Thess. ii. 4, and below, on Rev. xiii. 15, 16; xvii. 3. How much misery would the World have been spared, if they who profess to revere the name of St. Peter, and to be successors of St. Peter, had listened to the precepts of St. Peter, and had followed the example of St. Peter!

— βασιλεῖ] the King—the Roman Cæsar. So βασιλεὺς is used by Josephus, B. J. v. 13. 6. Cp. v. 17. The regions to which this Epistle was sent were provinces of Rome.

— ὑπερέχοντι] as being over you. See on Rom. xiii. 1.

¹⁴ ἡγεμόσιν] governors. In our Lord's Ministry and Country Cæsar was βασιλεὺς (John xix. 15), but Pilate was ἡγεμὼν (Matt. xxvii. 2). He submitted to both. (Matt. xxii. 17. John xix. 11.)

¹⁵ ὅτι οὕτως] for so is the will of God, that by well-doing we may stop the mouth (φιοῦν, to muzzle, Matt. xxii. 12. 34. Mark i. 25; iv. 39. 1 Tim. v. 18) of the ignorance of foolish men. We Christians may be maligned by the heathen, as if we were ill affected to Cæsar; but when we are put to the test, it will be found, that we Christians are loyal subjects, and in fact almost the only loyal subjects of Cæsar; because it is our religion alone which teaches men to regard Cæsar as the Minister of God. Cp. Œcumen. here, and see this doctrine eloquently preached by Tertullian in his Apology, § 28—37.

This admonition of St. Peter to the Jewish Christians was very seasonable at this time, when the Jews at Jerusalem, and in various parts of Europe and Asia, were preparing to rise in that Rebellion against Rome which ended in the destruction of Jerusalem by the Romans, about five years after this Epistle was written; and which produced its fatal results in the slaughter of many thousands of Jews collected in Jerusalem from all parts, and in the unutterable woe and final dispersion of their nation.

The Christians were rescued from those calamities by the prophecies and exhortations of Christ and His Apostles, particularly St. Peter and St. Paul.

Christ was crucified by the power of Rome, as He had foretold that He would be (Matt. xx. 19). St. Peter and St. Paul, as they also foreknew, were martyred by Rome; but yet they preached submission to Rome.

p John 8. 22.
Rom. 6. 18.
1 Cor. 7. 22.
Gal. 5. 1, 13.
2 Pet. 2. 19.
q Matt. 22. 21.
Rom. 12. 10.
Eph. 4. 3.
Phil. 2. 3.
Heb. 13. 1.
ch. 1. 22. & 5. 5.
2 Pet. 1. 7.
r Eph. 6. 5.
Col. 3. 22. 1 Tim. 6. 1. Tit. 2. 9.

ποιούντας φιμοῦν τὴν τῶν ἀφρόνων ἀνθρώπων ἀγνωσίαν¹⁶ ὡς ἐλεύθεροι, καὶ μὴ ὡς ἐπικάλυμμα ἔχοντες τῆς κακίας τὴν ἐλευθερίαν, ἀλλ' ὡς δούλοι Θεοῦ.

¹⁷ Πάντας τιμῆσατε, τὴν ἀδελφότητα ἀγαπάτε, τὸν Θεὸν φοβεῖσθε, τὸν βασιλέα τιμᾶτε.

¹⁸ Οἱ οἰκέται, ὑποτασσόμενοι ἐν παντὶ φόβῳ τοῖς δεσπόταις, οὐ μόνον τοῖς ἀγαθοῖς καὶ ἐπιεικέσιν, ἀλλὰ καὶ τοῖς σκολιοῖς. ¹⁹ Τοῦτο γὰρ χάρις, εἰ διὰ

s Matt. 5. 10. 2 Cor. 7. 10.

16. ὡς ἐλεύθεροι] *as free*, and yet,—although free by reason of that liberty, with which Christ has made you free (Gal. v. 1),—*not using your liberty as a cloke* (or specious pretext) *for maliciousness*.

He had exhorted them to *be subject to every human ordinance for the Lord's sake*; and he now obviates the objection of those Christians who—following the example of the Pharisees, and others among the Jews, who pleaded that they were *God's peculiar people* (see v. 9), and that, as children of Abraham, and *subjects of Jehovah*, they ought *not* to be in bondage to any man (John viii. 33), and especially ought not to submit to any *heathen rule*, and could not in conscience pay *tribute to Cæsar* (see Matt. xxii. 17—21)—alleged, that since they had been *made free by Christ*, they could not obey any other rule, especially a heathen power, without treachery to Him.

It is well observed by *Bp. Sanderson*, that *St. Paul*, the Apostle of the *Gentiles*, usually treats the question of Christian Liberty in reference to the duty of using it in such a manner as not to *give offence to weak brethren*; and that *St. Peter*, the Apostle of the *Circumcision*, generally handles it in such a manner as to guard it against being abused into an occasion of *insubordination to Authority*. The one guards against the danger of scandal; the other inculcates the duty of obedience.

The reason of this was, that *St. Peter* had to do with Jews "who could not brook subjection and were of all nations under heaven the most impatient of a foreign yoke." "*Seditiosissima gens*." *Scaliger*. *Bp. Sanderson*, iii. 273. *St. Paul* dealt with mixed communities of Jews and Gentiles, and had a delicate and difficult part to perform, in preventing the one from giving offence to the other, and from rashly judging the other; and in endeavouring to unite them all by the bonds of Love.

St. Peter asserts their *freedom*, and exhorts them to live *as free*; but he also warns them against making their freedom a mask for maliciousness, and against falling into the sins of licentiousness and rebellion, under the sacred guise of liberty, and religion; and against forfeiting their freedom, by making themselves slaves of evil passions.

This twofold duty has been well inculcated in a sermon on this text by *Bp. Sanderson*. To do God and ourselves right it is necessary that we should with our utmost strength *maintain* the doctrine and power of that Liberty wherewith Christ hath endowed His Church, without either usurping the mastery over others, or subjecting ourselves to their servitude, so as to surrender either our judgments or Consciences to be wholly disposed according to the opinions or wills of men, though of never so excellent piety or parts.

But yet, lest while we shun one extreme, we fall into another, as we are very apt to do; and lest, while we seek to preserve our Liberty, we lose it; the Apostle, therefore, in the next clause, putteth in a caveat for that also, *not using your liberty as a cloke of maliciousness*. We must so maintain our Liberty that we abuse it not, as we shall, if, under the pretence of Christian Liberty, we either adventure the doing of some unlawful thing, or omit the performance of any requisite duty. *Bp. Sanderson*, v. p. 289. On the grounds and nature of Christian Liberty, and on the rules for its right use, see also note above, on 1 Cor. iii. 4. 22, 23; vi. 12; ix. 19, and Gal. v. 1 and 13.

As free, and not using your liberty as a cloke of maliciousness, but as servants of God.

It is observable, that *St. Peter* imitates and adopts *here St. Paul's* language to the *Galatians* (v. 13).

(1) *St. Peter's* words "*as free*," correspond to *St. Paul's* words, "*brethren, ye are called to liberty*."

(2) *St. Peter's* words, "*and not using your liberty as a cloke of maliciousness*," correspond to *St. Paul's* words, "*only use not your liberty as an occasion to the flesh*."

(3) *St. Peter's* words, "*but as servants of God*," correspond to *St. Paul's*, "*by love serve one another*."

Thus these two Apostles unite in teaching,

- (1) The duty of *maintaining Christian Liberty*.
- (2) The need of caution against *its abuse*.

(3) The *Law* by which it is to be *regulated*, and the manner in which it is to be *used*.

Observe also, that *St. Peter*, the *Apostle of the Circumcision*, in this Epistle, which is addressed to *Jewish Christians of Galatia*, (i. 1), refers here to that Epistle of *St. Paul*—the *Apostle of the Gentiles*,—the Epistle to the *Galatians* (v. 13), in which *St. Paul* had specially inculcated the duty of maintaining Christian Liberty against the usurpations of Judaizing teachers, who endeavoured to bring them into bondage (Gal. i. 7; v. 1), and in which *St. Paul* had recorded his own public opposition to *St. Peter* at Antioch, when, in a moment of weakness, he connived at those Judaizing teachers who would have imposed the yoke of the *Levitical Law* on the *Gentile Christians* (Gal. ii. 11—21).

Thus *St. Peter* now declares his entire concurrence with *St. Paul* on that matter which had then produced a difference between them; and in which his conduct had exposed him to the rebuke of his brother Apostle. And by the adoption of the language of the Epistle of *St. Paul* to the *Galatians*, and by incorporating it in his own Epistle to the *Jewish Christians of Galatia*, he presents a noble example of recovery from error, and of generosity and love of truth. Compare note below, 2 Pet. iii. 15, 16, and *Introduction* to this Epistle, pp. 42, 43.

17. πάντας—τιμᾶτε] *Honour all men, Love the brotherhood*. On this text see *Bp. Sanderson's* Sermon, i. pp. 54—81.

—τὴν ἀδελφότητα] *the brotherhood* (see v. 9). So *Clemens R. i. 2*, ἀγὼν ἦν ὑμῖν ὑπὲρ πάσης τῆς ἀδελφότητος εἰς τὸ σώζεσθαι, and so *S. Polycarp* (c. 10), in the old Latin Version, "*fraternitatis amatores*."

Love the brotherhood; sympathizing with them in grief, succouring them in trouble, rejoicing in their graces, as if they were your own. There is the same blood in your veins; the same Head of the whole brotherhood; the same Spirit knitting all together in one. Cp. *Abp. Leighton* on i. 22.

—τὸν βασιλέα τιμᾶτε] *Honour the King*, even Nero. See above, v. 13.

The union of these two Apostolic precepts arranged in this order, "*Fear God, Honour the King*," shows that Loyalty is to be grounded on Piety; that in order to be good Citizens men must begin with being good Christians; that honour to Kings is to be based on the fear of God, by Whom Kings rule, and Whose ministers they are. *St. Peter* follows *Solomon* (Prov. xxiv. 21), φοβοῦ τὸν Θεόν, υἱέ, καὶ βασιλέα.

18. οἱ οἰκέται] *ye domestics*,—a milder word than *slaves*. This is the only place in the Apostolic Epistles where the word *οἰκέτης* occurs in this sense.

This fact may thus be accounted for;

St. Peter is writing specially to *Jewish Christians*, who would not regard *their domestics*, especially those of their own nation, in the same light as the *Heathen Masters* did theirs, namely, as slaves. See Lev. xxv. 39—44, where the Jews are forbidden to reduce any poor man of their own nation to the state of a *bondsman*, and they might not purchase as *bondsmen* any of their own nation, but of the *heathen* only.

St. Paul, the Apostle of the *Gentiles*, and writing specially to them, always uses the word δούλος (*bondsman, slave*) in his precepts concerning household service (1 Cor. vii. 21. Eph. vi. 5—8. Col. iii. 11. 22; iv. 1. 12. 1 Tim. vi. 1. Tit. ii. 9).

Many Jewish Rabbis taught, that a Jew might not serve a Heathen (see *Lightfoot* on 1 Cor. vii. 23. Cp. John viii. 33). Therefore this precept of *St. Peter*, the Apostle of the Circumcision, exhorting servants to be *subject* to their Masters, was a necessary caution to Jewish Christians; and it proves his courage and honesty; he would not ingratiate himself with them by flattery, and by concessions to their national prejudices. Cp. on Tit. i. 10—12.

19. τοῦτο γὰρ χάρις] *for this is acceptable*. Properly, this is an act of *grace*, *freely* and *cheerfully* laid up on your part, as a deposit with God, and favourably accepted by Him, and requited to you with praise and benefit. See v. 20, where κλέος explains it; and cp. 1 Tim. ii. 3. Col. iii. 20. Hence *Æcumen.* renders it by ἀποδοχή, and χάρις in Luke vi. 32 is represented in the parallel place of *St. Matt.* v. 46 by μισθός.

συνείδησιν Θεοῦ ὑποφέρει τις λύπας πάσχω· ²⁰ Ποῖον γὰρ κλέος, εἰ
 ἁμαρτάνοντες καὶ κολαφιζόμενοι ὑπομενεῖτε; ἀλλ' εἰ ἀγαθοποιούντες καὶ πάσ-
 χοντες ὑπομενεῖτε, τοῦτο χάρις παρὰ Θεοῦ. ²¹ Εἰς τοῦτο γὰρ ἐκλήθητε, ὅτι καὶ
 Χριστὸς ἔπαθεν ὑπὲρ ἡμῶν, ὑμῖν ὑπολιμπάνων ὑπογραμμὸν ἵνα ἐπακολουθήσητε
 τοῖς ἰχνεσιν αὐτοῦ, ²² ὃς ἁμαρτίαν οὐκ ἐποίησεν, οὐδὲ εὐρέθη δόλος
 ἐν τῷ στόματι αὐτοῦ, ²³ ὃς λοιδορούμενος οὐκ ἀντελοιδόρει, πάσχω· οὐκ
 ἠπείλει, παρεδίδου δὲ τῷ κρίνοντι δικαίως. ²⁴ ὃς τὰς ἁμαρτίας ἡμῶν αὐτὸς
 ἀνήνεγκεν ἐν τῷ σώματι αὐτοῦ ἐπὶ τὸ ξύλον, ἵνα ταῖς ἁμαρτίαις ἀπογενόμενοι τῇ
 δικαιοσύνῃ ζήσωμεν· οὗ τῷ μῶλωπι αὐτοῦ ἰάθητε. ²⁵ Ἦτε γὰρ ὡς

z Isa. 53. 6. Ezek. 34. 6, 23. & 37. 24. Luke 15. 4. John 10. 11. Heb. 13. 20.

20. ποῖον γὰρ χάρις] *for what glory is it?* A passage quoted by *Tertullian*, *Scorpiac.* c. 12, where he calls this an Epistle of St. Peter *ad Ponticos*. See above, i. 1.

— κολαφιζόμενοι] *buffeted*,—as Christ was (see Matt. xxvi. 67): “*alaræ, poena servorum, eaque subita*” (*Bengel*); inflicted on slaves by their masters in outbreaks of passion; cp. note below, v. 24.

— τοῦτο] A, B add γὰρ, and some Cursives, and so *Lach.*, *Tisch.*, *Alford*.

21. ἔπαθεν ὑπὲρ ἡμῶν] *He suffered for us*; for our benefit, and in our behalf. See Rom. v. 7, 8. 1 Cor. i. 13. Matt. xx. 28, and the words of Isaiah, liii. 4, 5. 12, to which St. Peter is referring.

— ἡμῖν ὑπολιμπάνων ὑπογραμμὸν] *leaving to us* (when He went away to heaven) a copy, for us to imitate; properly an exemplar or model, τύπος (2 Thess. iii. 9), to be followed in writing or painting (see *Welstein*, p. 688), that we should follow His steps.

This saying has a peculiar force in the mouth of this blessed Apostle, who had been an eye-witness of our Lord's patient bearing, and meek demeanour, when He was arrested in the Garden of Gethsemane; and when He stood before Caiaphas and the Sanhedrim, on the morning before the crucifixion; and to whom our Lord, after His Resurrection, in reply to his question, “What shall this man do?” (viz. St. John,) said, “Follow thou Me” (John xxi. 22), and who did follow Him even to the cross as a Martyr; and having received the charge, “Feed My sheep” (John xxi. 15—18), laid down his life for them, as Christ, the good Shepherd, had laid down His life for the sheep. Cp. 1 John iii. 16, and *Augustine* in Joan. Tract. 84.

This passage is also imitated by *S. Polycarp*, c. 8, Χριστὸς Ἰησοῦς ἀνήνεγκεν ἡμῶν τὰς ἁμαρτίας τῷ ἰδίῳ σώματι ἐπὶ τὸ ξύλον, ὃς ἁμαρτίαν οὐκ ἐποίησεν, οὐδὲ εὐρέθη δόλος ἐν τῷ στόματι αὐτοῦ· μιμηταὶ οὖν γενώμεθα τῆς ὑπομονῆς αὐτοῦ. . . . τοῦτον ἡμῖν τὸν ὑπογραμμὸν ἔθηκε δι' ἑαυτοῦ.

Christ is our Example of patience; as *Tertullian* says, He Who is God stooped to be born in the womb of His Mother, and waited patiently, and grew up; and when grown up was not impatient to be recognized as God. He was baptized by His servant; and repelled the Tempter only by words. When he became a Teacher, He did not strive nor cry, nor did any one hear His voice in the streets; He did not break the bruised reed nor quench the smoking flax. He scorned no man's company; He shunned no man's table. He conversed with publicans and sinners. He poured out water and washed His disciples' feet. He would not injure the Samaritan village which did not receive Him, when His Disciples desired to call fire from heaven to consume it. He cured the unthankful; He withdrew from those who plotted against Him. He had the Traitor constantly in His company and did not expose him. And when He is betrayed, and is brought to execution, He is like a sheep which before his shearers is dumb, and a lamb that doth not open its mouth. He Who was Lord of Angelic Legions did not approve the sword of Peter drawn in His defence. He is spit upon, scourged, mocked. Such long-suffering as His, is an example to all men, but is found in God alone. *Tertullian*, de Patientiâ, c. 3. Cp. *Augustine*, Sermon. 114 and 284.

22. ὃς ἁμαρτίαν—αὐτοῦ] *Who did not commit sin in act; no, nor even (οὐδὲ) was any guile found in His mouth.* He was so far from doing any evil, that He did not even speak any guile.

23. ὃς λοιδορούμενος οὐκ ἀντελοιδόρει] *Who being reviled, was not reviling again; when suffering, He was not threatening.* Observe the imperfect tenses here, ἀντελοιδόρει, ἠπείλει, παρεδίδου, was committing, i. e. Himself and His cause (see v. 6). *Clem. Alex.* here, and *Winer*, § 64, p. 521.

24. ὃς τὰς ἁμαρτίας] *Who His own self carried up our sins in His own body on to the tree.* The preceding imperfect tenses (see the last note) give more significance to the subsequent transition to the aorist in ἀνήνεγκεν, He Himself willingly and

alone (αὐτὸς) carried up our sins by one act alone, done once for all; namely, by His death on the cross. He was Himself without sin; but He bare in Himself the sins of those for whom He offered Himself as a sacrifice. *Severus* (in *Catenâ*, p. 58).

He Who took the Nature of us all, and incorporates us all in Himself, carried up, our sins, collected together, as a weight laid upon Him, in His own body, as our proxy, substitute, and vicarious sacrifice, on to the tree on which He offered Himself as an expiatory and propitiatory sacrifice to God (Heb. vii. 27); and on which He became a curse for us, for it is written, “Cursed is every one that hangeth on a tree.” (Gal. iii. 13.) Thus He took away the curse in which we were involved by the sin of our first parents eating the fruit of the forbidden tree; and by His perfect obedience took away the curse of the Law for disobedience; for it is written, “Cursed is every one that continueth not in all that is written in the Law to do it.” (Gal. iii. 10.)

The *Vulgate* has “pertulit” here, and the *Syriac* still more fully, “bajulavit omnia peccata nostra, eaque sustulit in corpore suo ad crucem.”

The Socinian exposition of this passage is, that Christ displayed a noble example of patience in our nature, and took away our sins by instructing us in patience.

It is true that the Apostle is here representing Christ as our pattern of patience. But he compares Him also to sacrificial victims, the offerings of the Law, who are described in Scripture as bearing the sins of those who offer them, see Lev. x. 17; and whose blood was to be carried into the holy place, because the blood is the life of man. (Lev. xvii. 11—14.)

St. Peter uses the word ἀνήνεγκεν to describe the act of carrying the sins up, i. e. to the cross; as victims (to whom the sins were transferred and laid as a burden upon them, Lev. i. 4; iii. 2; iv. 15) were carried up and offered on an altar. See below on iii. 18; and compare Isa. liii. 12. Heb. ix. 28, ὁ Χριστὸς ἅπαξ προσερχθεὶς εἰς τὸ πολλῶν ἀνενεγκεῖν ἁμαρτίας.

Christ is here propounded as an example of patience in His act of bearing and carrying, not in His act of taking away, as some Socinians misinterpret the word ἀναφέρειν.

Christ's sufferings were exemplary; but they were also something much more than exemplary, they were also propitiatory. This Scripture is happily connected, as an Epistle, with the Collect for the Second Sunday after Easter, where the doctrine of that double character of Christ's sufferings is taught.

St. Peter goes on to declare that the effect of Christ's patience in taking up our sins in His own body on the cross was to liberate us from the penalty of sin; for St. Peter adds, “by whose stripes ye were healed.” See *Irenæus*, iii. 16. 9. *Origen* (in Levit. 3), “peccata nostra portavit; vitulum immaculatum, hoc est, carnem incontaminatam obtulit Deo;” so *Cyprian*, Ep. 8, and Ep. 63, “Christus peccata nostra portabat;” and other citations from ancient Christian Fathers on this subject at the end of the treatise of *Grotius*, de Satisf. Christi, pp. 229—267, and his own remarks, pp. 14—16, ed. 1675; and *Bp. Pearson* on the Creed, Art. ii. p. 140, and the note below on 1 John ii. 2; iv. 10.

On the genitives οὗ—αὐτοῦ, see Matt. iii. 12; the αὐτοῦ adds to the emphasis. Cp. *Winer*, p. 134. He, and He alone, is our Healer.

On the word μῶλωπι, *vibex*, *livor*, *wound* or *weal*; especially made by scourging, see *Welstein*, p. 689.

Here is an Apostolic paradox: ye were healed by His wounds. (*Bengel*.)

The μῶλωπι is the wound produced by the chastisement of slaves, and the ξύλον is the instrument of the death of slaves. Mark the Humility of Him, Who, being Lord of all, stooped to be the servant of all, and to suffer scourging and the cross as a slave; and was especially exemplary to that class which St. Peter is here addressing. Cp. κολαφιζόμενοι, v. 20.

— ἵνα—ζήσωμεν] Christ died for our sins, not that we might

πρόβατα πλανώμενα· ἀλλ' ἐπεστράφητε νῦν ἐπὶ τὸν ποιμένα καὶ ἐπίσκοπον τῶν ψυχῶν ὑμῶν.

a Gen. 3. 16.
1 Cor. 7. 16.
& 14. 34.
Eph. 5. 22.
Col. 3. 18.
Tit. 2. 5.
b Isa. 3. 18.
1 Tim. 2. 9.
Tit. 2. 3.
c Ps. 45. 14.
Rom. 2. 29.
& 7. 22.
2 Cor. 4. 16.

d Gen. 18. 12.

e 1 Cor. 7. 3.
& 12. 23.
Eph. 5. 25, &c.
Col. 3. 19.

III. ¹ Ὅμοίως αἱ γυναῖκες, ὑποτασσομεναι τοῖς ἰδίοις ἀνδράσιν, ἵνα καὶ εἴ
τινες ἀπειθοῦσι τῷ λόγῳ, διὰ τῆς τῶν γυναικῶν ἀναστροφῆς, ἄνευ λόγου, κερ-
δηθήσονται, ² ἐποπτεύσαντες τὴν ἐν φόβῳ ἀγνὴν ἀναστροφήν ὑμῶν. ³ Ὡς
ἔστω οὐχ ὁ ἔξωθεν ἐμπλοκῆς τριχῶν καὶ περιθέσεως χρυσίων ἢ ἐνδύσεως
ἱματίων κόσμος, ⁴ ἀλλ' ὁ κρυπτὸς τῆς καρδίας ἄνθρωπος, ἐν τῷ ἀφθάρτῳ τοῦ
πραέος καὶ ἡσυχίου πνεύματος· ὃ ἐστὶν ἐνώπιον τοῦ Θεοῦ πολυτελής. ⁵ Οὕτω
γὰρ ποτὲ καὶ αἱ ἁγίαι γυναῖκες, αἱ ἐλπίζουσαι εἰς Θεὸν, ἐκόσμου ἐαυτὰς, ὑπο-
τασσομεναι τοῖς ἰδίοις ἀνδράσιν· ⁶ ὡς Σάρρα ὑπήκουσε τῷ Ἀβραὰμ κύριον
αὐτὸν καλοῦσα· ἧς ἐγενήθητε τέκνα ἀγαθοποιοῦσαι, καὶ μὴ φοβούμεναι μη-
δεμίαν πτόησιν.

⁷ Οἱ ἄνδρες ὁμοίως, συνοικοῦντες κατὰ γνώσιν ὡς ἀσθενεστέρῳ σκεύει τῷ

continue in them, but in order that we might die to them, and live to God. Cp. Rom. vi. 1—12.

Thus St. Peter obviates all *Antinomian* perversions of the *Doctrine of the Atonement*.

25. ἦτε γὰρ ὡς πρόβατα] *for, ye were as sheep going astray, but have now returned to the Shepherd and Bishop of your souls*: a reference, it would seem (as *Bede* remarks), to our Lord's parable of the *Lost Sheep*. St. Peter had been speaking of Christ, meek and patient as a sheep (vv. 22—24), and tender-hearted and vigilant as a Shepherd, laying down His life for the Sheep; bearing *our sins in His own body on to the tree*, as the good Shepherd in the Parable “came to seek and save the sheep that was lost,” and “when he had found it, *laid it upon his own shoulders*, rejoicing, and said, Rejoice with me, for I have found My sheep that was lost.” Luke xv. 5.

The *Lost Sheep* of the house of Israel were now scattered in all countries of the world; but Christ the Good Shepherd, stretching forth His hands upon the cross, and laying down His life for them, had borne them all on His shoulders, and brought them all home to the one fold.

A, B have πλανώμενοι, and so *Lach.*, *Tisch.*, *Alf.* *Elz.* πλανώμενα (agreeing with πρόβατα, *sheep*), with C, G, K, and most *Cursives*, and *Theoph.*, *Æcumen.* And this reading seems to be confirmed by Ps. cxix. 176. Isa. liii. 6, where the sinners are compared to *sheep* that are *lost*, as in our Lord's Parable (Luke xv. 6); and compare Matt. xviii. 12. The reading therefore of *Elz.*—the *textus receptus*—seems preferable.

CH. III. 1. ὁμοίως, αἱ γυναῖκες] *In like manner, ye wives, submitting yourselves to your own husbands, for the Lord's sake* (ii. 13). He had been exhorting subjects to submit to their Rulers (ii. 14), and servants to their Masters (ii. 18), *so do ye*; for so, by your meek and gracious demeanour, ye may win your own Husbands, if heathen, to the faith in Christ, and save their souls. See 1 Cor. vii. 16.

3. ὥν ἔστω] *of whom, let not that outward adornment of braiding of hair, and of putting round (the head, neck, wrists, &c.) of golden ornaments, be the adornment, on which ye pride yourselves.* Cp. *Clemens Alexandr.* (Præd. iii. 4), who says, the women that pride themselves in *wearing gold, and plaiting their hair*, have not the image of God in the *inner man* . . . but let it be the *hidden man of the heart*.

St. Peter does not here prohibit a decorous apparel, suitable to the station of the wearer, but he exhorts women to take heed, *first*, to the *dress of the heart*, as being ever in the eye of God, who readeth the heart. Then they will never err as to the dress of the body. See *Augustine*, Epist. 73.

—ἐμπλοκῆς τριχῶν] *of the weaving of hair in knots, &c., κόρυμβοι or σκόρπιοι*, by means of the *pecten*, *calamistrum*, and *acus crinalis*, used for such purposes. Cp. 1 Tim. ii. 9, ἐν πλέγμασιν, joined with ἡ χρυσῶ, as here. *Juvenal*, vi. 491, “*Altior hic quarè cincinnus? taurea punit Continuo flexi crimen facinusque capilli . . . pectitque comas, et volvit in orbem; Tot premit ordinibus, tot adhuc compagibus altum Ædificat caput;*” and see *Welstein*, p. 324.

6. Σάρρα] *Sarah*, “who by *faith* received strength to conceive seed, and was delivered of a child, when she was past age, because she judged Him faithful Who had promised.” Heb. xi. 11. Sarah is also described as speaking by divine inspiration, when her son Isaac was persecuted by Ishmael. See on Gal. iv. 28, 29. And the faithful seed are exhorted to look to Abraham and Sarah that bare them (Isa. li. 2); and her name was changed from Sarai

to Sarah, because God made her a *Princess*, and a Mother of Nations (Gen. xvii. 15); and God said to Abraham, “Hearken unto Sarah's voice; for in Isaac, her son, shall thy seed be called.” (Gen. xxi. 12.)

—κύριον αὐτὸν καλοῦσα] *calling him Lord*, as the Rabbis observe on Gen. xvii. 12. *Welstein*; although she was herself Sarah,—a princess.

—ἧς ἐγενήθητε τέκνα] *whose (Sarah's) children ye became (ἐγενήθητε) by doing well, and not being afraid with any trepidation; πτόησιν, terror, panic, alarm*, shown by crouching like a hare, and attempting to fly (πτοέω, πτήσσω, πτώξ). The word is used in this sense by *Philo*, p. 516 (ἡ ἐκπληξίς πτόησιν ἐμποιεῖ).

On the cognate accusative after φοβούμεναι, see the examples in *Estius* here, and *Winer*, § 32, p. 201. Cp. Mark iv. 41. Luke ii. 9. 1 Tim. vi. 12. 2 Tim. iv. 7. Rev. xvii. 6, and below, iv. 14.

Or the words may be translated, “not being affrighted by any terror,” i. e. by any *object* of terror from without, as in Prov. iii. 25, οὐ φοβηθήσῃ πτόησιν ἐπελθοῦσαν.

This admonition of St. Peter was very necessary for Christian women, specially those who were married, who were subject to vexations and persecutions from Heathens, and even from their own husbands. See *Tertullian*, ad Uxor. ii. 4, 5. *Prof. Blunt*, *Early Church*, ch. v. p. 98.

This Apostolic precept, to *do good* and *fear not*, was exemplified by *St. Peter's wife*, who had probably seen the Lord (Matt. viii. 14), and was St. Peter's companion in his Apostolic journeys (1 Cor. ix. 5), and went before her husband to Martyrdom, and was cheered by him in her way, by the consideration suggested here; namely, by the recollection of the sufferings of Christ. “Seeing his wife led to death, Peter rejoiced, because she was being called by God, and returning home; and he, calling her by name, comforted her, saying, *O woman, remember the Lord!*” (*Clemens Alex.* apud Euseb. iii. 30.)

Wives become like to Sarah by obedience. Their authority rests on their subjection to their husbands. They become like Sarah,—whose name signifies *princess*,—by “calling their husband lord.” See above on 1 Cor. xi. 10, and cp. *Bede*, Homil. xxii. in Fest. Circumcisionis.

7. συνοικοῦντες κατὰ γνώσιν] *cohabiting (with your wives) according to knowledge (not in the lust of concupiscence), rendering honour (τιμὴν, reverent regard and modest forbearance in conjugal intercourse) to them as to the weaker vessel, as being heirs together with them of the grace of life, so that your prayers (that is, the prayers of you and your wife) may not be interrupted.*

B, G have the *dative συγκληρονόμοις*, and so *Tisch.*, *Alf.*

This is a general precept—as the ancient Expositors observe—to regulate the use of the marriage bed with reverential regard to the spiritual welfare of husband and wife, as fellow-heirs of life eternal; and in such a manner, as may be conducive to mutual edification, and to conjugal union in holy offices of prayer and praise to God. Compare St. Paul's precept, 1 Cor. vii. 5, and Eccles. iii. 5, and *S. Jerome* c. Jovinian, i. 4, and *S. Augustine* in Ps. cxlvi., and *Æcumenius* here.

On the use of the word σκεῦος, *vessel*, compare 1 Sam. xxi. 5, and see the note above on 1 Thess. iv. 4. Every man ought to regard his own body as a *vessel* sanctified to the Lord (2 Tim. ii. 21); like those holy vessels for divine service in the Temple (Heb. ix. 21). He ought also to regard the body of his wife as an holy vessel, and as one of more delicate and fragile structure than his own; and to treat it with modest reserve and reverential tenderness and honourable love.

St. Peter's words here are best illustrated by those of St.

γυναικείῳ ἀπονέμοντες τιμὴν, ὡς καὶ συγκληρονόμοι χάριτος ζωῆς, εἰς τὸ μὴ ἐγκόπτεσθαι τὰς προσευχὰς ὑμῶν.

^f Τὸ δὲ τέλος, πάντες ὁμόφρονες, συμπαθεῖς, φιλάδελφοι, εὖσπλαγχοι, ταπεινόφρονες, ^g μὴ ἀποδιδόντες κακὸν ἀντὶ κακοῦ, ἢ λοιδορίαν ἀντὶ λοιδορίας; τούναντίον δὲ εὐλογοῦντες, εἰδότες ὅτι εἰς τοῦτο ἐκλήθητε, ἵνα εὐλογίαν κληρονομήσητε. ^h ¹⁰ Ὁ γὰρ θέλων ζωὴν ἀγαπᾶν, καὶ ἰδεῖν ἡμέρας ἀγαθὰς, παυσάτω τὴν γλῶσσαν αὐτοῦ ἀπὸ κακοῦ, καὶ χεῖλη αὐτοῦ τοῦ μὴ λαλῆσαι δόλον. ⁱ ¹¹ Ἐκκλινάτω ἀπὸ κακοῦ, καὶ ποιησάτω ἀγαθόν· ζητησάτω εἰρήνην καὶ διωξάτω αὐτήν. ^k ¹² Ὅτι οἱ ὀφθαλμοὶ Κυρίου ἐπὶ δικαίους, καὶ ὦτα αὐτοῦ εἰς δέησιν αὐτῶν· πρόσωπον δὲ Κυρίου ἐπὶ ποιούντας κακά. ^l ¹³ Καὶ τίς ὁ κακώσων ὑμᾶς, ἐὰν τοῦ ἀγαθοῦ ζηλωταὶ γένησθε; ^m ¹⁴ ἄλλ', εἰ καὶ πάσχοιτε διὰ δικαιοσύνην, μακάριοι· τὸν δὲ φόβον αὐτῶν μὴ φοβηθῆτε, μηδὲ ταραχθῆτε· ⁿ ¹⁵ Κύριον δὲ τὸν Χριστὸν ἀγιάσατε ἐν ταῖς καρδίαις ὑμῶν. Ἕτοιμοι δὲ ἀεὶ πρὸς ἀπολογία πάντι τῷ αἰτοῦντι ὑμᾶς λόγον περὶ τῆς ἐν ὑμῖν ἐλπίδος, ἀλλὰ μετὰ πραύτητος καὶ φόβου

f Rom. 12. 16.
& 15. 5.
i Cor. 1. 10.
Phil. 2. 2. & 3. 16.
g Lev. 19. 18.
Prov. 17. 13.
& 20. 22. & 24. 29.
Matt. 5. 39.
& 25. 34.
Rom. 12. 17.
i Cor. 6. 7.
i Thess. 5. 15.
i Tim. 4. 8.
h Ps. 34. 13, &c.
James 1. 26.
i Ps. 37. 27.
Isa. 1. 16.
3 John 11.
k Ps. 33. 18.
Job 36. 7.
John 9. 31.
l Isa. 8. 12, 13.
Jer. 1. 8.
Matt. 5. 10.
& 10. 28.
ch. 2. 20. & 4. 14.
m Ps. 119. 46.
Acts 4. 8.
Col. 4. 8.
2 Tim. 2. 25.

Paul (1 Thess. iv. 3—5. Col. ii. 23), especially as to the word *τιμὴ*, *honour*, which means reverent regard for the body (whether it be our own body, or that of another), as contrasted with *πάθη ἀτιμίας*, *lusts* by which the body is *dishonoured*. See the Apostle's words, Rom. i. 24—26.

This Apostolic precept, to render *honour* to the wife, as the weaker vessel, is a scriptural warrant for the sentence, against which some have excepted, in the plighting of troth in the office of Holy Matrimony in the Book of Common Prayer,—“With my *body I thee worship*,” i. e. I render thee *honour*. “Habere uxorem non in servæ loco, neque meretricis, sed ut sororis in Christo, et coheredis regni cœlorum, viri est Christiani.” To render due *honour* to the body by keeping it in subjection, and by abstinence from fornication and uncleanness; and to pay due *honour* to the body of the wife, by sobriety, modesty, and love, are conjugal offices, requisite for the maintenance of due regard for that holy Ordinance of God, which was instituted by Him in the time of Man's innocency, and by which is represented and signified the spiritual Marriage and Unity betwixt Christ and His Church. (Eph. v. 25—32.)

8. ταπεινόφρονες] *lowly-minded*. So A, B, C. Elz. has φιλόφρονες.

9. ἵνα εὐλογίαν κληρονομήσητε] *in order that ye may inherit blessing*, from the lips of your future Judge, saying, “Come, ye blessed of My Father, *inherit the kingdom*” (Matt. xxv. 34).

10. ὁ γὰρ θέλων ζωὴν ἀγαπᾶν] *For he whose will it is to love life*: that is, who sets himself by a deliberate act of volition to love *that life* which is true life; cp. Matt. xvi. 25, ὃς ἂν θέλῃ ψυχὴν σῶσαι, Luke ix. 24, and see S. Basil in Catenâ here.

St. Peter thus gives additional emphasis to the Psalmist's words (ἄνθρωπος ὁ θέλων ζωὴν, ἀγαπῶν ἰδεῖν ἡμέρας ἀγαθὰς, Ps. xxxiii. 12), and shows that love itself (ἀγάπη), in the true sense of the word, is not a mere *appetite*, but requires a sustained effort of the will.

13. τίς ὁ κακώσων ὑμᾶς, ἐὰν τοῦ ἀγαθοῦ ζηλωταὶ γένησθε;] *who is he that will harm you, if ye become zealots for that which is good?* Many among the Jews and Jewish Christians had *zeal*, but not according to knowledge (Rom. x. 2), and were not *zealots in a good thing* (Gal. iv. 17). Many were called *ζηλωταί*, *zealots*, and under plea of zeal for God were guilty of enormities (see on Matt. xxiv. 15). Be ye *zealots*, says the Apostle, but let it be for that which is *good*. Such a *Zelotes* was St. Peter's fellow-Apostle, Simon, called the Cananite for his *zeal* (see on Matt. x. 4); and on his history see Introduction to St. Jude's Epistle.

The oldest uncial MSS., A, B, C, have *ζηλωταί* here: but Elz., G, K, and many cursive MSS. have *μιμηταί*, *imitators*, and this reading (which is received by Tisch. in his last edition) deserves attention.

If it is the true one, the sense is, *Who is he that will harm you, if ye become imitators of Him that is good?* The word *μιμητής* is used in six other places of the N. T. (1 Cor. iv. 16; xi. 1. Eph. v. 1. 1 Thess. i. 6; ii. 14. Heb. vi. 12), and in all it is followed by a *person* who is to be *imitated* (see on 1 Cor. xi. 1), and a *Person* is here proposed for imitation, namely, Christ (v. 18; iv. 1). And then He, who is the *Good One*, is here represented as a Defender of those who imitate Him, against the assaults of any person, man or Devil, who would harm them.

14. τὸν φόβον αὐτῶν μὴ φοβηθῆτε] *Do not ye fear their fear*, that is, the fear with which they would inspire you; but sanctify

the Lord of Hosts Himself, and let Him be your fear. Isa. viii. 12, 13. See Ps. lxiv. 1, “Preserve my life from fear of the enemy,” and above, v. 6, and cp. Phil. i. 28.

15. Κύριον δὲ τὸν Χριστὸν (so A, B, C. Elz. has Θεόν) ἀγιάσατε] *but sanctify the Lord Christ in your hearts*. Even Moses and Aaron were excluded from the promised land, because they did not *sanctify the Lord* among the children of Israel at the waters of strife (Deut. xxxii. 51), but claimed to themselves some of that honour which belongs to Him alone. Cp. Bp. Andrewes, ii. p. 386, “on sanctifying God's Name.”

Christ is to be worshipped as God, in the Temple of our hearts, and all that appertains to Him must be treated with reverential awe. His glory is to be the aim and end of all our actions; His word our law; His grace our strength; His blessed Self the object of our desires.

This precept, “to sanctify the *Lord Christ* in our hearts,” especially when compared with the parallel passage, “*Fear ye not their fear, but sanctify the Lord of Hosts Himself, and let him be your fear*” (Isa. viii. 12), is a clear demonstration of the *Divine Nature of Christ*.

When we say, “Hallowed be Thy Name,” in the Lord's Prayer, we pray for the sanctification of the Name of our *Lord Christ*. Cp. Clemens Alex. here.

We may be thankful, therefore, for the testimonies of the most ancient MSS., and of the *Vulgate*, *Syriac*, *Armenian*, *Coptic*, *Sahidic*, and *Arabic* (Erpenian) Versions, which are followed here by Lachmann, Tisch., Alford, for the restoration of this important reading (Χριστὸν) to the Text.

— ἐτοίμοι δὲ ἀεὶ] *but being always ready to give an answer*, ἀπολογία, an *apology*, in the theological sense of the term, viz. *refutation* of objections on the part of Jews and Heathens; and a clear logical statement in behalf of Christianity; in reply to *every man who asketh you a reason, or account, of the hope that is in you*.

Here (says Didymus) is a caution to those who imagine that it is enough for us to lead what is called a *moral life*, without a sound foundation of *Christian faith*; and here (he adds) is a special admonition to the Clergy, to be able to solve doubts and remove difficulties which may perplex their people, and to stop the mouth of gainsayers (Tit. i. 11), and render a satisfactory *reason* of whatever they do, or teach.

On the duty of *examining the evidences* of Religion, and of being able to render an account of the *reason* of the hope that is in us, see above, 1 Thess. v. 21. 1 Cor. x. 15.

— ἀλλά] *but*: not in Elz., but in A, B, C. This caution was necessary, and it is made more emphatic by the ἀλλά. Be *always* ready to render to every man a *reason* or *account* of the *Christian hope* that is in you; *but* (ἀλλά) take good heed to do this with *meekness*, and not with insolence, or presumption.

Some of the interpolated “*Acts of the Martyrs*,”—for example, those of S. Cæcilia,—afford a comment on this text. In the Acts of her Martyrdom, as recently published, the Christian Virgin is transformed into a bold virago, venting the language of insult against her Roman Judge sitting on the seat of authority. Very different, doubtless, was the real demeanour of S. Cæcilia in the hour of trial. Very different was the demeanour of all genuine Martyrs imitating the example of Christ, who, when He was reviled, reviled not again (Isa. liii. 7. 1 Pet. ii. 23); and obeying this precept of St. Peter.

n Tit. 2. 8.
ch. 2. 12, 15, 19.

16ⁿ συνείδησιν ἔχοντες ἀγαθὴν, ἵνα, ἐν ᾧ καταλαλοῦσιν ὑμῶν ὡς κακοποιῶν, καταισχυνθῶσιν οἱ ἐπηρεάζοντες ὑμῶν τὴν ἀγαθὴν ἐν Χριστῷ ἀναστροφὴν.

o Rom. 1. 4.
& 5. 6.
2 Cor. 13. 4.
Heb. 9. 15, 28.

17 Κρεῖττον γὰρ ἀγαθοποιούντας, εἰ θέλοι τὸ θέλημα τοῦ Θεοῦ, πᾶσχειν, ἢ κακοποιούντας· 18^o ὅτι καὶ Χριστὸς ἅπαξ περὶ ἁμαρτιῶν ἔπαθε, δίκαιος ὑπὲρ ἀδίκων, ἵνα ἡμᾶς προσαγάγῃ Θεῷ· θανατωθεὶς μὲν σαρκί, ζωοποιηθεὶς δὲ πνεύ-

16. συνείδησιν ἀγαθὴν] a good conscience (see Acts xxiii. 1. Heb. xiii. 18). A good conscience is one which governs itself by sound Reason, and applies to itself, for its own regulation, the Rule of God's will, especially as revealed in His Word. This is the conscience which produces καλὴν ἀναστροφὴν, good conversation. See Bp. Sanderson, iv. pp. 10. 65—90.

— καταλαλοῦσιν ὑ. ὡς κ.] So Elz., with A, C, G, K. B has καταλαλεῖσθε, and so Tisch., Alf.

18. ὅτι καὶ Χριστὸς] because even Christ suffered once on account of sins (περὶ ἁμαρτιῶν, cp. Rom. viii. 3. 2 Cor. v. 21), a just person on behalf of unjust (see above, ii. 24. Rom. v. 6), in order that he might present us to God.

The Sin-offerings in the Old Testament are styled above sixty times in the LXX τὰ περὶ ἁμαρτιῶν. Therefore the Jews, to whom the Apostle writes, would understand his words here to mean, that Christ suffered to make atonement for sins, by suffering the punishment of sin in the stead of those for whom He offered Himself a sacrifice on the Cross.

— θανατωθεὶς μὲν σαρκί] having been put to death in the flesh. St. Peter thus guards his readers against the heresy of Simon Magus, and the Docetæ, who said that Christ's flesh was a phantom; and against that of the Cerinthians, and other false teachers, whose errors were propagated in Asia, who alleged that the Christ was only an Æon or Emanation, which descended on the man Jesus at His Baptism, but departed from Him before His Passion. See S. Iren. i. 26, and Ittig, Hæres. c. v., and below, preliminary note to 2 Pet. ii., and Introduction to the First Epistle of St. John.

18—22.] The important statements contained in these verses will be best considered collectively in one note.

Christ suffered, a just person on behalf of the unjust, in order that He might present and bring us near to God (see Rom. v. 2. Eph. ii. 18; iii. 12), Who before was alienated from us; having been put to death in His human flesh, but quickened in spirit (i. e. in His disembodied human spirit), in which (human spirit) He went and preached even (καὶ) to the spirits (disembodied human spirits) which were then in prison (φυλακῇ), which spirits disobeyed (did not hearken, Rom. xi. 30, 31. Heb. iii. 18) formerly, when the long-suffering of God was waiting (ἀπεξεδέχετο, which is the reading of the best MSS. and Editions. Elz. has ἅπαξ ἐδέχετο; compare Rom. viii. 25) in the days of Noe, when the Ark was preparing, into which (εἰς ἣν) few persons (ὀλίγοι A, B), that is, eight souls, entering, were saved effectually (διεσώθησαν; as to the accusative cp. Gen. xix. 19, διασωθῆναι εἰς τὸ ὄρος. Thucyd. i. 110, ἐς Κυρήνην διεσώθησαν) by means of water, which overwhelmed the rest of the world. And so δι' ὕδατος may have also a secondary sense, and mean, "through the water," which drowned the disobedient, while Noah had a refuge and means of escape from and through it, in the Ark.

St. Peter is here exhorting his readers to suffer patiently for doing well; and for this purpose he presents to them the example of Christ; first in suffering; then in the fruits of suffering; namely, in the collation of infinite good to others, on earth, under the earth, and in heaven; so filling all things with His power and love; and in the acquisition of eternal sovereignty and glory to His own Humanity in heavenly places, by virtue of His sufferings in His own human body upon earth.

St. Peter's language is best illustrated by that of St. Paul in Phil. ii. 5—11, where, like St. Peter, he is exhorting to humility and patience by a consideration of the condescension, sufferings, and subsequent exaltation of Jesus Christ; "Let this mind be in you, which was also in Christ Jesus, who, when subsisting in the form of God, thought it not robbery to be equal with God, but made Himself of no reputation, and took upon Him the form of a servant, and was made in the likeness of men; and being found in fashion as a man, He humbled Himself and became obedient unto death, even to the death of the Cross. Wherefore God also highly exalted Him, and gave Him the name, which is above every name, that at the name of Jesus every knee should bow, of things in heaven, and things in earth, and things under the earth, and that every tongue should confess that Jesus Christ is Lord, to the glory of God the Father."

St. Peter shows, that Christ, Who is God (v. 15), and just, and sinless (i. 19), condescended in His love to suffer for sins; that, in His love for us, He vouchsafed to suffer for us, in order

to bring us near to God; that He, Who is perfectly just, and therefore not liable to any punishment, consented to suffer for us, when we were unjust; and that He suffered once, and once only.

Here is our pattern and example.

Here also is our comfort.

Christ's sufferings, which were endured once for all (ἅπαξ), were the means of everlasting blessedness to others, and of eternal glory to Himself.

For, says the Apostle, although He was put to death in the flesh, yet that death itself was the occasion of new honour to Himself; and of great good to others, to whom He went after death.

When Christ was on the cross, He breathed forth His human spirit, and gave up the ghost, and died. (Matt. xxvii. 50. Luke xxiii. 46.)

At His death, His human spirit was severed from His human flesh. His human flesh was taken down from the cross, and was laid by Joseph of Arimathæa in a new tomb. (Matt. xxvii. 57—60.)

But His human spirit, being liberated by death from the burden of the flesh, acquired new life by death; it gained new powers of motion; it went forth on a journey (ἐπορεύθη); it travelled on a blessed mission to the region of departed spirits (πνεύματα), and entered the place where they were detained in prison (φυλακῇ).

Christ then went in His human spirit, and preached (ἐκήρυξε) to those spirits in prison, which were disobedient formerly, and did not hearken to the preaching of Noah, when the long-suffering of God was waiting for the space of one hundred and twenty years (Gen. vi. 3), in the days of Noe, when the Ark was preparing, into which only eight persons entered, and were saved by water; and the rest perished in the flood.

Few indeed were they, who were thus saved in the Ark; but we Christians, adds the Apostle, we are now being saved by Baptism, which was typified by the Flood. We are being saved by Baptism, through the Resurrection of Jesus Christ, whose spirit, having gone into the place of departed spirits, preached to those who had been disobedient formerly in the days of Noah, when the Ark was a preparing, but not yet built, more than 2000 years before the days of Christ, by whom the Church Universal, typified of old by the Ark, has now been built for all nations; and Who, having gone in His spirit to the lower region of departed spirits, has now raised Himself from the Grave, and has become the pledge and first-fruits of our Resurrection (1 Cor. xv. 20), and having reunited His human body to His human spirit, went on another journey, even to the highest regions of heaven, and is at the right hand of God, Angels and Authorities and Powers having been made subject unto Him.

These important statements may be compared with St. Peter's speech on the Day of Pentecost, Acts ii. 23—36.

St. Peter, in using the word πνεῦμα (v. 18), is not speaking of the Holy Spirit, as has been supposed by some; but he is speaking of the action of Christ's human spirit (πνεῦμα), when it departed from His human flesh at His death on the cross.

The word πνεῦμα, or spirit, is here contrasted with the word σὰρξ, flesh: the former being that higher and nobler part of human nature, by which we are akin to God, and recipients of His Spirit; whereas σὰρξ, flesh, represents that side of our nature by which we appertain to earth. See Matt. xxvi. 41. Mark xiv. 38. John vi. 63. Col. ii. 5. Heb. xii. 9; and note above on 1 Thess. v. 23. And see the passages in which the πνεῦμα, or human spirit of Christ, is mentioned, Mark viii. 12. Luke x. 21; xxiii. 46. John xiii. 21; xix. 30.

This is the meaning assigned to the word πνεῦμα, spirit, here, by ancient Expositors, who cited this text in refutation of the Apollinarian heresy, which denied the reality of our Lord's human spirit. Thus S. Athanasius (c. Apollinar. ii. c. 8) says, "If the soul is only carnal, why does it not die with the body, and why does St. Peter call the souls detained in prison spirits?" And so the Vulgate, Syriac, and Arabic Versions, and many of the best modern interpreters from the times of Estius.

And S. Hilary says (on Ps. cxxxviii.), "This is the condition of our humanity; after our death our bodies are buried, but our souls descend to their appointed place below (ad inferos). And our Lord Himself, in order that He might fulfil all the laws of a real humanity, did not decline that Descent."

ματι¹⁹ ἔν ᾧ καὶ τοῖς ἐν φυλακῇ πνεύμασι πορευθεὶς ἐκήρυξεν,²⁰ ἀπειθήσασι^{p Eph. 2. 17. ch. 4. 6. q Gen. 6. 3, 5, 14, & 7. 7. & 8. 18.} ποτὲ, ὅτε ἀπεξεδέχετο ἡ τοῦ Θεοῦ μακροθυμία, ἐν ἡμέραις Νῶε, κατασκευαζο-

Matt. 24. 38. Luke 17. 26. Rom. 2. 4. 2 Pet. 2. 5.

Elz. has τῷ before πνεύματι here; but this is not in A, B, C, G, K, and is rejected by Griesb., Scholz, Lach., Tisch., Alf.

Christ was put to death in His σὰρξ, *flesh* (see iv. 1, cp. iv. 6), the *earthly* part of our nature; but in His human spirit ἐξωσποιήθη, He was endued with new life by death. During His lifetime on earth He was restrained by the *earthly* conditions of His *flesh*: He preached in person to only a few of His own age and country. He delivered them from the captivity of sin and Satan; He proclaimed *liberty to the captives*; He preached to them *deliverance from prison*, and an Evangelic Jubilee. (Luke iv. 18.)

But after death He went in His disembodied spirit to the nether world. Death opened to Him a new sphere of missionary enterprise. He went and preached to the spirits in prison—to spirits of a by-gone generation, to spirits which had lived upon earth in the days of the Patriarch Noah, more than two thousand years before.

Thus Satan's malice recoiled upon himself. He had instigated Judas to betray Christ, and the Jews to kill Him. But by Christ's death new life accrued to Christ, and new comfort was ministered to spirits, which were held in prison in the lower world.

Observe here the word πορευθεὶς, and again in v. 22. It describes an *actual journey* of Christ. He is here (in v. 19) described as *going* to the lower world of Spirits, and He is described there (v. 22) as *going* into heaven. There is a local transition in both passages. Christ made *two journeys*: one downward in His human spirit to the nether world of disembodied spirits; and another upward in His risen body, reunited to His spirit, to the heavenly world of angels, and to the right hand of God.

Observe also the word καὶ before πνεύμασιν. Christ, who before had preached on earth to men, in bodily presence, now, after His removal from them by death, preached also, or even, to human spirits in the region under the earth, in the time between His Death and Resurrection.

After the Incarnation, no portion of Christ's time has ever been without benefit to mankind. Wherever He goes, whether on earth, or under the earth, or in heaven (cp. Phil. ii. 10), He carries blessings with Him. He fills all things with His love. He suffers, and conquers by suffering. He dies, and lives by Death, and brings eternal life to others, and everlasting glory to Himself.

Next, remark the word ἐκήρυξεν. Thus placed it cannot be understood in any other sense than *He preached*—preached the Gospel. This word κηρύσσω is placed thus in about fifteen other passages of the New Testament, and in every one it means to preach the Gospel or preach Christ. See Matt. iii. 1; iv. 17; x. 7. 27; xi. 1. Mark i. 7. 38, 39; iii. 14; v. 20; xvi. 20. Luke iv. 44. Rom. x. 14. 1 Cor. ix. 27; xv. 11.

Accordingly, this is the sense assigned to the word κηρύσσω here by the ancient Greek Fathers, e. g. S. Irenæus (iv. 37. 2, p. 347, Grabe), "Dominum in eâ quæ sunt sub terrâ descendisse evangelizantem adventum suum."

And in another place (iii. 33), S. Irenæus speaks of Christ as going down to Hades, and says, "Primogenitus enim mortuorum natus Dominus, et in sinum suum recipiens pristinos patres, regeneravit eos in vitam Dei." And a little after, "Hic illos in evangelium vitæ regeneravit."

These phrases are a comment on the text of St. Peter, He went and preached to the spirits in prison; as is observed by Wall on Infant Baptism, I. ch. iii.

So Clemens Alex., Strom. vi. 6, ὁ Κύριος δι' οὐδὲν ἕτερον εἰς ᾧδου κατήλθεν, ἢ διὰ τὸ εὐαγγελίσασθαι. So S. Cyril Alex. in John xvi. 16, and his Homil. Paschal. xx. Cp. A Lapide here, p. 214.

Also the word φυλακῇ can hardly have any other sense than prison. See Matt. v. 25; xiv. 3; xviii. 30; xxv. 36. 39. 43, 44. Mark vi. 17. 27. Luke iii. 20; xii. 58; xxi. 12; xxii. 33; xxiii. 19. John iii. 24. Acts v. 19; xii. 4; and in thirteen other places; and 2 Cor. vi. 5; xi. 23. Heb. xi. 36. Rev. ii. 10; xx. 7.

Lastly, in the history of Joseph in prison, and in his deliverance and exaltation, we have a type of Christ's Burial and Resurrection, and Ascension. See Bp. Pearson on the Creed, Art. v. p. 475; Art. vi. p. 515; and note above on Acts vii. 1.

The time in which Joseph was ἐν φυλακῇ, in prison (see LXX in Gen. xl. 3), was signalized by a remarkable exercise of his prophetic office in the revelation of deliverance from punishment. Cp. Gen. xli. 43. May not that incident, which is recorded with so much circumstantiality in Holy Writ, concerning Joseph, the type of Christ in His Burial, Resurrection, and Ascension, have some reference to the preaching of Christ to the spirits in prison?

On the whole, then, we arrive at this result,—

Christ in His human spirit preached to spirits in prison; and having done this, He raised His own body from the dead, and went in that body, reunited to His spirit, into Heaven, where He is now in His glorified manhood, at the right hand of God, Angels and Principalities and Powers being made subject unto Him.

Here is the climax of all. Well, then, may the Apostle proceed to add, Since then CHRIST suffered in the flesh, and thus conferred blessings upon mankind on earth, and under the earth, and thus entered into His glory in heaven, arm ye yourselves with the same mind.

Let the same mind be in you which was in Christ Jesus, Who, as St. Paul speaks, first descended into the lower parts of the earth, and then ascended into heaven that He might fill all things (Eph. iv. 9, 10), and being God from Eternity, took on Him the form of a slave, and became obedient unto death, even the death of the cross, and thus obtained the Name that is above every name, that at the name of Jesus every knee should bow, of beings not only in heaven and on earth, but also under the earth (καταχθονίων), "and that every tongue should confess that Jesus Christ is Lord, to the glory of God the Father." (Phil. ii. 5—11.)

In like manner, St. John, in the Apocalypse, speaks of beings under the earth (ὑποκάτω τῆς γῆς) as joining with those in earth, and in heaven, in ascribing praise and glory to the Lamb who had been slain. (Rev. v. 12, 13.)

This then is the scope of St. Peter's argument;

He is delivering an exhortation to suffer gladly for well-doing after the example of Christ, God Incarnate, suffering death for man, procuring benefits for all by suffering, and thus entering into His heavenly glory; and by virtue of His Incarnation and Passion, His Resurrection and Ascension, exalting all, who suffer for Him, to bliss eternal.

In this argument the Apostle asserts that our Lord in His human spirit went and preached to the spirits in prison, who were formerly disobedient in the days of Noah.

He states the fact, but he does not declare the subject of the preaching, nor its result.

Our duty therefore here is to receive with reverence what is revealed, and not to aspire "to be wise above what is written." (1 Cor. iv. 6.)

Much consolation and instruction may be derived from what is here revealed.

It is a comfortable thing to know, that the human spirit of Christ was not in any way impaired by death. Hence we receive a blessed assurance, that our own human spirits, on their dissolution from the body, will not lose any of their energies.

It is a joyful thing to know, that Christ's human spirit was quickened by death; thus we learn, that our human spirits, if we die in the Lord, will acquire new life by death. This is also clear from other scriptures, especially from the conveyance of the spirit of Lazarus, on his death, into Abraham's bosom (see on Luke xvi. 22, 23), and from the transition of the spirit of the penitent thief from the cross to Paradise. See on Luke xxiii. 43, and Justin Martyr (c. Tryphon. c. 5), where he says that the "souls of the righteous abide in a better place, and the souls of the wicked in a worse place—awaiting the future judgment," which is quite consistent with the assertion of Lactantius (Inst. vii. 21), that "disembodied spirits are in one region," inasmuch as that region has two distinct compartments, between which "a great gulf is fixed."

By this journey of Christ's spirit to the nether world of disembodied spirits, Death has been despoiled of its terrors, and the Grave has become to us a Passage to peace, and a Gate of light and joy.

It is also a comfortable thing to know, that the disembodied spirit of our adorable Redeemer was full of tenderness to men. That love extended even to by-gone generations, whose names are unknown to us. He went and preached—preached to spirits in prison; to those spirits which had been disobedient formerly, when the Ark was a preparing, and which had not entered into the Ark, and which were now in a place of confinement.

So much the Holy Spirit reveals to us by St. Peter. And in this revelation he affords us abundant cause for gratitude to Christ, and for steadfast trust in Him, and for patient suffering for Him, and for a lively hope of a glorious Resurrection and Ascension to Him, and of an eternity of glory with Him.

Let it not, however, be imagined that He here gives any

r Eph. 5. 26.
ch. 1. 3.

μένης κιβωτοῦ, εἰς ἣν ὀλίγοι, τουτέστιν ὁκτὼ ψυχαὶ, διεσώθησαν δι' ὕδατος
21 ὁ καὶ ἡμᾶς ἀντίτυπον νῦν σώζει βάπτισμα, οὐ σαρκὸς ἀπόθεσις ῥύπου,

ground for presumption, that, if we do *not do well*, and are not ready to *suffer* for Christ, and if we die in disobedience and impenitence, there remains for *us* any message of comfort after death.

For, be it observed, the circumstances of the persons here mentioned are unique, and can never again be paralleled. Christ, says St. Peter, suffered *once* for sin. He died once, but He dieth no more. He went in His human spirit after His Death, and before His Resurrection, and He preached to spirits in prison. But He is now *risen* from the dead; He has now ascended into Heaven.

The incidents of *that* preaching, therefore, *can never recur*.

It was fit, that, as the hour of His *Crucifixion* was marked by an extraordinary miracle of mercy, the rescue of the spirit of the *penitent thief* confessing Him in that crisis of shame, and by the translation of that *spirit* to *Paradise*, so His descent into the nether world should be marked by some special extraordinary overtures of mercy to *spirits in prison*.

Besides, the circumstances of the spirits in prison, to whom He is here described as preaching, were also *unique and unparallelled*.

They likewise *can never recur*.

God has pledged His word, that He will never more send a Flood of waters to drown the earth. (Gen. ix. 11. 15.) Other judgments were local, the Flood was universal.

Besides, though they who lived then, had the benefits of the preaching and example of Noah, and the *long-suffering of God* waited for one hundred and twenty years while the *Ark* was *a preparing*, yet their condition was very different from that of all generations of men since the Death of Christ.

The men of Noah's age had only the example of a single godly family (Gen. vi. 7, 8. 11—13; vii. 1), and, as far as appears, Noah alone and his house had a direct invitation to come into the Ark; and God looked upon the earth, and *all flesh had corrupted his way upon the earth* (vi. 12), and the result was, that *all flesh died* (vii. 21), and only *eight persons* were saved in the Ark. But, after Christ's Resurrection, He gave a commission to His disciples to preach the Gospel to *all nations* (Matt. xxviii. 19) and to *baptize all*.

The waters of Baptism are as universal as the waters of the Flood. They are now *saving us* (v. 21); their saving power never ceases. God will never more send the destroying waters of a Flood; and He will never dry up the saving waters of Baptism. The Ark of Noah was fixed in one place, and in fine it received only *eight persons*. But the antitype of the Ark, the Christian Church, is universal in time and place. He pours out His Holy Spirit *on all flesh* (Acts ii. 17), and His Gospel will be preached as a witness every where (Matt. xxiv. 14), and His words will never pass away. (Matt. xxiv. 35.)

Thus the circumstances of the generation of those who perished in the *Flood*, differed widely from those of *all* generations since the coming of Christ even to the end of the world. There appear therefore to be special reasons for special mercy to them. There seem to be also special reasons for a reference here to *their case*.

Many ancient Heretics, especially the Marcionites and Manichæans, and their predecessors, even in the days of the Apostles, asserted the doctrine of *dualism*, that is, of *two* opposite principles in the world. They represented the Law as contrary to the Gospel (see *Epiphanius*, *Hæres.* lxvi.; *Bp. Pearson*, *Art.* i. p. 120, note). They said, that the God of the Old Testament was at variance with the God of the New. They alleged that the God of the former was of a stern disposition, different from the God of the Gospel. They introduced two antagonistic deities, and undermined the doctrine of the unity and sovereignty (*μοναρχία*) of God. This *theory of dualism* was the groundwork of almost all the Gnostic heresies of the Apostolic times.

This theory derived some arguments from the history of the Flood. (Cp. *Aug.* c. Adv. Legis, i. 45.)

St. Peter's Epistle was probably written in the East (see v. 13.) There the belief in *two opposite principles*, a Good and Evil, was widely disseminated by the religion of Zoroaster, and by the Magi of Persia (see on Isa. xlv. 3—7). There also the Ark rested after the Waters of the Flood.

The author of this Epistle, written in the East, may have heard the objections raised on the history of the Flood, against the Divine Benevolence, and the unity of the Godhead; and he appears to be answering such objections as those, and to be vindicating that history. He shows the harmony of God's dispensations, Patriarchal and Evangelical. He teaches us to behold in the Ark a type of the Church, and in the Flood a type of Bap-

tism. He thus refutes the Manichæan Heresy. He says that God was merciful even to that generation. He speaks of God's *long-suffering*, *waiting for them while the Ark* was preparing. He states boldly the *objection*, that *few, only eight souls*, were saved in the Ark, and he contrasts the condition of those who were drowned in the Flood with the condition of those who have now offers of salvation in Baptism. He says, that the rest disobeyed, while the Ark was preparing. He uses the aorist tense (*ἀπειθήσασι*). He does *not* say, that when the Ark *had been prepared*, and when the Ark was *shut*, and when the Flood came, and it was too late for them to reach it, they all remained impenitent. Perhaps some were penitent at the eleventh hour, like the thief on the cross. Every one will be justly dealt with by God. There are *degrees of punishment* as there are of *reward*. (See on Matt. x. 15. Luke xii. 48.) God does not quench the smoking flax (Matt. xii. 20). And St. Peter, by saying that they did *not* hearken *formerly*, while the Ark was preparing, almost seems to suggest the inference, that they *did* hearken *now* when One, greater than Noah, came in His human spirit, into the abysses of the deep of the lower world; and that a happy change was wrought in the condition of some among them by His coming.

In the words of *S. Hilary* (on Ps. cxix. 82), "When wilt thou comfort me?" The soul (of the faithful) knows, on the witness of the Apostle Peter, that when the Lord went down into Hades, words of comfort were preached even to those who were in prison, and were formerly unbelieving in the day of Noah, and did not enter the Ark, but may probably have had some strong penitential emotions, and have put up some hearty penitential prayers to God, and may have had some earnest desires, and made some eager but fruitless efforts to enter the Ark, when the Flood came and destroyed them. And *S. Cyril* answers an objection to the *lateness* of Christ's Incarnation, by saying, that many, who would have profited by his preaching, if He had been incarnate in their age, derived benefit from His manifestation to the region of departed souls. See the ancient valuable testimonies recently published by *Dr. Cramer*, *Catena*, pp. 66—70, and *cp. Greg. Nazian.*, *Orat.* Pasch. xlii.; and *Theophylact* here, p. 372, ed. Bened.; and *Œcumen.*; and an excellent note by *Estius* on this passage.

The Church of England in one of her Articles published in the fourth year of King Edward VI., declared that the body of Christ lay in the grave until His Resurrection; but His *spirit* which He gave up, was with the *spirits detained in prison*, and preached to them, as the place of St. Peter testifieth; and she has wisely appointed this portion of St. Peter's Epistle (1 Pet. iii. 17—22) to be read as the Epistle on *Easter Even*.

By connecting this passage with that Day, she supplies a practical commentary on the meaning of this portion of Holy Writ: and she suggests to the faithful a profitable and consolatory meditation on the work of mercy and love, in which the disembodied spirit of our adorable Saviour was employed at that solemn time when His human body was lying in the grave.

Such appears to be the most probable interpretation of this very interesting portion of Holy Scripture. Expounded in this sense, it harmonizes with the Apostle's argument concerning the blessedness of suffering for doing well in imitation of Christ.

A view of the various expositions of this subject may be seen in *S. Augustine's* Epistle to Euodia, Ep. 164, al. 99. *Bp. Pearson* on the Creed, Art. ii. p. 211; and Art. v. pp. 425—455. *Cp. Milton*, *Par. Lost*, xi. 723; *Abp. Leighton* here; *Bp. Beveridge*, and especially *Professor Harold Browne* on the Third Article of the Church of England; *Bp. Horsley*, vol. i. serm. xx.; *Bp. Middleton* here; and in the notes of *De Wette*, *Huther*, pp. 129—134, and *Dean Alford* on this passage.

21. δ—ἀντίτυπον—βάπτισμα] which (water) also is now saving us, being an *antitype* of the water of the Flood; and being ministered to us as *Baptism*.

"Τύπος est res præfigurans, ἀντίτυπον est res præfigurata." *Raphel. Elz.* has ὧ here in the dative case; but δ, the nominative, which (i. e. water), is the reading of A, B, C, G, K, and is adopted by *Griesb.*, *Scholz*, *Lach.*, *Tisch.*, *Alf.*

The word βάπτισμα, *Baptism*, is placed emphatically at the end, and stands in contrast with *Circumcision*, which some of St. Peter's Jewish readers were disposed to *enforce* as necessary to salvation; and the absence of all reference to *Circumcision* in this Epistle is a silent protest against the Judaizing notions, at which he himself had once been tempted to connive. See Gal. ii. 11—17.

St. Peter affirms that Baptism *saveth us*; that is, God therein does His part effectually for the salvation of all who come to

ἀλλὰ συνειδήσεως ἀγαθῆς ἐπερώτημα εἰς Θεόν, δι' ἀναστάσεως Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ, ὅς ἐστιν ἐν δεξιᾷ τοῦ Θεοῦ, πορευθεὶς εἰς οὐρανὸν, ὑποταγέντων αὐτῷ ἀγγέλων καὶ ἐξουσιῶν καὶ δυνάμεων.

IV. ¹ Ἄ Χριστοῦ οὖν παθόντος ὑπὲρ ἡμῶν σαρκί, καὶ ὑμεῖς τὴν αὐτὴν ἔννοιαν ὀπλίσασθε, ὅτι ὁ παθὼν ἐν σαρκὶ πέπαυται ἀμαρτίας, ² εἰς τὸ μηκέτι ἀν-

s Ps. 110. 1.
Rom. 8. 34, 38.
Eph. 1. 20.
Col. 3. 1.
a Rom. 6. 2, 7.
b Rom. 14. 7.
2 Cor. 5. 15.
Eph. 4. 24.
Gal. 2. 20.
1 Thess. 5. 10.
Heb. 9. 14.

Him therein. Compare St. Paul's words in Titus iii. 5, where, for a like reason, the aorist tense is used, ἔσωσεν ἡμᾶς, "He saved us by the laver of regeneration, and by the renewing of the Holy Ghost."

Thus St. Peter shows the harmony of God's dealings with mankind. He teaches that the Ark, "in which Noah and his family were saved from perishing by water," is a type of the Church of Christ, in which all who are "stedfast in faith, joyful through hope, and rooted in charity, pass the waves of this troublesome world, till they finally come to the land of everlasting life;" and that in their double character the waters of the Flood were symbolical of the water of Baptism, *salvific* to all who obey God and enter the Ark which He has built for them, and abide therein; and *destructive* to them who *disobey* Him; and thus they have a double office, as Christ Himself and all His dispensations have. See Luke ii. 34. 2 Cor. ii. 16. Rev. ix. 14-20, and *S. Augustin.* c. Faustum, xii. 17, "Præter Arcam omnis caro diluvio consumpta est; quia præter Ecclesiæ societatem, aqua Baptismi quamvis eadem sit, non solum non valet ad salutem, sed etiam valet ad perniciem."

The mystery of salvation, says *Justin Martyr*, was manifest in the Flood. The righteous Noah, the *eighth* person, a preacher of righteousness, in whom the new generation arose, as it were, from the dead, after the Flood, seems to have had a figurative relation to the *eighth day*, the day of the Resurrection of Christ (see above on Luke xxiv. 1, and below on 2 Pet. ii. 5), the first-begotten of every creature and the Origin of the new race born again of Him through Water and Faith. See *Justin Martyr* c. Tryphon. c. 138. *S. Aug.* c. Adv. Legis, i. 45. Cp. *Jerome* c. Jovinian. ii. p. 214; adv. Lucif. p. 303.

At the *Creation*, the Holy Spirit moved on the face of the waters, and all things were created out of the *Water* by the *Word* of God. (Gen. i. 6. 9. 2 Pet. iii. 5, 6.)

At the *Deluge*, Noah and his family were saved by water, in which the world was drowned; and a new generation arose in Noah and his family, to people the world after its Baptism by Water.

At the *new Creation* of mankind in Christ, Who is the Second Adam, the Holy Ghost came down from heaven to sanctify Water in the Baptism of Christ, Who had been conceived by the Holy Ghost. Thus the Holy Ghost, the "Author of the first *genesis* or birth, was also the Giver of *Palingenesia* or *New Birth*" (see *Tertullian*, de Baptismo, c. 3; *Bp. Andrewes*, iii. 250); and He has sealed that New Birth to us by the *Resurrection* of Christ our Head from the Grave, which is represented to us in Baptism, "wherein Justification and a title to eternal life are exhibited to us, as the Death and Burial of Christ are symbolically undergone by us" (*Dr. Barrow*, v. p. 70); wherein we are born anew and grafted into the body of Christ, and our life is hid with Him in God. (Col. iii. 3.)

Thus "Baptism represents to us our profession, which is to follow the example of our Saviour Christ, and to be made like unto Him, that as He died and rose again for us, so we who are baptized and buried with Christ in His death, should be dead to sin and live unto righteousness," "continually mortifying all our evil and corrupt affections, and daily proceeding in all virtue and godliness of living," in order that we who are "baptized into His death may pass through the grave and gate of death to our joyful Resurrection, through His merits who died, and was buried and rose again for us, Jesus Christ our Lord."

— οὐ σαρκὸς ἀπόθεσις ῥύπου] *not the putting away the filth of the flesh.* St. Peter contrasts the *Christian Baptism* (βάπτισμα) with the *Jewish washings* (βαπτισμοί). "What is the use of that baptism which only cleans the *flesh*? Be ye baptized in your souls," says *Justin Martyr* to the Jew Tryphon, capp. 14 and 18.

— ἐπερώτημα] *an interrogatory.* The baptism which saveth us is not, as legal purifications were, a cleansing of the flesh from outward impurity, but it is ἐπερώτημα, an *interrogative trial* of a good conscience towards God. *Hooker*, V. lxiii.

St. Peter lays stress here on the ἐπερώτημα, or *questioning*, rather than on the *answering*, because to *save* is the act of God, and it is God Who *originates* the work of the Baptismal covenant by His *interrogation*, "Dost thou believe?" "Wilt thou obey?"

But St. Peter also marks *man's* part as necessary, by saying

that it is the interrogation of a *good conscience*, εἰς Θεόν, *towards God*, Who reads the heart; this it is which *saveth*, i. e. which is the instrument in God's hand for saving man.

The interrogatory examinations and trials of the Faith and Obedience of Catechumens before the Administration of the Sacrament of Baptism are described in the primitive records of the Church. See the address of St. Philip to the Eunuch, Acts viii. 37. *Justin Martyr*, writing in the second century, says (Apol. i. c. 61), "As many persons as believe that the things which we preach are true, and who *promise* to live accordingly . . . are brought to a place where is water, and are made *regenerate* by the same way of Regeneration as we ourselves are regenerate, and are baptized in water in the name of the Father of all, and of Jesus Christ our Saviour, and of the Holy Ghost." *Tertullian*, in the same century, describes the *baptismal interrogatories* and *vow* of Renunciation, Faith, and Obedience; De Spectac. c. 4, De Coronâ Milit. c. 3, and De Resurrectione Carnis, c. 48, where he says, "Anima non lavatione sed responsione sancitur." Cp. *Cyprian*, Epist. 70. 76. 85. *S. Hippolytus*, Theophan. c. 10. *Origen*, Exhortatio ad Martyr. c. 12, and *Vales.* in Euseb. vii. 8, and *Euseb.* vii. 9, where *Dionysius*, Bp. of Alexandria, in the third century, speaks of a person who was present at the baptism of some who were lately baptized and heard the *questions* and *answers*, τῶν ἐπερωτήσεων καὶ ἀποκρίσεων. It is of these baptismal ἐπερωτήσεις that St. Peter is here speaking.

The reading of the Vulgate is "interrogatio bonæ conscientiæ in Deum," and the Greek Expositors interpret the word ἐπερώτημα by ἐξέτασις or ἐκζήτησις (*Theophyl.* p. 373), and by ἀρραβὼν, ἐνέχυρον, and ἀπόδεξις, a *pledge* or *stipulation* (*Æcum.*). Cp. *Estius* and *Grotius* here, and *Bingham*, Antiquities, xi. chap. vii., and *Dr. Waterland* on Justification, p. 440, who says, "St. Peter assures us that Baptism saves: that is, it gives a just title to salvation, which is the same as to say that it conveys *justification*. But then it must be understood, not of the *outward washing*, but of the *inward lively faith stipulated* in it and by it; Baptism concurs with Faith, and Faith with Baptism, and the *Holy Spirit* with both; and so the merits of Christ are savingly applied. Faith alone will not ordinarily serve in this case, but it must be a *contracting* faith on *man's* part; contracting in form corresponding to the federal promises and engagements on *God's* part; therefore *Tertullian* rightly styles Baptism *obsignatio fidei, testatio fidei, sponsio salutis, fidei pactio*, and the like." See note above, on Heb. x. 21.

De Wette also and *Huther* understand the word ἐπερώτημα in this sense, and so Professor *Blunt* (Early Church, pp. 36, 37), who observes that "it is certain that there was a public form of Baptism of the most primitive, even of an Apostolic date," for which he cites this passage, and Heb. vi. 1, 2; cp. Rom. x. 10; and thence we may recognize the scriptural and primitive character of the Interrogatories and Vows of Renunciation, Faith, and Obedience in the Office for the Administration of Baptism in the Book of Common Prayer of the United Church of England and Ireland. Cp. *Palmer's* Origines Liturgicæ, chap. v. sect. ii.—iv.

For a reply to the Anabaptist objection that interrogatories ought not to be addressed to *Infants* who cannot answer them with their own mouths, see *Hooker*, V. lxiv.

22. ὑποταγέντων αὐτῷ ἀγγέλων] *Angels being subjected to Him.* A protest against the heresies of the Apostolic age which subordinated Christ to Angels. See on Col. ii. 8, and *Tertullian* (Præscr. Hær. 33), speaking of Simon Magus, "Simonianæ magiæ disciplina Angelis serviens, utique et ipsa inter idololatrias deputabatur, et à Petro Apostolo in ipso Simone damnabatur." On St. Peter's encounter with Simon Magus, see above, *Introduction*, p. 37, and to the Second Epistle; and Acts viii. 9, 10.

CH. IV. 1. ὑπὲρ ἡμῶν] *for us*: not in B, C, but in A, G, K, and most cursive MSS., and in the Syriac and Coptic Versions, and many Greek Fathers.

— ὀπλίσασθε] *arm ye yourselves*—as soldiers, against the lusts, which *war* against the soul; ii. 11.

1, 2. ὅτι ὁ παθὼν ἐν σαρκὶ] *because he that suffered*, as Christ suffered, in the flesh, hath rested (πέπαυται) from sin, as Christ rested in the grave on the sabbath of His burial; he who has thus suffered, rises again from the grave of sin by a spiritual Resurrection; *not to live* any longer in subserviency to the lusts of man, but to the will of God. See below, on Rev. xx. 6.

θρώπων ἐπιθυμίαις, ἀλλὰ θελήματι Θεοῦ, τὸν ἐπίλοιπον ἐν σαρκὶ βιώσαι χρόνον.

c Ezek. 44. 6.
& 45. 9.
Acts 17. 30.
Eph. 4. 17.
d Isa. 8. 18.
Acts 13. 45.
ch. 3. 16.
e Acts 10. 42.
1 Cor. 15. 51, 52.
f John 5. 25.
ch. 3. 19.
g Matt. 26. 41.
Luke 21. 34, &c.
Rom. 13. 12.
Phil. 4. 5.
Col. 4. 1.
ch. 5. 8.
2 Pet. 3. 9, 11.
1 John 2. 18.
h Prov. 10. 12.
1 Cor. 13. 7.

^{3 c} Ἀρκετὸς γὰρ ἡμῖν ὁ παρεληλυθὼς χρόνος, τὸ βούλημα τῶν ἐθνῶν κατεργάσθαι, πεπορευμένους ἐν ἀσελγείαις, ἐπιθυμίαις, οἰνοφλυγίαις, κώμοις, πότοις, καὶ ἀθεμίτοις εἰδωλολατρείαις· ^{4 d} ἐν ᾧ ξενίζονται μὴ συντρεχόντων ὑμῶν εἰς τὴν αὐτὴν τῆς ἀσωτίας ἀνάχυσιν, βλασφημοῦντες· ^{5 e} οἱ ἀποδώσουσι λόγον τῷ ἐτοίμως ἔχοντι κρίναι ζῶντας καὶ νεκρούς· ^{6 f} εἰς τοῦτο γὰρ καὶ νεκροῖς εὐηγγελίσθη, ἵνα κριθῶσι μὲν κατὰ ἀνθρώπους σαρκὶ, ζῶσι δὲ κατὰ Θεὸν πνεύματι.

^{7 g} Πάντων δὲ τὸ τέλος ἤγγικε· σωφρονήσατε οὖν, καὶ νήψατε εἰς προσευχάς.

^{8 h} Πρὸ πάντων δὲ τὴν εἰς ἑαυτοὺς ἀγάπην ἐκτενῆ ἔχοντες, ὅτι ἀγάπη καλύπτει

He that has been crucified *with Christ in his flesh* (Rom. vi. 6; viii. 2. Gal. vi. 14), that is, he that is crucified and dead to carnal lusts (Gal. ii. 19, 20), has been buried with Christ unto death, and has "put off the body of sin in the flesh," in baptism, and has found in this baptismal burial a spiritual *rest* or *sabbath* from sin; and as Christ was raised from the dead on the first day of the week, so he rises again to God, in order to serve in newness of life. He is dead unto sin, and "his life is hid with Christ in God." Col. iii. 3. See above on i. 21, and *Gerhard* and *Calvin* here.

3. χρόνος] *Elz.* adds τοῦ βίου,—not in A, B, C.

—βούλημα] *desire*. So A, B, C. *Elz.* has θέλημα, *will*. On the difference between θέλω and βούλομαι see 1 Thess. ii. 18. Philem. 13, 14. There is a force in the contrast here. Formerly they were subservient to the *desire* (βούλημα) of the *Heathen*, but now they are obedient to the *will* (θέλημα) of God. See ii. 15; iii. 17; iv. 2. 19.

—κατεργάσθαι] *to have wrought*. So A, B, C, a reading much preferable to that of *Elz.*, κατεργάσασθαι.

—οἰνοφλυγίαις] "temulentiis;" *swillings of wine*: from οἶνος and φλύω, φλύω, to swell, as it were, with boiling heat (φλέγω, φλόξ). See *Wetstein*, p. 693.

4. ξενίζονται] *they are surprised*, as by some strange apparition. Cp. Acts xvii. 20, ξενίζοντα εἰσφέρεις: below, v. 12. The word is used in this sense by *Polybius*, *Plutarch*, *Philo*, and *Josephus*; see the passages in *Wetstein*, pp. 566 and 694. Compare the use of ξενισμός, *surprise*, in *Ignatius ad Ephes.* c. 19, and *Dr. Jacobson's* note. The servant of God seems like a strange prodigy to the world. Even the *Heathen* writers of the post-apostolic age could thus speak, "Rari quippe boni, numero vix sunt totidem quot Thebarum portæ . . . Nunc si depositum non inficietur amicus, . . . Prodigiousa fides, et Tuscis digna libellis, . . . Egregium sanctumque virum si cerno, bimembri Hoc monstrum puero, vel mirandis sub aratro Piscibus inventis, et fetæ comparo mulæ." *Juvenal*, xiii. 24. 60—66.

—μὴ συντρεχόντων ὑμῶν εἰς τὴν αὐτὴν τῆς ἀσωτίας ἀνάχυσιν] *because you do not run together*, like foul streams flowing together into one and the same sink, or sewer (*sentina*), of *licentiousness*.

A strong and expressive metaphor; especially in countries where after violent rains the gutters are suddenly swollen and pour their contents together with violence into a common sewer. Such is the Apostolic picture of vicious companies rushing together in a filthy confluence for reckless indulgence and effusion in sin. Cp. *Juvenal* iii. 63, "Jam pridem Syrus in Tiberim defluxit Orontes," &c., and *G. Dyer's* description of the Ruins of Rome, vv. 62—66.

5. κρίναι ζῶντας καὶ νεκρούς] *to judge the quick* (i. e. those who will be alive at His second coming) *and the dead*; and thus to judge *all*. See above, on 1 Thess. iv. 17. 1 Cor. xv. 51.

6. νεκροῖς] *dead in sins*. See Eph. ii. 1. Col. ii. 13. Rev. iii. 1. "Animâ mortuis," *Aug. Epist.* 164. *Clemens Alexand.* and *Cassiodorus* here. No valid objection to this interpretation of νεκροῖς is to be found in the allegation, that in the preceding verse νεκροὺς means men *physically* dead. Precisely the same transition from one meaning of νεκρός to another, is found in our Lord's saying, "Let the dead bury their dead," Matt. viii. 22, and cp. John v. 25—29, where see the notes.

The argument of the Apostle is clear; They who revile you with blasphemous words for not running together with them in their godless and riotous excesses, will be required to *render an account* (of this their reviling and blasphemy) to Him who is *ready to judge the quick and the dead*. For (γὰρ) *the Gospel was preached even to men dead in sin* (as ye yourselves sometimes were, vv. 2, 3), *for this purpose, in order that they might be judged or condemned* (vilified by the world, as you are) *according to men, in the flesh; but should live to God in the Spirit*.

Therefore, since your *godly life* in the *spirit* is the end and design of the preaching of the Gospel of God, and since the mockery you encounter, and the condemnation you endure from ungodly men in the flesh, were consequences contemplated by Him, even in the publication of the Gospel—which is man's moral probation, an odour of life to some, and an odour of death to others (2 Cor. ii. 16)—it is certain that they who revile and condemn you for accepting the Gospel of God will have to *render an account to Him who is the judge of quick and dead*.

—ἵνα] *in order that they may be judged*, condemned indeed according to men (that is, according to human judgments and in human respects), *in the flesh* (see on this use of κατὰ, 1 Cor. iii. 3; xv. 32. 2 Cor. vii. 9. *Winer*, p. 358), but should live according to God, that is, in God's eye, with a view to God and by His power and love, in life eternal, *in the spirit*.

On this use of ἵνα, *in order that*, see John ix. 39; xii. 38. 1 Cor. xi. 19. *Winer*, p. 406.

Christ was condemned and crucified in the flesh by men,—Pilate, the Chief Priests, and People;—but He *was quickened in His spirit* even by death (see iii. 18, 19), and He liveth for ever to God (Rom. vi. 10). So, subsequently, St. Peter himself was judged and killed by Nero, *according to men in the flesh*; but by death he gained new life in the *spirit*; his death was gain to him, for it was his passage to life eternal.

This may be predicated of all those who suffer for Christ in the flesh; they live by dying; they are judged and condemned by the world, but they receive power to "sit on thrones," and to "judge the world:" see below, on Rev. xx. 4—6.

In a certain sense also, this act of *judging* the righteous by worldly trials may be called an act of the judicial power of God, who uses even evil men to try and judge the good in this world, for their probation, and for his glory. See below, v. 17.

This is the condition of all, who were once dead *in spirit*, and alive in carnal respects, but who have been raised from the death of sin by Him who is the Life. Their lot is to be condemned by worldly judgments, to suffer in carnal respects; but their privilege and reward it is, to live in the spirit the life of God here, and to dwell with Him in life eternal hereafter. *S. Augustine* (Epist. 164. 21) thus expounds these words; "For this cause the Gospel was preached to the *unbelieving*, in order that when they had believed they might be judged in divers tribulations, and even in the death of the flesh, but might live according to God in the spirit, in which spirit they were dead, as long as they continued in sin."

8. ἐκτενῆ] *intense*; stretching itself forward to the end without interruption: an epithet applied to Prayer, made *continuously*, Acts xii. 5; and also to Love, above, i. 22.

There is always to be a *habit* of prayer in the soul, and a *habit* of love in the heart—it is to reach continuously from the beginning of life to the end; although there may not always be an opportunity of exercising it in the outward acts specified in the foregoing precepts.

—ἀγάπη καλύπτει] *Love covereth a multitude of sins*. A general expression, describing the virtue of Love, which renders the merits of Christ applicable to the covering of the sins of others and also our own. See note on James v. 20, and Matt. xxv. 35—46, where Love to men in Christ is represented as the future test at the day of Judgment.

St. Peter's words are quoted by *Clemens Rom.* i. 49. *Tertullian*, *Scorp.* c. 6, and *Augustine* (in Joann. Epist., Tract. i.), who says that Love alone covers sins, because Love is the fulfilling of the law, and is the opposite of all sins; and he often applies this argument in extenuation of the error of *S. Cyprian*, in the matter of heretical baptism. See *Aug. de Baptismo*, ii. c. 1; iv. c. 6; vi. 2: c. *Gaudent.* ii. 8.

St. Peter had spoken of Love, *stretching itself out* without

πλήθος ἁμαρτιῶν ^{9 i} φιλόξενοι εἰς ἀλλήλους, ἄνευ γογγυσμοῦ. ^{10 k} Ἐκαστος καθὼς ἔλαβε χάρισμα, εἰς ἑαυτοὺς αὐτὸ διακονοῦντες, ὡς καλοὶ οἰκονόμοι ποικίλης χάριτος Θεοῦ. ^{11 l} Εἴ τις λαλεῖ, ὡς λόγια Θεοῦ· εἴ τις διακονεῖ, ὡς ἐξ ἰσχύος ἧς χορηγεῖ ὁ Θεός· ἵνα ἐν πᾶσι δοξάζεται ὁ Θεὸς διὰ Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ, ᾧ ἐστὶν ἡ δόξα καὶ τὸ κράτος εἰς τοὺς αἰῶνας τῶν αἰώνων· ἀμήν.

^{12 m} Ἀγαπητοὶ, μὴ ξενίζεσθε τῇ ἐν ὑμῖν πυρώσει πρὸς πειρασμὸν ὑμῖν γινόμενῃ, ὡς ξένου ὑμῖν συμβαίνοντος. ^{13 n} ἀλλὰ, καθὸ κοινωνεῖτε τοῖς τοῦ Χριστοῦ παθήμασι, χαίρετε, ἵνα καὶ ἐν τῇ ἀποκαλύψει τῆς δόξης αὐτοῦ χαρῇτε ἀγαλλιώμενοι. ^{14 o} Εἰ ὀνειδίζεσθε ἐν ὀνόματι Χριστοῦ, μακάριοι· ὅτι τὸ τῆς δόξης καὶ τοῦ Θεοῦ Πνεῦμα ἐφ' ὑμᾶς ἀναπαύεται κατὰ μὲν αὐτοὺς βλασφημεῖται, κατὰ δὲ ὑμᾶς δοξάζεται. ^{15 p} Μὴ γάρ τις ὑμῶν πασχέτω ὡς φονεὺς, ἢ κλέπτης, ἢ κακοποιὸς, ἢ ὡς ἀλλοτριοεπίσκοπος. ^{16 q} εἰ δὲ ὡς Χριστιανὸς, μὴ αἰσχυνέσθω, δοξαζέτω δὲ τὸν Θεὸν ἐν τῷ ὀνόματι τούτῳ. ^{17 r} ὅτι ὁ καιρὸς τοῦ ἄρξασθαι τὸ

i Rom. 12. 13.
Phil. 2. 14.
Heb. 13. 2.
k Prov. 3. 28.
Matt. 25. 14.
Luke 12. 42.
Rom. 12. 6.
1 Cor. 4. 1, 2.
& 12. 4.
Eph. 4. 11.
1 Rom. 12. 6—8.
m Isa. 48. 10.
1 Cor. 3. 13.
ch. 1. 7.
n 2 Cor. 4. 10.
Phil. 3. 10.
Col. 1. 24.
2 Tim. 2. 10.
o Matt. 5. 10, 11.
ch. 2. 20. & 3. 14.
p ch. 2. 20.
q Isa. 10. 12.
Jer. 25. 29.
& 49. 12.
Luke 23. 31.
& 10. 12.

interruption; and the passage of St. James (v. 20), considered together with the context here, where St. Peter is presenting Christ as their example, may suggest a belief, that he is comparing the act of Love to that of the Cherubim *stretching out* their wings on the Mercy Seat, and forming a part of the Mercy Seat (Exod. xxv. 18—20), the emblem of Christ's propitiatory covering of sins (see on Rom. iii. 21—25).

It is observable that the LXX use the words ἐκτείνειν τὰς πτέρυγας to describe the act of the Cherubim stretching out their wings, which touched one another, and reached continuously from one wall of the Holy of Holies to the other. Exod. xxv. 20; xxxvii. 9. Cp. 2 Chron. iii. 7—13; v. 7, 8.

The office of Love may also be compared to the act of the Patriarch's two dutiful sons, stretching out the garment on their shoulders, with their eyes averted from him, and covering the nakedness of their father. Gen. ix. 23.

Elz. has ἡ ἀγάπη καλύψει, *charity will cover*; but the reading in the text is that which has the preponderance of authority, and is adopted by Lach., Tisch., Alford. Cp. Prov. x. 12, LXX.

10. χάρισμα] *a gift*, of the Holy Ghost; see 1 Cor. i. 7. St. Peter appears to be studiously imitating and enforcing here St. Paul's admonition, Rom. xii. 6—8.

11. εἴ τις λαλεῖ, ὡς λόγια Θεοῦ] *if any one speaks*, in teaching, let him speak *as do the oracles of God*. The words λόγια Θεοῦ are used without any definite article, to designate the *Holy Scriptures* of God, as being sufficiently definite in themselves, and having the distinctness of a *proper name*. See Winer, § 19. Rom. iii. 2. Cp. 2 Tim. iii. 15, 16. Gal. i. 8.

Hence the *Holy Scriptures* are called simply τὰ λόγια by S. Polycarp, ad Phil. c. 7.

This precept of St. Peter deserves the consideration of those who claim to be his successors, and profess great reverence for his authority, and yet derogate from the dignity of the *oracles of God*, and set up oracles of their own, in place of the Scriptures, and against them. See on 2 Tim. iv. 3. Rev. xi. 3—10.

The delivery of this precept was very appropriate at a time when almost the whole Canon of the New Testament was complete. See 2 Pet. iii. 16.

12, 13. ἀγαπητοί] *beloved*, be not surprised, as by some strange thing (see v. 4), by the fire of persecution kindled for your trial.

Here is a caution against another dangerous error of the Gnostic Teachers, who said, that provided men had *knowledge*, they need not be *martyrs*; and allowed men to comply with the requirements of their persecutors, and to eat meats offered to *idols*, rather than to suffer martyrdom. Cp. Rev. ii. 20, and the *Introduction* to the Second Epistle of St. Peter.

On the contrary, St. Peter, in his Epistles, declares the blessedness of suffering for Christ. This is one of their characteristics, probably derived from the writer's personal view of Christ's *Glory*, when Moses and Elias spake with Him of His *Passion* (Luke ix. 31) in the Transfiguration (Matt. xvii. 2). Cp. Tertullian, Scorp. 12, who quotes this passage, vv. 12—16.

The *glory* and *happiness* of suffering for God in the fire of persecution might also well occur to his mind at *Babylon*, where he is writing, and where he would be cheered by a remembrance of the three faithful children walking unhurt in the fiery furnace, with the Son of God. (Dan. iii. 1—25.)

This mention of the near approach of a fiery trial, intimates that this Epistle was written a short time before the Neronian persecution, A.D. 64. See above, *Introduction* to this Epistle,

VOL. II.—PART IV.

p. 41, and the *Introduction* to St. Paul's Epistles to Timothy, pp. 417. 423, and below, v. 17.

15. μὴ γάρ] Cp. James i. 7.

— ἀλλοτριοεπίσκοπος] one who sets himself up as an *overseer* and censor of what belongs to *others*; a judge of other men's servants. Cp. Rom. xiv. 4. James iv. 12. "Alieni speculator," Tertullian, Scorp. 12.

This word is applicable to those who assume spiritual functions which do not belong to them, and intrude into other men's dioceses; and it may be applied to those who call themselves successors of St. Peter, and yet, in contravention of his precept, claim to be "Episcopi Episcoporum."

16. Χριστιανός] *a Christian*; the name given first to believers at Antioch (Acts xi. 26), of which city St. Peter was Bishop. See note there, and Euseb. iii. 36.

— ὀνόματι] *name*. So A, B, and many Cursives, Versions, and Fathers. Elz. has μέρει. Cp. Polycarp, Ep. 8, who says, "If we suffer for His name, let us glorify Him."

17. ὅτι ὁ καιρὸς] *for it is now the season of the beginning of judgment at the house of God*. Here is another proof that this Epistle was written on the eve of Persecution, see vv. 12, 13. The time is now arrived for it: we are ripe for Persecution. Let no one, therefore, be perplexed or cast down, for it is now the season of the beginning of judgment at the house of God. Ye are tried by Him with *temporal* judgments, in order that ye may not be condemned with the world (1 Cor. xi. 32), but be purified by the furnace of trial, as silver and gold in the fire, i. 7. Observe, he calls it a *season*, καιρὸς, not χρόνος, and thus suggests the comfortable reflection, that the *tyranny* of the enemy will soon be *overpast*. Ps. lvii. 1. Κρίμα is properly the *sentence*, or *doom*, pronounced by the Judge; and so differs from κρίσις, which is the *act* of judging. See Heb. vi. 2.

"When holy men are punished," says Augustine, "this also proceeds from the *just judgment of God*. It is part of His discipline, which no righteous man is permitted to escape in this world. 'He chasteneth whom He loveth, and scourgeth every son whom He receiveth' (Heb. xii. 6). Hence the Apostle Peter, when exhorting the brethren to endure sufferings for the Name of Christ, thus speaks (vv. 15—18); and by these words he shows that the sufferings of the *righteous* proceed from the judgment of God, which begins with the *house of God*; whence we may infer, how awful will be the sufferings which are reserved for the *ungodly*: and so St. Paul says, 'we glory in you for your patience and faith in the persecutions and tribulations which ye endure, as a specimen of the *just judgment of God*'" (2 Thess. i. 4, 5. S. Augustine, Epist. ad Rom. i. 10).

Judgment must begin at the house of God, who out of His tender care for their well-doing will sooner punish—temporarily I mean—His own children (when they take pride in their own inventions, and soothe themselves in their own devices) than He will His professed enemies, that stand at defiance with Him, and openly fight against Him. These He suffereth many times to go on in their impieties, that he may make use of this oppression for the scourging those of His own household, and in the end get Himself the more glory by their destruction. But then however judgment may begin at the house of God, most certain it is, that it shall not end there; but reach the house of the wicked oppressor also; and that, not with *temporal* judgments, as He did correct His own, but, without repentance, evil shall hunt them to their everlasting destruction (Ps. cxl. 11). God delighteth to get Himself honour, and to show the strength of His arm by scattering such proud Pharaohs in the imagination of their hearts (Exod.

K

r Prov. 11. 31.
s Ps. 31. 6.
Luke 23. 46.
a Luke 24. 48.
Rom. 8. 17, 18.
b Acts 20. 28.
1 Tim. 3. 3.
Tit. 1. 7.
c 1 Cor. 3. 5.
2 Cor. 1. 24.
Phil. 3. 17.
2 Thess. 3. 9.
1 Tim. 4. 12.
Tit. 2. 7.
d Isa. 40. 11.
Ezek. 34. 23.
John 10. 11.
1 Cor. 9. 25.
2 Tim. 4. 8.
Heb. 13. 20.
James 1. 12.
ch. 1. 4. & 2. 25.
e Prov. 3. 34.
Rom. 12. 16, 18.
Eph. 5. 21.
Phil. 2. 3.
James 4. 6.
f Job 22. 29.
Prov. 29. 23.
Matt. 23. 12.
Luke 1. 52.
& 14. 11. & 18. 14.
James 4. 10.
g Ps. 37. 5.
& 55. 23.
Matt. 6. 25, 26.
Luke 12. 22.
Phil. 4. 6.
1 Tim. 6. 8. Heb. 13. 5.

κρίμα ἀπὸ τοῦ οἴκου τοῦ Θεοῦ. Εἰ δὲ πρῶτον ἀφ' ἡμῶν, τί τὸ τέλος τῶν ἀπειθούντων τῷ τοῦ Θεοῦ εὐαγγελίῳ; ¹⁸ καὶ εἰ ὁ δίκαιος μόλις σώζεται, ὁ ἀσεβὴς καὶ ἁμαρτωλὸς ποῦ φανεῖται; ¹⁹ Ὡστε καὶ οἱ πάσχοντες κατὰ τὸ θέλημα τοῦ Θεοῦ, ὡς πιστῷ κτιστῇ παρατιθέσθωσαν τὰς ψυχὰς αὐτῶν ἐν ἀγαθοποιΐαις.

V. ¹ Ἀπρεσβυτέρους τοὺς ἐν ὑμῖν παρακαλῶ ὁ συμπρεσβύτερος καὶ μάρτυς τῶν τοῦ Χριστοῦ παθημάτων, ὁ καὶ τῆς μελλούσης ἀποκαλύπτεσθαι δόξης κοινωνός. ² ποιμάνετε τὸ ἐν ὑμῖν ποίμνιον τοῦ Θεοῦ ἐπισκοποῦντες μὴ ἀναγκαστῶς, ἀλλ' ἐκουσίως· μηδὲ αἰσχροκερδῶς, ἀλλὰ προθύμως. ³ μὴδ' ὡς κατακυριεύοντες τῶν κλήρων, ἀλλὰ τύποι γινόμενοι τοῦ ποιμνίου. ⁴ καὶ φανερωθέντος τοῦ Ἀρχιποίμενος κομιεῖσθε τὸν ἀμαράντινον τῆς δόξης στέφανον.

⁵ Ὁμοίως, νεώτεροι ὑποτάγητε πρεσβυτέροις· πάντες δὲ ἀλλήλοις τὴν ταπεινοφροσύνην ἐγκομβώσασθε· ὅτι ὁ Θεὸς ὑπερηφάνοις ἀντιτάσσεται, ταπεινοῖς δὲ δίδωσι χάριν. ⁶ Ταπεινώθητε οὖν ὑπὸ τὴν κραταιὰν χεῖρα τοῦ Θεοῦ, ἵνα ὑμᾶς ὑψώσῃ ἐν καιρῷ. ⁷ πᾶσαν τὴν μέριμναν ὑμῶν ἐπιρρίψαντες ἐπ' αὐτὸν, ὅτι αὐτῷ μέλει περὶ ὑμῶν.

⁸ Νήψατε, γρηγορήσατε· ὁ ἀντίδικος ὑμῶν, Διάβολος, ὡς λέων ὠρυόμενος

h Job 1. 7. Luke 21. 16. & 22. 31. 1 Thess. 5. 6. ch. 1. 13. & 4. 7.

xiv. 17. Luke i. 52. Rom. ix. 17), when they are arrived at the highest pitch of their designs; then how suddenly do they consume, perish, and come to a fearful end! (Ps. lxxiii. 18.) *Bp. Sanderson*, iii. p. 342. See also above, on Acts ix. 3.

19. παρατιθέσθωσαν] let them commit: our Lord's own word on the cross. Luke xxiii. 46.

CH. V. 1. πρεσβυτέρους] the Presbyters: an indication of the organization of the Christian Church under a settled ministry in Asia Minor at this time. Cp. above, Acts xiv. 23, and on James v. 14.

— ὁ συμπρεσβύτερος] your co-presbyter: the Apostle St. John calls himself the presbyter (2 John 1. 3 John 1), and in the third century *S. Hippolytus* calls his master, *S. Irenæus* (who was Bishop of Lyons), the blessed Presbyter (Philos. pp. 202. 222). A Presbyter is not called a Bishop by ancient Ecclesiastical writers, but a Bishop is often called a Presbyter.

2. ποιμάνετε] tend ye the flock that is among you: do not leave your own flock, in order to tend other people's flocks, as ἄλλοτρισεπίσκοποι (iv. 15), but tend the flock that is in you, ἐν ὑμῖν; make that your care. Observe the Aorist, which, as *Dean Alford* well observes, gathers together the whole work of teaching, feeding, watching, leading, into one act, occupying the entire life. On the sense of ποιμαίνειν see above, Introduction, p. 38, note.

— ἐπισκοποῦντες] overseeing the flock. The πρεσβύτεροι, presbyters, are said ἐπίσκοπεῖν, to oversee; they are presbyters in age, and they are ἐπίσκοποι, overseers, as to office.

Hence, after the death of the Apostles, they who succeeded them in the Apostolic office, not presuming to take the name of Apostles, were called *Episcopi*; and thenceforth the name of *Episcopus*,—which in the Apostolic age had been often applied, as here, to designate those who had the oversight of a ποίμνιον or flock,—was reserved for those who had the oversight of Pastors as well as of flocks; and who are now called Bishops. Cp. Acts xx. 17. 28, and see above, Note prefixed to the Third Chapter of St. Paul's first Epistle to Timothy, and notes on 2 Tim. ii. 1, 2.

3. μὴδ' ὡς κατακυριεύοντες τῶν κλήρων]

There is a slight *paronomasia*, or play upon the words, which gives an edge to this precept.

He had just said, *Ye Presbyters, tend the flock of God that is among you, overseeing it, not of constraint, but willingly* (1 Cor. ix. 16, 17), not for filthy lucre, but of a ready mind; and he now warns them not to behave themselves as lords over the Churches committed to their charge, which are not the heritages of man, but of the Lord. See on our Lord's words to St. Peter himself, Matt. xvi. 18, *Μοῦ τὴν ἐκκλησίαν*. Consequently the usurpation of dominion and lordship over them is an encroachment on the prerogative and inheritance of the Lord Himself.

The word κλήροι does not mean here Clergy apart from the Laity, nor does it mean Laity apart from the Clergy; but it signifies the Clergy and Laity, or People, united together. It designates Christian Churches, which are the κλήροι or heritages of God, as the Israelites of old were, and are so entitled by Himself in His Holy Word, Deut. iv. 20, and ix. 29, and see *Grotius* here.

St. Peter happily uses the plural κλήροι; for, in Christian times, it is not one nation, as it had been of old, which is the chosen people and heritage of God, but all national Churches, all congregations of Pastors and People are heritages of the Lord: each "Church and each congregation," which every Pastor serves, is, in a mystical sense, as the English Ordinal declares, the "Spouse and Body of Christ." By the word κλήροι, therefore, we may understand here the faithful people of Christ, distributed in regular order into various dioceses, parishes, churches, and congregations, like the companies to which our Lord distributed the loaves and fishes by the hands of His Apostles. Mark vi. 40: cp. *A Lapide* here.

St. Peter appears to have written these words in a grateful remembrance of those which had been spoken to him by the Lord Himself; "Simon, son of Jonas, lovest thou Me?" . . . "Feed My sheep" (John xxi. 16). And he and others were warned against usurping lordship over the heritage of the Lord by Christ's language; "On this Rock (i. e., Myself) I will build of Me the Church." Let no man therefore treat it as his own. It is the Church of Me; and of Me only (Matt. xvi. 18). I have purchased it with My blood (Acts xx. 28). Let no man lord it over what belongs to the Lord.

Here is another caution from St. Peter's mouth, which may be commended to the consideration of those who call themselves his successors. "The Apostle forbiddeth *dominari in cleris*." But they who claim to be his successors are not afraid to "teach that their own judgments are infallible, and to make their definitions an universal Rule of Faith, and to require subjection to their laws and persons, as of necessity to salvation, and to be called 'Dominus Deus noster Papa'" (*Gloss. in Extrav. Papæ, Johann. xxii. Tit. xiv. 4*), &c., all which and much more is professed by the Popes, and in their behalf. No modest man can deny that this amounts to as much as St. Peter's *dominari in cleris*, even to the exercising of such lordship over the Lord's heritage, the Christian Church, as will become none but the Lord Himself, whose heritage it is. *Bp. Sanderson*, iii. p. 283.

4. ἀμαράντινον] amaranthine; literally, woven of the flower called amaranth. (*Bengel*.)

5. ἐγκομβώσασθε] clasp ye on humility; submitting yourselves one to another (cp. Eph. v. 21, ἀλλήλους as here) in the fear of God. Clasp it on as a garment (properly, a servile garment, ἐγκόμβωμα, *Pollux* iv. 119) clasped with a περόνη, fibula, or with a knot or belt; see *Eustath.* on *Homer*, Il. κ. 133, and *Suicer* in v. p. 995, and *Wetstein* here. *Bp. Pearson*, *Vind. Ignat. ii. cxiv. p. 579*, ed. *Churton*; and *Fritz*, *Opuscula*, p. 259.

In illustration of this word we may refer to the reverential action of St. Peter, described John xxi. 7. But, as *Alford* well remarks, The action which best illustrates this precept is that of our Blessed Lord Himself girding Himself with a napkin, as a servant, and pouring water into a basin and washing His Apostles' feet, in which St. Peter had a special part. See on John xiii. 4, 5, and our Lord's precept there, v. 14.

8. Διάβολος] the devil. At the time which St. Peter is pre-announcing, the Devil was, in the strictest sense of the term, a

περιπατεῖ ζητῶν τίνα καταπήρῃ· ⁹ ὃ ἀντίστητε στερεοὶ τῇ πίστει, εἰδότες τὰ ^{i Eph. 4. 27}
αὐτὰ τῶν παθημάτων τῇ ἐν κόσμῳ ὑμῶν ἀδελφότητι ἐπιτελεῖσθαι. ^{& 6. 11, 13.}
^{James 4. 7.}

¹⁰ ὁ δὲ Θεὸς πάσης χάριτος, ὁ καλέσας ὑμᾶς εἰς τὴν αἰώνιον αὐτοῦ δόξαν ^{k 2 Cor. 4. 17.}
ἐν Χριστῷ Ἰησοῦ, ὀλίγον παθόντας, αὐτὸς καταρτίσει, στηρίξει, σθενώσει, ^{Heb. 10. 37.}
θεμελιώσει ^{& 13. 21.}
¹¹ αὐτῷ ἢ δόξα, καὶ τὸ κράτος εἰς τοὺς αἰῶνας τῶν αἰώνων· ἀμήν. ^{ch. 1. 6.}

¹² Διὰ Σιλουανοῦ ὑμῶν, τοῦ πιστοῦ ἀδελφοῦ, ὡς λογιζομαι, δι' ὀλίγων ^{1 Heb. 13. 22.}

Devil, a Διάβολος, a false accuser. For he devised all manner of calumnies against the primitive Christians, and instigated even their friends to bring them before the heathen tribunals, that they might be put to death. He was then especially "the false accuser of the brethren." Cp. Rev. xii. 10. The Lion goeth about seeking those who may be made the victims of his διαβολαί, and be cast "*ad Leones*." See next note.

— ὡς λέων ὠρυόμενος] *as a lion roaring.* This was the first form in which the Devil showed his enmity against the Church of Christ; and he was now about to wreak his fury on the two Apostles, St. Peter and St. Paul.

He was now "*rugiens ut leo*," *roaring as a lion*; but he was afterwards about to change that shape, and appear in a more specious semblance, "*insidians ut draco*," *lurking in ambush as a dragon*. See below on Rev. vi. 3, 4.

Well might he now be compared to a Lion. Many of the first martyrs, e. g. St. Peter's successor at Antioch, S. Ignatius (cp. 2 Tim. iv. 17), were cast to the Lions; and the popular cry at Rome was now soon to be, "*Christianos ad Leonem!*" (*Tertullian*, Apol. 40.) The devil went about as a Lion roaring, in the days of the first persecutions of the Church, and he *will go about again roaring as a Lion* in the last age—at the eve of the end. See Rev. xii. 12; xx. 7—9.

— περιπατεῖ] *he walketh about*, Job i. 7. Therefore, the Devil is not yet confined to Hell. See above on Matt. viii. 29.

9. εἰδότες] *knowing that the same kinds of sufferings are being filled up by the brotherhood that is in every part of the world.* "No temptation hath taken you but such as is common to man," 1 Cor. x. 13. Do not be cast down, as if the sufferings, which ye are called upon to endure, were new, perpetual, or partial. They are only a continuation of the sufferings of Christ (see Col. i. 24), and they will soon be consummated, and they are shared by all your brethren in the Churches of God, throughout the world: *therefore resist the Devil*, who is the author of these persecutions; standing fast and solidly grounded *in faith*, by which ye will be more than conquerors. Eph. vi. 16. 1 John v. 4.

10. καταρτίσει—θεμελιώσει] *will perfect—will stablish*: in the future tense. So A, B, and Griesb., Lach., Tisch., Alf. Elz. has the aorist optative here, καταρτίσαι.

This assurance of divine support comes very appropriately from St. Peter, in compliance with Christ's precept to him, "When thou art converted, *strengthen thy brethren*." Luke xxii. 32. Bengel.

12. διὰ Σιλουανοῦ] *By Silvanus, the faithful brother, as I reckon, or count him to be* (Rom. viii. 18), *I write to you in few words.*

This is said to assure them, and the Churches at large, of the genuineness of the Epistle. It would be brought to them by *Silvanus, the faithful brother*, who would certify them from whom it came. This practice of the Apostles to send their Epistles to the Churches by the hands of tried and faithful friends, has been of signal use in establishing the Canonical authority of the New Testament. Cp. Eph. vi. 21.

There was something significant in this choice of *Silvanus* for the purpose here described, especially in connexion with the mention of St. Mark. *Silvanus*, or *Silas*, had been chosen by St. Paul at Antioch, about thirteen years before, in the place of *St. Mark*, who had left him in Pamphylia, and was a near kinsman of St. Barnabas (Col. iv. 10), who was led into an altercation with *St. Paul*, on account of his refusal to take Mark; and who also had before been led away by the influence of *St. Peter* at Antioch, in opposition to St. Paul, contending for the Evangelical liberty of the Gentile Christians. See on Acts xv. 37—40. Gal. ii. 12, 13.

Silas, being chosen by St. Paul in place of Mark, accompanied that Apostle in his missionary tour in Syria and Cilicia, and in divers other parts of Asia Minor, especially *Phrygia, Lycaonia, and Galatia*, to *Troas*, and into Greece. He would therefore be known, in connexion with the Apostle St. Paul, to those *Asiatic Churches* which are addressed by St. Peter in the present Epistle, i. 1.

Silas had also been associated with St. Paul in writing the two Epistles to the Thessalonians, which had been published about *ten* years before the date of the present Epistle, and had, probably, by this time been circulated in Asia.

After the date of these two Epistles to the Thessalonians, the name of Silas, or Silvanus, vanishes for a time from the pages of the New Testament.

It does not occur after that time in the Acts of the Apostles, or in any of St. Paul's other Epistles.

But it *re-appears* in this present passage (1 Pet. v. 12), at the close of the ministry of *St. Peter* (see 2 Pet. iii. 1), which coincided in time with the close of the ministry of *St. Paul*.

It here re-appears in company with the name of *St. Mark*. Cp. note above, Phil. i. 1. And the name of Silas is here characterized by St. Peter with the honourable appellation "*the faithful brother*," as I reckon."

Here then we have a happy intimation of the harmony which subsisted among the Apostles and first preachers of Christ.

They were not exempt from human infirmities. The Apostle St. Peter faltered for a time through fear at Antioch, and had then been boldly resisted by St. Paul (see on Gal. ii. 11—14). The Evangelist *St. Mark*, the son of St. Peter in the faith (v. 13), and the kinsman of St. Barnabas (Col. iv. 10), had also faltered once for a season through fear, and had once forsaken St. Paul. (Acts xiii. 13; xv. 38.) St. Paul and St. Barnabas had formerly striven so sharply at Antioch on St. Mark's account, that they departed asunder for a time (Acts xv. 39), and St. Paul had chosen Silas, or Silvanus, as his companion in the room of St. Mark.

All these infirmities are recorded in the Holy Scriptures. The New Testament does not disguise the frailties of the first preachers of Christianity. Here is an evidence of its truth.

But this is not all. We are left to gather from incidental notices *scattered in different parts* of the New Testament, that by the grace of God all these frailties and infirmities were corrected and amended; and that they were graciously overruled by God's Providence to the victory of Christian virtue, and to the good of the Church, and to His glory.

As has been already shown in another place, the strife of St. Paul and St. Barnabas had now been healed, and Mark had been restored to the favour of St. Paul, and he afterwards was chosen to be the writer of a Gospel, under the inspiration of the Holy Ghost, and with the aid of his spiritual father St. Peter, and he became the founder of the Church of Alexandria. See above, Acts xv. 39. Col. iv. 10, and *Introduction* to St. Mark's Gospel.

St. Peter now employs *Silas* to be the bearer of his Epistle to the Jewish Christians of Asia. He calls him *the faithful brother*, and he associates him with *St. Mark*, whom he calls "his son;" his son in the faith.

A happy combination. Silas had been chosen by St. Paul in lieu of St. Mark, and had preached with him in Asia, and had been associated with him in writing his first Epistle. And St. Paul, in writing to the Galatians, who are addressed in this Epistle of St. Peter (see 1 Pet. i. 1), had recorded his own contention with St. Peter, on account of his conduct toward the Gentile Christians, and had related that his own friend St. Barnabas had been formerly drawn away from him by St. Peter. (Gal. ii. 13.)

But now all differences are at an end. St. Peter, the Apostle of the Circumcision, chooses Silas, St. Paul's friend and fellow-labourer in preaching and writing, to carry this Epistle to the Jewish Christians of Asia, where Silas had formerly preached in company with St. Paul. And by this choice, and by his reference to the Epistles of his "beloved brother Paul," as a part of divinely inspired *Scripture* (see 2 Pet. iii. 15), he proclaims to the Jewish Christians his own perfect union in Christian faith and in Christian love with the great Apostle of the Gentiles.

Here was a noble example of repentance, and of generous self-sacrifice, and of love for Christ and the Church.

St. Peter avouches to his readers that St. Paul's fellow-labourer among them, Silas, is "their faithful brother." He calls St. Mark his son, who had once faltered in the faith, but who had afterwards preached to them in Asia (see on Col. iv. 10. Philem. 24), and whom St. Paul, writing from Rome to the Churches of Phrygia, mentions as being there among his own tried and trusted friends, and calls him "sister's son to *Barnabas*."

St. Paul, as well as St. Peter, now also at the close of his career, writes to Timothy about the same time as the date of this

ἔγραψα παρακαλῶν καὶ ἐπιμαρτυρῶν ταύτην εἶναι ἀληθῆ χάριν τοῦ Θεοῦ εἰς ἣν
ἑστήκατε.

m Acts 12. 12, 25.
n Rom. 16. 16.
1 Cor. 16. 20.
2 Cor. 13. 12.
1 Thess. 5. 26.

13 m Ἀσπάζεται ὑμᾶς ἡ ἐν Βαβυλῶνι συνεκλεκτῇ, καὶ Μάρκος ὁ υἱὸς μου.
14 n Ἀσπάσασθε ἀλλήλους ἐν φιλήματι ἀγάπης.

Epistle of St. Peter, and bears witness that Mark "is profitable to him for the ministry." (2 Tim. iv. 11.) And St. Peter here joins Mark with Silas, who had once been preferred in his room.

So may all wounds be healed, and all differences cease in the Church of Christ. So may all falterers be recovered, and Christian charity prevail, and God's glory be magnified in all persons and in all things, through Jesus Christ!

— δι' ὀλίγων ἔγραψα] *I write in few words*; with δι' ὀλίγων, cp. διὰ βραχέων, Heb. xiii. 22. The Epistle is *short*, relatively to the importance of the subject; and the Apostle might perhaps design to prepare them by these words to receive a *second* Epistle from him, on the *second* or *polemical* portion of the subject which now occupied his thoughts. See *Introduction* to that Epistle, below, pp. 71—74, and 2 Pet. iii. 1.

— ἔγραψα] *I write*: ἔγραψα is the *epistolary aorist*; a graceful mode of expression, by which the *writer* puts himself in the place of the *reader*, and looks at the thing written from the *reader's* point of view. See Rom. xvi. 1. Eph. vi. 21. Col. iv. 7.

— ἑστήκατε] *ye stand*. So Elz., Tisch. A, B have στήτε, *stand ye*, and so Lach., Alf.

13. ἀσπάζεται ὑμᾶς ἡ ἐν Βαβυλῶνι συνεκλεκτῇ] *the co-elect (feminine) which is in Babylon, saluteth you*. At the beginning of this Epistle St. Peter had written thus, "To the *elect* strangers of the *dispersion* of Pontus, Galatia, Cappadocia, Asia, and Bithynia." As we have already seen;

(1) They are there called *elect*;

(2) They are there called strangers of the *dispersion*, i. e. of the Jewish dispersion, scattered throughout Asia Minor.

(3) They are there enumerated in a particular geographical order, i. e. from *East to West*.

(4) They are greeted in the name of Christ, with the words, "Grace to you, and Peace be multiplied." (1 Pet. i. 1, 2.)

Hence we may infer,

That the *co-elect* who is here mentioned at the *close* of the Epistle, in *Babylon*, is of the same character as those persons who had been designated as *elect* at the beginning of this Epistle. That is to say, this word (συνεκλεκτῇ) *co-elect* designates a Christian congregation gathered principally from Jews of the *dispersion*, and thus associated, as *co-elect* in Christ, with those whom St. Peter at the beginning of this Epistle had addressed as the *elect* strangers of the dispersion of Pontus, Galatia, Cappadocia, Asia, and Bithynia. The preposition *ἐν* is a link which connects the *elect* at Babylon with the *elect* in Asia.

Accordingly we find, that in the *Vulgate*, *Syriac*, and *Arabic* Versions the word *Church* or *Congregation* is supplied here, to agree with *συνεκλεκτῇ*; and so our English *Authorized Version*, "The *Church* that is at Babylon, elected together with you, saluteth you." The word *συνεκλεκτῇ* is also understood in this sense by most Ancient Expositors.

The word seems to be left purposely elliptical, i. e. without a substantive adjoined. St. Peter would thus leave it to the reader to supply either *ἐκκλησία*, *Church*, or *διασπορά*, *Dispersion*; each of those two words being admissible and suitable, and neither to be excluded.

They to whom he writes are *elect*, and they are also the *dispersion*. The *co-elect* is a dispersion also; yet though she is *dispersed* and in *Babylon*, yet she is gathered together as a *congregation* in the Christian Sion, or Church Universal, and is *co-elect* with other *dispersed* brethren who are *gathered together* in Christ.

— ἐν Βαβυλῶνι] *in Babylon*.

What city is this Babylon?

(1) The reader's first impression is, that it is the Babylon of Assyria, the Babylon on the Euphrates; and this seems to be the right interpretation.

(2) It is true that another great City in the *West* was called *figuratively* among Jews by the name of *Babylon*; namely, *Rome*. See on Rev. xvii. 1—10.

(3) It is also true that some ancient writers supposed Babylon to mean *Rome* here. See Papias in Euseb. ii. 15, and Vales. there.

(4) It is also probable, that this Epistle was written a short time only before St. Peter's death (cp. 2 Pet. iii. 1), and that he died at *Rome* (see Euseb. ii. 25).

(5) But these considerations seem to be overbalanced by others of greater weight.

Rome was called *Babylon figuratively*. But tropes are scarcely admissible in dates, especially in Epistles like the present,

which is remarkable for its quiet tone. In details of fact, the *literal* meaning seems to be the true one: and if the *literal* meaning will stand, it ought not to be abandoned for a metaphorical one.

(6) The fact, that Rome was sometimes called Babylon figuratively, and that St. Peter was martyred at Rome, may probably have induced some in ancient and modern times to suppose, that the Babylon here mentioned is Rome; and may serve to account for that opinion.

(7) The City of Rome is mentioned in other places of the New Testament, and always by the name of *Rome* (Acts xviii. 2; xix. 21; xxiii. 11; xxviii. 14. Rom. i. 7. 15. 2 Tim. i. 17), except only in a poetical and prophetic book, the Book of Revelation, where a *figurative* name is in its proper place; and there though the word is used six times, yet it is never placed singly as *Babylon*, but always with an epithet, *Babylon the Great* (Rev. xiv. 8; xvi. 19; xvii. 5; xviii. 2. 10. 21).

(8) It has been alleged, indeed, that Babylon was *deserted* when St. Peter wrote this Epistle, and that it is not probable that the Apostle should have gone thither, and have sojourned there.

This opinion has been supported by high authorities, e. g. by Bp. Pearson (de successione Rom. Episcop. i. c. viii. vol. ii. pp. 348—53, ed. Churton), who supposed that the Babylon here mentioned is a Babylon in Egypt. Cp. Professor Blunt, Early Church, p. 59, and Hengstenberg on Rev. xiv. 8.

But it may be proved, that there were at this time large numbers of Jews resident in the province of Babylon, and not a few in Babylon itself. See Josephus, Ant. xv. 2. 2; xv. 3. 1; xvii. 2. 1—3; xviii. 9. 1; and xviii. 9. 7—9. Philo, Legat. ad Caium, § 36, p. 587. Theodoret (on Isa. xiii.) says that in his age Babylon was inhabited by Jews. Scaliger (in Euseb. p. 205) observes that from "the days of Salathiel even to the seventieth year after Christ, a Chief of the captivity was elected from the stock of David and resided at Babylon." Cp. Basnage, Annal. Pol. Eccles. A.D. 46, pp. 561—3, and Dr. Lightfoot's Sermon on this text, Works, ii. pp. 1144—6, where he says, "Babylon was one of the greatest knots (i. e. centres) of the Jews in the world. Need I tell you that there were multitudes of Jews in Babylon that returned not with Ezra? That there were in that country three Jewish Universities, and that there were ten tribes scattered in Assyria?" And it has been shown from Jewish usage, that the word Babylon need not be limited to the precise site of the ancient ruined city, but may be extended to its neighbourhood. See Wetstein, p. 698, and Vitranga in Rev. xviii. 2, "Judæi maximè Babylonem occupabant." Rennel, Geogr. of Herod. sect. xv., "So great a number of Jews was found in *Babylonia*, as is astonishing; they are spoken of by Josephus as possessing towns and districts in that country about forty years after Christ; they were in great numbers in Babylon itself." Biscoe on the Acts, i. p. 88. Wieseler, Chronol. p. 557. Mayerhoff, p. 128. Dr. Davidson's Introduction, iii. pp. 362—366. Cp. Huther, Einleitung, p. 23, and on this passage, p. 180, and Dean Alford, p. 387.

(9) There does not seem, therefore, to be any cause for discarding the *literal* meaning of the word Babylon here. On the contrary, there are strong reasons why, with many learned and able expositors, we should adhere to it.

If St. Peter had been writing from Rome or from any place to the west of Asia, he would not, in his enumeration of the Asiatic districts at the beginning of his Epistle, have mentioned Pontus first, the most eastern region of Asia. He would not have begun his enumeration with the most distant eastern district, and have proceeded, as he does, in a *westerly* direction, till he ends with Bithynia; but he would have reversed the order; he would have begun with Bithynia at the west, and would have ended with Pontus in the east.

This is what St. John does in the Apocalypse in writing from Patmos on the west of Asia. He begins with Ephesus on the west, and proceeds in an easterly direction, and ends with Laodicea in the east. Rev. i. 11; ii. 1; iii. 14.

A similar order is observed by St. Paul, writing from Rome. See Col. iv. 13. 16.

There is no exception to this principle in the enumeration in the Acts of the Apostles, ii. 9—11. There the Parthians, and Medes, and Elamites, and dwellers in Mesopotamia are placed first, for special reasons; the writer is not addressing an epistle to them, but he is speaking of the region from which they came to Jerusalem, and he naturally begins with those at a distance

Εἰρήνη ὑμῖν πᾶσι τοῖς ἐν Χριστῷ Ἰησοῦ ἀμήν.

from it, and with those who were *first expatriated* from it. See the note there.

The Geographical order adopted by St. Peter is precisely that which would naturally occur to a person writing from Mesopotamia, and sending forth an Epistle to be *read in succession* by Christian communities in different regions of Asia. He begins with Pontus, because (if we suppose him in Mesopotamia) that region was nearest to him, and his Epistle would reach Pontus first, and pass on from it to other regions in order,—*Galatia, Cappadocia, Asia, and Bithynia*.

Therefore the date of the Epistle being *Babylon*, we are led to conclude, that it was written in the literal or eastern Babylon, on the Euphrates; and not in the figurative or western Babylon, on the Tiber, Rome.

(10) There were also some special reasons for a mission of *St. Peter* to the east, especially to the Jewish Christians of those parts. He was the *Apostle of the Circumcision* (Gal. ii. 7). Assuredly it was fit that he, who had a special charge to feed Christ's flock (John xxi. 16), should go and seek the lost sheep of the house of Israel; that is, the remnant of the Two Tribes at Babylon, and the Ten Tribes in Assyria.

Besides, the Jews of those parts, who had come to Jerusalem for the great annual festivals, and had heard him preach at Jerusalem on the day of Pentecost after the Ascension of Christ, and many of whom had been baptized by him on that day, and many doubtless had been led from those regions to Jerusalem on other great festivals in succeeding years, were well acquainted with the name and person of the Apostle of the Circumcision.

Among those devout Jews who are enumerated by St. Luke in the Acts as present at the day of Pentecost, the first mentioned are *Parthians, Medes, and Elamites*, and the dwellers in Mesopotamia, that is, those who dwelt in the neighbourhood of *Babylon*. For as is well said by one of the best historians and geographers among Poets, Milton, describing the condition of the East in our Lord's age:—

"There *Babylon*, the wonder of all tongues,
All these the *Parthian* holds."

(*Paradise Regained*, iii. 280.)

See on Acts ii. 9—11. They had come from their own land to Jerusalem, and had been evangelized by St. Peter there. Surely it was very reasonable that St. Peter should go from Jerusalem to Babylon to confirm those in the faith, who had come from the neighbourhood of Babylon to Jerusalem, and had been received into the Christian Sion there, by the ministry of the word of God preached by the Apostle St. Peter. See above on i. 1.

There were also special reasons why such an Epistle as the present should be written from *Babylon*. Babylon is Babel. It had been the source of confusion of tongues. Its very name means confusion. But now, under the influence of divine grace, the curse of Babel is removed. The Holy Spirit, who came down at Pentecost at Sion, reverses the curse of Babel. At Babel mankind was scattered abroad, with a jargon of tongues. At Pentecost the Holy Ghost came down in fiery tongues, and

preached the one Gospel in all tongues. He enabled the Apostle St. Peter, who received the gift of tongues at Pentecost (1 Pet. i. 12), to preach the one Gospel to the dispersed of Israel in Babylon and the East. Thus Sion was built up in Babylon; the city of Confusion became a city of Peace.

Besides, Babylon had been the enemy and persecutor of Sion. It had carried Judah into captivity. But now it has become subject to Christ. It is His captive. It submits to His mild sway and easy yoke. He has His *elect* there. His Apostle preaches there. This is in perfect unison with all God's dispensations.

The Syrian Antioch was the city of Antiochus, the persecutor of God's people, the type of Antichrist. But in course of time, Antioch became the place where the faithful were first called Christians (see on Acts xi. 26). At Antioch Paul and Barnabas had been ordained to the Apostleship, and had been sent forth to evangelize the Gentile world (Acts xiii. 1, 2). And there St. Peter himself had presided as Bishop of the Church: see above, *Introduction*, p. 42.

Rahab or Egypt had also been the persecutor of God's people. But Christ was sheltered there in His Infancy, and in His own time God made a *highway* in Egypt for Christ (Isa. xix. 31), especially by the preaching there of *St. Peter's son* in the faith, *St. Mark*, at Alexandria. *Euseb.* ii. 16.

In like manner, Babylon is now visited by St. Peter, and has heard the Gospel of Christ, and is the place whence this Epistle goes forth to the Churches of Asia and the world. From the city of Nebuchadnezzar and Darius, who wrote to the provinces of the Assyrian Empire, "Peace be multiplied to you," now proceeds the word of the Apostle, "to the elect strangers of Asia; Grace and Peace be multiplied unto you." (See i. 2.)

Thus the prophecy is fulfilled; "The Egyptian shall serve God with the *Assyrian*, and Israel shall be the third with Egypt and Assyria (Isa. xix. 24); and I will make mention of Rahab and Babylon with them that know me" (see Ps. lxxxvii. 4).

Finally, the Apostle of the Circumcision, St. Peter, is thus seen to have carried the Gospel to the eastern limits of the Roman Empire. Thence he goes westward in order to seal his preaching with his blood (see *Tertullian* c. Marcion. iv. 5. *Euseb.* ii. 25; above, *Introduction* to this Epistle, p. 44). He goes from the Eastern Babylon in Assyria, to the Western Babylon in Italy. He goes from Babylon to Rome. He thus gives evidence of God's love to His own people, and having followed Christ to the end, and having finished his course with joy, like the Sun from East to West, he is associated with the Apostle of the Gentiles, his beloved brother St. Paul, in dying a martyr's death in the capital of the Heathen world, and having there gone down in a glorious sunset he will rise to bliss in Christ.

— Μάρκος ὁ υἱός μου] *Marcus, my son*. See above on i. 1, and on Acts xv. 39. Col. iv. 10. *Introduction* to the Gospel of St. Mark, p. 111.

14. φιλήματι ἀγάπης] *with a kiss of love*. See on 1 Thess. v. 26. Rom. xvi. 16. 1 Cor. xvi. 20. 2 Cor. xiii. 12.

INTRODUCTION

TO

THE SECOND EPISTLE GENERAL OF ST. PETER.

On the Genuineness of the Epistle.

I. THE First Epistle of St. Peter was written at a time when a Persecution of the Church was imminent, as appears from internal evidence; and for this and other reasons already stated, the date to be assigned to that Epistle is probably the year A.D. 64¹.

The Second Epistle is addressed to persons dwelling in the same countries as the First, and seems to have been written soon after it²; and was composed at a time when St. Peter was anticipating his death³. St. Peter died A.D. 68⁴.

The date of this Epistle may therefore be placed in A.D. 66, or A.D. 67.

II. To this conclusion there have been made the following *objections* :—

(1) It is not probable—it is alleged by some persons—that St. Peter would write two Epistles to the same inhabitants of the same regions at nearly the same time.

(2) Nor is it probable, it is said, that the same Author would write in so *different* a style as that of the Second Epistle, compared with the First, especially if he were writing to persons living in the *same countries* at nearly the *same time*.

The First Epistle, which was generally acknowledged in primitive times to be a genuine work of St. Peter, is composed in a quiet and subdued tone; but the second is characterized by impassioned vehemence, and poetic exuberance of language. This is more remarkable, because if this Epistle is genuine, it was written by him when he was old, and looking forward to the near approach of death⁵.

This Second Epistle is rarely quoted by primitive writers; even in the third and fourth centuries some doubts were expressed concerning its genuineness⁶; and in later days many Critics have denied it to be a work of St. Peter⁷.

III. Let us consider these objections.

1. It cannot be doubted, that there is great diversity of feeling and style between this Epistle and that which was generally received as St. Peter's, namely, his First Epistle.

But there were good reasons for this difference.

¹ See above, *Introduction* to that Epistle, pp. 40, 41.

² See below, on iii. 1.

³ See i. 14.

⁴ See *Introductions* to the First Epistle, and to the Epistles of St. Paul to Timothy, pp. 423, 424.

⁵ See 2 Pet. i. 14.

⁶ It is reckoned among the ἀντιλεγόμενα, but γνώριμα τοῖς πολλοῖς, by Eusebius, iii. 25; and in another place he says, τὴν φερομένην αὐτοῦ (of Peter) δευτέραν οὐκ ἐνδιάθηκον μὲν εἶναι παρειλήφμεν ὅμως δὲ πολλοῖς χρήσιμος φανείσα μετὰ τῶν ἑλλων ἐσπουδάσθη γραφῶν. S. Jerome is more explicit as to his own belief (Scr. Eccl. c. 1): "Simon Petrus duas Epistolas, quæ catholicæ nominantur, quarum secunda à plerisque (by many persons) ejus esse negatur, propter styli cum priore dissonantiam." And Epist. 120, he says, "Duæ Epistolæ, quæ feruntur Petri, stylo inter se discrepant, structurâque verborum; ex quo intelligimus pro necessitate rerum diversis eum usum Interpretibus." And Epist. 50, he says, "Jacobus, Petrus, Joannes,

Judas Apostoli septem Epistolas ediderunt, tam mysticas quàm succinctas, et breves pariter et longas, breves in verbis, longas in sententiis."

As to the statement of S. Jerome's master, Didymus (in Bibl. Patrum Max. iv. 236, or in Gallandi Biblioth. Patr. vi. p. 294), "Non est ignorandum, præsentem Epistolam esse falsatam;" if the words are genuine, they mean only, that this Epistle νοθεύεται, i. e. is accounted spurious by some. But these words, ascribed to Didymus, are probably not genuine, but added by a later hand, as Wolf, Pott, Mayerhoff, Guericke, and others suppose. See Guericke, p. 465, and Davidson's Introduction, iii. p. 415.

⁷ The genuineness of this Epistle is questioned by Eichhorn, De Wette, Schott, Neander, Credner, Mayerhoff, Richter, Reuss, and others; but its genuineness is maintained by Michaelis, Pott, Augusti, Storr, Hug, Flatt, Dahl, Windischmann, Heydenreich, Guericke, and others.

St. Peter had a twofold work to do; first, to *declare the truth*, next, to *refute error*.

He had executed the first of these two tasks in his former Epistle; he performs the second in the latter.

In the first Epistle he had proclaimed the great goodness and infinite love of God the Father to all mankind, in giving His own Son, to redeem the world by His death, and to open the gate of everlasting life to all; and on this basis of Christian doctrine, he had reared a superstructure of moral duty. He had stated the obligations, under which all men lie, by reason of Christ's Incarnation, and their inedification as living stones in Him Who is the Living Stone; and he had urged the motives which ought to constrain all to imitate Him Who died for all, in order that, being dead to sin, they may live to righteousness, and Who has left us "an example, that we should follow His Steps¹."

St. Peter had applied these principles, in a practical and didactic manner, to the inculcation of various precepts, concerning civil, social, and domestic duties. As a wise master-builder he had thus completed a solid work of *construction*.

If the Church of Christ had not had any enemies, who assailed her doctrinal foundations, St. Peter might have been content with having executed this work of *building up* the fabric of Christian Life, grounded on Christian Faith.

But his position was like that of the valiant and wise leader of God's ancient people, Nehemiah, in building up the Holy City after the Babylonish captivity. He and his associates were encountered by Sanballats and Ammonites, who interrupted the work, and endeavoured to overthrow it².

They had therefore a double work to do: they must *fight* as well as *build*.

This was also the case with St. Peter; he had likewise a double work to do; first, to build up the Church; and next, to fight against the foes of the faith, who scoffed at the work, and were eager to destroy it³.

False Teachers were stirred up by the Evil One to assail the Apostolic builders of the spiritual Sion, and to hinder the work, as Sanballat, Tobiah, and the Ammonites, had conspired to attack and harass Nehemiah and his comrades when building up the fortifications of Jerusalem. As then Nehemiah and his friends carried in one hand an instrument for building, and had in the other hand a weapon for defence⁴, so it was with St. Peter. In his First Epistle he had raised up the fabric of Christian Faith and Duty. In his Second Epistle he represents that foundation as already laid, and he comes forward to contend against those who would destroy it. In the one Epistle he is a Christian Builder raising up the fabric of truth; in the other he is a Christian Soldier repelling its assailants.

Here is the solution of the supposed difficulties that have been just stated. Here is an answer to the objections, grounded on the alleged improbability, that two Epistles, of different styles, would be addressed by the same person to the same parties about the same time.

2. We have a striking parallel here in the Epistle of St. Peter's "*beloved brother Paul*⁵," as he is called in this Epistle.

St. Paul had recently written two Epistles at about the same time from the same place, Rome, to the inhabitants of the same country; *first*, the Epistle to the *Ephesians*; and, *secondly*, that to the *Colossians*⁶.

Those two Epistles of St. Paul correspond in a remarkable manner with the two Epistles of St. Peter. They treat of the same doctrines: the Love of God to man in the Incarnation and Death of Christ, and of the Christian privileges and duties growing therefrom.

The Epistle to the *Ephesians* is of a *constructive* and *didactic* character, and is similar to St. Peter's First Epistle.

The Epistle to the *Colossians*, with its *polemical protests* and *denunciatory warnings* against those heresies⁷ which impugned the doctrine of the Divinity of Christ, and His Incarnation and Atonement, and the immoral consequences of those heresies, resembles the Second Epistle of St. Peter.

There was great wisdom in this arrangement, adopted by *both* these Apostles, distributing their work *into two parts*, in two Epistles respectively; the one Epistle of each being designed for the *statement of truth*; the second, for the *refutation of error*.

Many there were then in the Christian Church, as there ever have been, and are now, who were

¹ See the passages cited above in the *Introduction* to the First Epistle, p. 44.

² Neh. iv. 7, 8.

³ Especially the Simonians, Ebionites, Cerinthians, and Nicolaitans. See them described more fully in the note below, on 2 Pet. ii. 1.

⁴ Neh. iv. 17.

⁵ 2 Pet. iii. 13.

⁶ See above, *Introduction* to the Epistle to the *Colossians*, and on Col. iv. 16.

⁷ See Col. ii. 8. 16—23.

imbued with a loving and reverent spirit, and dwelt devoutly on the attributes of their Heavenly Father reconciling the World to Himself by His well-beloved Son; and who rejoiced to sit, like Mary, in quiet gentleness and meek docility at the feet of Jesus, and to learn their duty from His teaching and example; and who would shrink with feelings of pain, distress, and horror, as from a withering pestilence, from all heretical cavils, which might seem to cast any disparagement on the glorious Name of their adorable Redeemer, Who of His infinite love and mercy had condescended to take their Nature and to die for them on the Cross.

For such pious and loving minds as these, the two Holy Apostles have provided divine food: *St. Peter* in his *First Epistle*, *St. Paul* in his *Epistle to the Ephesians*. The former Apostle wrote particularly for the use of Jewish believers, the latter for Gentile Christians. They both taught the same truth, as it is in Christ, in those two Epistles; they taught it clearly and simply, without any reference to the Heresies by which it was assailed.

3. But these two Apostles knew, that it is *not enough to teach the Truth*; it is *necessary also to repel error*. The Christian Builder must be a Christian Soldier. While he works with the trowel, he must be girded with a sword¹. He must build up himself and others upon our most holy faith²; and he must also contend earnestly for it³.

They saw false Teachers speaking proud and swelling words against the Truth, and vaunting their own knowledge, and undermining the Doctrines of Christ's Divinity, Lordship, Incarnation, and Atonement, and denying the Lord that bought them, and scoffing at the doctrine of a Resurrection and Judgment to come⁴. They beheld the anarchical lawlessness which followed from these heresies; and the impure and dissolute practices⁵, which were the fruits of the teaching of those, who, like Balaam, were seducers of others to works of lust, and who, on the plea of Christian Liberty, destroyed the foundations of Christian Truth, Christian Holiness, and Christian Charity, and turned the grace of God into lasciviousness⁶; and they foresaw, that the same errors in doctrine would produce the same evil consequences in succeeding ages of the Church. Therefore each of these two Apostles, having declared severally the true doctrine in one Epistle, proceeds to complete his work, in another Epistle, by delivering also an Apostolic protest and caution against error.

This is done by *St. Paul* in his *Epistle to the Colossians*, and by *St. Peter* in his *Second Epistle*.

Thus these two Apostles, the one the Apostle of the Gentiles, the other of the Jews, are seen united in proclaiming to every age the love of God in Christ; and in warning the Church against the dangerous and deadly errors of those, who impugn the Doctrine of His Divinity and Humanity, and of the Sacrifice offered, and of the Atonement made, by Him on the Cross.

4. When these circumstances are considered, it will not seem surprising that the feeling and language of the Second Epistle of *St. Peter* should be very different from that of the First.

This difference is seen specially in the *second Chapter* of the second Epistle, where the Author is describing the erroneous and strange doctrines of the heretical teachers. That chapter of the second Epistle is very different in tone from the first Epistle; but it also differs from the two other chapters of the second Epistle⁷.

There are also many points of *resemblance* between those two Chapters and the first Epistle of *St. Peter*⁸.

The reasons of this difference between the second Chapter of the Second Epistle and the First Epistle may be thus stated. In the first Epistle *St. Peter* had been like a faithful and affectionate Shepherd, feeding and tending Christ's sheep and lambs; but in the second Epistle he is like the same Shepherd driving away the Wolves, who were ready to tear and devour those sheep and lambs, which Christ had purchased with His own blood⁹, and had specially committed to his care¹⁰.

¹ Neh. iv. 17, 18.

² Jude 20.

³ Jude 3.

⁴ 2 Pet. ii. 1. Cp. Jude 4.

⁵ 2 Pet. ii. 13—15. 17. 19.

⁶ Jude 4. Cp. 2 Pet. ii. 10.

⁷ As is well observed by *Bp. Sherlock*, *Dissertation on the Authority of this Epistle*, Discourses, vol. iv. p. 130.

⁸ Thus, for example, in the *First Epistle*, *St. Peter* dwells on the *sufferings* of Christ and of Christians as the appointed path to *glory* for Him, and through Him, for them. See i. 7. 11. 21; ii. 12; iv. 12—14. 16; v. 1. 4. 10, 11. So likewise in the *Second Epistle*, i. 3. 17; ii. 10; iii. 18. Compare his language on the nature of the Christian calling, in the *First Epistle*, i. 15; ii. 9;

v. 10, with the language on the same subject in the *Second Epistle*, i. 5. The word *ἀναστροφή*, of frequent occurrence in the *First Epistle* (i. 15. 18; ii. 12; iii. 1, 2. 16), occurs twice in the *Second* (ii. 7; iii. 11). The word *ἐπιθυμία*, used four times in the *First Epistle* (i. 14; ii. 10. 18; iii. 3), occurs also four times in the *Second* (i. 4; ii. 11. 18; iv. 2, 3). So *ἴδιος*, used in an equivalent sense to the Latin *suus* in the *First Epistle* (iii. 1. 5), and in the *Second* (i. 20; ii. 16. 22; iii. 3. 16, 17), and the word *ἀπόθεσις* in the *First Epistle* (iii. 21), and in the *Second Epistle* (i. 14), and nowhere else in the N. T. These and other parallelisms are noticed by *Windischmann*, *Vind. Petrinæ*, pp. 18, 19. *Guerike*, p. 466. *Davidson*, iii. pp. 435—440; and *Alford*, *Proleg.* pp. 153. 157.

⁹ Acts xx. 28.

¹⁰ John xxi. 15—17.

The gestures and features of the Shepherd, when, like David, he is killing the bear and the lion¹, or when, like the Shepherd described by Amos, he is taking out "of the mouth of the lion two legs or a piece of an ear²," are very different from the Shepherd's aspect, when watering his flock at the well in the evening, or when with the pastoral crook in his hand he is leading his sheep into green pastures and beside the waters of comfort.

If we consider St. Peter's natural temperament, eager, vehement, impassioned; if we contemplate the fervent and courageous Apostle, such as he was after the Day of Pentecost, and when he opened his mouth in the Sanhedrim at Jerusalem against the Chief Priests and Rulers, and preached to them Jesus of Nazareth, "whom *ye* crucified;" and "this is the Stone set at nought by you builders, which is become the headstone of the corner³;" if we remember his ardent love to Christ, a love intensified by remorse⁴; if we bear in mind the pastoral commission given him by Christ, and the prophecy of Christ, that he would follow his Master in laying down his life for Him⁵; if we recollect that he did glorify God by following Him in the manner of his death; if we remember the evidences which Christ had given to St. Peter of His tender love to him, by admitting him to the secret retirements of His Transfiguration, and His Agony; if we recollect all the personal proofs that St. Peter had of Christ's gentleness and kindness, and also of His Divine Truth, and Power, and Glory, in His Teaching, His Miracles, His Passion, His glorious Resurrection, and Ascension into Heaven, and in His sending down the Holy Ghost with the wind and fire from heaven, Whom St. Peter had as a Divine Guest living and dwelling in his heart; surely, we may say without fear of contradiction, that St. Peter would *not* have been St. Peter, if,—when viewing as he does in his Second Epistle the audacious boasting and outrageous contumelies, and insolent scoffings, and impious blasphemies of the Heretics, "who denied the Lord that bought them," and renewed the indignities of the Crucifixion, and rejected as a cunningly-devised fable the doctrine of the Union of the two Natures of God and Man in the Person of Jesus Christ, Who died for our sins, and rose again for our justification, and derided the promise, and defied the Majesty of His Second Coming to Judgment, and when he saw the sensuality and debauchery in life and manners, which flowed like polluted streams from the impure source of these Heresies,—he had stood quietly by, and looked on with calmness, and had spoken in unimpassioned language, such as he uses in his first Epistle.

The *difference* of style between the two Epistles is a natural consequence of the *difference* of their *matter*; and of the *identity* of their *Author*.

There is the *same* St. Peter in both. And *if* the second Epistle had not been *very different* in tone from the former, if it had been composed in the same equable and tranquil style as the First Epistle, every judicious critic, who has studied the character of St. Peter, and the history of the heresies of the Apostolic age, would have been reluctant to believe that the Second Epistle is from him.

The style of the Second Epistle is precisely that, which might have been anticipated from an enlarged and clear view of the circumstances of the writer. St. Peter, ardent by nature, and inspired by the Holy Ghost, speaks here with the oratorical vehemence and impassioned energy and holy indignation, and with the poetic enthusiasm of an inspired Hebrew Prophet. He becomes like a Jeremiah rebuking the errors and corruptions of the False Prophets⁶, or like an Ezekiel looking through the hole of the wall in the Temple, and seeing the abominations wrought in the Sanctuary, and what the idolatrous Priests did in the chambers of their imagery⁷.

The force of the Holy Spirit, stirring within him, vents itself in bold comparisons and imaginative metaphors, and in an impetuous flood of words. Nor was his old age any bar to this poetic outpouring of his soul. What Moses was in his old age, when he sang his last song⁸, what David was in his old age, when he chanted his last Psalm⁹, full of ardour and energy imparted by the Holy Ghost, Who inspired him; such was the aged Apostle, St. Peter, when he wrote his Second Epistle, before his martyrdom for Christ.

IV. There remains another point to be considered.

As has been already observed, the Second Epistle of St. Peter was not universally received in *primitive times* as a genuine work of the Apostle, and as a part of Canonical Scripture. If it was written by St. Peter and is an integral portion of Holy Writ, how is this to be accounted for?

¹ 1 Sam. xvii. 36.

² Acts iv. 8—12.

³ John xiii. 36; xxi. 22.

⁴ Ezek. viii. 1—12.

VOL. II.—PART IV.

⁵ Amos iii. 12.

⁶ John xxi. 15—18.

⁷ Jer. v. 31; xiv. 14.

⁸ Deut. xxxii., one of the noblest poems in the Hebrew Scriptures; written when Moses was one hundred and twenty years of age.

⁹ 2 Sam. xxii., and probably Ps. xviii.

1. Here is a question of great importance, and which concerns some other of the Catholic Epistles¹, and therefore is entitled, on general grounds, to a full and serious consideration.

We, who live now, see all the books of the New Testament collected in one printed Volume. And thus we are prone at first to form erroneous notions with regard to them. But let us divest ourselves of modern prepossessions. Let us imagine ourselves living in the second or third century. The several parts of the New Testament were originally given to the world, singly, as different Volumes, at different times, and in different places. If we had lived then, those books would have reached us one by one, and in Manuscript. Each book was to be examined separately, before it could be received as inspired. A serious question was then at issue. Is this book the work of him whose name it bears? Is it the writing of an Apostle or no? Is it the Word of God, or not?

Such questions as these were to be asked and answered with respect to each of the Twenty-seven Books which now compose the New Testament. They were to be asked by each particular Church in succession, before a book could be said to be received by the Church Universal, which is formed of all particular Churches throughout the world. Such an examination demanded much caution, and much time was requisite before it could be completed.

However, in course of time this process *was* performed. *Each* book *was* scrutinized. Each in succession passed through this searching ordeal. *Some* Books of the New Testament were immediately received by *all* Churches. This was the case with the Four Gospels and the Acts of the Apostles, and with thirteen Epistles of St. Paul, and with the *first* Epistle of St. Peter, and with the first Epistle of St. John. No doubts were entertained with respect to any of those books by any Church. They were received at once by all as genuine, and as the Word of God. And thus the New Testament, as we now possess it, was, *as to its main substance*, received in the Apostolic age, and was acknowledged to be the Word of God.

2. It was received as such, *as to its main substance*. For doubtless, there were some few other and smaller books, which are now received by us as integral parts of the New Testament, and which were indeed received as genuine and inspired by *some* Churches as soon as they were written; but *other* Churches suspended their judgment concerning them for a time.

One of *those* Books was this Second Epistle of St. Peter.

Some Churches of Christendom, in the second and third centuries, did not know this Epistle, and some reserved their judgment, and entertained *doubts* with regard to its genuineness and inspiration.

3. Let us consider how this happened.

This Epistle claims to be by St. Peter. It bears his name at the beginning. The Author speaks of an event, the Transfiguration, of which he professes to have been a witness, and at which St. Peter, with only two others of the Apostles, were present². But it was not therefore safe to conclude that it was written by St. Peter. Writings were forged in early times by heretics in the names of *Apostles*, especially in the name of *St. Peter*³. It was therefore incumbent on Christian Churches to be on their guard, and not to receive any book as written by an Apostle, and as dictated by the Holy Spirit, before they were convinced by irrefragable proofs that it was Apostolic and inspired. Little harm would arise from a temporary suspension of judgment. *If* the Epistle *was* what it professed to be, viz., a work of the Apostle St. Peter, then, in due time, it would not fail to be universally received as such. But *if* it was *not* what it claimed to be, then perhaps Heresy might steal into the Church under the venerable guise of an Apostolic name, and the Church might be convicted of reading a forgery as the Word of God; and then the Credibility and Inspiration of those *other* Books, viz., the four Gospels, the Acts of the Apostles, and the thirteen epistles of St. Paul, which *had been already received* by the Church, would be impugned; they too might be exposed to suspicion; and thus the foundations of the faith would be in danger of being overthrown.

It was therefore the *duty* of all Churches to *take time* to consider, before they received any book as the writing of an Apostle. It was their *duty* to *doubt*.

¹ Among those writings which are controverted (*ἀντιλεγόμενα*) but are recognized by the majority of persons (*τοῖς πολλοῖς*), are the Epistles of James and Jude, and the Second of Peter, and the Second and Third of John." *Eusebius*, iii. 25, where he distinguishes these writings from the *ὁμολογούμενα* on the one side, and the *νόθα* on the other.

² 2 Pet. i. 18.

³ Namely, "the Acts of Peter," and "the Gospel of Peter," and

the Apocalypse of Peter," and "the Preaching of Peter," and "the Circuits (*περίοδοι*) of Peter," and "the Epistle of Peter to James." See *Eusebius*, iii. 3, and iii. 38, and vi. 12, and *Epiphanius*, *Hæres.* xxx. § 15, and *Grabe's* *Spicilegium*, i. 55—80, ed. Oxon, 1698, where fragments from these "*Petri Apocrypha*" are collected, and *Cotelerii* *Patres Apostolici*, i. p. 608, ed. Amst. 1724, where the so-called "Epistle of Peter to James" is printed. Cp. *ibid.* p. 755.

4. Let us now proceed to observe, that there were some special circumstances in the case of *this Second Epistle of St. Peter* which made such doubts in the first instance not unreasonable.

Suppose for argument's sake the Epistle to be genuine. Then this Epistle, it would appear, was published a very short time before St. Peter's death. The Author there speaks of himself as about to *put off his earthly tabernacle*, as *the Lord had showed him*. Suppose this to be the case. Then soon after the publication of it, the Apostle would be no longer at hand, to assure the Churches in person of the genuineness of this Epistle. The testimony of the Author himself could no longer be had concerning the Authorship of the Epistle: he was no longer on earth to give it. That testimony must be collected from other quarters—from his surviving friends, such as St. Mark and others, who were scattered by Persecution into different parts of the world. It would require time to collect their evidence, and to communicate it throughout Christendom; and the Book must wait for reception, till this evidence could be procured.

Hence a *delay* would arise in the reception of the Epistle.

Besides: the Church had already received *one* Epistle of St. Peter—the *first* of the two Epistles. It was universally recognized as genuine and inspired. And when this *second* Epistle came under review, it was found that it *differed in style*—or at least some portion of it, viz., the second chapter of it,—*differed in style* from the first Epistle, known to be by St. Peter. This discrepancy of style caused doubts and demurs in some quarters¹. If the *first* Epistle was St. Peter's (and it was universally acknowledged to be so), could the other, which differed from it in style, be St. Peter's also? And if the second was his, might not some doubts be cast on the genuineness of the first?

Hence also it came to pass, that delays arose, which retarded the general reception of *this* Epistle.

5. Here we may observe two circumstances, which suggest reasons for thankfulness to Almighty God, watching over Holy Scripture.

Some persons have deduced *objections against* Scripture from the comparative lateness of the general reception of some few and smaller portions of the New Testament—particularly this Second Epistle of St. Peter.

But the fact is—this comparative *lateness* of reception furnishes a strong argument *in favour* of Scripture.

For, whence did this lateness of reception arise? From the wise caution and deliberation of the Church in this important matter. May we not say, it was due to the inspiration of the Holy Spirit Himself, preventing and restraining her from receiving any portion of His own Word without due evidence of its Genuineness and Inspiration? *If* she had acted with less caution, if she had received at once any book which presented itself bearing an Apostolic name, she might have received forgeries, she might have received heretical writings, she might have been deceived by emissaries of the Evil One, disguised as Angels of Light.

She was warned by the Holy Ghost not to *believe every spirit*, but to *try the spirits* whether they are of God². Some are praised in the Apocalypse because they *tried* them that *said they were Apostles*, and *were not*, and *found them liars*³. She would therefore make every Book pass through a period of probation, and a strict and severe ordeal;—she would summon witnesses to give evidence on its authorship; she would collect the suffrages of the Churches with regard to it, before she would pronounce her verdict, and acknowledge any Book to be the work of an Apostle, and receive it as the Word of God.

Shall we murmur or cavil because this was the case? No. Rather we may thank God that it was so. For we here see an additional reason for trust and confidence in His Holy Word. It is precisely this wise caution of the Church, this lingering prudence, or rather let us say, it is the gracious influence of the Holy Spirit Himself, to which we owe the fact, that no Book, which has gone through that probationary scrutiny, and has once been received by the Church Universal as genuine and inspired, has ever been proved to have been erroneously received as such. In two or three cases, as was before observed, the judgment of the Church was delayed, and wisely delayed, for a time, according to the sound maxim, "*Deliberandum est diu, quod statuendum est semel.*"

But in no case, when once given, has that judgment been reversed. The Canon of Scripture once formed has been stereotyped for ever.

¹ See *S. Jerome's Observations*, Cat. Script. c. 1, and Ep. cxx. c. 11.

² 1 John iv. 1.

³ Rev. ii. 2.

6. Next, it may be observed, that the circumstances, which delayed the reception of certain books for some time, *corroborate* the evidence in *favour of their reception*, now that they are received.

Thus, for example, the difference in diction between the Apocalypse and Gospel of St. John, confirms our belief that writings so different in character *would not have been received* as the works of *one person, and as divinely inspired*, unless the primitive Churches, which received them as such, had been firmly persuaded that they were what they acknowledged them to be.

So again, as to the discrepancy of style that has been noticed between the First Epistle and part of the Second Epistle of St. Peter. This delayed the reception of this Second Epistle. But now that it is received by the Church of Christ, this very discrepancy *strengthens* the argument in *favour* of its reception. For it is evident that the Apostle St. Peter, who was enabled by the Holy Ghost to speak with tongues of various nations, could *write* in different styles: and reasons have been already adduced to show, that, from the difference of the circumstances under which the two Epistles were written, and from the difference of the design of each, and from the peculiar character, temperament, and position of the Author himself, St. Peter could not have done otherwise than adopt, in the Second Epistle, a very different tone from that of the First; and it is also clear, that *another* person, wishing to palm upon the world a forgery in the name of St. Peter, would have taken good care to imitate the style of St. Peter, as seen in his First Epistle, and would also have taken good care *not* to write a chapter so different in diction from the First Epistle of St. Peter, as the second chapter of the Second Epistle is.

7. But an objection may be urged here.

The circumstances just stated may explain, *why* this Second Epistle was *not* received at once by *all* Churches of Christendom in the first and second centuries. But it may be said; *If* this Epistle is the work of St. Peter, if it is inspired Scripture,—it was so in the first Century. A book cannot *become* Scripture by lapse of time. No number of years can *make* a writing to be Apostolic, which is not Apostolic; no number of years can make a writing to be inspired which was not inspired from the first. Eternity itself cannot change the word of man into the Word of God. And this Epistle, if it is an inspired work of St. Peter, must have been *known* by *some* persons in the first century to be an inspired work of St. Peter; and must have been received by some persons as such.

Was this the case?

Certainly, it was.

8. Let us remember that the Author claims to be *St. Peter*¹. *If* this Epistle was not written by that Apostle, it is a shameless forgery; and there is good reason to believe, that such a forgery as this could not have escaped detection and exposure.

There *were* doubts concerning the genuineness and inspiration of this Epistle; and in consequence of these very doubts, its claims to be received as a canonical work of St. Peter would be scrutinized more closely. If on the one hand the Epistle was not what it professed to be, then it would certainly have been *rejected*; but if it passed through this scrutiny, and was finally recognized as genuine and canonical, then these doubts only strengthen our belief that it is what it claims to be, a work of the Apostle St. Peter.

What then is the evidence here?

9. Beginning with Apostolic times, we find that there are numerous passages² in the Epistle of St. Jude, which coincide almost word for word with passages in the Second Epistle attributed to St. Peter.

Either St. Jude's Epistle was written *before* this Epistle, or *after* it.

If it was written *before*, then it is not at all likely, that a forger should have transcribed so many paragraphs from the Epistle of one Apostle, St. Jude, and have ascribed them to another, St. Peter.

If St. Jude's Epistle was written *after* this Epistle, as is most probable³, then this Epistle must have *existed* in *Apostolic times*, and it must have been exposed and rejected as a forgery; and it is certain, that a forgery would not have been copied by the Apostle St. Jude; or rather we may say, the words of a forger would not have been repeated by the Holy Spirit, writing by the Apostle St. Jude.

Next, let us recollect, that the literary remains of the first and second centuries of the Christian Church which have been preserved to us, are very scanty, and that it is probable that this Epistle was quoted in Ecclesiastical writings which do not now survive.

¹ See i. 1, and on i. 17.

² Twelve passages at least. See below, *Introduction* to St. Jude's Epistle.

³ See the *Introduction* to that Epistle.

This inference may reasonably be derived from *later* writings.

Melito, Bishop of Sardis in the second century, in a recently discovered passage, appears to refer to this Epistle¹. This evidence is the more important, because Melito dwelt in the country to which this Epistle purports to be addressed.

The same may be said of another testimony to which we may now refer.

Firmilian², Bishop of Cappadocia, who wrote in the *third* century, speaks of Epistles by St. Peter. This testimony shows that the Church of Cappadocia had received more than one Epistle by St. Peter. And this evidence is of more value, because both these Epistles which we receive as St. Peter's are addressed to the Churches of Cappadocia and Asia³. Firmilian's Church and its neighbour Churches had received two Epistles from St. Peter. We have no evidence of the existence of any other Epistles by St. Peter than those which we possess. They are addressed to the Churches of *Cappadocia* and *Asia*. Therefore here is a strong presumption that these two Epistles were written by St. Peter.

S. Hippolytus, the scholar of Ignatius, and Bishop of Portus near Rome in the earlier part of the third century, quotes this Epistle as a genuine work of St. Peter⁴.

We have an earlier testimony from Alexandria: Clement, the celebrated Presbyter of that Church and teacher in the catechetical school there, commented on this Epistle⁵; and Origen, his scholar, the famous teacher of that School in the second century⁶, mentions *two* Epistles by St. Peter. This testimony is the more important as coming from that country, in which St. Mark, the son of St. Peter in the faith⁷, had governed the Church.

Origen, indeed, mentions that the authority of this Epistle is questioned by some⁸. Doubtless the Heretics, who are so severely censured in it, would have spared no effort to discredit and disparage it; they would have moved heaven and earth to destroy its Apostolic authority. These very doubts therefore confirm the proof in its favour.

We have seen *why* it was doubted by some—on account of discrepancy of style from the first. The fact of *doubts* existing in some places with respect to it, is a proof that it would *not* be received by them *before* its claims were scrutinized and settled. It would never have been generally received, before all doubts on this subject were cleared up.

10. And what was the *result* of the inquiry?

Eventually all doubts concerning its genuineness and inspiration *were* cleared up. It was received as an inspired work of St. Peter by *all* the Churches of Christendom. Thus these *doubts* of *some* Churches have served a most important purpose. They have been, under God's Providence, what the doubts of St. Thomas were concerning the resurrection of Christ. The result of these doubts is, that we need never doubt.

When we arrive at the fourth and fifth century after Christ, we find that at that time this Epistle was universally received throughout Christendom as an inspired writing of St. Peter. It was recognized and cited as such by S. Cyril at Jerusalem, by S. Athanasius at Alexandria, by the Council of Laodicea, by S. Gregory Nazianzen at Constantinople, by S. Epiphanius in Cyprus, by S. Augustine in Africa, by Ruffinus and Philastrius in Italy⁹. These venerable men were in earnest. They understood the importance of the question at issue,—Is this the work of an Apostle, is it the Word of God? They possessed many written documents for determining that question which *we* do not now possess. They all received this Epistle¹⁰. And let us consider,—to what did this reception amount? It amounted to no less than this—that this Epistle was to be read in Christian Churches to Christian congregations as the work of an Apostle; it was to be read as Canonical Scripture, as of equal Authority with the writings of Moses and the Prophets,—as the Word of the Holy Ghost.

¹ See note below, on 2 Pet. iii. 6.

² Firmilian ap. Cyprian., Epist. lxxv., "Infamans Petrum et Paulum beatos Apostolos, qui in Epistolis suis *hereticos* execrati sunt, et ut eos evitemus monuerunt." The reference is to 2 Pet. ii. 1, and there is no mention of heresies or heretics in the *First* Epistle.

³ 1 Pet. i. 1. 2 Pet. iii. 1.

⁴ See Hippolytus de Consummatione Sæculi, § 10. It is probable that this work is interpolated, but there are also references to this Second Epistle in the recently-discovered treatise of S. Hippolytus, pp. 290. 292, 293. 296. 299, in the present Editor's Volume on S. Hippolytus; or pp. 337—339, ed. Miller.

⁵ Euseb. vi. 14.

⁶ Origen in Jesu Nav., hom. 8, "Petrus duabus Epistolarum personat tubis."

⁷ 1 Pet. v. 13.

⁸ ἀμφιβάλλεται, Origen in Euseb. vi. 25.

⁹ The original words of these writers may be seen in the Appendix to the Author's Lectures on the Canon of Scripture, pp. 349—378, 2nd edit. 1851. Cp. Kirchofer, Quellensammlung, p. 281.

¹⁰ To this may be added the testimony of the Ancient Uncial Manuscripts. In A and C the First Epistle is inscribed Πέτρον Α', and also in the Codex Sinaiticus; and in B it is inscribed πρώτη. These inscriptions show that the copyists of those very early documents knew a *Second* Epistle, and in A, N, and B the *Second* is contained, with the inscription Πέτρον Β'. It is also described as the *Second* Epistle of St. Peter in C, G, K.

How could such a reception have taken place? Only from the concurrent persuasion of all those Fathers and Churches—that this Epistle is indeed the work of St. Peter, and the Word of God.

11. If, as has been alleged by some in recent times, this Epistle was not known in the age of St. Peter, if it is the production of a later generation, how could this general suffrage have been obtained, and this universal reception have ever been effected? The question was not concerning a various reading, or a single verse, but a whole Epistle, claiming to be from the pen of an Apostle. Suppose now that the Bishops and Clergy of the Churches in all parts of Christendom had been able or willing to palm a forgery upon the people, suppose that they had all conspired to invite them to receive the work of an Impostor as the Word of God, can we imagine that the many thousand Congregations would have connived at such an act of impiety? Would no single voice have been raised to denounce it? And this not in a dark age,—not in mediæval twilight, when ignorance prevailed, and superstitions stole into the Church; but in the meridian splendour of the fourth and fifth centuries,—in the most brilliant age of Ecclesiastical learning, in the age of S. Athanasius, S. Basil, S. Cyril, and the Gregories, and S. Chrysostom, and S. Jerome, and S. Augustine. All these received this Epistle. It was read,—as it is now read,—in all Churches, as the work of St. Peter, and as the Word of God. It never would have been so received, it never would have been so read, unless they had been satisfied by irresistible proofs that it is, what it professes to be, the work of St. Peter, and that it is, what they declared it to be, the Word of God. Their reception of it affords practical demonstration that such proofs were given. We may safely appeal to *their reception* of it as a sufficient reason for *our* reception of it. If such evidence as this does not convince us, no evidence will. There is scarcely a single writing of all Antiquity, sacred or profane, which must not be given up as spurious, if the Second Epistle of St. Peter be not received as a genuine writing of the Apostle, and as a part of Holy Writ.

12. Let us consider also the nature of this testimony,—the testimony of the Universal Church. The Universal Church is formed of all the Churches of Christendom. The testimony of the Churches of Christendom, regarded merely as *human societies*, guided by reason and experience, is assuredly of great weight. But the Church of Christ Universal is not to be regarded as a mere human association. It is not like a legal Tribunal, or a civil Assembly; it is not like a literary Institution, or a scientific Society. It is the Spouse and Body of Christ, enlightened by the Holy Ghost. It is the seven-branched Golden Candlestick, set in the Tabernacle of this World, to illumine it with the Light of His Holy Word. It is the Guardian and Keeper of Holy Writ. If any Book which the Church universal propounds to us as Scripture, be not Scripture; if any Book, which she reads as the Word of God, is not the Word of God, but the Work of an Impostor, then, with reverence be it said, Christ's promise to His Church has failed, and the Holy Spirit has not been given to guide her into all truth. But Christ is the Truth. He is the Alpha and Omega. His Word is Yea and Amen. And therefore what He promised, that He performed. He has been, He is, and He ever will be, with His Church. He is the same yesterday, to-day, and for ever. He has sent His Spirit to teach her all things. And therefore the testimony of the Universal Church of Christ, declaring that the Epistles, which we receive as such, are Epistles of St. Peter, and are the Word of God, is not *her* testimony only,—it is the testimony of Christ, Who is present with her. It is the Witness of the Holy Spirit, Who is in her. Therefore that witness is true. And we may rest firmly assured, that the Second Epistle of St. Peter, which has been received by the Universal Church of Christ for fourteen hundred years, is indeed what she affirms it to be, a genuine work of the Apostle, and a part of the Holy Scriptures given by Inspiration of God¹.

¹ After this Introduction had been finished, the Writer was favoured by the kindness of the *Rev. Francis Procter, M.A.*, Author of the *History of the Book of Common Prayer*,—with access to some papers of the late lamented *Archdn. Hardwick*, in vindication of the genuineness of this Epistle. The learned Author designed to have written a Treatise on this question, and to have added it to those valuable works which he bequeathed to

the world as Christian Advocate in the University of Cambridge. He did not live to execute his design; but enough is preserved to show his strong conviction of the genuineness of this Epistle. An extract from his papers will be found below, p. 80, and some use has been made of them in the Synopsis of the Contents of the Epistle.

V. *Summary of the Contents of the Epistle.*

IN addition to what has already been said above on the design of this Epistle, the following brief summary of its contents may be inserted here :—

The doctrines which constitute the groundwork of this Epistle are those of the Eternal Sonship, Divine Majesty, and glorious Re-appearing of Christ our Saviour and Lord.

The opening salutation is addressed to all who are represented by the Apostle as partakers of the same precious faith as that which animated the writer and his Jewish fellow-Christians; and he prays that Grace and Peace may be multiplied to them in the mature knowledge¹ of God and of Jesus our Lord.

He then proceeds to recall to the minds of his readers, in a hortatory form, certain fundamental truths of religion, as already known to them.

1. The divine gift of Regeneration, bestowed upon them by God, and making them partakers of the divine Nature.

2. The consequent obligation on their part to add to their faith virtue, and to virtue knowledge, and other graces, till their Christian life is consummated in Love.

3. The glorious recompense, which is laid up in store for those who cherish these evangelical graces, and “bring forth the good fruit of them in their lives; and this recompense is the entrance, that is richly furnished to them, into the Eternal Kingdom of our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ².”

St. Peter had dilated on these truths in his First Epistle; and the reference to them here indicates the connexion of this Epistle with the former one, and confirms the arguments for its genuineness.

He warns them that wherever these graces and virtues are *not*, there the doctrine of Christ is not duly known. Whosoever does not grow in grace, and bring forth good fruit, is blind to the true nature of the Gospel, and forgets the purging away of his former sins, and cannot hope for admission into the holy and blessed presence of their Saviour and King.

The Apostle reminds them, that these truths have already been made known to them, and supposes that “they are well grounded and settled in them³”; but he deems it right, while he is spared to them, which will be but for a short time, to stir up their minds by calling these doctrines and truths to their remembrance. Truths like these, he implies, deserve the most earnest attention; and we must be solicitous for their maintenance. For it was no fable, such as misbelievers devise, which we followed, when we made known to you the Power and glorious Re-appearing⁴ of Christ. Our eyes saw some gleams of that glory in His Transfiguration on the Holy Mount, and we heard with our ears the voice from heaven proclaiming Him to be the well-beloved Son of God.

We have, also, other confirmations of these truths in the prophetic Word; to which ye give heed, and in doing so, ye act wisely—however the false Teachers may disparage it⁵—until the day dawn, and the light in all its fulness breaks in upon you.

But with regard to Prophecy, you need some cautions. The true Prophecy must be distinguished from the false: and you must remember, first of all⁶, that true Prophecy is a far higher thing than the utterance of the Prophet's own knowledge; and though he utters prophecy, it surpasses his powers of interpretation; for they who uttered it, did not utter it as mere men, but as men of *God*, who were borne along by the Holy Ghost⁷.

Besides, as there were *false* prophets among the people of Israel, who were a type of the Christian Church, so there will be false Teachers among *you*. The writer places himself, without any misgiving, among the *true* Prophets, and proceeds to unveil the future. He pre-announces that false Teachers will arise in the Church, and he describes the character of those Teachers, and the evil fruits of their teaching, with the prophetic fire and pathos of an ancient Hebrew Prophet. The chief characteristic of these false Teachers is, that they will “deny the Lord that bought them⁸.” Here is the source of the misery which will overflow from them upon the Church. Starting forth from this destructive heresy, they will seduce many by their licentious doctrines, and will trade and traffic therewith, for love of lucre. Yet the destruction of these destroyers is at hand. They may

¹ ἐπιγνώσει, i. 2.
² i. 11.

³ ἐστηριγμένους, v. 12.
⁴ παρουσίαν, v. 16.

⁵ See v. 19.
⁶ v. 20.

⁷ v. 21.
⁸ ii. 1.

boast of angelic intelligence and power, but He who spared not the rebel Angels, will not spare them. He who overwhelmed the world with a flood, will overwhelm them. He who consumed Sodom with fire from heaven for its filthiness, will consume them for their licentiousness. And as certainly as God destroyed the ungodly, will He save you, if you are true to Him. He who saved Noah, He who delivered Lot, will rescue you, and all the righteous with you.

After this warning and encouragement, the Apostle goes on with the prophetic vehemence and indignation of a true seer of God, to complete his description of the impiety and profligacy of the false Teachers. He beholds them as present before him. They follow the flesh in the pollutions of lust. They speak evil of Dominion, and blaspheme Glories¹. And yet they call themselves Christians; they associate with you in your assemblies; and like Balaam, once a true prophet, but tempted to swerve from the right way by love of money and worldly honour, they leave the path of righteousness; and while they boast their superior intelligence, they degrade themselves beneath the brute creatures, whose lusts they imitate, and become like the false prophet, whose madness was rebuked by the ass upon which he rode².

The false teachers, as described by the writer, bear a striking resemblance to those with whom Simon Peter himself, as we know from the Acts of the Apostles³, and from other sources, had a personal conflict—especially Simon Magus⁴; and this consideration supplies another argument in favour of the genuineness of this Epistle.

Like Balaam, these false Teachers cast a stumbling-block in the way of God's people. They carry away with them many others, especially new converts, who had only just escaped the errors and vices of Heathenism. They allure them with the promise of liberty, being themselves slaves of licentiousness. Their latter end is worse than the beginning; for it were better for them not to have known the way of righteousness, than when they had known it to turn away back from it, like the sow, that has been washed, to her wallowing in the mire⁵.

The Apostle now reverts to those whom he had addressed in his First Epistle⁶. He reminds them again of the warnings uttered by the Prophets, and of the charge delivered to them by the Apostles. They well knew, that errors such as he was denouncing had been reprobated by anticipation. They knew that in the last days would arise scoffers, striking at the root of their Christian hopes, and asking, "Where is the promise of His Coming?" Where is the end of all things? "All things remain as they were from the beginning." He refutes these mockers by pointing to the Sacred History of the Creation, and by affirming, that, as the Heaven and Earth were not from eternity, but were *made by God's Word*; so they would not remain for ever, but would be *destroyed by the same Word*; and as the antediluvian world was destroyed by water, ministered from the internal reservoirs of its own Heavens and Earth, so it will be consumed by fuel and combustion supplied and set on fire by its own Elements. He reminds them that God's ways are not as our ways; that his measure of Time is not like ours; that what is slow to us, is speedy to Him, with Whom a thousand years are as one day. But, in fine, the Day of the Lord will come. The conflagration of the World will be universal. But the faithful will survive it, and will inhabit the new heavens and the new earth, wherein dwelleth righteousness⁷.

On this assurance he grounds a concluding exhortation to earnestness, circumspection, and holiness. God delays His coming in long-suffering, which is salvation: for who otherwise would

¹ See on ii. 10.

² ii. 16.

³ Acts viii. 17—25, and below, on this Epistle, ii. 1.

⁴ This is thus stated by the late *Archdn. Hardwick*, in the Manuscript note already referred to:

"The same Peter (*Symeon Peter*) who professes to have written this Epistle, had himself confronted Simon Magus (Acts viii.) in the province of Samaria, where the soil, half heathen and half Jewish, was peculiarly prepared for such a conflict; and though stories told of their subsequent encounters are in many cases altogether fabulous, especially those recorded in the *Pseudo-Clementines*, the vast importance which the Early Church attributed to Simon Magus, is receiving fresh corroboration from inquiries of the present day.

"If Simon Magus himself was not *the* patriarch of all the Gnostic heresies, he was at least their first patron and great precursor. He put forth the earliest counterfeit of Christianity, and in the time of Justin Martyr he was worshipped as the first God (*ὁς ὁ πρῶτος θεὸς*) by nearly all the Samaritans.

"When we find him in the Acts of the Apostles, Simon, not devoid it would seem of religious sensibility, is borne along by the popular excitement; he believes and is baptized (viii. 13). Yet like the man depicted in the first chapter of our Epistle, he does

not add to his faith virtue, nor place knowledge in subordination to moral goodness; he forgets that he was purged from his old sins (2 Pet. i. 9), and his last state is worse than the first (2 Pet. ii. 20).

"We cannot positively affirm indeed from what has been recorded in the Acts, that Simon, immediately after his relapse, proceeded to build up a system of belief, commensurate in every point with the heresy imputed to him by *Irenæus* and *Hippolytus*. But evidence exists to prove, that most, if not all, the ingredients of Simonianism had been projected, and were actively fermenting, in the Apostolic age. The founder of this system wished to be regarded as the highest emanation of the Deity ('*sublimissima virtus*'). He was consequently a false Christ, and even if it could be shown that he adopted Christian phraseology, he used the Gospel as a kind of magical agent, but neglected its moral power. He respected (so to say) its supernatural gifts and revelations, but threw off its salutary discipline, and did not scruple to prostitute its holy maxims to the basest and most selfish ends. This latter circumstance excited, as we know, the most emphatic reprobation of St. Peter."

⁵ ii. 22.

⁶ iii. 1.

⁷ iii. 12.

be saved? Such also had been the teaching of "his beloved brother, St. Paul," who had been represented by some¹ as a rival and opponent of the writer, and whose writings had been perverted by some, in favour of Antinomian licentiousness², as the rest of the Scriptures had been wrested by the unlearned and unstable, to their own ruin. Be ye therefore on your guard, for ye are forewarned. Do not swerve from your own steadfastness, but grow in grace and the knowledge of our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ, to whom be Glory, both now and for ever. *Amen.*

¹ Especially the Simonians and Ebionites.

² See on iii. 16, and above, pp. 1—4.

ΠΕΤΡΟΥ Β΄.

I. ¹ ΣΥΜΕΩΝ Πέτρος, δούλος καὶ ἀπόστολος Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ, τοῖς ἰσότημον ἡμῖν λαχοῦσι πίστιν ἐν δικαιοσύνῃ τοῦ Θεοῦ ἡμῶν καὶ Σωτῆρος Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ·
² ἡ χάρις ὑμῖν καὶ εἰρήνη πληθυνθείη ἐν ἐπιγνώσει τοῦ Θεοῦ, καὶ Ἰησοῦ τοῦ Κυρίου ἡμῶν.

a John 17. 3.
 Rom. 1. 7.
 1 Pet. 1. 2.
 Jude 2.

³ Ὡς πάντα ἡμῖν τῆς θείας δυνάμεως αὐτοῦ τὰ πρὸς ζωὴν καὶ εὐσέβειαν δεδορημένης, διὰ τῆς ἐπιγνώσεως τοῦ καλέσαντος ἡμᾶς ἰδίᾳ δόξῃ καὶ ἀρετῇ,
⁴ δι' ὧν τὰ μέγιστα ἡμῖν καὶ τίμια ἐπαγγέλματα δεδώρηται, ἵνα διὰ τούτων γένησθε θείας κοινωνοὶ φύσεως, ἀποφυγόντες τῆς ἐν κόσμῳ ἐν ἐπιθυμίᾳ φθορᾶς.
⁵ καὶ αὐτὸ τοῦτο δέ, σπουδὴν πᾶσαν παρεισενέγκαντες, ἐπιχορηγήσατε ἐν τῇ

b Isa. 56. 5.
 John 1. 12.
 Rom. 8. 15.
 2 Cor. 3. 18.
 Eph. 4. 24.
 Heb. 12. 10.
 1 John 3. 2.

CH. I. 1. Συμεών] ἡρῶ (Shimeon), the Aramaic form of Simon; used by St. James at Jerusalem, when speaking of Simon Peter. Acts xv. 14. Its use here is an evidence that the Writer is addressing Jewish Christians.

— ἐν δικαιοσύνῃ τοῦ Θεοῦ ἡμῶν καὶ Σωτῆρος Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ] in the righteousness of our God and Saviour Jesus Christ, Ye have obtained faith by the free gift and grace of God. Faith itself is a gift of God, and your faith is equally precious in His sight with our faith. On this use of ἡμῖν, compare Rev. xiii. 11, κέρατα ὅμοια ἀνθρώπων. Winer, § 66, p. 549.

Ye obtained "this faith in and by the righteousness of Christ, Who is the LORD our Righteousness" (Jer. xxiii. 6; cp. 1 Cor. i. 30. 2 Cor. iii. 9. Rom. iii. 21—26; v. 20); and by virtue of His Incarnation and your Incorporation in Him, ye receive all grace from God. John i. 16.

The words τοῦ Θεοῦ καὶ Σωτῆρος Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ are best rendered, of our God and Saviour Jesus Christ. That they may be thus rendered, cannot be doubted (cp. Winer, p. 118, note, and De Wette here). And they are rendered thus by Beza, Hemming, Gerhard, Dietlein, and others here; and by the Greek and Latin Fathers in the similar place of St. Paul, viz. Titus ii. 13, τοῦ μεγάλου Θεοῦ καὶ Σωτῆρος ἡμῶν Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ, where see the note, and Wiesinger's commentary there.

This declaration of the Godhead of Christ was very suitable to the commencement of this Epistle, in which the Author is speaking of the gracious dispensation by which we have become "partakers of the divine nature," v. 4; a participation effected by the Incarnation of the Eternal Word (John i. 14), God manifested in the flesh (1 Tim. iii. 16), "God with us" (Matt. i. 23).

This declaration was also very pertinent here, because this Epistle was designed to refute the errors of those who separated Jesus from Christ, and denied the Lord that bought them, and rejected the doctrine of His Divinity. See the Introduction, and below on ii. 1.

It is observable, that this Epistle ends in the same terms. See note below, iii. 17, 18.

St. Peter's usage of the article (τοῦ) and copula (καὶ) in other places of the Epistle confirms this interpretation. Compare v. 11, τοῦ Κυρίου ἡμῶν καὶ Σωτῆρος Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ, and ii. 20, and iii. 18; so that there appears to be good ground for the assertion of Bp. Middleton, p. 595, that "this passage is plainly and unequivocally to be understood as an assumption that Jesus Christ is our God and Saviour," and it may be coupled with the testimony of St. Paul to the same effect, in Titus ii. 13.

2. χάρις—πληθυνθείη] Grace to you and Peace be multiplied. The same salutation as in the First Epistle of St. Peter, and not found, in the same terms, in any other Epistle. See 1 Pet. i. 2.

— ἐν ἐπιγνώσει] in the mature knowledge of God and of Jesus our Lord. St. Peter inculcates this word ἐπί-γνωσις (v. 3. 8; ii. 20) in this Epistle, directed against the falsely called γνῶσις, or knowledge (1 Tim. vi. 20), of the Gnostic Teachers.

The same thing is done by his brother Apostle St. Paul, in the Epistle to the Colossians (Col. i. 9, 10; ii. 2; iii. 10), an Epistle which, in many respects, is the best commentary on this Epistle of St. Peter. See above, Introduction, p. 71.

3. ὥς] seeing that, forasmuch as, God has done His part for your salvation, therefore now do ye yours. On this sense of ὥς, see Winer, § 65, p. 543.

— εὐσέβειαν] godliness; a word repeated in this Epistle (see vv. 6, 7; iii. 11) in opposition to the ἀσέβεια of the false Teachers; and for similar reasons, reiterated by St. Paul in his Epistle to the Bishop of Ephesus, see 1 Tim. ii. 2; iii. 16; iv. 7, 8; vi. 3. 5, 6. 11; and 2 Tim. iii. 5, where he describes false Teachers as having μόρφωσιν εὐσεβείας, a form of godliness, but denying its power. Cp. Titus i. 1. It occurs only in one other place of the New Testament. Acts iii. 12.

— δεδωρημένης] having given as a δῶρον, gift,—active; so δεδώρηται, he hath given as a gift, v. 4. Cp. Rom. iv. 21, ὃ ἐπήγγελλται. Winer, § 39, p. 234.

— ἰδίᾳ δόξῃ καὶ ἀρετῇ] by His own Glory and Virtue. So A, C, and Lach., Tisch., Alford.—Elz. has διὰ δόξης καὶ ἀρετῆς. Δόξα is the Glory of the Godhead in its own Essence and Nature. Ἀρετὴ is the excellence of its moral attributes energizing in acts of Power, Wisdom, Justice, and Love. Cp. 1 Pet. ii. 9.

This use of ἴδιος for suus is characteristic of St. Peter. See here, ii. 22; iii. 3. 16, 17; and 1 Pet. iii. 1. 5.

This passage is cited as from "the Catholic Epistles," by Athanasius, Dialog. de Trin. i. p. 164.

4. θείας κοινωνοὶ φύσεως] partakers of the Divine Nature, by the Incarnation of the Eternal Word, and by your filial Adoption and baptismal Incorporation in Him. See John i. 12. This passage appears to be imitated by S. Hippolytus, Refut. Hæres. p. 339, γέγονας θεός . . . ὅσα παρακολουθεῖ Θεῷ, ταῦτα παρέχειν ἐπήγγελλται Θεός, ὅτι ἐθεοποιήθη ἀθάνατος γεννηθεὶς . . . σοῦ πτωχεύει Θεός, καὶ σὲ θεὸν ποιήσας εἰς δόξαν αὐτοῦ. S. Hippolytus in that treatise, especially at the close, seems to have had this Epistle in his mind, see p. 338, and cp. below, ii. 4; and in his inculcation of the true ἐπί-γνωσις in opposition to the false gnosis of heretical teachers; cp. pp. 338, 339, with i. 3. 8; ii. 20.

This passage is cited by Origen in Levit., hom. 4, as from a genuine writing of St. Peter. See also below, vv. 16. 19; and so Athanasius, c. Arian., orat. ii. 1, p. 323.

5. αὐτὸ τοῦτο δέ] But for this very reason. The δέ has an adversative force, as usual, which must not escape notice. The

πίστει ὑμῶν τὴν ἀρετὴν, ⁶ ἐν δὲ τῇ ἀρετῇ τὴν γνῶσιν, ἐν δὲ τῇ γνώσει τὴν ἐγκράτειαν, ἐν δὲ τῇ ἐγκρατείᾳ τὴν ὑπομονὴν, ἐν δὲ τῇ ὑπομονῇ τὴν εὐσέβειαν, ⁷ ἐν δὲ τῇ εὐσεβείᾳ τὴν φιλαδελφίαν, ἐν δὲ τῇ φιλαδελφίᾳ τὴν ἀγάπην. ⁸ ^c Ταῦτα ^c Tit. 3. 14. γὰρ ὑμῖν ὑπάρχοντα καὶ πλεονάζοντα οὐκ ἀργούς οὐδὲ ἀκάρπους καθίστησιν εἰς τὴν τοῦ Κυρίου ἡμῶν Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ ἐπίγνωσιν. ⁹ ^d ᾧ γὰρ μὴ πάρεστι ^d Isa. 59. 10. Wisd. 1. 17. ταῦτα, τυφλός ἐστι, μυωπάζων, λήθην λαβὼν τοῦ καθαρισμοῦ τῶν πάλαι αὐτοῦ ¹ John 2. 9, 11. ἁμαρτιῶν.

¹⁰ ^e Διὸ μᾶλλον, ἀδελφοί, σπουδάσατε βεβαίαν ὑμῶν τὴν κλῆσιν καὶ ἐκλογὴν ^e 1 John 3. 19. ποιεῖσθαι ταῦτα γὰρ ποιῶντες οὐ μὴ πταίσητέ ποτε. ¹¹ οὕτω γὰρ πλουσίως

false Teachers may abuse God's grace as a plea and occasion for sin; but (δὲ) do you regard it as a reason and encouragement for holiness. On καὶ—δὲ see 1 John i. 3. As to αὐτὸ τοῦτο, for this very reason, cp. Xenophon, Anab. i. 9. 21. Plato, Protag. 310. See Winer, § 21, p. 129. Matthiae, § 470. 7. Kühner, § 278. 2.

The abundance of God's grace to us is represented by St. Peter as the reason for our diligent labour in working out our own salvation. God works with us, in us, and for us, in order that we may work for His glory and our own eternal good. Cp. Phil. ii. 12.

For this very reason, of God's bounty to you, do you also do your part, contributing on your side (παρ-εισενέγκαντες) all diligence.

—ἐπιχορηγήσατε ἐν τῇ πίστει ὑμῶν τὴν ἀρετὴν] contribute, or furnish forth, in your faith, virtue.

Ἐπιχορηγεῖν is, literally, to contribute, or furnish, the requisite resources for the outfit, equipment, and training of a dramatic chorus; and perhaps ἐπὶ may here imply addition. Hence it means to supply means and resources generally. Cp. Gal. iii. 5. 2 Cor. ix. 10. Col. ii. 19, and Wetstein here.

The preposition ἐν, in, indicates that the Virtues here specified are to be linked one to another, as in a chain. Seven Christian graces are here joined together hand in hand. Faith leads the Chorus, and Love completes it. St. Peter's seven correspond to St. Paul's three. (1 Cor. xiii. 13.) In each Apostolic group Faith leads, and Charity ends.

To adopt another metaphor, suggested here by St. Peter's words. Faith, the gift of God (see v. 1), is the groundwork, on which all Christian virtues are to be built up, so as to be in it as in their original and actuating principle. (Theophylact.) Compare the use of ἐν in Eph. ii. 21, 22, ἐν ᾧ πᾶσα οἰκοδομὴ συναρμολογουμένη αὔξει εἰς ναὸν ἅγιον ἐν Κυρίῳ, ἐν ᾧ καὶ ὑμεῖς συνοικοδομεῖσθε εἰς κατοικητήριον τοῦ Θεοῦ ἐν Πνεύματι.

God has laid the foundation of faith; but remember, it is your faith (πίστις ὑμῶν), it is to be yours by being moulded into the whole framework of your life. God has laid this foundation, do you supply in addition (ἐπιχορηγήσατε) on your part, the materials requisite for the structure and furniture of the Christian life. Faith is the foundation; that is laid by God. Man must do his part in rearing the superstructure; he must add the successive stages of spiritual masonry, one upon another, till the fabric is complete.

Another figure also, taken from the natural world, seems to have been in the Apostle's mind. The Christian believer must put forth his spiritual energies, till the Tree of Christian Life reaches its full maturity. See note above on Luke xvii. 5, where Christ represents faith as the seminal principle from which all Christian Virtue grows. So here St. Peter.

If this is done, then they will not be either like useless heaps of rubbish, or like barren trees; they will be neither ἀργοὶ nor ἄκαρποι (v. 8; 1 Tim. v. 13. Titus i. 12; iii. 14), but the entrance to the everlasting kingdom will be richly supplied also (ἐπιχορηγήσεται) to them (v. 11); they will be built up in the heavenly City; they will also be like Trees planted by the side of the living Water, which flows from the throne of God. Rev. xxi. 19; xxii. 1. Cp. Dr. H. More on the Mystery of Godliness, b. viii. c. 3, pp. 261, 262.

—τὴν ἀρετὴν] supply in your faith virtue, blended with your faith. Let not your faith be a barren speculative faith, but a faith that worketh by love. Gal. v. 6. Titus iii. 8. Supply also in your virtue, knowledge; let your zeal be according to knowledge. (Cp. Rom. x. 2.) And in knowledge join temperance; let not your knowledge be a γνῶσις, which puffeth up, such as that of those who, to gratify the carnal appetite, did not scruple to eat things offered to idols, and professed to have more intelligence than others, whom they condemned as weak brethren. 1 Cor. viii. 1, 2. Cp. Rom. xiv. 20.

7. ἐν δὲ τῇ φιλαδελφίᾳ τὴν ἀγάπην] and in your brotherly

kindness do ye supply, in addition, love. Ἀγάπη is more expressive and diffusive than φιλαδελφία. It extends not only to the brotherhood (1 Pet. ii. 17), but to all men, even enemies. Therefore Love is the crown of Christian Virtues. As S. Ignatius says (ad Ephes. 14), ἀρχὴ μὲν πίστις, τέλος δὲ ἀγάπη.

Thus the cornu-copiae of Christian fruits and flowers will be filled up and flow over in plentiful abundance.

8. εἰς τὴν—ἐπίγνωσιν] to the mature knowledge of our Lord Jesus Christ. Knowledge is the fruit of Virtue, see John vii. 17. By Christian obedience and Christian fruitfulness ye will attain to the clear knowledge of our Lord Jesus Christ, v. 8; or as it is expressed by St. Paul in his parallel Epistle, that to the Colossians, "rooted and built up in Him, and stablished in the faith" (ii. 7), being fruitful in every good work, and growing into the clear knowledge (ἐπίγνωσιν) of God (i. 10).

With this exhortation of St. Peter, compare St. Paul's to the Colossians, "Put on, as the elect of God, holy and beloved, bowels of mercies, kindness, humbleness of mind, meekness, long-suffering; and over all put on Charity (Love, ἀγάπην), which is the bond of perfectness; and may the Peace of God rule in your hearts, to which also ye were called." (Col. iii. 12—14.)

9. ᾧ γὰρ μὴ πάρεστι ταῦτα] for, whosoever hath not these graces, that man, whatever may be his professions of knowledge, is in fact blind; and he is μυωπάζων. He is blind, because he is μυωπάζων (observe the participle), that is, because, having the inner optic nerve clouded with the films of carnal lusts, he is unable to see those heavenly things which are the true objects of spiritual vision (2 Cor. iv. 18), and which are too bright for his hazy eyesight; and he is dazzled by them, as Saul was by the glory of the light of heaven. Acts xxii. 11. And they are too distant for the range of his feeble ken, so that he cannot descry them, but they are far above out of his sight. (Ps. x. 5.)

On this sense of μυωπάζω, to blink, to be purblind, weak-sighted, and short-sighted, see Aristot. Probl. 31, who says, that old men's vision differs from that of the μυωπάζων in this respect,—that they see things at a distance but not near, and he sees things near and not far off. Wetstein, p. 700.

The γὰρ, for, in this text brings out the important doctrine, that unholiness is the cause of spiritual blindness; and that, consequently, increase of holiness enlarges the range of spiritual vision. See Rom. i. 22.

—λήθην λαβὼν] receiving forgetfulness, by a deliberate act of his own will. Cp. iii. 5, λανθάνει αὐτοὺς τοῦτο θέλοντας. The opposite to this is ὑπόμνησιν λαβὼν, 2 Tim. i. 5.

10. διὰ μᾶλλον] Wherefore, since some have fallen away from their first faith, and have forgotten the vows and privileges of their Baptism, in which they were once enlightened (see Heb. vi. 4; x. 32); and since their eyes are now blinded (v. 9), do ye the rather on this account, taking warning from their downfall, earnestly endeavour to make your calling and election sure.

St. Peter places our calling before our election, for so it is to us. God from the beginning sees us in Christ; and He foresees who will persevere to the end. But we can only infer election from vocation. By Baptism men are visibly declared to be called of God. And from the fact of their being called, and ingrafted into the body of Christ, we may suppose them to be elect.

God has done His part; it remains for us to do ours; namely, so to use His grace, as to make our calling and election sure. See above, 1 Pet. i. 1, and on Rom. viii. 30, and Introduction to that Epistle, p. 194.

11. οὕτω γάρ] For thus the entrance into the everlasting kingdom of our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ will be richly supplied unto you. If you supply your part (see v. 5, ἐπιχορηγήσατε), God will richly supply His, not only in abundance of grace, but of glory also. On this text see Bp. Bull's Sermon (vii. vol. i. p. 168), who hence concludes that according to our different degrees of improvement of God's grace here, will be our different degrees of participation in His everlasting glory hereafter. Cp. above, on Matt. x. 15. Luke xix. 17. John xiv. 2. 2 Cor. ix. 6.

ἐπιχορηγηθήσεται ὑμῖν ἡ εἴσοδος εἰς τὴν αἰώνιον βασιλείαν τοῦ Κυρίου ἡμῶν καὶ Σωτῆρος Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ.

¹² Διὸ μελλήσω αἰεὶ ὑμᾶς ὑπομιμνησκειν περὶ τούτων, καίπερ εἰδότας, καὶ ἐστηριγμένους ἐν τῇ παρούσῃ ἀληθείᾳ. ¹³ Δίκαιον δὲ ἡγοῦμαι, ἐφ' ὅσον εἰμὶ ἐν τούτῳ τῷ σκηνώματι, διεγείρειν ὑμᾶς ἐν ὑπομνήσει. ¹⁴ εἰδὼς ὅτι ταχυνή ἐστιν ἡ ἀπόθεσις τοῦ σκηνώματός μου, καθὼς καὶ ὁ Κύριος ἡμῶν Ἰησοῦς Χριστὸς ἐδήλωσέ μοι. ¹⁵ Σπουδάσω δὲ καὶ ἐκάστοτε ἔχειν ὑμᾶς μετὰ τὴν ἐμὴν ἐξοδὸν τὴν τούτων μνήμην ποιεῖσθαι.

¹⁶ Οὐ γὰρ σεσοφισμένοις μύθοις ἐξακολουθήσαντες ἐγνωρίσαμεν ὑμῖν τὴν τοῦ Κυρίου ἡμῶν Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ δύναμιν καὶ παρουσίαν, ἀλλ' ἐπόπται γενηθέντες τῆς ἐκείνου μεγαλειότητος. ¹⁷ λαβὼν γὰρ παρὰ Θεοῦ Πατρὸς τιμὴν καὶ

12, 13. μελλήσω] This is the reading of A, B, C, and *Vulg.*, *Copt.*, *Sahidic*, *Armenian* Versions, and several cursives, and is approved by *Mill* and *Bengel*, and received by *Lach.*, *Tisch.*, *Alford*. *Elz.* has οὐκ ἀμελήσω.

The future, μελλήσω, is found in Matt. xxiv. 6, μελλήσετε ἀκούειν. The word signifies what is future, and often implies an intention, as (Matt. ii. 13), μέλλει Ἡρώδης ζητεῖν τὸ παιδίον. Cp. Luke xxii. 23. Acts xii. 6; xvi. 27; xx. 13. Rev. ii. 10; x. 4. Hence *Hesychius* interprets μελλήσω by σπουδάσω.

The sense is, *I shall be about to remind you always of these things*, by means of this Epistle, which will be read in your ears, in your churches, after my decease; and thus I shall *always* remind you; and I write with this *design*, in order that, being soon about to be *absent* from you, and from this world, I may yet continue for ever to exhort you thereby, although *you know these things*, and have been established in the truth present with you, and therefore may seem to have less need of admonition from me, when *absent* from you. But (δὲ) I deem it right, as long as I am in this mortal tabernacle of the flesh (2 Cor. v. 1), to stir you up in reminding you. Cp. iii. 1. I do not profess to teach you any thing new, but I endeavour to stir you up to recollect those things which you already know, and in which you have been already settled. Cp. note above on St. Paul's language, 2 Cor. viii. 10.

14, 15. εἰδὼς] I deem it right to stir you up, as long as I am in this tabernacle, because I know that my time is short, and that *speedy* is (ἐστιν) the putting off of my tabernacle. Compare St. Peter's similar language in Acts ii. 26, ἡ σάραξ μου κατασκηνώσει ἐπ' ἐλπίδι. My departure is at hand, it is now fast approaching; I have no time to lose; As also our Lord Jesus Christ declared to me. Observe the *aorist* here: St. Peter is showing that the writer is referring to the particular occasion, recorded by St. John, when our Lord revealed this: Christ then said, that "when thou shalt grow old," literally, when thou shalt have begun to be old (ὅταν γηράσῃς, quum consenueris), "another shall gird thee, and carry thee whither thou wouldest not" (John xxi. 18). I have now begun to grow old, and I therefore know that my dissolution is *speedy* (ταχυνή); cp. ii. 1. Isa. lix. 7. Hab. i. 6.

St. Peter pre-announces his own death, lest his friends and readers should be perplexed and dismayed by the sufferings of an aged and faithful servant of Christ; and lest they should be tempted thereby to falter in the faith. He therefore tells them that the Lord Jesus Christ had declared to him the manner of his death. But he has not therefore failed in his love to Christ; he is not terrified by the prospect; he describes the martyrdom which awaited him by crucifixion, whereby he would follow Christ (John xxi. 19. Cp. *Euseb.* iii. 1), as a putting off of his tabernacle.

He describes that death by a double figure; it is the putting off of a garment, to be reassumed in a more glorious form. It is also the removal of a tabernacle, to be replaced by a glorious Temple in the heavenly Sion; as the itinerant Tabernacle in the Wilderness was succeeded by the stationary Temple in Jerusalem. So, in like manner, when the earthly house of this tabernacle, of our mortal bodies, in which we sojourn for a short time in this our earthly pilgrimage, shall be dissolved, we have a building from (ἐκ) God, a house not made with hands, eternal in the heavens (see 2 Cor. v. 1).

In this double figure he imitates his brother Apostle, St. Paul, who had said, "we know that if our earthly house of this tabernacle shall have been dissolved, we have a building of God, a house not made with hands, eternal in the heavens; for in this we groan, earnestly desiring to be clothed upon with our house from heaven: for we, that are in this tabernacle, do groan, being burdened; not for that we would be unclothed, but clothed

upon, that mortality might be swallowed up in life." (2 Cor. v. 1—4.)

He speaks of his departure under these terms, as well knowing that by following Christ in putting off the tabernacle of the body of humiliation (see Phil. iii. 21), he will follow Him also in putting on that body of glory, which he had seen at the Transfiguration in the holy mount. He had then craved leave to make three tabernacles, and to detain Christ there (Matt. xvii. 4. Mark ix. 5. Luke ix. 33), but he had there heard Christ talking of his own departure (ἐξοδος, Luke ix. 31), and he had seen that ἐξοδος followed by the glory of the Resurrection and Ascension.

The word ἐξοδος may perhaps be derived by St. Peter from St. Luke's narrative of the Transfiguration (Luke ix. 31), and is happily here applied to describe his own ἐξοδος in which he followed his Master according to His precept (John xxi. 22), even in the manner of his death. Here is a silent note of the genuineness of this Epistle. The same word (ἐξοδος) appears to be applied to designate the death both of St. Peter and St. Paul, by *S. Irenæus* (iii. 1), μετὰ τὴν τούτων ἐξοδὸν, Μάρκος, ὁ μαθητὴς καὶ ἐρμηνευτὴς Πέτρου, καὶ αὐτὸς τὰ ὑπὸ Πέτρου κηρυσσόμενα ἐγγράφως ἡμῖν παραδέδωκεν: and perhaps St. Peter's design that his hearers should have it in their power on every occasion,—in every emergency and need, when they would require admonition and comfort,—to exercise the remembrance of these things (cp. Rom. i. 9. Eph. i. 16), after his own decease (μετὰ τὴν ἐξοδὸν), may have been realized, not only in writing the present Epistle, but in the composition of the Gospel of "Marcus his son" (1 Pet. v. 13).

16. οὐ γὰρ σεσοφισμένοις] for we did not follow cunningly devised fables—fables sophistically invented (πλαστοῖς λόγοις, ii. 3), with fraudulent purpose, like those fabricated by others, when we made known to you the power and future coming of our Lord Jesus Christ, but we did this, having been made spectators of His Majesty. The preposition ἐξ in ἐξακολουθήσαντες indicates that the followers of these fables had gone out of the way of truth.

He contrasts his own preaching with that of those whom he refutes in this Epistle. The Gnostic teachers followed cunningly devised fables. The system of St. Peter's adversary, the Father of the Gnostics, *Simon Magus*, was grounded on cunningly devised fables; viz., that he himself was the great Power of God (Acts viii. 10), and that from him and his paramour, *Helena*, the Angels were born, who made the world. See *S. Iren.* i. 23. 1. *S. Hippolyt.* Refut. hæres. vi. p. 174. *Epiph.* hæres. 21. *Philast.* hæres. c. 29. *Tillemont*, ii. p. 17. *Ittig*, de hæres. pp. 23—34. *Bp. Pearson*, Vind. Ign. ii. 6. The impious fables of *Simon*, asserting that he himself was the "sublimissima virtus" of the Deity, the "super omnia Pater," and that he (*Simon*) was the δύναμις μεγάλη of God (see on Acts viii. 10), and that the Son of God was another apparition of himself, dwelling in the man Jesus for a time, are here confuted by St. Peter's declaration concerning the δύναμις and μεγαλειότης of Jesus Christ; and the heavenly witness of the Father to Him in the Mountain of Transfiguration (cp. Matt. xvii. 1—6. Mark ix. 2—7. Luke ix. 29—35. John i. 14).

—ἐπόπται] spectators, as of a great Mystery, see above, 1 Pet. ii. 12; iii. 2. The three disciples, of whom St. Peter was one, were admitted to the nearest view of the arcana of that great Mystery of Godliness, God manifest in the Flesh. 1 Tim. iii. 16.

17. λαβὼν γ. π. Θ. Π. τιμὴν καὶ δόξαν] for, having received from God the Father honour and glory. Jesus Christ received honour, when the voice from Heaven said, "This is My beloved Son; hear ye Him;" and He received glory, when His face shone like the sun, and His raiment was white as the light (Matt. xvii. 2), and St. Peter, James, and John beheld His glory, "the glory as of the only Begotten of the Father." John i. 14. On the nominative λαβὼν, cp. 2 Cor. v. 5, 6; vii. 5. *Winer*, § 45, p. 314, and on ὑπὸ see *ibid.* § 47, p. 330.

δόξαν, φωνῆς ἐνεχθείσης αὐτῷ τοιαύδε ὑπὸ τῆς μεγαλοπρεποῦς δόξης, Οὗτός ἐστιν ὁ Τίός μου ὁ ἀγαπητός, εἰς ὃν ἐγὼ εὐδόκησα.¹⁸ καὶ ταύτην τὴν φωνὴν ἡμεῖς ἠκούσαμεν ἐξ οὐρανοῦ ἐνεχθείσαν, σὺν αὐτῷ ὄντες ἐν τῷ ὄρει τῷ ἁγίῳ.

¹⁹ καὶ ἔχομεν βεβαιότερον τὸν προφητικὸν λόγον ᾧ καλῶς ποιεῖτε προσ-
 έχοντες, ὡς λύχνῳ φαίνοντι ἐν ἀρχμῇ τόπῳ, ἕως οὗ ἡμέρα διαυγάσῃ, καὶ

k Ps. 119. 105,
 John 5. 35.
 2 Cor. 4. 6.
 Rev. 22. 16.

Christ then received honour and glory from God the Father. Compare the remarkable resemblance of this passage and John i. 14, concerning the same event, of which St. Peter and St. John were eye-witnesses. J. W. Burgon.

— οὗτος—εὐδόκησα] This is my beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased. This reading (εἰς ὃν εὐδόκησα) does not coincide with that in any of the Gospels, but agrees with the citation in the *Clementine Homilies* (iii. 53); and an argument has thence been derived by some in modern times (e.g. *Mayerhoff*) in behalf of the strange theory, that this Epistle is of Ebionitish origin! But, as *Archdn. Hardwick* has observed, the citation corresponds with the form in which the words appear in *S. Hippolytus*, c. Noët, c. 5.

See also below on iii. 15, where the author speaks of *St. Paul* as his "well-beloved brother," which is conclusive against that theory; inasmuch as St. Paul was the special object of hatred to the Ebionites and all other Judaizers, as *Archdn. Hardwick* has remarked (see *Iren.* i. 26. 2); and in the *Pseudo-Clementines* St. Paul is represented under the person of Simon Magus disputing with Peter. *Schaff*, Hist. of the Apost. Church, ii. 360, note.

The originality of the reading εἰς ὃν εὐδόκησα may be remarked as an argument for the genuineness of the Epistle. A forger would have copied the reading in St. Matthew, xvii. 5. Observe too, he says, φωνῆς τοιαύδε (such as this), he does not pretend to give the precise words.

18. σὺν αὐτῷ ὄντες ἐν τῷ ὄρει τῷ ἁγίῳ] being with Him on the holy mount; holy, like the place in which God appeared to Moses and said, "Put off thy shoes from off thy feet, for the place whereon thou standest is holy ground" (*Exod.* iii. 5. *Acts* vii. 33), and so Joshua is commanded by the Captain of the Lord's host who appeared to him near Jericho, to loose his shoe from his foot, "for the place whereon thou standest is holy." *Josh.* v. 15.

This designation of the Mountain of Transfiguration as "the holy mount," is an evidence that the history of that event was well known to the Christians of Asia, probably by the dissemination of copies of St. Matthew's and St. Luke's Gospels, when St. Peter wrote this Epistle.

There is a peculiar pertinency in this reference to the Transfiguration here. The False Teachers denied the doctrine of Christ's παρουσία or Second Coming (see iii. 4). The Transfiguration was designed and declared by our Blessed Lord to be a type and earnest of that Future Coming in glory. See the connexion of His declaration concerning His Coming (παρουσία) with the Evangelical accounts of the Transfiguration, *Matt.* xvi. 28; *xvii.* 1, and the parallel places in St. Mark and St. Luke. There is also a peculiar fitness in the transition from the mention of the Transfiguration to the case of Prophecy: for the Prophets of old, when they prophesied, underwent a spiritual Transfiguration; they were illumined by the splendour of the Eternal Word, and spake of Christ. See above, Preface to the Gospels, p. xviii.

19. καὶ ἔχομεν] and we—observe, we—possess the word of prophecy, a more sure evidence: i. e. the word of Prophecy which we have is more sure to us than even this Voice from heaven which I heard, and than that Vision of the Transfiguration which I saw. Do not therefore suppose that you have not as clear evidence of that Second Coming as I have, who was admitted to see His glory at the Transfiguration.

Our Lord Jesus Christ (says *S. Augustine*), foreseeing that some ungodly men would arise, who would disparage His miracles as if they were the work of sorcery, sent the Prophets to bear witness of Him before His Incarnation, and therefore the word of Prophecy is even more sure than the voice which the three Apostles heard from heaven. *S. Augustine* in *Joan.*, Tract. 35.

And again; St. Peter calls the word of Prophecy more sure than the voice which he heard from heaven; he calls it more sure, not more true. And what does he mean by calling it more sure? He means, that it is an evidence by which the hearer is more assured. And why? Because it might be alleged by impious men, that the voice and light from heaven were magical illusions; but no such objection can be made against the word of Prophecy. By the Voice from Heaven the believing are confirmed, and by the Word of Prophecy the unbeliever is convinced. *S. Augustine*, Sermon. 43.

Besides, the Voice from heaven was a single Voice, heard by

only a chosen few, who survived but for a short time; but the Word of Prophecy is the concurrent testimony of many inspired persons in several ages, and has been delivered to the Churches of God; and it receives fresh accomplishments, and gains additional force, in every successive generation; and it "endureth for ever" (1 Pet. i. 25); and is ever sounding in the ears of the world.

Further, the Transfiguration was indeed designed to be a type of Christ's future Coming in Glory; but the testimony of types, which are allusive and analogical, is not so clear as the explicit promise and descriptive language of the sure Word of Prophecy.

Moses and Elias, the Representatives of the Law and the Prophets, appeared to St. Peter and the two other Apostles on the holy mount. But St. Peter, in his speeches to the Jews, as recorded in the Acts of the Apostles, never refers to that personal appearance; but he always grounds his appeal on the writings of Moses and the Prophets. The Vision on the holy mount was a strong argument to himself; but the argument from the prophetic word, delivered "by holy men of God, borne along by the Holy Ghost," was βεβαιότερος, surer to his hearers.

We must come for our light to the word of prophecy; for even they, who had the supernatural light, "were fain to resolve all into this. Witness St. Peter; he, and they that were with him, saw Christ's glory, and heard the voice from heaven. What then? He had the evidence of both senses; and yet after both these, he says, 'we have the more sure word of prophecy' than both these—a word more sure and more clear than them both." *Bp. Andrewes*, i. p. 255: see also *ibid.* i. 19.

Here is a strong evidence of the genuineness of the present Epistle. A forger, personating St. Peter, would have magnified the importance of the supernatural visions vouchsafed specially to him whose character he assumed. He would have exalted those revelations above prophecy. But the Apostle, whose characteristic is humility, is not "elated by the greatness of his revelations;" but wisely and soberly commends the ordinary means of grace, which all Christians, of every age and country, possess in the sacred Scriptures, as of more cogency and value for their assurance and growth in grace, than any extraordinary visions which were vouchsafed personally to himself.

— ᾧ καλῶς ποιεῖτε] to which (word of prophecy) ye do well that ye take heed, as to a lamp shining in a dark place—ἀρχμῇ τόπῳ, a dry, gloomy, squalid place (*Welstein*, p. 702)—until the day shall have dawned, and the morning star shall have arisen in your hearts.

The Apostle compares Prophecy to a lamp which guides the footsteps of the wayfaring man in a gloomy, desolate place, where he is not likely to meet any one to direct him on his way; and serves as his guide in the night and the twilight, till the dawn appears, and he no longer needs the lamp: compare note above on the word φωστῆρες, *Phil.* ii. 15. Prophecy is such a lamp; it has a preparatory and manuductory office, as John the Baptist, the precursor of the Light, had. He was a λύχνος φαίνων, a shining lamp; and the Jews did well to rejoice for a season in his light (see on *John* v. 35).

But Prophecy is not the Light. It was sent, as John the Baptist was, to bear witness to the Light (*John* i. 7, 8). And the Lamp of Prophecy is only for a season, till He, who is "the True Light," "the Light of the world" (*John* i. 4. 9; *viii.* 12; *xii.* 46), shall have risen in your hearts; as John was only for a season, till Christ, the Day-spring from on high, had arisen, and was fully revealed and manifested in His works. See above, on *Matt.* xi. 2—13, and *Rev.* xxii. 16, where Christ calls Himself the Morning Star; and He is called ὁ πρὸ ἑωσφόρου φωσφόρος by *Hippolyt.*, *Refut. hæc.* p. 337, from *Ps.* cx. 3; and so *Theophylact* here, who says that the φωσφόρος is Χριστοῦ παρουσία.

These words, so interpreted, do not imply, that those persons to whom they were addressed had not received the light of Christ in their hearts; but they intimate, that all the prophecies concerning Christ had not as yet been fulfilled, and therefore the word of prophecy was still in some respects, especially in the predictions delivered by our Lord and His Apostles, in the New Testament, concerning His Second Coming and Future Glory, a lamp shining in a dark place.

¹ Rom. 12. 6.
^{m 2} Sam. 23. 2.
² Tim. 3. 16.
¹ Pet. 1. 11.

φωσφόρος ἀνατείλῃ ἐν ταῖς καρδίαις ὑμῶν ²⁰ ¹ τοῦτο πρῶτον γινώσκοντες, ὅτι
 πᾶσα προφητεία γραφῆς ἰδίας ἐπιλύσεως οὐ γίνεται ²¹ ^m οὐ γὰρ θελήματι

If even St. John the Baptist was only a *Lamp* compared with Christ, in His First Coming, how glorious *was that* Coming! And if all the word of Prophecy, spoken by all the holy men of old, is only a Lamp compared with Christ in His Second Coming, how glorious *will that* Coming be!

The Christian, therefore, does well to take heed to the word of Prophecy, even till the Great Day shall have dawned on the world, and the Morning Star shall have risen on the hearts of the faithful, to whom He who is "the Morning Star" has promised to "give the morning Star" (see on Rev. ii. 28). Then the Lamp of Prophecy will be eclipsed in the splendour of Christ's presence, as St. Paul has taught us (1 Cor. xiii. 8, 9, 12). It will be obscured by the surpassing Light of the Countenance of God shining on the pure in heart (Matt. v. 8). They will no more need the prophetic word, who are permitted to see the INCARNATE WORD in all His Glory. Compare *S. Augustine*, in Joann., Tract. 35, sect. 9, and Sermon. 126.

The truth of Christ's δύναμις καὶ παρουσία, power and Second Coming, is even now realized by Faith in the hearts of the believers; but it will hereafter be seen with their eyes.

20. τοῦτο πρῶτον] knowing this first of all, that no prophecy of Scripture becometh a matter of its own interpretation: for prophecy was not at any time brought (to the world) by the will of man—like the delusions of the false prophets who prophesied out of their own hearts (Jer. xxiii. 26)—but holy men of God spake, being borne along by the Holy Ghost, or as the reading of the verse stands in B, men spake from God (ἀπὸ Θεοῦ), being borne along by the Holy Ghost.

Before ἄγιοι Elz. has οἱ; but this is not in the most ancient MSS. The reading of ἀπὸ for ἄγιοι is received by Tisch. and Alford.

On the sense of φερόμενοι, borne along, like a ship by a wind, Acts xxvii. 16, 17, see *Welstein* here, and *Trench*, Synon. p. 25.

However excellent the uses of Prophecy are—as just declared—yet do not imagine that it can interpret itself. It does not become a thing of its own solution. It cannot interpret itself. Its Interpreter is Time; see below, the Introduction to the Book of Revelation.

The word ἴδιος is used seven times by St. Peter, and always in this sense, its own: see 1 Pet. iii. 1. 5. 2 Pet. ii. 16. 22; iii. 3. 16, 17.

The word ἐπίλυσις is best explained by the use of the verb ἐπιλύω (to interpret, explain) in the Gospel of St. Peter's disciple, St. Mark, iv. 36, τοῖς μαθηταῖς αὐτοῦ ἐπέλυε πάντα. He was explaining all things to His disciples; cp. Gen. xli. 12, where Joseph is said ἐπιλύειν (i. e. to interpret) to each man according to his dream. And this is the sense given to ἐπίλυσις in the Vulg., Syriac, Arabic, and Æthiopic Versions. The passage of Genesis affords an excellent illustration of St. Peter's meaning. The dreams of the chief butler and baker, and of Pharaoh, were from God. So is Prophecy. They could tell their dreams. But Joseph expressly declares, on both occasions, that the interpretation appertains not to himself or to any man, but to God. Gen. xl. 8; xli. 15, 16: cp. *Huther*, p. 287.

The best comment on this passage is supplied by St. Peter himself, in his First Epistle, i. 10, where he represents the Prophets as making search concerning the salvation to be revealed, and as inquiring what the Spirit of Christ, which was in them, was indicating.

The Prophets were inspired to prophesy, but were not enabled to interpret their own prophecies. See Dan. viii. 26, 27; xii. 8, and *Theophylact* here, and the excellent remarks of *Bp. Sherlock*, at the beginning of his Second Discourse on Prophecy, vol. iv. pp. 19—23; and so *Knapp*, *De Wette*, *Schleusner*, and others. Cp. note above on 1 Pet. i. 10, and *Dr. W. Lee* on Inspiration, Lecture v. pp. 206—213, and *Hengstenberg*, Christology, § 248.

This statement of St. Peter is an answer to the objections of those who, like the Jews, to whom he was writing, had possessed the Prophecies for many generations, and yet expected a Messiah very different from Him Who was foretold by the Prophets, and came and fulfilled the Prophecies.

It also contains a caution against several errors of the false Teachers against whom St. Peter is writing. The Simonians, Cerinthians, and other Heretics of the Apostolic age, alleged that Moses and the Prophets were not inspired by God, but by Angels, who made the world. See *S. Hippolytus*, Refut. hæres. p. 178, προφήτας ἀπὸ τῶν κοσμοποιῶν ἀγγέλων εἰρηκεῖν τὰς προφητείας: cp. p. 194. Some of these heretics even said that the

Prophets were inspired by the Evil Spirit (see *ibid.*, p. 245, and *Tertullian*, Præscr. Hær. c. 48. *S. Epiphanius*, hæret. c. 21).

St. Peter is also warning his readers against another device of these false Teachers. They grounded their errors on arbitrary private interpretations of the word of prophecy; contravening the public testimony, and received doctrine, of the Universal Church of Christ; see *S. Iren.* i. 23, ed. *Stieren*, i. 20; i. 26, ed. *Grabe*, "prophetica curiosius exponere nituntur," and the assertion of *Irenæus*, "that the Gnostics study to pervert the Scriptures so as to suit their own fables" (i. 8. 1); cp. below, iii. 16.

The Gnostics grounded their impure doctrines upon several passages of the Old Testament, interpreted after their own polluted fancies, as may be seen in *Epiphanius*; and out of their mystical interpretation of it brought in many damnable heresies. Hence in this Epistle, which is wholly designed as an antidote against the Gnostics, the word γνῶσις is used in opposition to knowledge, to which they pretended; *Dr. Hammond*, on v. 5.

It is well observed by *Neander* (Church Hist., sect. iv.), speaking of some of the Gnostics, especially of the writer of the Pseudo-Clementines, that they indulge in violent and tortuous interpretations, with a view to favour their own opinions. And the writer of the Clementines, and advocate of Ebionite opinions, would not allow that in the case of the true prophet there was any state of ecstasy, in which the prophet is borne onward by the might of a higher Spirit, and announces greater things than he himself would understand. And as he could not apply his notion of Prophecy to the Prophets of the Old Testament, he looked on whatever could not be literally understood, as a mark of a spurious and delusive prophetic spirit.

St. Peter therefore contrasts the private spirit of the false interpreters with the operations of the Holy Spirit, by whom the Prophets spake. The Prophets did not speak their own words, but were illuminated by God. They had gracious intimations from God of the glorious Revelations of the Gospel, but did not understand, nor were they able to interpret, their own Prophecies; as is well said by *Æcumenius* here, ἤδεισαν τὸν καταπεμπόμενον αὐτοῖς προφητικὸν λόγον· οὐ μέντοι καὶ τὴν ἐπίλυσιν αὐτοῦ ἐποιούντο. They inquired what the Spirit of Christ, which was in them, did signify. (1 Pet. i. 11.) They were like lamps shining in a dark place till the dawn of day.

Since, therefore, the Prophets themselves could not expound their own prophecies, which were not produced by their own will, but were dictated by the Holy Ghost, let no person pretend to explain them by his own private spirit. But for the right interpretation of the words of the Ancient Prophets, let us listen to the words of the Apostles, who received the promised gift of the Holy Spirit, who had spoken by the Prophets, and who explained by the Apostles the words which He Himself had uttered by the Prophets. Let St. Peter himself (e. g. in Acts ii. 16. 25. 34), and St. Paul, and St. Matthew, and the other Apostles and Evangelists, be our interpreters of Ancient Prophecy. Cp. *Bp. Andrewes*, iii. 133. 275, 276, and *Wm. Lowth*, Preface to Isaiah, p. 225, ed. 1842.

Prophecy did not come by the will of man, but was dictated by the Holy Spirit of God. The Prophets prophesied, but did not interpret their own prophecies. And no one can interpret prophecy without the aid of the Spirit Who wrote Prophecy. "No one knoweth the things of God, but the Spirit of God" (1 Cor. ii. 11). And the Spirit of God does not reveal Himself in men's private imaginations, setting themselves up in opposition to the Witness of God in the Mystical Body of Christ; but the Spirit of God spake by the Prophets and Apostles to the World; and He dwells in the public assemblies of the Faithful, and makes Himself seen and heard in the general consent and concurrent practice of the Church Universal, to which Christ has promised His abiding presence (Matt. xxviii. 20), and the perpetual indwelling and guidance of His Spirit (John xiv. 16. 26; xvi. 13).

Herein consists the probationary use of Prophecy; viz., to try the faith, and exercise the vigilance and patience, of believers, and to make unbelievers themselves to become witnesses to the truth, and instruments in establishing it. If Prophecy had been ἰδίας ἐπιλύσεως, if its interpretation had been declared at the same time with its delivery, then none of those moral and probationary purposes would have been answered. The fulfilment of prophecy in a manner contrary to all previous expectation, proves the prophecy to be Divine: see below, Introduction to the Book of Revelation.

On the inspiration and office of the ancient Prophets, see *Tertullian*, Apol. 18, "viros justitiæ et innocentie dignos Deum nosse et ostendere à primordio emisit Deus, Spiritu Divino inundatos."

ἀνθρώπου ἡνέχθη ποτὲ προφήτεια, ἀλλὰ ὑπὸ Πνεύματος ἁγίου φερόμενοι ἐλά-
λησαν ἅγιοι Θεοῦ ἄνθρωποι.

This passage of St. Peter seems to be imitated by *Theophilus*, ad Autolyc. ii. 9, where he speaks of the writers of Scripture as πνευματοφόροι Πνεύματος ἁγίου, and iii. 12, τοὺς πάντας πνευματοφόρους ἐν Πνεύματι Θεοῦ λελαληκέναι. *S. Hippolytus* (de Antichristo, 2), οὐ γὰρ ἐξ ἰδίας δυνάμεως ἐφθέγγοντο οἱ προφήται (μὴ πλανῶ), οὐδὲ ἅπερ αὐτοὶ ἐβούλοντο ταῦτα ἐκέρυττον, ἀλλὰ διὰ τοῦ Λόγου ἐσοφίζοντο. See also *ibid.*, c. 31: compare also his description of the Prophets, in his recently recovered work, "Philosophumena, or Refutation of Heresies," p. 337, ἔπειτα δίκαιοι ἄνδρες γεγέννηται φίλοι Θεοῦ, οὗτοι προφήται κέκληνται, κ.τ.λ.

On πᾶσα—οὐ = none, see Rom. iii. 20. 1 Cor. i. 29. Eph. v. 5. 1 John ii. 21. *Winer*, § 26, p. 155.

PRELIMINARY NOTE TO THE SECOND CHAPTER.

In the following Chapter, the writer, enlightened by the Holy Ghost, has a view of the Heresies rising up in the Church, and eagerly propagated by men who *denied the Lord that bought them* with His own blood, shed for them on the Cross. In it he displays the immoral consequences of these Heresies, and the ignominy which they would bring on the Christian name. He speaks in short and abrupt sentences, as one who is hurried on with impassioned vehemence and strong emotions.

The fervid eloquence of the writer in this chapter is precisely what might have been anticipated from the character of *St. Peter*, full of ardent love to Christ, and of earnest zeal for His glory.

It is, therefore, assuredly the part of a poor and purblind Criticism, to reject this Second Epistle, because it is not like in style to the First Epistle of St. Peter. When St. Peter wrote *that* Epistle, he was like a Shepherd feeding the flock of Christ's pasture; but now, in the Second Epistle, he is the same Shepherd, fighting against the wolves who were ready to tear the sheep. He is the same Shepherd in both Epistles; but the feelings by which he is animated are very different; and the language of his lips corresponds with the feelings of his heart. Cp. above, *Introduction*, pp. 71, 72.

As a preliminary, for the more profitable study of this Chapter, it is requisite to take a view of the principal Heresies which were springing up in the Apostolic age, and which developed themselves before the close of the first Century.

The Gnostic false Teachers of the Apostolic age, and those who arose immediately after it, whose appearance is predicted by St. Peter, denied the Lord *that bought them* with His blood, shed for them on Calvary, and grieved the Holy Spirit whom they had received in their baptism. St. Peter, the Apostle of the *Circumcision*, had a special commission to refute those heresies. For they were, for the most part, the up-growth of *Judaism*, not able to resist the evidence of Christianity, and desirous to accommodate it to its own prejudices. Their promoters were reluctant to receive the main doctrine of Christianity, that of the *ever-blessed Trinity*, as contravening the Jewish notions of the *Divine Unity*; and they were unwilling to accept the belief in a *suffering and dying Messiah*. Thus they were led to invent certain theories by way of compromise. All the heresies which are here referred to by St. Peter, will, when analyzed, be seen to be logical consequences of those Judaistic prejudices.

They may be ranged under the following heads:

The *Simonians*, or followers of Simon Magus, who may be regarded as the precursors of the *Sabellians*, taught that the *Three Persons* of the Trinity were only three revelations of the Same Divine Person; and they ventured to assert that Simon Magus himself was that person. Thus "*they denied the Lord that bought them.*" See *S. Irenæus*, i. 20 (ed. Grabe); i. 23 (ed. Stieren). *S. Hippolytus*, Ref. hæ. vi. p. 175.

The *Docetæ* of the Apostolic age, who seem to have sprung from the sect of Simon Magus, denied the reality of the *human body* of Jesus Christ, and asserted that He *died only in appearance*. Thus "*they denied the Lord that bought them.*" Compare *S. Iren.* i. 20, Grabe, "passum in Judæa putatum, cum non esset passus." Cp. *Clem. Alex.* Strom. vii. p. 765, and *Bp. Pear-*

son, Vind. Ignat. ii. 11. *Bp. Bull*, Judic. Eccl. Cathol. cap. ii.: and *Waterland* on the Trinity, ch. vi. vol. v. p. 187. *Tillemont*, ii. p. 23.

The *Nicolaitans*, by their licentious practices, virtually denied the Incarnation of the Son of God; see further below on Rev. ii. 6. 15.

The *Ebionites* of the Apostolic age, who may be called the predecessors of the *Socinians*, denied the *Divinity* of Jesus. They affirmed that he was the son of Joseph and Mary, and born in the ordinary manner of men, and was only a just and holy man. Thus they detracted from the value of the *price paid* by the Son of God on the Cross, and impugned the *sufficiency* of that sacrifice which was offered for the satisfaction of God's Justice, and for the ransom of Mankind from the bondage of Sin and Satan, and for the reconciliation of the World to God; and thus they undermined the doctrine of the *Atonement*, and *denied the Lord that bought them*. See *S. Irenæus*, i. 26, Grabe, where 'consimiliter' is to be read for 'non similiter,' from *S. Hippolytus*, vi. p. 257.

The *Cerinthians* of Asia, and many others of the Apostolic and sub-apostolic age, such as Carpocrates (*S. Hippolyt.* Phil. p. 255), who followed in their steps, *separated Jesus* from *Christ*. They asserted that *Christ* descended from the Father into the *man Jesus*, the son of Joseph and Mary, at His Baptism, in the form of a dove, and preached during His Ministry, and worked Miracles; but that at the *end* of His Ministry the *Christ* flew away from *Jesus*, and did *not suffer death*, but that only the *man Jesus* suffered on the cross. See *S. Iren.* i. 25, Grabe. *S. Hippolyt.* Refut. hæ. vi. p. 256. *S. Epiph.* hæ. 28. *Tillemont*, ii. p. 26. *Ittig*, p. 53¹.

All the Gnostics, in fine, of whatever denomination they were, *denied* the Nativity, Passion, and Resurrection of Jesus Christ; though not *all in the same way*. Indeed, according to the excellent summary of their doctrines by *S. Irenæus* (iii. 11), not one of them received the truth, that the "Word was made flesh." Thus it may be truly said, that they "*all denied the Lord that bought them.*" See *S. Irenæus*, cited in the *Introduction* to St. John's First Epistle, and *Bede* here, who says that "this Epistle was specially directed against the Simonians, Ebionites, and Nicolaitans;" and *Bp. Bull*, Defens. Fid. Nic. iii. 1, § 6; and cp. *Dr. Waterland* on the Trinity, ch. v. vol. v. pp. 107, 108, where he comments on this text of St. Peter, and shows that the Apostles and Apostolic men agree in censuring with the strongest language of reprobation those who taught heretical doctrines concerning the Divinity, Humanity, and Atonement of Christ. Their dogmas were condemned by the primitive Church as αἱρέσεις ἀπωλείας, *heresies of destruction*.

Thus great good has been elicited by the wise Providence of God from the manifold variety of error by which these Gnostic Teachers sought to corrupt the truth in primitive times. By that merciful overruling Providence, and by the Voice of the Holy Spirit in Holy Scripture, and in the Church, condemning their dogmas, and proclaiming the Catholic Faith, these false Teachers themselves have been made subservient to the refutation of similar errors in later times, and to the maintenance of the Truth in Christ.

Therefore, we may thank God for His marvellous wisdom, power, and love, in rendering the pernicious devices of the Evil One ministerial to our everlasting salvation; and we may thence derive a comfortable assurance, that even in times of greatest distress and difficulty, when the storm raised by Satan rages most fiercely, and when the water-floods of Heresy seem ready to overwhelm the Church, the rock on which she is built will stand secure, and the violence of the tempest will prove the strength of her foundation, and "the rivers of the flood thereof will make glad the City of God."

On the History of these heresies in Apostolic times, the reader may consult the excellent work of *Ittig*, de hæresiarch. ævi Apostolici, Lips. 1690. *Buddæi* Eccl. Apostolica, Jenæ, 1729, cap. v. *Bp. Bull*, Judic. Eccl. Cathol. cap. ii. *Dr. Waterland* on the Trinity, ch. vi. *Dr. Burton's* Bampton Lectures, 1829. *Walch's* Ketzler-historie, vol. i. *Neander's* Church History, vol. ii. sect. iv. *Gieseler*, Ch. Hist. § 44; and see below, *Introduction* to the First Epistle of St. John.

¹ The old Latin Translation of this passage of *S. Irenæus* is preserved in the editions of that Father; but his original Greek may be restored from the recently-discovered treatise of his scholar, *S. Hippolytus*, p. 257; and vice versa, the Greek of *S. Hippolytus* may be

emended from the old Latin Version of *S. Irenæus*, e.g. for ἀποστῆναι in *S. Hippolytus*, p. 257, we must read ἀποστῆναι from the 'recolasse' in *S. Irenæus*, and from *S. Hippolytus* himself, p. 328.

a Deut. 13. 1.
Matt. 24. 11.
Acts 20. 29.
1 Cor. 11. 19.
1 Tim. 4. 1.
2 Tim. 3. 1, 5.
Jude 4, 18.

Π. ¹ α' Εγένοντο δὲ καὶ ψευδοπροφήται ἐν τῷ λαῷ, ὡς καὶ ἐν ὑμῖν ἔσονται ψευδοδιδάσκαλοι, οἵτινες παρεισάξουσιν αἵρέσεις ἀπωλείας, καὶ τὸν ἀγοράσαντα αὐτοὺς δεσπότην ἀρνούμενοι, ἐπάγοντες ἑαυτοῖς ταχυνὴν ἀπώλειαν ² καὶ πολλοὶ ἐξακολουθήσουσιν αὐτῶν ταῖς ἀσελγείαις, δι' οὓς ἡ ὁδὸς τῆς ἀληθείας βλασφη-

1. ἐγένοντο δὲ ψευδοπροφήται] *But there arose false prophets also (as well as true) in the people, or ancient Church of God in Israel. On this meaning of λαός, see Rom. xv. 10; Mede's Works, Disc. xliii. p. 238, on this text.*

Do not, therefore, be surprised that there should arise *false teachers among you also*, even such as *will bring in αἵρέσεις ἀπωλείας, heresies of destruction, by the side (παρὰ) of the true evangelical Doctrine received from us.* On this use of παρὰ, see St. Paul's words, Gal. i. 8, "If any one, or even an Angel from heaven, preaches any thing παρὰ, beside, what we preached to you, and ye received from us, let him be accursed."

The word παρ-εισάγειν implies here something of *sidelong and surreptitious insinuation* of what is false, as in St. Paul's phrase, speaking of false brethren privily brought in. Gal. ii. 4, τοὺς παρ-εισάκτους ψευδαδελφούς; and cp. Jude 4, speaking of false teachers who παρ-εσέδυσαν, *crept in secretly by the side.*

Παρ-εισάξουσιν, they will bring in. Observe the *future tense.* Here is a prophecy of what was still to come. Contrast this with St. Jude's word παρ-εσέδυσαν in the *past tense*, they crept in. What St. Peter describes as future, St. Jude declares as present. Here is an evidence that St. Jude wrote *after* St. Peter. Cp. iii. 2. Jude 17, and *Introduction* to St. Jude's Epistle.

The words ἔσονται—ἀπωλείας are quoted by *S. Hippolytus*, de Cons. Sæculi, c. 10, p. 98, ed. Lagarde; and *Firmilian*, Bishop of Cappadocia, early in the third century, refers to this passage as written by St. Peter, Ep. Cyprian. 75, "Petrus et Paulum beatos Apostolos qui in Epistolis suis hæreticos execrati sunt, et ut eos evitemus monuerunt." This is an important testimony—from the country to which the Epistle purports to be addressed (cp. 1 Pet. i. 1 with 2 Pet. iii. 1)—to the *genuineness* of this Epistle.

—αἵρέσεις] *heresies*—doctrines adopted by an act of the *private choice* (αἵρεσις), in opposition to the *Will and Word of God*, and at variance with the *public teaching* of the Church.

The word αἵρεσις is often used in the New Testament to signify a *sect* (from sequor), see Acts v. 17; xv. 5; xxiv. 5; but it is a word of more general import, as the etymology shows, and its sense in any passage must be determined by the context. Here the Apostle is doubtless condemning *separation* from the Church, but the false *doctrines* of the Separatists is what he has principally in view; and therefore αἵρέσεις may be here properly rendered *heresies*.

Indeed, the one involves the other. For, as *S. Jerome* says (ad Titum, c. iii.), "though there is this difference between schism and heresy, that schism is a separation from the Church, and heresy is perverse doctrine, yet every Schism devises some Heresy, in order that it may appear to have a reason for separation from the Church."

Heresy is so called from the Greek word signifying *choice*; and therefore St. Paul says that a heretic is *self-condemned* (Titus iii. 10), because by the very act of *choosing* he condemns himself. For "we Christians have no licence to *bring in* any thing new, or to *choose* for ourselves. The Apostles of the Lord are our Guides, who did not *choose* any doctrines, and *bring* them in of their own choice, but *received* their teaching from Christ, and *faithfully* delivered it to the World. And therefore, if even an Angel from heaven were *now* to preach to us any thing else, he would be called anathema by us." *Tertullian* (Præscr. hæc. c. 6).

Thus this mention of *Heresy* follows naturally from that of ἰδία ἐπίλυσις, or *private interpretation*. Indeed, *Heresy*, or the exercise of arbitrary, private, *choice* in matters of *doctrine*, always endeavours to strengthen itself by *private interpretation* of Holy Writ.

The Heresies which were propagated by false teachers, *denying the Lord that bought them*, i. e. denying the doctrine of Christ's true *Divinity* and *Humanity*, and of the *Atonement* made by Christ on the cross (see the preliminary note to this chapter), are called by St. Peter "*heresies of destruction*," because they are opposed to the *Way of Salvation*; and because they as certainly lead to the *destruction* of the souls of men, as the true Faith leads to their *salvation*. Therefore, he adds, that they who bring in these heresies of *destruction, by the side of the true Faith*, do in fact *bring upon themselves* swift *destruction*. Here again St. Peter's language coincides with St. Paul's, who says, "that the *end* of those who are enemies of the Cross of Christ is *destruction*." (Phil. iii. 19.)

Let these warnings of the two Apostles be earnestly commended to the consideration of *Socinians*, and others, who deny the Godhead of Christ, and reject the doctrine of the Atonement; and to the attention of those who favour such opinions, or treat them as matters of indifference.

The false Teachers to whom St. Paul here refers, are *Simon Magus* and his disciples, and *Cerinthus* and *Ebion*, and the *Nicolaitans*; see *Æcumen.* and *Theophylact* here, and the preliminary note.

On the use of the *genitive* in αἵρέσεις ἀπωλείας, see above on Matt. xxiv. 15, and James i. 25.

—καὶ τὸν ἀγοράσαντα αὐτοὺς δεσπότην ἀρνούμενοι] *denying even the Lord, or Master, Who bought them with His own blood, shed as the price of their redemption from captivity, for the purchase of them to Himself; and of a glorious inheritance for them.* See on 1 Cor. vi. 20; vii. 23. Gal. iii. 13; iv. 5.

Compare the parallel place in St. Jude's Epistle, where he speaks of these false teachers as *denying the only Master* (δεσπότην) and *Lord Jesus Christ*, where the word Θεόν (God) after δεσπότην, in the edition of *Elz.* and in the English Version, is not found in the best MSS. (see note there), and it seems that there the Apostle St. Jude calls Christ the *only Master* (δεσπότην), and thus leads us to the interpretation of this place of St. Peter.

St. Peter could hardly have written these words, "*denying the Lord that bought them*," without some reflection on his own conduct in the High Priest's courtyard at Jerusalem, when, notwithstanding his Lord's warning, he *denied Him* thrice. (Matt. xxvi. 70. 72.) But he had not then seen the bloodshedding on the cross, nor received the gracious outpouring of the Holy Ghost.

—ἐπάγοντες ἑαυτοῖς] *bringing upon themselves.* Observe the *paronomasia* here. They will *bring in* stealthily heresies of *destruction*, and thus they will *bring* swift *destruction* upon themselves.

2. ἀσελγείαις] *lasciviousness.* See Rom. xiii. 13. 2 Cor. xii. 21. Gal. v. 19. Eph. iv. 19. 1 Pet. iv. 3. It is connected by St. Peter with the *lust of the flesh* in v. 18; cp. Jude 4. Cp. *Wetstein*, i. p. 588; the word ἀσελγεία is interpreted in the old Glossaries by "impudicitia, lascivia."

Elz. has ἀπωλείαις here; but ἀσελγείαις is the reading of A, B, C, K, L, and is received by *Griesb., Scholz, Lach., Tisch., Alf.*, and is important to be observed, as marking the connexion of *heretical doctrine* with *licentious and unclean living*. Those heresiarchs who "denied the Lord that bought them, also taught men to sit loose from all decent rule and order, and under pretence of liberty, to run riot in luxury and dissolute behaviour: they were heretics in *morality* as well as in *faith*, and of the worst kind." *Dr. Waterland*, v. p. 108.

The denial of the Incarnation of the Son of God, and of His Passion and Resurrection, took away the strongest motives to holiness; and the presumptuous claims which the Gnostic Teachers made to supernatural powers and supereminent spiritual knowledge, led to the encouragement of all carnal indulgences. Thus, for example, *Simon Magus*, from "whom the knowledge, falsely so called (ψευδάνυμος γνῶσις), received its beginnings" (says *Irenæus*), asserted that "they who believed in Him were free to live as they pleased, and that men would be saved by His grace and not according to their works; and that nothing is good by nature, but only by institution. And therefore his votaries live in lasciviousness," adds *Irenæus*, i. 20, *Grabe*¹. Cp. *Euseb.* ii. 13. *S. Augustine*, de hæc. c. 1.

In like manner, the Nicolaitans of the first century denied the need of martyrdom, and allowed the indulgence of fleshly lusts. See *Æcumen.* and *Hammond* here, and *Dr. Whitby*, and below on Rev. ii. 6. 14.

The Gnostic Teachers boldly asserted, that as gold is not injured by mud, so, whatever they themselves do, they are not soiled, although they wallow in the mire of lust, and filth of uncleanness; and therefore they practise with recklessness such things as those of which the Apostle says "that they who do them shall not enter the kingdom of God," and they venture to accuse us who abstain from these things, as mere dotards who *know nothing.* *S. Irenæus* (i. 6. 2).

Some of the Gnostics affirmed that they themselves were perfect; and that no one—not even a Paul or a Peter—could soar

¹ The *Latin* only is here preserved in the editions of *S. Irenæus*; but his original Greek may be seen in the work of his scholar, *S. Hippolytus*, Ref. hæc. p. 175, ed. Miller.

μηθήσεται^{3 b} καὶ ἐν πλεονεξία πλαστοῖς λόγοις ὑμᾶς ἐμπορεύσονται οἷς τὸ κρῖμα ἔκπαλαι οὐκ ἀργεῖ, καὶ ἡ ἀπώλεια αὐτῶν οὐ νυστάζει.

^{4 c} Εἰ γὰρ ὁ Θεὸς ἀγγέλων ἀμαρτησάντων οὐκ ἐφείσατο, ἀλλὰ σειραῖς ζόφου

b Dent. 32. 35.

1 Tim. 6. 5.

Tit. 1. 11.

Jude 4.

c Job 4. 18.

Luke 8. 31.

John 8. 44. 1 John 3. 8. Jude 6. Rev. 20. 2.

to the heights of their *knowledge*, and that they were above all power, and were free to do all things on account of their emancipation from thralldom; and could not be apprehended, or even observed, by the Divine Judge. *S. Irenæus* i. 13, ed. *Stieren*; p. 61, ed. *Grabe*. Cp. i. 25, ed. *Stieren*.

Indeed, the enormities committed by them, while pretending to superior spiritual knowledge of things, are too monstrous to be recorded; they may be seen in the histories of their doctrines and practices, particularly in the works of *S. Irenæus*, *S. Hippolytus*, *S. Epiphanius*, and *Philastrius*, and the collections made from them by *Tillemont*, ii. 19—28. *Ittig*, de hæresiarch. 21—95, ed. Lips. 1690, and *Neander's Church Hist.* sect. iv., and *Dr. Burton's Hist. of the Heresies of the Apostolic Age*, 1829.

The historic records of those moral enormities, foreseen and denounced in Holy Scripture, serve the important purpose of showing, that the teaching of Heresy leads to libertinism in practice; and that the purity of society, and the happiness of household life cannot be maintained, without vigilant caution and courageous zeal against the inroads of heretical error, and that we cannot reasonably hope for the preservation of those blessings without diligent examination of sound doctrine, and unremitting earnestness in defending it.

"*Denying the Lord that bought them.*" This text also is of great use in confuting the exclusive notions of *partial Redemption*, broached by Calvinists and others of later days. In it St. Peter asserts that Christ died for *all*; that He shed His blood for the *salvation* of all; that He *bought even* those who *deny Him*, and reject the doctrine of the Atonement made by Him on the Cross, and thereby are the cause of their own *destruction*. St. Peter's doctrine coincides here also with that of St. Paul, who affirms that the brother may be *destroyed* for *whom Christ died*. See on Rom. xiv. 15. Besides, St. Peter here expressly declares that the *destruction* is brought on these false Teachers *by themselves*; and is not designed by God.

Thus this text declares in the strongest terms the doctrine of Universal Redemption.

God, being desirous of *all men's salvation* (1 Tim. ii. 4), hath in token thereof, for their sakes whom He loved, bestowed His beloved Son. The self-same affection was in Christ Himself, to whom the wicked at the day of their last doom will *never dare to allege*, for their own excuse, that He which offered Himself, as a sacrifice to redeem *some*, did *exclude the rest*, and so made the way of their salvation impossible. He *paid a ransom for the whole world*; on Him the *iniquities of all were laid*; and, as St. Peter plainly witnesseth, He *bought them who deny Him*, and who *perish* because *they deny Him* (2 Pet. ii. 1). As in very truth, whether we respect the power and sufficiency of the price given, or the spreading of that infection, for remedy whereof the same was necessary, or the largeness of His desire which gave it; we have no reason but to acknowledge with joy and comfort that He *tasted death for all men*, as the Apostle to the Hebrews noteth (Heb. ii. 9). *Hooker*, E. P., book v. Appendix, p. 726. See also notes above on 1 Cor. viii. 11. Rom. viii. 30; xiv. 15. Heb. ii. 9.

— δὲ οὖς—βλασφημηθήσεται] *through whom the way of truth will be evil spoken of*. Cp. Rom. ii. 24, τὸ ὄνομα τοῦ Θεοῦ δὲ ὑμᾶς βλασφημεῖται.

The Nicolaitans and Gnostics generally are described by *Æcumenius* as most "unholy in their doctrines, and most licentious in their lives." *Clemens Alexandrinus* states as a reason for his own writing, that false teachers, professing the name of Christians, and yet living shameless lives, have brought infamy (βλασφημίαν) upon the Christian name, even among the Gentiles, and that it was necessary to disabuse their minds of this illusion, and to vindicate the Gospel of Christ. See *Clem. Strom.* iii. init.

Doubtless, the Gentile calumnies against the Christians, to which *Tertullian* and the other ancient Apologists refer, and which were used to instigate persecutions against the Church (*Tertull. Apol.* c. 7), were caused by the dissolute practices of the Gnostics.

3. ἐν πλεονεξίᾳ] *in covetousness with feigned speeches*, speciously fashioned in fair forms, so as to allure and deceive (see *Wetst.*), *they will make merchandise of you*.

Covetousness is represented as a characteristic of the false teachers of the Apostolic age; and therefore in this, as well as in other respects, they are compared to the prophet *Balaam*, who "loved the wages of unrighteousness" (v. 15), and fell through *covetousness*. They taught things which they ought not, for *filthy lucre's sake* (Tit. i. 11), supposing that godliness is a lucrative traffic (πορισμὸν, 1 Tim. vi. 5); and with this view they

VOL. II.—PART IV.

adulterated the word of God, as κάπηλοι adulterate their wares, in order to allure and deceive. See note on 2 Cor. ii. 17. They were therefore called *χριστέμποροι*: see *Dr. Bentley* on that text, and *Pseud.-Ignat.* ad Trall. 7, where is a graphic picture of these Gnostic teachers,—εἰσὶ τινες οὐ Χριστιανοί, ἀλλὰ Χριστέμποροι, καπηλεύοντες τὸν λόγον τοῦ εὐαγγελίου, λέγουσι Χριστὸν, ἵνα Χριστὸν ἀθετήσωσιν, καὶ οὐ νόμον συστήσωσιν, ἀλλ' ἵνα ἀνομίαν καταγγείλωσιν: for (he adds) "they sever Christ from the Father, and they calumniate the law of Christ and His birth from the Virgin, and are ashamed of His cross, and deny His Passion, and do not believe His Resurrection. And some of them (i. e. the Ebionites) assert that Christ is a *mere man* (ψιλὸν ἄνθρωπον), and some of them say (e. g. the Simonians), that the Father, Son, and Holy Ghost are the *same thing*, and that the Creation was not made by God through Christ, but by some other strange power."

The *covetousness* of the Gnostic Teachers was exemplified by the offer made by the Father of Gnosticism, *Simon Magus*, to St. Peter himself, at Samaria, as recorded in the Acts of the Apostles (Acts viii. 18). He supposed St. Peter to be like *himself*, and offered him *money* for the power of giving the Holy Ghost; because he worked his own magical juggleries, and taught his own licentious and self-glorifying doctrines for *money*. St. Peter in his indignant reply to that offer, uses the same word as here, τὸ ἀργυρίον σου σὺν σοὶ εἶη εἰς ἀπώλειαν (Acts viii. 20).

The *Valentinians* also of the Sub-Apostolic age, would only impart their mysteries to those who paid large sums of money for them (*S. Iren.* i. 20), and the Gnostic teachers are called *χρηματολαίλαπες* by *Pseud.-Ignat.* ad Magnes. § 9.

— ἡ ἀπώλεια αὐτῶν οὐ νυστάζει] *their destruction slumbereth not*: properly, does not nod the head, as if it were dozing, like a weary Judge, *νυστάζων δικαστῆς*, *Plato*, de repub. iii. 405. Cp. Matt. xxv. 5, where this word describes the Virgins in the parable, and *Wetstein*, i. p. 508, and here, p. 703. Here is a poetic personification of Divine Retribution. Compare the words of *Elijah*, contrasting the slumber of Baal with the Eternal watchfulness of Him "who neither slumbereth nor sleepeth." (1 Kings xviii. 27.)

4. εἰ γάρ] *For if God spared not Angels who sinned, but ταρταρώσας, committed them to chains of darkness*, in which they are kept for judgment. Compare Jude 6. He (God) *hath kept Angels, who kept not their own first Estate, but left their own habitation, for the judgment of the great Day, in everlasting chains under darkness*. Cp. *Wisd.* xvii. 18. A, B, C have *σειροί, caves*, here, or *dens*. See *Passow*; and this reading is received by *Lach.*, *Alf.*; but not by *Tischendorf*, and it does not appear to be authorized by any of the Cursive MSS. or Versions. A has ζόφοις here.

The words *σειραῖς ζόφου ταρταρώσας παρέδωκεν* declare that the *chains of darkness* are the *Tartarus* of which the Apostle speaks.

Besides *τηρουμένους, being kept*, is the reading of B, C*, G, K, and of the majority of Cursive MSS., and A and some Versions have *κολαζομένους τηρεῖν*, and some Versions express a future, *κολασθσομένους*. The reading of *Elz.* *τετηρημένους, having been kept*, rests on very little authority.

The word *ταρταρώσας*, found here and only here, does not necessarily signify *casting them down to Tartarus*, which would be *καταταρταρώσας*; but (like *φλογώσας, τεφρώσας, κεραυνώσας*, and other similar words) it signifies their element of punishment; and this statement, so understood, is quite consistent with the revelations of Scripture concerning the present liberty of evil Spirits, who carry a hell, a Tartarus, about with them. Cp. *A Lapide* here, p. 284, and *Estius*, p. 1170, and *Bengel*, who says, "possunt in *terrá* versari mancipia tartari." (Luke viii. 31. Eph. ii. 2. Rev. ix. 11; xii. 9.) The word *τάρταρος* is used by the LXX, in Job (xl. 15), in the sense of a *deep thicket*, as it seems; and *τάρταρος* and *ταρταροῦχος* are used by *S. Hippolytus* in his newly discovered treatise (pp. 338, 339), and he seems to make a distinction between *Tartarus* and the *lake of fire*; for he describes *Tartarus* as a *dark place*, *Ταρτάρου ὄμμα ἀφώτιστον ὑπὸ Λόγου φωνῆς μὴ καταλαμφθὲν*, and then proceeds to speak of the *lake of fire*, where *ταρταροῦχοι ἄγγελοι* are used as *instruments of punishment*.

Origen (in Rom. lib. 3), referring to Jude 6. says, "æternis vinculis in *tartaro* (al. in *tartarum*) constrictos renovavit."

This passage, and the parallel in St. Jude 6, are two important Texts on the *present condition* and *future destiny* of *Evil*

N

d Gen. 7. 21.
 1 Pet. 3. 19, 20.
 Jude 14, 15.
 e Gen. 19. 24.
 Num. 26. 10.
 Deut. 29. 23.
 Isa. 13. 19.
 Jer. 50. 40.
 Ezek. 16. 49.
 Hos. 11. 8.
 Amos 4. 11.
 Jude 7.
 f Gen. 19. 7, 8, 15.
 g Ps. 119. 158.
 Ezek. 9. 4.
 h Ps. 34. 17, 19.
 1 Cor. 10. 13.
 i Jude 4, 7, 8, 10, 16.

ταρταρώσας παρέδωκεν εἰς κρίσιν τηρουμένους· ^{5 d} καὶ ἀρχαίου κόσμου οὐκ ἐφείσατο, ἀλλ' ὄγδοον Νῶε δικαιοσύνης κήρυκα ἐφύλαξε, κατακλυσμὸν κόσμῳ ἀσεβῶν ἐπάξας· ^{6 e} καὶ πόλεις Σοδόμων καὶ Γομόρρας τεφρώσας καταστροφῇ κατέκρινεν, ὑπόδειγμα μελλόντων ἀσεβεῖν τεθεικώς· ^{7 f} καὶ δίκαιον Λὼτ, καταπονούμενον ὑπὸ τῆς τῶν ἀθέσμων ἐν ἀσελγείᾳ ἀναστροφῆς, ἐρρύσατο· ^{8 g} βλέμματι γὰρ καὶ ἀκοῇ ὁ δίκαιος ἐγκατοικῶν ἐν αὐτοῖς ἡμέραν ἐξ ἡμέρας ψυχὴν δικαίαν ἀνόμοις ἔργοις ἐβασάνιζεν· ^{9 h} οἶδε Κύριος εὐσεβεῖς ἐκ πειρασμοῦ ρύεσθαι, ἀδίκους δὲ εἰς ἡμέραν κρίσεως κολαζομένους τηρεῖν· ^{10 i} μάλιστα δὲ τοὺς ὀπίσω σαρκὸς ἐν ἐπιθυμίᾳ μiasμοῦ πορευομένους, καὶ κυριότητος κατα-

Angels; and consequently, of those persons who yield to their solicitations (see Matt. xxv. 41).

These two texts declare—

(1) That some Angels sinned; and, as a penalty for their sin, were cast out of their *original habitation*; and,

(2) That they have been committed in *custody to chains of darkness*; and that they are *now* being kept in them, and they there endure *some* punishment.

(3) That they there *remain* even to the end of the World, and are *reserved* there for the *Judgment* of the *Great Day*.

This appears also from the language of the Devils themselves to Christ, "Art thou come to torment us *before* the *season* (καιροῦ) of Judgment?" See Matt. viii. 29, and note; and on Luke viii. 31.

It is also evident from our Lord's words, describing the transactions of the Great Day. He there pre-announces that He will then say to them on the left hand, "Depart from Me, ye cursed, into everlasting fire, that *hath been prepared* for the Devil and his angels." They are therefore *not yet* cast into it.

It is also further apparent from the Apocalypse, revealing the casting of the Devil into the *Lake of Fire*, as an event which has *not* taken place, but is yet *future*. Rev. xx. 10.

(4) Comparing also these texts with other portions of Holy Scripture (1 Pet. v. 8), where the Devil is compared to a roaring Lion *walking about*, seeking whom he may devour; and (Rev. xx. 7) where Satan is described as loosed; and with the clear assertions of the Apostolic writings, describing his present liberty, energy, and influence, and designating him as "the Prince of the power of the air" (ἀέρος not αἰθέρος, Eph. ii. 2), and as "the god of this world" (2 Cor. iv. 4), we must conclude, that the *chains of darkness*, of which the Apostles St. Peter and St. Jude speak, and to which Satan and his associates are now confined, and in which they will be kept even *till the day of Judgment*, are of such power as to restrain them from ever recovering their place in the *regions of light*; but *not* such as to prevent them from exercising great power over those persons in this lower world, who *allow themselves* "to be taken captive by them at their will." See above, note on Eph. ii. 2, and below on Rev. xx. 1—8.

The *Book of Enoch*, in like manner, describes the Evil Angels as chained under the earth, till the Day of Judgment, when they will be cast into the Lake of Fire. See there, cap. v. 16; x. 6. 15; xiv. 4; xxi. 6; xxii. 4. *Huther*, p. 205. Cp. also the *Catena* here, p. 91, where we read, that "at the end of the world, Christ will condemn to severer punishment those evil Angels whom He has already shut up (in the abyss), and this He will do by casting them into everlasting fire." And *Bede* says here, "The Apostate Angels are yet to be condemned to the penalties of the Final Judgment; for although they have already received the nether regions of the murky air, as a prison-house, which, when compared to the bright glories of heaven, where they once dwelt, may be called an Inferno, yet there is a deeper gulf below, which still awaits them."

Accordingly, *S. Jerome* (in Eph. vi.) delivers it as the opinion of all the Doctors of the Church, that "the Devils have now their abode in the space between heaven and earth." And *S. Augustine* (De Civ. Dei, viii. 22) says, "that the Devils dwell in this nether air, and being cast down from heaven for their sin, they are here pre-condemned as in a prison, suitable to their sin." And it is asserted as an article of the Catholic Faith, by *S. Irenæus* (i. 2), that "Jesus Christ will come again hereafter, to raise all bodies and to judge all men, and to cast the rebel Angels into everlasting fire." *S. Justin Martyr*, *Origen*, in Num. cap. 22, *S. Irenæus* (v. 26), and *Eusebius* (iv. 17), were of opinion "that the Devils never openly blasphemed God before the publication of the Gospel, because they did not know till then what their *future* punishment would be;" which opinion, whether true or no, shows that those ancient writers did not imagine that the Devil had as yet been cast into hell. See the discourse of *Joseph Mede*, Works, p. 24, Disc. v.

5—7.] *S. Clement*, Bishop of Rome, seems to have had this passage of St. Peter before him when he wrote his Epistle, capp. 7. 9. 11, pp. 34. 47 note, ed. *Jacobson*, p. 58, ed. *Dressel*.

5. ὄγδοον Νῶε] *eighth Noah*. Observe the order of the words; ὄγδοον, *eighth*, is emphatic. It not only calls attention to the fact, that he was saved with *seven others* (on which use of the ordinal see *Winer*, § 37, p. 223), but it places him as it were at the highest point of the climax; and in this respect this expression may be compared with St. Jude's saying, "*Enoch*, the *seventh* from Adam," v. 14.

Seven is the number of completion and rest, the Sabbathical number; and in Enoch—the *seventh* from Adam—who walked with God, and did not die, but was translated from the turmoils of this world to a heavenly rest, and taken up to God, there appears to be a figurative adumbration of the *Sabbath of heavenly rest*, "which remaineth to the people of God." Heb. iv. 9.

The ancient Fathers also observe, that a figure of the Glory of the *Resurrection*, assured to those who rise to the new life in Christ, may be seen in *Noah* (whose name is *Comfort*), the Preacher of righteousness, the *eighth*; under whom the seven are gathered as under their head, in the Ark, the figure of the Church, rising above the old World buried in the Flood,—which, as St. Peter teaches, is the type of Baptism, the Sacrament of Spiritual Resurrection, and makes us partakers in the benefits of the Burial and Resurrection of Christ (1 Pet. iii. 21), and derives its hopes therefrom. We are born again to a lively hope of a Resurrection to glory in Christ, whose name, *Jesus* or Saviour, is equivalent to the number 888, and who rose on the *eighth day* from the Grave. See above on Luke xxiv. 1. They who abide in the Ark of the Church built by Him Who is the true *Comfort*, the true *Preacher of righteousness*, and who brought in everlasting righteousness (Dan. ix. 24), will be borne therein by the Spirit over the waters of this troublesome world, till it is safely moored on the Ararat of Heaven. It is observable, that the Mountain on which the Ark is said to have rested, is called by the Arabs "the Mountain of the *Eight*." See *Hammond* here; or, as others affirm, a village near it is called the "town of the Eight." Cp. *Winer*, R. W. B. p. 82.

—ἐπάξας] This form of the aorist (instead of ἐπαγαγὼν) is condemned by the Atticists, and is very rare. See *Buttmann*, § 114, p. 64.

7. ἀθέσμων] *of the lawless*. Cp. iii. 17. Especially violators of *divine laws*, θεσμῶν.

Observe, therefore, that, before the *Decalogue* was given, there was a Moral Law of God in the World. Cp. Rom. ii. 14. And this was broken by the inhabitants of *Sodom* and *Gomorrah*; and for their violations of that Law, especially as to *unlawful Marriages*, the *Canaanites* were extirpated. Lev. xviii. 3—28.

9. ἀδίκους—τηρεῖν] *to keep wicked men under punishment unto the day of Judgment*: as the rich man in the Parable is kept in Hades, during the interval between Death and Judgment. See Luke xvi. 23.

10. τοὺς ὀπίσω σαρκὸς, κ.τ.λ.] *those who are walking after the flesh*—that is, who are not led by the Spirit, but by the flesh, and fulfil the lusts thereof (Gal. v. 17, 18. Rom. viii. 12—14. Jude 8), as the Gnostic Teachers and their votaries did, see v. 2.

—καὶ κυριότητος καταφρονούντας] *and despising lordship*: as St. Jude expresses it, κυριότητα ἀθετοῦσι, they *cancel*, or *annul lordship*: i. e. render it of none effect; remove it from its place, *dethrone it*. See the use of ἀθετεῖν Mark vii. 9. Luke vii. 30. John xii. 48. Gal. ii. 21; iii. 15. Heb. x. 28.

The Gnostic Teachers *despised* and *annulled* κυριότητα, or lordship, in various ways:

(1) With regard to God the Father, the Κύριος Κυρίων, LORD of LORDS.

Hence the *Æthiopic* Version explains the word lordship here by the *Creator*. They derogated from His κυριότης, or Lordship, by their system of *dualism*, in which they set up a rival evil deity in opposition to the One True God; and by separating the supreme God from the *Demiurge* or *Creator* of the

φρονούντας. Τόλμηται αὐθάδεις δόξας οὐ τρέμουσι βλασφημοῦντες.¹¹ ὅπου^k Jude 9.
 ἄγγελοι ἰσχύϊ καὶ δυνάμει μείζονες ὄντες οὐ φέρουσι κατ' αὐτῶν παρὰ Κυρίῳ
 βλάσφημον κρίσιν.¹² οὗτοι δὲ, ὡς ἄλογα ζῶα γεγεννημένα φυσικὰ εἰς ἄλωσιν^{1 Jer. 12. 3. Jude 10.}
 καὶ φθορὰν, ἐν οἷς ἀγνοοῦσι βλασφημοῦντες, ἐν τῇ φθορᾷ αὐτῶν καὶ φθαρή-

material World; the origin of which was ascribed by many of them to *Angels* or to *Æons*. See above on Col. ii. 8, and 1 Pet. i. 23. *S. Iren.* i. 28. *S. August.* hæ. 6. *Epiph.* hæ. 26. *Ittig*, p. 34. *Tillemont*, ii. pp. 17. 23, where he rightly says, "All who took the name of Gnostics distinguished the Creator of the World from the God Who revealed Himself by His Son; thus they made *two gods*." Cp. *Gieseler*, Ch. Hist. § 44.

They despised and annulled lordship—

(2) With regard to the *Lord Jesus Christ*. Some of them (e. g. the *Ebionites*) regarded Jesus as a *mere man*; others (the *Cerinthians*) separated Jesus from Christ (see above on v. 1), and they denied the Passion and Resurrection of *JESUS CHRIST*, by which he has acquired *universal lordship* over the Church and over the World. See Matt. xxviii. 18. 1 Cor. xv. 25. Phil. ii. 6—9.

They also invoked other mediators in place of Christ (see on Col. ii. 8. 1 Tim. ii. 5), and denied the Lord that bought them (v. 1; cp. Jude 4); and would not call Him Lord (*S. Iren.* i. 1), although, as St. John says in the Apocalypse, He has His name written on His vesture and on His thigh, "King of kings and Lord of lords." (Rev. xix. 16.)

They despised and annulled lordship—

(3) With regard to *earthly rulers*, who are Vicegerents and Deputies of God (Rom. xiii. 1—3), and are entitled to subjection for the *Lord's sake* (1 Pet. ii. 13). They took away the foundation of the authority of Civil Governments, by denying the Lordship of God and of Christ; and by affirming themselves and their votaries (who held the speculative *gnosis* which they delivered) to be *free* to do all things, and to be exempt from all civil restraints. See above on v. 2, and 1 Pet. ii. 16.

St. Peter wisely uses here a comprehensive word, *κυριότητος*, *lordship*, in order to remind all, that they, who despise the *lordship* of the *Lord God*, and of the *Lord Jesus Christ*, will pay no regard to the *lordship* of *earthly lords and governors*; and that men must first "*fear God*," before they can "*honour the king*." 1 Pet. ii. 17.

— δόξας οὐ τρέμουσι βλασφημοῦντες] *they* (these false teachers) *tremble not while railing at, or speaking evil of, glories, δόξας*. Cp. Jude 8.

What are *δόξαι*, or *glories*, here?

Doubtless the word *δόξα* is chosen, as the word *κυριότης* before (see last note), for its large and general import.

It signifies,—

(1) The *μεγαλοπρεπής δόξα*, the excellent *glory*, the Divine *Shechinah* of the Godhead itself, i. 17.

(2) The *glory* of the *Incarnate Word*. John i. 14. James ii. 1.

(3) The *glory* of the *Holy Ghost*. Cp. Isa. vi. 3. 9, 10. John xii. 41. Acts xxviii. 25.

The false Teachers blasphemed the *glories* of the Father, Son, and Holy Ghost, by disparaging the Creator and Redeemer, and by ascribing the work of the Divine Sanctifier to their own magical arts, and by calumniating the prophecies of Holy Scripture, given by His Inspiration. See on i. 21.

(4) They denied the *Resurrection* of the *Flesh*; and thus they derogated from the future *glories* of Christ, when He "will come in His *glory* (Matt. xxv. 31) and in the glory of His Father" (Matt. xvi. 27), and when "He will be glorified in His Saints" (2 Thess. i. 10); and in "their glorious bodies, fashioned to be like unto His glorious body," Phil. iii. 21. See 1 Pet. i. 11, the only other passage in N. T. beside Jude 8, where *δόξα* is found in the *plural* as here.

(5) They spake evil of the *glory* of the *Holy Angels*. The *Simonians* represented them as the offspring of Simon Magus, who "was glorified by many as God." See *Catena* here, p. 93, where it is truly said, "Peter here refers to the *Simonians*, who blended licentiousness with ungodliness." And they traduced the Holy Angels as rebels against God, see *S. Iren.* i. 23. 1. And the successor of Simon Magus, Menander, called himself the Saviour, and affirmed that he could impart knowledge greater than that of the Angels. *S. Irenæus*, i. 23. 5.

(6) They spake evil of *earthly dignities*, which are images and *glories* of God's majesty (Rom. xiii. 1—3), and are even called gods (Ps. lxxxii. 6), as man himself is, in his headship over woman. 1 Cor. xi. 7.

(7) They spake evil of the *glories* of the *natural world* (1 Cor. xv. 40), ascribing their creation to the operation of the *Demiurge*, hostile to the supreme God. See the preceding note.

11. ὅπου ἄγγελοι] *whereas Angels*, although greater in strength and might, do not bring against them, before the Lord, a railing

judgment. On this use of ὅπου see *Thucyd.* viii. 96, ὅπου τοσαύτη ἡ ξυμφορὰ ἐπεγεγέννητο, πῶς οὐκ εἰκότως ἠθύμουν; *Huther*, and cp. 1 Cor. iii. 3.

There are two probable interpretations of this passage—

(1) Although they (i. e. these false teachers) are so insolent, contumacious, and impious in speaking evil of the glories of God, and of His Angels, and Saints, and His earthly representatives (see preceding note), and although the Angels of God are far superior to them (i. e. to these deceivers) in strength and might, however these false teachers may boast of *their own* mighty power, —as Simon Magus, who called himself "*sublimissima virtus*," and others did,—yet *the Angels of God do not retaliate*, and bring against them (i. e. against these false teachers) a railing verdict (*κρίσιν*); but reserve all things for the future sentence of God the only Judge.

The good Angels of whom St. Peter speaks, earnestly desire the repentance of the wicked (see Luke xv. 7—10); but *Satan* is the accuser, even of the good, before God. Rev. xii. 10.

The same thought occurs in St. Jude's Epistle, in a somewhat different form, in reference to the Evil Spirit himself, by whom these false teachers were employed as emissaries. Although Michael is an Archangel, St. Jude argues, and superior in might to Satan; and although Satan dared to contend with him for the body of Moses, which had been buried by God, yet Michael did not bring against Satan a railing judgment, but referred all to the tribunal of God,—"*The Lord rebuke thee!*"

Therefore, great is the insolence of these heretics in speaking evil of God Himself, of His Lordship and Glory; and of that of His Blessed Son and the Holy Spirit; and of heavenly and earthly Powers.

(2) The second interpretation is as follows:—*Theophylact*, in ancient times, and *Bengel* and others, in later, suppose that αὐτῶν, *them*, refers to δόξας, *glories*; and that the sense is, as gathered from the parallel passage in St. Jude, that the good Angels do not bring a railing accusation against *glories*, i. e. *Angelic powers*, however defaced they may be; as they are in the case of *Evil Angels*.

This sense has something to recommend it. Satan, though fallen, is still an *Angel*, he is "*the strong man*" (Matt. xii. 29); he is a *Prince* (Eph. ii. 2), and he was created by God; he is immortal, and *immortality* is from God. Therefore he is still a δόξα, though sullied and marred; and to condemn him is not for us, but for God.

But, on the whole, the first interpretation seems preferable. St. Peter, in this Epistle, frequently uses the pronoun αὐτῶν and αὐτῶν in referring to the false teachers. See this chapter, vv. 2, 3, 12, 13; and αὐτοῖς, v. 20—22. And this interpretation is sanctioned by *Didymus*.

There is also something constrained in the interpretation which rightly supposes δόξας to mean *glories*—even the glory of God, and Christ, and good Angels—and then explains αὐτῶν, referred to δόξας, as applicable only to *Evil Angels*.

Besides, δόξαι is never used in a *personal* sense in the New Testament. Δόξα does not ever signify an *Angel*; but it signifies an *attribute* of Angels: and therefore αὐτῶν, which is *personal* here, can hardly refer to δόξας.

Lastly, though there is much similarity between St. Jude's Epistle and this Second Epistle of St. Peter, yet, as might be expected, the one very often adds new matter to the other. Thus here, in the next verse, we have ἀπάται, where St. Jude has ἀγάπαι, and σπῖλοι, where he has σπιλάδες.

The words παρὰ Κυρίῳ are not in A and some Versions, but are in B, C, G, K.

12. οὗτοι δέ] *but these men, like irrational animals, which have been born naturally for capture and for destruction*. It is well observed by *Bede* here, that there is a resemblance between these teachers and brute beasts in this respect, that both are led by their *fleshly appetites* to fall into snares and destruction. They profess to exercise their reason with superior acuteness and to be able to save others, but they reduce themselves, by their doctrines and practices, to the level of irrational animals, which are made to be taken and sacrificed as victims. Cp. *Bava Mezia*, ap. *Wetstein*, p. 706, "Rabbi Judas vitulo flenti, cum ad mactandum adduceretur, 'Abi,' inquit; 'in hunc enim finem creatus es.'"

Elz. has φυσικὰ before γεγεννημένα, but it is after it in A, B, C, and is used almost adverbially,—*born as mere natural creatures*, without reason or grace. *Winer*, § 54, p. 412.

— ἐν οἷς ἀγνοοῦσι βλασφημοῦντες] They profess superior

m Jude 12.

σονται, ^{13 m} κομιούμενοι μισθὸν ἀδικίας· ἡδονὴν ἡγούμενοι τὴν ἐν ἡμέρᾳ τρυφήν, σπῖλοι καὶ μῶμοι ἐντρυφῶντες ἐν ταῖς ἀπάταις αὐτῶν, συνευωχούμενοι ὑμῖν ¹⁴ ὀφθαλμοὺς ἔχοντες μεστοὺς μοιχαλίδος καὶ ἀκαταπαύστους ἀμαρτίας, δελεάζοντες ψυχὰς ἀστηρίκτους, καρδίαν γεγυμνασμένην πλεονεξίας ἔχοντες, κατάρas τέκνα· ^{15 n} καταλιπόντες εὐθείαν ὁδὸν ἐπλανήθησαν ἐξακολουθήσαντες τῇ ὁδῷ τοῦ Βαλαὰμ τοῦ Βοσόρ, ὃς μισθὸν ἀδικίας ἡγάπησεν, ¹⁶ ἔλεγξιν δὲ ἔσχευ ἰδίας παρανομίας, ὑποζύγιον ἄφωνον ἐν ἀνθρώπου φωνῇ φθεγξάμενον ἐκώλυσε τὴν τοῦ προφήτου παραφρονίαν.

n Num. 22. 7, 21. Jude 11.

gnosis, or knowledge, but yet they are guilty of *speaking blasphemy* of things which they *know not*. On the construction, equivalent to ἐν τούτοις ἃ ἀγνοοῦσι, see *Winer*, § 66, p. 553. Cp. Jude, v. 10.

— ἐν τῇ φθορᾷ αὐτῶν καὶ φθαρήσονται] The double meaning of φθεῖρω, to *corrupt* and *destroy*, can hardly be rendered in English. Cp. 1 Cor. iii. 17, the best comment on this text. *Elz.* has καταφθαρήσονται; but A, B, C* have καὶ φθαρήσονται.

13. ἡδονὴν ἡγούμενοι τὴν ἐν ἡμέρᾳ τρυφήν] *deeming their revelry*, which is in the *day-time*, to be *delight*. Thus the *Syriac Version* renders this passage, and so the *English Version*, and *Ecumenius*; and *Passow* renders the words ἐν ἡμέρᾳ, 'by day,' and refers to passages in *Pindar*, *Herodotus*, *Æschylus*, and *Thucydides*, in support of this rendering.

This translation seems to be correct, as marking the voluptuous recklessness of these deceivers, not delaying their enjoyments till *night-time*; μεθημεριναὶ τρυφαὶ were a sign of great voluptuousness. Cp. *Demosth.* de Coron. pp. 270. 279.

This is noted as a characteristic of the Gnostics. Even *heathens* were, for the most part, content with revelry in the *night-time*; for they that are drunken are drunken in the *night* (1 Thess. v. 7); and it was the rule of Christians to walk honestly as *in the day* (Rom. xiii. 13), but these heretical libertines revelled in the *day* itself, and deemed *that* revelry to be *delight*. See *S. Jerome* (adv. Lucif. p. 53), "tunc Nicolaus diu noctuque nuptias faciens obscenas," &c.; and *Epiphanius* hær. 25, asserting as one of their maxims "that a man had no hope of everlasting life," εἰ μὴ καθ' ἐκάστην ἡμέραν λαγνείην.

Another interpretation, which deserves to be noticed, is this, while they boast themselves wise, they are like idiots and madmen in preferring the voluptuousness of a *day*, "*unius dieculæ volaticum gaudium*," to the bliss of eternity. This was the case with these Gnostic Teachers. They *dissuaded* Christians from suffering martyrdom for Christ (*Philast.* c. 36). See on Rev. ii. 14. 20. "Semper pseudo-prophetæ dulcia pollicentur, et ad modicum placent." *S. Jerome*, c. Jovin. lib. 11, ad fin.

— σπῖλοι καὶ μῶμοι] *spots* and *blemishes*; opposed to Him Who is ἁσπίλος καὶ ἁμώμος (1 Pet. i. 19), and to you who ought to be found ἁσπίλοι καὶ ἀμώμοτοι (iii. 14).

— ἀπάταις] *deceits*. A** and B, and some Versions, have ἀγάπαις here, *love-feasts*, and so *Lach.*; see Jude 12, οἱ εἰσιν ἐν ταῖς ἀγάπαις ὑμῶν σπιλάδες, συνευωχούμενοι ἀφόβως, ἐαυτοὺς ποιμαίνοντες.

But it is not probable that, if ἀγάπαις had been the original reading here, it would have been altered into ἀπάταις. The probability rather is, that there is indeed a similarity between the passages of St. Jude and St. Peter, and also some independent characteristic in each. The false Teachers *called* their meetings ἀγάπαι, *love-feasts*, but they *were* mere ἀπάται, *deceits*. Their table was a *snare*. Ps. lxxix. 19. 23.

As is well observed by *Windischmann* (*Vind. Petr.* p. 45), there is a similar *paronomasia* or play on the words ἀπάτη and ἀγάπη in St. Paul's Second Epistle to the Thessalonians, ii. 10; "St. Peter would not call these heretical feasts by an honourable name (ἀγάπας), but styles them ἀπάτας, and describes their true character by adding the word ἐντρυφῶντες."

The Gentiles denied Christ's *passion*; and therefore they rejected the Doctrine of the Church concerning the *Holy Eucharist*. See *S. Ignat.* ad Smyrn. §§ 6, 7, with *Bp. Pearson's* remarks, *Vind. Ignat.* ii. c. 11, and *Dr. Waterland*, vol. viii. p. 31, and the notes in *Dr. Jacobson's* Patr. Apost. ii. pp. 444, 445. Therefore, also, it was only for the sake of carnal indulgence that they took part in the love-feasts of the Church.

On the Christian ἀγάπαι, or *love-feasts*, see above, on 1 Cor. xi. 20, 21.

14. μοιχαλίδος] *of an adulteress*. A very strong expression. Their eyes are full of an adulteress; as *Plutarch* (de Verecund. falsâ, p. 528, cited by *Wetstein*. *Hammond*, p. 815) says of persons, who have not κόρας (= pupillas, et virgines), but πόρνas ἐν τοῖς ὀμμασιν, *harlots in their eyes*. Compare note above, on James iv. 4, Μοιχαλίδες, ye adulteresses!

— ἀκαταπαύστους ἀμαρτίας] he who is baptized is pledged to

cease from sin; see 1 Pet. iv. 1, πέπνται ἀμαρτίας, but their eyes cannot be made to cease from sin.

— δελεάζοντες] *luring*: as fish are lured by a bait. A word twice used in this Epistle, see v. 18; and a metaphor likely to occur to St. Peter, the fisherman of Galilee, to whom our Lord said, Matt. xvii. 27, βάλε ἄγκιστρον, *cast a hook*. The word occurs only in one other place of the N. T., James i. 14.

— πλεονεξίας] *covetousness*, the *genitive case*. So A, B, C, K, L, and all the best editions. *Elz.* has the *dative plural*, πλεονεξίαις.

The construction is like that of *Philostr.* Her. ii. 15, γεγυμνασμένοι θαλάττης, *versed in the sea*, i. e. practised in seafaring affairs. See *Boissonade*, *Philostr.* p. 451. *Winer*, § 30, p. 175. So these false teachers are indeed *exercised*; but it is in *covetousness*; this is their *art and discipline*—not holiness. Cp. 1 Tim. iv. 7, 8.

— κατάρas τέκνα] *children of malediction*. Cp. 2 Thess. ii. 3. Eph. ii. 3. They are children of a curse, like the posterity of Ham and Canaan, Gen. ix. 25, for undutifulness and uncleanness.

15. τῇ ὁδῷ τοῦ Βαλαὰμ] *in the way of Balaam*; on which he went, in direct opposition to the command of God, and swerving from the *way of godliness*, and to gratify his own love of lucre. See Numb. xxii. 12. 22. 32.

These false teachers followed Balaam, not only in his *love of lucre*, but in his *Satanic counsel to Balak*, to allure the people of God to *harlotry and idolatry*.

Here is an evidence that St. Peter is referring to the Nicolaitans, who are described as teaching the doctrine of Balaam. See below, on Rev. ii. 14, 15.

— τοῦ Βοσόρ] *of Bosor*, i. e. of *Beor*. Numb. xxii. 5. The *y* (*ayin*) in בִּשְׂרָ (Beor) being changed in the Chaldee dialect into *sigma*. *Hammond*. *Vitringa*, Obs. Sacr. i. p. 936. *Glass*. *Philol. Sacr.* p. 601.

— ὃς μισθὸν ἀδικίας ἡγάπησεν] *who loved the wages of unrighteousness*: cp. Jude 11, and Numb. xxii. 7, where the mention of the *rewards* of divination is very significant. See Deut. xxiii. 4, and Neh. xiii. 2, where it is said that the Moabites *hired* Balaam.

Here is a clue to the character of Balaam, and a divine comment on his history. "Balaam could not forego the *rewards of unrighteousness*, and therefore first seeks for indulgences (from God); and when these could not be obtained, he sins against the whole meaning, end, and design of the prohibition, although nothing could prevail with him to go against the letter of it; and surely the impious counsel he gave to Balak against the children of Israel (Rev. ii. 14) was, considered in itself, a greater piece of wickedness than if he had cursed them in words." See *Bp. Butler's* Sermon, vii. p. 65, "Upon the character of Balaam," and note above, 2 Cor. iv. 4.

16. ὑποζύγιον ἄφωνον] *a dumb beast of burden, speaking with man's voice, forbad the madness of the prophet*.

Horses were rare in Palestine. This general word, ὑποζύγιον, is applied to the animal which was most used for the purpose of bearing burdens. Cp. Matt. xxi. 5.

Here is an Apostolic testimony to the *truth* of the history of Balaam and his ass, Numb. xxii. 23. This is to be noted, because that history has been treated as a legend by some recent Expositors of the Old Testament, laying claim to the merit of special acuteness and erudition. And others have explained away the dialogue of Balaam and his ass into a mere vision of Balaam in a state of prophetic ecstasy; or into a mere imagination of his own mind: see *Winer*, R. W. B. i. p. 184, and the excellent remarks of *Dr. W. Lee* on Inspiration, Lect. v. pp. 214—216.

To all these allegations it may be replied, that St. Peter, the Apostle of Christ, who was enabled to speak with tongues, and to discern the spirits of men (as in the case of Ananias, Acts v. 3), and to foretell the future (*ibid.*), accepted this history of Balaam as true, and explained its meaning, and showed how, by that signal example, Almighty God declared, that the most despised of

17 ° Οὗτοί εἰσι πηγαὶ ἄνδρῳ, καὶ ὁμίχλαι ὑπὸ λαίλαπος ἐλαυνόμεναι, οἷς ὁ ζόφος τοῦ σκότους εἰς αἰῶνα τετήρηται. 18 ° Ὑπέρογκα γὰρ ματαιότητος φθεγ- γόμενοι δελεάζουσιν ἐν ἐπιθυμίαις σαρκὸς ἀσελγείαις τοὺς ὀλίγως ἀποφεύγοντας τοὺς ἐν πλάνῃ ἀναστρεφόμενους· 19 ° ἐλευθερίαν αὐτοῖς ἐπαγγελλόμενοι, αὐτοὶ δοῦλοι ὑπάρχοντες τῆς φθορᾶς· ὧ γάρ τις ἡττηται, τούτῳ καὶ δεδούλωται. 20 ° Εἰ γὰρ ἀποφυγόντες τὰ μιάσματα τοῦ κόσμου ἐν ἐπιγνώσει τοῦ Κυρίου καὶ Σωτῆρος Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ, τούτοις δὲ πάλιν ἐμπλακέντες ἡττῶνται, γέγονεν αὐτοῖς τὰ ἔσχατα χείρονα τῶν πρώτων. 21 ° Κρεῖττον γὰρ ἦν αὐτοῖς μὴ ἐπεγνωκέναι τὴν ὁδὸν τῆς δικαιοσύνης, ἢ ἐπιγνοῦσιν ἐπιστρέψαι ἐκ τῆς παραδοθείσης αὐτοῖς ἀγίας ἐντολῆς. 22 ° Συμβέβηκε δὲ αὐτοῖς τὸ τῆς ἀληθοῦς παροιμίας, Κύων ἐπιστρέψας ἐπὶ τὸ ἴδιον ἐξέραμα· καί, Ὡς λουσαμένη εἰς κύλισμα βορβόρου.

III. 1 ° Ταύτην ἤδη, ἀγαπητοὶ, δευτέραν ὑμῖν γράφω ἐπιστολὴν, ἐν αἷς

brute creatures is wiser and more clear-sighted than a disobedient Prophet.

The dumb creature speaking by man's voice, rebuked the madness of the Prophet. The ass saw the Angel which the Prophet could not see; and showed more of reason and knowledge than her master who rode upon her, and who, though endued with many spiritual gifts, was then blinded by disobedience.

In like manner the simplest peasant, who receives the history of Balaam as true,—a history guaranteed by the testimony of the inspired Apostle St. Peter, and by that of the Lord Jesus Christ Himself, Who received all the Old Testament as true, and commands us to receive it (see on Luke xvi. 29),—is really a far more intelligent and clear-sighted person than the Infidel Philosopher and Biblical Expositor who reject that history as false. The believing peasant *sees the Angel*: the unbelieving Philosopher and Expositor are blind. Compare the similar evidence with regard to the history of Jonah in the whale's belly, on Matt. xii. 40.

This passage is cited as *Scripture* by Origen, in Numer. hom. 13.

17. πηγαὶ ἄνδρῳ] *wells without water*: they profess to teach, but they deceive those who resort to them; like wells which attract the weary and thirsty traveller, but are found to have no water. But Christ, the true Teacher, makes those who come to Him to be like wells of living water, springing up into everlasting life. John iv. 14; vii. 38.

—καὶ ὁμίχλαι] *and mists*: so A, B, C. Elz. has νεφέλαι, *clouds*: cp. Jude 12.

18. ὑπέρογκα ματαιότητος φθεγγόμενοι] *Speaking great swelling words of vanity*: as Simon Magus did, affirming himself to be no less than God; and other Gnostic teachers, boasting themselves superior to the Apostles, and equal to Christ. *S. Hippolyt.*, Phil. pp. 255. 257. See on Acts viii. 10. *Iren.* i. 13, and i. 23 (ed. *Stieren*).

These false Teachers are called *wells without water*, because they have not the living spring of the Holy Spirit gushing within them; and they are *not* called *clouds* (νεφέλαι) as the Saints are, but ὁμίχλαι, *mists*, of darkness and gloom, and driven by the gusts of the Evil Spirit. *Catena*, Cramer, p. 96. *Euseb.* iii. 26.

—ὀλίγως] *a little*.—Elz., with C, G, K, and many Cursives and *Armenian* and *Arabic* Versions have ὄντως. But A, B, C have ὀλίγως, and *Vulg.* "paululum": and this seems to be the true reading, and is adopted by *Griesb.*, *Scholz*, *Lach.*, *Tisch.*, *Alf.*: compare v. 14, δελεάζοντες ψυχὰς ἀστηρίκτους. These false Teachers allured those persons who were *only just escaping* (ἀποφεύγοντας, so A, B, C,—Elz., ἀποφυγόντας) from the heathen who *live in error*, and by *promising them liberty* they made them the slaves of brutish lusts.

19. ἐλευθερίαν αὐτοῖς ἐπαγγελλόμενοι] *promising them liberty*: as the Gnostic Teachers did, assuring their votaries, that if they became their disciples, they were *free to live* as they pleased, "liberos agere quæ vellent"; see *S. Iren.* i. 23, and *S. Hippolyt.* (Philos. p. 175), describing Simon Magus and his followers, who boasted that they had been liberated from all moral restraints by their own superior intelligence (λελυτρώσθαι διὰ τῆς ἰδίας ἐπιγνώσεως); and see above, on 1 Pet. ii. 16.

The latter part of this verse is quoted as *Scripture* by Origen, in Exod. hom. 12, and de Rectâ fide, § 1.

20. ἐν ἐπιγνώσει] *by the true gnosis, or knowledge*, of our Lord and Saviour. Here and in the following verses St. Peter inculcates the word ἐπιγνώσις, the ripe *knowledge* of Christ, in opposition to the spurious *gnosis* of the Gnostic Teachers: cp. i. 2, 3. *It were better for them not to have had this epignosis, than after*

they had received it, to turn away from the holy commandment, as Simon Magus did. Acts viii. 13—23.

22. τὸ τῆς ἀληθοῦς παροιμίας] *that (saying) of the true proverb*. On the use of the article τὸ, cp. Matt. xxi. 21. James iv. 14. *Winer*, § 18, p. 99.

The proverbs here quoted were perhaps contained in two iambic verses, thus:—

εἰς ἴδιον ἐξέραμ' ἐπιστρέψας κύων,
λελουμένη θ' ὥς εἰς κύλισμα βορβόρου.

Compare note above, on 1 Cor. xv. 33, and *Bp. Pearson*, Vind. Ignat. pt. ii. ch. 14; vol. ii. p. 579, ed. *Churton*. Compare also Prov. xxvi. 11, ὥσπερ κύων ὅταν ἐπέλθῃ ἐπὶ τὸν ἑαυτοῦ ἔμετον, κ.τ.λ.

The βόρβορος, *mire*, of which the proverb speaks, was specially pertinent to those Gnostic Teachers who said, that they "might wallow in the mire as much as they pleased," and that—such was their spiritual virtue—they could not be polluted by it any more than gold by mud; τοῦ βορβόρου μηδὲν αὐτοὺς ἀδικῆσαι δυναμένον. *S. Irenæus*, i. 6. 2.

CH. III. 1, 2. ταύτην ἤδη] *This Epistle, already a second, write I unto you, beloved*. This expression, "already a second," intimates that this Second Epistle was written soon after the First. Compare *Bengel* here, "priorem paullo antè scripserat"; and on i. 12, "alteram hanc Epistolam scribit brevi intervallo post primam."

On this sense of ἤδη see Matt. v. 28. John iii. 18; iv. 35; xxi. 14. 1 Cor. v. 3. 2 Tim. iv. 6. Hence it appears that the First Epistle also was written not long before the breaking out of the Neronian persecution and St. Peter's death (see 2 Pet. i. 14), and this is suggested by the general tone of that Epistle. See *Introduction*, p. 40.

The reason why he wrote these two epistles almost at the same time was his earnest *desire to stir up their pure mind*—clear from all admixture of sinister affection (see on 1 Cor. v. 8), *to remember the words spoken before by the Holy Prophets, and the command of the Apostles of their Lord and Saviour*.

Elz. has ἡμῶν, *of us*; but the reading ὑμῶν, *of you*, is in A, B, C, K, L. The Apostles are the Apostles *of you*, as sent to you; and they are the Apostles *of the Lord*, as sent by Him. Compare Jude 17, ἀποστόλων τοῦ κυρίου, and the *double genitive* in James ii. 1, τοῦ κυρίου ἡμῶν τῆς δόξης.

Some persons have argued from these words, that this Epistle could not have been written by St. Peter.

But he uses a similar expression in his First Epistle, i. 12. In both places he modestly speaks of himself in the *third person*, and associates himself with others who had been his fellow-labourers in the same field.

Indeed here is another evidence of *genuineness*. A forger, personating an Apostle, would have said, "us, the Apostles;" but an authentic Apostle, like St. Peter, is content to speak more modestly, and to say, "your Apostles." Cp. *Dean Alford*, Prolegg. p. 155.

St. Peter here declares the harmony of the Prophets and the Apostles; in opposition to the Gnostic Teachers, who ascribed the writings of the "holy Prophets" to some other source than that of the Gospel (see on i. 20), and so prepared the way for the Marcionite and Manichæan heresies.

The *Apostles*, to whom St. Peter here specially refers, were *St. James*—many portions of whose Epistle are adopted and reiterated by St. Peter in his former Epistle—and *St. Paul*; see v. 15.

b 1 Tim. 4. 1.
2 Tim. 3. 1.
Jude 18.

c Isa. 5. 19.
Jer. 17. 15.
Ezek. 12. 22.

d Gen. 1. 6, 9.
Ps. 24. 2. & 33. 6.
& 136. 6.
e Gen. 7. 10, 21.

f Ps. 102. 27.
Isa. 51. 6.
Heb. 1. 11.
2 Thess. 1. 8.
ver. 10.

διεγείρω ὑμῶν ἐν ὑπομνήσει τὴν εἰλικρινῇ διάνοιαν, ² μνησθῆναι τῶν προειρη-
μένων ῥημάτων ὑπὸ τῶν ἁγίων προφητῶν, καὶ τῆς τῶν ἀποστόλων ὑμῶν ἐντολῆς
τοῦ Κυρίου καὶ Σωτῆρος· ³ ^b τοῦτο πρῶτον γινώσκοντες, ὅτι ἐλεύσονται ἐπ'
ἐσχάτων τῶν ἡμερῶν ἐν ἐμπαιγμονῇ ἐμπαίκεται, κατὰ τὰς ἰδίας αὐτῶν ἐπιθυμίας
πορευόμενοι, ⁴ ^c καὶ λέγοντες, Ποῦ ἐστὶν ἡ ἐπαγγελία τῆς παρουσίας αὐτοῦ; ἀφ'
ἧς γὰρ οἱ πατέρες ἐκοιμήθησαν, πάντα οὕτω διαμένει ἀπ' ἀρχῆς κτίσεως.
⁵ ^d Λανθάνει γὰρ αὐτοὺς τοῦτο θέλοντας, ὅτι οὐρανοὶ ἦσαν ἑκπαλαι, καὶ γῆ ἐξ
ὑδατος καὶ δι' ὑδατος συνεστῶσα τῷ τοῦ Θεοῦ λόγῳ, ⁶ ^e δι' ᾧν ὁ τότε κόσμος
ὑδατι κατακλυσθεὶς ἀπώλετο· ⁷ ^f οἱ δὲ νῦν οὐρανοὶ καὶ ἡ γῆ τῷ αὐτοῦ λόγῳ
τεθησαυρισμένοι εἰσὶ πυρὶ τηρούμενοι εἰς ἡμέραν κρίσεως καὶ ἀπωλείας τῶν
ἀσεβῶν ἀνθρώπων.

On ἐν αἷς, in which two Epistles—*δύο* being implied in *δευτέραν*—see *Winer*, § 21, p. 128.

3. ἐλεύσονται] *There will come in the last days, in scoffing, scoffers, walking after their own lusts.* St. Jude refers to these words in his Epistle, v. 17, *Remember ye the words spoken before by the Apostles of our Lord Jesus Christ, that they were saying to you, that in the last time there will be scoffers walking after their own lusts.*

From this reference, it appears that St. Jude wrote his Epistle after the present Epistle (cp. note above on ii. 1), and that he owned this Epistle to be the work of an Apostle, and therefore an authentic writing; and if authentic, then it must be also genuine, for it asserts itself to be written by St. Peter, ch. i. 1, and cp. i. 17, where the writer describes himself as present at the Transfiguration, at which only three Apostles were present, viz., Peter, James, and John.

This passage (ἐλεύσονται—πορευόμενοι) is quoted by S. Hippolytus, the scholar of Irenæus, de Consummatione Sæculi, c. 10.

—ἐν ἐμπαιγμονῇ] in scoffing; omitted by Elz., but in A, B, C, and received by Griesb., Scholz, Lach., Tisch., Alf. "In scoffing, scoffers"—a strong Hebraistic expression: see on Acts iv. 17. They will not only be scoffers, but they will come in scoffing, like those of whom the Psalmist says, that their delight is in cursing, and that they clothe themselves with it as it were with a raiment (Ps. cix. 16, 17); and the contrast is striking to the divine words, εὐλογῶν εὐλογήσω, Gen. xxii. 17; cp. Eph. i. 3, ὁ εὐλόγησας ἡμᾶς ἐν πάσῃ εὐλογίᾳ, and Clem. Rom. i. 23.

4. λέγοντες, Ποῦ ἐστὶν] saying, *Where is the promise of His coming?* This prophetic warning is directed against the Heretics called Lampetians, Euchites, or Ophites, and Naasseni. (*Catena*, Cramer, p. 98. *Theophylact*.)

Compare the warnings of an Apostolic Father; "Whosoever does not confess the suffering of the Cross, is of the devil; and whosoever perverts the oracles of the Lord to his own lusts, and says that there is neither Resurrection nor a Judgment,—he is the firstborn of Satan." S. Polycarp, c. 7.

At the first Creation, the Holy Spirit brooded over the Water, as with wings, and made it productive of life and order to the Earth; see on Matt. iii. 16, and Milton, Par. Lost, i. 19,

"Thou from the first
Wast present, and with mighty wings outspread
Dove-like sat'st brooding on the vast abyss,
And mad'st it pregnant."

And at the New Creation the Holy Spirit like a dove brooded over the baptismal water, when Christ by His Baptism in Jordan "sanctified water to the mystical washing away of sins," and made it to become instrumental for the new Birth of Mankind.

5. θέλοντας] They are wilfully blind to this truth, which is revealed to them in the Holy Scriptures. The word θέλων expresses a deliberate act of the will. See Col. ii. 18. Philem. 14.

St. Peter censures the false Teachers, who denied the doctrine of the second Advent of Christ (Παρουσία) and of Future Judgment and Resurrection, and of the Dissolution of the material world.

He confutes them by several considerations:

(1) The World was created by God, and therefore it can be destroyed by Him.

(2) The World was created out of the water, and through water; and yet it was destroyed by God by the very same element, water; out of which it had been made. This destruction by water, at the Deluge, was executed by God as a Judicial punishment for men's sins.

The Universal Deluge, therefore, was a warning and a rehearsal of the General Judgment to come.

(3) At the Flood, the Heavens and the Earth themselves were made by Almighty God to supply the means of their own

destruction. They supplied the Water by which the world was drowned. See Gen. vii. 11—21, "the same day were all the fountains of the great deep broken up, and the windows of heaven were opened, and the rain was upon the earth forty days and forty nights, . . . and the waters prevailed . . . and all flesh died."

(4) Human notions of duration of time are very different from those of God; with Whom "a thousand years are as one day."

—γῆ ἐξ ὑδατος] the Earth was subsisting out of the water and through the water. See Gen. i. 6, "God said, Let there be a Firmament in the midst of the waters:" and Gen. i. 9, "Let the waters under the heaven be gathered together unto one place, and let the dry land appear:" and Ps. xxiv. 2, "He hath founded it upon the seas, and established it upon the floods:" and Ps. cxxxvi. 6, "He stretched out the Earth above the Waters."

On the symbolical and spiritual significance of these words, applied to the use of Water, as instrumental in the work of the New Creation or Regeneration of Mankind, see John iii. 5. Tertullian, de Baptismo, c. 3, "dispositio mundi modulatricibus quodammodo aquis Deo constitit (συνέστηκε) . . . primis aquis præceptum est animas proferre, ne mirum sit in baptismo si aquæ animare noverunt." Cp. Bp. Andrewes, iii. p. 250, and note above on 1 Pet. iii. 20, 21.

The assertion that the Earth arose out of the water is opposed to the dogma of Simon Magus, that it was engendered from fire: see S. Hippolyt., Refut. hæc. p. 165.

—συνεστῶσα τῷ τοῦ Θεοῦ λόγῳ] consisting by the Word of God—the spoken word; and, in a higher sense, by the Eternal Consubstantial Word. The Logos was the Creator; and this was no new doctrine to St. Peter's Jewish readers. See on Ps. xxxii. 6, and on John i. 1, 2, and Bp. Wilson here, p. 686.

This assertion of St. Peter, that the heavens were created by the Word of God, and subsist thereby—especially in the sense above specified—is opposed to the error of the Gnostic Teachers, asserting that the Universe was made by Angels, or by the Demiurge opposed to the Supreme God: see Iren. i. 19 (Grabe), who says (in reference to that Gnostic error) that the World was not made by Angels, nor by any powers separated from God, but by His Word, i. e. Christ, and he refers to Ps. xxxii. 6. John i. 3, in proof of this doctrine: see also S. Iren. ii. 2 (Grabe); "omnia quæ fecit Deus, infatigabili Verbo fecit; quemadmodum Joannes Domini discipulus ait de Eo" (John i. 3).

Observe the word συνεστῶσα, consisting: that is, framed and compacted by the Word of God; and compare St. Paul's use of the same verb in the same sense (Col. i. 17), "by Him (Christ) all things consist" (συνέστηκε).

6. δι' ᾧν] by means of which, i. e. by means of the Heavens and the Earth; which were the reservoirs of the Water by which the world was drowned at the Flood. The Heavens and Earth supplied the element of Water by which the world was destroyed. Gen. vii. 11. See Theophyl., Hammond, Wetstein.

So, the Fire, contained in the Heavens and the Earth, is the fuel of its future funeral pile. The Heavens and Earth have within themselves—in the electric fluid of lightnings, and meteors, and comets, and in the subterranean reservoirs of Volcanos,—the materials of their own future combustion and conflagration at the Great Day.

Hence that last conflagration is called by S. Irenæus (v. 29), a Flood of Fire,—*"Diluvium ignis."* The ravages made by Lightnings and the eruptions of Volcanos are prophetic signs of Christ's Coming to Judgment (cp. Matt. xxiv. 7), and are premonitory symptoms of the Earth's future destruction by fire, as even the heathen writers of Antiquity believed. See the passages from Lucretius, Pliny, Lucan, Seneca, cited here by A. Lapide and others.

7. τεθησαυρισμένοι εἰσὶ πυρὶ] are treasured up for fire. They

⁸ ^ε Ἐν δὲ τοῦτο μὴ λανθανέτω ὑμᾶς, ἀγαπητοὶ, ὅτι μία ἡμέρα παρὰ Κυρίῳ ὡς ^g Ps. 90. 4. χίλια ἔτη, καὶ χίλια ἔτη ὡς ἡμέρα μία. ⁹ ^h Οὐ βραδύνει Κύριος τῆς ἐπαγγελίας, ὡς τινὲς βραδυτῆτα ἡγοῦνται· ἀλλὰ μακροθυμεῖ εἰς ἡμᾶς, μὴ βουλόμενος τινὰς ἀπολέσθαι, ἀλλὰ πάντας εἰς μετάνοιαν χωρῆσαι.

¹⁰ ⁱ Ἡξεῖ δὲ ἡμέρα Κυρίου ὡς κλέπτῃς· ἐν ᾗ οἱ οὐρανοὶ ῥοιζηδὸν παρελεύ-
σονται, στοιχεῖα δὲ καυσούμενα λυθήσονται, καὶ γῆ καὶ τὰ ἐν αὐτῇ ἔργα
κατακαήσεται.

¹¹ Τούτων οὖν πάντων λυομένων, ποταποὺς δεῖ ὑπάρχειν ὑμᾶς ἐν ἀγίαις
ἀναστροφαῖς καὶ εὐσεβείαις, ¹² ^k προσδοκῶντας καὶ σπεύδοντας τὴν παρουσίαν
τῆς τοῦ Θεοῦ ἡμέρας, δι' ἣν οὐρανοὶ πυρούμενοι λυθήσονται, καὶ στοιχεῖα καυ-
σούμενα τήκεται;

¹³ ^l Καινοὺς δὲ οὐρανοὺς καὶ γῆν καινὴν κατὰ τὸ ἐπάγγελμα αὐτοῦ προσδο-
κῶμεν, ἐν οἷς δικαιοσύνη κατοικεῖ.

^h Isa. 30. 18.
Ezek. 18. 23, 33.
& 33. 11.
Hab. 2. 3.
Rom. 2. 4.
1 Tim. 2. 4.
ver. 15.
Heb. 10. 37.
1 Pet. 3. 20
& ver. 15.
i Ps. 102. 27.
Isa. 51. 6.
Matt. 24. 35, 43,
44.
1 Thess. 5. 2.
Rev. 3. 3. & 16. 15.
& 20. 11. & 21. 1.
k Ps. 50. 3.
2 Thess. 1. 8.

l Isa. 65. 17.
& 66. 2.
Rev. 21. 1.

are indeed *treasured up*; but not as these false Teachers say, for *eternity*, but for *fire*, as the old world was treasured up for *water*; and they are *treasured up by His Word*, that is, as long as He wills it, and no longer. The word *fire* is emphatic, and therefore is placed the last in the clause; and this rendering, which is that of the *Æthiopic* version, seems preferable to that which connects *πυρὶ* with *τηρούμενοι*.

This reservation of the world for *fire* had been revealed by the old Prophets. Isa. lxvi. 15, 16. Dan. vii. 10, 11. Mal. iv. 1.

In an Oration of *Melito* (Bishop of Sardis in the second century), which has been published from the Syriac for the first time by the *Rev. William Cureton*, D.D. (Lond. 1855, p. 51), there appears to be a reference to this passage of St. Peter,—"There was a *flood of water*, and all men and living creatures were destroyed by the multitude of waters, and the just were preserved in an Ark of wood by the ordinance of God. So also it will be at the last time; there will be a *Flood of Fire*, and the *Earth will be burnt up* together with its mountains, and men will be burnt up with the idols which they have made; and the sea together with the isles will be burnt, and the *just shall be delivered* from the fury (of the fire), as their fellows in the Ark (were saved) from the waters in the Deluge" (*Melito*). Compare the learned Editor's remarks, p. xi, and p. 51, on the importance of this passage in relation to the question concerning the authenticity and genuineness of the present Epistle. See also above, p. 76.

8. *μία ἡμέρα*] *one day with the Lord is as a thousand years, and a thousand years as one day*. See *St. Barnabas* (Ep. 15), who thence takes occasion to state the opinion, that as the world was created in *six days*, and God rested on the seventh day, so the world will last six thousand years, and in the seventh Millennium the End will come: and cp. *Irenæus* i. 28, *Grabe*. Cp. *Justin M.* c. Tryphon. c. 81, who, perhaps, quotes from this passage of St. Peter as well as from Ps. xc. 4. See *Joseph Mede's* Works, p. 611.

9. *βραδύνει τῆς ἐπαγγελίας*] *He is not slack concerning His promise*. He does not linger behind it; cp. the phrases, *ὕστερῃν τινος, λείπεσθαι τινος*. See *Winer*, § 30, p. 177.

— *μὴ βουλόμενος*] *because He is not desirous that any should perish*, but is desirous that all should come (*χωρῆσαι*) to repentance; as to their proper place (*χώραν*). Matt. xv. 17. John viii. 37; cp. the declaration of St. Paul that "God willeth (*θέλει*) all men to be saved, and to come to the knowledge of His truth," 1 Tim. ii. 4.

10. *ὡς κλέπτῃς*] *as a thief*: see on 1 Thess. v. 2. *Elz.* adds *ἐν νυκτὶ*, not in A, B.

— *στοιχεῖα*] *elements*. It has been objected to this translation,—which is that of the *Vulg.*, *Syriac*, *Arabic*, *Æthiopic*, and *English* versions,—that Earth itself and Fire are Elements, and that the writer, according to this translation, is liable to the charge of tautology; and therefore the word *στοιχεῖα* is here rendered *heavens* by some, and this rendering is justified by citations from ancient Christian writers, *Justin M.*, *Theophilus of Antioch*, and *Polycrates*. See *Joseph Mede's* Works, p. 614. *Bengel*, *Alford*, *Hammond*, *Whitby*, and others.

But St. Peter's meaning seems to be, that the *στοιχεῖα*, *elements* or *rudiments*, of which the Universe is composed and compacted, will be *loosed*; that is, the frameworks of the world will be disorganized, and this is the sense of *στοιχεῖα* in the LXX, *Wisd.* vii. 17; xix. 18, and in *S. Hippolyt.*, *Philos.* pp. 219. 318. This *dissolution* is contrasted with the *consistency* described by the word *συνεστῶσα* in v. 5. The *heavens* are reserved for fire (v. 7), and will pass away with a *rushing noise*, and, being set

on fire, will be dissolved (v. 12), the elements will be on fire and melt (v. 12), and be reduced to a state of fusion; the earth, and the works therein, will be burnt up.

There does not, therefore, seem to be any cause for abandoning the common meaning of *στοιχεῖα*, the *elemental* principles of which the Universe is made.

11. *τούτων οὖν πάντων λυομένων*] *Since then all things are being dissolved*, that is, since this is their destiny, and, though the dissolution is *future*, yet is so *sure* that it may be regarded as *present*. Cp. Matt. ii. 4, *ποῦ ὁ Χριστὸς γεννᾶται*, and *Winer*, § 45, p. 306.

— *ὑπάρχειν*] *More emphatic than εἶναι*. In what *state* ought we to be *subsisting* (*ὑπάρχειν*), since that catastrophe is so certain and so sudden? See v. 10. In what state ought it to find us?

12. *σπεύδοντας*] *hastening the Advent of the Day of God*. A remarkable expression; but not strange to the Jewish mind of those whom St. Peter is addressing, "If thou keepest this precept, thou *hastenest* the day of the Messiah" (*Debarim*, R. vi. Deut. xxii. 7. See *Wetstein* on John ix. 7). Whoever prays "Thy kingdom come," and promotes the preaching of the Gospel to all Nations (Matt. xxiv. 14), *hastens* the coming of the Day of Christ. Cp. *Dean Trench* on the Authorized Version, p. 84, and the margin of that Version.

It is worthy of remark, that *St. Peter* himself, in his speech in Solomon's Porch at Jerusalem, had pressed this same truth, when he said (Acts iii. 19. 21), "Repent ye and turn to God, that your sins may be blotted out; and *in order* that (*ὅπως ἂν*) the seasons of *refreshing* may come from the presence of the Lord, and that He may send *Jesus Christ*, whom the heavens must receive till the times of the restitution of all things," i. e. of the new Heavens and new Earth, described by the writer here in v. 13.

This use of *σπεύδειν* in this passage, and the use of the *ὅπως ἂν* in the words just quoted from Acts iii. 19, have been thought by Expositors to present some difficulties. But the one difficulty solves the other. And the occurrence of this remarkable thought in this Epistle, as compared with that speech of *St. Peter*, is another silent evidence of the *genuineness* of this Epistle.

13. *καινοὺς δὲ οὐρανοὺς*] *But we look for new heavens and new earth, wherein dwelleth righteousness*. On the meaning of *καινοὺς*, *made new*, as distinguished from *νέος*, see above, on Eph. iv. 23.

Concerning this future renovation, see above, Rom. viii. 20—22; below, Rev. xxi. 1; and *St. Peter's* speech, Acts iii. 19—21. Cp. Isa. lxv. 17; lxvi. 22.

There are frequent anticipations of this physical restoration in the *Book of Enoch* (x. 27; l. 5; liv. 4, 5; xc. 17). *Huther*, p. 323.

St. Peter does not represent the Heavens as destined to *destruction*, but as hereafter to be transformed (*ἀναστοιχειουμένων*) to a more *glorious condition*. As the mortal bodies of the Saints are dissolved by death, and will not be reduced to annihilation, but will, by reason of Christ's Resurrection, and of their incorporation in Him Who is the Resurrection and the Life, be renewed to Immortality, so the heavenly bodies will be renewed by fire, and be delivered from the bondage of corruption. See Rom. viii. 20—22.

The material Creation has sympathized with us in our Fall, and it has derived benefit from the Incarnation of Christ, and from our elevation in Him (see on James i. 18), and will rejoice with the righteous in their Redemption and Revivification, when their mortal bodies will rise and bloom anew, like vernal herbs

m 1 Cor. 1. 8.
Phil. 1. 10.
1 Thess. 3. 13.
& 5. 23.
n Rom. 2. 4.
ver. 9.

o Rom. 8. 19.
1 Cor. 15. 24.
1 Thess. 4. 15.

¹⁴ Διὸ, ἀγαπητοὶ, ταῦτα προσδοκῶντες σπουνδάσατε ἄσπιλοι καὶ ἀμόμητοι αὐτῷ εὐρεθῆναι ἐν εἰρήνῃ. ¹⁵ καὶ τὴν τοῦ Κυρίου ἡμῶν μακροθυμίαν σωτηρίαν ἡγείσθε· καθὼς καὶ ὁ ἀγαπητὸς ἡμῶν ἀδελφὸς Παῦλος κατὰ τὴν δοθείσαν αὐτῷ σοφίαν ἔγραψεν ὑμῖν, ¹⁶ ὥς καὶ ἐν πάσαις ἐπιστολαῖς, λαλῶν ἐν αὐταῖς περὶ τούτων· ἐν αἷς ἐστι δυσνόητά τινα, ἃ οἱ ἀμαθεῖς καὶ ἀστήρικτοι στρεβλοῦσιν ὥς καὶ τὰς λοιπὰς γραφὰς, πρὸς τὴν ἰδίαν αὐτῶν ἀπώλειαν.

and flowers, in the glorious spring-tide of the Resurrection. See *Eusebius, Severus*, and others here in *Catenâ*, Cramer, p. 100.

Thus the benefits of the Incarnation and the Redemption wrought by the Second Adam extend also to the Natural World. He has restored already the free use of the creatures to *us* (see on 1 Cor. iii. 23); and He will raise the Creation itself to a more glorious state of being.

15, 16. καθὼς καὶ ὁ ἀγαπητὸς ἡμῶν ἀδελφὸς Παῦλος] *as also our beloved brother Paul, according to the wisdom given unto him, wrote to you; as also in all his Epistles, speaking of these things in them; in which are some things hard to be understood, which the unlearned and unstable wrest, as they do also the other Scriptures, to their own destruction.*

Part of this text is quoted by *Origen de Rectâ Fide*, sect. 2, and ascribed by him without any hesitation to St. Peter. See also on i. 4; ii. 16. 19.

With regard to the reading of this passage, *Elz.* has ταῖς before ἐπιστολαῖς, but this is not in A, B, C. However, the sense is not affected by its omission: it means in *all Epistles* written by him.

Elz. has ἐν οἷς, "in which things," and so C, G, K; but A, B have ἐν αἷς, "in which Epistles," and also many Cursives, and the *Arabic, Syriac, and English* versions, and *Lachmann*; and this text is supposed to contain a reference to St. Paul's *Epistles*, by *S. Cyril of Alexandria* (in *Catenâ*, p. 103), *Augustine* (*De Fide*, § 22), and others. They therefore are in favour of the reading ἐν αἷς, agreeing with ἐπιστολαῖς.

The context also seems to require ἐν αἷς, *in which Epistles*. For, it can hardly be said, that unlearned men *wrest* obscure things or mysteries—as they do "*the other Scriptures*"—to their own destruction. The wresting of one set of *writings* (i. e. of the other Scriptures) is here joined with the wresting of another set of *writings*, i. e. the *Epistles* of St. Paul: and the unlearned and unstable are said to pervert *both*.

This passage seems to have been in the mind of *S. Polycarp* when he wrote to the *Philippians*, i. 3, "No one like me can equal the *wisdom* of the blessed Paul, who being absent *wrote to you Epistles* (ὅμιν ἔγραψεν ἐπιστολάς), into which if you look diligently, you will be enabled to be built up unto the faith."

"Our beloved brother Paul wrote to you," says St. Peter here; "to you of Asia Minor, whom I address." Especially St. Paul did this in his *Epistles* to the *Galatians* and to the *Ephesians* in Asia Proper, and to the *Colossians* in Phrygia. Compare St. Peter's inscription of his own First Epistle to those of the dispersion of *Galatia, Asia, and Bithynia*; and St. Peter's Second Epistle is addressed to the same persons. (2 Pet. iii. 1.)

As has been already observed, *St. Peter* in these two Epistles adopts much of the language and reinforces the precepts and warnings of *St. Paul's Epistles* to the *Asiatic Churches* of Ephesus and Colossæ. See above, p. 44.

To what does he specially refer when he says that there are "some things hard to be understood in St. Paul's Epistles?"

S. Augustine thus replies to this question:—

"Even in the times of the Apostles, certain persons, who did not understand some of Paul's rather obscure (subobscuras) sentences, alleged that he said 'Let us do evil, that good may come,' because he had said 'that the Law entered in, that sin might abound; and where sin abounded, there did grace much more abound.' (Rom. iii. 8; v. 20.)

"When the Apostle Paul says that a man is justified by faith (per fidem) without the works of the Law, he does not mean thereby, that, when a man has received and professed the Faith, he may despise the works of righteousness; but that every one may know that he may be justified by faith, although works of the law have not gone before his Faith. For works follow him that is justified, 'Sequuntur justificatum, non precedunt justificatum.'"

"Since however the notion above mentioned had arisen at that time (viz. that works were not requisite), the other *Apostolic Epistles* of *Peter, John, James, and Jude*, specially contend against that notion; in order to maintain earnestly, that Faith without works doth not profit. Indeed *Paul* himself has defined Faith to be not *any kind* of Faith by which man believes in God; but he defines true faith to be that *healthful and evangelical*

faith, whose works proceed from love—'Faith which worketh by love.' (Gal. v. 6.) And he asserts, that the faith which some men think sufficient for salvation is so worthless, that 'if I have faith (he says) so as to remove mountains, and have not charity, I am nothing' (1 Cor. xiii. 2); and doubtless that man's life is good, where faithful love works, for he says, 'the fulfilling of the Law is love' (Rom. xiii. 10)."

This remark is specially applicable to *St. Paul's* own latest Epistles. See above, *Introduction* to the Epistles to Timothy and Titus (near the end).

"Evidently, therefore (continues *Augustine*), for this reason, *St. Peter*, in his *Second Epistle*, when he was exhorting to holiness of life, and was declaring that this world would pass away, and that *new heavens and new earth* are looked for, which are to be assigned as dwellings to the righteous; and when he was admonishing men to consider what ought to be their life in this world, in order that they may be made meet for that future habitation; and being also aware that many ungodly men had taken occasion from certain rather obscure sentences of the Apostle *Paul*, to be reckless of living well, and to presume of salvation by faith, has noted that there are *some things hard to be understood* in *St. Paul's Epistles*, which men *wrested*, as they did the *other Scriptures, to their own destruction*; whereas, in truth, that Apostle (*St. Paul*) entertained the same opinions as the rest of the Apostles concerning everlasting salvation, and that it would not be given to any but to those who live well. Thus therefore Peter writes." *Augustine* then quotes this chapter, vv. 11—18. *S. Augustine*, de Fide et Operibus, c. 22, ed. Bened. vi. p. 308.

Many of the Ancients supposed the Epistle of *St. James*, with the First of *St. John*, that of *St. Jude*, and the *Second of St. Peter*, to have been written against those who, mistaking the sense of *St. Paul's Epistles*, held that faith without good works is sufficient for salvation. Which opinion is greatly confirmed by *St. Peter*, where he says that in the *Epistles of St. Paul* may be found some things which by bad men are perverted to the worst sense, and to their own destruction. *Bp. Bull*, de Justif., diss. ii. ch. iv. Cp. also *Bp. Bull's Examen Censuræ* Strict. i. § 4, where he says, "that *St. Peter* refers here to *St. Paul's* doctrine on Justification by Faith, *hath been* the judgment of most learned men." Cp. *Bp. Sanderson*, Prælect. ii. de Conscientiâ, § 5, and above, *Introduction* to the Epistle of *St. James*, pp. 1—3.

Observe, however, how wisely *St. Peter* guards against the inference which has been derived by some from his words—especially by Theologians of the Church of Rome—alleging that *Holy Scripture* is here represented by him as *obscure*, and that therefore it ought not to be allowed to be read by the people.

In this same chapter, *St. Peter* commends the "words of the holy Prophets, and the commandment of the Apostles," to the careful meditation of his readers (iii. 2); and he had said, "if any man speaks, let him speak as the oracles of God," which presupposes knowledge of those oracles (iv. 11). And he does not say here that *Holy Scripture* is *obscure*; but that there are *unlearned and unstable men* in the world; and that there are *some things hard to be understood* in *some portions* of *Holy Scripture*, which he commends to their reverent regard by saying, that they are written by "our beloved brother Paul according to the wisdom that was given him." And he does not suppose that the *faithful* and *well-grounded* believer will misapprehend them; but he affirms that *unlearned and unstable men wrest* them, that is, put them, as it were, to the rack, and torture them, contrary to their true and natural meaning—to their own destruction; whereas, when properly understood, they are able to make wise unto salvation. He also says that this evil practice of these unlearned and unstable men is not limited to these particular portions of *Holy Scripture*; but that they *treat the rest of the Scriptures* in the same way.

These words of *St. Peter* possess much interest and importance, as taking their place with the other testimonies of Prophets and Apostles to the authority of *Holy Scripture*.

The Prophet *Malachi* closes the Canon of the *Old Testament* by a solemn appeal "to the Law of Moses, and to the Statutes and Judgments." He says, "Remember them" (Mal. iv. 4).

17 Ὑμεῖς οὖν, ἀγαπητοὶ, προγινώσκοντες φυλάσσεσθε, ἵνα μὴ τῇ τῶν ^p Mark 13. 23.
 ἀθέσμων πλάνῃ συναπαχθέντες ἐκπέσητε τοῦ ἰδίου στηριγμοῦ· 18 αὐξάνετε δὲ
 ἐν χάριτι καὶ γνώσει τοῦ Κυρίου ἡμῶν καὶ Σωτῆρος Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ· αὐτῷ ἡ
 δόξα καὶ νῦν καὶ εἰς ἡμέραν αἰῶνος· ἀμήν.

The Apostle and Evangelist *St. John* closes the four Gospels with a similar reference. "These things are *written*, that ye might believe that Jesus is the Christ, the Son of God; and that, believing, ye might have life through His Name." (John xx. 31.)

St. Paul, the Apostle of the Gentile World, closes his Epistles with a testimony to the sufficiency and Inspiration of *Holy Scripture*. "Abide thou in those things which thou hast learnt, and wert assured of, knowing from whom thou didst learn them; and that from a child thou knowest the *Holy Scriptures*, which are the things that are able to make thee wise unto salvation, through faith that is in Christ Jesus. *Every Scripture*, being divinely inspired, is also profitable for doctrine, for reproof, for correction, for instruction in righteousness, in order that the man of God may be perfect, thoroughly furnished unto every good work." (2 Tim. iii. 14—17.)

St. Peter, in like manner, closes his Epistles here with a similar exhortation, and with a warning against perversion of Scripture.

St. Jude also closes the Catholic Epistles with a memento to his readers, "Remember ye the words spoken before by the Apostles of our Lord Jesus Christ." (Jude 17.)

Lastly, the Apostle and Evangelist *St. John* closes the Apocalypse with a promise of blessing to those who keep its sayings, and a curse on those who take from it or add to it. (Rev. xxii. 7, 18, 19.)

Thus the duties of the Christian Church, as the Guardian of HOLY SCRIPTURE, and the duties of every member of the Church, as bound to receive, to meditate upon, and to obey the written Word of God, are solemnly inculcated by the farewell voices of Prophets and Apostles.

Prophets and Apostles pass away to another and better world. But the WORD of GOD, written by their instrumentality, *endureth for ever*. (1 Pet. i. 25.)

Observe, also, the importance of this passage with regard to the Epistles of *St. Paul*.

When *St. Peter* wrote this Epistle, he was near his death (2 Pet. i. 14), which took place in or about A.D. 68. He refers here to *St. Paul's* Epistles—to *all his Epistles*.

At the date of the present Epistle, *all St. Paul's* Epistles had been written, with the exception perhaps of the last Epistle, the Second to Timothy. See above, *Chronological Table* prefixed to *St. Paul's* Epistles, pp. xiv, xv.

"Peter wrote his present Epistle a very short time before his own and *St. Paul's* martyrdom; and *St. Peter* had read all *Paul's* Epistles." *Bengel*.

St. Peter here designates *St. Paul's* Epistles as *γραφὰς, Scriptures*. He says that some men wrest them as they do "*the other Scriptures*" (τὰς λοιπὰς γραφὰς).

The word *γραφὰς* is used about fifty times in the New Testament, and is there always applied to characterize *divinely inspired writings*, specially those of the *Old Testament*, which were received by *Christ Himself* as given by inspiration of God. It is *never* used in the New Testament to designate *any other* writings than those. Therefore, *St. Peter* here declares, that the Epistles of *St. Paul* are *divinely inspired*, and are to be received as such.

This testimony to the *wisdom* of *St. Paul* and to the *divine inspiration* of his Epistles, is specially interesting and valuable as coming from *St. Peter*.

Some persons had endeavoured to make him a rival of *St. Paul*. "I am of Cephas," was said in opposition to others, who said, "I am of Paul" (1 Cor. i. 12). He was the Apostle of the Circumcision, and *St. Paul* of the Gentiles (Gal. ii. 7). And *Peter* had been once prevailed upon by the Judaizing Christians at Antioch to side with them in opposition to *St. Paul*. (Gal. ii. 11.) On that occasion he had been openly resisted and publicly rebuked by *St. Paul*; and *St. Paul* has fully recorded the circumstances of that resistance and rebuke in one of his own Epistles to the Christians of Asia: the Christians of one of the same regions as are recited in the inscription of *St. Peter's* First Epistle, and to which the Second Epistle of *St. Peter* was addressed—*Galatia*. (Gal. ii. 11—21.)

St. Peter, therefore, in acknowledging *St. Paul's* Epistles to be *Scripture*, that is, as *written by inspiration of God*, acknowledges them to be *true*; and therefore he owns, that what is

therein recorded in *St. Paul's* Epistle to the *Galatians*, concerning *himself*, and his own conduct at Antioch, is a *true history*; and that he was then *justly rebuked*, because he was κατεγνωσμένος, *condemned*. (Gal. ii. 11.)

St. Peter, therefore, here refutes the assumption of the Bishops of Rome, who call themselves his successors, and who allege that they themselves are *infallible*, and are not to be rebuked by any; an assumption grounded on *St. Peter's* supposed infallibility (see on Matt. xvi. 18).

But *St. Peter* himself faltered, and the record of his failing is written in the Word of God; and *St. Peter* himself owns that record to be true, and to be divinely inspired. Therefore, none of those who call themselves his successors, and who ground their claims on *St. Peter's* alleged infallibility, can be allowed to be infallible. And whoever desires to build his hopes of heaven on the rock and not on the sand, will not place his faith on the baseless foundation of such an imaginary infallibility.

St. Peter's generosity, wisdom, and charity, are also here manifest.

He owns himself to have been in error. He makes public reparation for his error, in writing to those to whom his error might be a snare; the Jewish Christians of Asia. He refers to Epistles, in which that error is recorded by him who rebuked him for his error. He acknowledges these Epistles to be written by his *beloved brother*; to be written according to *divine wisdom*; he owns them to be *Scripture*, written by inspiration of God. He thus publicly confesses and retracts his error: he thanks him who corrected him: he shows his own wisdom. "Rebuke a wise man, and he will love thee" (Prov. ix. 8).

Compare note above, at the end of Gal. ii.

St. Peter felt that he had been rightly rebuked by *St. Paul*; he did not indignantly spurn that rebuke as an injury, but received it thankfully as a benefit. Such is the temper of those who have learnt to be meek and lowly in heart (Matt. xi. 29); "in honour preferring one another" (Rom. xii. 10). In a like, loving, spirit, *St. Peter* had closed his *first* Epistle, saying, that he sent it by "*Silvanus the faithful brother*," who had been the chosen associate of *St. Paul*; and joining him with "*Marcus his son*." See note on 1 Pet. v. 12, 13.

Thus, in fine, the Apostle of the Circumcision, now ready to put off his mortal tabernacle (i. 14), is seen standing, as it were, side by side, with the Apostle of the Gentiles, who is also now "ready to be offered up, and the time of his departure is at hand" (2 Tim. iv. 6), and he declares to the Churches of Asia and the world, that the Epistles of his beloved brother *Paul* are to be received as divinely inspired Scripture. Thus both these Apostles proclaim to the Church Universal that they are of one mind; and that the Faith is one and the same, which they have preached in their lives, and for which they are about to die.

They died as Martyrs in the same city—Rome; and as some ancient authorities relate, in the same year, and even on the same day (see *Introduction* to the Epistles to Timothy, at the end). However this may be, "they were lovely and pleasant in their lives, and in their death they were not divided." 2 Sam. i. 23.

17. Ὑμεῖς οὖν, ἀγαπητοί] *Ye therefore, beloved, knowing these things before, take heed that ye be not led away by the error of the lawless, and fall away from your own steadfastness.*

These two verses contain the sum of the whole Epistle.

First, here is a warning against the errors and allurements of the false teachers with their specious claims to superior *gnosis*; to this he opposes the divine *gnosis*, which he has just supplied, and he therefore adds what follows;—

18. αὐξάνετε δέ] *But grow in grace, and in the knowledge (the true gnosis) of our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ; to Him be the glory both now and for ever,—literally, for the day of eternity, which has no night (see on Matt. xxv. 46). Observe the arrangement; true gnosis is a fruit of grace.*

Here is a Doxology to Jesus Christ as God. On ἡ δόξα, cp. Rev. iv. 11; v. 13; vii. 12. He ends, as he had begun, with an assertion of the unity of the person of *Jesus* and *Christ*; and of His *Lordship*; and of His office as *Saviour*, and of His *Godhead*; because in opposition to the Gnostic false teachers these were the principal doctrines to be maintained.

—ἀμήν] *Amen*. So A, C, G, K, and most Cursives and Versions.

INTRODUCTION

TO

THE FIRST EPISTLE GENERAL OF ST. JOHN.

I. EACH of the Catholic or General Epistles has a special character.

The Epistle of St. James corrects the errors of those who imagined that a theoretical knowledge of religion, apart from practical piety, is acceptable to God¹. St. Peter, in his First Epistle, builds up a system of ethical duty on the foundation of Christian Faith². In his second Epistle he condemns the false doctrines of those heretical Teachers who denied the Lord that bought them³, and exposes the evil consequences of heretical teaching, in its influence on moral practice⁴.

St. Jude, in his Epistle, completes the work of St. Peter. He recalls the attention of the Church to the warnings of that Apostle, and of his Apostolic brethren⁵. He displays in clearer light, and fuller amplitude, what St. Peter had revealed by the Spirit of prophecy⁶.

II. The beloved disciple, the holy Apostle, and Evangelist, St. John, had another work to perform.

It was his special office to defend the doctrine of the INCARNATION.

That doctrine had been taught with great clearness by the Apostle St. Paul, in his Epistle to the *Ephesians*; as has been already shown in the *Introduction* to that Epistle.

St. Paul, in his solemn farewell charge to the *Presbyters* of *Ephesus*, had exhorted them to "feed the Church of God, which He purchased with His own blood," and he had given to them a prophetic warning that after his departure "many grievous wolves would enter in among them not sparing the flock, and that even of their own selves men would rise up, speaking perverse things to draw away the disciples after them⁷."

And in writing to his own son in the faith, Timothy, whom he had placed as *Bishop* at *Ephesus*, St. Paul first reminds him that "God willeth all men to be saved⁸," and that the One Mediator between God and men "gave Himself a ransom for all⁹," and then exhorts him to behave himself aright "in the house of God which is the Church of the living God, the pillar and ground of the truth (and without controversy great is the Mystery of godliness); Who was *manifested* in the *flesh*¹⁰;" and then he proceeds to warn Timothy that "some will depart from the faith, giving heed to seducing spirits¹¹."

St. John, who lived and died at *Ephesus*, continued, maintained, guarded, and completed this work of St. Paul; and St. John's writings show the truth of St. Paul's prophecy.

He had to encounter false Teachers whose rise had been predicted by St. Paul.

No one could be better qualified for this work than St. John.

He had been admitted to the nearest intimacy with the Incarnate Word. He had leaned on His breast at supper¹². He saw Him die on the cross, and beheld His side pierced, and there came forth blood and water¹³.

St. John, who had seen these things, had testified of them in his oral teaching. And probably he had already written the record of them in his Gospel, before he published his Epistles¹⁴. St.

¹ See above, *Introduction* to that Epistle, pp. 1—3.

² See above, *Introduction* to that Epistle, p. 43. Cp. pp. 69, 70.

³ 2 Pet. ii. 1.

⁴ See above, *Introduction* to that Epistle, pp. 70—72.

⁵ Jude 17.

⁶ 2 Pet. ii. 1.

⁷ Acts xx. 28—30.

⁸ 1 Tim. ii. 4.

⁹ 1 Tim. iii. 15, 16.

¹⁰ John xiii. 25.

¹¹ 1 Tim. iv. 1.

¹² John xix. 34.

¹³ It cannot indeed be *proved*, that the *Gospel* of St. John was written *before* his Epistles; but for various reasons this seems to me more probable now, than when p. 266 of the *Introduction* to the *Gospel* was written. See below on i. 1, and *Guerike*, Ein-

John's Gospel affords the best help to the study of his Epistles. And the reader is requested to refer to the *Introduction* prefixed to his *Gospel*¹, as serving, in some respects, for an *Introduction* to his *Epistles* also.

St. John's life was providentially prolonged by the Head of the Church, in His love to her, in order that the beloved disciple might bear testimony to the fundamental doctrines of the Godhead and Incarnation of Jesus Christ; and that he might also pronounce a judicial sentence, with all the weight of his Apostolic authority, on the wickedness of denying any of those doctrines; and might deliver to all of every age a warning against those Teachers who impugn any of these articles of the Faith; and might provide a refuge for the faithful under the peaceful shelter of his Apostolic name².

This he has done in his Epistles.

Ancient writers, dating almost from the age of St. John, bear witness to these statements.

The most important testimony of Christian Antiquity to this effect is that of S. Irenæus³, which will be quoted presently. He came from the neighbourhood of Ephesus, the country in which St. John passed the latter part of his life, and in which he died⁴. He had conversed with S. Polycarp, Bishop of Smyrna; and S. Polycarp had conversed with St. John and other Apostles⁵. The testimony therefore of S. Irenæus concerning the design of St. John's Epistles is of great weight.

III. Certain Heresies affecting the doctrine of Christ's two Natures and one Person had sprung up in Apostolic times. The *Jews*, who looked for a *temporal* kingdom of Christ, could not reconcile their minds to the doctrine, taught in the Gospel, of a *suffering Messiah*. They were ashamed of the *cross* of Christ: they shrank from the scoffs of the Heathen taunting the Christians with worshipping a man, who died the death of a slave.

Those Jews also, who did not rightly understand the doctrine of the Divine *Unity*, were not prepared to accept that other cardinal article of the true Faith, that Jesus Christ is God.

Accordingly, when the Gospel was presented to the minds of those among them who could not gainsay the proofs of its truth as a Revelation from God, they endeavoured to accommodate it to their own preconceived opinions. Such persons were no longer willing to be called Jews; they assumed the name of Christians. But they were not sound Christians; and some among them are condemned by St. John.

The difficulties just specified beset the Jewish mind when it contemplated the Gospel, as preached by the Apostles.

IV. There was also another embarrassment which perplexed many inquirers, *Πόθεν τὸ κακόν*; Whence is evil? How came it into the world?

This question had produced the Magian Philosophy, with its two independent Principles, and antagonistic Powers; and it engendered also the Gnostic Theories of emanations, or æons; according to which, the Demiurge or Creator was a different Person and Agent from the Father of our Lord Jesus Christ; and the Law and the Prophets were severed from the Gospel.

V. The Heresies produced by these causes, and which sprung up especially among the Jewish Christians, in the age of St. John, concerning the Person and Nature of Christ, and against which the Apostle wrote, were mainly four⁶—

1. The heresy of those who affirmed that Jesus was a mere *man*; this was the heresy of *Ebion*.

2. The heresy of those who said that *Jesus* was a different being from *Christ*; and that *Christ* was an æon or emanation, who was sent into the world to reveal the knowledge of the true God, and to free the souls of men from the power of the Demiurge or Creator of matter; and descended into the *man Jesus* at His baptism, and departed from Him before His crucifixion. This was the heresy of *Cerinthus*.

3. The heresy of those who asserted that Christ had *no real human body*, but that He suffered merely in *appearance*. This was the heresy of the *Docetæ*⁷, and of their leader *Simon Magus*.

leitung, p. 473. Hug, Lücke, and Davidson, Introduction, p. 463. Cp. Dr. Smith's Dictionary of the Bible, p. 1112, and below, Introduction to the Second Epistle.

¹ See above, vol. i. pp. 256—266.

² Compare Dr. Burton's Bampton Lectures "on the Heresies of the Apostolic Age," especially Lecture vi. pp. 158—191, which affords some valuable helps for the study of these Epistles: see also Lecture viii. pp. 237—240, and notes, pp. 462—478, and pp. 498—519.

³ The words of S. Irenæus will be quoted below: see p. 100. Compare also the testimony of Tertullian, Præscr. c. 33, "Eos maximè Johannes in Epistolâ Antichristos vocat, qui Christum

negarent in carne venisse, et qui non putarent Jesum esse Filium Dei." He identifies the latter heresy with the teaching of *Ebion*. See also S. Jerome, Prolog. in Matt., "Joannes, quum esset in Asiâ et jam tunc hereticorum semina pullularent, Cerinthi, Ebionis, et cæterorum, quos et ipse in Epistolâ suâ Antichristos vocat."

⁴ Euseb. v. 5, and v. 20.

⁵ Euseb. iv. 14; v. 24, citing the testimony of S. Irenæus and Polycrates, and other Bishops of Asia.

⁶ Cp. preliminary note above to 2 Pet. ii., p. 87.

⁷ So called from *δοκεῖν*, to appear or to seem.

4. The heresy of those who said that the world was not created by Him, or by the Father, but by some rival powers; and who affirmed that there was no necessity for abstaining from idolatry, or for incurring any danger in behalf of the Faith. These were the *Nicolaitans* and others.

VI. They who taught these doctrines are called *deceivers* and *antichrists* by St. John in his two Epistles¹, as is observed by S. Irenæus², who speaks at large concerning these errors in his great work against Heresy³.

1. A summary of the remarks of S. Irenæus on this important subject may be presented to the English reader in the words of Bp. Bull;—

“All the Gnostics, of whatever denomination, did in reality deny the true Nativity, Passion, and Resurrection of Jesus Christ, although not all in the same way. This is a learned observation of Irenæus, who was a most careful investigator of the doctrine of the Gnostics, in the third book of his Treatise, where, after showing how the Apostle John, in the very beginning of his Gospel, glances at the *Cerinthians* and *Nicolaitans*, he proceeds presently to those words of the Apostle⁴, and demonstrates that neither the Cerinthians, nor any other sect of the Gnostics, did sincerely acknowledge the Incarnation, the Passion, or the Resurrection of Jesus Christ.

“These are the words of Irenæus. According to those heretics, neither was the Word made Flesh, nor Christ, nor the Saviour. For they maintain, that the Word and Christ did not even come into this world, and that the Saviour was neither Incarnate, nor suffered, but that He descended like a dove upon Jesus, and having declared the unknown Father, ascended again into the pleroma. But He who was incarnate and suffered, some of them affirm, was that Jesus who is of the Gospel dispensation, who, they say, passed through the Virgin Mary, as water through a tube; others assert, that He, who suffered, was the Son of the Demiurge, or Creator, upon whom that Jesus descended, who is of the Gospel dispensation; others again say, that Jesus was indeed born of Joseph and Mary, and that upon him Christ descended, who is from above, being without flesh, and incapable of suffering.

“According, however, to no view entertained by these Heretics, was the Word of God made Flesh. For if one carefully search into the theories of them all, he will find, that there is introduced a Word of God, and a Christ that is on high, without flesh, and incapable of suffering. For some of them think that He was manifested, as transfigured into the form of man, but say that He was neither born, nor incarnate; whereas others suppose that He did not even assume the form of man, but descended as a dove upon that Jesus who was born of Mary. The Lord’s disciple, St. John, therefore, showing that they are all false witnesses, says, ‘And the WORD was made FLESH, and DWELT AMONG US⁵.’”

2. The reader may be also glad to be reminded here of the remarks made by another learned

¹ 1 John ii. 18. 22. 26; iv. 3. 2 John 7.

² Irenæus iii. 16. 5, Propter quod et in Epistolâ suâ sic testificatus est nobis Joannes ‘Filioli, novissima hora est; et quemadmodum audistis, quoniam Antichristus venit, nunc Antichristi multi facti sunt, &c., et ex nobis exierunt’ (1 John ii. 18); and S. Irenæus applies these words to those, like *Cerinthus*, who said that Jesus was only a “receptacle of Christ, and that Christ descended like a dove into Jesus;” and he says that these Antichrists whom he has mentioned do indeed in name confess Jesus Christ, but in fact deny Him by separating Jesus from Christ; and he applies to them the words of St. John in his First and Second Epistles, 1 John iv. 1, and 2 John 7, 8. See Iren. iii. 16. 8.

³ “Hanc fidem annuntians Joannes Domini discipulus, volens per evangelii annuntiationem auferre eum qui à *Cerintho* insemnatus erat hominibus errorem, ut confunderet eos et suaderet, quoniam unus *Deus qui omnia fecit per Verbum suum*; et non, quemadmodum illi dicunt, alterum quidem fabricatorem, alium autem *Patrem Domini*; et alium quidem fabricatoris filium, alterum verò de superioribus Christum, quem et impassibilem perseverasse, descendente in Jesum filium fabricatoris, et iterum revolasse in suum Pleroma; et initium quidem esse Monogenem, Logon autem verum filium Unigeniti; et eam conditionem, quæ est secundum nos, non à primo Deo factam, sed à virtute aliquâ valde deorsum subjectâ, et abscissâ ab eorum communicatione, quæ sunt invisibilia et innominabilia. Abstulit autem à nobis dissensiones omnes ipse Joannes dicens, *In hoc mundo erat, et mundus per ipsum factus est, et mundus eum non cognovit. In sua propria venit, et sui eum non receperunt.* Secundum autem Marcionem et eos, qui similes sunt ei, neque mundus per eum factus est; neque in sua venit, sed in aliena; secundum autem quosdam Gnosticorum ab angelis factus est iste mundus, et non per Verbum Dei. Secundum autem eos, qui sunt à Valentino, iterum non per eum factus est, sed per Demiurgum. Hic enim

operabatur similitudines tales fieri, ad imitationem eorum quæ sunt sursum, quemadmodum dicunt: Demiurgus autem perficiebat fabricationem conditionis. Emissum enim dicunt eum à matre Dominum et Demiurgum ejus dispositionis, quæ est secundum conditionem, per quem hunc mundum factum volunt, quum Evangelium manifestè dicat, quoniam per Verbum, quod in principio erat apud Deum, omnia sunt facta: quod *Verbum*, inquit, *caro factum est, et inhabitavit in nobis.*

“Secundum autem illos, neque Verbum caro factum est, neque Christus, neque qui ex omnibus factus est, Salvator. Etenim Verbum et Christum nec advenisse in hunc mundum volunt; Salvatorem verò non incarnatum neque passum; descendisse autem quasi columbam in eum Jesum qui factus est ex dispositione, et cum adnunciasset incognitum Patrem, iterum ascendisse in Pleroma. Incarnatum autem et passum quidam quidem eum, qui ex dispositione sit, dicunt Jesum, quem per Mariam dicunt pertransisse, quasi aquam per tubum: alii verò Demiurgi filium, in quem descendisse eum Jesum qui ex dispositione sit: alii rursum Jesum quidem ex Joseph et Mariâ natum dicunt, et in hunc descendisse Christum, qui de superioribus sit sine carne et impassibilem existentem. Secundum autem nullam sententiam hæreticorum, Verbum Dei caro factum est. Si enim quis regulas ipsorum omnium perscrutetur, inveniet quoniam sine carne et impassibile ab omnibus illis inducitur Dei Verbum, et qui est in superioribus Christus. Alii enim putant manifestatum eum, quemadmodum hominem transfiguratum; neque autem natum neque incarnatum dicunt illum: alii verò neque figuram eum assumpsisse hominis; sed quemadmodum columbam descendisse in eum Jesum, qui natus est ex Mariâ. Omnes igitur illos falsos testes ostendens discipulus Domini, ait: *Et Verbum caro factum est, et habitavit in nobis.*” S. Irenæus, iii. cap. xi. p. 462.

⁴ John i. 14.

⁵ Bp. Bull, Def. of Nicene Creed, iii. 1. See also Dr. Burton, Bampton Lectures, 1829, Lect. vi. pp. 158—160.

English Theologian, Dr. Waterland, who has illustrated this subject with special application to the Epistles of St. John.

Those remarks, together with the observations of the two English Prelates quoted in this Introduction, may serve as preparatory to a profitable study of this Epistle.

"If we examine this Epistle, we shall perceive"—says Dr. Waterland—"that a great part of it was levelled, not so much against Jews, or Pagans, as against *false Christians*; against the *heretics* of that time, *Simonians* perhaps, or *Cerinthians*, or *Ebionites*, or *Nicolaitans*, or all of them.

"The two principal errors which St. John there censures, were, the denial of Christ's being *come in the flesh*¹, and the disowning that *Jesus was Christ*². The *Docetæ*, as they were afterwards called, the followers of Simon Magus, denied *Christ's* real *humanity*, making Him a mere *phantom*, *shadow*, or *apparition*. And the *Cerinthians*, making a distinction between *Jesus* and *Christ*, did not allow that both were one Person. Against those chiefly St. John wrote his Epistle. He speaks of *Antichrists* newly risen up³, which could not be intended of Jews or Pagans, who had opposed the Gospel all along; and he speaks of men that had been of the Church, but had apostatized from it; 'they went out from us, but they were not of us'.

"Let us now proceed to the explication of those passages in St. John's Epistle which relate to our purpose.

"The Apostle observes, that *the Word of Life* (or the *Word* in whom *was Life*⁴) was *from the beginning*⁵; conformable to what he says in the entrance to his Gospel, and in opposition both to Cerinthus and Ebion, who made *Jesus* a mere *man*, and who either denied any pre-existing substantial Logos, or at most supposed him to stand foremost in the rank of *creatures*. The Apostle further styles the same *Logos*, *Eternal Life*⁶, to intimate his eternal existence, in opposition to the same heretics. He adds, *which was with the Father*, parallel to what he says in his Gospel, *was with God*⁷."

St. John proceeds to declare the reality and efficacy of the Vicarious Atonement made by the Son of God dying on the Cross for the sins of the whole world. "My little children, these things write I unto you, that ye sin not: and if any man sin—or rather, have sinned (*ἁμαρτή*)—we have an Advocate with the Father, *Jesus Christ the Righteous*, and He is the *Propitiation* for our sins, and not for our sins only, but for the sins of the *whole world*⁸;" and he says, "In this was manifested the love of God towards us, because that God sent His only-begotten Son into the world, that we might live through Him. Herein is love, not that we loved God, but that He loved us, and sent His Son to be the *propitiation* for our sins. Beloved, if God so loved us, we ought also to love one another¹⁰."

"In the second chapter of the Epistle (says Waterland) the Apostle describes the antichristian heretics of that time as denying that *Jesus is Christ*, which amounted to the same with *denying the Father and the Son*¹¹; because *whosoever denieth the Son, the same hath not the Father*¹². Cerinthus denied that Jesus was Christ, dividing Christ from Jesus; and he, of consequence, *denied the Son*, because he allowed not that Jesus was personally united with the Word, the eternal Son of God; nor that the Logos which he speaks of, was the only-begotten of the Father, being Son only of the only-begotten, according to his scheme; so that he totally disowned the divine Sonship, both of Jesus and Christ, and by such denial denied both the Father and Son¹³.

"The Apostle goes on to say, *Whosoever shall confess that Jesus is the Son of God, God dwelleth in him, and he in God*. Where again he manifestly strikes at the Cerinthian and Ebionite principles, which allowed not Jesus to be the Son of God, in any true and proper sense, such as St. John lays down in several places of his writings, but particularly in the entrance to his Gospel¹⁴.

¹ 1 John iv. 3. Compare 2 John 7.

² 1 John ii. 22.

³ 1 John ii. 18. 22; iv. 3. 2 John 7.

⁴ 1 John ii. 19.

⁵ John i. 4.

⁶ 1 John i. 1.

⁷ 1 John i. 2. Compare 1 John v. 20.

⁸ Conf. Tertull. contra Prax. c. xv. Bp. Bull, Judic. Eccles. c. ii. sect. 5, p. 295.

⁹ 1 John ii. 1—3.

¹⁰ 1 John iv. 9—11.

¹¹ 1 John ii. 22.

¹² 1 John ii. 22. "Apostoli verba commune Cerinthi et Ebionis dogma manifesti perstringunt, nam illi ambo Jesum esse verum Dei Filium ante Mariam, adeoque ante res omnes creatas ex Deo Patre natum omnino negabant, ac proinde, Apostolo judice, neque Deum Patrem revera confessi sunt; siquidem à

revelato Evangelio, nemo potest Deum Patrem ritè colere aut credere, nisi qui Deum Filium simul amplectatur." Bull, Judic. Eccles. c. ii. sect. 5, p. 296.

¹³ "Dum enim Cerinthiani negabant Jesum esse Christum per veram scilicet perpetuamque unionem, Christum insuper Filium Dei verum et unigenitum inficiebantur; perinde hoc erat ac si et Patrem et Filium negassent, cum, ut rectè Joannes dicit, Qui Filium negat, nec Patrem habeat.—Eo ipse enim, dum negabant Jesum esse Christum, nec ipsum quoque Christum pro Dei Filio agnoscebant, non poterant non multò magis negare. Jesum esse Filium Dei." Buddæi Eccles. Apostol. p. 445.

¹⁴ "Non est dubitandum, quin Apostolus his verbis confessionem exigat illius Filii Dei, quem ipse ex parte supra in hac Epistolâ prædicaverat, et plenius in Evangelio suo declarat, nempe Filii Dei, qui sit Dei Patris Λόγος, qui in principio erat, et apud Deum erat, et Deus ipse erat, per quem omnia facta sunt, &c.—Hujusmodi verò Dei Filium Jesum nostrum esse, non confessus

"In the chapter next following, the Apostle repeats the same thing as before, or uses words to the same effect; *Whosoever believeth that Jesus is the Christ, is born of God*¹; and soon after adds, *Who is he that overcometh the world, but he that believeth that Jesus is the Son of God*²? Here lay the main stress,—to believe that *Jesus*, who was truly and really Man, was as truly and really the eternal *Son of God*³. The Apostle in the next verse seems to point at the *Docetæ*, as he had before done in the same Epistle⁴, being equally concerned to maintain that Christ had real *flesh*, as that He had real *Divinity*; that so the faith of the Gospel might stand upon this firm foundation, that the Eternal Son of God became Son of Man for the salvation of mankind. Hereupon therefore the Apostle, in defence of Christ's real *humanity*, says, *This is He that came by water and blood*⁵. What he elsewhere expresses by *His coming in the flesh*⁶, here he expresses more emphatically, by *His coming in*, or by, *water and blood*; alluding to what Christ shed at His *passion*, as a proof that He had then a real body, and was really *man*, not a spectre, phantom, or apparition, as some heretics pretended. It is to be noted, that the ancient *visionaries* (who were the Simonians, Menandrians, Saturnilians, and Basilidians), being ashamed perhaps to confess Christ crucified⁷, contrived any wild supposition imaginable to evade it. Basilides pretended that Christ Himself did not suffer, but that Simon of Cyrene was crucified in His room⁸. The elder *Docetæ* said that Christ had no real body, and suffered in appearance only.

"But the Apostle here emphatically observes that Christ *came by water and blood*: this shedding of both water and blood out of his side, at his *Passion*, was a demonstration, that there was a real body then hanging upon the cross, not a phantom, or a spiritual substance. Which very argument is well urged by Irenæus⁹ and Novatian¹⁰, in proof of the same thing, against the *Docetæ*. As St. John is the only Evangelist who has related that circumstance of the *Passion*¹¹, so it is observable how particular a stress he lays upon it, immediately subjoining, in confirmation of it, and *he that saw it bare record, and his record is true*. And he confirms it further from two prophecies out of the Old Testament.

"St. John strengthens the argument further by superadding the consideration of the testimony of the Spirit. And there is *the Spirit* also *bearing witness*, because *the Spirit is truth*¹², is essential truth. The Spirit residing in the Church, and working in believers by supernatural graces, bears testimony to the doctrine taught by the Apostles, and believed by the Church; particularly to the doctrine here spoken of, viz., that Christ the Son of God became Son of Man for the salvation of mankind.

"The Apostle, in the close of this Epistle, sums up all in these strong words: *we know that the Son of God is come, and hath given us an understanding, that we may know Him that is true, and we are in Him that is true, even in His Son Jesus Christ. This is the true God and eternal life*¹³.

"The title of *true God*, in this text, is to be understood of *Christ*, as I have shown elsewhere. I would observe further, how aptly every word is chosen to obviate the erroneous tenets of Cerinthus, and of other the like false teachers of those times. *The Son of God*, not the son of Joseph and Mary, nor the Son of the only-begotten, but the immediate Son of *God*, related to God as a son to a father, not as a creature to his Lord and Maker. He is *come, come in the flesh*, and not merely to reside for a time, or occasionally, and to fly off again, but to abide and dwell with man, clothed with humanity. *We are in Him that is true*, in the true Father, by His Son Jesus Christ, who is *the true God*; not an inferior power or angel (such as Cerinthus supposed the Demiurgus, or Creator to be), not a created *Æon*, the offspring of the Monogenes, or of Silence, as Cerinthus fondly imagined the Logos to be; but *true God*, one with the Father. And He is *eternal life*, the same that had been with the Father, from the beginning, before any thing was created, consequently from all eternity.

est Cerinthus, neque post ipsum Ebion." *Bp. Bull*, Judic. c. ii. sect. 9, p. 297.

¹ 1 John v. 1.

² 1 John v. 5.

³ "Quia præ aliis maximè tunc cresceret Cerinthi hæresis, ideo Apostolus fidem illam, quâ creditur *Jesum* esse *Dei Filium*, passim in hac Epistolâ commendat, urget, inculcat." *Bp. Bull*, Judic. c. ii. sect. 9, p. 297.

⁴ 1 John iv. 2, 3. Compare 2 John 7; and see *Bull*, Judic. p. 296. *Buddæi Eccl. Apostol.* p. 550, &c.

⁵ 1 John v. 6.

⁶ 1 John i. 1, 2; iv. 2, 3. 2 John 7. Compare 1 Tim. iii. 16. 1 Pet. iii. 18; iv. 1.

⁷ Hence it is that Polycarp joins both together in the same reproof: *πᾶς γὰρ, ὃς ἂν μὴ ὁμολογῇ Ἰησοῦν Χριστὸν ἐν σαρκί*

ἐληλυθέναι, ἀντίχριστός ἐστι· καὶ ὃς ἂν μὴ ὁμολογῇ τὸ μαρτύριον τοῦ σταυροῦ, ἐκ τοῦ Διαβόλου ἐστί. *Polycarp*, Epist. c. 7.

⁸ *Irenæus*, lib. i. c. 24 (aliàs 22), p. 101. *Epiphanius*, xxiv. 3. *Philastrius*, c. xxxii. p. 68. *Augustine*, de Hæres. n. iv. *Theodoret*, Hæret. Fab. lib. i. c. 4.

⁹ "Quomodo autem, cum caro non esset, sed pareret (i. e. appareret), quasi homo, crucifixus est, et à latere ejus puncto sanguis exiit et aqua?" *Iren.* lib. iv. c. 33 (aliàs 57), p. 271.

¹⁰ "Sanguis idcirco de manibus ac pedibus, atque ipso latere demanavit, ut nostri consors corporis probaretur, dum occasus nostri legibus moritur." *Novatian*, c. x. p. 31, edit. Welchmann.

¹¹ John xix. 34.

¹² 1 John v. 6.

¹³ 1 John v. 20.

"I have now gone," says Dr. Waterland, "through the Epistle of St. John. The sum of what I have advanced is, that St. John most apparently levelled a great part of his First Epistle against the Cerinthian doctrines.

"It appears further, that in his Epistle particularly, he has asserted the necessity of believing our Lord's divine Sonship, His proper Divinity, under pain of being excluded from heaven and happiness. *Whosoever denieth the Son, the same hath not the Father.* Whosoever denies Christ to be Son of God, in St. John's sense of Son, a Son that was always with God, and is God¹, is a liar and antichrist, denying both the Father and the Son. The conclusion therefore is, that the denying our blessed Lord's real Divinity, is heresy and antichristianism, much to be abhorred by every disciple of Christ, according to the infallible decision of an inspired Apostle². Many were the evasions and subterfuges of self-opinionated men, who thought it a thing incredible that the Divine Word should put on flesh, or become man; and who chose rather to pass censure upon the wisdom of Heaven, than suspect their own. But sober and modest men resigned up their faith to divine Revelation; and among the foremost of those was our blessed Apostle. So now, taking in what the Scriptures have declared of the truth of the doctrine of the Trinity in Unity; besides the true and natural import of the form of Baptism, in the Name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost; we have the determination of St. John himself for the importance of the doctrine of our Lord's Divinity; and of consequence, for the doctrine of a co-equal and co-eternal Trinity³."

VII. The student of Holy Writ will readily acknowledge the importance of these statements as elucidating the design and language of St. John in his Epistles; and they are confirmed by the fact, that one of St. John's disciples, S. Ignatius, speaks in similar language of censure and caution against the same heresies.

Here again we may refer to the words of Bp. Bull⁴. "The words in which S. Ignatius exhorts the Magnesians⁵ 'to run together unto one Jesus Christ, who came forth from the Father, and who is and hath returned unto one,' are plainly aimed against the Gnostics, especially the Cerinthians; for the Cerinthians did not believe in one Jesus Christ, but taught that Jesus was one, and Christ another, who came down from the supreme power upon Jesus after His baptism, and returned again from Jesus before His Passion, back to His own pleroma. Nor did they acknowledge one Father of Jesus Christ; but professed that the Father was the Father of Christ. Next, when Ignatius afterwards says⁶, 'that the Prophets of the Old Testament were inspired by the grace of Christ, to convince the unbelievers that there is one God, who hath manifested Himself through Jesus Christ His Son,' in these words again the Gnostics are evidently glanced at. For they all taught, that the Father of Jesus was the Demiurgus or Creator of the world, and God who created the world was one, the God who manifested himself to mankind through Christ his Son, another."

These assertions may also be confirmed by the testimony of another English Prelate, Bishop Pearson, who has observed, that the heresies of Ebion and the Docetæ were specially censured and condemned by St. John, and his scholar, S. Ignatius, in his Epistles; the former heresy involving a denial of the divinity of Christ, and the latter impugning His humanity⁷.

Another of St. John's disciples, S. Polycarp, joins with his brother Bishop and brother Martyr, S. Ignatius, in condemning these erroneous and strange doctrines.

"Every one," says he, "who does not confess that Jesus Christ is come in the flesh, is an anti-

¹ 1 John ii. 22, 23.

² Sermons, vol. ii. pp. 123—128. Compare Taylor's True Scripture Doctrine, p. 282, &c. Dr. Bishop's Eight Sermons, p. 56, &c.

³ Dr. Waterland on the Trinity, v. 139.

⁴ Bp. Bull, Defence of the Nicene Creed, iii. 1.

⁵ Ignat. ad Magnes. c. 7, συντρέχειν ἐπὶ ἑνᾷ Ἰησοῦν Χριστόν.

⁶ Ignat. ad Magnes. c. 8.

⁷ "Duæ potissimum Hæreses de naturâ Christi eâ tempestate obtinebant, ut veritati Catholicæ ita et sibi ipsis prorsus contrariæ; quarum altera Docetarum fuit, à Simonianis ortorum, humanæ naturæ veritatem in Christo destruentium; altera Ebionitarum, divinam prorsus naturam et æternam generationem denegantium, legisque cæremonias urgentium. Has primi sæculi Hæreses antiqui scriptores agnoscunt: Ignatiano ævo viguisse omnes fatentur. Unde Theodoretus (Procem.) ita Hæreticarum Fabularum libros partitus est, ut primus eos, qui alterum Creatorem confinxerunt, δοκῇσι δὲ φανῆναι τὸν Κύριον εἰς ἀνθρώπους ἔφασαν, secundus autem illos, qui ψιλὸν ἄνθρωπον τὸν Κύριον προσηγόρευ-

σαν, complecteretur. De prioribus Hieronymus adversus Luciferianos (c. xxiii.), 'Apostolis adhuc in sæculo superstitibus, apud Judæam Christi sanguine recenti, phantasma Domini corpus asserebatur.' De secundis idem in Catalogo (cap. ix.), 'Joannes Apostolus novissimus omnium scripsit Evangelium rogatus ab Asiæ Episcopis adversus Cerinthum aliosque hæreticos, et maximè tunc Ebionitarum dogma consurgens, qui asserunt Christum ante Mariam non fuisse.' Quas etiam in Asiâ maximè viguisse observat Epiphanius Hæresi lvi., 'Ενθα γὰρ τὸν Χριστὸν ἐκ παρατριβῆς ψιλὸν ἄνθρωπον ἐκήρυττεν ὁ Ἐβίων καὶ ὁ Κήρινθος, καὶ οἱ ἄμφ' αὐτοὺς, φησὶ δὲ ἐν τῇ Ἀσίᾳ. Ignatius cùm à Schismaticis et Hæreses petit, illas frequenter, sedulo, et apertè ferit: priorem Docetarum, à Discipulis Menandri tunc temporis disseminatam, atque, ut credibile est, à Saturnilo apud Antiochiam jam tum defensam, Epistola ad Smyrnæos atque Trallesios jugulat; alteram ab Ebione profectam latèque per Orientem sparsam Epistola ad Polycarpum, ad Ephesios, Magnesianos, et Philadelphenos refellit." Bp. Pearson, Vind. Ignat. ii. c. 1, p. 351, ed. Churton.

christ; and whosoever does not confess the sufferings of the cross, is of the devil; and whosoever tampers with the oracles of the Lord, and accommodates them to his own lust, and says that there is neither Resurrection nor Judgment to come, is the firstborn of Satan¹."

Such were the doctrines taught by the disciples of St. John.

VIII. Almighty God permitted Heresies to arise even in the Apostolic Age, and under His controlling power and superintending providence, Heresies have been made subservient to the clearer manifestation, and stronger confirmation, of the Faith.

Hence, therefore, it is clear, that the Heresies which now impugn the doctrine of Christ's Godhead and Manhood, and the reality and efficacy of His Atonement, are not of modern origin. They who would despoil Christ's Person of its historic reality, and would reduce it to a visionary phantom, and would dissolve the solid verities of the Gospel into legendary fables, are not propounding novelties. Their "new light is an old darkness." They are only borrowing the Heresies of ancient days. They are dressing them up in new attire, and displaying them in a new fashion to the world. Their theories, when stripped of their disguise, are nothing more than reproductions of the exploded dogmas of Ebion, Cerinthus, and the Docetæ, which were propagated in primitive times.

IX. By the mercy of God, the life of the Apostle and Evangelist St. John, the beloved disciple of Christ, was extended to the beginning of the second century after Christ. By God's good Providence he was still living, and governing the Asiatic Church, when those heresies sprung up, like tares sown by the Enemy, in the field of Christ. By the inspiration of the Holy Ghost he wrote his Gospel, in which the doctrine of the Divinity of Christ is asserted in clear language², and in which the evidences of His Humanity in life and death, particularly in the shedding forth of the Blood and Water from His side when pierced on the cross, are displayed to the world³.

By the same holy guidance, St. John was moved to write Epistles, in which he has delivered an Apostolic verdict on those who deny or undermine those verities of the Gospel.

St. Paul, writing at Ephesus to the Corinthians, and having drawn a divine picture of Christian Love⁴, concludes the Epistle with the solemn words, "If any man *love* not the Lord Jesus Christ, let him be Anathema Maran-atha⁵;" and he closes his Epistle to the Ephesians, "Grace be with all them that *love* our Lord Jesus Christ in sincerity⁶," i. e. in incorruptness of doctrine, and holiness of life. St. Paul's warnings are repeated by St. John.

He who was the beloved disciple, and who was taught by the Holy Spirit, the Spirit of Love, has dwelt more at large than any other writer of the New Testament on the duty and blessedness of Christian Love.

Yet he, the divinely-inspired Apostle of Love, the aged Evangelist, has pronounced the sternest sentence of reprobation upon those who impugn the doctrine of Christ's Godhead, or of Christ's Manhood and of His propitiatory sacrifice on the cross. He has spoken of them in the strongest terms of censure, and has condemned them as *deceivers*, as *false prophets*, as *antichrists*. He forbids his disciples to receive them into their houses, or to bid them God speed⁷. And why? Because he well knew, and has taught in his Epistle⁸, that those doctrines display the Love of God to Man in its true light; and because they are the genuine source and well-spring of Love to God and of Love to Man in God; and because wheresoever any of those doctrines are denied, the life of Love soon vanishes away.

Such considerations as these may serve to place in a clear light the enormity of the guilt of heretical teaching on these doctrines.

They may also guard the faithful, in our own days and in all ages, against those erroneous and strange notions, in whatever form they may present themselves; and establish their minds in a firm belief of the truth.

With the Epistles of St. John in our hands, we are enabled by God's grace to stand proof against all assaults, however violent, of the enemies of the Gospel. We are empowered to overcome all who impugn the doctrine on which the Church of Christ is built⁹, and on which our hopes of salvation rest; the doctrine of the unity of the two Natures, the Divine and the Human, in the one

¹ *S. Polycarp ad Philipp.* c. 7.

² John i. 1, 2. 9—11.

³ John xix. 34.

⁴ 1 Cor. xiii.

1 Cor. xvi. 22.

⁶ Eph. vi. 24.

⁷ 2 John x. 11.

⁸ 1 John iii. 1. 16, 17; iv. 8—12. 19—21.

⁹ See Matt. xvi. 18.

Person of Jesus Christ, the Son of God, and Son of Man¹. In controversies concerning the God-head and Manhood of Christ our appeal is not to the words of human wisdom, but to the words of the Holy Spirit of God, speaking by the mouth of St. John.

On the style and structure of this Epistle.

In some respects this Epistle occupies almost an unique place among the Epistles of the New Testament.

It does not bear the writer's name, or title, and can hardly be said in strictness to have the character of an epistolary address.

It stands in striking contrast to St. Paul's Epistles. They, for the most part, have a rhetorical vehemence combined with logical vigour. They are *Epistles*, inasmuch as they were sent in *writing* to those persons to whom they were addressed. They have also the freshness and vigour of *speeches*.

The present work of St. John has the character of a theological homily, poured forth, ever and anon, in the quietly-flowing effusions of sacred Poetry. Evidence of this character may be observed almost at the beginning, in some of the verses of the first chapter. The antithetical structure and rhythmical cadence of these sentences seem to have been designedly framed in such a manner as to commend themselves both to the ear and the memory of the hearers. To Greek readers, familiar with the lyrical arrangements of the Greek Drama, this mode of writing would have had a peculiar charm; and Jewish readers would recognize in it a correspondence to the style and diction of their own Prophetical Books; to which the Biblical student's attention has been drawn by *Bishop Lowth*, *Bishop Jebb*, and others.

The following specimen is from the first chapter (*vv.* 5—7):—

This then is the Message,
Which we have heard of Him, and declare to you,
That God is LIGHT,
And Darkness in Him is none.

If we say that we have fellowship with Him,
And walk in the darkness,
We lie;
And do not the Truth.

But if we walk in the LIGHT,
As He Himself is in the LIGHT;
We have fellowship one with another;
And the Blood of Jesus Christ His Son cleanseth us from all sin.

There is a similar *antistrophical* character, and musical flow, in what follows (*vv.* 8—10):—

If we say that we have no sin,
We deceive ourselves,
And the Truth is not in us.

If we confess our sins,
He is faithful and just to forgive us our sins,
And to cleanse us from all unrighteousness.

If we say that we have not sinned,
We make Him a liar;
And His Word is not in us.

¹ It is well said by *Bp. Bull*, referring to this characteristic use of this Epistle, "The doctrinal criteria of this Epistle (1 John ii. 18, 19; iii. 23; iv. 1, 2; v. 10—13. 20) enabled the Faithful to discern those heretical Teachers who diffused false and impious doctrines in the Apostolic age concerning the person of our Saviour."

The sum of these criteria is this: "Every Teacher who confesses one Christ Jesus, verily Son of God, verily made Man, for the salvation of men, is of God; in so far, that is, as he makes this confession. But, on the other hand, every one is to be held to be a false prophet and an Antichrist, who does not confess this."

"The Apostle insists mainly on these marks, which characterize as heretics those who deny the Saviour to be very man, or to be very God, as Tertullian has observed (*de Præscr.* c. 33). It is therefore abundantly clear from the Apostolic writings, as well as from other early testimony, that there existed some persons, in the age of the Apostles, who denied the Divinity of Christ, and who on that account were regarded by the Apostles as Heretics and Antichrists; so far were they who held such doctrines from being considered as brethren, and true members of the Church. Hence also it is clearly evident, that the doctrine concerning the Incarnation of the Son of God, and concerning Christ, Very God and very Man, was maintained by true Pastors of the Church from the beginning as the very root and groundwork of Christianity." *Bp. Bull*, *Jud. Eccl. Cath.* ii. 10.

We may compare the following specimens in the second chapter (*vv.* 9—11):—

He that saith that he is in the light,
And hateth his brother,
Is in darkness until now.

He that loveth his brother,
Abideth in the light,
And there is no stumbling-block in him.

But he that hateth his brother,
Is in darkness, and walketh in darkness, and knoweth not whither he goeth,
Because the Darkness blinded his eyes.

And the following, in the fourth chapter (*vv.* 7—11):—

Beloved, let us love one another;
For Love is of God:
And every one that loveth, is born of God,
And knoweth God;
He that loveth not, knoweth not God:
For God is Love.

In this was manifested the Love of God in us,
That God hath sent His only-begotten Son into the World,
In order that we might live through Him.

Herein is Love;
Not that we loved God,
But that He loved us,
And sent His Son a propitiation for our sins
Beloved, if God so loved us,
We also ought to love one another.

The same remark may be applied to other portions of this Epistle, which would probably be found to gain much in beauty and clearness, if these portions of it were displayed to the eye in this antistrophical arrangement.

The *date* of the Epistle may probably be assigned to the close of the first century¹. The question concerning the *persons* to whom it was in the first instance addressed, will be considered in the Introduction to the Second Epistle.

¹ See above, p. 98, note

ΙΩΑΝΝΟΥ Α΄.

I. ^{1 a} ὁ ἦν ἀπ' ἀρχῆς, ὃ ἀκηκόαμεν, ὃ ἐώρακαμεν τοῖς ὀφθαλμοῖς ἡμῶν, ὃ ^a ἐθεασάμεθα, καὶ αἱ χεῖρες ἡμῶν ἐψηλάφησαν, περὶ τοῦ Λόγου τῆς ζωῆς, — ^{2 b} καὶ ^b ἡ ζωὴ ἐφανερώθη, καὶ ἐώρακαμεν, καὶ μαρτυροῦμεν, καὶ ἀπαγγέλλομεν ὑμῖν τὴν ^{Col. 1. 26. 2 Tim. 1. 10. Tit. 1. 2.}

CH. I. 1.] St. John begins this Epistle without any mention of himself, or of those to whom it is addressed. He appears to be unconscious of his own individuality, and that of his readers, and to be absorbed in the contemplation of the Divine Glory and infinite love and condescension of Christ. His heart is hot within him, and he speaks with his tongue.

So it had been in his Gospel. There also he is full of the subject; and gives utterance to the great truths which struggled within him for vent, and exclaims, "In the beginning was the Word."

In like manner, the Apostle St. Paul, in writing on the same subject to the Hebrews, does not begin the Epistle with any mention of himself or of them; but withdraws himself and them from the eye of the reader, and displays Christ.

In the language of the commencement of this Epistle, and in that of the Gospel, St. John appears to revert to the opening words of the Old Testament. "In the beginning God created the heaven and the earth" (Gen. i. 1). There was the beginning of the visible world. St. John had described in his Gospel the spiritual Genesis. "In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God. All things were made by Him." (John i. 1—3.) And now in his Epistle he begins with Him Who had no beginning, but is and has been from Eternity.

S. Clement of Alexandria (Adumbrat. p. 1009) observes, that "this Epistle begins with a spiritual proem, following that of the Gospel of St. John, and in unison with it." He therefore supposed the Epistle to have been written after the Gospel. See above, p. 98, note.

The harmony subsisting between the beginning of St. John's Gospel and that of his Epistle, in declaring the doctrines of the Pre-existence, Divinity, and Creative Power of the Everlasting Word, and of His Incarnation,—in opposition to the Heretics of Apostolic times, who denied those doctrines,—was observed also, in ancient times, by Dionysius, Bishop of Alexandria, in Eusebius, vii. 25.

— ὃ ἦν ἀπ' ἀρχῆς] That which was from the beginning (cp. 2 Thess. ii. 13). A statement directed against the false doctrines of those who said, as the Ebionites did, that Jesus was a mere man; or, as the Cerinthians, that he was merely inhabited by Christ as a spiritual emanation for a time.

The clue to the right understanding of this proæmium, and of the other doctrinal portions of St. John's Epistles, is to be found in a reference to the errors of those false Teachers to whom St. John alludes as antichrists (ii. 18), who endeavoured to seduce his disciples (ii. 26; cp. iii. 7), and denied that Jesus Christ is come in the flesh (iv. 1—3), and that Jesus is the Christ, and who denied the Father and the Son (ii. 22). See Tertullian, c. Marcion.; Præscr. c. 15, and c. 33. S. Jerome, Prolog. in Matt. S. Athanas. c. Arian. Orat. iii. vol. i. p. 539; and compare the remarks of Bp. Bull, Jud. Eccl. Cath. cap. ii. vol. vi. pp. 33—47, ed. Oxon. 1827, and above, Introduction to this Epistle, pp. 98—103, and the preliminary note to 2 Pet. ii. 1, p. 86, and Dr. Waterland on the Trinity, ch. vi. vol. v. ed. 1823, where this subject is well treated with reference to this proæmium and other portions of this Epistle, as directed against Ebion, Cerinthus, and the Docetæ; and cp. Dr. Burton, Bampton Lectures, Lect. vi. p. 168.

— ὃ ἀκηκόαμεν] what we have heard, what we have seen with our own eyes. Having declared the eternal pre-existence of Christ, St. John next proceeds here, as in his Gospel, to assert the reality of His Humanity. See John i. 1—14.

— ὃ ἐθεασάμεθα] what we looked at: spectavimus, as a θέαμα or spectaculum; attracting and riveting our attention. See John i. 14; iv. 35; the word θεᾶσθαι is applied to the action of the Apostles gazing at our Lord ascending into heaven, Acts i. 11.

— καὶ αἱ χεῖρες ἡμῶν ἐψηλάφησαν] and our hands did handle, or feel. Observe the aorist. He refers to his own act and that of the Apostles after the Resurrection, in obedience to Christ's words, "Handle Me, Feel Me, and see; for a spirit hath not flesh and bones as ye see Me have." (Luke xxiv. 39.) Here therefore is an addition to the statement concerning the humanity of the Everlasting Word. He had a true body, and the same body before and after His Resurrection; and we felt that Body.

Here then is a reply to the false teaching of the followers of Simon Magus and the Docetæ, who said, that our Lord's human body was a visionary phantom. This notion is confuted by St. John's scholar, S. Ignatius (ad Smyrn. c. 1 and c. 2), who says that οἱ ἄπιστοι λέγουσιν αὐτὸν (i. e. Christ) τὸ δοκεῖν πεπονηέναι, αὐτοὶ τὸ δοκεῖν ὄντες, where see Bp. Pearson's note, p. 433, Jacobson, and ibid. c. 3, where S. Ignatius relates that our Lord said to St. Peter and others after His Resurrection, "λάβετε, ψηλάφησατέ με, καὶ ἴδετε, ὅτι οὐκ εἰμι δαιμόνιον ἄσώματον," καὶ εὐθὺς αὐτοῦ ἤψαντο, καὶ ἐπίστευσαν, κρατηθέντες τῇ σαρκὶ αὐτοῦ, καὶ τῷ πνεύματι, c. 4, and c. 5, and ad Trall. c. 10, and c. 11; and cp. S. Polycarp, ad Philipp. c. 7, and S. Irenæus, i. 20.

On the word ψηλάφησαν, see Gen. xxvii. 12, 21, 22, and Dean Trench, Synon. xvii., and Luke xxiv. 39, and on Heb. xii. 18.

— περὶ τοῦ Λόγου τῆς ζωῆς] concerning the Logos, or Word, of Life; that is, concerning the Word, whose essential quality is Life. For in Him is the Life, He "is the Way, the Truth, and the Life" (John i. 4; xiv. 6). He is "the Resurrection and the Life" (John xi. 25).

This appears to be a prophetic protest against those false Teachers, who separated the Life (ζωή) from the Logos, and made them to be like two Emanations or Æons, distinct from, and subordinate to, the only-begotten Son of God; as was done by some Gnostic Teachers. See Irenæus, i. 1, and cp. Waterland, vol. v. p. 183.

The preposition περὶ, concerning, defines the subject of the whole sentence, and has a connexion with ἀπαγγέλλομεν in v. 3. On this use of περὶ, cp. ii. 26; v. 9, 10. 1 Thess. i. 9.

2. καὶ ἡ ζωὴ ἐφανερώθη] and the Life was manifested. St. John uses καὶ to introduce a parenthesis here, as in the beginning of his Gospel (i. 14). The word ἐφανερώθη had been employed by St. Paul in the same sense as here, with reference to the Incarnation; see on 1 Tim. iii. 16. St. John saw the φανέρωσις, or Epiphany of the Life, when he beheld Christ raising Lazarus and others from the Dead, and when he saw Christ risen from the Grave, by His own power, according to His own Word, John ii. 19; and he heard Him say, "I am the Resurrection and the Life" (John xi. 25); "I am the Way, the Truth, and the Life" (xiv. 6); "I am He that liveth, and was dead, and behold I am alive for evermore" (Rev. i. 18).

This verse is parenthetical: cp. Winer, § 63.

c John 17. 21.
1 Cor. 1. 9.

d 2 John 12.

e John 1. 49.
& 8. 12. & 9. 5.
& 12. 35, 36.
1 Tim. 6. 16.
James 1. 17.

f Heb. 9. 14.
1 Pet. 1. 19.
Rev. 1. 5.

ζωὴν τὴν αἰώνιον, ἣτις ἦν πρὸς τὸν Πατέρα, καὶ ἐφανερώθη ἡμῖν,—^{3 c} ὃ ἐώρακαμεν καὶ ἀκηκόαμεν, ἀπαγγέλλομεν καὶ ὑμῖν, ἵνα καὶ ὑμεῖς κοινωνίαν ἔχητε μεθ' ἡμῶν· καὶ ἡ κοινωνία δὲ ἡ ἡμετέρα μετὰ τοῦ Πατρὸς, καὶ μετὰ τοῦ Υἱοῦ αὐτοῦ Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ· ^{4 d} καὶ ταῦτα γράφομεν ὑμῖν, ἵνα ἡ χαρὰ ὑμῶν ᾗ πεπληρωμένη.

^{5 e} Καὶ ἐστὶν αὕτη ἡ ἀγγελία, ἣν ἀκηκόαμεν ἀπ' αὐτοῦ καὶ ἀναγγέλλομεν ὑμῖν, ὅτι ὁ Θεὸς φῶς ἐστὶν, καὶ σκοτία ἐν αὐτῷ οὐκ ἐστὶν οὐδεμία.

⁶ Ἐὰν εἴπωμεν ὅτι κοινωνίαν ἔχομεν μετ' αὐτοῦ, καὶ ἐν τῷ σκότει περιπατοῦμεν, ψευδόμεθα, καὶ οὐ ποιοῦμεν τὴν ἀλήθειαν.

^{7 f} Ἐὰν δὲ ἐν τῷ φωτὶ περιπατοῦμεν, ὡς αὐτὸς ἐστὶν ἐν τῷ φωτὶ, κοινωνίαν ἔχομεν μετ' ἀλλήλων, καὶ τὸ αἷμα Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ τοῦ Υἱοῦ αὐτοῦ καθαρίζει ἡμᾶς ἀπὸ πάσης ἁμαρτίας.

— τὴν ζωὴν τὴν αἰώνιον] *the Life eternal*: said in opposition to those Heretics who denied the eternal pre-existence of Christ. *Dr. Waterland*, v. p. 188.

— πρὸς τὸν Πατέρα] *with the Father*. There is no exact equivalent in English to πρὸς here; its meaning is best explained by St. John's own words, ὁ Λόγος ἦν πρὸς τὸν Θεόν, i. e. united to God and ever abiding in and with Him. John i. 1, where see note.

This statement is made in opposition to those false Teachers, who separated Jesus from Christ, as *Cerinthus* did, and said that the *Logos* was the *Son* of the Only-begotten, but was *not* the Only-begotten of the Father; and that the *Logos* was a separate *Æon*, estranged from God. Cp. *Greg. Nazian. Orat. xlv. Dr. Waterland*, v. pp. 181. 188, and *Tillemont*, ii. p. 17.

3. ὃ ἐώρακαμεν] *what we have seen*—a word here repeated thrice, for greater assurance of the truth of the reality of Christ's Humanity, in opposition to the *Docetæ*; and of His distinct Personality. See *Tertullian*, c. *Praxeas*, c. 15.

— καὶ ὑμῖν] *to you also*. *Elz.* omits the *καὶ*, which is in A, B, C.

— καὶ ἡ κοινωνία] *and our communion is with the Father and with His Son Jesus Christ*: a declaration of the truth against those who divided Jesus from Christ, and who denied His Divine Sonship, and rejected the doctrine of the Incarnation of the Son of God, by virtue of which He dwells in us (John i. 14), and we have communion with Him and with the Father. Not one of these false Teachers acknowledged that the *Word* was made *Flesh*. *S. Irenæus*, iii. c. 11. See *Introduction*, p. 100.

The δὲ, *but*, in this clause, is not to be unnoticed. The *καὶ*, *and*, adds something, and the δὲ is slightly adversative. Cp. 2 Pet. i. 5. The sentence may be thus paraphrased, *And, remember, our communion is not like an ordinary human association, and much less like an heretical association, but our communion is even with the Father, and with His Son Jesus Christ*. So glorious is it!

4. καὶ ταῦτα γράφομεν] *and we write these things to you, in order that your joy may be filled up to the full*. The πλήρωμα χάριτος, or *fulness of grace* (John i. 16), flowing from the Everlasting Word, in whom dwelleth the *fulness of the Godhead* (Col. i. 19), brings with it a πλήρωμα χαρᾶς, a *fulness of joy*, very different from that fictitious πλήρωμα, *plenitude*, or *fulness*, imagined by the Gnostics, and peopled by them with visionary *Æons*, into which, according to them, the spiritual men, such as they deemed themselves, would be received hereafter. See *Irenæus*, i. 6; iii. 11, and above, note on John i. 16. Col. ii. 9.

Observe the perfect tense, ἡ πεπληρωμένη, indicating that the joy will be filled up, and will continue so to be. See note below, iii. 9.

5—7.] On the antithetical character and rhythmical structure of these sentences, see above, *Introduction*, p. 105.

5. ἡ ἀγγελία] *the message*. So A, B, G, K, and *Griesb., Scholz, Lach., Tisch.* *Elz.* has ἡ ἐπαγγελία.

— ὁ Θεὸς φῶς ἐστὶν] *God is Light, and in Him is no darkness at all*: a sentence opposed to the error of most of the Gnostics, who asserted the existence of two hostile Deities, one a God of *Light*, the other of *Darkness*. *S. Irenæus*, i. 25. 28, *Grabe. Theodoret, Hæret. fab. procem. S. Epiphani. Hæc. xxvi. Cp. Ittig, Hæres. p. 34, and note above, John i. 5, and Bp. Andrewes, iii. pp. 371—376*. Almost all the Gnostics adopted the theory of *Dualism*, derived from the Magians, and afterwards developed by the Marcionites and Manichæans.

6. ἐὰν εἴπωμεν] *if we say*—as many of the Gnostics do—that we have communion with Him, and if we walk in darkness, we lie. They alleged that, by reason of the *spiritual seed* in them,

and of their superior *spiritual knowledge*, and communion with the light, they were free to act as they chose, and were not polluted thereby, and were not guilty of sin. (*Irenæus*, i. 6. 20.) Some of them even ventured to extol the workers of the most audacious acts of darkness, such as Cain, Korah, and Judas, as persons gifted with superior freedom of thought, and intrepidity of action (see on Jude 11); and to affirm that, since the soul could not attain to perfection except by *knowledge*, it was even requisite for men to make themselves familiar with all manner of evil, in order that by an universal empiricism of evil they might arrive the sooner at their ultimate consummation. See *Irenæus* (i. 25. 4, ed. *Stieren*; p. 103, ed. *Grabe*: ii. 32, ed. *Stieren*; p. 187, *Grabe*), and cp. *Blunt* on the Heresies of the Apostolic age; *Lectures*, ch. ix. p. 179, and below on ii. 3; iii. 9.

7. αὐτός] *ipse, He Himself*,—emphatic: He Himself Who is our Head is (ἐστὶν, *exists*) in the Light; consequently we His members ought to be in the Light also.

— κοινωνίαν ἔχομεν μετ' ἀλλήλων] *we have communion with one another*. Here is a reply to those who would restrain Catholic communion to their own sect. St. John says that, "If we walk in the light we have communion one with another; and truly our communion is with the Father and with His Son Jesus Christ," v. 3. If we walk in the light, and communicate with the Father and the Son, in the Catholic Faith, "once for all delivered to the Saints" (Jude 3), and in the Christian Sacraments, we hold communion with all the Saints of every age and every nation in the Church. This is true *Catholic communion*, and those who are members of it are the *true Catholics*. Cp. *Bp. Pearson* on the Creed, Art. ix. p. 357, and the authorities quoted in *Theophilus Anglicanus*, part ii. ch. viii.

— καὶ τὸ αἷμα Ἰησοῦ] *and the blood of Jesus Christ His Son cleanseth us from all sin*. Some MSS., e. g. B, C, and Versions omit Χριστοῦ, but it is found in A, G, H, and in most Cursives, and the *Syriac* and *Vulg.*, and it imparts completeness to the doctrinal statement here, which declares that *Jesus is the Christ*—against the *Cerinthians*—and that He is the *Son of God*—against the *Ebionites*—and that He shed His blood on the cross—against the *Simonians* and *Docetæ*—and that it cleanseth from all sin—against those who deny pardon on earth to deadly sin after Baptism (see on Heb. vi. 4)—and it cleanseth us if we walk in the light—against the antinomian Gnostics, who changed the grace of God into *lasciviousness* (Jude 4), and alleged that a man might walk in *darkness*, and yet be clean from all guilt of sin.

Tertullian (de *Pudicitia*, c. 18) cites this passage from v. 5, and part of ch. ii. 1, and connects it with v. 16, expounding it in somewhat a Montanistic sense; to which he had been tempted by the vicious use made by some of God's grace in Christ.

But St. John himself affirms, that he declares the all-sufficient efficacy of Christ's cleansing blood, *not in order* that any one may sin, or be at ease when he has sinned, but *in order* that men may not sin (ii. 1); inasmuch as no less a sacrifice than the death of the Son of God was required to propitiate the offended justice of God for sin (see below on ii. 2, and iv. 10); and no less a price than His blood, to ransom us from the bondage of Satan, to which we were reduced by sin. Thus he shows the heinousness of sin in God's sight; and displays the ingratitude of those who continue in sin, which cost the Son of God such bitter sufferings.

He says that the blood of Jesus Christ cleanseth us; that is, it is ever cleansing us from all sin: that blood which was shed once for all on the cross for the sins of the World, is always being effectually applied to individuals, in the washing away of the guilt of original sin by the Sacrament of Baptism; and in the cleansing of them from actual sin, on the condition of their faith and repentance, in the administration of the Sacrament of His

^{8 g} Ἐὰν εἰπώμεν ὅτι ἁμαρτίαν οὐκ ἔχομεν, ἑαυτοὺς πλανῶμεν, καὶ ἡ ἀλήθεια ἐν ἡμῖν οὐκ ἔστιν.

^{9 h} Ἐὰν ὁμολογῶμεν τὰς ἁμαρτίας ἡμῶν, πιστός ἐστι καὶ δίκαιος ἵνα ἀφῇ ἡμῶν τὰς ἁμαρτίας, καὶ καθάριση ἡμᾶς ἀπὸ πάσης ἀδικίας.

¹⁰ Ἐὰν εἰπώμεν ὅτι οὐχ ἡμαρτήκαμεν, ψεύστην ποιούμεν αὐτὸν, καὶ ὁ λόγος αὐτοῦ οὐκ ἔστιν ἐν ἡμῖν.

II. ^{1 a} Τεκνία μου, ταῦτα γράφω ὑμῖν ἵνα μὴ ἀμάρτητέ.

Καὶ ἐὰν τις ἀμάρτη, παράκλητον ἔχομεν πρὸς τὸν Πατέρα, Ἰησοῦν Χριστὸν δίκαιον, ^{2 b} καὶ αὐτὸς ἱλασμός ἐστι περὶ τῶν ἁμαρτιῶν ἡμῶν· οὐ περὶ τῶν ἡμετέρων δὲ μόνον, ἀλλὰ καὶ περὶ ὅλου τοῦ κόσμου.

³ Καὶ ἐν τούτῳ γινώσκουμεν, ὅτι ἐγνώκαμεν αὐτὸν, ἐὰν τὰς ἐντολὰς αὐτοῦ τηρῶμεν.

g 1 Kings 8. 46.
2 Chron. 6. 36
Job 9. 2.
Prov. 20. 9.
Eccl. 7. 20.
James 3. 2.
h Ps. 32. 5.
Prov. 28. 13.

a Rom. 8. 34.
1 Tim. 2. 5.
Heb. 7. 24, 25.
& 9. 24.

b John 4. 42.
Rom. 3. 25.
2 Cor. 5. 18.
Col. 1. 20.
ch. 4. 10, 14.

Body and Blood, and in the Ministry of Reconciliation. See above on Matt. xvi. 18; xviii. 18. 2 Cor. v. 18; and below, ii. 2; iv. 10.

8. ἑαυτοὺς πλανῶμεν] *we are leading ourselves astray* from the right road in which we were,—*if we say that we have not sin*, and therefore do not need the application of Christ's cleansing blood, mentioned in v. 7.

9. πιστός ἐστι] *He is faithful* in fulfilling His promises of forgiveness through Christ. (See Luke xxiv. 47. Acts ii. 38, 39; v. 31. 1 Cor. i. 9; x. 13. 1 Thess. v. 24. Heb. x. 23; xi. 11.) And He is also *just*, in order to forgive us our sins. Observe this sense of ἵνα, not used for ὥστε, but in its natural meaning, *in order that*, see Winer, § 53, p. 409, and declaring the gracious truth, that God's attributes of *faithfulness* and *justice*, or *righteousness*, are exercised *in order* to our pardon. He in His love to us has provided a ransom for us (see iv. 10), by which His justice is fully *satisfied*, by reason of the infinite value of the price paid for our redemption, namely, the blood of His well-beloved Son, Whose death was the reconciliation of an offended God, and the satisfaction made to a just God, Who is therefore able to *justify* the sinner, without any impeachment of His own *justice*. See above on Rom. iii. 26, and below on iv. 10. And on the sense of δίκαιος, *righteous*, cp. 2 Thess. i. 5. 2 Tim. iv. 8. 1 Pet. ii. 23.

10. ὅτι οὐχ ἡμαρτήκαμεν] *that we have not sinned*, and are not sinners. On this sense of the perfect, see below, iii. 9.

— ψεύστην ποιούμεν αὐτόν] *we make Him a liar*; we constitute and treat Him as such; because He has given His Son for the purpose of tasting death for every one (Heb. ii. 10), which could not be said, *if there was any one* who was not liable to the penalty of sin, which is death. Rom. v. 12; vi. 23. On this use of ποιῶ, see on 2 Cor. v. 21, and below, v. 10.

Hence it appears that the Church of Rome, in its new dogma of the *Immaculate Conception*, ascribing *sinlessness* to the blessed Virgin Mary, is chargeable with this sin among others, that it imputes falsehood to God. Cp. notes above on Matt. xii. 48. Acts xx. 27. Gal. i. 8, 9. Rom. viii. 3.

CH. II. 1, 2. τεκνία μου] *My little children*. An address of endearment;—"diminutivum, amoris causâ." (Bengel.) It is not expressive of littleness in them, but of his tender love toward them; a love like that of a Mother for her offspring. Cp. John xiii. 33, and St. Paul's words, Gal. iv. 19. This term of endearment is used seven times in this Epistle, ii. 1. 12. 28; iii. 7. 18; iv. 4; v. 21. And this appellation τεκνία μου, "my little children," is addressed to *all* St. John's hearers and readers of every age. Cp. Bengel here, and below on ii. 12. It comes with special propriety from him who was now aged, and survived all the Apostles; who said to his fugitive scholar, τί με φεύγεις, τέκνον τὸν σεαυτοῦ πατέρα; (Clem. Alex. ap. Euseb. iii. 23,) and whose often-repeated sermon in the Church was "filioli, diligite alterutrum" (S. Jerome in Galat. vi.).

I write these things, not in order that you may presume on God's grace, and pervert it into an occasion for sin, and abuse your Christian liberty, as the heretical Teachers and their disciples do (1 Pet. ii. 16. 2 Pet. ii. 19. Jude 4); but *in order that ye may not sin*; and yet, since the flesh is weak, we have the comforting assurance that if *any man shall have sinned* (ἀμάρτη, aorist; not ἀμαρτάνη, present) *we have an advocate* with (πρὸς, see i. 2, "apud") *the Father, Jesus Christ*; being *righteous*, and prevailing by His *righteousness* (see 2 Cor. v. 21), and *He Himself* (αὐτὸς) *is propitiation for our sins*; but not for ours only, but for the whole world.

Observe the tense of the verb here; he does not say ἐὰν τις ἀμαρτάνη, "si quis peccet," *if any one sin*; but he says, ἐὰν τις ἀμάρτη, "si quis peccaverit" (Vulg.), *if any one have sinned*:

he does not give encouragement, or afford security, to the *future sinner*, but he comforts the *penitent*, who is sorry for his sin.

On the meaning of the word παράκλητος, a word only used by St. John in the New Testament, see above, John xiv. 16, and compare Heb. vii. 25.

This doctrinal statement concerning *Jesus Christ* our Advocate with the Father, is made by St. John in opposition to the tenets of the Cerinthians and others,—especially in Asia, St. John's province,—who invoked *Angels* as *Mediators* between God and Man, and thus derogated from the dignity of Christ our only Mediator and Advocate. 1 Tim. ii. 5. See above on Col. ii. 18.

Lest any should become careless by hearing that *the blood of Jesus Christ cleanseth from all sin*, the Apostle quells their presumption and inspires them with fear. *God is faithful and just to forgive you your sins*, if you *grieve* over your sins, and *confess* and *repent* of your sins. My little children, he adds, I write these things unto you, in order that ye *may not sin*. But if, through human infirmity, ye have been betrayed into some sin, ye may not therefore despair. No. Ye have an Advocate with the Father. First, then, take heed that ye *do not sin*; and if ye have fallen into sin, condemn yourselves, and fly to your Advocate, cry to Him. He will plead for you to the Judge. S. Augustine, Tract. i. on this Epistle, in the third volume of S. Augustine's Works in the Benedictine Edition.

Observe St. John's meekness. He had lain in the bosom of Jesus, and had imbibed heavenly mysteries from His mouth; but he humbleth himself. He does not set himself apart from sinners, and represent *himself* as their *advocate*, but he puts himself in the number of sinners, and says, "*we have an Advocate with the Father.*" S. Augustine.

Compare the words of St. James, iii. 2, "In many things *we all offend*," and Bp. Andrewes, v. 430.

Observe αὐτὸς here, emphatic, as used in the nominative. *He Himself*, He and He alone, is the propitiation for our sins: see above, Matt. i. 21; viii. 17; here i. 7; ii. 6.

On ἱλασμός, "a *propitiatory sacrifice* implying offence and indignation in God, Who was to be appeased" (Bengel), see Rom. iii. 25. Eph. i. 7. Heb. ii. 17, and the note below on iv. 10.

On the use of περὶ, *for*, *on account of*, see on Gal. i. 4. Rom. viii. 3; below, iv. 10.

St. John says, that Christ *Himself* is the *propitiation* for our sins; not that the sacrifice offered once for all on the cross is now repeated; but that its efficacy never ceases. See on Heb. x. 12, and the note even of a learned Roman Catholic Expositor, *Estius*, here, who does not hesitate to allow, that Christ is the sacrifice *once* offered upon the cross; and that by this sacrifice He propitiates God, inasmuch as He *applies* this sacrifice—which is sufficient to take away the sins of the whole World—to those persons to whom it pleases Him to apply it, for the pardon of their sins. "Christus est hostia, per quam, *semel* in arā crucis oblatam, Deum nobis placat, in quantum videlicet hostiam illam, pro omnium salute sufficientem, continuè quibus vult applicat, ad remissionem peccatorum." See above, i. 7.

St. John here declares the doctrine of *Universal Redemption* through Christ. "Quam latè peccatum, tam latè propitiatio" (Bengel). Sin was universal in its extent, and the sacrifice is *universal* in its application. Here therefore is a strong assertion of the doctrine of *Universal Redemption*, against Calvinistic error. Cp. above, Heb. ii. 9. 1 Tim. ii. 4, and 2 Pet. ii. 1.

3. καὶ ἐν τούτῳ γινώσκουμεν] *And by this we know that we have known Him*, if we keep His commandments. We may infer our knowledge of Him from our obedience to Him. Christian *Praxis* is the test of Christian *Gnosis*. A condemnation of the heretical presumption, and licentious depravity of the Gnostics. As is well said here by Bengel, St. John here censures those

- c ch. 1. 6. & 4. 20. ⁴ c 'Ο λέγων, Ἐγνώκα αὐτὸν, καὶ τὰς ἐντολὰς αὐτοῦ μὴ τηρῶν, ψεύστης ἐστὶ καὶ ἐν τούτῳ ἡ ἀλήθεια οὐκ ἔστιν.
- d John 13. 35. & 14. 21, 23. ch. 4. 12, 13. ⁵ d 'Ὅς δ' ἂν τηρῇ αὐτοῦ τὸν λόγον, ἀληθῶς ἐν τούτῳ ἡ ἀγάπη τοῦ Θεοῦ τετελείωται.
- e John 15. 4, 5. 1 Pet. 2. 21. ⁶ e 'Ο λέγων ἐν αὐτῷ μένειν, ὁφείλει, καθὼς ἐκεῖνος περιεπάτησε, καὶ αὐτὸς οὕτως περιπατεῖν.
- f ch. 3. 11. 2 John 5. ⁷ f Ἀγαπητοὶ, οὐκ ἐντολὴν καινὴν γράφω ὑμῖν, ἀλλ' ἐντολὴν παλαιάν, ἣν εἶχετε ἀπ' ἀρχῆς· ἡ ἐντολὴ ἡ παλαιὰ ἔστιν ὁ λόγος ὃν ἠκούσατε ἀπ' ἀρχῆς.
- g John 1. 9. & 8. 12. & 13. 34. & 15. 12. R. m. 13. 12. 1 Thess. 5. 5, 8. ⁸ g Πάλιν ἐντολὴν καινὴν γράφω ὑμῖν, ὃ ἔστιν ἀληθὲς ἐν αὐτῷ καὶ ἐν ὑμῖν, ὅτι ἡ σκοτία παράγεται, καὶ τὸ φῶς τὸ ἀληθινὸν ἤδη φαίνει.

who vaunted knowledge, and despised obedience. Cp. 1 Tim. vi. 20. 2 Pet. i. 5.

Hence the frequent occurrence of the word *γινώσκω* in this Epistle, where it is found about twenty-five times; see ii. 4, 5, 13, 14, 18; iii. 16, 19, 20, 24; iv. 2, 6, 7, 8, 13, 16; v. 2, 20; and of *οἶδα*, which occurs about twelve times: see ii. 20, 21; iii. 2, 5, 14, and passim. St. Peter repeats the word *ἐπίγνωσις* for a like reason; see 2 Pet. i. 2.

Throughout the Epistle St. John assures those who are trained in the saving verities of the Christian Faith, and who bring forth the fruits of Faith in holiness of life, that they know all things; they are the genuine Gnostics. Indeed, knowledge in the full Christian sense of the word implies love. See *Didymus* here, who observes that to "know the Lord" means in the language of Holy Scripture, "to fear, to love, to obey Him."

St. John also declares, that those persons, who vaunt knowledge, and pervert the truth of Christ, and do not keep His commandments, know nothing, but are blind, and walk in darkness. See ii. 11. 2 Pet. i. 9; and cp. *Dr. Hammond* here, p. 824.

The word *γινώσκω*, signifying experimental knowledge, is distinguished from *οἶδα*, which has a wider signification. The Gnostic heretics asserted it to be a duty, *γινώσκειν πάντα*, to have experimental knowledge of all things evil as well as good; see on i. 6: and they professed *εἰδέναι πάντα*, to have scientific knowledge of all things, however transcendental and mysterious. Compare below, ii. 29, as to the distinction between the two words, *εἰδέναι* and *γινώσκειν*.

— *ἐὰν τὰς ἐντολὰς αὐτοῦ τηρῶμεν*] if we keep His commandments. The word *τηρεῖν*, to keep, implies watchfulness, as an essential requisite for obedience.

5. ἐν τούτῳ] by this we know that we are in Him. How do we know that we are in God? The answer is, by obedience.

6. ὁ λέγων ἐν αὐτῷ μένειν] he who saith that he abideth in Him. Observe the frequent occurrence of the word *μένω*, to abide, to wait with patience and perseverance,—in this and in the Second Epistle of St. John. It is repeated twenty-six times. The duty of abiding patiently in God, by faith and obedience in evil days, is characteristically inculcated by this beloved disciple, who survived his brother Apostles, and whose life was prolonged for near forty years after the destruction of Jerusalem, even to the age of a hundred years and more, and who, in days of persecution from without, and of rebuke and blasphemy from within (see v. 18), waited patiently and stedfastly as a faithful witness to the true faith in Christ's Incarnation and Godhead, and who had received a special charge from Christ to tarry (*μένειν*) till He came, and took him to Himself. See above on John xxi. 22, 23.

— *καθὼς ἐκεῖνος περιεπάτησε*] as He walked. Observe the emphatic *ἐκεῖνος*, He, spoken with feelings of reverence and adoration. "The Name" is the Name of Christ (3 John 7), "the Way" is the Way of Christ (Acts ix. 2, and note, Acts xx. 25); so, in this Epistle, the pronoun HE, is CHRIST. See iii. 3, 5, 7, 16; iv. 17.

Mark also the use of the aorist, *περιεπάτησε*. Christ's walking was one act of undeviating obedience to God.

7. ἀγαπητοὶ, οὐκ ἐντολὴν καινὴν] Beloved (so the best MSS. and Editions. *Elz.* has *ἀδελφοί*), I write not a new commandment to you, but an old commandment, which ye had from the beginning. Do not listen to those false guides and Judaizing Teachers, who traduce the Gospel as a novelty; and who would limit the mercies of God, and the offices of Love, to their own sect or nation. The Christian Doctrine of Love of God, and of Love of all men in God, is the true doctrine from the beginning. Cp. Matt. v. 17. 2 John 5, "I beseech thee, lady, not as though I wrote a new commandment unto thee, but that which we had from the beginning, that we love one another." Cp. *Clemens Alex.* in *Adumbrat.* here, and *Didymus*, who say that Love is

the Law of God from the time of the Law and the Prophets, and even from the beginning of the world; and so *S. Cyril* in *Catenâ*, and *Cassiodor.*, *Complex.* p. 127, and *Œcumen.*, and *Theophylact*, and *Bp. Andrewes*, v. 468, where he shows that the commandment of Love delivered in the Gospel is also in the Law of Moses and of Nature: it is in fact a necessary consequence of the Attributes of God Himself. And see *Bp. Sanderson*, iii. p. 315, and *Dr. Hammond* here.

8. πάλιν] Again; said with some intimation of correction of what has been just spoken. In another respect the commandment of Love to God, and of all men in God, is a new one, *καινὴ*, not *νέα* (see on Eph. iv. 23, 24. Col. iii. 10), that is, it is made new, renewed, by Christ the second Adam, the Son of God, Who came from heaven to make all to be one new man in Himself (Eph. ii. 15), and Who has made all things new (2 Cor. v. 17. Rev. xxi. 5), and in Whom each of us is a new creature (Gal. vi. 15), and Who has given us the Holy Ghost in the Sacrament of the New Birth (John iii. 5), to renew us in the spirit of our minds (Tit. iii. 5), and Who is the Mediator of the New Covenant, and writes it by His Spirit in our hearts (Heb. viii. 8; ix. 15), and gives us a new name (Rev. ii. 17), and has made us citizens of the new Jerusalem (Rev. iii. 12; xxi. 2), and has encouraged us to look for new heavens and a new earth, wherein dwelleth righteousness (2 Pet. iii. 13), and has thus given us new obligations, new motives, and new powers, to fulfil the law of Love, and has displayed new measures of largeness in its fulfilment, by His own precepts and example.

Therefore, as St. John relates in his Gospel, our Lord Himself had said, A new commandment I give unto you, that ye love one another; as I have loved you, that ye also love one another. John xiii. 34.

— ὃ ἔστιν ἀληθὲς ἐν αὐτῷ καὶ ἐν ὑμῖν] which thing is true in Him (Christ) and in you.

What is it that is here declared to be true?

Not the commandment (*ἐντολή*); the difference of gender precludes that interpretation. Nor is it simply the substance of the commandment that is asserted to be true; but the substance of it as new. Cp. *Lücke*, 2nd edition, and *Huther* here.

This new life of love is not a deceit, as the novel knowledge of those is, who say that they know God, and yet do not keep His commandments, especially this great commandment of all—Love; and who therefore lie (see v. 4), and do not the truth (see i. 6). Cp. v. 27, where *ἀληθὲς* is put as here in contrast to the *ψεῦδος*, or lie, of the Gnostic pretenders to illumination, whose works of darkness belied their professions.

But this new life of Love to God and of Love to man in God is true, genuine, really and vitally subsisting, and visibly manifested, and effectually energizing in Christ, Who is the New Man, and in you, who are new creatures in Him; in Him Who is the Head, and in you His Members; for Love is the element which knits all together in one another and in Him, and is therefore the bond of perfectness. Col. iii. 14.

— ὅτι ἡ σκοτία παράγεται] because the darkness is passing away (see v. 17), and the true light already shineth. Therefore this old commandment which ye have from the beginning is, in a certain sense, new: it is renewed and restored in Christ and the Gospel; because the darkness of error and sin which usurped its place and clouded it over, is now passing by (*παράγεται*), being dispersed by the sunshine of the Gospel, as mists and clouds are by the sun's rays; and the light that is true shineth.

Observe the adjective *ἀληθινόν*, true, as opposed to what is counterfeit and false; see above on John xvii. 3, and below, v. 20. The Gnostics pretended to have light, to have special illumination; but their light is a false light, it is the light of "wandering stars, to whom is reserved the blackness of darkness" (Jude 13).

The darkness is the darkness of the Old Man; the light is

⁹ ^h Ὁ λέγων ἐν τῷ φωτὶ εἶναι, καὶ τὸν ἀδελφὸν αὐτοῦ μισῶν, ἐν τῇ σκοτίᾳ ἐστὶν ἕως ἄρτι. h 1 Cor. 13. 2.
2 Pet. 1. 19.
ch. 3. 14, 15.

¹⁰ ⁱ Ὁ ἀγαπῶν τὸν ἀδελφὸν αὐτοῦ ἐν τῷ φωτὶ μένει, καὶ σκάνδαλον ἐν αὐτῷ οὐκ ἔστιν. i John 12. 35.
2 Pet. 1. 10.

¹¹ ^k Ὁ δὲ μισῶν τὸν ἀδελφὸν αὐτοῦ ἐν τῇ σκοτίᾳ ἐστὶ, καὶ ἐν τῇ σκοτίᾳ περιπατεῖ, καὶ οὐκ οἶδε ποῦ ὑπάγει, ὅτι ἡ σκοτία ἐτύφλωσε τοὺς ὀφθαλμοὺς αὐτοῦ. k ch. 3. 14.

¹² ⁱ Γράφω ὑμῖν, τεκνία, ὅτι ἀφέωνται ὑμῖν αἱ ἁμαρτίαι διὰ τὸ ὄνομα αὐτοῦ. i Luke 24. 47.
Acts 4. 12.
& 13. 38.

¹³ Γράφω ὑμῖν, πατέρες, ὅτι ἐγνώκατε τὸν ἀπ' ἀρχῆς· γράφω ὑμῖν, νεανίσκοι, ὅτι νενικηκάτε τὸν πονηρόν· ἔγραψα ὑμῖν, παιδία, ὅτι ἐγνώκατε τὸν Πατέρα.

that of the New Man. As the Apostle says, "Ye were sometime Darkness, but now are ye Light in the Lord. Walk as Children of the Light." Eph. v. 8. 14. 1 Thess. v. 5, 6. *S. Augustine.*

At your Baptism ye were *enlightened* (ἐφωτίσθητε. See on Heb. vi. 4; x. 32). Ye became children of Light (see on Eph. v. 8); ye were engrafted into Christ; and if any man is in Christ, says St. Paul, *he is a new creature; the old things passed away* (παρῆλθε); *behold, all things are become new.* See on 2 Cor. v. 17, which text affords an excellent comment on St. John's meaning here.

Hence we see how natural is the transition to what follows in this place concerning the baptismal duties, consequent on the baptismal privileges, of all those who by their baptismal burial of the old man, and by their baptismal incorporation into the New Man, passed from the world of Darkness to that of Light.

10. καὶ σκάνδαλον ἐν αὐτῷ οὐκ ἔστιν] *and there is no stumbling-block in him.* A significant saying. Observe ἐν αὐτῷ, *in him.* Whosoever hateth his brother, walketh in darkness, and carrieth his own stumbling-blocks *in himself*; he hath them in *his own heart*, in his own evil passions, envy, hatred, and malice. Therefore he *must fall*: so to speak, he carries his fall along with him. As *S. Cyprian* well says (de Zelo, § 4), He who hates his brother is his own enemy. He is the enemy of his own soul. If you hate your brother he may avoid you, but you cannot fly from yourself. Wherever therefore you are, you have an adversary within you, you have an enemy always in your own bosom; but whosoever loveth his brother, abideth in the light, and there is no stumbling-block in him. He has the element of light around him, and he has no stumbling-block in him.

Compare the prophetic declarations of Ezek. xiv. 3. These men have set up their idols in their own heart, and put the stumbling-block of their iniquity before their own face; cp. v. 7. Idols and stumbling-blocks are usually external, and erected by others, but these men bring forth idols and stumbling-blocks for themselves out of their own hearts. So great is their sin and blindness.

The beauty and force of these expressions are obvious: and the preposition ἐν is to be taken in its literal sense; which is well expressed by *Bengel*: "he who hates his brother is a stumbling-block to himself." But he who loves, walks at ease and has a clear road before him."

12. γράφω ὑμῖν, τεκνία] *I write to you, my little children,* whom I have begotten in Christ (cp. note above, ii. 1). The word τεκνία, *little children*, is to be distinguished from the word παῖδια in v. 13.

The word τεκνία describes the spiritual relation in which all his hearers and readers stand to the Apostle, their spiritual father. See v. 1. Cp. 1 Cor. iv. 14, τέκνα μου ἀγαπητά. 1 Cor. iv. 17. Eph. v. 1. 1 Thess. ii. 7. 11. Philem. 10.

But the word παῖδια, *children*, describes their childhood as compared with the *maturer age* of others here mentioned, viz., young men and fathers.

This distinction may be marked in English by prefixing "my" to the translation of τεκνία.

Observe now the order of the address here;

He first says, Γράφω ὑμῖν, τεκνία. This is the general address, applicable to all. They are all dear to him as his little children.

Next this arrangement follows:

Γράφω ὑμῖν, πατέρες.

Γράφω ὑμῖν, νεανίσκοι.

Ἐγραψα ὑμῖν, παιδία.

Then the following:

Ἐγραψα ὑμῖν, πατέρες.

Ἐγραψα ὑμῖν, νεανίσκοι.

Παιδία, ἐσχάτη ὥρα ἐστὶ, v. 13.

Lastly, the series is summed up by the same address as that which began the series,—καὶ νῦν, τεκνία, μένετε ἐν αὐτῷ, v. 28. Thus the whole series takes the form of *seven*, and is closed by an

eighth, the octave of the first. Compare the note on the *Beatitudes* (Matt. v. 3); and on the symbolical meaning of the number *seven* and *eight*, see on Luke xxiv. 1, and on 2 Pet. ii. 5, and Jude 14.

— ὅτι ἀφέωνται ὑμῖν] *because your sins have been forgiven you for His Name's sake.* This is the ground of his general address to all his spiritual children; the forgiveness of their sins through Christ. That forgiveness had been imparted to them by Christ at their Baptism. See Matt. xvi. 19. Acts ii. 38; xxii. 16. Eph. v. 26, and *Bp. Pearson*, Art. ix., "those who are received into the Church by the sacrament of Baptism, receive the remission of their sins of which they were guilty before they were baptized." Cp. *Bp. Wilson* here.

Thus the beloved disciple, the Apostle and Evangelist, St. John, instructs Christian Preachers to build their addresses, in Sermons and Exhortations to their spiritual children, on the foundation of the "One Baptism for the remission of sins."

Accordingly, the Church of England says by the mouth of her Bishops, in the Order for Confirmation of her τεκνία, "Almighty and everlasting God, Who hast vouchsafed to regenerate these Thy servants, and hast given unto them forgiveness of all their sins."

13. γράφω ὑμῖν, πατέρες] *I write to you, fathers, because ye have known Him Who is from the beginning*,—the Everlasting Word, the Son of God, made flesh for us. He repeats this statement, for greater emphasis and assurance, against the delusions of the false Teachers, who in their professions of superior knowledge, pretended to reveal a temporal origin of Christ: some of them asserting that Jesus was a mere man; and others, that Christ was an emanation who resided only for a season in Jesus. They pretend to know, and they disseminate their false knowledge; and they profess to instruct you, who are wiser than they are; for ye have known Him that is from the beginning (1 John i. 1. John viii. 25), whereas they in their ignorance impute a beginning to Him Who is from Eternity.

St. John condemns those who under a pretence of knowledge separated Jesus from Christ, and divided Christ from the Only-begotten; and severed the Only-begotten from the Word. *S. Irenæus*, iii. 18, ed. Grabe.

St. John here begins with fathers; then descends to young men; and from them to children.

He declares the important truth, that the highest degree of knowledge to which Christian fathers can attain, is the knowledge of the everlasting Son. And the beginning of all knowledge in which all Christian children are to be instructed, is the knowledge of God as their Father. God the Father is the Original of all blessings which descend through God the Son, by God the Holy Ghost (see on 2 Cor. xiii. 13). His Name is first spoken in Baptism. That name begins the Creed. And every Christian soul, made God's child by adoption, cries *Abba, Father* (Gal. iv. 6), and all say with one voice, "Our Father, which art in heaven." Matt. vi. 9.

— γράφω ὑμῖν, νεανίσκοι] *I write to you, young men, because ye have overcome the Wicked one.* This saying is also repeated (see v. 14), for the same reason as the former. "Flee youthful lusts," says St. Paul to his son in the faith when young (2 Tim. ii. 22); and divine grace triumphs in young men, when by its means they, young as they are, conquer the Old Serpent (Rev. xii. 9; xx. 2).

In the seven Epistles of the Apocalypse there is a sevenfold promise to him that *overcometh*. See on Rev. ii. 1.

This address of St. John to young men comes with special force and beauty from him who was the youngest of Christ's Apostles, and the Disciple "whom Jesus loved," and who proved his own love for young men in a remarkable manner, as is recorded by *Clemens Alexandrinus*, quoted by *Eusebius*, iii. 20, and *Chrysostom*, *Parænesis ad Theodorum lapsam*, i. 11.

— ἔγραψα ὑμῖν, παιδία] *I write to you, children, because ye have known the Father*: see above, the last note but one.

m Eph. 6. 10—12.

14 ^m Ἐγραψα ὑμῖν, πατέρες, ὅτι ἐγνώκατε τὸν ἀπ' ἀρχῆς.

Ἐγραψα ὑμῖν, νεανίσκοι, ὅτι ἰσχυροὶ ἐστε, καὶ ὁ λόγος τοῦ Θεοῦ ἐν ὑμῖν μένει, καὶ νενικήκατε τὸν πονηρόν.

n Matt. 6. 24.

Rom. 12. 2.

Gal. 1. 10.

James 4. 4.

o Eccl. 5. 11.

p Ps. 90. 10.

Isa. 40. 6.

1 Cor. 7. 31.

James 1. 10.

& 4. 14.

1 Pet. 1. 24.

q Matt. 24. 5, 24.

Acts 20. 29.

2 Thess. 2. 3.

2 John 7.

15 ⁿ Μὴ ἀγαπᾶτε τὸν κόσμον, μηδὲ τὰ ἐν τῷ κόσμῳ. Ἐάν τις ἀγαπᾷ τὸν κόσμον, οὐκ ἔστιν ἡ ἀγάπη τοῦ Πατρὸς ἐν αὐτῷ.16 ^o ὅτι πᾶν τὸ ἐν τῷ κόσμῳ, ἡ ἐπιθυμία τῆς σαρκὸς καὶ ἡ ἐπιθυμία τῶν ὀφθαλμῶν καὶ ἡ ἀλαζονεία τοῦ βίου, οὐκ ἔστιν ἐκ τοῦ Πατρὸς, ἀλλὰ ἐκ τοῦ κόσμου ἐστὶ.17 ^p Καὶ ὁ κόσμος παρεγγύεται, καὶ ἡ ἐπιθυμία αὐτοῦ· ὁ δὲ ποιῶν τὸ θέλημα τοῦ Θεοῦ μένει εἰς τὸν αἰῶνα.18 ^q Παιδιά, ἐσχάτη ὥρα ἐστίν· καὶ, καθὼς ἠκούσατε ὅτι ἀντίχριστος ἔρχεται,

Elz. has γράψω, *I write*, here; but ἔγραψα, *I wrote*, is in A, B, C, G, and in many Cursive MSS., and in the Syriac, Coptic, Æthiopic, Arabic Versions, and Origen, Cyril, and other Fathers; and so Lach., Tisch.

This word ἔγραψα does not imply that any former letter had been written to them by St. John. It is the *epistolary aorist* used often by the writers of the N. T. (see 1 Cor. ix. 15. Philem. 21. 1 Pet. v. 12), when they would put themselves in the place of the recipients of their Epistles, and look back on the writing of the Epistles as a thing past.

By its use St. John condescends to his readers, and he begins with condescension to children. And it is not unworthy of remark, that having used the present tense (*I write*) seven times in this Epistle, i. 4; ii. 1. 7, 8. 12, 13 twice; he now adopts ἔγραψα (*I wrote*), and continues to use it to the end of this Epistle, where he employs it six times: see ii. 13, 14 twice, 21. 26; v. 13.

15. μηδέ] *no, nor yet*—

16. ἡ ἐπιθυμία τῆς σαρκὸς] *the lust of the flesh, and the lust of the eyes, and the vainglory of life, its self-vaunting and ostentation* (see Rom. i. 30. 2 Tim. iii. 2. James iv. 16), *are not of the Father.*

The carnal Appetite, Covetousness, and Pride, these were the things by which the Devil endeavoured to overcome Christ at the Temptation; and these are the things, in which Christ conquered Satan, and has taught us to conquer him. These also were the things, which specially characterized those *Gnostic* deceivers, the filthy dreamers, against whom the Apostle warns his disciples. See above on 2 Pet. ii. 10. 18; and below, Jude 8. 16.

18. παῖδια, ἐσχάτη ὥρα ἐστίν] *Children, it is the last time.* Do not therefore be deceived by those Teachers who now propound new doctrines. The Son of God has been revealed in the last time (see on Heb. i. 1. Acts ii. 17. 1 Pet. i. 20). The Gospel which he has preached is God's last message to men. You are not to look for any new revelation. Whatever is new, is false. They therefore who now bring to you new doctrine are not followers of Christ, but of Antichrist. See above on Gal. i. 8, 9.

We are not to infer, with some Expositors, from this expression (*the last time*), that the Apostle believed that the end of the World was close at hand. The appearance of Antichrists in considerable number (πολλοί) was an evidence—not, that the end is immediate, as those Expositors allege to be St. John's meaning—but that the present dispensation is the last. Satan now musters all his forces for a struggle; for, when that conflict is over, he will have no other opportunity of contending against Christ.

— καθὼς ἠκούσατε ὅτι ὁ ἀντίχριστος ἔρχεται] *as ye heard that Antichrist cometh* (on this use of the present tense, see Matt. ii. 4), *even now many Antichrists have arisen, whence we know that it is the last time, or season.*

The coming of Antichrist is a sign of the last time: for the coming of Antichrist is to be followed by the coming of Christ. "Venit Antichristus; et supervenit Christus," S. Cyprian, Ep. 58. But how long "the last time" will be, it is not for us to know (see Acts i. 7). Time, which may seem long to us, is but an hour to God (see 2 Pet. iii. 8). Hence St. John uses the word ὥρα, *hour*, here. It may seem long now, but when it is past, it will seem only like a watch in the night (Ps. xc. 4).

Elz. has the article ὁ before ἀντίχριστος, and so A, G, K; but it is not in R, B, C.

(1) St. John alone uses the word Antichrist, and he uses it only in his Epistles, where it occurs five times (ii. 18 twice, 22; iv. 3. 2 John 7). It is never used by St. John in the Book of Revelation.

The word Ἀντί-χριστος signifies one who opposes Christ: ἐναντῖος τῷ Χριστῷ (Theophylact); "Christi rebellis" (Tertullian, Præscr. c. 4); "contrarius Christo" (Augustine); see Lücke, p. 190. Luther, p. 105, and Dean Trench, Synonyms N. T. xxx. pp. 120—125.

Every one who sets himself against Christ, is an Antichrist: he may, or may not, set himself in the place of Christ.

Cp. Wetstein, p. 717, and Suicer on the word Ἀντί-χριστος, i. p. 390. It is not necessary that he should do so, in order to be an Antichrist. And indeed the character assigned by St. John in his Epistles to Antichrist properly so called, is one of open hostility to the Divinity and Humanity of Christ; but is not one of assumption of His attributes.

The general opinion of the Fathers was that a personal Antichrist would appear a short time before the second Coming of Christ. See Irenæus, v. 25. 30, Stieren; pp. 437—425, Grabe. S. Hippolytus, de Christo et Antichristo, pp. 1—36, ed. Lagarde. Origen c. Cels. vi. p. 499, and in Matt. xvii. S. Chrysostom in Matt. xvii. S. Hilary in Matt. xx. S. Cyril. Hieros. Cat. xi. S. Greg. Nyssen in Eunomium, Orat. xi. S. Jerome in Dan. vii. and xi., and Quæst. xi. ad Algasiam. S. Augustine in Ps. ix.; de Civ. Dei xx. c. 19; c. 20. S. Gregory, Moral. in Job xi. 9; xiv. 11; xx. 25. Homil. vii. and xxix. in Evangelia.

This opinion, commended by such authorities, is entitled to respectful attention; but it is our duty to be circumspect in the acceptance of any interpretations of unfulfilled prophecy. See on John xxi. 23, and note on 2 Pet. i. 20, whence it appears that even the inspired Prophets were not able to interpret their own prophecies. See also below, on Rev. xvii. 1.

St. John's argument is this, *It is the last time* (ὥρα), and as ye heard that Antichrist cometh (i. e. in the last time), and as ye see that many Antichrists are already come, therefore we know that this is the last time.

St. John therefore recognizes the fulfilment of the prophecy concerning the coming of Antichrist, in the appearance of many Antichrists who are already come. He therefore appears here to represent Antichrist as an incorporation of those who set themselves against Christ. Cp. Æcumen. in iv. 3. Damascen. de Orthod. fide, iv. 27. And this opinion is confirmed by what he says (v. 22), "this man is the Antichrist, he that denieth the Father and the Son." See also iv. 3, and 2 John 7.

The same is the doctrine of St. John's scholar, S. Polycarp, in the only passage of the Epistles of the Apostolic Fathers, where the word Antichrist is found. "Whosoever doth not confess that Jesus Christ is come in the flesh, is Antichrist." Polycarp, Philipp. c. 7.

This is also in accordance with St. Paul's prophecy concerning the "Lawless One," or "the Man of Sin," which represents a form of evil, displaying itself in a continuous series of persons, who are, as it were, incorporated and personified in one; see the note above on 2 Thess. ii. 3—12.

In like manner, it seems that the word Antichrist represents a succession of persons in different times, animated by a spirit of violent hostility to Christ. So Lange, Baumgarten-Crusius, and Bengel, who says, Where St. John speaks of Antichrist, or the Spirit of Antichrist (iv. 3), he signifies the enemies of the truth united together—"sub singulari numero omnes mendaces et veritatis inimicos innuit"—that is, he comprises in this term all the enemies of the Christian truths which he is inculcating.

It is however consistent with such a proposition to believe, that the Spirit of Antichristianism may develop and consummate itself eventually in some extraordinary personal antagonism to Christ. Time,—the great Interpreter of Prophecy,—will show.

(2) It has been supposed by some, that Antichrist, as described by St. John in his Epistles, is the same Power as that which is delineated by St. Paul as "the Man of Sin."

But in interpreting the prophecies of Scripture, care must be taken to adhere to the language of Scripture. The assumption of identity where it does not exist has been a fruitful source of error. St. Paul never uses the word "Antichrist;" and the attributes of Antichrist and those of the Man of Sin, as described by St. John and St. Paul respectively, do not correspond accurately to each other.

In the character of Antichrist, St. John describes an Infidel opposition to Christ, an open, impious denial of the Father and of the Son. There is nothing secret, no Mystery, there. But in

καὶ νῦν ἀντίχριστοι πολλοὶ γεγόνασιν· ὅθεν γινώσκουμεν ὅτι ἐσχάτη ὥρα ἐστίν. ^{r Ps. 41. 10.}
¹⁹ Ἐξ ἡμῶν ἐξῆλθαν, ἀλλ' οὐκ ἦσαν ἐξ ἡμῶν· εἰ γὰρ ἦσαν ἐξ ἡμῶν, μεμενή- ^{Acts 20. 30.}
 κεισαν ἂν μεθ' ἡμῶν· ἀλλ' ἵνα φανερωθῶσιν, ὅτι οὐκ εἰσὶ πάντες ἐξ ἡμῶν. ^{1 Cor. 11. 19.}
²⁰ Καὶ ὑμεῖς χρίσμα ἔχετε ἀπὸ τοῦ Ἀγίου, καὶ οἴδατε πάντα. ^{s Ps 45. 8.} ²¹ Οὐκ ἔγραψα ^{& 133. 2.}
^{Heb. 1. 9.}

the description of the Man of Sin, or the Lawless One, St. Paul represents a MYSTERY (2 Thess. ii. 7), something *secret* and *sacred*; a *spiritual* power, working miracles, and sitting in the Church of God. See above, on 2 Thess. ii. 3—12.

It is by no means impossible that the two Powers, described by the two Apostles respectively, may eventually coalesce. Time will show. But the Apostolic descriptions of them are definite and distinct; and it is the duty of an Expositor of Scripture not to "be wise above what is written" (1 Cor. iv. 6), and to compare spiritual things with spiritual (1 Cor. ii. 13), and not to confound things which are dissimilar, especially in the interpretation of Prophecy; lest the benefit be lost which might otherwise be derived from its warnings, and from the evidence it affords to the truth of the Gospel.

Further, there is reason to believe that St. Paul in his Prophecy (in the second chapter of the Second Epistle to the Thessalonians) is describing the *same* power as that which is described by St. John in *another* place, viz., in the *Book of Revelation*; where the word *Antichrist* never occurs. There is a remarkable *similarity* of features and language in *those two descriptions*: see Rev. xvii. 5, 7, compared with St. Paul's words, 2 Thess. ii. 7; and Rev. xiii. 11, 13 with 2 Thess. ii. 9; and Rev. xvii. 8, 11 with 2 Thess. ii. 3; and Rev. xiii. 4, 8 with 2 Thess. ii. 4; and see the notes below on Rev. xvii. 7, 8.

The *resemblances* between those two descriptions of St. Paul and St. John strengthen the belief that they refer to the *same power*; and they also confirm the argument derived from the *discrepancies* in the other descriptions which have just been mentioned, that the powers delineated by them are *not the same*.

19. ἐξ ἡμῶν ἐξῆλθαν] *They went out from us, but they were not of us.*

St. John here announces the fulfilment of what had been prophesied by St. Paul in his farewell address to the Ephesian Presbyters at Miletus, "that *out of their own selves* would men arise, speaking perverse things, to draw away the disciples after them" (Acts xx. 30).

The *many Antichrists* here described are the Heresiarchs of St. John's age. He says that they *went out from us*; and this was specially applicable to the father of the Gnostics, *Simon Magus*, who was baptized by St. Philip the Deacon at Samaria (see on Acts viii. 9—18), and who is called an *Antichrist* by the ancient Fathers; see *S. Cyril. Hierosol.*, Catech. vi. p. 53, and *Dr. Hammond* here, and *Tillemont*, Hist. Eccles. ii. p. 19.

The same was true of another Heresiarch of the same age, *Ebion*, to whom *Tertullian* applies St. John's words. In his Epistle, St. John calls *them Antichrists*, who deny that Jesus is come in the flesh, and that Jesus is the Son of God. The former proposition is denied by *Marcion*, the latter by *Ebion*; see *Tertullian*, Præscr. Hæret., c. 33.

St. Jerome affirms that St. John directed this censure also against another Heresiarch of the Apostolic age, *Cerinthus*, who arose *within* the Church, and opposed the Apostles (see on Acts xv. 1), and of whom there is an historical record, that he was personally known to St. John at Ephesus; and that when St. John had gone into a bath there, and heard that he was within it, he quitted it immediately, saying, "Let us depart, lest the bath fall on us, now that *Cerinthus, the enemy of the truth*, is there." See *S. Irenæus* iii. 3. *Euseb.* iii. 20. *Theodoret*, Hæc. Fab. ii. 3. *Cerinthus* made a distinction between Jesus and Christ.

See also the important testimony of *S. Irenæus* (iii. 18, Græbe), who cites this passage (vv. 18—22), and applies it to the Gnostic Teachers of that age who arose within the Church, viz., *Simon, Ebion, and Cerinthus*. Cp. *Estius* here, p. 1217. *Dr. Hammond* here, p. 828. *Bp. Bull*, Jud. Eccl. Cathol. ii. 6, p. 44. *Dr. Waterland* on the Trinity, vol. v. chap. vi. p. 187, and above, *Introduction* to this Epistle, pp. 98—101.

— μεμενήκεισαν ἔν] *they would have remained with us*. If they had been really *of us*—living and sound members of the mystical body of Christ—they would have *continued* in it. *Continuance* is an essential condition of *vitality*. He who quits the Church proves himself to be an unsound member of it; "nemo sapiens nisi fidelis; nemo Christianus, nisi qui ad finem perseveraverit." *Tertullian*, Præscr. 3.

This saying of the Apostle gives no countenance to the predestinarian notions of final *perseverance*. The terms here used, viz., *going out*, and *abiding*, are significant of *free will*. See *Didymus* here, who observes that they who went out, went out

by their *own choice*, not by any *fatal necessity*. They who *remained*, remained, not because they were forced, but because they availed themselves willingly of God's grace which enabled them to do so.

— ἀλλ' ἵνα φανερωθῶσιν] they went out—i. e., their going out was permitted—in order that they might be manifested that they are not all of us. The emphatic word is *φανερωθῶσιν*, and the use of *ἐκ*—denoting origin from, and appurtenance to—may be illustrated by 1 Cor. xii. 15, ὅτι οὐκ εἰμὶ χεὶρ, οὐκ εἰμὶ ἐκ τοῦ σώματος, and see below, iii. 12, Κἀν ἐκ τοῦ πονηροῦ ἦν. Compare the words of St. Paul (1 Cor. xi. 19), "There must also be heresies among you, *in order* that they, who are approved, may be *made manifest* among you;" where the conjunction *ἵνα*, as here, marks the *design* of God in permitting Heresies and Schisms to exist (cp. note above on 2 Cor. iv. 7), and suggests the *uses* which the faithful ought to make of heresies and schisms. Cp. *Tertullian*, Præscr. 3, where he cites these words of St. John.

A special benefit accruing from the *going out* of these Heretics, and from their overt opposition to the doctrine of Christ, and from the *public manifestation* of them to the world in their true character (as *Simon Magus* was made manifest in his opposition to St. Peter at Rome. *Euseb.* ii. 15. *S. Cyril*, Catech. c. vi. *Arnobius*, ii. p. 50. *Maxim. Taurin.*, Hom. 54, p. 231. *S. Epiphanius*, hæc. 21. *Philastrius*, c. 29. *Tillemont*, i. p. 76), was this, that the Heathen were thus disabused of their notion, that the Christian Church herself was identified with these Heretics, and was accountable for their erroneous teaching and profligate living. St. Peter says, that through them the *Way of Truth would be evil spoken of* (2 Pet. ii. 2); and *Theodoret* asserts (hæc. fab. ii. præf.) that "the Teachers of those heresies" (such as *Simon Magus* and *Cerinthus*, whom he specifies) "were called *Christians*, and that many persons imagined that *all Christians* were guilty of *their enormities*."

Some expositors suppose that οὐ πάντες here is equivalent to *none*: cp. Matt. xxiv. 22. But this appears to be an incorrect rendering, and is not authorized by the ancient Interpreters.

St. John says that their *going out* was the *proof* that they are not *all of us*: cp. 2 Thess. iii. 2. They *all* pretend to be of us, and the Heathen confound them with us. But their secession *from us*, and opposition to us, clearly *prove* that they are not *all of us*. Some false teachers there are still, who propagate heresies in the Church. They are Tares in the Field, but as long as they are *in the field*, it is not easy to distinguish them from the wheat. They are not of us, but they are *manifested* as such by going out from us. And the *going out* of those who *have left us*, and who resist us, is a *manifest* token to all men, that they and their associates are not *all of us*, as they profess to be, and as the Heathen suppose them to be; and as even some of the brethren in the Church imagine that they are, and are therefore deceived by them. By their going out they are manifested in their true light; and by their opposition to us, Truth is distinguished from Error, and Error from Truth.

20. ὑμεῖς χρίσμα ἔχετε] *ye have an unction from the Holy One*, Who is anointed with the oil of gladness above His fellows. See Heb. i. 9. Cp. *Bp. Pearson* on the Creed, Art. ii. p. 178. His unction flows down on you His members, and therefore, when a name was to be given to the disciples to distinguish them from all others, they were called *Christians*. Acts xi. 26.

Ye have a *chrism* from the *Christ*. They, the heretical teachers, are members of *Antichrist*.

Ye are anointed in Him Who has consecrated you with His unction, and made you *kings and priests* to God. Rev. i. 6.

This language of St. John is the more remarkable, because it is addressed to *παῖδια, pueruli, children*. Children have an unction from the Holy One, in their Baptism, when they were made members of Christ. "Eam unctionem spiritualem habent *pueruli*, namque cum baptismo conjunctum erat donum Spiritus Sancti" (*Bengel*), and in their *Confirmation*, called *χρίσις τελειωτική*. See *Bp. Wilson* here.

— καὶ οἴδατε πάντα] *and ye know all things*. Ye, even though children in age, are the *true* Gnostics, for ye know Christ; whereas they who pretend to know every thing are mere babes. Cp. John xiv. 26. They, the so-called Gnostics, *pretend* to knowledge and to teach you; but they know nothing, and walk in darkness, v. 11. See above, 1 John ii. 3, and below, vv. 21, 27 of this chapter, and on Jude 5.

This language is adopted by St. John's scholars, *S. Ignatius*

t ch. 4. 3.
2 John 7.

u Luke 12. 9
John 15. 23.
2 Tim. 2. 12.
ch. 4. 15.

x Jer. 31. 33, 34.
John 14. 26.
& 16. 13.
Heb. 8. 10, 11.

y Mark 8. 38.
ch. 3. 2.
z ch. 3. 7, 10.
a John 1. 12.
& 16. 3. & 17. 25.
b Isa. 56. 5.
John 1. 12.
Rom. 8. 15, 18, 29.
1 Cor. 13. 12.
& 15. 49.
Gal. 3. 26. & 4. 6.
Phil. 3. 21.
Col. 3. 4.

ὑμῖν ὅτι οὐκ οἶδατε τὴν ἀλήθειαν, ἀλλ' ὅτι οἶδατε αὐτὴν, καὶ ὅτι πᾶν ψεῦδος ἐκ τῆς ἀληθείας οὐκ ἔστι. ²² ^t Τίς ἐστὶν ὁ ψεύστης, εἰ μὴ ὁ ἀρνούμενος ὅτι Ἰησοῦς οὐκ ἔστιν ὁ Χριστός; οὗτός ἐστιν ὁ ἀντίχριστος, ὁ ἀρνούμενος τὸν Πατέρα καὶ τὸν Υἱόν. ²³ ^u Πᾶς ὁ ἀρνούμενος τὸν Υἱόν οὐδὲ τὸν Πατέρα ἔχει· ὁ ὁμολογῶν τὸν Υἱόν καὶ τὸν Πατέρα ἔχει. ²⁴ ^y Ὑμεῖς οὖν ὁ ἡκούσατε ἀπ' ἀρχῆς ἐν ὑμῖν μενέτω. Ἐὰν ἐν ὑμῖν μείνῃ ὁ ἀπ' ἀρχῆς ἡκούσατε, καὶ ὑμεῖς ἐν τῷ Υἱῷ καὶ ἐν τῷ Πατρὶ μενεῖτε. ²⁵ Καὶ αὕτη ἐστὶν ἡ ἐπαγγελία ἣν αὐτὸς ἐπηγγείλατο ἡμῖν, τὴν ζωὴν τὴν αἰώνιον. ²⁶ Ταῦτα ἔγραψα ὑμῖν περὶ τῶν πλανώντων ὑμᾶς. ²⁷ ^x Καὶ ὑμεῖς τὸ χρίσμα ὃ ἐλάβετε ἀπ' αὐτοῦ ἐν ὑμῖν μένει, καὶ οὐ χρεῖαν ἔχετε ἵνα τις διδάσκῃ ὑμᾶς· ἀλλ', ὡς τὸ αὐτὸ χρίσμα διδάσκει ὑμᾶς περὶ πάντων, καὶ ἀληθὲς ἐστὶ, καὶ οὐκ ἔστι ψεῦδος, καὶ καθὼς ἐδίδαξεν ὑμᾶς, μένετε ἐν αὐτῷ.

²⁸ ^y Καὶ νῦν, τεκνία, μένετε ἐν αὐτῷ· ἵνα ὅταν φανερωθῇ ἔχωμεν παρρησίαν, καὶ μὴ αἰσχυνοῦμεν ἀπ' αὐτοῦ ἐν τῇ παρουσίᾳ αὐτοῦ. ²⁹ ^z Ἐὰν εἰδῇτε ὅτι δίκαιός ἐστι, γινώσκετε ὅτι πᾶς ὁ ποιῶν τὴν δικαιοσύνην ἐξ αὐτοῦ γεγέννηται.

III. ¹ ^a Ἰδετε, ποταπὴν ἀγάπην δέδωκεν ἡμῖν ὁ Πατήρ, ἵνα τέκνα Θεοῦ κληθῶμεν· διὰ τοῦτο ὁ κόσμος οὐ γινώσκει ἡμᾶς, ὅτι οὐκ ἔγνω αὐτόν.

² ^b Ἀγαπητοὶ, νῦν τέκνα Θεοῦ ἐσμεν· καὶ οὕτω ἐφανερώθη τί ἐσόμεθα.

and S. Polycarp, in their Epistles. ὁ νοῦδὲν λανθάνει ὑμᾶς, Ignat. ad Eph. 14. "Nihil vos latet," Polycarp, ad Phil. 12.

²². τίς ἐστὶν ὁ ψεύστης] *who is the liar, but he that denieth that Jesus is the Christ?* Who is the liar? Who is the Antichrist, in whom the lie, of which St. John speaks, is summed up? Who is he, that has *that* character, as distinguished from, and opposed to, those who hold the Truth? On this sense of the definite article, see on John iii. 10; xviii. 10; and Winer, § 18, p. 97. Compare the words of Tertullian, maintaining from these words of St. John the doctrine of the Trinity, against Praxeas, c. 27.

Ye who are true Christians have an unction from the Holy One; ye are God's anointed ones; ye are even called *χριστοὶ*, by virtue of your union with *Christ* (see Ps. cv. 15); ye make up one body in Christ, see on Gal. iv. 19; and Rev. xii. 5. They are *ἀντί-χριστοὶ*, they make up one body of Antichrist. Cp. Bp. Pearson, Art. ii. pp. 190—196.

— οὗτός ἐστιν ὁ ἀντίχριστος] *This* (i. e. he who denieth that Jesus is the Christ) *is the antichrist, who denieth the Father and the Son.* Cerinthus and his followers denied that *Jesus* was the *Christ*, dividing *Jesus* from *Christ*; and they denied the *Son*, because they did not acknowledge that *Jesus* was personally united with the *Word*, the Eternal Son of God; nor that the *Word* was the only-begotten of the Father; and so they disowned the divine Sonship of Jesus and Christ, and thus they *denied* the Father and the Son. See S. Irenæus, iii. 18, Grabe, and Dr. Waterland, v. p. 188, and above, *Introduction*, p. 100.

Ebion denied the divinity of Jesus. Simon Magus affirmed that he himself was the Father and the Son in different manifestations, and he denied the reality of Christ's humanity. See above on 2 Pet. ii. 1, and Bp. Pearson on the Creed, Art. iii. p. 301, note. Thus they were Antichrists, denying the Father and the Son.

Ye are members of Christ, ye are one body in Him. Ye are one man in Him (see John xvii. 11. 21. 1 Cor. x. 17); they are members of Antichrist, and make one body in him: they are the Antichrist. See on v. 18.

They are called Antichrists, who fall away from the Church of Christ, and teach what is false concerning Christ, in order to be leaders in Heresy. *Didymus*.

²³. πᾶς ὁ ἀρνούμενος τὸν Υἱόν] *Every one who denieth the Son hath not even the Father*, because the essence of a Father is to have a Son; and if the filial relation of Jesus Christ to God is denied—as it is denied by these Antichristian teachers—the paternity of the Father is denied also. See above, *Introduction*, p. 100.

The words of the Apostle here manifestly refer to the dogmas of Cerinthus and Ebion. Bp. Bull, Jud. Eccl. ii. sect. 5.

— ὁ ὁμολογῶν—ἔχει] *he that acknowledgeth the Son hath the Father also.* These words are printed in *italics* in the Authorized English Version; but they are found in the text of the oldest Greek MSS., e. g. A, B, C. and in many Cursives, and in Clement, Origen, Athanasius, Cyril, in the Syriac, Vulgate (many MSS.), and Arabic Versions; and are received by Griesb., Scholz, Lach., Tisch.

²⁵. τὴν ζωὴν τὴν αἰώνιον] On the apposition, see Phil. iii. 18. 2 Cor. x. 13. Winer, § 59, p. 469, note on John viii. 25.

²⁷. οὐ χρεῖαν ἔχετε] *ye have not need that any one should teach you.* This is said against the false Teachers (v. 26). They profess to teach you some new thing, but ye *know already* all that is necessary for life eternal; *their* knowledge (*γνώσις*) is folly, and their new doctrine leads to destruction (see above, v. 20); but *your* knowledge and faith will bring you to glory.

— μένετε ἐν αὐτῷ] *ye are abiding in Him.* Elz. has *μενεῖτε*, but *μενετε* is in the best MSS. Some Expositors take *μενετε* as an imperative, but the indicative seems preferable here; he exhorts them further to *abide*, in v. 28.

²⁸. καὶ νῦν, τεκνία] *and now, my little children, abide in Him.* He returns to the general term of address, *little children* (see ii. 12), and assures all his spiritual children that they have no need of learning *any new doctrine* (see vv. 21—27), but it is their duty to abide steadfast in the old. See Jude 3, and Rev. ii. 24.

— ἵνα—μὴ αἰσχυνοῦμεν ἀπ' αὐτοῦ] *in order that we may not be driven to shame from Him*, and by Him, at His Coming; as He Himself says in the Gospel that the wicked will be. Mark viii. 38. On this force of ἀπὸ, see Winer, § 47, p. 332. Cp. the use of ἀπὸ in Ecclus. xxi. 22, and of ἐκ in Rev. xv. 2.

²⁹. ἐὰν εἰδῇτε] *if ye know that He is righteous, ye know that every one who hath been born of Him is righteous.* If ye know (εἰδῇτε), as a doctrine of the Christian faith, that *He is righteous*, ye are sure by analogical inference, from your own personal experience and cognizance (*γινώσκετε*), that whoever has been really born of Him, whosoever is His genuine offspring, *is also righteous*; and consequently ye are sure, that the Gnostic teachers and their votaries, who profess to be children of Christ, and yet live *ungodly lives*, assert what is false. See below, iii. 7—9, ὁ ποιῶν δικαιοσύνην δίκαιός ἐστι, καθὼς ἐκεῖνος δίκαιός ἐστιν, κ.τ.λ.

On the distinction between the words εἰδέναι and γινώσκειν, see above, ii. 3.

Some Expositors render γινώσκετε by *know ye*, in the imperative mood; but this seems to be inconsistent with St. John's declaration above, vv. 20, 21.

CH. III. 1. ποταπὴν ἀγάπην δέδωκεν] *what kind of love hath the Father given to us; to us, who were enemies to Him*, Rom. v. 10. Col. i. 20, 21. 1 John iv. 10. Bp. Pearson, Art. i. p. 51. His love to us was a free gift, Rom. v. 16; *in order that we should be called sons of God.* He sent His Son to take our Flesh, in order that, by faith in Him, we might become sons of God, τέκνα Θεοῦ, John i. 12. On ποταπός, see Matt. viii. 27. Luke i. 29. 2 Pet. iii. 11. Cp. Clemens R. c. 35.

— κληθῶμεν] Some MSS. (A, B, C) add καὶ ἐσμεν, but perhaps this is a gloss from v. 2.

— ὁ κόσμος οὐ γινώσκει ἡμᾶς] *the world knoweth us not.* Do not therefore be surprised and dismayed, that you are hated and persecuted by it, see v. 13, and cp. our Lord's words, John xv. 19; xvi. 33.

2. νῦν τέκνα Θεοῦ ἐσμεν] *now are we children of God*, being

Οἶδαμεν ὅτι ἐὰν φανερωθῇ, ὅμοιοι αὐτῷ ἐσόμεθα· ὅτι ὁψόμεθα αὐτὸν καθὼς ἔστι.

³ Καὶ πᾶς ὁ ἔχων τὴν ἐλπίδα ταύτην ἐπ' αὐτῷ ἀγνίζει ἑαυτὸν, καθὼς ἐκεῖνος ἀγνός ἐστι.

⁴ ^c Πᾶς ὁ ποιῶν τὴν ἁμαρτίαν καὶ τὴν ἀνομίαν ποιεῖ· καὶ ἡ ἁμαρτία ἐστὶν ἡ ^c ch. 5. 17.

ἀνομία· ⁵ ^d καὶ οἶδατε ὅτι ἐκεῖνος ἐφανερώθη, ἵνα τὰς ἁμαρτίας ἡμῶν ἄρῃ· καὶ ^d Isa. 53. 4, 9.
ἀμαρτία ἐν αὐτῷ οὐκ ἔστι. ² Cor. 5. 21.
¹ Tim. 1. 15.
¹ Pet. 2. 22, 24.

⁶ ^e Πᾶς ὁ ἐν αὐτῷ μένων οὐχ ἁμαρτάνει· πᾶς ὁ ἁμαρτάνων οὐχ ἐώρακεν αὐτὸν, ^e ch. 2. 4. & 4. 8.
οὐδὲ ἔγνωκεν αὐτόν. ³ John 11.

⁷ ^f Τεκνία, μηδεὶς πλανάτω ὑμᾶς· ὁ ποιῶν τὴν δικαιοσύνην δίκαιός ἐστι, καθὼς ^f ch. 2. 29.
ἐκεῖνος δίκαιός ἐστιν. & ver. 10.

⁸ ^g Ὁ ποιῶν τὴν ἁμαρτίαν ἐκ τοῦ Διαβόλου ἐστίν· ὅτι ἀπ' ἀρχῆς ὁ Διάβολος ^g Gen. 3. 15.
ἁμαρτάνει. John 8. 44.

Εἰς τοῦτο ἐφανερώθη ὁ Υἱὸς τοῦ Θεοῦ, ἵνα λύσῃ τὰ ἔργα τοῦ Διαβόλου.

⁹ ^h Πᾶς ὁ γεγεννημένος ἐκ τοῦ Θεοῦ ἁμαρτίαν οὐ ποιεῖ, ὅτι σπέρμα αὐτοῦ ἐν ^h 1 Pet. 1. 23.
αὐτῷ μένει, καὶ οὐ δύναται ἁμαρτάνειν, ὅτι ἐκ τοῦ Θεοῦ γεγέννηται. ch. 5. 18.

made such by the Incarnation of His Son, and by faith in Him. John i. 12.

— ἐὰν φανερωθῇ] *when He shall be manifested*; i. e. Christ. On this use of ἐκεῖνος, see ii. 6, and cp. Col. iii. 4. The nominative to φανερωθῇ is contained in αὐτῷ, and cp. v. 5, ἐκεῖνος (i. e. Christ) ἐφανερώθη, and v. 8, ἐφανερώθη ὁ υἱὸς τοῦ Θεοῦ.

— ὅμοιοι αὐτῷ ἐσόμεθα] *we shall be like Him*. See Phil. iii. 21. Col. iii. 4.

— ὁψόμεθα αὐτόν] *we shall see Him appearing*. On the sense of ὁπτομαι, see note on John xvi. 16. Rev. i. 7. We shall then see Him as *He is*; that is, as *God* as well as *Man*, in all His glorious attributes of perfect holiness and love. *We shall see His face* (see Rev. xxii. 4), and therefore we know that we shall be *like Him*; for only they who are *like Him* will have the *beatific vision of God*. Matt. v. 8. 1 Cor. xiii. 12; xv. 49. 2 Cor. iii. 18. Col. iii. 4.

Let us therefore so live, that when He shall come again, we may be able to behold Him, as He is, in all the fulness of His grace and glory. *Cassiodor*.

The editions generally have ἐστὶ; but ἔστι, *he is*, or *exists*, in His own essence, seems preferable, as more emphatic.

3. ἐπ' αὐτῷ] *upon Him*, Christ Jesus, Who is our *hope* (1 Tim. i. 1). He only is the foundation, *upon* which our hope is built. Cp. Rom. xv. 12, and Heb. vi. 18, and the words of one of St. John's disciples, "Let us cleave continually to our hope, which is Christ Jesus." *S. Polycarp*, Ep. ad Phil. 8.

— ἀγνίζει ἑαυτόν] *halloweth Himself*, as Christ is *holy*. Cp. John xvii. 19 (ἀγιάζω ἑμαυτόν), 24, and Rom. xii. 1. 1 Pet. i. 16. Every one who hath the hope of beholding Him *sanctifieth himself*, by separation from the world and by self-dedication to God; halloweth himself, as He is holy; for "without holiness no man shall see (ὄψεται) the Lord," Heb. xii. 14.

4. ἀνομίαν] *lawlessness*; for where there is no law, there is no sin. See Rom. iv. 15, and cp. *Bp. Pearson*, Art. x. pp. 670, 671. *Bp. Sanderson*, iv. 74. 94. 190.

"Every one who worketh sin, worketh also lawlessness." This assertion is directed against the Ebionites (see *Irenæus*, p. 103, Grabe) and Cerinthian Gnostics, who professed a reverence for the Law of God. St. John argues, that it is vain for them to allege that they *revere the Law*, when they *commit sin*. Therefore, let them not deceive you by this allegation, see v. 7.

5, 6. καὶ οἶδατε] *and ye know that He was manifested in order to take away our sins* (see John i. 29), *and in Him sin doth not exist*. Every one that *abideth in Him sinneth not*; does not live in sin; does not allow himself in the wilful and habitual practice of sin. See below, v. 9, and above, 1 Tim. v. 20, and *Bp. Wilson* here: *every one that sinneth hath not seen Him, nor known Him*.

St. John's meaning here is illustrated by the language of his disciple, *S. Ignatius*. "No one who professeth faith, sinneth; and no one who hath love, *hateth*. They, who profess themselves *Christians*, will be manifested by what they *do*." *S. Ignatius*, ad Ephes. 14; and this is the sense assigned to St. John's words by *S. Jerome* in *Jovinian*. ii. c. 1, and contra *Pelagianos*, i. c. 3.

Here then is another caution against the Gnostic Teachers, who professed to *believe* in Christ, and pretended to superior knowledge of divine things, and yet indulged themselves in the

commission of sin, and denied Him by their evil lives. Cp. *Titus* i. 16. 2 Tim. ii. 19; iii. 5.

7. τεκνία] *my little children*, let no one deceive you; as these Gnostic teachers endeavoured to do. Cp. ii. 26, "These things I write concerning those who are endeavouring to *deceive you*." Here is the clue to the interpretation of these verses, which cannot be understood without reference to their tenets and practices. See the next note, and the formula *μὴ πλανᾶσθε*, James i. 16.

— ὁ ποιῶν τὴν δικαιοσύνην] *he that worketh righteousness is righteous, like as He (Christ) is righteous*: a sentence directed against those deceivers, such as the followers of Simon Magus, who said that they could please God without righteousness; and that, whatever might be the case with others, who had not their spiritual *gnosis*, they themselves had *no need to work righteousness*, but that they would be saved by *grace*, whatever their works might be. "Liberos agere quæ velint; secundum enim ipsius (Simonis) *gratiam* salvari homines, sed non secundum *operas justas*." *S. Irenæus*, i. 20, Grabe. *S. Hippolytus*, Philos. p. 175. *Epiphanius*, hæc. xxi. *Theodoret*, hæc. fab. i. c. 1, who testifies that on the presumption of the indefectibility of *special grace* within themselves, they fell into all kinds of lasciviousness. Here is a warning to many in modern times, especially to the followers of Methodism.

8. ὁ ποιῶν τ. ἁμαρτίαν] *he that worketh, or maketh sin*; ποιῶν, a strong word describing habitual design and actual habit of life, not an occasional lapse on the road, but a wilful and presumptuous self-surrender to sin, as a trade or profession; like that of Ahab, "who sold himself to work wickedness." 1 Kings xxi. 25.

— εἰς τοῦτο ἐφανερώθη] *for this purpose the Son of God was manifested, that He might destroy the works of the Devil*. A third argument against these Gnostic deceivers, who are doing the work of the Devil (v. 8), and opposing the purpose of the Advent of Christ, and thus proving themselves to be *Antichrists*. This use of the word *λύειν*, applied to the destruction of what is evil, is found in the Epistle of St. John's scholar, *S. Ignatius*, to St. John's Church of Ephesus (ad Eph. i. 3), *λύεται ὁ λευκός, ἐλύετο πᾶσα μαγεία* (ibid. c. 19).

9. πᾶς ὁ γεγεννημένος ἐκ τοῦ Θεοῦ ἁμαρτίαν οὐ ποιεῖ] *Every one who hath been born of God doth not work sin*, doth not work it, as his habitual work, οὐ ποιεῖ, see v. 8; "doth not knowingly live in sin" (*Bp. Wilson*), *because His seed* (God's) *abideth in him*: a sentence directed against the deceivers who called themselves an *elect seed*, and incapable of sin. Cp. *Irenæus*, i. 12; Grabe, p. 31, and note above, i. 7; below on Jude 19.

Observe the perfect γεγεννημένος, indicating that the filial state, which commenced when he was first regenerate, *continues*; cp. *Winer*, § 40, p. 243; above, 1 Cor. xv. 4. 2 Cor. i. 15; v. 17. Col. i. 16. 1 Tim. ii. 15; v. 5; and see the next note; and below, v. 18.

— καὶ οὐ δύναται ἁμαρτάνειν] *and he cannot be a sinner, because he hath been born of God*.

The supposed difficulty in this passage is to be removed by due attention to the tenses used. Such attention would have preserved the Church from much erroneous teaching and profitless controversy.

St. John uses the perfect tense here: he does not say ἐγεννήθη, *he was born*; but γεγέννηται, *he hath been born*, and the

i ch. 4. 8.

¹⁰ ⁱ Ἐν τούτῳ φανερά ἐστι τὰ τέκνα τοῦ Θεοῦ καὶ τὰ τέκνα τοῦ Διαβόλου.

k John 13. 34.
& 15. 12.
ch. 1. 5. & 2. 7.
ver. 23.
1 Gen. 4. 8.
Heb. 11. 4.

Πᾶς ὁ μὴ ποιῶν δικαιοσύνην οὐκ ἔστιν ἐκ τοῦ Θεοῦ, καὶ ὁ μὴ ἀγαπῶν τὸν ἀδελφὸν αὐτοῦ. ¹¹ ^k ὅτι αὕτη ἐστὶν ἡ ἀγγελία ἣν ἠκούσατε ἀπ' ἀρχῆς, ἵνα ἀγαπῶμεν ἀλλήλους. ¹² ⁱ οὐ καθὼς Κάϊν ἐκ τοῦ πονηροῦ ἦν, καὶ ἔσφαξε τὸν ἀδελφὸν αὐτοῦ. Καὶ χάριν τίνος ἔσφαξεν αὐτόν; ὅτι τὰ ἔργα αὐτοῦ πονηρὰ ἦν, τὰ δὲ τοῦ ἀδελφοῦ αὐτοῦ δίκαια.

m John 15. 18, 19.
& 17. 14.
n Lev. 19. 17.
ch. 2. 9—11.
o Matt. 5. 21, 22.
Gal. 5. 21.
p John 3. 16.
& 15. 13.
Rom. 5. 8.
Eph. 5. 2, 25.
ch. 4. 9.
q Deut. 15. 7.
Luke 3. 11.
James 2. 15.
ch. 4. 20. & 5. 1.

¹³ ^m Μὴ θαυμάζετε, ἀδελφοί, εἰ μισεῖ ὑμᾶς ὁ κόσμος. ¹⁴ ⁿ Ἡμεῖς οἶδαμεν ὅτι μεταβεβήκαμεν ἐκ τοῦ θανάτου εἰς τὴν ζωὴν, ὅτι ἀγαπῶμεν τοὺς ἀδελφούς· ὁ μὴ ἀγαπῶν μένει ἐν τῷ θανάτῳ. ¹⁵ ^o Πᾶς ὁ μισῶν τὸν ἀδελφὸν αὐτοῦ ἀνθρωποκτόνος ἐστί· καὶ οἶδατε ὅτι πᾶς ἀνθρωποκτόνος οὐκ ἔχει ζωὴν αἰώνιον ἐν αὐτῷ μένουσαν. ¹⁶ ^p Ἐν τούτῳ ἐγνώκαμεν τὴν ἀγάπην, ὅτι ἐκεῖνος ὑπὲρ ἡμῶν τὴν ψυχὴν αὐτοῦ ἔθηκε· καὶ ἡμεῖς ὀφείλομεν ὑπὲρ τῶν ἀδελφῶν τὰς ψυχὰς θείναι. ¹⁷ ^q Ὃς δ' ἂν ἔχη τὸν βίον τοῦ κόσμου, καὶ θεωρῇ τὸν ἀδελφὸν αὐτοῦ χρεῖαν

life given him at his birth abides in him. See the preceding note.

Observe also he uses here the *present* infinitive, not the *aorist*. He says, οὐ δύναται ἀμαρτάνειν, i. e. he cannot be a sinner. He does not say, οὐ δύναται ἀμαρτεῖν, he cannot fall into sin, by ignorance, error, and infirmity. Such an assertion would be inconsistent with the whole tenor of Scripture, for in many things we offend all (James iii. 2), and with St. John's own doctrine in this Epistle, where he says, "If we say that we have not sin, we deceive ourselves, and the truth is not in us; but if we confess our sins, God is faithful and just in order to forgive us our sins, and to cleanse us from all unrighteousness," i. 8, 9.

On this difference of the *present* infinitive and *aorist* infinitive, see Winer, § 44, pp. 296, 297, and Stallbaum there quoted, p. 295. Thus, for example, πιστεῦσαι is to make a profession of faith, or to do an act of faith at a particular time; but πιστεῖν is to believe, to be a believer; δουλεύσαι is to do an act of service; δουλεῖν, to be a slave; οὐδεὶς οἰκέτης δύναται δυσὶ Κυρίοις δουλεῖν, no servant can be a slave to two masters: so ἀμαρτεῖν is to commit a sin, but ἀμαρτάνειν is much more than this, it is to be a sinner.

He that hath been born of God, and liveth as a son of God, cannot be a sinner. It is inconsistent with the essential conditions of his spiritual birth, by which he is dead to sin. It is contrary to the nature which he has as a child of God. This is well expressed by Didymus here, who says, "St. John does not assert that the man who has been born of God will never commit sin; but he asserts that he does not work sin—Non scriptum est non peccabit, sed non peccatum facit; non idem est peccare et peccatum facere; a child of two days old, by reason of his natural childhood, cannot sin, but a child of God cannot be a sinner." Whoever is born of God doth not allow himself in any wilful sin. Dr. Waterland, Sermon xxvii. on 1 John iv. 1.

Therefore, they who commit sin, on the plea, that being elect children of God, they must be saved, whatever they do, contravene the fundamental law of their existence, and disinherit themselves. See this plea handled by St. Paul, Rom. vi. 1—4, and cp. Waterland, Sermon xxvii.

The word δύναμαι here, as often, does not signify a physical, but a moral, impossibility. They that are evil cannot speak good things. (Matt. xii. 34.) Christ could not do any miracle at Nazareth because of their unbelief. (Mark vi. 5.) How can ye believe, who receive honour one of another? John v. 44. Cp. John vii. 7; viii. 43; xii. 39; xiv. 17. Gen. xix. 22; note on Luke xvii. 1; and on Heb. vi. 4. Compare also what St. John himself says below, v. 18, "We know that every one who hath been born of God sinneth not; but he that was born of God keepeth himself, and the Wicked One toucheth him not."

St. John's meaning here, which is of a controversial and polemical character, and must be viewed in reference to the errors which he is refuting, is well illustrated by the words of his disciple, S. Ignatius, speaking to St. John's Church, "Let no one deceive you. They who are carnal cannot do the things which are spiritual; nor can they who are spiritual do the things which are carnal. Faith cannot do the works of Unbelief, nor can Unbelief do the works of Faith. The works which ye do in the flesh are spiritual, because ye work all your works in Jesus Christ." S. Ignatius, ad Eph. 8.

The notions of the Gnostic Teachers and their Votaries are thus described by Justin Martyr (c. Tryph. p. 370), "Ye deceive yourselves and such souls as are like you, who say, that although they are sinners, and if they have knowledge of God, God will

not count their sin to be sin." Compare Epiphanius, hæc. xxi. and xxvi.

¹⁰. καὶ ὁ μὴ ἀγαπῶν] and he who loveth not his brother. This lack of love was noted by the earliest Christian writers as a distinguishing characteristic of these deceivers to whom St. John refers. Thus S. Ignatius says of them, "Observe those who are heterodox with regard to the grace of Christ, how contrary they are to the mind of God. They have no regard for love,—περὶ ἀγάπης οὐ μέλει αὐτοῖς, they do not care for the widow, or the orphan, or the hungry, or the thirsty." And he adds as a remarkable characteristic, that they abstain from the Feast of love, the holy Eucharist, because they did not believe in the reality of Christ's flesh; which was the heresy of Simon Magus and his followers. S. Ignatius ad Smyrn. 6. See also S. Irenæus, i. 20, Grabe, and cp. Dr. Waterland, viii. p. 31, ed. 1823.

¹². οὐ καθὼς Κάϊν] not as Cain was of the wicked one, and slew his brother. Let it not be so with you. Be not ye imitators of Cain, whom some of these false Teachers extolled. See on Jude 11, and Theodoret, hæret. fab. i. 15, who testifies of some heresiarchs of sub-Apostolic times, that they asserted that Cain had been freed from subjection to the higher power; and they asserted the same of Esau, Korah, and even the Sodomites, and Judas; and he says that in their practice of sins they invoked the names of Angels, to whom those sins were dedicated by them. Cp. Epiphanius, hæc. xxxviii.

¹⁴. μεταβεβήκαμεν] we have passed from death unto life; and abide in life. On this use of the perfect, see v. 9, and compare John v. 24, "He that heareth my word and believeth on Him that sent Me hath everlasting life, and hath passed from death into life." Elz. has τὸν ἀδελφὸν after ἀγαπῶν, but this is not in A, B, nor in N, and is rejected by Lach., Tisch.

¹⁶. καὶ ἡμεῖς ὀφείλομεν ὑπὲρ τῶν ἀδελφῶν τὰς ψυχὰς θείναι] and we ought to lay down our lives for the brethren: a remarkable saying on the duty of Christian Martyrdom. It was probably suggested by the seductive tenets of the false teachers (οἱ πλανῶντες, mentioned by St. John ii. 26; iii. 7), who courted popularity in times of Persecution, by alleging that provided a man had knowledge of the doctrines of Christianity as delivered by them, and adopted their theories, it was not necessary for him to expose himself to any danger in the maintenance of the faith, much less to endure martyrdom, and to lay down his life for the brethren; but that he might freely associate with the heathen in their worship, and eat things offered to idols. This was particularly the doctrine of the Simonians (see Origen c. Cels. vi. p. 282. Euseb. ii. 13), and of the Nicolaitans (see Rev. ii. 15. S. Irenæus, i. 23), and of the Cerinthians; see Philastr. hæc. c. 36.

Tertullian wrote his book called Scorpiace against these notions, and he refers to this passage in St. John's Epistle, in proof of the duty of Martyrdom, c. 12.

— θείναι] So A, B, C, and Lach., Tisch. The *aorist* is on other accounts preferable to the *present*, τιθέναι, the reading of Elz.; see on v. 9.

The words seem to be imitated in the Epistle of the Church of Vienne and Lyons in Euseb. v. 1, speaking of a Christian Martyr, εὐδοκήσας ὑπὲρ τῆς τῶν ἀδελφῶν ἀπολογίας καὶ τὴν ἑαυτοῦ θείναι ψυχὴν.

¹⁷. τὸν βίον τοῦ κόσμου] the world's good things. See Mark xii. 44. Luke xv. 12. Remark the contrast between βίος and ζωὴ, and this world and the other. He who is not ready to bestow a part of the βίος τοῦ κόσμου in love to his brethren, has no reasonable hope of the ζωὴ αἰώνιος, mentioned v. 15.

— καὶ θεωρῇ] and beholdeth—looketh quietly upon—some-

ἔχοντα, καὶ κλείσῃ τὰ σπλάγχνα αὐτοῦ ἀπ' αὐτοῦ, πῶς ἡ ἀγάπη τοῦ Θεοῦ μένει ἐν αὐτῷ ;

18 Ὑποκρίναι, μὴ ἀγαπῶμεν λόγῳ μὴδὲ τῇ γλώσσῃ, ἀλλ' ἐν ἔργῳ καὶ ἀληθείᾳ.

19 Καὶ ἐν τούτῳ γνωσόμεθα ὅτι ἐκ τῆς ἀληθείας ἐσμέν, καὶ ἔμπροσθεν αὐτοῦ πείσομεν τὰς καρδίας ἡμῶν, 20 ὅτι ἐὰν καταγινώσκῃ ἡμῶν ἡ καρδία, ὅτι μείζων ἐστὶν ὁ Θεὸς τῆς καρδίας ἡμῶν, καὶ γινώσκει πάντα. 21 Ἀγαπητοὶ, ἐὰν ἡ καρδία ἡμῶν μὴ καταγινώσκῃ ἡμῶν, παρρησίαν ἔχομεν πρὸς τὸν Θεόν. 22 καὶ ὁ ἐὰν αἰτῶμεν, λαμβάνομεν παρ' αὐτοῦ ὅτι τὰς ἐντολὰς αὐτοῦ τηροῦμεν, καὶ τὰ ἀρεστὰ ἐνώπιον αὐτοῦ ποιῶμεν.

23 Καὶ αὕτη ἐστὶν ἡ ἐντολὴ αὐτοῦ, ἵνα πιστεύσωμεν τῷ ὀνόματι τοῦ Υἱοῦ αὐτοῦ Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ, καὶ ἀγαπῶμεν ἀλλήλους, καθὼς ἔδωκεν ἐντολὴν ἡμῖν.

r Ezek. 33. 31.
1 Pet. 1. 22.
James 2. 15.
s Ps. 10. 17.
& 34. 17.
& 145. 18.
Prov. 15. 29.
Jer. 29. 12.
Matt. 7. 8.
& 21. 22.
Mark 11. 24.
Luke 11. 9.
John 9. 31.
& 14. 13. & 15. 7.
& 16. 23.
James 1. 5.
& 5. 16.
ch. 5. 14.
t Lev. 19. 18.
Matt. 22. 39.
John 6. 29.
& 13. 34. & 15. 12.
& 17. 3.
1 Thess. 4. 9.
1 Pet. 4. 8. ch. 4. 12. & 5. 11.

thing more than 'seeth.' Here is a warning for those speculative philanthropists who write and talk much about the distresses of the Poor "with word and with tongue," v. 18, and do not set themselves actively about relieving them.

— καὶ κλείσῃ τὰ σπλάγχνα αὐτοῦ ἀπ' αὐτοῦ] and shutteth his bowels of compassion from him; which he ought to open to him.

On the word σπλάγχνα, see Matt. ix. 36. Luke i. 78. 2 Cor. vi. 12. Phil. i. 8; ii. 1. Col. iii. 12. On the significancy of the preposition ἀπὸ here, cp. ii. 28. Rev. xv. 2.

This unmercifulness was a characteristic of these heretical teachers; see above, on v. 10, and cp. James ii. 15, 16.

18. τεκνία] Elz. adds μου. Not in A, B, C.

— μὴδὲ τῇ γλώσσῃ, ἀλλ' ἐν ἔργῳ] nor yet with the tongue, but in deed. So the best MSS. and Edd. Elz. omits τῇ and ἐν.

19. καὶ ἐν τούτῳ γνωσόμεθα (so A, B, C.—Elz. γινώσκομεν)] and by this sign or test we shall know that we are of the Truth, i. e. that we proceed from, and rest upon, Him Who is the very Essence of Truth, John xiv. 6: like children from a parent, or streams from a source, or branches from a tree.

— καὶ ἔμπροσθεν αὐτοῦ πείσομεν τὰς καρδίας ἡμῶν] and we shall assure our hearts before Him, in His sight, we shall satisfy them, and set them at ease, when we examine them, as in the presence of Him Who searcheth the hearts. On this use of πείθω cp. Matt. xxviii. 14. Acts xii. 20. Gal. i. 10. This assurance will be produced in us by the visible evidence of Love working in our lives. We may not reason from our hearts, and draw assurances from them as to the goodness of our lives; but the evidence which we see in our lives, when tested by the rule of God's law, may afford a comfortable assurance to our hearts; and such an assurance from our hearts will give us confidence towards God. See on Acts xxiii. 1. Rom. ii. 15.

When we find by experience that we love the brethren, not in word and in the tongue only, but in deed and truth, then we may assure our hearts before Him. If we forgive our brethren, we may be assured that God will forgive us. Cp. Bp. Andrewes, v. 437.

The word heart here is equivalent to Conscience; as is observed by Bp. Sanderson (Lectures on Conscience, Lect. i. § 3, vol. iv. p. 2). who remarks that the Hebrew language has no precise term for Conscience, but the Hebrew writers in the Old Testament generally use either לֵב (leb), heart, or רוּחַ (ruach), spirit (cp. 1 Cor. ii. 11), for Conscience. See Prov. iv. 23. Keep thy heart, i. e., watch over thy conscience: cp. Prov. xviii. 15, and Eccl. vii. 22, "thy heart knoweth;" i. e., "scit conscientia tua;" and so St. John here uses the word heart; and cp. Bp. Taylor, Rule of Conscience, chap. i. art. 8, and Bengel here.

20. ὅτι ἐὰν καταγινώσκῃ] because,—if our heart condemn us,—this is because (ὅτι) God is greater than our heart, and knoweth all things. The condemnation, which our Conscience pronounces, derives its force from the greatness of God, Who is Lord of our Conscience, and knoweth all things.

A remarkable declaration concerning the office of Conscience. The power of human Conscience proceeds from divine Omniscience. Conscience is God's oracle in the human soul. Its verdicts receive their force from His Law, which regulates Conscience; and from His judgments, of which the sentences of Conscience are but a rehearsal. Conscience speaks to man; but it hearkens to God, Who is greater than our heart, or Conscience, and knows all things; and because Conscience listens to the voice of the Omniscient, and is the obedient minister of the Almighty Lawgiver and Everlasting Judge, Who alone can save and destroy (James iv. 12); therefore it is, that (ὅτι) the judgments of Conscience have such weight.

Every man has received a Conscience from God, which acts

as a Deputy and Vicegerent of the Almighty, and as a Preacher of His eternal Law, and as a Herald of His Judgments, and dictates what man ought to do, and calls him to a severe scrutiny for whatever he has done, and as a just Judge dispenses rewards and punishments, censures or approvals, according to the merits of men's actions, and rehearses to them the future verdicts of the Great Day of Assize.

The state of Conscience is this, that it is placed in the middle between God and man; as a servant to obey God, Who is greater than the heart, that is, Who is Lord supreme over the Conscience; and also as His minister, to issue His commands to man, and to take cognizance of his acts (see Bp. Sanderson, Lect. ii. vol. iv. pp. 22, 23).

Conscience is like the Centurion in the Gospel, a man under authority, and also having soldiers under him. (Matt. viii. 9.) So Conscience is under the authority of God, but it has man's actions under itself. Hence its Power.

These considerations may solve the difficulties which have been supposed by many to exist in this passage, and which some have endeavoured to remove by cancelling the second ὅτι, or by resolving it into εἰ, or by reading εἰ for it, or by supposing that the second ὅτι is redundant. See the notes of Wetstein, Bengel, De Wette, Lücke, Düsterdieck, and Huther, Winer, § 64, p. 513, note. Before the second ὅτι there is only a common ellipsis, instances of which may be seen in Mark iii. 20. Luke i. 25; xi. 18. John ii. 18. Cp. Winer, § 53, p. 395.

The word κατα-γινώσκειν is a middle term between κατηγορεῖν, to accuse, and κατακρίνειν, to pronounce a formal judicial condemnation; and is to be explained from γινώσκειν, to know and take cognizance of, and from its opposite συγ-γινώσκειν, to pardon, and it signifies to know or to determine by an act of the judgment (γνώμη) against. Cp. Gal. ii. 11, and Deut. xxv. 1, where it is opposed to δικαιῶν, to pronounce just, to acquit. Eccl. xiv. 2, "Blessed is the man whom his soul doth not condemn,—οὐ κατέγνω.".

There is a remarkable paronomasia in the words here used, γνωσόμεθα,—ἐὰν καταγινώσκῃ ἡμῶν ἡ καρδία—γινώσκει Θεὸς πάντα, which assists us to the true sense, as above declared.

21. ἐὰν ἡ καρδία] if our heart, or Conscience, doth not condemn us, we have confidence toward God: because our Conscience is His Vicegerent within us, and pronounces judgment according to His laws; and therefore its approval is a pledge to us of His favour. See the preceding note.

The word παρρησία, freedom of speech, expresses here the assurance which a suppliant, who has a powerful advocate and a good cause, has, that his request will be granted. See ii. 28; iv. 17; v. 14. Heb. iv. 16.

On the use of πρὸς here, cp. Rom. v. 1, εἰρήνην ἔχομεν πρὸς τὸν Θεόν.

23. αὕτη ἡ ἐντολή—ἵνα πιστεύσωμεν] This is the commandment, that we should believe the Name of His Son Jesus Christ. See our Lord's words, recorded by St. John in his Gospel, vi. 29.

The Heretics to whom St. John refers, either separated Jesus from Christ, as the Cerinthians did, or denied that Jesus is the Son of God, as the Ebionites, Cerinthians, and Simonians, and Docetæ did. Cp. Waterland, v. p. 189, and Bp. Bull, Jud. Eccl. ii. 9, and note above on 2 Pet. ii. 1, and Introduction to this Epistle, pp. 99—103.

In opposition to these erroneous and strange doctrines, St. John declares that this is God's commandment, that we should believe the Name (observe the dative case, cp. iv. 1), that is, give credence to, and place our trust in, the name of Jesus Christ His Son; i. e. in the man Jesus, acknowledged to be the Christ and the Son of God. See iv. 15, and v. 1.

u John 14. 23.
& 15. 10.
Rom. 8. 9.
ch. 4. 13.

a Jer. 29. 8.
Matt. 7. 15, 16.
& 24. 4, 5, 24.
1 Cor. 14. 29.
Eph. 5. 6.
Col. 2. 18.

1 Thess. 5. 21. 2 Pet. 2. 1. 2 John 7. Rev. 2. 2. b 1 Cor. 12. 3. ch. 2. 22. & 5. 1. 2 John 7.

24 ^u Καὶ ὁ τηρῶν τὰς ἐντολὰς αὐτοῦ ἐν αὐτῷ μένει, καὶ αὐτὸς ἐν αὐτῷ καὶ ἐν τούτῳ γινώσκουμεν ὅτι μένει ἐν ἡμῖν, ἐκ τοῦ Πνεύματος οὗ ἡμῖν ἔδωκεν.

IV. ^{1 a} Ἀγαπητοὶ, μὴ παντὶ πνεύματι πιστεύετε, ἀλλὰ δοκιμάζετε τὰ πνεύματα, εἰ ἐκ τοῦ Θεοῦ ἐστὶν ὅτι πολλοὶ ψευδοπροφήται ἐξεληλύθασιν εἰς τὸν κόσμον. ^{2 b} Ἐν τούτῳ γινώσκετε τὸ πνεῦμα τοῦ Θεοῦ· πᾶν πνεῦμα ὃ ὁμολογεῖ

CH. IV. 1. μὴ παντὶ πνεύματι πιστεύετε] *believe not ye every spirit, but prove ye the spirits whether they are of God; for many false Prophets, or false Teachers (see Matt. vii. 15), have gone forth into the world; they have gone forth, not being sent as true Prophets are (see on John x. 8). He refers especially to the followers of Simon Magus, Ebion, Cerinthus, and the Nicolaitans. See Introduction, p. 98, and on 2 Pet. ii. 1, 2, and above, i. 1; ii. 18. 22; below, iv. 3, and 2 John 7.*

St. John had just said, This is the commandment of God, that we should believe the Name of His Son Jesus Christ; he now warns them against believing those spirits which would seduce them from this belief.

—δοκιμάζετε] *try ye the spirits.* Test them and prove them (1 Thess. v. 21), as metals or coins are tried. False Prophets, false Christs, are to be expected to arise, and to work miracles, so as to deceive many (Matt. xxiv. 24. 2 Thess. ii. 9). The criteria, βάσανοι, or touchstones, by which they are to be tested, are these. Ye shall know them by their fruits—not only the fruits of their lives, but by the fruits of their doctrine. See above on Matt. vii. 16. Though they may have the gift of tongues and prophecy, and miracles, yet if they have not Charity, which proves itself by Unity, they are not to be received. (See 1 Cor. xiii. 1—5.) Even if they work miracles, and deliver prophecies, and the prophecies come to pass, yet if they would lead any of you astray, to worship idols or any being but God (Deut. xiii. 1—5), and even if they are Angels from heaven, but bring not this doctrine (2 John 10) which the Apostles brought, but add any thing to it, or take any thing from it, they are to be accursed, Gal. i. 8.

See the excellent Sermon of Dr. Waterland on this text: Serm. xxvii.

2, 3. ἐν τούτῳ] *by this*—that I am about to specify—*ye know the Spirit of God: every spirit that confesseth Jesus Christ having come in the flesh, is of God: and every spirit that doth not confess Jesus Christ, is not of God.* Observe μὴ here, bringing out the non-confession as the essence of alienation from God. And this is the spirit of Antichrist, of which ye have heard that it cometh; yea, now it is in the world already.

In v. 3 Elz. omits τὸν before Ἰησοῦν, but τὸν is in A, B, G. Some MSS., G, K, and several Cursives, add Χριστὸν after Ἰησοῦν, and so Elz.; but it is not in A, B, nor in Vulg., Coptic, Syriac, or Armenian Version, nor in Origen, Irenæus, and Cyril, who quote this passage; and is not received by Griesb., Scholz, Lach., Tisch.

Some MSS., A, B, and a few Cursives and Versions, omit ἐν σαρκὶ ἐληλυθότα, but these words are in G, K, and in most Cursives, and the Syriac Version, and they appear to be recognized by Polycarp, Origen, Cyprian, Æcumen., Theophylact.

Σ has ὃ μὴ ὁμολογεῖ Ἰησοῦν Κύριον ἐν σαρκὶ ἐληλυθότα.

Some ancient and modern interpreters render γινώσκετε as if it were the imperative mood—*know ye*; and this translation has something to commend it. Cp. πιστεύετε, δοκιμάζετε, v. 1; but cp. also ii. 20. 29.

The words τούτῳ ἐστὶ τὸ τοῦ ἀντιχρίστου are generally rendered,—this is the spirit of Antichrist. It is however to be observed, that πνεῦμα, spirit, is not in the text here; and the expression seems to be framed purposely to be as large and general as possible; this is the essence, character, work—of Antichrist. On this generalizing use of the article, cp. James iv. 14.

A question arises here, If “every spirit that confesseth Jesus Christ having come in the flesh,” is of God,—may not some Teachers who preach erroneous and strange doctrines, but yet acknowledge that Jesus Christ is come in the flesh, be said to be of God? To put the question in the words of S. Augustine, “Arius, and Eunomius, and Macedonius, and Nestorius, own that Jesus Christ came in the flesh: are not they therefore of God?”

To that question S. Augustine himself replies,—That those Heresiarchs did not in fact confess Christ to have come in the flesh, because, whatever they might do by words, they in their works denied Him. (Titus i. 16.) “They have not charity,” he says, “because they have not unity; and therefore all their other gifts are of no avail.” (1 Cor. xiii. 1—3.)

Similar to this is the exposition of Didymus here: “Sapiendo et agendo, quæ Christus in humanitate docuit et egit, hic Spiritum habet à Deo.”

Another reply is made to the question by others, who say that St. John speaks only with reference to the heresies of his own age. See Estius and Bengel here.

But the true answer appears to be this: St. John does not say that every spirit is of God, which acknowledges that Jesus Christ is come in the flesh; but he says, that every spirit is of God which confesses Jesus Christ having come, and being come, in the flesh: that is, which confesses Jesus to be the Christ, and to be no ideal phantom, but a real Person,—which, in a word, confesses Jesus Christ as Him that should come, i. e. as the Messiah (see above on John x. 8, “all who came,” i. e. who professed to be the Messiah, the ὁ ἐρχόμενος, before Me, “were thieves and robbers”), and as having come in the flesh; and having done and suffered in the flesh, what the Christ was to do and suffer; and especially as having joined all men together in one by His Incarnation, and as having thus bound all men in love, to each other, in God; and as having become capable of suffering, by taking their flesh, and as having made an Atonement for the sins of all whose flesh He came to take, being “God manifested in the flesh.” Every spirit which makes this good confession, and lives in the spirit of this creed, is born of God. Jesus Christ, confessed to be God and Man, is the Rock on which the Church is built. See Matt. xvi. 18.

The participle (ἐληλυθότα) is used in the same way as in the statement of St. Paul, “we preach Jesus Christ and Him crucified” (ἐσταυρωμένον, 1 Cor. ii. 2).

The doctrine of the passage is thus enforced by one of St. John's disciples, Bishop of Smyrna and Martyr. “Let us serve Him with fear and all reverence, as He Himself commanded, and His Apostles who preached to us; let us do this, being zealous for that which is good, and shunning the stumbling-blocks of false brethren, and of those who wear the Name of the Lord in hypocrisy, and seduce (ἀποπλανῶσι) foolish men from Him. For every one who does not confess that Jesus Christ is come in the Flesh, is Antichrist; and whosoever does not confess the testimony of the cross, is of the devil (cp. above, iii. 8—10).” S. Polycarp, Ep. ad Phil. 6 and 7.

One of S. Polycarp's scholars, S. Irenæus, writes in similar terms against those who said that Jesus was a mere man, and that Christ was not the Everlasting Word of God, but only an Æon, who came forth from their ideal pleroma, and dwelt only for a season in Jesus, and only suffered in semblance; in opposition to the true doctrine of the Catholic Church of Christ, that the two Natures of God and Man are indissolubly united in the One Person of Jesus Christ, the Eternal Word, the Only-begotten of the Father, Who was made Man for us, and by dying for us in our stead, is the Saviour of the world.

Therefore, adds Irenæus, all they are without the pale of the Evangelical Dispensation, who, under a pretended show of knowledge, say that Jesus is one, and Christ is another, and that the Only-begotten is another, and that the Word is different from these; and that the Saviour is different also, whom some of them assert to be an Emanation; as those disciples of error feign, who appear outwardly like sheep—for in words they bear a likeness to us—but inwardly they are wolves: whom St. John, the disciple of the Lord, commands us in his Epistle to shun, where he says that many deceivers are gone forth into the world, who do not confess Jesus Christ as coming (ἐρχόμενον) in the flesh (2 John 7, 8). And again, in his Epistle, John says (iv. 1—3), By this know ye (cognoscite) the Spirit of God. Every spirit which confesseth that Jesus Christ is come in the flesh is of God: and every spirit which separates Jesus (solvit Jesum, i. e. divides Jesus from Christ) is not of God, but of Antichrist. And again, in his Epistle, John says (v. 1), Every one that believeth that Jesus is the Christ is born of God. S. Irenæus (iii. 18, ed. Grabe; iii. 16, ed. Stieren).

S. Irenæus—whose words here are preserved only in the old Latin Versions—appears to be quoting from memory and paraphrastically, for he cites these passages as from the same Epistle of St. John, and he inserts the words, “solvit Jesum;” and this paraphrase may have led to the opinion expressed by some ancient writers (see Socrat. Eccles. hist. vii. 32, and others in Tisch., p. 222), that the words λέγει Ἰησοῦν were once in the text here, and they are found in the Vulgate, but in no other ancient Version, or in any extant Manuscript. Cp. Tertullian, c. Marcion. v. 16,

Ἰησοῦν Χριστὸν ἐν σαρκὶ ἐληλυθότα, ἐκ τοῦ Θεοῦ ἐστι· ^{3 c} καὶ πᾶν πνεῦμα ὃ ^{c 2 Thess. 2. 7. ch. 2. 18, 22.} μὴ ὁμολογεῖ τὸν Ἰησοῦν ἐν σαρκὶ ἐληλυθότα, ἐκ τοῦ Θεοῦ οὐκ ἔστι· καὶ τοῦτό ἐστι τὸ τοῦ ἀντιχρίστου, ὃ ἀκηκόατε ὅτι ἔρχεται, καὶ νῦν ἐν τῷ κόσμῳ ἐστὶν ἡδη.

⁴ Ὑμεῖς ἐκ τοῦ Θεοῦ ἐστε, τέκνία, καὶ νενικήκατε αὐτοὺς, ὅτι μείζων ἐστὶν ὁ ἐν ὑμῖν ἢ ὁ ἐν τῷ κόσμῳ. ^{5 d} Αὐτοὶ ἐκ τοῦ κόσμου εἰσὶ· διὰ τοῦτο ἐκ τοῦ ^{d John 3. 31. & 15. 19.} κόσμου λαλοῦσι, καὶ ὁ κόσμος αὐτῶν ἀκούει· ^{6 e} ἡμεῖς ἐκ τοῦ Θεοῦ ἐσμεν· ὁ ^{e John 8. 47. & 10. 27.} γινώσκων τὸν Θεὸν ἀκούει ἡμῶν· ὃς οὐκ ἔστιν ἐκ τοῦ Θεοῦ οὐκ ἀκούει ἡμῶν. Ἐκ τούτου γινώσκουμεν τὸ πνεῦμα τῆς ἀληθείας καὶ τὸ πνεῦμα τῆς πλάνης.

⁷ Ἀγαπητοὶ, ἀγαπῶμεν ἀλλήλους· ὅτι ἡ ἀγάπη ἐκ τοῦ Θεοῦ ἐστι, καὶ πᾶς ὁ ἀγαπῶν ἐκ τοῦ Θεοῦ γεγέννηται, καὶ γινώσκει τὸν Θεόν· ^{8 f} ὁ μὴ ἀγαπῶν οὐκ ^{f ch. 2. 4. & 3. 6. ver. 16.} ἔγνω τὸν Θεόν, ὅτι ὁ Θεὸς ἀγάπη ἐστίν.

^{9 g} Ἐν τούτῳ ἐφανερώθη ἡ ἀγάπη τοῦ Θεοῦ ἐν ἡμῖν, ὅτι τὸν Υἱὸν αὐτοῦ τὸν ^{g John 3. 16. Rom. 5. 8. & 8. 32. ch. 3. 16. h John 15. 16. Rom. 3. 24, 25. & 5. 8, 10. 2 Cor. 5. 19. Col. 1. 19. ch. 2. 2.} μονογενῆ ἀπέσταλκεν ὁ Θεὸς εἰς τὸν κόσμον, ἵνα ζήσωμεν δι' αὐτοῦ. ^{10 h} Ἐν τούτῳ ἔστιν ἡ ἀγάπη, οὐχ ὅτι ἡμεῖς ἠγαπήσαμεν τὸν Θεόν, ἀλλ' ὅτι αὐτὸς ἠγάπησεν ἡμᾶς, καὶ ἀπέστειλε τὸν Υἱὸν αὐτοῦ ἱλασμόν περὶ τῶν ἁμαρτιῶν ἡμῶν.

"Antichristi spiritus negantes Christum in carne venisse, et solventes Jesum." The heresy which denied Christ to have come in the flesh was that of the disciples of *Simon Magus* and of the *Docetæ*; the heresy which separated Jesus from Christ was that of *Cerinthus*. See also *Tertullian*, de carne Christi, c. 24, where he cites this passage (vv. 1—3) against those who in his own age denied the verity of Christ's flesh: and c. *Marcion*. iii. 8, and *Bp. Pearson* on the Creed, Art. iii. p. 301, note. *Bp. Bull*, Jud. Eccl. Cath. ii. 7; and above, *Introduction* to this Epistle, p. 98.

8. ἀγάπη] *Love*. The article ἡ is not prefixed, nor in v. 16.

9. τὸν Υἱὸν αὐτοῦ τὸν μονογενῆ ἀπ. ὁ Θεός.] *God hath sent His Son the Only-begotten*—a statement of the true Faith against the heretical notion that "Jesus was not personally united with the Word, the Eternal Son of God, and that the Word was not the Only-begotten of the Father, but only a Son of the Only-begotten." See *Bp. Pearson*, Art. ii. p. 270. *Buddæi Eccl. Apostol.* p. 455. *Dr. Waterland*, v. p. 189.

Observe the *perfect* ἀπέσταλκε here, and in v. 14, indicating that the effect of that mission is permanent and operative. The *aorist* in v. 10, ἀπέστειλεν ἱλασμόν, denotes that the propitiation was effected by *one act*, i. e. by the sacrifice on the cross. Christ, Who was once offered to bear the sins of many, dieth no more. *Heb.* ix. 28. *Rom.* vi. 9.

10. ἐν τούτῳ ἔστιν ἡ ἀγάπη—ἱλασμόν περὶ τῶν ἁμαρτιῶν ἡμῶν] *Herein consists Love, not that we loved God, but that He loved us, and sent His own Son a propitiation for our sins.* A statement of the doctrine of the *Atonement*; and a statement the more remarkable, because it anticipates the objections that have been made against it in later times.

These objections have taken the following form. *God*, it is said, is *Love* (1 John iv. 8). He loves us, and He loves His only-begotten Son. We are sinners; and as long as we are sinners, and without pardon from God, we have no hope of heaven. As sinners we owe an *infinite debt* to God, which we can never pay. But God is *infinite in love*; He willeth not that any should perish (2 Pet. iii. 9), but that all should be saved (1 Tim. ii. 4). He can forgive us the debt. He can do this freely. To suppose that He cannot do so, is to set limits to His Omnipotence. To imagine that He will not do so, is to disparage His Love. To allege, that He will require an *equivalent* for the debt, is to represent the God of mercy as a rigorous exactor. And to believe that He required *such a price* for our pardon as the *blood of His own beloved Son*, and that He exposed Him, Who is perfectly innocent, to the death of the Cross for our sakes, at the hands of wicked men, is to charge God with cruelty, injustice, and weakness; and to suppose Him to be angry with us, at the same time that we say that "He loved us," and gave His only Son to die for us (1 John iii. 16; iv. 10), is, it is alleged, to involve ourselves in inconsistency, and to misrepresent God, as if He were affected by human passions. And, lastly, to say that Christ shed His blood as a ransom to deliver us from the captivity of *Satan*, is, it is argued, to make the Son of God to be tributary to the Evil One.

Such are the objections, made by Socinians and others, to the doctrine of the *Atonement*.

But these objections rest on fallacious grounds.

They proceed on the supposition, that as sinners we are only debtors to God. But in His relation to us, God is not only a *Creditor*, but He is our *Lawgiver* and *Judge*, our *King* and *Lord*; and He is perfectly just and holy.

Besides, as St. John teaches (iii. 4), the essence of *sin* is, that it is the violation of God's *Law*. And all are sinners (i. 10). And God represents Himself in Scripture as a Moral Governor, infinite in justice; and when we contemplate Him as He is represented by Himself in His own Word; and when we regard *sin* as it is in His sight, and as it is described in the Holy Scriptures, we must conclude that He is grievously offended by sin; and He has declared in His Word that He is angry with it, and will punish it. The *wrath* of God is revealed against all ungodliness (*Rom.* i. 18). The wages of sin is death (*Rom.* vi. 23).

But this proposition is not at variance—as has been alleged—with St. John's declaration, that God loved us, and sent His own Son, the only-begotten, that we might live through Him; and that herein consists Love, not that we loved God, but that He loved us, and sent His Son a propitiation for our sins.

That which God loved in us was not our sin, but our nature. It was that nature which God Himself had made in His own likeness, and which we had marred, and which He desired to repair. And because He hates sin, and knows its consequences, even Death Eternal; and because He loved our Nature, which was exposed by it to everlasting perdition; and because, being infinitely just, He must punish sin, which He, Who is infinitely pure, must hate, and which He, Who is infinitely true, has declared that He will punish; and because the sins of the whole World are so heinous; and because they demand a satisfaction infinite in value; and because nothing, that is not divine, is infinite in value; and because without shedding of blood there is no remission (*Heb.* ix. 22); therefore, in His immense love for our Nature, which He had made, and which we had marred by sin, He sent His own Son, God of God, to take that Nature, the Nature of us all, in order to be the substitute of all, and Saviour of all, and to become our *Emmanuel*, God with us (*Matt.* i. 23), God manifest in the flesh (1 Tim. iii. 16), partaking of our flesh and blood, and to be the Lord our Righteousness (*Jer.* xxiii. 6; xxxiii. 16), and to suffer death, the wages of sin, in our Nature, as our Proxy and Representative, and to appease God's wrath by an adequate propitiation, and to take away our guilt, and to redeem us from bondage and death by the priceless ransom of His own blood, and to deliver us by His death from him who had the power of it, even the Devil, and to reconcile us to God, and to restore us to His favour, and to effect our *Atonement* with Him, and to purchase for us the heavenly inheritance of everlasting life. See *Heb.* ii. 14—17.

As *Origen* says (in *Matt.* xvi.), "*Homo quidem non potest dare aliquam commutationem pro animâ suâ* (*Ps.* xlix. 9. *Matt.* xvi. 26); *Deus autem pro animabus omnium dedit commutationem, pretiosum sanguinem Filii sui;*" and he cites 1 Pet. i. 18. *Origen* also says (*homil.* 4, in *Num.*), "*Si non fuisset peccatum,*

i Matt. 18. 33.
John 15. 12, 13.
k Exod. 33. 20.
Deut. 4. 12.
John 1. 18.
1 Tim. 1. 17.
ch. 6. 16. & 2. 5. & 3. 24.

¹¹ i' Ἀγαπητοὶ, εἰ οὕτως ὁ Θεὸς ἠγάπησεν ἡμᾶς, καὶ ἡμεῖς ὀφείλομεν ἀλλήλους ἀγαπᾶν. ¹² k Θεὸν οὐδεὶς πώποτε τεθέαται· ἐὰν ἀγαπῶμεν ἀλλήλους, ὁ Θεὸς ἐν ἡμῖν μένει, καὶ ἡ ἀγάπη αὐτοῦ τετελειωμένη ἐστὶν ἐν ἡμῖν. ¹³ i' Ἐν τούτῳ

1 John 14. 20. & 17. 21. ch. 3. 24.

non necesse fuerat Filium Dei Agnum fieri; nec opus fuerat Eum in carne positum jugulari; sed mansisset hoc, quod in principio erat, Deus Verbum. Verum, quoniam introiit peccatum in hunc mundum, peccati autem necessitas propitiationem requirit, et propitiatio non fit nisi per hostiam, necessarium fuit provideri hostiam pro peccato."

If it be said, that according to this statement the *Just suffered for the unjust*, and that the beloved Son of God was delivered to death for the offences of those who did not love Him, but were at enmity with Him, this is perfectly true; it is the assertion of God Himself in Holy Scripture, *Christ hath suffered for us, just for unjust, to bring us to God* (1 Pet. iii. 18). *God made Him to be sin for us, who knew no sin, that we might be the righteousness of God in Him* (2 Cor. v. 21). *Ye were redeemed with the precious blood of Christ, as of a lamb without blemish and without spot* (1 Pet. i. 19).

The Just suffered for the unjust. Yes, suffered for a time. But this is not at variance with daily experience. Parents suffer for children; brethren for brethren; friends for friends; subjects for sovereigns; and sovereigns for subjects. And if we are to reject the doctrine of the Atonement on the plea that *vicarious sufferings* are not reconcilable with Justice, we cannot stop short of Deism, nor even of Atheism. Cp. *Bp. Butler's Analogy*, Part ii. ch. v.

If any victim was to take away sin, that victim must be innocent. In order to take away infinite guilt, it must be infinitely innocent. The price paid for the satisfaction of Infinite Justice must be infinite in value. In order to suffer for men, the victim must be human; and in order to satisfy God, it must be divine.

Be it remembered also that the Son of God suffered *willingly*. He gave Himself a ransom for all. (1 Tim. ii. 6.) The good Shepherd giveth His life for the Sheep. (John x. 11.) Cp. Matt. xx. 28. Gal. i. 4; ii. 20. Eph. v. 2. Titus ii. 14. Heb. ix. 14.

They also for whom He gave Himself are His own flesh and blood. He is their Head, they His members. They are one with Him.

Still further. By his meritorious sufferings in that human nature, which He has taken, and joined for ever in His own Person to the Nature of God, He has delivered that Nature from sin and death, and has exalted it to the right Hand of God. Therefore He suffered *joyfully*. To do evil is indeed evil; and to suffer evil in *eternity*, is dreadful; but to suffer evil in *time*, in order that others by our means may be happy in eternity, is not evil, but glorious. Earthly conquerors die with joy in the hour of Victory. Much more Christ. He knew, that suffering was His path to glory. He knew, that *because He was obedient to death, even to the death of the cross, therefore God would highly exalt Him, and give Him a Name above every name*. (Phil. ii. 8, 9.) He saw of the travail of His soul and *was satisfied*. (Isa. liii. 11.) Doubtless, in His human flesh He shrank from the cup of Agony, and from the anguish of the Cross. But even in the glorious hour of His Transfiguration He had talked with Moses and Elias of His *Death*. (Luke ix. 31.) His divine eye pierced through the cloud of suffering, and saw the visions of glory to which it would lead, victory over Satan, a World rescued from his grasp, God's justice satisfied, His wrath appeased, His love glorified; and so the Cross became a triumphal Chariot, in which the Conqueror rode in Victory (see Col. ii. 14), and mounted to heaven, and bore Mankind with Him through the gates of the heavenly Palace of the Everlasting Capital, and was greeted by the song of Angels, *Lift up your heads, O ye gates; and be ye lift up, ye everlasting doors; and the King of glory shall come in*. (Ps. xxiv. 7.)

It has been alleged, that if by sin we were prisoners to Satan, therefore the price of Christ's blood which He paid upon the cross for our liberation from Satan was *paid to Satan*. But this we deny; see *Gregor. Nazianzen*, Orat. xlv. p. 862, ed. Paris, 1778. It might as well be said, that the ransom paid for the delivery of prisoners from a king's prison, is paid to the gaoler in whose custody they are. We, by our sins, had made ourselves slaves of Satan; and as a just punishment for our sins, we were made prisoners of Satan. Satan was God's executioner against us. He was our gaoler. *Tophet is ordained of old* (Isa. xxx. 33), *as one of God's instruments of death*. (Ps. vii. 14.) But Christ, by dying for us, delivered us from death. He rescued us from the hands of Satan, and paid the price of our ransom, not to Satan, but to God. He delivered us from Satan by offering Himself to God.

Compare St. Paul's argument on this subject, Rom. iii. 23—26, and note above, ii. 2, and on 1 Cor. vi. 20.

They who contravene the doctrine of the *Atonement* often claim the credit of exercising their *Reason*, and deny that the belief of the doctrine of the Atonement rests on the foundation of *Reason*. Nothing can be accepted by reasonable men which does not rest on the foundation of Reason. But a *right use* of Reason leads to a firm belief in the doctrine of the Atonement; and a denial of it proceeds from an *abuse* of Reason.

The doctrine of the *Atonement* cannot be *discovered* by Reason. No; but we can prove by Reason that the Holy Scriptures are from God; and we can prove by Reason, that the doctrine of the Atonement is clearly revealed in the Holy Scriptures. And thus this doctrine rests on the foundation of Reason. Being a portion of *supernatural* truth revealed by God in Scripture to the world, it is not to be *discovered* by Reason, or fully *comprehended* by Reason, but it is to be heartily embraced and surely held fast by *Faith*, which implies a *right use* of Reason. And Reason teaches us, that it would be very unreasonable to expect, that what is contained in a Revelation from such a Being as God to so frail a creature as man, in his present state upon earth, should be fully comprehended by Reason; and that, if Reason could understand every thing, there would be no use in Revelation, and no place for Faith. Right Reason itself teaches us, that to *deny the Lord who bought us* (2 Pet. ii. 1), because we cannot *understand* why God allowed sin to prevail, which required the Sacrifice of the Death of His own ever-blessed Son, would be to renew the indignities of the crucifixion, and to smite our Redeemer with a Reed—the Reed of our unregenerate Reason,—when we ought to fall down and worship in Faith. Reason itself teaches us, that it is very reasonable to expect mysteries in Revelation; and that they are our *moral discipline*, and exercise our humility, patience, faith, and hope, and teach us to look forward to that blessed time, when we, who *now see through a glass darkly* (1 Cor. xiii. 12), shall behold the clouds removed which now overhang these mysteries, and shall see God face to face, and rejoice for ever in the sight.

Thus Reason leads us to the door of the Holy of Holies; and then we pass within the veil by Faith; and there we stand, and with the eye of Faith we behold God enthroned on the Mercy-Seat, *sprinkled by the blood of Christ*.

Further, as reasonable men, looking at the cross of Christ, we see there the most cogent reasons for *presenting ourselves*, our souls and bodies, *a living sacrifice, holy and acceptable to God, which is our reasonable service* (Rom. xii. 1).

This doctrine of the *Atonement* is the root of Christian *practice*; and they, who impugn that doctrine, are not only undermining the foundations of Christian *Faith*, but also of Christian *Morality*. This was clearly evinced even in the Apostolic age, by the licentiousness and profligacy engendered by heretical doctrines, against which St. John contends in his Epistles, concerning the Incarnation and Death of Christ.

We cannot adequately estimate the moral heinousness of sin, without considering the sacrifice which it cost to redeem us from its power and guilt. We cannot duly understand the obligations of love and obedience, under which we lie to Christ, and the motives which constrain us to holiness, without remembering that we are *not our own, but have been bought with a price*—the blood of Christ—and are therefore bound to glorify Him in our bodies which are His. See 1 Cor. vi. 20.

Accordingly, St. John, having here stated the doctrine of the Atonement, proceeds, and continues to the end of the Epistle, to enforce the *moral duties* consequent on this doctrine. "Beloved, if God so loved us, we ought also to love one another." He teaches us to contend earnestly for the doctrine of the Atonement, as the groundwork of Christian Duty to God and Man.

On this subject compare *Bp. Pearson* on the Creed, Art. x. pp. 670—688.

12. Θεὸν οὐδεὶς π. τεθέαται] *no one hath yet seen God at any time*. How then can we love Him who so loved us? By loving those whom we *can see* (cp. v. 20), whose nature the Son of God hath taken, and whom He has united to God, and for whom He vouchsafed to die; so great was His love to them. We must love those whom God loves in Christ; and thus, though as yet we see not God with the bodily eye, yet He dwelleth in us.

—ἐὰν ἀγαπῶμεν—ἐν ἡμῖν] *if we love one another, God dwelleth in us, and His love hath been perfected in us*. His Love to us hath been ripened into Love to Him, and into Love to all men in Him; and thus His Love hath been perfected into its full maturity in us.

γινώσκουμεν ὅτι ἐν αὐτῷ μένομεν, καὶ αὐτὸς ἐν ἡμῖν, ὅτι ἐκ τοῦ Πνεύματος αὐτοῦ δέδωκεν ἡμῖν.

¹⁴ ^m Καὶ ἡμεῖς τεθεάμεθα καὶ μαρτυροῦμεν ὅτι ὁ Πατὴρ ἀπέσταλκε τὸν Υἱὸν ^m John 1. 14. ^{ch. 1. 1.} σωτήρα τοῦ κόσμου. ¹⁵ ^a Ὃς ἂν ὁμολογήσῃ ὅτι Ἰησοῦς ἐστὶν ὁ Υἱὸς τοῦ Θεοῦ, ὁ Θεὸς ἐν αὐτῷ μένει, καὶ αὐτὸς ἐν τῷ Θεῷ. ¹⁶ ⁿ Καὶ ἡμεῖς ἐγνώκαμεν καὶ ⁿ ch. 8. 12. πεπιστεύκαμεν τὴν ἀγάπην, ἣν ἔχει ὁ Θεὸς ἐν ἡμῖν. Ὁ Θεὸς ἀγάπη ἐστὶ, καὶ ὁ μένων ἐν τῇ ἀγάπῃ ἐν τῷ Θεῷ μένει, καὶ ὁ Θεὸς ἐν αὐτῷ. ¹⁷ ^o Ἐν τούτῳ ^o James 2. 13. ¹ Pet. 1. 15. ^{ch. 3. 3, 19, 21.} τετελείωται ἡ ἀγάπη μεθ' ἡμῶν, ἵνα παρῤῥησίαν ἔχωμεν ἐν τῇ ἡμέρᾳ τῆς κρίσεως, ὅτι καθὼς ἐκεῖνός ἐστι, καὶ ἡμεῖς ἐσμέν ἐν τῷ κόσμῳ τούτῳ. ¹⁸ Φόβος οὐκ ἐστὶν ἐν τῇ ἀγάπῃ, ἀλλ' ἡ τελεία ἀγάπη ἔξω βάλλει τὸν φόβον, ὅτι ὁ φόβος κόλασιν ἔχει, ὁ δὲ φοβούμενος οὐ τετελείωται ἐν τῇ ἀγάπῃ. ¹⁹ Ἡμεῖς ἀγαπῶμεν, ὅτι αὐτὸς πρῶτος ἡγάπησεν ἡμᾶς. ²⁰ ^p Ἐάν τις εἴπῃ, ^p ch. 2. 4. & 3. 17.

13. ὅτι ἐκ τοῦ Πνεύματος αὐτοῦ δ. ἡ.] *because He hath given to us of His Spirit: the fruit of which is Love* (Gal. v. 22). And by our acts of Love, we know that we have His Spirit, and that we dwell in God.

14. καὶ ἡμεῖς τεθεάμεθα] We have not seen God (see v. 12), but God dwelleth in us by Love (vv. 12, 13), and we have beheld, and do testify that the Father (in opposition to the heretical doctrine, see ii. 22) hath sent the Son to be Saviour of the World. John had beheld this personally, and to this he bears witness in his Gospel. See John xix. 35; xxi. 24.

15. Ἰησοῦς] *Jesus*. Observe the word Jesus thus placed, and stating the true doctrine, that Jesus—the Man Jesus—is not, as the Ebionites said, a ψιλὸς ἄνθρωπος, a mere man, nor, as the Cerinthians alleged, a mere temporary recipient of the indwelling of an Aeon called Christ; nor as the Docetæ said, a shadowy unsubstantial phantom, but is the Son of God, such as St. John declares Him in the Gospel. Cp. *Bp. Bull*, Jud. Eccl. Cath. ii. 9.

The confession of this truth (viz. of the Manhood and Godhead of Christ) is, St. John declares, essential to our indwelling in God.

16. καὶ ἡμεῖς ἐγνώκαμεν] *and we have known*—known by our own personal experience (ἐγνώκαμεν), and we have believed, and do believe (πεπιστεύκαμεν, the perfect tense, cp. John vi. 69), the love which God hath in us. By a personal and experimental faith, that the same Jesus, Who is Man, having the common nature of us all, is also God, we dwell in God, and God in us. For, by the Incarnation of the Son of God, God is in us, He is our Emmanuel; and by this faith we know and realize the Love which God hath, not only to us, but in us. For, by virtue of the Incarnation, God unites us to Himself, and to each other in Him, in the closest bonds of Love. God sees us and loves us in Christ, who, by virtue of His Incarnation and our incorporation in Him, dwelleth in us, and we in Him (John vi. 56), and God loves us in the Beloved (Eph. i. 6), and as Christ Himself says in two sentences recorded in St. John's Gospel, which afford the best exposition of this text, "At that day (i. e. after the Ascension and reception of the Holy Ghost) ye shall know that I am in the Father, and ye in Me, and I in you," and, "O Father, I made known to them Thy Name, and I will make it known, in order that the love with which Thou lovedst Me may be in them, and I in them" (John xvii. 26). Hence follows the relative duty, ἀγάπην ἔχειν ἐν ἀλλήλοις, John xiii. 35.

17. ἐν τούτῳ] *By this hath love been perfected*, and is perfected, with us. By our union with God, through the Incarnation of His Son, Who has taken the Nature of us all, and has knit us together as one man in Himself, and joined us to God, who were once aliens from Him, Love hath been perfected with us. Christ is μεθ' ἡμῶν Θεός, "God with us" (Matt. i. 23). By His Incarnation and Passion, God is at peace with us, and we with God, and with our own consciences; and by the Reconciliation and Atonement which Christ hath made, we are justified by faith in Him, and are accounted righteous as He is righteous, for He is the "Lord our Righteousness" (cp. 1 Cor. i. 30), and we have access to the Father. See St. Paul's words to the Ephesian Church, Eph. ii. 13—18, and Heb. x. 19—23, which supply the best comment on this passage.

It follows as a consequence, that we may now have assurance (see ii. 28) in the Day of Judgment, when Jesus Christ shall appear again; because as He (Christ) is, Who is our Head, even so we, who are His Members, are in this world. He is exalted to God's Right Hand, by His Obedience and Suffering in our Nature: His Exaltation is our Exaltation. We, even now in this world, even in the midst of this evil world, which lieth in sub-

jection to the Wicked One (v. 19), are citizens of heaven (Phil. iii. 20). He, our Divine Head, at God's Right Hand, is ever pleading the Virtue of His sacrifice, for us His Members. He ever liveth to make Intercession for us (Heb. vii. 25). We have already been made to sit in heavenly places in Him. See note above on Eph. ii. 6; and though we are in the world, and the world is ἐν τῷ πονηρῷ, yet the Wicked One toucheth not us (v. 18), for we are in Christ; and no one can pluck us out of His hand (John x. 28).

To be in this world, even as Christ is, implies the practice of charity, so that we love our enemies, as Christ loved us, and died for us, when we were enemies (Rom. v. 8—10); and it implies the practice of holiness, without which no man shall see the Lord (Heb. xii. 14), who says, "Ye shall be holy, for I am holy" (1 Pet. i. 16), and every one that hath this hope (of glory) settled upon Him (Christ), purifieth himself even as He is pure (1 John iii. 3), and walketh as He walked (ii. 6), upon whom the Prince of this world had no hold (John xiv. 30).

18. φόβος οὐκ ἐστὶν ἐν τῇ ἀγάπῃ] *Fear*—which is the opposite of the παρῤῥησία or assurance just described—doth not exist in Love, but the Love that is perfect casteth out Fear: as Sarah the true wife cast out the bondwoman and her son; for the son of the bondwoman must not be heir with the son of the free-woman (Gen. xxi. 10. 12. Gal. iv. 30). Love, that is perfect, casteth out Fear, because Fear hath punishment: but He who is fearing—he whose characteristic is fear, and not love—hath not been perfected in love.

"Fear is the beginning of wisdom" (Ps. cxi. 10. Cp. on Matt. viii. 34). Fear first enters, and opens the door for Love, and prepares the house for its reception; but, when Love has taken up its abode in the house of the heart, Fear leaves it. Fear is the παιδαγωγὸς to bring us to Christ, in Whom we receive, not the spirit of servile fear (πνεῦμα δουλείας εἰς φόβον, Rom. viii. 15), but the spirit of filial adoption, by which we cry, Abba, Father (Gal. iv. 6). When we have been brought to Him, and dwell in Him, the work of Fear is done, and we are perfected in Love. See Augustine here, and Epistle 140, Sect. 21.

Fear hath punishment (κόλασιν). It has punishment as its moving principle, and as that which is ever present with it. "Mala conscientia tota in desperatione est, sicut bona in spe." Augustine, in Ps. 31. Fear is like a slave, who lives and moves with the sight of the whip ever before his eyes. He that is fearing (ὁ φοβούμενος), he whose moving principle is fear (on which use of the present participle with the definite article, so as to become almost a substantive, see Matt. iv. 3. Eph. iv. 28. Winer, § 45, p. 316), the fearer (as opposed to ὁ ἀγαπῶν, the lover) hath not been perfected in love. But when he has been perfected in love, he will no longer act from constraint, and from fear of punishment, as a bondservant; he will no longer be an Ishmael who is cast out of the house; but he will live and move with the joyful alacrity of an Isaac, who abideth in the house for ever (John viii. 35).

19. ἡμεῖς ἀγαπῶμεν] *we love because He first loved us*. The Vulg., Syriac, and other Versions render ἀγαπῶμεν as an imperative, "Let us love:" compare vv. 7 and 11; and so Lange, Lücke, De Wette, Besser, Düsterdieck, Huther, and others; see Huther, p. 186. But the ἡμεῖς prefixed to the verb, and the general tenor of the argument, seems to favour the other rendering, that of the indicative. We should be only like those who fear, like slaves, if God had not loved us; but now we are they who love, as dear children, because He first loved us, as our reconciled Father in Christ.

Elz. adds αὐτὸν, Him, after ἀγαπῶμεν, but it is not in A, B, and is not received by Lach. and Tisch., and the sense seems

ὅτι ἀγαπῶ τὸν Θεόν, καὶ τὸν ἀδελφὸν αὐτοῦ μισῇ, ψεύστης ἐστίν· ὁ γὰρ μὴ ἀγαπῶν τὸν ἀδελφὸν αὐτοῦ, ὃν ἐώρακε, τὸν Θεόν, ὃν οὐχ ἐώρακε, πῶς δύναται ἀγαπᾶν; ²¹ καὶ ταύτην τὴν ἐντολὴν ἔχομεν ἀπ' αὐτοῦ, ἵνα ὁ ἀγαπῶν τὸν Θεὸν ἀγαπᾷ καὶ τὸν ἀδελφὸν αὐτοῦ.

q Lev. 19. 18.
Matt. 22. 39.
Job 13. 34.
& 15. 12.
Eph. 5. 2.
1 Thess. 4. 9.
1 Pet. 4. 8.
ch. 3. 11, 23.
a John 1. 12, 13.
ch. 2. 22, 23.
& 4. 2, 15.
b Matt. 11. 29, 30.
John 14. 15, 21, 23.
& 15. 10.
2 John 6.
c John 16. 33.

V. ¹ Πᾶς ὁ πιστεύων ὅτι Ἰησοῦς ἐστίν ὁ Χριστὸς ἐκ τοῦ Θεοῦ γεγέννηται καὶ πᾶς ὁ ἀγαπῶν τὸν γενηθέντα ἀγαπᾷ καὶ τὸν γεγεννημένον ἐξ αὐτοῦ. ² Ἐν τούτῳ γινώσκουμεν ὅτι ἀγαπῶμεν τὰ τέκνα τοῦ Θεοῦ, ὅταν τὸν Θεὸν ἀγαπῶμεν, καὶ τὰς ἐντολὰς αὐτοῦ ποιῶμεν. ³ Ἡ γὰρ ἐστὶν ἡ ἀγάπη τοῦ Θεοῦ, ἵνα τὰς ἐντολὰς αὐτοῦ τηρῶμεν· καὶ αἱ ἐντολαὶ αὐτοῦ βαρεῖαι οὐκ εἰσὶν. ⁴ ὅτι πᾶν τὸ γεγεννημένον ἐκ τοῦ Θεοῦ νικᾷ τὸν κόσμον, καὶ αὕτη ἐστὶν ἡ νίκη ἡ νικήσασα τὸν κόσμον, ἡ πίστις ἡμῶν.

d 1 Cor. 15. 57.
ch. 4. 4, 15.
e John 19. 34.

⁵ Τίς ἐστὶν ὁ νικῶν τὸν κόσμον, εἰ μὴ ὁ πιστεύων ὅτι Ἰησοῦς ἐστίν ὁ Υἱὸς τοῦ Θεοῦ; ⁶ Οὗτός ἐστιν ὁ ἐλθὼν δι' ὕδατος καὶ αἵματος, Ἰησοῦς Χριστὸς,

better without it. Here is the ground of our love generally; first to God, and then to man in God,—*He first loved us.*

The main difference between the old, or Levitical, and the new, or Evangelical, Law is this—Do it, says the one, *Servus meus es tu*; Do it, says the other, *Filius meus es tu*: here is the perfect law of Love and liberty (James ii. 12); and the Law of Fear, which prepared the way for the Gospel of Love, hath now given way to the Gospel of Love which abides for ever in God's house (1 Cor. xiii. 8—13), the Church of Earth and Heaven; for Love that is perfected casteth out Fear. See *Bp. Andrewes*, i. p. 291.

CH. V. 1—4. πᾶς ὁ πιστεύων] every one who believeth that Jesus is the Christ, hath been born of God. A doctrine opposed to the heresy of the Cerinthians who separated Jesus from Christ. Because of the growth of that Heresy, the Apostle specially inculcates this faith, that Jesus is the Son of God. *Bp. Bull*, Judic. Eccl. ii. Sect. 9.

St. John adds, that every one who loveth Him that begat, loveth Him that has been begotten of Him; and (v. 5) he asks, Who is he that overcometh the world, but he that believeth that Jesus is the Son of God?

Thus our Regeneration is derived from the Generation of the Son of God, and His Incarnation. We cannot be born of God, unless we believe that the Jesus, Who is really and truly Man, is personally united to the Christ—the begotten of the Father—the Son of God.

St. John himself, in his Gospel, has developed his own argument. He has there affirmed that the Logos, or Word, is God, and that He gave power to all who receive Him, to become children of God, and that He was made Flesh, and took up His abode in us, and that of His fulness we all receive (John i. 1—16). He has also declared, that it is necessary for us to be born again (John iii. 3), and that the instrumental means by which we are to be regenerate, or born anew, as sons of God, are Water and the Holy Spirit (John iii. 5); and that the benefits of our union with Christ, and of the grace of His Unction, and the fruits of His Incarnation, and communion with God the Father in Him, are to be maintained by feeding on Him, and that “except we eat the flesh of the Son of Man and drink His blood, we have no life in us” (John vi. 53). See the Introduction to St. John's Gospel, pp. 258, 259, and the Notes at the end of the Third and Sixth chapters of that Gospel.

Thus St. John in his Gospel has prepared us to understand the doctrine of his Epistle.

3. καὶ αἱ ἐντολαί] and His commandments are not grievous; because His Grace makes His yoke to be easy, and His burden to be light. See Matt. xi. 30. Phil. iv. 13. 1 Cor. xv. 10, and *S. Augustine's* saying, “Da quod jubes, et jube quod vis” (Confess. x. 29); and *Ausonius* (ad Theodos. 13), “Juvat qui Jubet;” and *Bp. Sanderson*, Sermon iii. p. 316.

4. πᾶν τὸ γεγεννημένον ἐκ τοῦ Θεοῦ] every thing that hath been begotten of God, and continues to energize by the principle of the new life imparted in Regeneration. This is the force of the perfect tense γεγεννημένον, as usual. See above, iii. 9.

—αὕτη ἐστὶν ἡ νίκη] this is the Victory which conquered the world, your Faith. The Faith which you professed in Christ not only does conquer (νικᾷ), but did conquer (ἐνίκησε) the world; for by it the Elders conquered, as has been shown in the eleventh chapter to the Hebrews; see especially Heb. xi. 33. Faith is called the Victory, as Christ is called “the Resurrection and the Life” (John xi. 25); because Faith,—which unites men to

Christ, the Universal Conqueror and Giver of Victory (John xvi. 33. 1 Cor. xv. 57. Rev. vi. 2), is the only way to Victory, and the instrument by which it is gained; and whosoever has Faith, has Victory; whosoever believed in Christ, conquered by belief in Him.

6. οὗτός ἐστιν ὁ ἐλθὼν δι' ὕδατος καὶ αἵματος, Ἰησοῦς Χριστός] This is He Who came by Water and Blood, Jesus Christ.

He Who came is He Who proved Himself to be “the Coming One;” ὁ ἐρχόμενος, the Messiah; see Matt. xi. 3; whence our Lord says, “all who came before Me were thieves and robbers.” See note on John x. 8.

Jesus Christ came, as the Messiah and Son of God, in various ways.

1. He came, in all the purifications that were made by Water and Blood under the Old Law, which was dedicated with Blood and Water, Heb. ix. 22; because all those purifications were typical of, and preparatory to, His Sacrifice on the Cross, and derived all their efficacy from it.

It was the Water and the Blood afterwards shed on Calvary which imparted all the virtue to the Water and Blood poured out in the sacrificial rites of the Temple at Jerusalem, and of the Tabernacle in the Wilderness; and also to the Patriarchal Sacrifices at Bethel, at Mamre, and on Ararat; and even to the sacrifice of Abel on the borders of Paradise. Thus this is He Who came by Water and Blood; the Lamb of God slain from the foundation of the world. Rev. xiii. 8.

2. Again; Christ came by Water in His Baptism; and by Blood in His Circumcision, and especially in His Agony and Bloody Sweat in Gethsemane, and by the blood shed in His scourging before His Passion, and in the Crown of Thorns, and the piercing of His Hands at the Crucifixion.

3. Further; Christ came both by Water and Blood at once, in a special manner, on Calvary after His Death. St. John saw, and bare witness of what he then saw. “One of the soldiers pierced his side, and forthwith came there out Blood and Water; and he that saw it hath borne, and beareth, witness (μεμαρτύρηκε, perfect tense), and his witness is true, and he knoweth that he speaketh truth, in order that ye also may believe. For these things were done, in order that the Scripture might be fulfilled, A bone of Him shall not be broken (Exod. xii. 46, concerning the Paschal Lamb). And again, another Scripture saith, They shall see Him whom they pierced;” Zechariah xii. 10, speaking of JEHOVAH Himself. See John xix. 34—37.

Thus St. John in his Gospel prepares us to understand the words of his Epistle; and in his Epistle also he elucidates what had been recorded in his Gospel. His words therefore may be thus paraphrased. This is He Who came—that is, proved Himself to be what He was pre-announced to be by the Types and Prophecies of the Old Testament, and what He proclaimed Himself to be in the New—the “Coming One,” “The Comer” (ὁ ἐρχόμενος), the Messiah, the true Paschal Lamb, and Very Man, a true Sacrifice for sin; and yet Very God, the Everlasting Jehovah, of Whom the Prophet Zechariah spoke, when he prophesied of His being pierced at His Death.

He came by Blood and Water. He proved thereby the reality of His Humanity and of His Death; and thus He has given a practical refutation—which St. John himself saw with his own eyes—to the heretical notions of those in the Apostolic age, such as Simon Magus, and the Docetæ, who alleged that Jesus Christ had not a real human body, but was merely a spectral phantasm, crucified in show; and therefore *S. Irenæus* in the next age after St. John, urges this fact of the piercing of

οὐκ ἐν τῷ ὕδατι μόνον, ἀλλ' ἐν τῷ ὕδατι καὶ ἐν τῷ αἵματι καὶ τὸ Πνεῦμά ἐστι
τὸ μαρτυροῦν, ὅτι τὸ Πνεῦμά ἐστιν ἡ ἀλήθεια· ⁷ ὅτι τρεῖς εἰσιν οἱ μαρτυ-
ροῦντες, ⁸ τὸ πνεῦμα, καὶ τὸ ὕδωρ, καὶ τὸ αἷμα· καὶ οἱ τρεῖς εἰς τὸ ἓν εἰσιν.

f Matt. 28. 19.
John 1. 1.
1 Cor. 12. 4-6.
Rev. 19. 13.

the side, and the flowing out of the blood and water, recorded by St. John, as conclusive against their heresy. *S. Irenæus*, iv. 32. 23, ed. Stieren; p. 357, Grabe. Cp. *Bp. Pearson*, Art. iv. p. 405, and *Dr. Waterland*, v. p. 190.

In the words, "not by water only," there seems also to be a reference to another heresy of the Apostolic age, that of Cerinthus, who said that Christ came in the water of Baptism, and descended into the man Jesus; and afterwards departed from Him, when He shed His blood on the Cross. In opposition to this notion St. John says, "This is He Who came by Water and Blood; not by Water only, but by Water and Blood." Cp. *Dr. Burton's Lectures*, pp. 188-190.

4. Further it is to be observed, that in this passage of his Epistle St. John is speaking of *Christ's Generation*, and of *our Regeneration*.

Every one who believeth that Jesus is the Christ *hath been born*, and is *born of God*; i. e., is *regenerate*; and every one who loveth Him that *begat*, loveth Him that is *begotten of Him*; i. e., whoever loveth God the *Father*, loveth Him Who by *Generation* is the only-begotten *Son of God*; and every thing that is born of God (i. e., is *regenerate*) overcometh the World; and who is he that overcometh the world, but he that believeth that *Jesus—the Very Man Jesus—is also the Son of God?*

St. John then proceeds to describe the *means* by which *our Regeneration*, or *New Birth*, is communicated to us from God, through His Son Christ Jesus, Very Man, and Very God; and how the *new life* so communicated is sustained in us. He does this by saying, This is *He Who came*—came to us—by Water and Blood, Jesus Christ; not by Water only, but by Water and Blood.

The *natural* life which was imparted to Eve—the Mother of all living, the type of the Church, the Spouse of the Second Adam, Jesus Christ—was derived from the First Adam's side, opened when he was *asleep* in Paradise. In like manner, the *spiritual* life is given to the *Spiritual Eve*, the Church, and to all her faithful members, from the side of the Second Adam, Jesus Christ, *sleeping in death* on the Cross; and it is communicated through His *death* by means of the *Water and Blood* of the *two Sacraments*, which derive their quickening, cleansing, and invigorating virtue from the Divinity, Incarnation, and Death of our Crucified Lord and Saviour, and by which the benefits of that Death is applied to our regeneration and revivification; and which were visibly exhibited in the *Water and Blood* flowing from His precious side, pierced on the Cross.

This doctrine is implied by the *Church of England* in her Office for the Ministration of Baptism,—“Almighty, Everliving God, whose most dearly Beloved Son *Jesus Christ*, for the forgiveness of our sins, did shed out of His most precious side both *Water and Blood*; and gave commandment to His disciples, that they should go teach all nations, and baptize them . . . sanctify this Water to the mystical washing away of sin;” a formulary adopted from Ancient Liturgies; see *Palmer*, *Origines Liturgicæ*, ii. 187.

It is observable, that our Lord Himself has assured us of this truth by the instrumentality of the same Apostle, *St. John*, who testifieth *these things*, and who alone of the Apostles saw our Lord's side pierced, and the *Water and Blood* coming forth from it.

It is in the Gospel of *St. John* that Christ says, “*Verily, verily, I say unto thee, Except a man be born of Water and of the Spirit, he cannot enter into the kingdom of God*” (John iii. 5). Again, it is in the Gospel of *St. John* that Christ declares, “*Verily, verily, I say unto you, Except ye eat the Flesh of the Son of Man, and drink His Blood, ye have no life in you. Whoso eateth my Flesh and drinketh my Blood hath eternal life, and I will raise him up at the last Day. For My Flesh is Meat indeed, and My Blood is drink indeed*” (John vi. 53-55).

This therefore “is He Who came to us by Water and Blood, Jesus Christ; not by Water only, but by Water and Blood.”

He came by Water, which is our λουτρὸν, and by Blood, which is our λύτρον. His Baptism of Blood is our λύτρον, or ransom from death; and His Baptism by Water is our λουτρὸν, or laver of Birth. And the *Water* of the λουτρὸν derives its efficacy from the *Blood* of the λύτρον, shed on the Cross, which works in and by the Water of Baptism. He has washed us from our sins in His own blood (Rev. i. 5). His blood cleanseth us from all sin (1 John i. 7). In Baptism we pass through the Red Sea of His Blood, and are delivered from our enemies thereby.

“*Hæc sunt gemina Ecclesiæ Sacramenta,*” says *Augustine* (in *Joann. tract.* 120). Here are represented the *Two Sacraments*

of the Church, in which Christ comes. By them He came to us, He is ever coming in them.

At the first Institution of the Sacrament of the Eucharist, the pitcher of water and he that carried it, were not in vain given for a sign by Christ (see on Mark xiv. 13), it went not before for nothing. Cp. *Bp. Andrewes*, iii. p. 359.

Christ is ever coming by the Water and Blood of the Sacraments, to quicken and cleanse all of every age in the Church (see Titus iii. 5), and He animates and unites them all in the bonds of holiness and love, as fellow-members communicating with Him their Head, and knit and woven together by veins and arteries, in One Body, the Body of Christ.

Some ancient testimonies to the above exposition may be seen in note above, on John xix. 34, to which may be added *S. Augustine*, *Serm.* v., referring to this passage, as follows: “*Quid profuxit de latere nisi sacramentum quod acciperent fideles? Spiritus, sanguis et aqua; Spiritus quem emisit; et sanguis et aqua quæ de latere profuxerunt; de ipso sanguine et aqua significatur nata Ecclesia; cum jam dormiret Christus in cruce, quia Adam in Paradiso somnum accepit, et sic illi de latere Eva producta est.*” Compare *Cassiodorus* here, and *Bp. Andrewes*, *Serm.* xiii. vol. iii. pp. 345-360.

—καὶ τὸ Πνεῦμά ἐστι τὸ μαρτυροῦν] and the Spirit is that which is bearing witness to the doctrine that Jesus is the Christ the Son of God. The Holy Spirit, promised by Christ, and given by the Father to the Church, in consequence of the Passion, Resurrection, and Ascension of Christ, bare witness by His own descent on the Day of Pentecost, and by the supernatural powers of Tongues and Prophecy which He then bestowed on the Apostles, and on others who believed and were baptized in Christ's Name, that all which Jesus Christ had preached was true: and that He is, what He declared Himself to be, the Son of God (cp. John xv. 26; xvi. 14). And the Holy Spirit by His presence and operation in the *Water of Baptism*, and in the *Blood* of the *Holy Eucharist*, bears witness to the Verity and Virtue of the Incarnation and Death of Christ, the Son of God, from which the efficacy of the Sacraments is derived.

7. ὅτι τρεῖς εἰσιν οἱ μαρτυροῦντες] because three are they who are bearing witness.

After these words *Elz.* has this addition, ἐν τῷ οὐρανῷ ὁ Πατήρ, ὁ Λόγος, καὶ τὸ ἅγιον Πνεῦμα· καὶ οὗτοι οἱ τρεῖς ἓν εἰσι, καὶ τρεῖς εἰσιν οἱ μαρτυροῦντες ἐν τῇ γῇ, in heaven the Father, the Word, and the Holy Spirit, and these three are one (i. e. one substance, neuter, cp. John x. 30), and there are three who are bearing witness on earth.

But this addition is not found in A, B, G, K, or in the cursive MSS. of this Epistle—with the exception of three MSS. of comparatively recent date—nor in the Lectionaries, nor in the best editions of the Ancient Versions, nor in the Greek Fathers of the first Four Centuries, nor in the Latin Fathers of those centuries, with the exception of a single passage in *S. Cyprian* de Unit. Eccl. c. 5, the tenor of which is doubtful.

The earliest Author by whom these words are clearly cited is *Vigilius Thapsensis* at the close of the Fifth Century. See the statement of the evidence on this subject in the editions of *Wetstein*, *Griesbach*, *Scholz*, and *Tischendorf*.

The words in question are not received by *Griesbach*, *Scholz*, *Lachmann*, *Tischendorf*. Nor need any one be disturbed by their non-appearance in the text. It is certain, as has been observed by *Dr. Bentley* (*Correspondence*, vol. ii. p. 530), that the Ante-Nicene and Nicene Fathers confuted Arianism without the aid of this passage, to which they never refer, because it was not in their copies of this Epistle; and the doctrine of the Trinity has been clearly established by other Scriptures, and by the consentient voice and concurrent practice of the Church, especially in the administration of the Sacrament of Baptism, with which every child of God has been admitted into the Church of Christ by His express command, in the Name of the Ever-Blessed Trinity (see above, on Matt. iii. 16. Cp. 2 Cor. xiii. 14. Eph. ii. 18), and also in her Liturgical formularies in the Administration of the Holy Communion, and in her solemn Doxologies and Benedictions.

The passage therefore according to the best authorities stands thus, *Because three* (τρεῖς, masculine, not τρία, neuter) *are those who are bearing witness, the Spirit, and the Water, and the Blood, and these three* (τρεῖς, masculine, not τρία, neuter) *are (joined) into the one* (τὸ ἓν, the one Substance, neuter; not masculine ἓνα).

The gender of the words here used is very remarkable.

St. John speaks of three Persons (τρεῖς) and one Substance

g John 5. 37.
& 8. 17, 18.

h John 3. 16, 33.
Rom. 8. 16.
Gal. 4. 6.

i John 1. 4.

⁹ Εἰ τὴν μαρτυρίαν τῶν ἀνθρώπων λαμβάνομεν, ἡ μαρτυρία τοῦ Θεοῦ
μείζων ἐστίν· ὅτι αὕτη ἐστὶν ἡ μαρτυρία τοῦ Θεοῦ, ὅτι μεμαρτύρηκε περὶ τοῦ
Υἱοῦ αὐτοῦ. ¹⁰ Ὁ πιστεύων εἰς τὸν Υἱὸν τοῦ Θεοῦ ἔχει τὴν μαρτυρίαν ἐν
ἑαυτῷ· ὁ μὴ πιστεύων τῷ Θεῷ, ψεύστην πεποίηκεν αὐτὸν, ὅτι οὐ πεπίστευκεν
εἰς τὴν μαρτυρίαν, ἣν μεμαρτύρηκεν ὁ Θεὸς περὶ τοῦ Υἱοῦ αὐτοῦ. ¹¹ Καὶ αὕτη

(ἐν), and affirms that these *three Persons* bear witness, and these *three Persons* (τρῆς) are united into the *one substance*. He uses the *masculine* τρεῖς, before the three neuter substantives; and after them also.

This declaration may be best explained by our Lord's words as recorded by St. John himself, in the Gospel, "I and my Father are one:" where *one* is expressed, as here, by the neuter ἐν; and our Lord there affirms that He and His Father, being *two Persons* (masculine) are *one substance* (neuter). See the note there, and compare our Lord's words, John xvii. 11. 22, in which the *unity* of the *Persons* is described by the *neuter* gender.

So St. John declares here that there are three *Persons* (τρῆς, masculine) who are bearing witness (μαρτυροῦντες, masculine), and that these three (*Persons*) who are bearing witness are joined into one (ἐν *one substance*, neuter).

There is therefore good ground for the ancient opinion, that St. John in this passage is declaring the *Unity* of the *Three Persons* of the *Trinity* in *one substance*. This appears to be the meaning of *Tertullian* (c. Prax. 25), where he says, that "the union of the Father in the Son, and of the Son in the Father, makes three *Persons* joined in one: which three *Persons* are *unum* (one substance) *non unus* (not one Person), as Christ says, 'I and My Father are One;' declaring *Oneness* of substance, and not singleness of number." And his scholar, *S. Cyprian* (de unit. Eccl. c. 5), writes thus, "The Lord says, I and the Father are one (*unum*), and again it is written" (i. e. in the passage now before us of St. John's Epistle), concerning the *Father* and the *Son*, and the *Holy Ghost*, "three are one" (*tres unum sunt*).

And so the ancient Scholium in *Matthæi* says that "John uses the number *three* in the masculine gender, because those three are symbols of the *Trinity*," and by using the word ἐν, "he designates the *unity* of the Godhead;" and so *S. Augustine* (c. Maximin. 22) says, "If we desire to examine what is signified by these words, the *Trinity* itself may reasonably occur to us; which is One God, Father, Son, and Holy Ghost, concerning which it may be most truly said, 'Three are the Witnesses,' and 'Three are one substance (*unum*).'"

St. John himself appears to authorize this exposition, by adding, "If we receive the witness of *men* (especially of three men, see Matt. xviii. 16. 2 Cor. xiii. 1. Heb. x. 28), the witness of God is greater," thus intimating that the testimony of the *three witnesses* here mentioned is the witness of God in three *Persons*.

Our Lord Himself in St. John's Gospel has prepared the way for this exposition. He thus speaks to the Jews, "In your Law it is written that the witness of *two men* is true. I am He that beareth witness (ὁ μαρτυρῶν) concerning Myself; and the Father who sent me beareth witness" (John viii. 18).

This was spoken by Christ before His Ascension; but He promised that after He Himself had gone away He would send a *third witness*. "When the Comforter is come whom I will send unto you from the Father, namely, the Spirit of Truth who pro-

ceedeth from the Father, He shall bear witness of Me" (John xv. 26).

By that Coming of the Holy Ghost, the testimony of the *three Witnesses* was completed.

Therefore St. John, writing in this Epistle after the Ascension of Christ, and the Giving of the Holy Spirit, might well say that *Three are those who are bearing witness, and these three are united into One . . . and this is "the witness of God."*

These three are designated here as "the Spirit, the Water, and the Blood."

Firstly, the *Spirit*; who begins the Work of Regeneration by applying all quickening grace to Man.

Secondly, the *Water*; the symbol and instrument of the New Birth derived from God the Father, Who is the Original *Wellspring* and *Fountain* of all Life and Grace to man. The natural heavens and earth were formed out of the *Water*. There was their Origin (see on 2 Pet. iii. 5). So it is with the spiritual Life; it is formed from out of *Water*. *Water* therefore is a proper symbol of the *Paternity* of God.

And thirdly, the *Blood*, symbolizing the *Incarnation* and *Passion* of God the Son, through Whom all grace descends from the Father, by the *Holy Spirit*. See on 2 Cor. xiii. 13.

These Three *Persons* are joined consubstantially into one *Godhead*; and their *Witness* is the *witness of God*. Cp. *Bp. Andrewes*, iii. p. 354, who observes that "*Water* notes *Creation*; *Blood* notes *Redemption* by Christ; the *Spirit* notes *Unction*, to complete all."

There is an image of the *Trinity* in the Christian Sacraments. There is, *baptismus fluminis*, the Baptism of *Water*, the work of *Creation* by the Father; there is *baptismus sanguinis*, the Baptism of *Blood*, the work of *Redemption* by the Son; but these are not enough, unless there be also the *baptismus flaminis*, the Baptism of the *Spirit*. Thus the work of the Ever-Blessed *Trinity* is done in the soul. Cp. *Bp. Andrewes*, iii. 248.

The above considerations may explain the addition which has found its way into the text of some few Manuscripts here, "in heaven, the Father, the Word, and the Holy Ghost, and these three are one, and three are they who are bearing witness on earth." These words were probably originally only an expository gloss. They are a correct exposition of St. John's meaning, and there is no reason to suspect that they were interpolated designedly. They were probably written originally by some expositor on the margin of his manuscript; perhaps they were derived by him from *S. Cyprian*, and were adopted by some subsequent transcriber, who supposed them to belong to the Text; as was sometimes the case with marginal glosses; cp. *Valcknaer*, de Glossis in N. T.¹

9. ὅτι μεμαρτύρηκε] because He hath testified. Elz. has ἦν for ὅτι, but ὅτι is in A, B, and N; and Vulg. has 'quia.'

10. ψεύστην πεποίηκεν αὐτόν] he hath made Him a liar, accounts Him as such. See i. 10.

¹ Dr. Bentley's opinion concerning the genuineness of this passage, is matter of interest on account of the special attention which that celebrated critic gave to it. It is thus expressed in a letter dated Jan. 1, 1716-17:—

"In my proposed work" (his edition of the Greek Testament) "the fate of that verse will be a mere question of fact" (i. e. it will depend on the testimony of the MSS.). "You endeavour to prove (and that's all you aspire to) that it may have been writ by the Apostle, being consonant to his other doctrine. This I concede to you; and if the fourth century knew that text, let it come in, in God's name; but if that age did not know it, then Arianism in its height was beat down without the help of that verse; and let the fact prove as it will, the doctrine is unshaken." Ric. Bentley.

Bentley delivered his famous Praelectio on this verse, May 1, 1717, four months after the date of this letter. See *Whiston's Memoirs*, p. 314. *Bentley's Works*, iii. 485. *Bp. Monk's Bentley*, ii. pp. 16—19. What the tenor of that Praelectio was—which is lost—may be gathered from the remarks on the subject in *Casley's Preface* to his Catalogue of the Royal Library, p. xxi, ed. Lond. 1734, where, from conversations with Dr. Bentley, he vindicates Bentley's assertions on this and other questions of Biblical Criticism. The person who speaks as follows is surely not Casley, but Bentley, p. xxi,—"But how to account for this verse being first inserted is the difficulty; and some have not stuck to call it a forgery. But I hope better things, and that it may be made to have appeared by a mistake of a Latin Scribe, in the eighth or ninth century, on the following occasion; *S. Cyprian*, a famous Latin father, has the words of that

verse in his works; and it is no wonder if they were transcribed thence into the margin, or between the lines of the eighth verse, of a book of some one who had a great veneration for that Father, as a gloss, which is very common in MSS.; as it is not improbable that *Cassiodorus* in his *Complexiones in Epistolas*, and others who have the words, took them from *Cyprian*. Next, a copyist, being employed to write out this particular book, and finding the words so inserted, imagined that the former copyist, by mistake, had omitted them, and therefore put them in the text. Such insertions of explanatory words or sentences from the margin into the text are common in MSS. *Jerome*, in one of his letters, says, that an explanatory note, which he had made himself in the margin of his Psalter, had been incorporated by some transcriber into the text. And thus this insertion might rest till a long time after, and then the sham Preface to the Catholic Epistles must be made, complaining of the unfaithful Translators for leaving it out! Whereas, it is matter of fact, that no Greek Copies of this Epistle had that verse, save one at Berlin, which is discovered to have been transcribed from the printed *Biblia Complutensis*, and another modern one at Dublin, probably translated or printed from the Latin Vulgate, neither the Author of the Preface, nor any friend for him, having searched for it in any Greek copy." See also p. xxiv, "To return to 1 John v. 7, when the foresaid Preface was made, then was the Text also inserted in other copies that had it not, several of which are now to be found in Libraries."

Some few unimportant omissions and alterations have been made in the above extracts.

ἐστὶν ἡ μαρτυρία, ὅτι ζωὴν αἰώνιον ἔδωκεν ἡμῖν ὁ Θεὸς, καὶ αὕτη ἡ ζωὴ ἐν τῷ
 Τίῳ αὐτοῦ ἐστίν. ¹² ^k Ὁ ἔχων τὸν Τίον ἔχει τὴν ζωὴν· ὁ μὴ ἔχων τὸν Τίον τοῦ
 Θεοῦ τὴν ζωὴν οὐκ ἔχει. ^k John 3. 36.
 & 5. 24.

¹³ ^l Ταῦτα ἔγραψα ὑμῖν, ἵνα εἰδῆτε ὅτι ζωὴν ἔχετε αἰώνιον οἱ πιστεύοντες εἰς
 τὸ ὄνομα τοῦ Υἱοῦ τοῦ Θεοῦ. ¹⁴ ^m Καὶ αὕτη ἐστὶν ἡ παρρησία ἣν ἔχομεν πρὸς
 αὐτὸν, ὅτι ἐάν τι αἰτώμεθα κατὰ τὸ θέλημα αὐτοῦ, ἀκούει ἡμῶν ¹⁵ καὶ ἐὰν
 οἶδαμεν ὅτι ἀκούει ἡμῶν ὁ ἂν αἰτώμεθα, οἶδαμεν ὅτι ἔχομεν τὰ αἰτήματα ἃ
 ᾠτήκαμεν παρ' αὐτοῦ. ^m Jer. 29. 12.
 Matt. 7. 8.
 & 21. 22.
 Mark 11. 24.
 Luke 11. 9.
 John 14. 13.
 & 15. 7. & 16. 24.
 James 1. 5.
 ch. 3. 22.
 n Num. 15. 30.
 1 Sam. 2. 25.
 Jer. 15. 1, 2.
 Matt. 12. 31.
 Mark 3. 29.
 Luke 12. 10.
 Heb. 6. 4.
 & 10. 26.
 2 Pet. 2. 20.
 o ch. 3. 4.
 p ch. 3. 9.
 James 1. 27.

¹⁶ ⁿ Ἐάν τις ἴδῃ τὸν ἀδελφὸν αὐτοῦ ἁμαρτάνοντα ἁμαρτίαν μὴ πρὸς θάνατον,
 αἰτήσῃ, καὶ δώσῃ αὐτῷ ζωὴν, τοῖς ἁμαρτάνουσι μὴ πρὸς θάνατον ἐστίν
 ἁμαρτία πρὸς θάνατον· οὐ περὶ ἐκείνης λέγω ἵνα ἐρωτήσῃ. ¹⁷ ^o πᾶσα ἀδικία
 ἁμαρτία ἐστὶ, καὶ ἐστὶν ἁμαρτία οὐ πρὸς θάνατον. ¹⁸ ^p Οἶδαμεν ὅτι πᾶς ὁ
 γεγεννημένος ἐκ τοῦ Θεοῦ οὐχ ἁμαρτάνει· ἀλλ' ὁ γεννηθεὶς ἐκ τοῦ Θεοῦ τηρεῖ
 ἑαυτὸν, καὶ ὁ πονηρὸς οὐχ ἄπτεται αὐτοῦ. ¹⁹ Οἶδαμεν ὅτι ἐκ τοῦ Θεοῦ ἐσμεν,
 καὶ ὁ κόσμος ὅλος ἐν τῷ πονηρῷ κεῖται. ²⁰ ^q Οἶδαμεν δὲ ὅτι ὁ Τίος τοῦ Θεοῦ
 ἦκει, καὶ δέδωκεν ἡμῖν διάνοιαν, ἵνα γινώσκωμεν τὸν ἀληθινόν· καὶ ἐσμεν ἐν
 τῷ ἀληθινῷ, ἐν τῷ Τίῳ αὐτοῦ Ἰησοῦ Χριστῷ· οὗτός ἐστιν ὁ ἀληθινὸς Θεὸς καὶ
 ἡ ζωὴ αἰώνιος. ^q Luke 24. 45.
 John 17. 3.

11. καὶ αὕτη ἐστὶν ἡ μαρτυρία] *and this is the witness; this is*
what God Himself testifies, viz. that God gave to us (as a free
gift) eternal life; and this eternal life is in His Son, and is
bestowed on us through Him. See John i. 4; iii. 15. 36; v. 26;
vi. 33. 35. 40; x. 28; xi. 25; xiv. 6; xvii. 3.

13. ὑμῖν] *Elz. adds here τοῖς πιστεύουσιν εἰς τὸ ὄνομα τοῦ*
Υἱοῦ τοῦ Θεοῦ—but this addition is not in A, B, and in the
majority of Versions, and is rejected by Griesb., Scholz, Lach.,
Tisch.

— ἵνα εἰδῆτε] *in order that ye may know.* Observe the word
οἶδαμεν, we know, repeated five times in the following verses, con-
trasting strongly the nature of true Christian γνῶσις or know-
ledge, with that of the ψευδώνυμος γνῶσις, of the Gnostics. See
the like use of οἶδαμεν, we know, at the close of St. John's
Gospel, xxi. 24.

— οἱ πιστεύοντες] *So A.—B has τοῖς πιστεύουσιν—and so*
Griesb., Scholz, Lach., Tisch.—Elz. has καὶ ἵνα πιστεύητε.

14. παρρησία] *confidence, especially in prayer. See iii. 21, 22.*

— ἐάν τι αἰτώμεθα] *if we pray for any thing, observe,*
according to His Will, He heareth us, and if we know that He
heareth us, we know that we have the things which we have
prayed for; for, either we receive the very things themselves, or,
something better than the things which we ourselves desire; and
since our prayers are always framed according to His will, we do
receive the things for which we pray. See the case of St. Paul's
prayer, notes above on 2 Cor. xii. 9.

16. ἐστὶν ἁμαρτία πρὸς θάνατον] *there is a sin unto death. I*
am not speaking concerning that, in order that he, the Christian
brother, should ask (ἐρωτήσῃ).

The distinction between sins *unto death*, and sins *not unto*
death, is grounded on Hebrew Law and Language (Lev. xvii. 6.
Schoettgen, Horæ, here), but it takes a spiritual form under the
Gospel; and death is not used in the sense of capital punish-
ment, but as opposed to the ζωὴ, or life, of the soul.

Observe the change of the word from αἰτεῖν, *petere*, to
 ἐρωτᾶν, *rogare*: the one signifying to *pray*, as an inferior suitor
 to a superior, the other expressing rather a *general act of an*
inquirer, or the request of an equal, who has a right to ask and
obtain. See John xi. 22, and on xvi. 23, and Bengel here, and
Dean Trench, Synonym. N. T. xl.

By using the word ἐρωτήσῃ here, and by placing the word
 emphatically at the *end* of the sentence, St. John appears to
 intimate, that no *interrogatory questions* are to be addressed to
 God, concerning the person who is *sinning a sin unto death*, and
 that this would be to deal presumptuously and to tempt God.

Clemens Alexandrinus (Strom. ii. p. 389) cites this passage
 in treating of the difference between sins of *infirmity*, and sins of
presumption. The *sin unto death* is *wilful resistance of the*
Holy Ghost; obstinate denial and rejection of Christ, who is the
Life (cp. v. 12); *deliberate and open Anti-christianism; pre-*
sumptuous sin (such as that described in Matt. xii. 31. Heb. vi.
 4—8; x. 28—30), *persisted in, after warnings and censures of*
the Church. He who continues obstinately in such sin, is not a
fit subject for any inquiries of God; God has spoken clearly con-

cerning him; he is not to be received into our houses (2 John 10,
 11), he is to be separated from the holy offices of the Church, in
 order that by excommunication—which is a rehearsal of future
 and eternal judgment—he may learn not to blaspheme, and be
 alarmed and terrified, and so his soul may be saved in the day of
 the Lord. See above on Matt. xviii. 17. 1 Cor. v. 5. 1 Tim. i.
 20, and *Bp. Wilson* here.

God Himself has declared His will that prayers should not
 be made for certain *desperate sinners* (see Jer. vii. 16; xi. 14;
 xiv. 11); and if a man is deprived of the prayers of the Church,
 this very denial may have a salutary influence with him in such a
 case, where no milder medicines will avail.

Besides, the bodily afflictions and other temporal chastise-
 ments which may overtake him in consequence of such suspension
 and privation, when by the withdrawal of God's good Spirit for
 a time *Satan* may chastise and torment him (see 1 Cor. v. 5),
 may have a wholesome effect in making him feel “how bitter a
 thing it is to forsake God” (Jer. ii. 19), and may bring him under
 the operation of fear and anguish, and soften his heart, and lead
 him to repentance, and by repentance to pardon and grace, and
 in the end to everlasting salvation.

Therefore St. John does not prescribe prayer in such a case;
 but he implies that *other means* are to be used.

18. οὐχ ἁμαρτάνει] *he sinneth not*, is not a sinner; see on
 iii. 9. He that *was born of God, keepeth himself*, takes heed to
 his ways (1 Tim. v. 22. James i. 27). *That is his true character*
and proper condition; and the evil One layeth not hold of him,
—οὐχ ἄπτεται αὐτοῦ. On the sense of ἄπτομαι, to grasp and
cling to, see above on John xx. 17.

19. καὶ ὁ κόσμος ὅλος ἐν τῷ πονηρῷ κεῖται] *and the world*
wholly lieth in the dominion of the Wicked One, v. 18; ii. 13;
it lieth as a captive beneath his feet. On the use of ἐν, see
Winer, § 48.

There is a contrast here between τοῦ Θεοῦ and τῷ πονηρῷ.
 The saints are born of *God* and *stand* ἐν Θεῷ, ἐν
 Κυρίῳ, ἐν Χριστῷ (cp. on Rom. xvi. 9), and we *are in Him*, have
 our life in Him, Who is the true One, ἐν τῷ ἀληθινῷ, see v. 20;
 but the *world lieth altogether* (ὅλος) ἐν τῷ πονηρῷ.

20. τὸν ἀληθινόν] *Him that is true*: the true God as opposed
 to the so-called, and false gods, the idols of the heathen, men-
 tioned below, v. 21.

On ἀληθινός, as used in this sense, see above on John xvii. 3.
 Cp. 1 Thess. i. 9.

— καὶ ἐσμεν ἐν τῷ ἀληθινῷ] *and we are in Him that is true,*
in His Son Jesus Christ. By being in His Son Jesus Christ we
are in Him Who is the true God.

— οὗτός ἐστιν ὁ ἀληθινὸς Θεός] *He—namely, Jesus Christ—*
is the true God and Life eternal. Thus St. John closes his
Epistle, as he had begun his Gospel, with asserting that Jesus
Christ, the Son of God, is Himself the true God, and Life Eternal.
See John i. 1—4, which is the best exposition of this passage, and
there St. John says expressly that the “Word was God, and
that in Him was Life.” Cp. above, v. 11, and Dr. Waterland,
v. p. 193, who says, “The title of the true God is here given to

1 Cor. 10. 14.

21 Ἡ Τεκνία, φυλάξατε ἑαυτοὺς ἀπὸ τῶν εἰδώλων.

Christ; and observes, "every word here is aptly chosen to obviate the heresy of Cerinthus, and of other the like false teachers of those times."

The Son of *God*, not of Joseph and Mary, nor the Son of the *Only-begotten* as some said, but the Son of *God His Father*, is come in the flesh; not merely to reside in it for a season, as the Cerinthians held, and then to fly off from it, but to abide in us, to be clothed for ever with the humanity He has taken: and we are in Him that is true, the true God, by Jesus Christ *Who is the true God*, not an inferior power or Angel, such as Cerinthus supposed the *Demiurge*, or Creator of the world to be, nor a created *Æon*, the offspring of the *Monogenes* or *Only-begotten*, or of *Silence*, as Cerinthus imagined the *Logos* or *Word* to be; but the *true God*, one with the Father. See also *Bp. Pearson*, Art. ii. p. 247, who says, "*Christ* is not only here termed God, but the *true God*:" and cp. p. 259, and *Bengel* here.

St. John's words seem to have been in the mind of his scholar, *S. Ignatius*, who confirms the above interpretation, and writes concerning Christ, as ἐν σαρκὶ γενόμενος Θεὸς, ἐν θανάτῳ ζῶν ἀληθινός: cp. *Tertullian*, de carne Christi, § 5.

21. τεκνία—εἰδώλων] *My little children* (see ii. 12), *guard yourselves from idols*. Ye are in Him who is the *true God*, and cannot therefore have any communion with *false gods*. "What concord hath Christ with Belial? and what agreement hath the temple of God with *idols*? Ye are the temple of the *living God*." (2 Cor. vi. 16.) Those so-called gods are *dead*. You

live among the Heathen; be on your guard against the allurements of their idolatrous worship. And be not led astray by some who call themselves Christians, such as the Nicolaitans, who would inveigle you to eat things offered to *idols* (Rev. ii. 2. 15), and lead you into idolatry; or by the followers of Simon Magus, who even worship idols (see *Irenæus*, i. 20, Grabe, and *Euseb.* ii. 13); or by others, such as the Cerinthians (*Philastr.* hæc. 36), who would persuade you that you need not bear witness to God and Christ, but may safely offer incense to the idols of the Heathen, rather than suffer martyrdom. *Therefore, little children, keep yourselves from idols.*

Here is a farewell admonition from St. John to the Church of every age. He warns her against that danger, of which later generations have had mournful experience, and which he foresaw and foretold in his Apocalypse. See Rev. ix. 20.

The admonition of St. John, *keep yourselves from idols*, is the more remarkable, on account of its juxtaposition with his teaching here that *Jesus Christ is God*. If Jesus Christ is *not* God, then the Christianity, which St. John himself teaches, is *idolatry*. But Jesus Christ is the *true God*, and therefore that form of religion which hath not the Son, as the Son is revealed by St. John, *hath not the Father*. (1 John ii. 23.) "He that believeth on the Son hath everlasting life, and he that believeth not the Son, shall not see life, but the wrath of God abideth on him." John iii. 36.

INTRODUCTION

TO

THE SECOND EPISTLE OF ST. JOHN.

THE method adopted by St. Peter and St. Paul in their teaching on the Nature and Person of Christ, is employed also by St. John. First, they established the Truth; next, they refuted Error. The work of *construction* was effected by St. Peter in his First Epistle; in his Second Epistle he denounced the heresies of false Teachers. St. Paul performed the first of these Apostolic acts in his Epistle to the Ephesians; the latter¹ was done by him in his Epistle to the Colossian Church.

1. St. John had executed the former of these tasks—that of establishing the Truth—in his Gospel. He afterwards proceeded to complete his plan by accomplishing the latter—that of censuring and correcting Heresy—in his Epistles².

2. This Second Epistle of St. John, brief as it is, is ministered to this end; and it conduces to it even by its brevity.

Let us consider how this appears to be the case.

3. This Second Epistle opens with the words ὁ πρεσβύτερος Ἐκλεκτῇ Κυρίᾳ καὶ τοῖς τέκνοις αὐτῆς, “*The elder to an elect Lady and her children;*” and it ends with the words, “*The children of thy sister who is elect greet thee.*” In the former case the word *elect* has not the definite article; in the latter it has.

4. The question here arises,—Who is this ἐκλεκτῇ κυρία, to whom St. John writes?

Many Expositors are of opinion, that St. John is writing here to a *private person*; and it has been supposed by some³, that her name was *Kyria*, *Kyria*, and by others⁴, that her name was *Electa*.

But it appears more probable that under this title St. John is addressing a Christian CHURCH.

This interpretation is suggested by the words used by St. John's brother Apostle St. Peter, at the close of his Epistle, “*The co-Elect⁵ with you, that is at Babylon, saluteth you⁶.*” There the word “*co-elect*” signifies “*a Church*,” and it is probable that the word ἐκλεκτῇ (*elect*) here used by St. John, has a like meaning.

Besides, at the end of the present Epistle, we read a salutation which seems to be formed on that of St. Peter. St. Peter's words at the end of *his* Epistle are Ἀσπάζεται ὑμᾶς ἡ ἐν Βαβυλῶνι συνεκλεκτή. Let us compare St. John's final salutation, sent in this Epistle to the *Elect one*, whom he addresses from the Children of her Elect sister: Ἀσπάζεται σε τὰ τέκνα τῆς ἀδελφῆς σου τῆς ἐκλεκτῆς, “*The children of thy sister, who is Elect, greet thee.*”

St. Peter had written from Babylon to the elect in *Asia*⁸, and saluted them in the name of a *co-elect* one at Babylon; and *that co-elect* one at Babylon was a *Church*.

St. John, whose residence was in *Asia*, writes to an *Elect* one, and sends to her the greetings of an *elect sister*. Hence it appears probable that the *elect one* and her *elect sister* are not private individuals, but *Churches*.

The word Ἐκλεκτῇ, *elect*, is used by the Septuagint in the Canticles as the characteristic of Christ's spouse, the *Church*⁹. And in an ancient painting at St. Maria in Trastevere, at Rome,

¹ See above, *Introduction* to the Second Epistle of St. Peter, pp. 71, 72.

² See above, p. 97, note, and on 1 John i. 1.

³ Bengel, Heumann, Lücke, De Wette, and others.

⁴ Grotius, Wetstein.

⁵ συνεκλεκτή.

⁶ 1 Pet. v. 13.

⁷ See the note there.

⁸ 1 Pet. i. 1.

⁹ See Cant. vi. 8, 9, τίς αὕτη ἐκλεκτή, ὡς ὁ ἥλιος;

Christ is represented as enthroned with the Church as the Queen on His right hand¹, and in His right hand a book with the words inscribed "*Veni, Electa Mea, et ponam te in thronum Meum.*"

The word *Kyria*, *Lady*, here used with *ἐκλεκτή*, *elect*, is descriptive of a *Church*. Jesus Christ, the *Lord*, is *Kύριος*; His spouse, a *Church*, is *Kυρία*². This is declared by the very name *Church* (*Κυριακή*).

In the Old Testament the *Churches* of Israel and Judah are designated as *sisters*³.

Besides, it is not likely that St. John should have written to a *private woman* and to her children, and have sent a salutation from the children of a woman, and not have made any mention of the *Husband* of either of these two women. They may have been both Widows: but there is no evidence of this.

Still further, St. John does *not* say, "Thy elect sister and her children greet thee." He would probably have written so, if he had been writing from the household of one woman to another woman. But he says, "The children of thine elect sister greet thee."

This circumstance also confirms the opinion, that the sister is a *Church*. Her children are the members of the Church. They are the Church. And if the Elect sister whose children's salutations are sent, is a *Church*, the Elect Lady whose sister she is, is probably a Church also.

Besides, St. John describes the children of her to whom he writes as "*loved by all persons, who have known the truth*."⁴ This could hardly be applicable to the children of a *private woman*—particularly a widow: but it might be true of the spiritual children of a Church⁵.

To personify a *Church*, is also in harmony with the manner and mind of *St. John*. In his Apocalypse, the Christian Church is represented as a *Woman*⁶, and the Church triumphant is described as "*the Bride, the Lamb's Wife*."⁷

Accordingly, we find that in early times this Epistle was supposed by some Interpreters⁸ to be addressed to a *Church*, or to *the Church*.

This exposition has also been adopted in recent times by many learned writers⁹.

5. If this Epistle was addressed to a *Church*, it may be next inquired;—
To what Church?

For a reply to this question, let us consider the brotherly relation of St. Peter to St. John¹⁰; and that it is a distinguishing characteristic of the Catholic Epistles, that they are interwoven¹¹ with one another, in thought and language; and that there was an intimate connexion and sympathy between the Jewish Christians of *Asia*, where *St. John* resided, and those of *Babylonia*, from which St. Peter wrote¹²; and that the *Parthians*, *Medes*, and *Elamites*, and dwellers in *Mesopotamia*, that is, the inhabitants of *Babylonia* and its neighbourhood, are mentioned the first among those who were evangelized by the Apostles on the day of Pentecost¹³, and that almost immediately after them are mentioned the dwellers in *Asia*; and that the *Parthians* then occupied the second place among the nations of the world, and that they inhabited the region of *Babylon* and the adjacent countries.

Let us also bear in mind, that *St. Peter's* First Epistle was written to the *elect* of *St. John's* own province, *Asia*, and that he sends in it the greetings of a *co-elect Church*¹⁴.

When these circumstances are duly weighed, it will not appear improbable, that St. John's Epistle, which was written to an elect *Lady*, and that *Lady* a *Church*; and which conveys the salutations of the children of an elect *Sister*, and that *sister* a *Church*; was of the nature of an Apostolic reply from a sister Church of *Asia*,—such as that of *Ephesus* the capital of *Asia* and the residence of St. John,—to that other Church, from which his brother Apostle, St. Peter, had written to the Churches of *Asia*,—namely, the Church at *Babylon*.

Such a sisterly communication, from one Church to another, would come with peculiar grace

¹ Ps. xlv. 10.

² Some Versions have *Kyria* (e.g. the Syriac and Æthiopic), others have *Lady* (e.g. the Vulgate and Arabic).

³ Jer. iii. 7, 8. Ezek. xxiii. 4.

⁴ v. 1.

⁵ Cp. 1 Thess. i. 8. Rom. i. 8.

⁶ Rev. xii. 1. 4. 6. 13—17.

⁷ xxi. 9.

⁸ S. Jerome, Epist. xi. ad Ageruchiam, speaking of the Church, after he has quoted the Canticles, vi. 9, "Una est columba mea electa genetrix suæ," adds, "ad quam scribit Joannes Epistolam 'Senior electæ Dominæ';" and so the ancient scholion in *Matthæi*, p. 152, "The Elect Lady is a Church." And this inter-

pretation is mentioned also by *Œcumenius* (ad finem Epist.) and *Theophylact*, and in *Cramer's Catena*, p. 146, and *Cassiodorus* in the sixth century (*Complexiones*, p. 136) says here, "Joannes electæ Dominæ scribit Ecclesiæ filiisque ejus." And at the end of this Epistle the *elect sister* (in v. 13) is described by some MSS. as the *Church at Ephesus*. See *Tischendorf*, p. 233.

⁹ *Hammond*, *Whitby*, *Michaelis*, *Augusti*, *Hofmann*, *H. W. Thiersch*, and *Huther*.

¹⁰ See on Acts iii. 1.

¹¹ See above, *Introduction* to the Catholic or General Epistles.

¹² See on Acts ii. 9—11, and 1 Pet. v. 13.

¹³ Acts ii. 9.

¹⁴ 1 Pet. v. 13.

from a Church of St. John to a Church of St. Peter. St. John and St. Peter had been united by the tenderest and most endearing ties of love, as brother Apostles in Christ. They had been together with Christ in His Transfiguration and Agony; they were together at His sepulchre; they were together at the Sea of Galilee after His Resurrection; they were together at the day of Pentecost, and in the Temple after His Resurrection¹; they were together in Prison at Jerusalem; they went together from Jerusalem to Samaria to lay hands on those who had been baptized².

Some confirmation is afforded to this opinion by the following facts.

This *second* Epistle, as well as the *first*³ Epistle of St. John, is described by some ancient authorities⁴ as addressed to the *Parthians*.

It seems probable, therefore, that this Epistle was addressed to the *Church at Babylon*.

There would be a peculiar interest and beauty in such an address as this from St. John to a *Church at Babylon*.

The City of *Babylon* had said, in the day of her heathen pride, "I shall be a *Lady* for ever⁵," and she had been called the Lady of kingdoms⁶. Babylon had fallen from her high estate; but St. Peter had preached on the Day of Pentecost to the *Parthians*, the inhabitants of Babylonia, and they had been baptized into Christ⁷. Thus there was an *elect* Church at *Babylon*; a *Sion* even at *Babylon*⁸. And there would be a happy coincidence in the circumstance, that the great Assyrian Babylon, that persecuting city which had boasted that she should be "a *Lady* for ever," and was rejected, and then fell, should have risen again in Christ, and have been espoused to Him as a Church, and become an *elect Lady* in Him, and be addressed as such by the Apostolic brother of St. Peter, the beloved disciple, St. John.

6. If the above opinion is well grounded, we may recognize here a special use of this Epistle. It is indeed a very short one, but it serves an important purpose.

St. Peter, in his two Epistles addressed to the Christians of Asia, had inculcated those Articles of the Christian Faith which St. John laboured to defend; and St. Peter had delivered a prophetic warning against those Heresiarchs, who in the age and country of St. John, were endeavouring to destroy the foundations of the Faith in the Incarnation of the Son of God, and in the Godhead of Jesus Christ: and who, as St. Peter had predicted, were denying the Lord that bought them⁹, and were walking after the flesh in the lust of uncleanness¹⁰.

In the present Epistle St. John delivers a clear statement of the truth on those great articles of Christian Faith and Morals; and pronounces a stern condemnation of those heretical and antinomian Teachers who assaulted them, and whom he calls *Antichrist*¹¹.

This profession and protest would be more easily *transcribed*, and be more readily *circulated*, on account of the *brevity* of the Epistle, in which they are contained. It may seem surprising at first, that so short an Epistle should be received into the Canon of the New Testament. But, under the circumstances of the case, one of its strongest recommendations was, that it was *short*. It was a symbol of Faith, and safeguard against Error,—from the hands of St. John.

The Christians of Asia, and of the East, would be confirmed in their Faith and Practice by receiving the Apostolic witness of *St. John* to the *same truths* as those which they had heard from *St. Peter*. And the Church of every age may derive comfort from seeing the two Apostles, St. Peter and St. John, associated for ever in their writings, as they had been associated in their lives, in preaching the Truth, as it is in Jesus Christ, and faithfully feeding His flock, and guarding it valiantly against the wolves, who endeavour to destroy it¹².

7. The facts and considerations now submitted to the reader have some bearing on the question which was briefly mentioned at the close of the *Introduction* to the *First* Epistle of St. John.

¹ See on Acts iii. 1.

² See Acts viii. 14.

³ See *Athanasius* in *Bede*, Prolog. ad Ep. Catholic. p. 157. *Augustine*, whose Commentary on the First Epistle is entitled *Tractatus in Epistolam Joannis ad Parthos*, see vol. iii. p. 2480, and *Cassiodorus*, *Complexiones*, p. 126. *Scholz*, p. 155. *Tisch.* p. 213.

⁴ Cp. *Tisch.* p. 233. In the Latin Translation of S. Clement's *Adumbrationes* (p. 1011) we read "*Secunda Joannis Epistola, quæ ad Virgines inscripta est, simplicissima est.*" Here the word *Virgines* is a translation of Παρθένους, which was probably only a corruption of Παρθους, the *Parthians*, who had the rule of *Babylonia* in the age of St. Peter and St. John (see *Kirchofer*, p. 289). Indeed, S. Clement himself seems to have preserved

VOL. II.—PART IV.

something of a tradition to this effect. For while he says that this *Second* Epistle is written to a *Babylonian*, he says that the word *Electa* signified the Election of a *Church*.

⁵ Isa. xlvii. 7.

⁶ Isa. xlvii. 5. The word for *Lady* there is גְּבֵרֶת (*gebereth*), which is often rendered *Kupla* (the word here used by St. John) by the LXX, as in Gen. xvi. 4. 8, 9. Isa. xxiv. 2.

⁷ See Acts ii. 9.

⁸ See on 1 Pet. v. 13.

⁹ 2 Pet. ii. 1.

¹⁰ 2 Pet. ii. 10.

¹¹ See vv. 7—11.

¹² John x. 10—12.

That Epistle also, as we have seen ¹, is described by some Ancient Writers and Manuscripts as having been addressed "to the *Parthians*."

There is nothing improbable in this statement. In the Apostolic age, as has been already observed, the Parthians were second only to the Romans among the nations of the world. Many Jews dwelt in Parthia. The *Parthians* are placed first in the catalogue of the Jews who heard St. Peter preach at Jerusalem ². Babylon was in Parthia. St. Peter, it is probable, had gone thither in person, and had thence written an Epistle to the Churches of St. John ³.

Bearing in mind these circumstances, and considering the testimony of some ancient writers and Manuscripts specifying the *Parthians* in the inscription of the Epistle, and that there is no evidence to the contrary, and that no *other* name is mentioned by any ancient writer in that inscription, we cannot reject that testimony as altogether incredible; and we may at least be permitted to suppose it probable, that the First Epistle of St. John, written in all likelihood from Asia, was addressed to the same country as that in which his brother Apostle, St. Peter, was, when he wrote his first Epistle, which he sent to the Churches of Asia.

¹ See above, note ⁴.

² Acts ii. 9.

³ See 1 Pet. v. 13.

ΙΩΑΝΝΟΥ Β'

¹ Ὁ ΠΡΕΣΒΥΤΕΡΟΣ ἐκλεκτῇ κυρίᾳ καὶ τοῖς τέκνοις αὐτῆς, οὓς ἐγὼ ἀγαπῶ ἐν ἀληθείᾳ, καὶ οὐκ ἐγὼ μόνος, ἀλλὰ καὶ πάντες οἱ ἐγνωκότες τὴν ἀλήθειαν, ² διὰ τὴν ἀλήθειαν τὴν μένουσαν ἐν ἡμῖν, καὶ μεθ' ἡμῶν ἔσται εἰς τὸν αἰῶνα· ³ ἔσται μεθ' ὑμῶν χάρις, ἔλεος, εἰρήνη παρὰ Θεοῦ Πατρὸς, καὶ παρὰ Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ τοῦ Υἱοῦ τοῦ Πατρὸς, ἐν ἀληθείᾳ καὶ ἀγάπῃ.

⁴ Ἐχάρην λίαν, ὅτι εὗρηκα ἐκ τῶν τέκνων σου περιπατοῦντας ἐν ἀληθείᾳ, καθὼς ἐντολὴν ἐλάβομεν παρὰ τοῦ Πατρὸς. ⁵ ^a Καὶ νῦν ἐρωτῶ σε, Κυρία, οὐχ ὡς ἐντολὴν γράφων σοι καινὴν, ἀλλὰ ἣν εἶχομεν ἀπ' ἀρχῆς, ἵνα ἀγαπῶμεν ἀλλήλους. ⁶ ^b Καὶ αὕτη ἐστὶν ἡ ἀγάπη, ἵνα περιπατῶμεν κατὰ τὰς ἐντολὰς αὐτοῦ. Αὕτη ἡ ἐντολή ἐστίν, καθὼς ἠκούσατε ἀπ' ἀρχῆς, ἵνα ἐν αὐτῇ περιπατῆτε. ⁷ ^c Ὅτι πολλοὶ πλάνοι ἐξῆλθον εἰς τὸν κόσμον, οἱ μὴ ὁμολογοῦντες

^a John 13. 34. & 15. 12.
^b Eph. 5. 2.
^c 1 Thess. 4. 9.
1 Pet. 4. 8.
1 John 2. 7, 8.
& 3. 11, 23.
& 4. 21.
^b John 15. 10.
1 John 2. 24.
^c Matt. 24. 5, 24.
2 Pet. 2. 1.
1 John 2. 18, 22.
& 4. 1-3.

1. ὁ πρεσβύτερος] *The elder.* The beloved Disciple and Apostle, St. John, thus designates himself in modesty; so St. Peter calls himself *συμπρεσβύτερος*, 1 Pet. v. 1. Cp. 3 John 1. St. John was eminently "*the elder*," because it is probable, when he wrote his Epistles, he was the only survivor of those who had been ordained by Christ; and this title may also have been adopted by him because he was advanced in years. Christ had declared His will, that St. John "should tarry till He came" (John xxi. 21; see also on 1 John ii. 6); and his life was continued to upwards of a hundred years, so that there was a peculiar significance in this appellation, as applied to him. Here also is an evidence of genuineness. A writer personating the Apostle would not have withheld the Apostolic title, which the true Apostles sometimes do: see James i. 1. Jude 1. In the Apocalypse St. John in his modesty calls himself only *John*: i. 1. 4. 9; xii. 8.

— ἐκλεκτῇ κυρίᾳ] *to the elect Lady and her children.* On the sense of these words, see above, *Introduction* to this Epistle.

— οὓς ἐγὼ ἀγαπῶ ἐν ἀληθείᾳ] *whom I love in Christian truth,* which is the only genuine foundation and element of Christian love; cp. 3 John 1. Truth is here opposed to the deceits of the false Teachers who are called *liars*, *ψεύσται* (see 1 John ii. 22; cp. *ibid.* ii. 4; iv. 20), and whose heresies impugn the doctrine of Christ's Divinity and Incarnation, and are destructive of Christian Love and Christian Morality; see above, pp. 103, 104. Observe, therefore, how St. John dwells on the word ἀλήθεια, *truth*, Truth of Christian doctrine. That word Truth is repeated five times in this short Epistle; and six times in the Third Epistle, consisting only of thirteen verses.

3. χάρις, ἔλεος, εἰρήνη] *Grace, Mercy, Peace.* Both St. Peter's Epistles begin in like manner with the salutation, *χάρις καὶ εἰρήνη*: and so St. John, Rev. i. 4.

— παρὰ Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ] *from Jesus Christ the Son of the Father*—a profession of the true Faith against the heretical doctrines of the Gnostic Teachers; see above, *Introduction* to the First Epistle; on 2 Pet. ii. 1; and on 1 John i. 1-3; and iv. 9.

4. ἐχάρην λίαν] *I rejoiced exceedingly*: on this use of *λίαν* see 3 John 3. Matt. ii. 10; xxvii. 14. Luke xxiii. 8. Cp. *Barnabas*, Epist. c. 1; Avete, filii et filiae, in nomine Domini Nostri Christi in pace, *supra modum exhilaror* beatis et præclaris spiritibus vestris.

— εὗρηκα ἐκ τῶν τέκνων σου] *I have found some of thy children.* Here is another evidence in favour of the opinion—stated above in the *Introduction*—that he is writing to a Church. He had said that "*all Men love the Elect Lady and her children*" (v. 1), and he now says that he himself has found *some* of them walking in the truth. These assertions are hardly applicable to the children of a private woman, but they are suitable to the case of a Church. The Church to which he writes was *known* as a Church to all, and *some* of its members had come to the place where the Apostle was, and he had *found* them to be walking in the truth.

5. ἐρωτῶ σε] *I entreat thee*,—as one who has a right to ask this of thee; see on 1 John v. 16.

— οὐχ ὡς ἐντολὴν γράφων σοι καινὴν] *not as writing to thee (who art already well instructed) a new commandment*: see above on 1 John ii. 8; iii. 11.

6. αὕτη ἐστὶν ἡ ἀγάπη] *this is love, that we walk according to His commandments.* A protest against the false teachers who pretended to *gnosis*, but set at nought *praxis*: see on 1 John i. 5-8; ii. 6-10.

7. πολλοὶ πλάνοι] *many deceivers went forth into the world.* Even from out of the Church herself, the house of God, some have gone forth into the World, which "*lieth under the Wicked one*" (1 John v. 19); and have made the World more wicked than it was. See on 1 John ii. 18, 19.

Elz. has εἰσῆλθον, but A, B have ἐξῆλθον, and so the Syriac, Vulgate, and Irenæus (iii. 16. 8), who quotes these words as from the First Epistle of St. John, and applies them to the Gnostics, who, under pretence of superior intelligence, separated Jesus from Christ (as the Cerinthians did), and separated Christ from the Only-begotten of the Father, and from the Eternal Word.

— οἱ μὴ ὁμολογοῦντες] *those who do not confess—but deny—Jesus Christ coming in the flesh.* See above on 1 John iv. 3.

He says ἐρχόμενον, *coming*, because Jesus Christ is *ever* coming in the flesh to those who receive the benefits of His Incarnation by their baptismal Incorporation into Him, and by the reception of the Holy Sacrament of His Body and Blood; by which, when received with faith, their bodies as well as souls are preserved unto everlasting life. See above on John vi. 54-56; and 1 Cor. x. 16-20. 1 John v. 6.

d Gal. 3. 4. ^{8 d} Ἰησοῦν Χριστὸν ἐρχόμενον ἐν σαρκί· οὗτός ἐστιν ὁ πλάνος καὶ ὁ ἀντίχριστος.
 e 1 John 2. 23. ⁹ Βλέπετε ἑαυτοὺς, ἵνα μὴ ἀπολέσητε τὴν ἐργάσασθε, ἀλλὰ μισθὸν πλήρη ἀπο-
 f Rom. 16. 17. λάβητε. ¹⁰ Πᾶς ὁ προάγων καὶ μὴ μένων ἐν τῇ διδαχῇ τοῦ Χριστοῦ Θεοῦ
 1 Cor. 5. 11. οὐκ ἔχει· ὁ μένων ἐν τῇ διδαχῇ οὗτος καὶ τὸν Πατέρα καὶ τὸν Υἱὸν ἔχει. ¹¹ Εἴ
 & 16. 22. τις ἔρχεται πρὸς ὑμᾶς, καὶ ταύτην τὴν διδαχὴν οὐ φέρει, μὴ λαμβάνετε αὐτὸν
 Gal. 1. 8, 9. εἰς οἰκίαν, καὶ χαίρειν αὐτῷ μὴ λέγετε· ¹² ὁ γὰρ λέγων αὐτῷ χαίρειν κοινωνεῖ
 2 Tim. 3. 5. τοῖς ἔργοις αὐτοῦ τοῖς πονηροῖς.
 Tit. 3. 10. ¹³ Πολλὰ ἔχων ὑμῖν γράφειν οὐκ ἐβουλήθην διὰ χάρτου καὶ μέλανος· ἀλλὰ
 g John 17. 13. ἐλπίζω γενέσθαι πρὸς ὑμᾶς, καὶ στόμα πρὸς στόμα λαλήσαι, ἵνα ἡ χαρὰ ἡμῶν
 1 John 1. 4. ᾗ πεπληρωμένη. ¹⁴ Ἀσπάζεται σε τὰ τέκνα τῆς ἀδελφῆς σου τῆς ἐκλεκτῆς.
 3 John 13.

This the Gnostics denied: see *Ignatius*, ad Smyrn. 6, and note on 1 John iv. 2.

— οὗτός ἐστιν ὁ πλάνος] *this is the deceiver and the Antichrist*: who now specially desires and endeavours to seduce you, and against whom I specially warn you: see above, 1 John ii. 22. 26; iv. 3.

8. ἵνα μὴ ἀπολέσητε] *in order that ye may not lose what ye wrought, but may receive a full reward*. Elz. has these verbs in the first person plural, “in order that *we* may not lose;” but the second person, “*Ye*,” is authorized by A, B, and *Irenæus* (iii. 16. 8), and by many Cursives and Versions; and so *Lach.*, *Tisch.* As to the meaning of the words, see above, 2 Cor. v. 10. Eph. vi. 8. Col. iii. 25, and note on 1 Cor. iii. 12—15.

9. πᾶς ὁ προάγων] *every one who goeth before, and doth not abide in the doctrine of Christ, hath not God*. Every one that goeth before, προάγων: so A, B, and *Vulgate*, and so *Lach.*, *Tisch.* Elz. has παραβαίνων.

There seems to be a gentle touch of irony in the word προάγων. These False teachers are not content to abide in the doctrine of Christ, but they set themselves up as *leaders*; and on the specious plea of making *progress* they carry men away from their steadfastness (2 Pet. iii. 17), and lead them astray (πλανῶσιν) from the right path. They who are wolves, set themselves up as shepherds, and lure Christ's sheep away from those spiritual pastures in which they ought to abide, and from the spiritual fold in which alone they can have rest and safety: προάγων is a pastoral word. Mark x. 32, and John x. 4. Cp. Matt. xxvi. 32; xxviii. 7.

10, 11. εἴ τις ἔρχεται πρὸς ὑμᾶς] *If any one cometh to you and bringeth not this doctrine, do not receive him into your house, nor bid him God speed; for he that biddeth him God speed communicateth in his evil deeds*.

St. John here treats *heresy* as an ἔργον πονηρὸν, a wicked work; as sound faith is a good work, see John vi. 29. Vain therefore is the notion of those who separate practice from faith, and say that a man may lead a good life without a sound belief. A sound faith is the only root of virtuous practice; and heresy is the source of immorality. Cp. 2 Pet. ii. 1—14, and the remarks of *Dr. Waterland* on the Trinity, chap. v. St. John, the beloved disciple, the Apostle of love, and who (as *Dr. Waterland* expresses it, v. p. 108) was all love, meekness, and charity, yet severely condemns the heretics of his own times, either such as denied Christ's Humanity, or impugned His Divinity. He calls them *Antichrists* (1 John ii. 18. 22; iv. 3. 2 John 7), *liars* (1 John ii. 22), *seducers* (1 John ii. 26), *false prophets* (1 John

iv. 1), *deceivers* (2 John 7). See above, *Introduction*, pp. 103, 104. And St. John here forbids to entertain or salute a man who perverts the doctrine of Christ as these heretics did.

This precept may be illustrated by St. John's own example, who one day—as is recorded by *S. Irenæus*—having met Cerinthus at the bath, retired without bathing, “for fear lest the bath should fall, because Cerinthus, the enemy of the truth, was there.” *Iren.* iii. 3. *Euseb.* iii. 28. *Theodoret*, Hær. fab. ii. 3; and *Bede* here.

A like story is told by *S. Irenæus* of *S. Polycarp*, St. John's disciple; who, when he was accosted by Marcion, the Arch-heretic, and was asked by him, “Dost thou not know me?” replied, “Yes, I know thee the first-born of Satan” (*S. Irenæus* iii. 3. *Euseb.* iv. 14). So cautious (adds *Irenæus*) were the Apostles and their followers to have no communication, no not so much as in discourse, with those who adulterated the truth. *Dr. Waterland* on the Trinity, ch. iv. vol. v. p. 91; see also p. 108; and compare note above on 1 Cor. v. 11.

12. χάρτου] *paper*. The Egyptian βύβλος or πάπυρος. It therefore seems that the original of this Epistle was not written on parchment (pergamena).

On the ancient materials of writing, see Jer. xxxvi. 18. 23. Isa. viii. 1. 2 Cor. iii. 3. 3 John 13. Cp. *Jahn*, Archæol. §§ 86—88. *Winer*, R. W. B. ii. p. 421.

— ἐλπίζω γενέσθαι πρὸς ὑμᾶς] *I hope to come and stay with you*. Elz. has ἐλθεῖν, but γενέσθαι, which is more expressive, and not likely to have been introduced by a copyist, is in A, B, and many Cursives, and received by *Lach.*, *Tisch.* On the idiom in γενέσθαι πρὸς, literally, “fieri apud,” cp. John x. 35. Acts xxi. 17; xxv. 15. 1 Cor. xvi. 10.

On the supposition that this Epistle is addressed to a Church, and that the Church to which it is addressed was a Church in *Babylonia* (see above on v. 1), there is no reason for surprise that St. John should intend a journey thither. The inhabitants of that country had come up to Jerusalem, and had been evangelized by the Apostles there on the day of Pentecost (Acts ii. 9). St. Peter in his old age had gone to Babylon, and thence to Rome; see pp. 37—40. And if St. John was now in Asia, as is probable, he was at about a middle point between Babylon and Rome; and if he had “many things to write,” he would not consider a journey from Asia to Babylon as long.

13. ἀσπάζεται σε] *The Children of thine elect sister greet thee*. See on v. 1.

St. John calls his own spiritual children his τέκνα, 3 John 4. Cp. 1 John ii. 1.

INTRODUCTION

TO

THE THIRD EPISTLE OF ST. JOHN.

THIS Epistle is of a moral and disciplinarian character. In it the holy Apostle, who has revealed to the Church the sublimest mysteries of Christian doctrine, applies those principles to matters of practical detail in the regimen of the Church.

"Gaius," or *Caius*, "the beloved" is commended for walking in the Truth, and for bringing forth the fruits of the Truth, in a life of love to the brethren and to strangers. Especially does St. John confide in his Christian charity towards the Ministers of the Gospel, who go forth preaching to the Gentiles, without claiming maintenance from them.

The character of Gaius is contrasted with that of Diotrephes, who had resisted the authority of St. John, and would not receive the brethren, who were probably recommended by the Apostle himself, but even ejected from the Church those who received them.

But St. John announces his intention of bringing Diotrephes to a sense of his duty by a speedy visitation, and by an exercise of his Apostolic authority.

Even in Apostolic times, the spirit of pride and the lust of power made themselves felt in the Church of Christ. God suffered His holy Apostles to be tried by the unruly temper and refractory conduct of false brethren. St. Paul had to contend with an Hymenæus, an Alexander, a Philetus¹, an Hermogenes, and a Phygellus²; even St. John had a Diotrephes. No wonder that a like spirit should show itself in later days. Here is the test of loyalty and love. "Beloved, do not imitate that which is evil, but that which is good. He that doeth good is of God, but he that doeth evil hath not seen God³." The Divine Lord and Master of St. John will come and call all men to account, who, in despising those whom He has sent, have despised Him⁴; and He will salute "His friends by name," with a greeting of everlasting peace.

¹ 1 Tim. i. 20. ² 2 Tim. ii. 17.

³ 3 John 11.

² 2 Tim. i. 15. Cp. *Tertullian*, *Præscr. Hær.* 3.

⁴ Luke x. 16.

ΙΩΑΝΝΟΥ Γ'

¹ Ὁ ΠΡΕΣΒΥΤΕΡΟΣ Γαίῳ τῷ ἀγαπητῷ, ὃν ἐγὼ ἀγαπῶ ἐν ἀληθείᾳ.

² Ἀγαπητέ, περὶ πάντων εὐχομαί σε εὐδοῦσθαι καὶ ὑγιαίνειν, καθὼς εὐδοῦταί σου ἡ ψυχὴ· ³ ἔχάρην γὰρ λίαν ἐρχομένων ἀδελφῶν καὶ μαρτυρούντων σου τῇ ἀληθείᾳ, καθὼς σὺ ἐν ἀληθείᾳ περιπατεῖς. ⁴ Μειζοτέραν τούτων οὐκ ἔχω χαρὰν, ἵνα ἀκούω τὰ ἐμὰ τέκνα ἐν τῇ ἀληθείᾳ περιπατοῦντα.

⁵ Ἀγαπητέ, πιστὸν ποιεῖς, ὃ ἐὰν ἐργάσῃ εἰς τοὺς ἀδελφούς καὶ τοῦτο ξένους, ⁶ οἳ ἐμαρτύρησάν σου τῇ ἀγάπῃ ἐνώπιον ἐκκλησίας, οὓς καλῶς ποιήσεις προπέμψας ἀξίως τοῦ Θεοῦ. ⁷ Ὅτι γὰρ τοῦ ὀνόματος ἐξῆλθον μηδὲν λαμβάνοντες ἀπὸ τῶν ἐθνικῶν. ⁸ Ἡμεῖς οὖν ὀφείλομεν ὑπολαμβάνειν τοὺς τοιούτους, ἵνα συνεργοὶ γινώμεθα τῇ ἀληθείᾳ.

1. ὁ πρεσβύτερος] *The Elder*: on this title adopted by St. John, see 2 John 1.

— Γαίῳ τῷ ἀγαπητῷ] *to Gaius, or Caius the beloved*. He seems to have borne much resemblance in character and acts (see v. 5) to Gaius of Corinth (Rom. xvi. 23), and to Philemon the Colossian friend of St. Paul (Philem. 7). A Gaius was appointed by St. John to be Bishop of Pergamum. *Constit. Apost.* vii. 46.

The word ἀγαπητός, *beloved*, is repeated *four* times in this short Epistle; the word ἀγαπᾶν, *to love*, occurs *twenty-eight* times, and the word ἀγάπη, *eighteen* times in St. John's First Epistle. The sternness of his language in condemnation of the Heretics of his age, is made more striking by its contrast with this inculcation of the duty of love; which shows that the words of rebuke are uttered in a spirit of love for the souls of those committed to his care, and of those also whom he reproves. Cp. St. Stephen's language, Acts vii. 60, and above, pp. 104, 105.

2. περὶ πάντων] *in all respects*. This translation seems preferable to the other rendering, "*above all things*;" for which sense of περὶ there is no authority in Prose writers. Cp. *Winer*, § 47, p. 334. *Lücke* (2nd ed.), and *Huther*, p. 246.

— εὐδοῦσθαι] *prosper*, literally, on a journey (*δδός*). Cp. Rom. i. 10. 1 Cor. xvi. 2. St. John wishes that in *all things* the affairs of Gaius may go well, as they do in *spiritual* respects.

3. ἐχάρην γὰρ λίαν] *for I rejoiced greatly*. See 2 John 4.

4. μειζοτέραν] On this form of the comparative, see Eph. iii. 8. *Winer*, § 11, p. 65. *Greater joy have I not, than these things, that I hear my children are walking in the truth*. On the use of ἵνα, compare Luke i. 43. Cp. John xv. 8. 13; xvii. 3. 1 John iv. 17. *Winer*, § 44, p. 303.

5. πιστὸν ποιεῖς] *thou art doing a faithful part in whatever thou mayest have wrought* (ἐργάσῃ, the reading of B, C, G, K) *towards the brethren, and that also towards persons who are strangers to thee*.

This is the only example of πιστὸν ποιεῖν in the New Testament. Cp. τὸ καλὸν ποιεῖν, Rom. vii. 21; xiii. 3, 4. Gal. vi. 9; and the combination used by St. John of ποιεῖν with a *substantive*, such as δικαιοσύνην: 1 John ii. 29; iii. 7. 10; and Rev. xxii. 15, ποιῶν ψεῦδος.

St. John expresses his confidence that whatever labours Gaius may have performed, or may be performing, toward the brethren, they are done by him as a faithful workman and servant of Christ.

On ἐργάζομαι εἰς, cp. Matt. xxvi. 10.

The tense of ἐργάσῃ, *thou mayest have wrought*, implies, that though St. John has heard enough of the good deeds of

Gaius to justify his general confidence in his character, yet he is aware that Gaius may have done much more good than has reached his ears.

The words καὶ τοῦτο, *and this too* (the reading of A, B, C—*Elz.* has καὶ εἰς τοὺς), enhance the praise of Gaius. He was affectionate and helpful toward the brethren, and *that also* to *strangers* who were unknown to him. On this use of καὶ τοῦτο and καὶ ταῦτα, see Rom. xiii. 11, and on 1 Cor. vi. 6. 8, καὶ τοῦτο ἀδελφούς. *Matthiæ*, Gr. Gr. § 471. 7.

6. ἐνώπιον ἐκκλησίας] *in the presence of the Church*; in the public congregation; probably at Ephesus, where St. John dwelt; see *Introduction* to his Gospel, pp. 266, 267.

— οὓς καλῶς ποιήσεις] *whom if thou speedest on their journey in a manner meet for God* (whose servants they are), *thou shalt do well*. On προπέμπειν, cp. Titus iii. 13; on ἀξίως τοῦ Θεοῦ, cp. 1 Thess. ii. 12. Col. i. 10.

7. ὑπὲρ γὰρ τοῦ ὀνόματος ἐξῆλθον] *for they went forth on behalf of the Name—the adorable NAME of Jesus Christ, "the Name that is above every Name,"* Phil. ii. 9. See on Acts v. 41, ὑπὲρ τοῦ ὀνόματος ἀτιμασθῆναι, and the words of St. John's disciple, *S. Ignatius*, to St. John's Church of Ephesus, c. 3, δέδεμαι ἐν τῷ ὀνόματι, and cp. *ibid.* c. 7, εἰώθασιν γὰρ τινες δόλῳ πονηρῷ τὸ ὄνομα περιφέρειν, ἄλλα τινὰ πράσσοντες ἀνάξια Θεοῦ, and then he proceeds to declare the Person and Natures of Christ. Cp. *Ignat. ad Philad.* δοξάσαι τὸ ὄνομα. These words of *S. Ignatius* seem to have been suggested by St. John's language in these two verses, vv. 6, 7.

— μηδὲν λαμβάνοντες] *taking no wages from the Gentile* (plural, adjective); i. e., the Gentile Christians. *Elz.* has ἐθνῶν, but ἐθνικῶν is in A, B, C, and received by *Lach.*, *Tisch.*

On the purport of these words—intimating that they, to whom St. John refers, demanded no ministerial maintenance from the Gentile Christians, to whom they ministered the Word and Sacraments—see note above, on 1 Cor. ix. 6.

8. ὑπολαμβάνειν] *to receive, entertain, and treat them hospitably, with reverence and love*. There seems to be a slight *paronomasia* between λαμβάνοντες and ὑπολαμβάνειν: cp. *Philem.* 20. *Elz.* has ἀπολαμβάνειν; but ὑπολαμβάνειν is in A, B, C*, and is received by *Lach.*, *Tisch.*

— ἵνα συνεργοὶ γινώμεθα] *in order that we may be fellow-labourers with them in the Truth*. By receiving God's Ministers we become *fellow-workers* with them in the Truth which they preach, and "he that receiveth a prophet in the name of a prophet shall receive a prophet's reward." Matt. x. 41.

⁹ Ἐγραψά τι τῇ ἐκκλησίᾳ· ἀλλ' ὁ φιλοπρωτεύων αὐτῶν Διοτρεφῆς οὐκ ἐπιδέχεται ἡμᾶς· ¹⁰ διὰ τοῦτο, ἐὰν ἔλθω, ὑπομνήσω αὐτοῦ τὰ ἔργα ἃ ποιεῖ, λόγοις πονηροῖς φλυαρῶν ἡμᾶς· καὶ μὴ ἀρκούμενος ἐπὶ τούτοις οὔτε αὐτὸς ἐπιδέχεται τοὺς ἀδελφοὺς, καὶ τοὺς βουλομένους κωλύει, καὶ ἐκ τῆς ἐκκλησίας ἐκβάλλει.

¹¹ ^b Ἀγαπητὲ, μὴ μιμοῦ τὸ κακὸν, ἀλλὰ τὸ ἀγαθόν. Ὁ ἀγαθοποιῶν ἐκ τοῦ Θεοῦ ἐστίν· ὁ κακοποιῶν οὐχ ἑώρακε τὸν Θεόν. ¹² Δημητρίῳ μεμαρτύρηται ὑπὸ πάντων, καὶ ὑπ' αὐτῆς τῆς ἀληθείας· καὶ ἡμεῖς δὲ μαρτυροῦμεν, καὶ οἶδατε ὅτι ἡ μαρτυρία ἡμῶν ἀληθὴς ἐστίν.

¹³ ^c Πολλὰ εἶχον γράψαι σοι, ἀλλ' οὐ θέλω διὰ μέλανος καὶ καλάμου σοι γράφειν· ¹⁴ ἐλπίζω δὲ εὐθέως σε ἰδεῖν, καὶ στόμα πρὸς στόμα λαλήσομεν.

¹⁵ Εἰρήνῃ σοι· ἀσπάζονται σε οἱ φίλοι· ἀσπάζου τοὺς φίλους κατ' ὄνομα.

9. Ἐγραψά τι] *I wrote somewhat to the Church.* Elz. omits τι, which is in A, B, C, and so Lach., Tisch.

The purport probably of this writing was to exhort those of the Church, of which Gaius was a member, to receive the brethren who laboured in the Gospel. But Diotrephes, who aspired to have the pre-eminence there, took advantage of St. John's absence, and conducted himself in a very different temper to that of Gaius (see v. 5), and would not obey St. John's commands, and would neither receive the brethren commended by St. John, nor would he allow others to receive them, and was casting out of the Church those who did receive them. Wherefore, says the Apostle, if I come, as I intend to do very soon (see v. 14) to the place where you and he are, I will call to remembrance (see John xiv. 26) his works which he doeth, prating vainly against us with wicked words.

On the word φιλοπρωτεύων, see Wetstein, p. 731; and on φλυαρῶν, see *ibid.*, p. 343, and on 1 Tim. v. 13. It has properly a neuter sense, to prate idly, but like some other neuter verbs in the New Testament, it is here put intransitively (Winer, § 38, p. 225); and so it implies that the idle words are uttered by the speaker in a contemptuous tone against another.

What St. John wrote to the Church is no longer extant. Cp. note on 1 Cor. v. 9, where St. Paul refers to an Epistle written by himself which is not now in existence.

10. ἐκ τῆς ἐκκλησίας ἐκβάλλει] *he casteth out of the Church, by excommunication.* S. Hippolytus, Bishop of Portus, speaks of some who were ἐκκληστοὶ τῆς ἐκκλησίας, by his own spiritual authority. Philosoph. p. 290.

It seems that Diotrephes was a Minister of the Church in which Gaius resided; and that this Epistle was written to maintain in that Church the authority of St. John as an Apostle and Metropolitan of Asia, in which character he was commissioned by Christ to write the Epistles to the Asiatic churches in the Apocalypse, Rev. i. 11, and chaps. ii. and iii.

11. μὴ μιμοῦ τὸ κακόν] *Do not imitate that which is evil, as the example of Diotrephes is; but that which is good.* Cp. Heb. xiii. 7. 1 Pet. iii. 13, and Martyr. Polycarp. 19, τὸ μαρτύριον μιμεῖσθαι.

12. Δημητρίῳ] *A good testimony hath been given to Demetrius*

by all men, and by the Truth itself. A contrast to Diotrephes. St. John, as their spiritual superior, dispenses praise and blame to each respectively.

The Truth here is no other than the Spirit of Truth abiding in St. John. Christ promised to send to His Apostles, "the Spirit of Truth to guide them into all Truth" (John xvi. 13), and He did send the Spirit to them on the Day of Pentecost, and that Spirit enabled them to discern the spirits of men (1 Cor. xii. 10), as St. Peter discerned the spirit of Ananias (Acts v. 3), and to pronounce judgment upon them.

The Spirit, says St. John, is Truth (1 John v. 6). And since St. John himself had the Spirit, he asserts, that "whoever knoweth God heareth us; and whoever is not of God heareth not us." (1 John iv. 6.) Hence St. John was able to bear testimony to Demetrius, who perhaps carried the Epistle, and the testimony which St. John bears, was the testimony of the Truth itself.

— καὶ ἡμεῖς δὲ μαρτυροῦμεν] *and not only so, but we bear testimony, and ye know that our testimony is true.*

The Spirit of Truth in us bears testimony, and we, the human ministers by whom the Spirit speaks, bear testimony. So the Apostles speak at the Council of Jerusalem, "It seemed good to the Holy Ghost and to us." Acts xv. 28.

13. διὰ μέλανος καὶ καλάμου] *with ink and pen, properly reed.* Cp. above, 2 John 12. It does not follow from these expressions that St. John wrote his Epistle with his own hand. He may have done so. Cp. note above on Gal. vi. 11. 2 Thess. iii. 17. Col. iv. 18.

— γράψαι σοι] *to write to thee now at this time.*

So A, B, C.—Elz. has γράφειν: and vice versâ, at the end of the paragraph Elz. has γράψαι, and A, B, C have γράφειν, which expresses a habit.

I had many things to write to you now, but I am not willing to write them with ink and pen, under such circumstances as these, when I hope very soon to see you to whom I am writing. Cp. 2 John 12.

15. ἀσπάζονται—ὄνομα] *salute the friends by name.* The good pastor imitates that Good Shepherd, who "calleth His sheep by name." John x. 3. Cp. Phil. iv. 21.

INTRODUCTION

TO

THE EPISTLE GENERAL OF ST. JUDE.

I. THE Epistle of St. Jude bears a remarkable resemblance in matter and language, and also in order of arrangement, to the Second Epistle of St. Peter; as will appear from the passages placed at the foot of this page¹.

1. From a comparison of these passages it seems most probable that the Epistle of St. Jude was subsequent to that of St. Peter.

For example, St. Peter speaks *prophetically* of the false Teachers who would “privily bring in destructive heresies, denying the Lord that bought them².” But St. Jude describes these false Teachers as already in existence and full operation. “Certain men (he says) crept in, who were long ago foreordained to this condemnation³.”

2. Besides, St. Jude appears to make a special reference to St. Peter’s Second Epistle. “Beloved, remember the words that were spoken before by the *Apostles* of our Lord Jesus Christ, that they told you, that in the last time there shall be *scoffers walking according to their own lusts* of unholiness⁴.”

Hence, as was observed by Œcumenius⁵ in ancient times, this Epistle appears to have been written *after* the Second Epistle of St. Peter.

3. This opinion has been adopted by many learned men of later days⁶. If it is correct, then the Epistle of St. Jude cannot have been written before A.D. 66 or 67, the date of St. Peter’s Second Epistle.

4. Indeed, on an examination of internal evidence, it seems to be later than that time. The picture which is drawn in this Epistle, of the heretical doctrines and licentious practices of the false Teachers, represents them as developed in the fulness and boldness of inveterate and dominant malignity, after a previous growth of some years.

¹ JUDE.

3. πᾶσαν σπουδὴν ποιούμενος.

4. παρεισέδυσαν γὰρ τινες, οἱ πάλοι προγεγραμμένοι εἰς τοῦτο τὸ κρίμα, ἄσεβεῖς, τὴν τοῦ Θεοῦ ἡμῶν χάριν μετατιθέντες εἰς ἀσέλγειαν, καὶ τὸν μόνον δεσπότην καὶ Κύριον ἡμῶν Ἰησοῦν Χριστὸν ἀρνούμενοι.

6. ἀγγέλους τοὺς μὴ τηρήσαντες τὴν ἐαυτῶν ἀρχὴν . . . εἰς κρίσιν μεγάλης ἡμέρας δεσμοῖς αἰδίοις ὑπὸ ζόφου τετήρηκεν.

7. Σόδομα καὶ Γόμορρα καὶ αἱ περὶ αὐτὰς πόλεις . . . ἀπελθοῦσαι ὀπίσω σαρκὸς ἐτέρας, πρόκεινται δείγμα.

8. κυριότητα ἀθετοῦσι, δόξας δὲ βλασφημοῦσι.

9. ὁ δὲ Μιχαὴλ ὁ ἀρχάγγελος, ὅτε τῷ διαβόλῳ διακρι-

2 PETER.

i. 5. πᾶσαν σπουδὴν παρεισενέγκαντες. Cp. i. 15.

ii. 1. παρεισάξουσιν αἰρέσεις ἀπωλείας, καὶ τὸν ἀγοράσαντα αὐτοὺς δεσπότην ἀρνούμενοι . . . καὶ πολλοὶ ἐξακολουθήσουσιν αὐτῶν ταῖς ἀσελγείαις . . . οἷς τὸ κρίμα ἔκπαλαι οὐκ ἄργεῖ.

ii. 4. ὁ Θεὸς ἀγγέλων ἀμαρτησάντων οὐκ ἐφείσατο, ἀλλὰ σειραῖς ζόφου ταρταρώσας παρέδωκεν εἰς κρίσιν τηρουμένους.

ii. 6—10. πόλεις Σοδόμων καὶ Γομόρρας καταστροφῇ κατέκρινεν, ὑπόδειγμα μελλόντων ἀσεβεῖν τεθεικώς . . . τοὺς ὀπίσω σαρκὸς ἐν ἐπιθυμίᾳ πορευομένους . . .

ii. 10. κυριότητος καταφρονούντας . . . δόξας οὐ τρέμουσι βλασφημοῦντες.

ii. 11. ἄγγελοι ἰσχυροὶ καὶ δυνάμει μείζονες ὄντες, οὐ φέ-

νόμενος διελέγετο περὶ τοῦ Μωσέως σώματος, οὐκ ἐτόλμησε κρίσιν ἐπενεγκεῖν βλασφημίας, ἀλλ’ εἶπεν, Ἐπιτιμήσαι σοι Κύριος.

10. ἄλογα ζῶα κ.τ.λ.

Compare also JUDE 11

12, 13 . . .

16 . . .

17, 18 . . .

ρουσι κατ’ αὐτῶν παρὰ Κυρίῳ βλάσφημον κρίσιν.

ii. 12. ἄλογα ζῶα

2 PETER ii. 15.

ii. 13—17.

ii. 18.

iii. 1, 2, 3.

² 2 Pet. ii. 1.

³ Jude 4.

⁴ The words of the original are—

JUDE 17, 18. ὑμεῖς δὲ, ἀγαπητοί, μνησθήτε τῶν ρημάτων τῶν προειρημένων ὑπὸ τῶν ἀποστόλων τοῦ Κυρίου ἡμῶν Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ, ὅτι ἔλεγον ὑμῖν, ὅτι ἐν ἐσχάτῳ χρόνῳ ἔσονται ἐμπαῖκται, κατὰ τὰς ἐαυτῶν ἐπιθυμίας πορευόμενοι τῶν ἀσεβειῶν.

2 PETER iii. 1. ἀγαπητοί . . . μνησθῆναι τῶν προειρημένων ρημάτων ὑπὸ τῶν ἀγίων προφητῶν καὶ τῶν ἀποστόλων ἡμῶν ἐντολῆς τοῦ Κυρίου καὶ Σωτῆρος· τοῦτο πρῶτον γινώσκοντες ὅτι ἐλεύσονται ἐπ’ ἐσχάτου τῶν ἡμερῶν ἐν ἐμπαυμονῇ ἐμπαῖκται κατὰ τὰς ἰδίας ἐπιθυμίας πορευόμενοι αὐτῶν.

⁵ Œcumenius in Jude 17, 18.

⁶ E. g. Estius, Dr. Mill, Dr. Benson, Witsius, Dodwell, Lenfant, Beausobre, Hengstenberg, Heydenreich, Dietlein.

5. At first sight, it may perhaps seem surprising, that an Epistle should have been written so similar to the Second Epistle of St. Peter, as this Epistle of St. Jude is; and have been received into the Canon of the New Testament.

But, on consideration, it will be perceived, that such a procedure as this is in perfect harmony with the general structure of Holy Writ.

It would be erroneous to assert, that St. Jude had merely *copied* a large portion of the Epistle of St. Peter. It ought rather to be said, that the Holy Spirit often *repeated* by one Prophet what He had said by another, and that He often *repeated* by a third Evangelist what He had written before by the other two¹; and that He does this for greater confirmation of what He has said, and in order to authenticate the writings in which His words are contained, and to show their great importance to the world, and to inculcate them more forcibly on the mind of the Church; and so, for like reasons, He *repeats* by St. Jude, not however without some modifications and additions, what He had already declared by St. Peter. He has thus set His seal on St. Peter's Second Epistle, and has shown that the prophecies, which He Himself there uttered, have been fulfilled.

Besides, in opposition to the various forms of false and conflicting doctrines, which are there condemned, He has displayed to the world an exemplary pattern of Apostolic unity in confuting heresy and maintaining the Truth.

The forms of heretical Teaching and Practice which were present to the mind of St. Jude, when he wrote this Epistle, have already been described in the Introduction to the Second Epistle of St. Peter², and in the notes on the parallel passages of that Epistle.

II. On the *authorship* of this Epistle, it may be observed, that the writer calls himself "Jude the brother of James³."

He would not have used such a designation, unless James had been a well-known person, and unless the James to whom he refers was the person who was best known by that name at that time.

It has therefore been rightly concluded by ancient and modern authors⁴, that the James who is here mentioned by St. Jude, was James "the Lord's brother" or *cousin*⁵, the Bishop of Jerusalem.

This conclusion is confirmed by the testimony of the Gospels, where we find that our Lord had a brother called *Jude*, as well as a brother called *James*⁶.

The question, whether James the Lord's brother, or cousin, was also an Apostle, and the same person as "James, the son of Alphæus," in the catalogue of the Apostles, has been already considered⁷; and an opinion has been expressed that the balance of probabilities is in favour of their identity.

This conclusion is confirmed by the fact, that, after the mention of "James the son of Alphæus," in the catalogue of the Apostles, we have two persons placed *next in order*, *Simon Zelotes*, or the *Cananite* (a word which has the same sense as *Zelotes*), and *Jude*—of *James*.

III. A question has been raised, what word is here to be *supplied* after Jude—whether it is to be *son*, or *brother*, of James?

But on this point there seems little reason for doubt. The James who is connected in the Apostolic Catalogue with Jude, cannot be a different person from "James, the son of Alphæus," who is mentioned just before in the catalogue. And none of the Apostles of Christ, as far as we find, were far advanced in years when they were called to the Apostleship; and it is not probable that James the son of Alphæus (who is probably the same as Clopas, whose wife was living, and a follower of our Lord⁸), was old enough, when he was called to the Apostleship, to have a *son* of sufficient age to be an *Apostle*. It is therefore most likely that the words *Ἰούδας ἱακώβου* signify, as our Translators render them, "Jude brother of James⁹."

Accordingly, we find that Jude, the author of this Epistle, is designated as an *Apostle* by very

¹ On this characteristic of Holy Scripture, see above, *Introduction to the Four Gospels*, pp. xlv, xlvi, and *Introduction to St. Mark's Gospel*, *ibid.*, p. 113.

² Above, p. 72; see also Preliminary Note to 2 Pet. ii.

³ Jude 1.

⁴ E. g., *S. Clement of Alexandria*, *Adumbrat. in Epist. Jud.*, p. 1007; see below, on Jude 1.

⁵ See above, *Introduction to the Epistle of St. James*, pp. 5—11.

⁶ See Matt. xiii. 55. Mark vi. 3.

VOL. II.—PART IV.

⁷ See above, *Introduction to the Epistle of St. James*, pp. 6—9; and cp. *Lardner*, ch. xxi. *Tillemont*, p. 171. *Winer*, R. W. B., p. 633, art. *Judas*.

⁸ See Matt. x. 3. John xix. 25. She was probably His Mother's sister, or cousin. See above, p. 11.

⁹ And so *Winer*, *Gr. Gr.*, § 30. 3, p. 171; and R. W. B., p. 655, art. *Judas*. It is observable that all the three Evangelists prefix the definite article, *ὁ*, to the genitive, when they mean "son" of; but there is no definite article before *ἱακώβου* here.

early Christian writers¹, and this Epistle is described as the Epistle of St. Jude the *Apostle*, in the Vulgate and Syriac Versions; and St. Jude is designated as an *Apostle* by the Church of England, in common with the rest of the Western Church, and the majority of the Greek Fathers².

This being the case, it would follow from a comparison of the catalogues of the Apostles in St. Matthew and St. Mark, with the catalogue in St. Luke's Gospel and the Acts³, that St. Jude had two other names, *Lebbæus* and *Thaddæus*.

Accordingly, we find in ancient writers that Jude the author of this Epistle, is sometimes called *trinomius*, or *trionymus*, i. e. bearing *three names*⁴.

The belief in the identity of St. Jude the *Apostle* and Jude the Lord's brother, is strengthened by the sameness of temper evinced in the *only speeches* recorded in Holy Scripture, as uttered respectively by Jude the Apostle, and by the brethren of our Lord.

St. John relates⁵ that Jude the Apostle said to Christ, "Lord, how is it that Thou wilt *manifest Thyself* to us, and not *to the world*?" St. Jude was eager for the public display of Christ's earthly glory; in which, probably, he himself, as an Apostle, expected to share.

Compare *this* speech with that of our *Lord's brethren*, recorded also by St. John⁶, "His brethren said unto Him—If Thou doest these things, show *Thyself to the world*."

This coincidence confirms the opinion that Jude the Apostle was one of our Lord's brethren.

IV. It is observable, that in St. Luke's catalogue of the Apostles, both in the Gospel and the Acts, *James* is separated from his brother *Jude* by an intervening name, that of *Simon Zelotes*, or *Cananite*; and that in the lists of the Apostles, in the Gospels of St. Matthew and St. Mark, *James* is separated from *Simon*, the *Cananite*, by an intervening name, that of *Thaddæus* or *Jude*.

This is remarkable.

What can be the reason of this arrangement?

May it not be, that St. James, St. Jude, and St. Simon, were *three brothers*?

It is not likely, that in a list of Apostles a brother should be parted off from a brother by a person who was not a brother. The separation of St. Peter from his brother St. Andrew by the two brothers St. James and St. John, who were eminently distinguished by Christ, does not invalidate this statement. That severance is only made by St. Mark, who justifies it by a suggestion of the reason⁷; and in the Acts of the Apostles⁸, after the evidence of Christ's special favour to James and John,—but not in St. Luke's *Gospel*⁹. In all the lists of the Apostles, James, Jude, and Simon are grouped together.

We find also that "our Lord's brethren" were called "James, and Joses, and *Simon*, and *Jude*," as the names are arranged by St. Matthew¹⁰; or, according to the order in which the names stand in St. Mark's Gospel¹¹, "James, and Joses, and *Jude*, and *Simon*." In the one Gospel Simon stands before Jude, in the other Gospel he stands after him; in both Gospels James stands first of the three brothers. James, being the first Bishop of Jerusalem, would rightly have the precedence among the Lord's brethren.

Here, then, are precisely the same three names as in the Apostolic catalogues; here also, *one* name, that of James, stands *always* first in order; and there is precisely the same modification in the arrangement of the *other two names*, Simon and Jude, as in the catalogues of the Apostles.

We have, therefore, some ground for supposing, that the three persons who are called James, Jude his brother, and Simon, who were *Apostles*, are the same persons as the James, Jude, and Simon who are called "*brethren of our Lord*"¹².

This consideration is confirmed by the fact recorded by ancient Writers, that after the martyr-

¹ So *Tertullian*, de Cultu fem., i. 3: "Enoch apud Judam Apostolum testimonium possidet." The reference is to St. Jude's Epistle, v. 14. And *Origen*, in Epist. ad Roman. lib. v., p. 549: "Judas Apostolus in Epistolâ Catholicâ dicit."

² See *Tillemont*, Mémoires, pp. 171. 297.

³ The Catalogues stand thus:—

In Matt. x. 3, 4.	In Mark iii. 18, 19.	In Luke vi. 15, 16	In Acts i. 13.
James, son of Alphæus; and Lebbæus, who was sur- named Thaddæus. Simon the Cananite.	James, son of Alphæus; and Thaddæus; and Simon the Cananite.	James, son of Alphæus; and Simon who was called Zelotes, and Judas [brother] of James.	James, son of Alphæus; and Simon Zelotes, and Judas [brother] of James.

⁴ See *Jerome*, in Matt. x., and note above, on Matt. x. 43

⁵ xiv. 22.

⁶ i. 13.

⁷ Mark vi. 3.

⁸ vii. 3, 4.

⁹ vi. 14.

¹⁰ Mark iii. 17.

¹¹ Matt. xiii. 55.

¹² In the Festivals of the Church of England, and of the Western Church, "Simon and Jude, *Apostles*," are commemorated together on the same day. There is a propriety in this union; the more so, if they were brothers by blood, as well as brother Apostles.

dom of James the Lord's Brother, and Bishop of Jerusalem, the person who was chosen to succeed him was *Symeon*, or *Simon*¹, a son of Clopas, and therefore brother of James, and also brother or cousin of our Lord; and that he was chosen on account of this relationship, in addition to other considerations; as was the case even with the *grandsons* of St. Jude, who were chosen to fill Episcopal chairs for a similar reason².

This Symeon, or Simon, the successor of St. James, lived to the age of 120, and suffered martyrdom under Trajan³.

If Simon Zelotes, the Apostle, was, as we have reason to believe, the same as this Simon or Symeon, cousin of Our Lord, and brother of James the Bishop of Jerusalem, and of Jude the author of this Epistle, then in this double connexion with Christ, both by virtue of Apostleship and kindred, and in the long duration of his life and Episcopate at Jerusalem, where St. James had lived and died, and finally, in his faithful vigilance and courageous martyrdom⁴ for Christ, we have an assurance, that the Epistles which have come down to us, bearing the names of his brothers James and Jude, were carefully kept by him and his Church and are genuine and authentic writings of those whose names they bear.

St. Jude himself was married and had children⁵; and he is probably one of those to whom St. Paul refers, when he says, "Have we not power to lead about a sister, a wife, as well as the other Apostles, and *the brethren of the Lord*, and Cephas⁶?" Some of St. Jude's grandchildren are mentioned by Hegesippus⁷, as having borne testimony to the truth in the presence of the Emperor Domitian; and as having had spiritual rule over Christian Churches, and surviving to the time of Trajan.

This continuation of ecclesiastical eminence, and of faithful confession, in that holy family, affords a further guarantee to the integrity of those writings of which they were the depositaries and guardians.

¹ See note above, on Acts i. 13, new edition.

² See *Euseb.* iii. 20, and note; the remarks of Professor Blunt quoted above, p. 9, note.

³ *Euseb.* iii. 32.

⁴ *Euseb.* iii. 22.

⁵ *Euseb.* iii. 20.

⁶ 1 Cor. ix. 5. It will be observed that this sentence does not exclude brethren of the Lord from the number of Apostles; if it did, it would exclude Cephas, i. e. Peter, also from the Apostleship. The argument is cumulative.

⁷ In *Euseb.* iii. 20.

ΙΟΥΔΑ ΕΠΙΣΤΟΛΗ.

a Luke 6. 16.
John 17. 11.
Acts 1. 13.
1 Pet. 1. 5.

¹ α ἸΟΥΔΑΣ Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ δοῦλος, ἀδελφὸς δὲ Ἰακώβου, τοῖς ἐν Θεῷ Πατρὶ ἡγαπημένοις, καὶ Ἰησοῦ Χριστῷ τετηρημένοις κλητοῖς, ² ἔλεος ὑμῶν καὶ εἰρήνη καὶ ἀγάπη πληθυνθείη.

b Phil. 1. 27.
1 Tim. 1. 18.
& 6. 12.
2 Tim. 4. 7.

³ β Ἀγαπητοί, πᾶσαν σπουδὴν ποιούμενος γράφειν ὑμῶν περὶ τῆς κοινῆς σωτηρίας ἀνάγκην ἔσχον γράψαι ὑμῶν παρακαλῶν ἐπαγωνίζεσθαι τῇ ᾧ παῖς παραδοθείσῃ τοῖς ἁγίοις πίστει.

1. Ἰούδας] *Jude, a servant of Jesus Christ, and brother of James*: probably the same person who is called *Thaddæus* and *Lebbæus*, and one of the Lord's brethren; and he is called *Thaddæus* and *Lebbæus* at the end of the *Armenian Version* of this Epistle; and so *Bede* and *Estius* here. See above on Matt. x. 3. 12; xii. 46, and 1 Cor. ix. 5, and *Introduction*, pp. 137—139.

He calls himself "brother of James;" but neither he nor St. James call themselves "brethren of the Lord," but both call themselves "servants of Jesus Christ." *Clemens Alexandrinus* says (*Adumbrat.* p. 1007, ed. Potter), "Judas extans valdè religiosus, quàm sciret propinquitatem Domini (i. e. his own relationship to Christ), non tamen dixit seipsum fratrem Ejus esse: sed quid dixit? Judas, servus Jesu Christi."

Nor do either of them call themselves Apostles. Nor does St. John in his Epistles or Apocalypse. See above on James i. 1. But the writer of this Epistle is expressly called "an Apostle" by *Tertullian* in the second century (*de Cultu femin.* i. 3), and by *Origen* (on Rom. lib. v. p. 549, and on Matt. tom. i. p. 223), who says, "Jude wrote an Epistle consisting of a few lines, but full of the words which are empowered by heavenly grace."

— ἡγαπημένοις] *beloved*. So A, B, and *Origen*, iii. p. 607, and *Lach.*, *Tisch.*—*Elz.* has ἡγιασμένοις. The sense is, *to those who have been, and are, beloved in God the Father*: that is, beloved in God the Father, Who is the original of all blessing, and in Whom ye are, as His children by adoption in Christ. Ye were sometimes alienated from Him (Eph. iv. 18), but now ye are beloved in Him. Ye are all one in the Father and the Son. John xvii. 21, 22.

The perfect participles here, ἡγαπημένοις and τετηρημένοις, not only express a past act, but a present state. See above, 1 John ii. 29; iii. 9; iv. 7; v. 1. 4. 18.

— καὶ Ἰησοῦ Χριστῷ τετηρημένοις] *and who have been and are preserved, or kept, for Jesus Christ*. The evil Angels are preserved or kept (τετηρημένοι) for judgment (2 Pet. ii. 4); the heavens are preserved or kept for fire (2 Pet. iii. 7); but ye are preserved and kept for Jesus Christ, as a peculiar people (1 Pet. ii. 9), and there is an everlasting inheritance preserved or kept in heaven for you (1 Pet. i. 4).

Hence he says at the close of the Epistle, v. 21, "Keep yourselves (ἐαυτοὺς τηρήσατε) in the love of God, waiting for the mercy of our Lord Jesus Christ unto eternal life."

2. εἰρήνη—πληθυνθείη] *peace be multiplied*. A salutation found in this Epistle and in both St. Peter's Epistles, and in them only; and designed perhaps to call the reader's attention to those two Epistles, and to connect this Epistle as a sequel with them.

3. ἀγαπητοί] *Beloved, when I was exercising all diligent desire to write to you concerning the common salvation, I was constrained to write to you, exhorting you to contend earnestly for the Faith that was once for all delivered to the Saints*.

St. Jude here states the cause of the controversial character of this Epistle.

He had been earnestly desirous to write (γράφειν, present tense, indicating generally the act of writing) concerning the common salvation; and he would have been glad to have confined himself to that subject; but he was forced to write (γράψαι, aorist, indicating a special act for a particular purpose, on an urgent occasion) against those who were trying to lead them to destruction.

He was constrained by the prevalence of false doctrines, to frame his address in such a manner, that it should take the form of an exhortation to his readers to contend for the faith which had been once for all delivered to the Saints; and which was assailed by the false Teachers. For (he adds) "some men crept in unawares," and are now endeavouring to corrupt the faith.

Hence his Epistle is written in an antagonistic tone; but he does not forget the hortatory portion of his design. He commands his disciples here to fight for the faith; but he also exhorts them in the sequel to build themselves on it. See v. 20.

St. Jude does compendiously, and in one short Epistle, what had been done by other preceding Apostles more at large in several longer Epistles. St. Paul, and St. Peter, and St. John, had written with a twofold design; first to establish the Truth, secondly, to refute error. See above, *Introduction* to St. Peter's Second Epistle, p. 70, and *Introduction* to St. John's Second Epistle, p. 127. St. Jude refers to their labours, and reiterates their admonitions and warnings (v. 17), and sums them up in one concise and energetic address.

"The faith had been once for all delivered to the Saints;" and for this faith St. Jude's disciples are earnestly exhorted to contend. Here therefore is an Apostolic protest against all subsequent additions to it, such as those of the Gnostic systems in earlier times, and of the Trent Creed of the Church of Rome in later days. Cp. note above on Gal. i. 8, 9.

"To contend earnestly for the faith once for all delivered to the Saints." Divine words, few in number, but rich in meaning. If rightly understood and duly obeyed, these words would put an end to all modern controversies, and restore Peace to the Church. Do we desire to know what the true Faith is? St. Jude here tells us—that which was once, and once for all, delivered to the Saints. Every doctrine, which can be shown to be posterior to that Faith, is new; and every doctrine that is new is false. *Isaac Casaubon* (*Dedication* to his *Exercitationes Baronianæ*).

On this use of ἅπαξ, "once for all," "semel et simul," see Heb. ix. 7. 26—28. 1 Pet. iii. 18, and *Bengel*, *Stier*, *Passow*, *Huther*, and others here.

Ἐπαγωνίζεσθαι, "super-certare" (*Vulg.*), is to fight, standing upon a thing which is assaulted, and which the adversary desires to take away; and it is to fight so as to defend it, and to retain it. See *Loesner*.

On this use of the word πίστις, for the faith received, the deposit of sound doctrine, see Eph. iv. 5, and note above, on

⁴ ^c Παρεισέδυσαν γάρ τινες ἄνθρωποι, οἱ πάλαι προγεγραμμένοι εἰς τοῦτο τὸ κρίμα, ἀσεβεῖς, τὴν τοῦ Θεοῦ ἡμῶν χάριτα μετατιθέντες εἰς ἀσέλγειαν, καὶ τὸν μόνον Δεσπότην καὶ Κύριον ἡμῶν Ἰησοῦν Χριστὸν ἀρνούμενοι.

⁵ ^d Ὑπομνήσαι δὲ ὑμᾶς βούλομαι, εἰδότας ἅπαξ πάντα, ὅτι ὁ Κύριος λαὸν ἐκ γῆς Αἰγύπτου σώσας, τὸ δεύτερον τοὺς μὴ πιστεύσαντας ἀπώλεσεν ⁶ ^e ἀγγέλους τε τοὺς μὴ τηρήσαντας τὴν ἐαυτῶν ἀρχὴν, ἀλλὰ ἀπολιπόντας τὸ ἴδιον οἰκητήριον,

c Rom. 9. 21, 22.
Tit. 1. 16.
1 Pet. 2. 8.
2 Pet. 2. 1, 3, 19.

d Num. 14. 29, &c.
& 26. 64, 65.
Ps. 106. 26.
1 Cor. 10. 5.
Heb. 3. 18, 19.
e John 8. 44.
2 Pet. 2. 4.

Rom. xii. 6. Cp. *S. Polycarp*, ad Phil. c. 7, ἐπὶ τὸν ἐξ ἀρχῆς ἡμῶν παραδοθέντα λόγον ἐπιστρέψωμεν. "The faith once for all delivered to the saints," is set down by *S. Irenæus* (i. 2, 3. *Grabe*, pp. 45, 46). *Tertullian*, de Virg. Vel. c. 1; de Præscr. hæret. c. 13. *S. Jerome*, c. Joann. Hieros. § 28. Cp. *Hooker*, II. i. 5. *Bingham*, Eccl. Ant. x. 3, 4.

4. παρεισέδυσαν] *they crept in privately*, as it were, by a side-door, and with a stealthy purpose. On this use of παρὰ in composition see 2 Pet. ii. 1, παρ-εισάγουσιν αἵρέσεις. Gal. ii. 4, παρ-εισάκτους ψευδαδέλφους. Cp. 2 Tim. iii. 6, ἐνδύοντες εἰς τὰς οἰκίας.

St. Jude here announces the fulfilment of the prophecy of the Apostle *St. Peter*, who had foretold in his Second Epistle that false Teachers *would arise*, and "would bring in privily destructive heresies." See 2 Pet. ii. 1. Here is an evidence of the priority of that Epistle. See above, *Introduction*, p. 136. Cp. below, vv. 17, 18.

— οἱ πάλαι] *they who were long ago publicly declared* in the writings of the Holy Scriptures to be destined for this punishment; of which St. Jude is about to speak in what follows.

On the sense of προγράφω, to write before, or to display publicly, as in a writing or picture, see Rom. xv. 4. Eph. iii. 3. Gal. iii. 1, where see note. The πρὸ may have, and probably has here, the sense of *previous* designation.

The word κρίμα does not signify *sin*, but *punishment* (see 2 Pet. ii. 3), and what St. Jude says, is, not that these men were predestined to commit *sin* (heaven forbid!), but they were *warned beforehand* of the *punishment* (κρίμα) they would incur, if they were guilty of the sins which they are now committing. The words τοῦτο τὸ κρίμα signify *this punishment*, which he is about to specify in the sequel; a frequent use of οὗτος. See *Kühner*, § 626. *Matthiæ*, § 470.

The doom which they would incur had been προγεγραμμένον, written publicly beforehand, in the prophecy of *Enoch* (v. 14), and visibly displayed in the punishment of the *Israelites* (v. 5), and in that of the *rebel Angels* (v. 6), and had been graven indelibly in letters of fire on the soil of *Sodom and Gomorrhæ* (v. 7).

Since God is unchangeably just and holy, all who sin after the manner of those who have been thus punished, must look for like punishment to theirs. They have been publicly designated beforehand for it, by the punishment of those whom they imitate in sin. Therefore, these false Teachers cannot plead ignorance of the consequences of their sin; and you will be without excuse, if you are deceived by them.

The false Teachers here specially noted were the *Simonians*, *Nicolaitans*, and *Ebionites*. See *Æcumen.* and *Theophylact*, and cp. below, v. 7, and above on 2 Pet. ii. 1.

— τὴν τοῦ Θεοῦ] *turning the grace of our God into lasciviousness*: as the Gnostic Teachers did, by perverting the doctrine of *Christian liberty* into a *cloak of maliciousness*. See on 1 Pet. ii. 16. 2 Pet. ii. 19; and cp. the words of *S. Augustine*, quoted on 2 Pet. iii. 16. He refers specially to the *Nicolaitans* and disciples of *Simon Magus*. See *Didymus* here in *Bibl. Patr. Max.* iv. p. 336.

— καὶ τὸν μόνον Δεσπότην καὶ Κύριον ἡμῶν Ἰησοῦν Χριστὸν ἀρνούμενοι] *and denying our only Master and Lord Jesus Christ*. The word δεσπότης, *Master*, here designates *Christ*; as may be inferred from the place in St. Peter's Epistle (2 Pet. ii. 1), where it is said that these false Teachers *deny the Master* (δεσπότην) *Who bought them*; that is, they deny Him Who purchased them with His own blood, 1 Pet. i. 19. Cp. Rev. v. 9, ἡγόρασας τῷ Θεῷ ἡμᾶς, and the note above, 2 Pet. ii. 1, for a detailed account of the various modes in which the Gnostic and other false Teachers of the Apostolic times "denied the Lord who bought them."

After δεσπότην *Elz.* writes Θεόν: but this is not in A, B, C, and is cancelled by *Griesb.*, *Scholz*, *Lach.*, *Tisch.* It is found in G, K, and many Cursives, and in the *Syriac*, *Arabic*, and *Æthiopic* Versions, and in *Theophylact* and *Æcumen.* Cp. note above on 2 Pet. ii. 1.

5. ὑπομνήσαι δὲ ὑμᾶς βούλομαι] *but I am desirous to remind you who know all things once for all*; εἰδότας has a present sense, "who know;" not "who knew."

The reading πάντα, *all things*, is that of A, N, B, C, and of

Vulg., *Copt.*, *Syriac*, and several Cursives and Fathers; and is preferable on many accounts to τοῦτο, *this*, the reading of *Elz.*

St. Jude wrote this Epistle against the *Gnostics*, who (as their name declares) professed superior *gnosis* or *knowledge*; and under pretence thereof beguiled their hearers into *corrupt doctrines* and *licentious practices*. See above on 2 Pet. i. 2, 3.

St. Jude assures his disciples that *they themselves* have all necessary *knowledge*, that they *know all things*. Compare 1 John ii. 20, οἶδατε πάντα.

Ye need not any new doctrines from these Teachers; nor do ye require any further teaching from me, since ye have been fully instructed already by the other Apostles. But (δὲ) my desire is to remind you of what ye already know, and therefore I now write. Cp. 2 Pet. i. 12, μελλήσω ὑμᾶς εἰς ὑπομνήσκειν περὶ τούτων καίπερ εἰδότας.

They knew all things *once for all* (ἅπαξ), for they had received "the faith *once for all* delivered to the Saints," v. 3. The sense of ἅπαξ is precisely the same here as there. Cp. *Bengel*, *Stier*, *Huther*.

— ὅτι ὁ Κύριος] *that the Lord having saved the people* (of Israel, cp. 2 Pet. ii. 1) *out of the land of Egypt*.

It is observable that A, B have Ἰησοῦς, *Jesus*, here for Κύριος. According to this reading, *Jesus Christ* is represented as having delivered the *Israelites*. And this reading is supported by several Cursives, and the *Vulg.*, *Coptic*, *Sahidic*, *Æthiopic*, and *Armenian* Versions; and by *Didymus*, *Cyril*, *Jerome*, *Cassian*; and is received by *Griesb.* and *Lachmann*.

This doctrine had been already taught by the Apostle St. Paul, in his commentary on the history of the Exodus, where he speaks of *Christ* as present with the *Israelites* in the wilderness. See 1 Cor. x. 1—11. Heb. iii. 7—19; iv. 1, 2.

St. Jude "the servant of Jesus Christ" (v. 1), refers to the deliverances of the Exodus, described by Moses, as the act of the *Lord*; and to the prophecy of *Enoch* concerning the future Advent of the *Lord* (v. 14), and also to the Apostles of the *Lord* (v. 17), and thus he reminds his readers, against the allegations of the false Teachers, that the God of both the Old and the New Testament is One; and that in both Christ is the *Lord*. Cp. *Theophylact* here.

This passage is cited by *S. Clement* of Alexandria, in the second century. *Pædag.* ii. p. 239.

— τὸ δεύτερον] *the second time*. The first thing that God did was to deliver them; the second thing was to destroy them; the first time that they needed His aid, He delivered them; the next time that they needed it, He destroyed them (cp. *Winer*, p. 547); so soon did destruction follow deliverance, even of His own people. Let this be a warning to those false Teachers, and to you.

6. ἀγγέλους τε] *and not only men* did He thus punish, but *Angels* also, namely, those who did not keep their own first estate (their original bliss and dignity in heaven which God gave them as their own), but left (by their own voluntary act of sin) their proper habitations, He hath kept under darkness with everlasting chains until (and for) the Judgment of the great Day.

"Proprium principatum; scilicet quem acceperant secundum profectum; sed deliquerunt suum habitaculum, cœlum videlicet ac stellas, et apostatæ facti sunt." *Clemens Alex.* l. c. p. 1008.

The Fall of the Angels is here declared to be due to their own deliberate will and deed; it was due to *pride*. See 1 Tim. iii. 6.

Their chains may well be called *ἀίδιοι*, *everlasting*; for, though their chain now permits them to visit this nether region, yet they always carry that chain with them, and are restrained from injuring God's servants; and by attempting to do so they are aggravating their sin and punishment; and they will never be free, but are kept for ever from recovering their first estate, and original habitation; and at the Judgment of the great Day they will be cast into the Lake of Fire. Cp. Rev. xx. 2, 3.

On the present condition, and future destiny of Evil Angels, see above, note on 2 Pet. ii. 4.

S. Clement of Alexandria says here (p. 1008), that the chains in which the evil angels are now confined are the darkness of the air near this earth of ours ("vicinus terris locus, caliginosus aër"), and that they may well be said to be *chained*, because they are restrained from recovering the glory and happiness they

f Gen. 19. 24.
Deut. 29. 23.
Isa. 13. 19.
Jer. 20. 16.
& 50. 40.
Lam. 4. 6.
Ezek. 16. 49.
Hos. 11. 8.
Amos 4. 1.
Luke 17. 29.
2 Pet. 2. 6.
g 2 Pet. 2. 10, 11.
h Dan. 10. 13.
& 12. 1.
Zech. 3. 2.
2 Pet. 2. 11.
Rev. 12. 7.
i 2 Pet. 2. 11.

εἰς κρίσιν μεγάλης ἡμέρας δεσμοῖς αἰδίοις ὑπὸ ζόφον τετήρηκεν⁷ ὥς Σόδομα καὶ Γόμορρα, καὶ αἱ περὶ αὐτὰς πόλεις, τὸν ὅμοιον τρόπον τούτοις ἐκπορνεύσασαι, καὶ ἀπελθοῦσαι ὀπίσω σαρκὸς ἐτέρας, πρόκεινται δεῖγμα πυρὸς αἰωνίου δίκην ὑπέχουσαι.

⁸ Ὅμοίως μέντοι καὶ οὗτοι ἐνυπνιαζόμενοι σάρκα μὲν μιαίνουσι, κυριότητα δὲ ἀθετοῦσι, δόξας δὲ βλασφημοῦσιν. ⁹ Ὁ δὲ Μιχαὴλ ὁ ἀρχάγγελος, ὅτε τῷ Διαβόλῳ διακρινόμενος διελέγετο περὶ τοῦ Μωϋσέως σώματος, οὐκ ἐτόλμησε κρίσιν ἐπενεγκεῖν βλασφημίας, ἀλλὰ εἶπεν, Ἐπιτιμήσαι σοι Κύριος. ¹⁰ Οὗτοι

have lost. The phrase, "chain of darkness," occurs in Wisd. xvii. 17.

This passage is cited by Origen in Matt. tom. xv. p. 693, and in Rom. lib. 3, vol. iv. p. 510, where he calls this Epistle "scriptura divina," ibid. lib. v. p. 549.

7. Σόδομα καὶ Γόμορρα] *Sodom and Gomorrha* are also set before you as warnings in Holy Writ. Gen. xix. 24. Deut. xxix. 23. Isa. xiii. 19. Jer. l. 40. Ezek. xvi. 49. Hosea xi. 8. Amos iv. 11. Zeph. ii. 9; and in the New Testament, Luke xvii. 28, 29. Rom. ix. 29. 2 Pet. ii. 6.

— αἱ περὶ αὐτὰς πόλεις] *the cities around them*, Admah, and Zeboim. Deut. xxix. 23. Hos. xi. 8.

— τὸν ὅμοιον τρόπον τούτοις] *having given themselves over to fornication, in like manner to that of these men* (on this use of ὅμοιος see Rev. xiii. 11). These Gnostic Teachers and their votaries were guilty of harlotry, and their sins were also like those of the inhabitants of Sodom and Gomorrha, going after *strange flesh* (cp. Rom. i. 27). See the description of the *Nicolaitans*, *S. Iren.* i. 20. *Theodoret*, hær. fab. i. *Epiph.* hær. xxv.; and cp. note above, on 2 Pet. ii. 2, and below, on v. 8.

It is observed in the valuable Ancient Catena on this Epistle, published by Dr. Cramer, p. 157, that St. Jude, in this and the following passages, is warning his readers against the false doctrines, and licentious practices, of the following heretics of the Apostolic, and sub-Apostolic age, namely, the *Simonians*, *Nicolaitans*, *Ebionites*, *Cainites*, *Borborites*, *Valentinians*, *Sethians*, *Marcionites*, *Manichæans*. The Epistle cannot be rightly understood without reference to their tenets.

— πρόκεινται δεῖγμα πυρὸς αἰωνίου] *are set forth as an example of everlasting fire*. Cp. 2 Pet. ii. 6, πόλεις Σοδόμων καὶ Γομόρρας κατέκρινεν, ὑπόδειγμα μελλόντων ἀσεβεῖν τεθεικώς. Cp. 1 Maccabees ii. 5. Wisdom x. 7, and *S. Irenæus*, iv. 70, "pluerat Deus super Sodomam et Gomorrhā ignem et sulphur de coelo, exemplum justī iudicii Dei."

If this is the correct rendering of St. Jude's words, then he does not say, that these Cities are suffering the penalty of everlasting fire, but that by their punishment and perpetual desolation (δίκην ὑπέχουσαι), they are a *specimen* of that fire which awaits the ungodly, and which is everlasting. Cp. *Cassiodorus*, *Estius*, *Stier*, and *Huther* here.

Or, if, with the English Version, *De Wette*, and others, we render the words thus, "are set forth for an example, suffering the vengeance of eternal fire," then they are to be thus expounded; "As Sodom and Gomorrha suffer the vengeance of a fire that consumed them finally, so that they will never be restored, as long as the World lasts, so the bodies and souls of the wicked will suffer, as long as they are capable of suffering; which, since they are immortal, will," as *Tertullian* says, "be for ever," "erimus iidem, qui nunc, nec alii post resurrectionem; Dei quidem cultores, apud Deum semper, profani verò in pœnam æquē jugis ignis, habentes ex ipsâ naturâ ejus, divinâ scilicet, subministrationem incorruptibilitatis." (Apol. 48.)

Cp. notes above, on Matt. xxv. 46. Mark ix. 44—48. 1 Cor. xv. 26, and see *Bp. Taylor*, Sermon iii., on Christ's Advent to Judgment, Part iii. § 6, where will be found a complete and conclusive demonstration of the *Eternity of Future Punishment*, and cp. *Dr. Horbery* on the Scripture Doctrine of Future Punishment, chap. ii. Num. xciv.

8—16.] This passage is referred to by *Clemens Alexandrin.* Strom. iii. p. 431, where he speaks of this description as *prophetic*, and as applicable to false Teachers also of the age after the Apostles.

8. ὁμοίως μέντοι] *in like manner however*, notwithstanding these warnings, these false Teachers proceed, with wilful and presumptuous recklessness, in the same course as those, whose example of suffering ought to have deterred them from sinning. The Sodomites are specially mentioned by St. Jude, because some of the Gnostics in their unclean recklessness of living even honoured them as *free*, and as proficient in superior knowledge! A fearful warning against the flagitious results of Heresy. See

Irenæus, i. 35, and above, *Introduction* to St. Peter's Second Epistle, p. 72, and to St. John's First Epistle, p. 104, and 1 John i. 6, and below, note on v. 11.

— ἐνυπνιαζόμενοι] *dreaming*, they dream evil things, and fondly deem them to be good. *Clem. Alex.* They profess superior knowledge, and they are insensible to all that is really good and wise, they are slumbering in the deadly sleep of sin, and are dreaming away their lives in a swoonlike trance of error, from which they will awake to woe.

On this word see the fearful comment and recitals of *Æcumenius* and *Epiphanius*, hær. xxvi.

— σάρκα μὲν μιαίνουσι] *they defile the flesh* with filthy lusts, in which they are led to indulge by their denial of Christ's Incarnation and Passion, and of the Resurrection of the flesh. See above, on 2 Pet. ii. 2. 10—12.

The μὲν, indeed, on the one side, with its correlative δὲ, which follows (σάρκα μὲν μιαίνουσι, κυριότητα δὲ ἀθετοῦσι), suggest by a slight but significant touch, that there is a moral and metaphysical connexion between sensual defilements of the flesh, and contumelious outrages against lordship. The reason is obvious. They who pollute the flesh, which has been consecrated by Christ's Incarnation, will not scruple to revile His dominion and dignity, and that of those who are His Representatives. Sensuality and Lawlessness are joined together in the same manner by St. Peter (2 Pet. ii. 10).

— κυριότητα δὲ ἀθετοῦσι] *they reject lordship*. See on 2 Pet. ii. 10.

— δόξας δὲ βλασφημοῦσιν] *and speak evil of glories or dignities*. See on 2 Pet. ii. 10.

9. ὁ δὲ Μιχαὴλ] *but* (in a very different spirit from that of these men, who imitate the rebel Angels and the men of Sodom), *Michael the Archangel, when contending even with the devil, he was disputing about the body of Moses*.

Michael = מִיכָאֵל = *who is as God? who is like God?* Cp. Rev. xiii. 4, with Dan. x. 13. 21; xii. 1, and Rev. xii. 7; and the word *Archangel* occurs 1 Thess. iv. 16.

The Gnostic false Teachers, against whom St. Jude writes, professed to revere *Angels*: they said that the World was made by Angels; and they even worshipped them. See above, on Col. ii. 8. 18, and 2 Pet. ii. 1. 10.

St. Jude therefore refers to the example of an *Archangel*, and thus puts them to shame. These false Teachers despised lordships and reviled dignities. But the Archangel Michael, although contending even with a fallen Angel, the leader of fallen Angels, the Devil,—διαβόλω, the calumniator, or railer,—and disputing with him concerning the body of Moses, which God had buried and concealed (Deut. xxxiv. 6), in order, as is probable, that it might not become an object of worship to the Israelites; and which, it seems, the Devil desired to possess, in order that God's purpose in this respect might be frustrated, and that the mortal remains of that faithful servant of God might be made to be an occasion of creature-worship to the Israelites,—as the brazen serpent set up by Moses was made to be (2 Kings xviii. 4), and as the relics of holy men have been made in later times,—yet even against him, the Arch-enemy of God, and even on such an occasion, the Archangel Michael did not venture to bring a railing sentence, but reserved all Judgment to God, and said, *The Lord rebuke thee*.

The Archangel was courteous in his language even to the Devil; so was Abraham to Dives in torment (Luke xvi. 25), and Christ to Judas the traitor (Matt. xxvi. 50).

The Jews themselves, from whom the Gnostics for the most part arose (see *Introduction* to St. John's First Epistle, p. 99, and on 2 Pet. ii. 1), had a tradition, that Sammael, the prince of the Devils, had a contest with the Archangel Michael, concerning the body of Moses, at the time of his death and burial (*Liber de Morte Mosis*, p. 161, and the Rabbinical testimonies in *Wetstein*, p. 735; in the Targum of Jonathan on Deut. xxxiv. 6, it is said that Michael was appointed to guard the burying-place of Moses. *Origen*, de princip. iii. c. 2, says that St. Jude is here citing a

δὲ, ὅσα μὲν οὐκ οἶδασι, βλασφημοῦσιν ὅσα δὲ φυσικῶς, ὡς τὰ ἄλογα ζῶα, ἐπίστανται, ἐν τούτοις φθείρονται.

¹¹ ^k Οὐαὶ αὐτοῖς, ὅτι τῇ ὁδῷ τοῦ Κάϊν ἐπορεύθησαν, καὶ τῇ πλάνῃ τοῦ Βαλαὰμ μισθοῦ ἐξεχύθησαν, καὶ τῇ ἀντιλογίᾳ τοῦ Κορὲ ἀπώλοντο.

¹² ¹ Οὗτοί εἰσιν ἐν ταῖς ἀγάπαις ὑμῶν σπιλάδες, συννευχούμενοι ἀφόβως, ἑαυτοὺς ποιμαίνοντες· νεφέλαι ἄννδροι ὑπὸ ἀνέμων παραφερόμεναι δένδρα

k Gen. 4. 8.
Num. 16. 1.
& 21. 7, 21.
2 Pet. 2. 15.
1 John 3. 12.
1 Prov. 25. 14.
2 Pet. 2. 13, 17.

book called the "Ascension of Moses." Compare *Æcumenius* here). That the devil's design was to defeat God's purpose with regard to that body, may be concluded from Michael's words, as recorded by St. Jude, "The Lord rebuke thee!" words like those which God Himself addressed to Satan, when he stood at the right hand of the Angel to resist him, when he was about to clothe Joshua with *fair raiment*, instead of *filthy garments* (Zech. iii. 2, 3).

Hence some ancient Expositors conjecture, that Satan claimed the body of Moses, on the plea that he had killed the Egyptian (for which they refer to the testimony of some Apocryphal books), and that Satan resisted Michael, when he was about to divest Moses of his garment of mortality, and to clothe him in that glorious brightness in which he appeared at the Transfiguration. Matt. xvii. 3. Mark ix. 4. Luke ix. 30. See *Theophylact*, *Æcumen.*, and, in particular, *Catena*, pp. 160—163; and cp. *Philo de Sacrif. Abel*, p. 102.

10. ὅσα μὲν οὐκ οἶδασι] *ὅσα quæ et quanta, what and how great things*—namely, God, and Christ, and the Holy Angels, and spiritual things generally—they know not, they revile. On this use of ὅσα, see Rev. i. 2, ὅσα εἶδε.

These false teachers boast of their superior knowledge, but they revile such things as they know not, spiritually and intellectually; and as many things as they, like the irrational animals, understand, i. e., have experience of, and sensible acquaintance with, such as the objects of the carnal appetite, "comedere et bibere, et rebus venereis indulgere, et alia perpetrare quæ sunt communia cum animalibus ratione carentibus" (*Clem. Alex.*, p. 1008), in these things they corrupt themselves.

On the difference between οἶδα and ἐπίσταμαι, cp. Acts xix. 15. Heb. xi. 8. James iv. 14; and cp. note above, on 1 John ii. 3.

11. οὐαὶ αὐτοῖς] *Woe unto them!* cited by *S. Clemens Alexandrin.*, *Pædag.* ii., p. 239.

— τῇ ὁδῷ τοῦ Κάϊν] in the way of Cain: specially applicable to some classes of the Gnostics, who dared impiously to affirm, that "Cain was made by a power superior to that of the Creator; and who acknowledged Esau, Korah, and the Sodomites, and all such, as their own kindred." See *Irenæus*, i. 31 (*Stieren*), i. 35, p. 113 (*Grabe*). Cp. *Tertullian*, *Præscr.* c. 47. *Clem. Alexandr.*, *Strom.* vii., p. 549. *S. Hippolyt.*, *Phil.* p. 133. *Epiphani.*, *Hæret.* 38. *Theodoret*, *Hæret. fab.*, c. 15; *Philastr.*, c. 2. *Tillemont*, ii. p. 21. These false Teachers destroy, like Cain: they love lucre, and allure to sin, like Balaam; they make divisions in the Church of Christ, like Korah. *Catena*, p. 164: and cp. *Bede*, and note above, on 1 John i. 6.

— τοῦ Βαλαὰμ] of Balaam.

On the resemblance of the Gnostic Teachers to Balaam, see on 2 Pet. ii. 18, and *Didymus* here, p. 333.

— μισθοῦ] for reward: the genitive of the object. *Winer*, § 30, p. 183; or price, *ibid.*, p. 185.

— ἐξεχύθησαν] they poured themselves out in a torrent: they rushed after, in a foul, headlong cataract of sin and recklessness. Compare the metaphor in 1 Pet. iv. 4, ἀσωτίας ἀνάχυσιν. On this use of the word, see *Clem. Alex.*, p. 491, εἰς ἡδονὴν ἐκχυθέντες, the examples in *Loesner*, p. 503; cp. *Tacit.* Ann. i. 54, "Mæcenate effuso in amorem Bathylli."

— τῇ ἀντιλογίᾳ τοῦ Κορὲ ἀπώλοντο] and they perished in the gainsaying of Korah: that is, in gainsaying, like that of Korah and his company (*Numb.* xvi. 33). "The doom of those who rise against the True Faith, and excite others against the Church of God, is to be swallowed up by the Earth, and to remain in the gulph below, with Korah, Dathan, and Abiram." *Irenæus* (*iv.* 43, *Grabe*).

This warning of St. Jude, a Christian Apostle, is a proof that the sin of Korah and his company, rising in schismatical opposition to their Rulers temporal and spiritual, may be committed in Christian times. And the words of *S. Irenæus* explain what that sin is, and what its punishment. Cp. *Dr. W. H. Mill's* Sermon, "On the Gainsaying of Korah;" preached on the 29th of May. Cambridge, 1845.

Some of the Gnostics professed even to regard Korah with admiration. See *Iren.* i. 34, *Grabe*. *Theodoret*, *Hæret. fab.*, c. 15; and above, on v. 11, and on 1 John i. 6.

12. οὗτοί] these. *Σ* inserts here εἰσιν γογγυσταὶ μεμψίμοιροι κ. τ. ε. α. π.—an interpolation from v. 16.

— ἐν ταῖς ἀγάπαις ὑμῶν] in your love-feasts, provided at the common cost of the Churches in the exercise of charity and hospitality. See above, on 2 Pet. ii. 13. *Tertullian*, *Apol.* 39. *Lightfoot*, on 1 Cor. xi. 31. *Bingham*, xv. c. 7.

St. Jude here adds a new circumstance to what had been before said on this matter by St. Peter. See 2 Pet. ii. 11, 13, and the next note. *S. Hippolytus* (*Ref. Hæres.*, p. 175) describes the Simonians as saying that their promiscuous μίξεις were τελείαν ἀγάπην, and μακαρίζοντας ἑαυτοὺς ἐπὶ τῇ μίξει: cp. what he says of the Nicolaitans, p. 258.

— σπιλάδες] rocks, shoals. So *Æcumen.*, *Theophylact*, *Etymol.*, where the word is explained by rocks under the surface of the sea, ὑφαλοὶ πέτραι; and this sense has been adopted by *Lightfoot*, *Welstein*, *Whitby*, *Meyer*, *De Wette*, *Schleusner*, *Huther*, *Peile*, the *American Revisers*, and many other recent Expositors. Indeed, this is the only sense in which the word σπιλάς is found in ancient authors; and it is a word of frequent occurrence. See *Homer*, *Odyss.* iii. 298; v. 401, 405; and the authorities in *Welstein*, p. 736.

Besides, St. Jude is comparing these false Teachers to objects in the natural world, viz., clouds, trees, waves of the sea, wandering stars. Therefore the word rock, reef, or shoal, seems to harmonize better with the context than spots, which is indeed the sense of σπιλοὶ (2 Pet. ii. 13), but not of σπιλάς. False Teachers in a Church may well be called σπιλάδες, shoals or rocks, as well as waves and wandering stars, and this figurative expression seems to add completeness to the picture. In Heretical Teaching there are the wandering stars above, beguiling the mariners in the ship of the Church, from the right course; there are the raging waves dashing against it; and there are the hidden shoals on which it may strike unawares, and be wrecked.

It is probable that these false Teachers introduced themselves clandestinely into the Love-feasts (ἀγάπας) provided by the Churches in the exercise of hospitality for strangers, and thus inculcated their errors (*Lightfoot*, ii. p. 776). And so they were like dangerous reefs and shoals, on which some made shipwreck of the faith: cp. 1 Tim. i. 19, and which were to be carefully shunned by the Christians. See above, on Rom. xvi. 17.

These σπιλάδες may be well said to be ἐν ταῖς ἀγάπαις, where the Church looks only for peace and safety, as in a deep and placid harbour. The words *scopulus*, *φάραγξ*, *Charybdis*, *Euripus*, *barathrum*, &c., are thus applied frequently to persons. See *Florus* iv. 9, where Antony is called a *scopulus*; and *Aristoph.*, *Equites* 248, *φάραγγα καὶ Χάρυβδιν ἀρπαγῆς*, and *Anthol.* ii. 15. 1, εἰς δολίους, where treacherous persons are compared to ὑφαλοὶ πέτραι. *Horat.*, *Ep.* i. 15. 31,—

Pernicies et tempestas barathrumque macelli,
Quicquid quæsierat ventri donabat avaro.

This passage of St. Jude affords another specimen of the characteristic of this Epistle, adopting, or alluding to, what had been said by St. Peter in his Second Epistle; and also adding some new feature to it. As St. Peter's word ἀπάταις may have suggested St. Jude's ἀγάπαις, so St. Peter's word σπιλοὶ may have produced St. Jude's σπιλάδες. Thus St. Jude shows his knowledge of that Epistle; he recognizes, illustrates, and confirms it; and he also contributes to it new incidents of his own. See above, on 2 Pet. ii. 11, 13, and note here on v. 12, and pp. 136, 137.

After εἰσιν A, B, G insert οἱ, and so *Lach.*, *Tisch.* And this reading is confirmed by the identification of the persons with the emblems which represent them in what follows, viz. Trees, and Waves, and Stars. See the notes there.

— ἑαυτοὺς ποιμαίνοντες] feeding, or pasturing themselves—not the flock. *Ezek.* xxxiv. 2. 8, 10, and paying no reverence to the Great Shepherd, or to those Pastors whom He has set over them, and perverting his feast of love into an occasion of surfeiting themselves.

— παραφερόμεναι] borne along, or borne by, so as not to let any rain fall to water the ground beneath them. So A, B, C, and *Griesb.*, *Scholz*, *Lach.*, *Tisch.* *Elz.* has περιφερόμεναι.

m Isa. 57. 10.

φθινοπωρινὰ, ἄκαρπα, δις ἀποθανόντα, ἐκριζωθέντα· ^{13 m} κύματα ἄγρια θαλάσσης, ἐπαφρίζοντα τὰς ἐαυτῶν αἰσχύνας· ἀστέρες πλανῆται, οἷς ὁ ζόφος τοῦ σκότους εἰς αἰῶνα τετήρηται.

n Gen. 5. 18.

Dan. 7. 10.

Acts 1. 11.

1 Thess. 1. 10.

2 Thess. 1. 10.

Rev. 1. 7.

o Zech. 14. 5.

Matt. 12. 36.

& 25. 31.

2 Thess. 1. 7.

p Ps. 15. 10.

2 Pet. 2. 18.

^{14 n} Προεφήτευσεν δὲ καὶ τούτοις ἑβδομος ἀπὸ Ἀδὰμ Ἐνὼχ λέγων, Ἴδού, ἦλθε Κύριος ἐν ἀγίαις μυριάσιν αὐτοῦ, ^{15 o} ποιῆσαι κρίσιν κατὰ πάντων, καὶ ἐξελέγξαι πάντας τοὺς ἀσεβεῖς αὐτῶν περὶ πάντων τῶν ἔργων ἀσεβείας αὐτῶν ὧν ἠσέβησαν, καὶ περὶ πάντων τῶν σκληρῶν, ὧν ἐλάλησαν κατ' αὐτοῦ ἁμαρτωλοὶ ἀσεβεῖς.

^{16 p} Οὗτοί εἰσι γογγυσταὶ, μεμψίμοιροι, κατὰ τὰς ἐπιθυμίας αὐτῶν πορευ-

— δένδρα φθινοπωρινὰ] *autumnal trees—trees in the fall of the year* (*Didymus, Vulgate, Bede, &c., Hammond, Bengel*); as they appear in the season called φθινόπωρον, when the autumn is verging into winter. It means, therefore, trees without fruit, or even leaves (*Æcumen. and Catena, p. 166*). These Teachers are too reckless in sin even to be hypocrites, like the barren leafy fig-tree; cp. Matt. xxi. 19, 20. Mark xi. 13. 20. Cp. *Plutarch, Symp. viii. 10*, φθινοπωρινὸς ἄνθρωπος, ἐν ᾧ φυλλοχοεῖ τὰ δένδρα, *Wetstein, p. 736*; and *Dean Trench* on the Authorized Version, p. 125. This translation seems preferable to that which renders the words δένδρα φθινοπώρινα, *trees, whose fruit withereth*; from φθίω, *to perish*, and ὀπώρα, *fruit*. St. Jude does not, it seems, mean to say that their fruit perishes, but that they have *no fruit*.

— ἄκαρπα] not only *without fruit*, but *unfruitful, incapable of bearing fruit*.

— δις ἀποθανόντα, ἐκριζωθέντα] *which died twice, and have been uprooted*. Trees may be said to be *twice dead*, when they are not only in appearance dead, as in *winter*, but also in *reality*, so as never to revive in the spring. It seems that St. Jude applies to the *Trees* what is true of the *Persons* represented by the *Trees*, as our Lord in cursing the *Fig-tree* spoke to *Jerusalem*, represented by the Tree which He cursed. See on Matt. xxi. 19. Mark xi. 13—20.

In like manner, in the verse following, St. Jude speaks of these false Teachers as *wild Waves* of the sea, foaming out their own *shame* (cp. Isa. lvii. 20); not that Waves do this, but the *Men* do it, who are likened to the Waves. He also calls them wandering *Stars*—erratic Meteors or Comets—to whom the *gloom of the darkness has been reserved for ever*; and he applies to the *Stars* what is true of the *men* who are represented by the *Stars*. Cp. *Catena* here, p. 165; and *Clem. Alex.*, p. 1008, “apostatas significat.”

So these men are *Trees* which *died twice*, because these men having been once dead in trespasses and sins, and raised to life in baptism, have relapsed and apostatized into the death of sin, and so have *died twice*; and because by their sins they have incurred the *second death*. See Rev. ii. 11; xx. 6. 14; xxi. 8, where it is said that the *second death* is the penalty of the *unbelieving, abominable, and fornicators*.

They are *uprooted*, because Christ has said, “Every tree which My Father hath not planted shall be rooted up” (ἐκριζωθήσεται), Matt. xv. 13. Their doom is described as *already executed*, because it is certain. Compare in v. 14 here, ἦλθε Κύριος, “the Lord came.” His coming is certain; cp. Isa. xxi. 9. Jer. li. 8. *Babylon is fallen*. Rev. x. 7. *Winer*, § 40, p. 248.

14. προεφήτευσεν δὲ καὶ τούτοις] *But Enoch, the seventh from Adam, prophesied also to those*. His warning is addressed to them, as well as to those of his own and future ages; let them then profit by it. And it was *for these*, that is for their warning and benefit, as well as for those of Enoch's own time.

St. Jude here notes, that Enoch was the *seventh* from Adam. The Jewish doctors say, “The number *seven* is sacred above all; Enoch is *seventh* from Adam, and walks with God; Moses is *seventh* from Abraham; Phineas is *seventh* from Jacob our father, as Enoch was *seventh* from Adam; and they correspond to the *seventh* Day which is the *Sabbath*, the day of rest. Every seventh age is in the highest esteem.” See the Rabbinical authorities cited by *Wetstein*, p. 737.

Seven is the *sabbatical* number, the number of *Rest*. Enoch, the *seventh* from Adam, having finished his course after the labours of this world, in an evil age, was like a personified *Sabbath*. God rested in him, and he rested in God. Cp. notes above, ὕψους Νῶε, 2 Pet. ii. 5.

Enoch, the *seventh* from Adam, walked with God in a corrupt age (Gen. v. 22), and *pleased* God, and, as St. Jude here states, delivered a Prophecy concerning the Second Coming of Christ to Judgment, and the Sabbath of Eternity; and he was *translated* and taken to his rest (Gen. v. 24. Heb. xi. 5). He was a *personal type* of those holy men, who will be found *alive* at that Second

Coming, and will be caught up to meet the Lord in the air; and so be ever with the Lord (1 Thess. iv. 17).

Almighty God created the World in Six Days, and rested on the Seventh Day. Enoch, in the *seventh* Generation of Mankind from the Creation of Adam, was taken up by God to his rest. And some of the Fathers supposed that the World will run its course for Six millenary periods, and then have its rest in the Seventh Millennium. See above, on 2 Pet. iii. 8.

It is worthy of remark, that Enoch lived as many years as there are days in a Solar year, viz. 365, and was then translated (Gen. v. 24). Cp. *Bede* (homil. in Ascens. p. 449), who, as others of the Fathers, remarks, that *Enoch* was a signal type of Christ in obedience, and in pleasing God, and in His Ascension; and the fact that Enoch was *seventh* from *Adam*, and that he lived as many days as the Earth takes in revolving round the Sun, may also have a relation to the fulfilling of the course of the humanity in Christ upon Earth; and to its constant illumination by the Light of God: and in this respect Enoch represents the Christian life of the Saints of all ages who fulfil their course in obedience upon earth, and will be translated hereafter into heaven.

Cp. the description of Enoch in *Milton*, Par. Lost, 665;—

“Of middle age one rising, eminent
In wise deport, spake much of right and wrong,
Of Justice, of Religion, Truth, and Peace,
And Judgment from above; him old and young
Exploded, and had seized with violent hands,
Had not a cloud descending snatched him thence
Unseen amid the throng; so violence
Proceeded.”

— λέγων] *saying, Behold the Lord came with His holy myriads, to execute judgment*.

He says “the Lord came,” because the Lord's Coming is certain. Enoch, who lived 5000 years ago, *saw* in the spirit Christ's Advent as an event that had already happened. A noble specimen of divine Inspiration. Enoch, the seventh from Adam, saw Christ—who is the true *Rest* of the righteous (Matt. xi. 28, 29)—already come to Judgment. Cp. the prophetic use of the *aorist* in Rev. x. 7, ἐτελέσθη, and note above, v. 12.

This citation is found in the second chapter of the *Book of Enoch*, which was probably compiled by a Jew, in the first century of the Christian era, from traditionary fragments, ascribed to Enoch (compare *Origen* here, in Num. 28; c. Cels. v. p. 267. *Augustine*, de Civ. Dei, xv. 23. *S. Jerome*, Script. Eccl. c. 4), and appears to have been seen by *Tertullian*, de idol. 4, de cultu fem. i. 3, where he refers in a remarkable passage to this citation, by “Jude the Apostle” (ii. 10). The “Book of Enoch” has been translated into English from the *Æthiopic* by *Dr. Lawrence*, Oxford, 1821, who published the *Æthiopic Text*, Oxf. 1838, which corresponds with the Greek Fragments cited by the ancient Fathers. It has been reprinted by *Dillman*, Leipzig, 1853. The “Book of Enoch” is supposed (by *Lawrence, Hofmann, Wieseler, Gieseler*, and others) to have been mainly compiled in the time of Herod the Great. An analysis of the Book of Enoch may be seen in *Fr. Lücke's* Commentary on the Apocalypse, Erste Abtheilung, pp. 89—144. Cp. *Winer*, R. W. B. i. 477; and *Mr. Westcott's* Article, *Dr. Smith's Dict. of the Bible*, and note above on 2 Pet. iii. 13.

This citation by St. Jude from the Book of Enoch, which was not canonical, was probably a reason why some persons had doubts concerning the authority of this Epistle. See *Jerome*, Script. Eccl. c. 4; but *S. Jerome* says that in his age this Epistle was authorized by general reception among the Holy Scriptures; and he observes in another place, that St. Paul also, in his canonical Epistles, cites from books not canonical (see 2 Tim. iii. 8, concerning Jannes and Jambres), and that he also quotes heathen poets. See *S. Jerome* in Tit. c. i.; in Ephes. c. v.; and note above, 1 Cor. xv. 33.

16. γογγυσταὶ, μεμψίμοιροι] *murmurers*, against God's provi-

όμενοι, καὶ τὸ στόμα αὐτῶν λαλεῖ ὑπέρογκα, θαυμάζοντες πρόσωπα ὠφελείας χάριν.

¹⁷ Ὑμεῖς δὲ, ἀγαπητοὶ, μνήσθητε τῶν ῥημάτων τῶν προειρημένων ὑπὸ τῶν ἀποστόλων τοῦ Κυρίου ἡμῶν Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ, ¹⁸ ὅτι ἔλεγον ὑμῖν, ὅτι ἐπ' ἐσχάτου χρόνου ἔσονται ἐμπαίικται, κατὰ τὰς ἑαυτῶν ἐπιθυμίας πορευόμενοι τῶν ἀσεβειῶν. ¹⁹ Οὗτοί εἰσιν οἱ ἀποδιορίζοντες, ψυχικοὶ, Πνεῦμα μὴ ἔχοντες.

²⁰ Ὑμεῖς δὲ, ἀγαπητοὶ, ἐποικοδομοῦντες ἑαυτοὺς τῇ ἀγιωτάτῃ ὑμῶν πίστει, ἐν Πνεύματι ἀγίῳ προσευχόμενοι, ²¹ ἑαυτοὺς ἐν ἀγάπῃ Θεοῦ τηρήσατε, προσδεχόμενοι τὸ ἔλεος τοῦ Κυρίου ἡμῶν Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ εἰς ζωὴν αἰώνιον.

²² Καὶ οὓς μὲν ἐλέγχετε διακρινομένους, ²³ οὓς δὲ σώζετε ἐκ πυρὸς ἀρπάζοντες, οὓς δὲ ἐλεεῖτε ἐν φόβῳ· μισοῦντες καὶ τὸν ἀπὸ τῆς σαρκὸς ἐσπιλωμένον χιτῶνα.

q Acts 20. 29.
1 Tim. 4. 1.
2 Tim. 3. 1.
& 4. 3.
2 Pet. 2. 1. & 3. 3.
r Prov. 18. 1.
Ezek. 14. 7.
Hos. 4. 14.
& 9. 10.
1 Cor. 2. 14.

s Rev. 3. 4.

dence; querulous, discontented with their own lot. Cp. *Theophrast*, char. xvii., περὶ μεμψιμοιρίας; and contrast this character with St. Paul's spirit and language in Phil. iv. 11, 12. 1 Tim. vi. 6—8. Heb. xiii. 5.

— ὑπέρογκα] swelling words. On the boastful vaunting of these false teachers, see 2 Pet. ii. 8.

— ὠφελείας χάριν] for the sake of advantage. On their covetousness, see 2 Pet. ii. 3. 14.

17. ὑμεῖς δέ] But, beloved, remember ye the words which have been spoken before by the Apostles of our Lord Jesus Christ; that they told you, that at the last time there should be scoffers, walking according to their own lusts of impieties, words spoken by the Apostle St. Peter in his Second Epistle, iii. 2, and confirming the proof of the priority, authenticity, and genuineness of that Epistle. See note there, and Hengstenberg on the Apocalypse, Introd. p. 19 (Berlin, 1849), who observes that this verse is decisive on the question of the priority of St. Peter's Epistle.

There seems also to be a reference here to the description of the Last Days in St. Paul's last Epistle, 2 Tim. iii. 1—6, ἐν ἐσχάταις ἡμέραις ἔσονται ἄνθρωποι φίλαντοι κ.τ.λ. There is a special propriety in this admonitory reference in this Epistle—one of the last of the Catholic Epistles—to the last warning in the Epistles of the Apostles of the Circumcision, and of the Gentiles, St. Peter and St. Paul. Cp. *Œcumen.* on v. 1. Compare the admonition in *Hebrews* xiii. 7, "Remember your Rulers, who spoke to you the word of God," where St. Paul appears to be exhorting the Hebrews to remember especially St. James, the Bishop of Jerusalem (see note there); and St. Jude, the brother of James, here appears to be exhorting his readers to remember St. Peter and St. Paul.

On these verses, 17—21, see *Hooker*, Sermons v. and vi. vol. iv. pp. 819—870.

ἐν ἐσχάτῳ χρόνῳ is the reading of *Elz.*, but A has ἐπ' ἐσχάτου τοῦ χρόνου. B, C have ἐσχάτου χρόνου.

18.] See *S. Hippolytus* de Consummatione Sæculi, § 10, ed. Fabric., p. 9, who cites this verse.

19. οἱ ἀποδιορίζοντες] the separatists. The definitive article joined with the participle describes more than an act, it represents a habit and state. Cp. ὁ πειράζων, Matt. iv. 2, and note, ὁ βαπτίζων, Mark vi. 14, and Luke iii. 14, οἱ στρατευόμενοι.

St. Jude uses an active verb here (the pronoun ἑαυτοῦς, which is in *Elz.*, is not in the best MSS.), because these false teachers seduced and separated others from the Church, as well as themselves: cp. *Winer*, § 38, p. 225, and note above, on Mark xiv. 72. Cp. the precept in *Barnabas*, Epist. c. 4, "Non separatim debetis seducere vos, sed in unum convenientes, inquire, quod communiter dilectis conveniat et prosit." And see also the ancient *Catena*, p. 168, where this word is expounded, "making schisms and rending the members of the Church." Cp. *Hooker*, Sermon v. § 12.

— ψυχικοὶ] animal; not πνευματικοὶ, spiritual, as they professed to be; and they branded others as merely animal, and not spiritual. They are πνεῦμα μὴ ἔχοντες, not having πνεῦμα, i. e. the influence of the Holy Spirit. See *Clem. Alex.* p. 1308, "non habentes spiritum, qui est per fidem secundum usum justitiæ superveniens," and *Bp. Middleton* on Matt. i. 18; and John iii. 6. Acts vi. 3. Gal. v. 5. 16. 18. 25, 26.

Some of the Gnostics of the sub-Apostolic age said, as *S. Irenæus* relates, "that animal men (ψυχικοὶ) are conversant only with animal things (ψυχικά), and have not perfect *gnosis*; and they describe us who are of the Church, as such; and they say

that as we are only such, we must do good works, in order to be saved; but they assert, that they themselves will be saved, not by practice, but because they are spiritual (πνευματικοὶ) by nature, and that as gold, though mingled with mire, does not lose its beauty, so they themselves, though wallowing in the mire of carnal works, do not lose their own spiritual essence. And therefore, though they eat things offered to idols, and are the first to resort to the banquets which the heathen celebrate in honour of their false gods, and abstain from nothing that is foul in the eyes of God or man, they say that they cannot contract any defilement from these impure abominations; and they scoff at us who fear God, as silly dotards (cp. v. 10), and hugely exalt themselves, calling themselves perfect, and the elect seed: and they even make lust a virtue, and call us mere animal men (ψυχικοὺς), and say that we stand in need of temperance, in order to come to the pleroma, but that they themselves, who are spiritual and perfect, have no need thereof." *S. Irenæus*, i. 6. 2—4.

20. ἐποικοδομοῦντες ἑαυτοὺς τῇ ἀγιωτάτῃ ὑμῶν πίστει] building yourselves upon your most holy faith. Faith is the foundation laid by God, and it is for you to labour in raising the superstructure upon it. Cp. 2 Pet. i. 5, ἐπιχορηγήσατε τῇ πίστει ὑμῶν τὴν ἀρετὴν.

He had exhorted them to contend earnestly upon and for the Faith once for all delivered to the Saints (v. 3), he now exhorts them to build themselves up upon it. The Christian Soldier must also be a Christian Builder. He must have a sword in one hand and a trowel in the other. See above, *Introduction* to 2 Peter.

This Faith is called most holy in opposition to the unholy doctrines and practices of the heretical Teachers. Cp. v. 14. Compare *Hooker*, Sermon vi. §§ 13—15.

20, 21. ἐν Πνεύματι ἀγίῳ προσευχόμενοι] praying in the Holy Ghost, keep yourselves in the love of God, looking for the mercy of our Lord Jesus Christ, unto life eternal. See above, v. 2. A testimony to the Trinity of Persons in the Godhead, and a remarkable parallel to that of St. Paul, "The Grace of our Lord Jesus Christ, and the love of God, and the communion of the Holy Ghost be with you all." 2 Cor. xiii. 14, where see note; and cp. 1 Pet. i. 1—3.

22, 23. οὓς μὲν ἐλέγχετε—φόβῳ] and some indeed who are contentious (διακρινομένους) reprove ye; but others save ye, plucking them out of the fire; and on others have compassion with fear. So *Lach.*, *Tisch.*, with a preponderance of the best Manuscripts.

Elz. has οὓς μὲν ἐλεεῖτε διακρινομένοι, οὓς δὲ ἐν φόβῳ σώζετε ἐκ τοῦ πυρὸς ἀρπάζοντες. Against this reading it may be also observed that διακρίνομαι in the New Testament never signifies to make a difference, or to discriminate one thing or person from another, with a view to the preference of the good; but it always signifies either to doubt (see Acts x. 20; xi. 12. Rom. xiv. 23. James i. 6), or to contend, and dispute, as in this Epistle, v. 9, and Acts xi. 2; cp. note above, on James ii. 4; and often in the LXX. Jer. xv. 10. Ezek. xx. 35. Joel iii. 2; and it is therefore expounded in this sense here by the ancient Greek Interpreters *Œcumenius*, *Theophylact*, and *Catena*, p. 170.

The phrase, plucking from the fire, seems to be from Zech. iii. 2, "Is not this as a brand plucked from the fire?" words spoken by the Lord to Satan. It is observable that St. Jude refers to that passage above, v. 9, The Lord rebuke thee! Perhaps there may be an allusion also in what follows (hating even the tunic that has been spotted by the flesh) to the filthy garments which are taken from Joshua as a sign that his iniquities are taken away (Zech. iii. 4), and in order that he may be clothed

t Rom. 16. 25.
Eph. 3. 20.
u Rom. 16. 27.
1 Tim. 1. 17.

24 ^t Τῷ δὲ δυναμένῳ φυλάξαι ὑμᾶς ἀπταίστους, καὶ στῆσαι κατενώπιον τῆς δόξης αὐτοῦ ἀμώμους ἐν ἀγαλλιάσει, 25 ^u μόνῳ Θεῷ σωτῇρι ἡμῶν διὰ Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ τοῦ Κυρίου ἡμῶν, δόξα, μεγαλωσύνη, κράτος καὶ ἐξουσία πρὸ παντὸς τοῦ αἰῶνος καὶ νῦν καὶ εἰς πάντας τοὺς αἰῶνας, ἀμήν.

with a new priestly tunic reaching to the feet. See Zech. iii. 4, in LXX.

— μισοῦντες—χιτῶνα] *hating even the tunic that has been spotted by the flesh.*

Ye have *put on Christ* (Gal. iii. 27); ye have received from Him a *wedding garment* (see Matt. xxii. 12) *white and clean*, and ye must *walk in white* (see Rev. iii. 4, 5. 18; vi. 11; xix. 14), and not stain your *garments* (Rev. iii. 4) with the mire of lust and sin (see 2 Pet. ii. 22); and though ye must, in your Christian charity, endeavour to *pluck sinners out of the fire*, yet your *love* for the *erring* must not tempt you to love their *errors*. While ye strive to *rescue* the sinner from the flame, ye must abhor the garb of sin in which he is clothed; ye must *hate* the *tunic*, the *inner robe*, soiled by the stains of the flesh, “*animæ videlicet tunica maculata est spiritus concupiscentiis pollutus carnalibus.*” *Clem. Alexandr.*

24, 25. τῷ δὲ δυναμένῳ] A remarkable sentence, declaratory of the true doctrine against the Gnostics. *But, to Him that is able to keep you from stumbling, and to set you blameless before the presence of His glory with exceeding joy, to the only God our Saviour, through Jesus Christ our Lord, be Glory, Majesty,*

Strength, and Authority before all Time, and now and for evermore. Amen. The δὲ, *but*, at the beginning of the sentence, is not to pass unnoticed. False teachers may seek for glory elsewhere. *But you will ascribe it all to God through Christ.*

24. ὑμᾶς] *you.* So *Elz.*, *Griesb.*, *Scholz*, *Lach.*, and *C, G*, and *Vulg.*, *Syriac*, *Arabic*, *Æthiopic*, and many *Cursives.*—*Tisch.* reads αὐτοὺς, *them.*

25. μόνῳ] *Elz.* adds σοφῷ, not in *A, B, C*, and rejected by *Griesb.*, *Scholz*, *Lach.*, *Tisch.*

— διὰ Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ τοῦ Κυρίου ἡμῶν] *through Jesus Christ our Lord*,—cancelled by *Elz.*: but in *A, B, C, G*, and received by *Griesb.*, *Scholz*, *Lach.*, *Tisch.*; and having a peculiar propriety in this Epistle, directed against Heretics who separated Jesus from Christ, and did not acknowledge Him as the Giver of all grace from God. Cp. on 2 Pet. ii. 1.

— πρὸ παντὸς τοῦ αἰῶνος] *before all time*; before the world began: also omitted by *Elz.*, but found in *A, B, C, G*, and received by *Scholz*, *Lach.*, *Tisch.*, and also very appropriate in this Epistle, as asserting the Eternal Pre-existence of Christ against the false Teachers. Cp. *Introduction to St. John's First Epistle*, pp. 98—104.

INTRODUCTION

TO

THE BOOK OF REVELATION.

On the Design and Structure of the Apocalypse, or Book of Revelation.

I. 1. To understand the design of the APOCALYPSE, or Book of REVELATION, we must consider the circumstances of the Author at the time when it was written.

The writer was the beloved disciple, St. John, the Apostle and Evangelist¹ of Christ. At the date of the Apocalypse he was left, as is most probable, the last survivor of the Twelve. Many of his brother Apostles had died as martyrs for Christ. Jerusalem had been destroyed by the armies of Rome, according to the prophecies that he had heard from His Divine Master². Thus the Truth of Christ's words had been manifested; and the Majesty of His Power in that Judgment, executed on those who rejected and crucified Him, had been displayed.

But now the Roman Power, which had been employed by Almighty God to punish Jerusalem for its sins, was persecuting Christianity. Under the Emperor Nero, it had slain the Apostles St. Peter and St. Paul; and now in the last years of the reign of Domitian it was raging against the Church with greater violence. It had banished St. John in his old age to the Isle of Patmos, "for the word of God and for the testimony of Jesus Christ³." Other conflicts were at hand. The faith of the Church was to be tried in a succession of Persecutions breaking forth at intervals for the space of more than two centuries.

When these Persecutions had ceased, Christianity would have to pass through a severer ordeal. In the fourth and fifth Centuries, the Church would be distracted by dissensions, and the True Faith would be depraved by heretical adulterations. Intestine Discords and Corruptions would expose it to the assaults of adversaries from without, who would be suffered by Almighty God to chastise Christendom.

Such calamities as these might perplex many. Many might be tempted to faint and falter in the faith, and to sink into despondency and despair. Century after century would pass away. The darkness would seem to be growing thicker and thicker around the vessel of the Church, and the tempest to be rising higher and higher; and Christ would not yet be seen walking on the waves, coming to the ship, and stilling the storm.

We, who live at a distance of more than seventeen hundred years from the date of the Apocalypse, and look back from our own age to that of St. John, know what the prospect was, which was seen by Him who dictated the Apocalypse—"the Revelation of JESUS CHRIST⁴."

We also know, that some things lie still beyond us, which were foretold by Patriarchs and Prophets, and were clearly foreseen by Christ. His Second Advent, the General Resurrection, the Universal Judgment, the joys of Heaven, and the pains of Hell, these things lay open to His eye.

2. If now we proceed to examine the contents of the Apocalypse, we find that it is adjusted in a remarkable manner to these circumstances.

An *uninspired* Christian writer, living at the date of the Apocalypse, the end of the First Century, and contemplating the divine Origin of the Gospel, and the miracles wrought by Christ and His Apostles; and reflecting on the Destruction of Jerusalem, and on the Dispersion of the Jews

¹ These assertions will be substantiated in the course of this Introduction.

² Matt. xxiv. Mark xiii. Luke xxi.

³ Rev. i. 9.

⁴ Rev. i. 1.

for their rejection of Christ according to His prophecies, and observing the marvellous extension of the Gospel at that time, would have augured for the Christian Church a speedy and complete Victory. He would have anticipated, that after a short struggle it would have triumphed over Heathenism, as Christ had triumphed over Jerusalem. And if *such* a writer had also been informed, that after a conflict of little more than two centuries, with the Heathen Power of Rome, Christianity would have been accepted by the Imperial Masters of the World, he would have been strongly confirmed in that cheering anticipation.

But this is *not* the tone of the Apocalypse.

It reveals a long train of future *sufferings, failings, and chastisements* in the History of the Church. And yet it cheers the reader with the consolatory assurance, that Christ is mightier than His enemies; that He went forth in the first age of the Gospel like a royal warrior, "conquering and to conquer¹;" and that He enables all His faithful servants to *overcome*²; that they who die for Him, *live*; that they who suffer for Him, *reign*³; and that the course of the Church of Christ upon Earth, is like the course of Christ Himself; that she is here as a Witness of the Truth, that her office is to teach the world; that she will be fed by the Divine hand, like the Ancient Church⁴ with manna in the wilderness; that she will be borne on eagles' wings in her missionary career throughout the world; and yet that she must expect to suffer injuries from enemies and from friends; that she too must look to have *her* Gethsemane and *her* Calvary, but that she will also have *her* Olivet; that through the pains of Agony and Suffering, and through the darkness of the Grave, she will rise to the glories of a triumphant Ascension, and to the everlasting joys of the new Jerusalem; that she, who has been for a time "the Woman wandering in the wilderness⁵," will be for ever and ever "the Bride" glorified in heaven⁶.

It will be readily acknowledged by those who contemplate the course of the Church from the days of St. John to the present age, that such a representation of it is in perfect accordance with the *facts* of the case; that it bears evidence of divine *foresight*; and that it was well adapted to serve the purpose of rescuing the minds of Christians in every age from the dangers of despondency and unbelief, and also from the snare of indulging in illusory hopes and visionary dreams of perfect spiritual unity, and religious purity upon earth; and that it was admirably framed to instruct and prepare them to encounter trials and afflictions with constancy and courage, and to endure hardness as good soldiers of Christ; and to strengthen their faith, and quicken their hope even by those trials and afflictions, as having been foretold by Christ in this Book; and that it thus affords a pledge that the *other* predictions of this same Book, which reveals the full and final Triumph of Christ and the eternal Felicity and Glory of all His faithful servants, and the destruction of all His Enemies, will not fail of their accomplishment.

The Apocalypse is therefore a Manual of Consolation to the Church in her pilgrimage through this world to the heavenly Canaan of her rest.

II. In another respect also it is fraught with spiritual comfort and edification.

1. At the time when the Apocalypse was written, Jerusalem was trodden under foot by the Heathen. Her temple had been burnt by Roman armies; her Sacred Vessels had been carried to Rome; no sacrifices were offered on her altars, the sound of her holy songs had ceased; her Festivals were no more frequented by Jews from every region under heaven; her inhabitants had been scattered abroad among the nations of the earth. Almighty God seemed to have hidden His face from His people, and to have rejected them for ever. Here then was an urgent need of comfort to those who mourned, in the spirit of Jeremiah, amid the ruins of *their* Sion, and wept over her desolations, and remembered the city of their solemnities⁷, and all the pleasant things that she had enjoyed in the days of old⁸.

This comfort is supplied by the Apocalypse.

2. It carries the reader back to the first ages of Israelitish history. It places him in Egypt⁹, and teaches him to recognize there, in the Ancient Church of God, a type and figure of the *Church of Christ*. Or rather, since there is but one Church of God from the beginning of the world to the end, we may boldly say that the Apocalypse *identifies* the Catholic Church of Christ with God's ancient People in Egypt. It takes up the history of the Plagues of Egypt, and teaches the true Israelites

¹ Rev. vi. 2.

² See ii. 7; xii. 11; xv. 2.

³ See i. 6; v. 10; xx. 4—6.

⁴ Rev. xii. 6. 14.

⁵ Rev. xii. 1—6.

⁶ Rev. xxi. 2. 9.

⁷ Isa. xxxiii. 20.

⁸ Lam. i. 7.

⁹ See Rev. viii. 7.

of the Christian Sion to regard them as prophetic shadows of those judgments which Christ, Who was typified by Moses, and who acted by the hand of Moses, will execute on all the Pharaohs of this world, who persecute His Church.

The Apocalypse adopts the scenery of the Exodus, and renews the Song of Moses¹, the servant of God, and puts it into the mouth of the Israel of God, standing in safety on the shore of a sea of glass, the calm sea of everlasting peace. It appropriates the history of the Ancient Church in the Wilderness, and teaches us to regard it as a prophetic representation of the pilgrimage of Christ's Church on Earth on her way to her land of promise; it takes the trumpets of the Priests, and blows a prophetic blast against the Jerichoes of this world; and makes us hear, with the ear of faith, the last trump of the heavenly Joshua coming to judge the earth, and leading the armies of Israel to their heavenly inheritance.

3. The Apocalypse also dwells on a later period of the Jewish History, the captivity of Babylon², and christianizes that.

The Assyrian Babylon was taken by Cyrus in the hour of its pride and revelry, and of its sacrilegious contempt of God; the waters of its great river Euphrates were drained off, and the besieging armies entered into the city by the dry channel of the stream; and in consequence of the Fall of Babylon, the People of God were delivered, and were restored to their own land.

Here was another prophetic intimation of what the true Israelites might expect to see in the History of the Church.

Many of the Jews returned to Jerusalem after the fall of Babylon, and the Temple was rebuilt. But the Ten Tribes were still scattered abroad. They have not returned to this day. But there is comfort for *them* in the Apocalypse. The Gospel is preached to all Nations³. The true Jerusalem is every where. The Christian Sion is "the Mountain of the Lord's House, which shall be established in the top of the Mountains, and shall be exalted above the Hills, and all Nations shall flow into it; for out of Zion shall go forth the Law, and the Word of the Lord from Jerusalem⁴." That Word, that Law, has gone forth from Sion; it has been carried by the Apostolic Patriarchs of the true Israel unto all Nations. The true Israelite finds a home every where in the true Sion, the Catholic Church of Christ. Therefore, God hath not cast off His People⁵, but He has received them to Himself in Christ, the Seed of Abraham. Christ crucified stretched His arms on the Cross to all the World. God embraced all nations in His well-beloved Son, Who is the Everlasting Word in the bosom of His Father⁶, and vouchsafed to allow the beloved disciple to lean on His bosom at supper, in token of that love with which He is ready to embrace all, especially in His feast of Love.

This love of God for His Ancient people, the *Jews*, is declared in the Apocalypse of the beloved disciple, even by the tone and structure of its sentences.

The diction of the Book of Revelation is more Hebraistic than that of any other portion of the New Testament. It adopts Hebrew Idioms and Hebrew words⁷. It studiously disregards the laws of Gentile Syntax, and even courts anomalies and solecisms⁸; it christianizes Hebrew words and sentiments, and clothes them in an Evangelical dress, and consecrates them to Christ⁹.

Thus, for instance, it never uses the *Greek* form *Hierosolyma*, but always employs the Hebrew *Hierusalem*; and by this name it never designates the *literal* Sion, but the Christian Church¹⁰. It rescues the sons of Abraham from narrow, exclusive, rigid, judaizing notions; and teaches them to praise God that He has fulfilled His gracious promise to *Abraham*, that *all* nations should be blessed in His Seed, which is Christ¹¹. It consoles the true Israelite by the joyful assurance, that although

¹ Rev. xv. 3.

² See xvi. 12.

³ It was preached in the province of Babylon even in the Apostolic age, and a Church was formed there. See above, on 1 Pet. v. 13.

⁴ Isa. ii. 2, 3. Micah iv. 1, 2.

⁵ Rom. xi. 1, 2.

⁶ John i. 18.

⁷ E. g. *Abaddon*, ix. 11. *Armageddon*, xvi. 16. *Hallelujah*, xix. 1, 3, 4, 6. Some Critics have been led by these considerations, to imagine that the Apocalypse was originally written in *Hebrew*. But such a theory is inconsistent with the character of those to whom it was originally addressed, the Churches of *Asia*, and with many internal phenomena, e. g. the name of the Beast noted in Greek Letters, xiii. 18. The design of the Apocalypse is not to Hebraize Christianity, but to Christianize Hebraism. Cp. *Lücke's* valuable remarks in his *Einleitung*, pp. 440—448.

⁸ See below, on i. 4. Cp. i. 5, 6; ii. 20; iii. 12; iv. 1; v. 11, 12; vi. 9; viii. 9; xiv. 12; and *Lücke*, *Einleitung*, pp. 448—464.

⁹ "Hebraisms (says *Bengel*, *Apparat. Crit.* p. 778) pervade this Book; at first they seem rough and strange; but when you have become accustomed to them, you will think them delightful, and worthy of the language of the courts of heaven."

¹⁰ The considerations stated above may suggest a reply to the allegations of those recent writers (*Lücke*, *De Wette*, *Düsterdieck*, and others), who, on the ground of internal discrepancies of style, have denied that the Apocalypse was written by the Evangelist St. John. There is doubtless great difference in the diction of those two writings, and doubtless that difference of style, which arose from the very nature of the difference of subject, was designed for good reasons, some of which are stated above. On the other hand, there are some striking *essential* resemblances between the Gospel of St. John and the Apocalypse.

This topic has been well treated by *Hengstenberg* on the Apocalypse, ii. p. 436, and by *Dr. Davidson*, Introduction iii. pp. 552—592.

¹¹ Gen. xxii. 18. Gal. iii. 29.

Jerusalem is in ruins, and is trampled by heathen feet, yet he himself may have an enduring mansion, and a glorious inheritance in another Sion, far more magnificent than the earthly City; that he may enjoy peace and happiness under the royal sceptre of Him, "Who has the key of *David*¹," and Who is "the Root and Offspring of *David*²," and is the royal "Lion of the Tribe of *Judah*³;" and that such glories, as were never seen in the brightest days of the old Jerusalem in the age of *Solomon*, will be displayed to his eyes by the Prince of Peace, and may be enjoyed by every citizen of the "New Jerusalem, coming down from Heaven adorned as a Bride for her Husband," and espoused in everlasting wedlock to the Lamb of God.

In a similar spirit of genuine Catholicity, expanding the mind, and spiritualizing the language of the Jewish Nation, and investing them with the light of the Gospel, the Apocalypse designates the Universal Church of Christ under the terms of a Hebrew nomenclature by the names "of the *Twelve Tribes of Israel*⁴." Thus it extends the view of the Hebrew People, and enlarges the walls of Sion and the borders of Palestine till they embrace within their ample range the whole family of mankind, and unites them as a holy people under the universal sway of Christ.

The Apocalypse also elevates the heart and voice of the Hebrew Nation, even to the courts of the Church glorified. Here the Hebrew language sounds in the solemn service of the heavenly Ritual, in which the Angelic quire sing praises to God, *Amen, Hallelujah*⁵!

III. It deals in a similar way with Hebrew Prophecy. It is a characteristic of Hebrew Prophecy to *repeat* the same predictions at different times. The Apocalypse proceeds on a similar plan⁶. It does not, indeed, mention any one of the Hebrew Prophets *by name*. It knows nothing of Isaiah, or Daniel, or Zechariah, as *individuals*. But nearly in every line it breathes their spirit, and almost utters their words. Or rather we may say, that the *Holy Spirit*, writing here by St. John, *repeats* the language which had been uttered by Himself many centuries before, in the prophecies of Isaiah, Jeremiah, Ezekiel, Daniel, and Zechariah, which were read in the Synagogues of the Jews every Sabbath Day⁷. He declares that those words had not become obsolete, that they had lost none of their force and beauty after the destruction of the Temple and City of Jerusalem. On the contrary, they are instinct with new life, and clothed with fresh glory, and are receiving that fulness of accomplishment for which the Ancient Prophets and Kings had yearned, and they are yet to have a wider expansion, a nobler development, and to bring forth fairer fruit unto perfection in the glories of Christ's Kingdom, and in that heavenly City wherein is the Tree of Life watered by the River of Life proceeding from the Throne of God⁸.

IV. Thus in reading the Apocalypse, the true Israelite is carried up to a holy mountain where the Law and the Prophets appear in glory with Christ. He ascends a hill of Transfiguration, on which the Hebrew Prophets shine, as Moses and Elias did on the Mount, with more than earthly splendour⁹, and do homage to Christ; and he enjoys a vision of that future glory into which the faithful members of the Church of God from the beginning will be admitted by virtue of the merits of that death accomplished at Jerusalem, of which Moses and Elias then spoke¹⁰, and of which all the Prophets wrote, and to which all the Saints looked, even from righteous Abel, whose blood prophesied of Christ.

On the one hand, the Jewish Church was taught by the Apocalypse to look *forward* to the Gospel as the fulfilment of the Law and the Prophets, and, on the other hand, the Gentile Christian is encouraged to look *backward* to the Law and the Prophets as his own Teachers; and the Law and Prophets are recognized by both Jew and Gentile, as harmonizing with the Gospel; and Jew

¹ iii. 7.

² xxii. 16; vii. 4—9.

³ v. 5.

⁴ See Rev. v. 5. Cp. xxi. 13.

⁵ xix. 1, 3, 4, 6.

⁶ See Dr. W. Lee on Inspiration, Lect. vii. p. 320.

⁷ Bp. Andrewes (c. Bellarmine, p. 324) says, "You will hardly find any phrase in St. John's Apocalypse that is *not taken from Daniel or from some other Prophet*." And Bengel observes (in Rev. i. 3) that "this Book reaches forward from the Old to the New Jerusalem, and is a compendium and consummation of Hebrew Prophecy." Cp. Dr. W. Lee on Inspiration, Lect. iii. p. 114.

There is a learned dissertation in Dr. F. Lücke's "Einleitung in die Offenbarung" (Bonn, 1852), on "*Apocalyptic Literature*" (pp. 40—342). Cp. Gieseler, Ch. Hist. § 31. But it

seems a precarious assumption to imagine that St. John was indebted for any of the materials of the Apocalypse to Apocryphal sources, such as the Sibylline Books, the Book of Enoch, or the Fourth Book of Ezra. Such a theory would destroy the objective reality of the Visions revealed by God to St. John, and reduce them into mere subjective creations and imaginative inventions of his own mind and that of others.

St. John beheld in the Visions of God things which other holy men before him, such as Ezekiel, Daniel, and Zechariah, had been permitted to see. He was "in the Spirit" (i. 10), and so was enabled to *see* and *hear*; and he was commanded to *write* what he *saw* and heard (i. 19).

⁸ Rev. xxii. 1.

⁹ Matt. xvii. 1—4. Mark ix. 2—7. Luke ix. 28—30, 31

¹⁰ Luke ix. 31.

and Gentile are brought together as fellow-citizens, to dwell for ever in the "Jerusalem that is above, which is the mother of us all ¹."

This work of universal reconciliation in Christ, which had been exhibited by St. Paul with didactic clearness in his Epistles to the Galatians and to the Romans, is manifested in the Apocalypse with the glowing imagery of divine Prophecy. But it is not to be imagined, that the language of the Apocalypse is therefore less distinct on the doctrinal and practical truths of the Gospel. Indeed the Book of Revelation may be called a divine summary of the Christian Faith.

It teaches that God is One, and alone to be worshipped ²; that He is the Creator, Preserver, and Governor of all things ³; that in the One Godhead are three Divine Persons, Father, Son, and Holy Spirit ⁴; that the honour due to the Father is to be given to the Son ⁵; that the Son of God is perfect Man ⁶; that He is the firstborn of the dead, and liveth for ever ⁷; and that we are justified by His blood ⁸; that He is our Great High Priest and King ⁹; and that by virtue of our baptismal incorporation into His mystical body, we rise from the death of sin by the *first* or spiritual *Resurrection*, and are made *Kings* and *Priests* to God ¹⁰; that if we continue firm and stedfast in the faith unto the end, then Death is not Death to us, but is the Gate of Life ¹¹; and that they who suffer with Him and for Him do indeed reign with Him, Who is KING of KINGS, and LORD of LORDS, and Who will judge every one according to their works ¹², and award to every one either bliss or woe eternal, and will reign for evermore ¹³.

V. Such being the character of the Apocalypse, we may now proceed to consider what is the *method* in which its prophecies are delivered.

The true Exposition of the Apocalypse depends on the right understanding of this question.

A careful examination of the Apocalypse, and a comparison of it with other books of Inspired Prophecy, will supply the following canons or rules for its interpretation.

1. *Anticipation.*
2. *Repetition.*
3. *Amplification.*
4. *Recapitulation.*
5. *Verbal identity.*

1. *Anticipation.* Even at the beginning of his prophecy the writer *anticipates* the end. "Behold, He cometh with the clouds, and every eye shall see Him ¹⁴." This consideration will aid us in interpreting the whole book.

In *modern times*, many persons have supposed that the Book of Revelation presents a series of Visions, proceeding onwards in a *regular chronological order* from beginning to end. For example, they are of opinion, that all the events which are pre-announced by the Trumpets in the Eighth and Ninth chapters, are *later* in time than the events foretold by the Seals in the Sixth and Seventh chapters. Many recent Expositions of this Book have been constructed on this principle.

But this theory contravenes all the Expositions of the Apocalypse that have been preserved to us from the *earlier ages* of Christianity. The uniform judgment of the *ancient Interpreters* has been correctly represented in our Authorized Version in the heading of the sixth chapter, where it is said that the Seven Seals contain "*a Prophecy to the end of the world* ¹⁵."

2. *Repetition*, 3. *Amplification.*

It was the universal opinion of the Ancient Expositors, that after the opening of the Seven Seals, which *anticipate* the end, and reveal the *sufferings* of the Christian Church from St. John's age to the day of doom, the Prophecy *re-ascends*, and *returns* to the *first age* of the Gospel, in order to start afresh, and to declare, in the seven Trumpets, the *Judgments* which would be executed by Almighty God on the Enemies of Christ and His Church.

¹ Gal. iv. 26.

² Rev. iv. 8; v. 13; xix. 10; xxii. 9.

³ Rev. i. 8; iv. 11; v. 13.

⁴ Rev. i. 8. 11. 17; ii. 7, 8. 11. 23; iii. 1. 6. 14; xvii. 14; xix. 12, 13.

⁵ Rev. v. 12, 13; vi. 16; vii. 9, 10; xi. 15; xix. 1.

⁶ Rev. i. 5; v. 5; xxii. 16.

⁷ Rev. i. 5. 18.

⁸ Rev. i. 5, 6; iii. 18; v. 9; vii. 14.

⁹ Rev. i. 5, 6. 13. 20; vii. 17; xix. 12. 15, 16.

¹⁰ Rev. i. 6; iii. 21; v. 10.

¹¹ Rev. xiv. 13; xx. 4. 6.

¹² Rev. xx. 11, 12; xxii. 12.

¹³ Rev. xix. 15, 16. 19, 20; xx. 15; xxi. 8.

¹⁴ Rev. i. 7.

¹⁵ See vi., x. 12—17.

This principle of exposition appears also to be confirmed by another consideration.

The Apocalypse is, as has been observed already, a sequel to Hebrew Prophecy. It is the continuation and consummation of the Prophecies of Daniel and Zechariah. It is the Work of the same Divine Author. It may therefore be presumed to have been composed on a plan similar to that of those Prophecies.

Now, if we examine the prophecies of Daniel and Zechariah, we find that they are *not progressive* prophecies. The predictions and visions in the Book of Daniel are *not* riveted together like links in a continuous chain. They form a system of collateral chains, not, indeed, all of equal length.

Or, to adopt another figure, they are like a succession of Charts in a Geographical Atlas.

The first vision in the Book of Daniel *anticipates* the end. It represents a prophetic view of all the Four great Empires of the World, following one another in succession, and ending in the consummation of all things, and in the glorious sovereignty of Christ¹. It is like the Map of the two Hemispheres which stands first in our books of Geography.

By a process of *repetition* and *amplification*, the same Four Empires are *afterwards* displayed under another form, and are delineated with great minuteness of detail; and this representation is also closed with a prophetic view of the establishment of Christ's kingdom, and the overthrow of all His enemies².

These comprehensive Prophecies are followed by other Visions, displaying, in greater fulness, *portions*³ of the same periods as those which had been comprised in those comprehensive Prophecies; just as the Map of the two Hemispheres in an Atlas is followed by separate Maps, on a larger scale, exhibiting the several countries contained in the habitable Globe.

The Prophecies of Zechariah are framed on the same principle.

It might have been anticipated, that the Apocalypse, which was dictated by the same Divine Spirit who inspired the Hebrew Prophets, and Who is a Spirit of order, would be constructed in the same method as those other Prophecies of Daniel and Zechariah, of which it is the sequel and the completion. "As Daniel," says Dr. Lightfoot⁴, "gives a general view in his second chapter, of his own times to the coming of Christ, and then handles the same thing in another scheme in the seventh chapter, and then doth express *at large and more particularly*, some of the most material things that he had touched in those particulars, so does St. John in the Apocalypse."

On examination of the Apocalypse, we find our anticipation realized; we find also that, as was already observed, all the ancient Interpreters of the Apocalypse adopted this principle as the groundwork of their expositions⁵; and there is good reason to believe, that the Apocalypse will be better understood, in proportion as this principle is more generally accepted.

The first Visions of the Apocalypse were displayed to the Evangelist on the *First Day of the Week*, the Day of Creation, the Day of Christ's Resurrection, the Day of the Coming of the Holy Ghost. "*I was in the Spirit on the Lord's Day*," says St. John⁶. The prophetic Visions of the Seals and the Trumpets are grouped in the two sets of *sevens*. They begin as it were with the *first day* of the week of the Church's existence, when she arose to new life in the Resurrection of Christ; and they proceed through a week of labour and suffering till she comes to the Sabbath of her Rest, and to the glorious Octave of Resurrection to Immortality⁷.

4. *Recapitulation*. After the unfolding of the prophetic roll, the writer pauses for a short time before the conclusion of all things, and *recapitulates* summarily what had been revealed⁸.

5. *Verbal identity*. The points of approximation, coincidence, and contact of contemporaneous chains of prophecy will be found to be marked by St. John in the Apocalypse by certain *words*, which may be called *catchwords*, which rivet them together at those particular points, and indicate to the reader the place at which he has arrived in the chronological train of the prophecy, and which also serve to connect his prophecies with those of Daniel and St. Paul on the same subject⁹.

VI. Recognizing these principles derived from ancient Expositors, and from the character of the Apocalypse itself as connected with Hebrew Prophecy, we may proceed to observe, that the

¹ Dan. ii. The Vision of the Image.

² Dan. vii. The Vision of the Four Beasts.

³ Dan. viii. The Vision of the Ram and He Goat. See also Dan. xi. 1—4.

⁴ In Rev. xii.

⁵ This principle is thus stated by *Victorinus*, Bishop of Pettau, and Martyr, who lived in the Third Century, and is the earliest Commentator on the Apocalypse, whose exposition is now extant:

"Non aspiciendus est ordo dictorum, quoniam sæpe Spiritus Sanctus, ubi ad novissimi temporis finem percurrerit, rursus *ad eadem tempora redit*, et *supplet ea quæ minus dixit*." *Victorinus* in Apocalyp. vii. See below, on viii. 1.

⁶ Rev. i. 10.

⁷ See above, on Luke xxiv. 1.

⁸ See on Rev. xx. 1—7.

⁹ See note on vi. 8, and see below, on xiii. 4.

Church in the *present day* enjoys *greater advantages* for the elucidation of the Apocalypse than were possessed by any *previous age*.

1. First, we may here advert with thankfulness to the benefits we enjoy in the collations of ancient Manuscripts of the Apocalypse which were little known to the last century¹; and in a large collection of critical helps which have given to the text of the Apocalypse a certainty and clearness which it had not for more than a thousand years².

The present generation enjoys an inestimable benefit in possessing a correct text of the Apocalypse³. In order to a right interpretation of the Apocalypse, the best help is to be found in the Apocalypse itself. S. Augustine has well observed, that this Book is composed in such a manner as to exercise the diligence of the Interpreter; and that by comparison of one passage with another, the obscure parts may be illustrated and made clear⁴. Indeed there is scarcely a phrase or sentence in the Apocalypse, however difficult it may seem to be at first, which may not be elucidated by means of some other phrase or sentence in the same book.

2. This aid is enhanced by the light derived from the language of Hebrew Prophecy, especially as read in the Septuagint Version of the Old Testament, the Version which was read by the Churches to which St. John wrote. The very words of Daniel and Zechariah, as presented by that Version, reappear in the Apocalypse⁵; and thus the prophecies of the Old and the New Testament stand side by side like the Two Candlesticks⁶ in the Apocalyptic Vision, and blend their rays together and illumine the eyes of those who study them by the aid of that united light.

3. Another great advantage which we enjoy, as compared with earlier ages of the Church, for the right understanding of the Apocalypse, is the exposition afforded by the best Interpreter of prophecy,—TIME.

Time, and Time alone, reconciles the seeming antecedent discrepancies which are characteristics of true Prophecy; its hand unties the prophetic knots, which human sagacity could never loose; it refutes the vain conjectures and rash speculations of Expositors who would make themselves into Prophets; it demolishes and removes what is false, and establishes and perpetuates what is true.

The holy Prophets themselves could not *interpret* their own prophecies⁷. They were inspired to prophesy; but were not empowered to expound what they prophesied. "*No Prophecy is of its own interpretation*," says St. Peter⁸. "*The Prophets searched diligently, what, or what manner of time the Spirit of Christ which was in them did signify*"⁹. Prophecy was "*a light shining in a dark place*"¹⁰. It glimmered faintly at first, like the dim morning twilight, but as it approaches its fulfilment, it becomes more clear, till at length the day dawns, and the future becomes present, and the prophecy is illumined by the event.

The Prophets did indeed preach plainly, that Almighty God will hereafter raise the Dead and judge the World, and reward the righteous with everlasting life. They proclaimed these things in clear language; for these were moral truths which all were concerned to know. But the future

¹ See below, on the Ancient MSS. and Editions of the Apocalypse, pp. 162, 163.

² It is no disparagement to the labours of those learned and pious men who framed our AUTHORIZED VERSION to say, that the English Translation of the Apocalypse is capable of considerable improvements. More has been effected by modern Criticism for the Text of the Apocalypse than of any other portion of the New Testament. See below, p. 162.

It is much to be regretted, therefore, that some English Expositions of the Apocalypse should have been based on the English Version of this Book, without careful reference to the Original. Some grave errors,—which need not be specified,—have thus found their way into many vernacular popular Commentaries on this Book, and have been widely disseminated to the great detriment of the Study of Prophecy.

It may also be noticed here, that some important words in the Apocalypse have been received from the English Version, in a sense which, at the present day, affords no adequate notion of their meaning, e.g. *beasts* for ζῷα *living creatures* (iv. 6—9, &c.); *candlestick*, a word which does not suggest the idea of the infusion of *oil*, and does not correctly represent the λυχνία of the Temple (Rev. i. 12, 13. 20; ii. 1; xi. 4); *φιάλη*, *vial* (v. 8; xv. 7; xvi. 1—4), and other words which will be specified hereafter in the following notes.

³ It is true that none of the varieties of readings affect any question of Christian doctrine. But as has been well observed by Bengel, "though no Various Reading is of so great importance, that the fundamentals of Christianity depend upon it, yet no

Various Reading is of so little importance, that the right-handedness of Apostles ('dexteritas Apostolica') is not to be preferred to the left-handedness of transcribers ('sinisteritas librariorum')."

For a summary of the Critical History of the text of the Apocalypse, the reader may refer to Lücke's Einleitung, pp. 464—491, and what will be said below on this subject. See pp. 162, 163.

⁴ S. Augustine, De Civ. Dei, xx. 17: "In hoc libro obscure multa dicuntur ut mentem legentis exerceant; et pauca in eo sunt, ex quorum manifestatione indagentur cætera cum labore."

⁵ This may be seen at a glance in Mr. Grinfield's "Parallela Apocalyptica," from the LXX. Scholia Hellenistica, Lond. 1848, pp. 887—944.

⁶ Rev. xi. 4. We are compelled to use the word *Candlestick*; the reader will bear in mind what it meant. See note ² in this page.

⁷ See Dan. xii. 8; viii. 26, 27, and note above, on 1 Pet. i. 10. 2 Pet. i. 20; and Bp. Butler, Analogy II. vii., who thus speaks, "To say that the Scriptures can have no other or further meaning than those persons thought or had who first wrote them, is evidently saying that those persons were the original, proper, and sole Authors of those books; i.e. that they are *not inspired*. I think it clear that the Prophets did not understand the full meaning of their predictions."

⁸ 2 Pet. i. 20.

⁹ 1 Pet. i. 11.

¹⁰ 2 Pet. i. 19.

actions of Men, and Nations, and Churches, were described by the Prophets in a very different manner from this. They were couched in enigmas, which Time only could solve¹. They were wrapped in a mantle of obscurity which Time only could take off. And with good reason. For otherwise Divine Prescience might seem to fetter the Human Will; whereas the characteristic property of God's Foreknowledge is, that it foresees every thing, and forces nothing. It leaves the liberty of the Human Will untouched. Whatever is foretold by God will be done by man; but nothing will be done by man, *because* it is foretold by God.

Prophecy has a probationary office; it tries the faith, and excites the vigilance, and exercises the patience, of the faithful who give heed to it. But it does not apply any constraint, it allows itself to be neglected; and, as a penalty for the carelessness or blindness of those persons who neglect or misinterpret it, it often permits them to become witnesses of its truth by *fulfilling* it².

But, if the *Interpretation* of a Prophecy had been declared at the same time as the Prophecy itself was delivered, then Prophecy would not have had this disciplinarian character, and doctrinal and moral use.

The *fulfilment* of Prophecy in a manner at *variance* with *previous human expectation* constitutes the essence of the proof, that Prophecy is not the work of man, but of God; and it makes Prophecy to be what it is, an invaluable auxiliary to the cause of the Gospel of Christ.

4. Hence it is clear, that those persons are in error, who look to the *Early Fathers* of the Church for *interpretations of prophecies which were not fulfilled in their age*.

Every thing which has happened *since* their time, is beyond *their* province, and appertains to those who live now. Indeed, as far as the Interpretation of Prophecy is concerned, the earlier Christian writers, who lived in the childhood of its growth toward fulfilment, were the *moderns*; and *we*, who live now, are the *ancients*. We live in the old age of the world; and may profit by the wisdom which length of days gives. And it is our duty to use the benefits of our vantage-ground, by applying History to interpret Prophecy.

The Ancient Christian Expositors had a correct view of the general design and method of the Apocalypse. But even the inspired ancient Prophets were not Interpreters of Prophecy; and uninspired ancient Expositors were not Prophets. The early Christian Expositors could and did interpret those prophecies which *had been fulfilled* in their days, and their expositions of *those* prophecies are of great value.

The fact, that *none* of the Fathers, who lived before the sixth century, were of opinion that the prophecies of the Apocalypse concerning the struggle of Babylon the Great against Christ, and the overthrow of its power, *had been fulfilled in that period*, presents a very strong presumptive objection to the theory of those interpreters, who suppose that those prophecies were *exhausted* in *primitive times*³, particularly by the destruction of *Jerusalem*, and of *heathen Rome*.

But the early Fathers could not expound *unfulfilled* Prophecy. They themselves have taught us that "Prophecy is an enigma *before* its fulfilment⁴," and that it is to be interpreted by the event. And we, who live in later times, should be ungrateful and undutiful to Almighty God, and should be acting very unwisely, if we were to close our eyes to the noonday light which the History of a thousand years has, by the dispensations of His Providence, poured upon the pages of the Apocalypse; and if we were to go back to the vague guesses of those who lived in the dim twilight of fifteen hundred years ago. We should do the Ancient Christian Expositors much wrong, if we did not suppose, that they themselves, if they lived now, would be the first to set us the example of profiting by the light of History, which Almighty God has vouchsafed us for the interpretation of Prophecy.

5. The Apocalypse is the *last* work of Divine Prophecy. It is the only Prophetic Book of the New Testament; and it continues and consummates the prophecies of the Old Testament; and its range extends from the first Advent of Christ to His Second Advent, and to the Day of Judgment.

Nearly two thousand years have passed since the Apocalypse was written. It may therefore be

¹ "Every prophecy," says *S. Irenæus* (iv. 26. 1, *πᾶσα προφητεία πρὸ τῆς ἐκβάσεως αἰνιγματὶ ἐστὶ καὶ ἀντιλογία τοῖς ἀνθρώποις, ὅταν δὲ ἔλθῃ ὁ καιρὸς καὶ ἀποβῇ τὸ προφητευθὲν, τότε τῆς ἀκριβεστάτης ἐπέτυχεν ἐξηγήσεως*), "is an enigma and a contradiction to men *before* its fulfilment; but when the season of its accomplishment has arrived, then it receives a clear exposition of its meaning."

² See St. Paul's statement, Acts xiii. 27, "They that dwell at Jerusalem, and their Rulers, because they *knew Him not*, nor yet

the Voices of *Prophets*, which are read every Sabbath Day, they have *fulfilled* them in *condemning* Him. And when they had *fulfilled* all that was *written* of Him, they took Him down from the tree, and laid Him in a Sepulchre."

³ This is the scheme of that class of Interpreters who have been called *Præterists*, which includes the names of *Bossuet*, *Ewald*, *Lücke*, *De Wette*, and others. See *Lücke's* *Einleitung*, p. 1067, and *Davidson's* *Introduction*, p. 618.

⁴ See *Irenæus*, as quoted above.

anticipated, that diligent study of the History of the Christian Church will throw much light on the prophecies of the Apocalypse; and this anticipation is fully realized by a careful examination of this Divine Book, which, when read by the light of the History of Christendom, is fraught with instruction, encouragement, and warning.

The Apocalypse is a sacred text-book for the devout Christian in the study of Church History. It is a holy manual of comfort in times of trial, and of guidance in times of difficulty. It is like those Living Creatures, which it describes as "full of eyes¹." It is gifted with spiritual foresight, and adjusts itself with more than human flexibility, and with ever-living and ever-moving pliancy, to the circumstances of the Church, and supplies prophetic cautions against varying forms of error. It is like a holy Oracle, a divine Urim and Thummim, ever uttering a divine voice, and ever showing a Divine light, according to the needs of the Church.

VII. These uses of the Apocalypse are not frustrated or impaired, because there are, and ever will be, many persons, who refuse to recognize the fulfilment of its prophecies in the annals of History.

1. The fact, that many persons do *not acknowledge* the *fulfilment* of prophecies, does *not prove* that those prophecies *have not been fulfilled*. We know assuredly, that the prophecies of the *Old Testament* concerning the Messiah, *have been fulfilled* in the actions, teaching, and sufferings of Jesus Christ. But the fulfilment of those prophecies is not universally acknowledged; although the evidence of that fulfilment has been open to the world for nearly two thousand years². The Jews themselves, to whom those Prophecies were given, and who heard those Prophecies every week in their Synagogues, did not recognize their accomplishment in Jesus Christ. They themselves "fulfilled them by condemning Him³." Some even who are called Christians do not own that fulfilment. Even those prophecies which have been most clearly fulfilled do not exercise much practical influence⁴ over a great mass of Mankind. And to Heathen Nations, who make the greater part of Mankind, the fact of their fulfilment is unknown.

The Prophecies also, which related to the destruction of the Old World by the Flood; and of Sodom and Gomorrhah by fire; and of the City of Jerusalem by the Roman armies, have been fully accomplished. Those fulfilments are pledges and warnings of the universal Judgment to come. They therefore concern the eternal interests of all men. And yet they seem to have little effect upon the practice of the world at large.

The fact is, that many men pass their lives in a dream. They do not duly reflect on what it most concerns them to consider. They do "*not discern the signs of the times*⁵." They do not meditate upon them. They are engrossed with the affairs of this world; absorbed with its cares, and allured by its pleasures. They do not apply themselves with an attentive mind, and a teachable spirit to examine the evidence of the case. And it is the nature of Prophecy that it *requires* such examination. Otherwise, it is like music to the deaf, or pictures to the blind. It is therefore an admirable instrument of moral discipline in God's hands. It *proves* men, whether they have those moral qualifications of forethought, seriousness, earnestness, patience, docility, meekness, obedience, self-denial, love of God, and perfect submission to His Will, which are requisite for admission into the Kingdom of God.

They who *are* endued with these gifts and graces, will not be perplexed and staggered by the fact, that many persons, even among those who are eminent in learning, and intellectual ability, but are wanting in the *moral* qualifications, and *spiritual* graces, which constitute the Christian character, do not acknowledge the *fulfilment* of prophecies, which may be proved to have been fulfilled.

Rather they will remember, that those prophecies would not *be true*, if all persons acknowledged their fulfilment. The Prophets of the Old Testament predicted, that many would *not believe their report*⁶. That report has not been believed by many persons celebrated for erudition, such as were some of the doctors of the Jews, who were well versed in the *letter* of those prophecies, and were principally concerned in them; to whom also they were originally delivered, and who heard them recited habitually in their ears, and read them in their native tongue. They did not understand those prophecies; they even *fulfilled* those prophecies *by not believing them*; for their unbelief was predicted by those prophecies; they fulfilled them by denying their fulfilment, and by doing those very things which the prophecies predicted they would do. And thus the

¹ Rev. iv. 6. 8.

² Acts iii. 21.

³ See above, p. 154, note.

⁴ Matt. xvi. 3.

⁵ Matt. xvi. 3. Luke xii. 56.

⁶ Isa. liii. 1.

Incredulity of those who did not believe those prophecies is an argument for the Credibility of those prophecies; and confirms the faith of the Church which receives them, and which believes in Him as the Messiah, of whom those prophecies speak.

2. In like manner, it has been prophesied in the Apocalypse, that many persons will neglect its warnings, and that they especially, whose sins it describes, will not be brought by them to *repent*¹.

The Apocalypse has foretold the existence of a great City exercising a dominant sway over many nations²; it has predicted, that this City would be smitten with spiritual blindness, and will not *believe* the *report* which is uttered by the Holy Spirit in this divine Book; but will fulfil these prophecies by its sins, and by its destruction; and that, even after its destruction, many of its adherents will still despise the warnings of the Apocalypse; and that Nations will rise in rebellion against Christ, and will recklessly rush on to their own ruin, and will fulfil the words of this prophecy which they have despised; and will prove the truth of the Apocalypse by their own utter discomfiture³.

Therefore in reading the Apocalypse we need not curiously inquire, whether all persons are agreed that its prophecies have been fulfilled, or are now in course of fulfilment. Such an agreement is not to be expected. The Apocalypse would not be true, if all recognized its fulfilment.

But the question to be carefully considered, and calmly examined, is this—whether there is sufficient evidence to satisfy well-instructed, reflecting, and judicious persons, that some of these prophecies of the Apocalypse have been fulfilled, and that others are now in course of fulfilment.

Such an examination, candidly, calmly, and patiently conducted, will probably lead the inquirer to the conviction that this is the case.

But on this proposition it would be premature to dwell here. Rather let us appeal to the Book itself. Let us examine its prophecies, and consider the evidence which will be adduced in the following notes in elucidation of them; and let us rest assured, that, as years pass on, the value of the APOCALYPSE will be more and more generally acknowledged, and that the truth of its divine words will be more deeply felt by the wise and faithful in heart; “Blessed is he that readeth, and they that hear the words of this prophecy: blessed is he that keepeth the sayings of the prophecy of this book⁴.”

VIII. *On the Date of the Apocalypse.*

1. S. Irenæus affirms that the “Revelation was seen not long before his own day, but almost in his own age, at the close of the reign of Domitian⁵.”

The Emperor Domitian died on the 18th day of September, A.D. 96

The common era *Anno Domini* begins about four years too late⁶, and therefore the date of the Apocalypse is about the one hundredth year after the birth of Christ.

The authority of S. Irenæus, who was probably an Asiatic by birth, and who had conversed with S. Polycarp, the scholar of St. John, seems almost sufficient of itself to determine this question of date. It is also confirmed by other evidences.

S. Irenæus states that the Revelation was seen at about the close of the reign of Domitian. We learn from Tertullian, contemporary with Irenæus, that Domitian persecuted the Christian Church. Nero, he says, was the first Emperor who used the sword against the Church, and the next who imitated him was Domitian⁷. Eusebius relates that some of the Christians were banished by that Emperor, and confined as prisoners in a small island⁸ off the coast of Etruria; and then he proceeds to relate that St. John was banished to the Isle of Patmos by Domitian. St. John describes himself as a companion of the Asiatic Churches in tribulation, and as having been brought⁹ to the Isle that is called Patmos, for the word of God and for the testimony of Jesus Christ¹⁰.

He also refers in the Apocalypse to persecutions of Christians, especially of Antipas, who had been slain as a Martyr for Christ at Pergamos¹¹, one of the Seven Churches of Asia.

¹ Rev. ix. 20; xvi. 9—11.

² xvii. 15.

³ xix. 19, and again xx. 9, 10.

⁴ Rev. i. 3; xxii. 7.

⁵ S. Irenæus, v. 30. 3.

⁶ See above, on Matt. ii. 20.

⁷ Tertullian, Apol. c. 6.

⁸ Euseb. Chron. lib. ii. ad Olymp. 218. Cp. Euseb. H. E. iii. 18. S. Jerome, Epist. 87.

⁹ ἐγενόμην ἐν τῇ νήσῳ signifies something more than that “I was in the island;” it intimates that he *became* a sojourner there; and the reason of his being brought there is added. See on Rev. i. 9. There is a beautiful mildness in the expression, which is very characteristic of the spirit of a holy Martyr when speaking of his own sufferings for Christ. Cp. the use of ἐγένετο in John vi. 21; x. 35.

¹⁰ i. 9.

¹¹ Rev. ii. 11.

This reference confirms the testimony of Irenæus. As was before said, no Roman Emperor except Nero had persecuted the Church of Christ before the reign of Domitian. And there is no evidence that any Christian suffered death under Nero, except at Rome¹.

It is much more probable, that, as ancient writers affirm², Antipas was martyred at Pergamos in the age of Domitian.

The testimony of Irenæus on the date of the Apocalypse is confirmed by writers in the age next to his. Clement of Alexandria says that, "*After the death of the tyrant, John went from the Island of Patmos to Ephesus*³;" and he also says, "that John remained with the Presbyters of Asia to the times of Trajan."

This statement harmonizes with the assertion of Irenæus, that the Revelation was seen by St. John at the end of the reign of Domitian, who was succeeded by Nerva, the predecessor of Trajan.

Origen, the scholar of Clement, observes that, in accordance with the prophecy of Christ, both the Sons of Zebedee, James and John, drank His cup of suffering; for "Herod," he says, "killed James, the brother of John, with the sword⁴;" and the King of the Romans, as tradition informs us, condemned John, when bearing witness as a Martyr, to the Isle of Patmos, on account of the word of Truth: and John himself informs us concerning his own martyrdom, not telling us who it was that condemned him, but using these words in his Apocalypse, "I, John, your brother and fellow-companion in the tribulation and kingdom and patience in Jesus, became a sojourner in the island that is called Patmos on account of the word of God⁵."

Victorinus, Bishop of Pettau in Pannonia, who wrote a commentary on the Apocalypse at the close of the third century, and suffered as a martyr in A.D. 303, affirms in that commentary, that when John saw the Apocalypse he was in the island of Patmos, being condemned by Domitian Cæsar to the mines there; and that when John, on account of his old age, supposed he would have a release by death, Domitian was slain, and his decrees were rescinded, and John was liberated from the mines⁶.

After him Eusebius relates as a fact commonly believed in his age, that St. John was condemned under Domitian to the island of Patmos on account of his testimony to the divine word⁷, and that he there saw the Apocalypse in the 14th year of the reign of Domitian⁸, that is, in A.D. 95.

After him S. Jerome, at the close of the fourth century, says, that "John wrote the Apocalypse in the island of Patmos, to which he was relegated in the 14th year of the Emperor Domitian, who was the second Roman Emperor that persecuted the Christians, Nero being the first⁹."

Thus then we find a consistent and uniform series of testimonies from S. Irenæus to S. Jerome—that is, from about A.D. 170 to A.D. 390—affirming that the Apocalypse was written by St. John in the Isle of Patmos about A.D. 95 of the common era.

2. The only evidence of any weight which may be adduced in opposition to these conclusions is that of Epiphanius, who died A.D. 403.

In his work on Heretics¹⁰ he says that "St. John in the Apocalypse, writing to the Seven Churches of Asia, predicts the rise of Heresies which did not then exist, and foretells that a woman would appear at Thyatira who would call herself a prophetess¹¹"; and he adds that these things came to pass long after the death of John, inasmuch as he prophesied in the times of Claudius Cæsar, when he was at Patmos."

If this passage is genuine, and the text is not corrupt, it may be said without presumption, that through human infirmity, from which the most learned men are not exempt, the memory and judgment of the Author failed him when he wrote it.

This appears from the following considerations:

In speaking to the Angel of the Church of Thyatira, St. John is not censuring him for errors

¹ Cp. Gieseler, Church History, § 28.

² See below, on Rev. ii. 11.

³ Clem. Alex. ap. Euseb. iii. 23.

⁴ Acts xii. 2.

⁵ Rev. i. 9.

⁶ Victorinus in Apocalypsim, x. 11; Bibl. Patr. Maxima, tom. iii. ed. Paris, 1677; or in the Abbé Migne's Patrologia, vol. v. 333. See also in Apoc. xvii. 19, where Victorinus says that "Domitian was Emperor, when John saw the Apocalypse."

⁷ Euseb. H. E. iii. 23.

⁸ Euseb. Chronicon. ad Domitian. Ann. xiv.

⁹ S. Jerome de Viris illust. c. 9, and ad Jovinian. ii. 14, "Vidit Joannes in Patmo insulâ in quam fuerat à Domitiano princepe, ob Domini martyrium, relegatus, Apocalypsim infinita futurorum mysteria continentem."

¹⁰ Epiphani. Hæres. li. lib. ii. vol. i. p. 197.

¹¹ See Rev. ii. 20.

and corruptions which would prevail after his time, and for which he would not be responsible; but he is reproving the Angel, or Chief Pastor, for abuses which actually existed there under his government, and which he ought to have corrected.

Besides, if St. John had written, as Epiphanius supposed, in the days of Claudius, he could not have described himself as suffering exile at Patmos "for the Word of God," for no such punishment was inflicted by the Roman Power on Christians in the days of *Claudius*, or till the time of Nero¹; nor could he have then referred to the days in which Antipas was slain at Pergamos, as a faithful martyr for the Truth². Nor would he then have censured the Angel of Ephesus for having lost "his first love³;" for, in the days of Claudius, the Church of Ephesus was flourishing in the fresh spring-time of the Gospel, which it had just received from St. Paul.

Under these circumstances we may almost feel disposed to think that there is some error in our present copies of this passage of Epiphanius, and that it was hardly possible for him to have written—at least to have written deliberately—that the Apocalypse was composed in the times of Claudius⁴.

However this may be, certain it is that this opinion of Epiphanius—if it were really his—never gained ground in the Church; and that the general belief of all the best ancient writers of Christendom was the same as Irenæus had expressed in the century in which St. John died, that he wrote the Revelation at the close of the reign of the Emperor Domitian⁵.

This opinion is strongly confirmed by the internal evidence of the Apocalypse itself.

The Epistles in it to the Seven Churches of Asia betoken a condition of things later than St. Paul's age; and similar to that which we know from other sources to have prevailed in Asia, at the close of the first century of the Christian era.

In these seven Epistles we see Churches settled with Angels or Chief Pastors at their head; we see that some years have elapsed since they were planted; that time has passed away, in which they have been tried, and some have stood the trial, as Smyrna⁶ and Philadelphia⁷; that some of them have declined from their primitive standard, as Ephesus, under fear of persecution, or through worldliness and lukewarmness, as Laodicea⁸; that others have a name to live and are dead, as Sardis⁹; and that heresies have grown up among them, as at Thyatira¹⁰; and that they have been visited by forms of heretical pravity and moral libertinism, such as the doctrines and practice of the Nicolaitans and Judaizers¹¹, which were the scourges of the Asiatic Churches at that time.

Such being the case, the received opinion of Ancient Christendom will not easily be disturbed by that spirit of scepticism which has unhappily shown itself in some quarters in recent times¹²; and which has, however, overreached itself. It is not content with rejecting the date assigned to the Apocalypse by ancient testimony, but has proceeded to set itself against the universal consent of ancient Christendom, and to deny that the Author of the Book of Revelation was the Evangelist St. John.

These two theories will probably soon share the same fate, even in that country which gave them birth. They have already been encountered there with learning and ability¹³, and their unsoundness has been exposed, and the ancient consent of Christendom has been vindicated.

¹ See above, p. 156.

² ii. 13.

³ ii. 4.

⁴ We may almost be inclined to think, that, instead of ἐπὶ ΚΛΑΥΔΙΟΥ, he may have written ἐπὶ ΦΛΑΒΙΟΥ, and that the copyist did not remember that the Emperor *Domitian* was sometimes called *Flavius*; as he is by Juvenal, iv. 37:

"Cum jam semianimum laceraret *Flavius* orbem
Ultimus, et calvo serviret Roma Neroni."

This passage will also remind the reader that Domitian was also called *Nero*, and it may serve to explain what is said by some other still later writers, that St. John was banished by *Nero*, which is another name for *Domitian*.

The argument which has been derived for a later date of the Apocalypse than Domitian's reign, from the words of the Apocalypse itself (xvii. 10): "And they are *Seven Kings*; *Five* are fallen, and *One* is, and the other is not yet come," will be examined in the note on that text.

⁵ Thus *Primasius*, Bishop of Adrumetum in Africa, in the 6th century, in his Commentary on the Apocalypse (Bibl. Patr. Max. x. p. 289), or in *Migne*, Patrologia (lxviii. p. 796), says, "Hæc videre promeruit in Patmo Insulâ pro Christo à Domitiano Cæsare exilio missus." And so *Bede* in Rev. i. 9, speaks of this opinion as generally received in his day: "*Historia nota*, Joannem à

Domitiano Cæsare propter Evangelium in hanc insulam relegatum; cui tunc congrueret cœli penetrare, cum certa terrarum spatia nequiret excidere." All antiquity (says *Lampe*, Prolog. ad Joann. 61, 62) agrees in this, that St. John was banished by Domitian. See also *Vitringa* on Rev. iv. 1; vi. 1.

⁶ ii. 9.

⁷ iii. 8—10.

⁸ iii. 16.

⁹ iii. 1.

¹⁰ ii. 20.

¹¹ ii. 6. 9. 15. 20; iii. 9.

¹² Especially among the followers of *Dr. Friedrich Lücke*, whose work on the Apocalypse, "*Versuch einer vollständigen Einleitung in die Offenbarung*, Zweyte Auflage, Bonn, 1852," has exhausted all that can be said on that side of the question.

¹³ Especially by *Dr. E. W. Hengstenberg*, *Die Offenbarung*, Berlin, 1849, 1850. See also *Dr. Davidson's* Introduction, vol. iii. pp. 539—614 to the end, for an able refutation of the same theory. The edition of *Dr. F. Düsterdieck* (Gottingen, 1859), which proceeds on a principle of opposition to primitive uniform tradition on the subject, honestly recognizes that tradition as primitive and uniform, and pays a due tribute to its importance, and so virtually commends it to the reader's acceptance. *Einleitung*, p. 90.

We may therefore hold fast the belief, that the Book of Revelation was written at the close of the reign of Domitian, who died in the year of our Lord 96.

IX. On the Authorship of the Apocalypse.

1. In order to establish the Genuineness of the Apocalypse, it will be sufficient to refer to the testimony of the next age after it was written, and especially of that Country to which it was originally sent.

The first witness here is Papias, Bishop of Hierapolis, a city at a few miles' distance from Laodicea, one of the Seven Churches. He was a disciple of St. John, and in a certain sense a colleague of the Seven Angels whom the author of the Apocalypse addressed. He was very diligent in collecting memorable facts concerning the Apostles and their works: and he received the Apocalypse as the work of the Evangelist St. John¹.

His testimony is of greater value, on account of his nearness to Laodicea; for the Church of Laodicea could not have been ignorant of the authorship of a book addressed to *itself*; and if the Apocalypse had *not* been the work of *St. John*, we cannot imagine that the *Laodiceans* would have allowed such an *unfavourable* character of their Church, as is given in the Apocalypse, to be circulated throughout Christendom, in the name and with the authority of St. John. If the Apocalypse had been a forgery, they must have known it to be so; and knowing it so to be, they would have exposed it to the world.

This observation applies to others of the Seven Churches, who are addressed in similar terms of *rebuke*; and it adds weight to the facts, first, that there is a considerable amount of primitive testimony from the Seven Churches, assigning the Apocalypse to St. John; and that there is none from that quarter which ascribes it to any one else.

The next testimony is that of Justin Martyr. About the middle of the second century he came to the city of *Ephesus*, where he held a two days' conference with Trypho, one of the most learned Jews of his day. In the narrative which he published of this dialogue, Justin Martyr quotes the *Apocalypse*, and affirms that it is written by one of the *Apostles* of Christ, whose name is *John*².

This assertion was made only about half a century after the death of St. John, and it was made at *Ephesus*, the mother city of Asia, the principal of the Seven Churches, the city in which St. John passed a great part of his life, in which he died, and was buried³. This testimony, therefore, of Justin Martyr is of great value, and confirms the belief, that St. John was the Author of the Apocalypse.

We next come to Melito. He was Bishop of one of the Seven Churches, Sardis, in the second century; a successor, therefore, of one of the Seven Angels addressed in the Apocalypse. The witness of Sardis and its Bishop cannot be suspected of *partiality*; for Sardis, again, is one of the Churches which is rebuked with great severity in the Apocalypse. *Thou hast a name that thou livest, and art dead*⁴. And the character of Melito stands pre-eminently high both for piety and learning. He showed a laudable zeal with regard to the Canon of the *Old Testament*. In order to assure himself and the Church of Sardis concerning the Books of the Ancient Scriptures, as received by the Churches of Palestine, he visited that country in person, and he has given the result of his critical inquiries in an interesting and valuable Epistle⁵. And it cannot be supposed that *he* who was so diligent and circumspect in his inquiries concerning the *Old Testament*, would have been less careful respecting the *New*, and especially concerning *that Book* of the New Testament, the Apocalypse, which contains an address to his own Predecessor, and to his own Church; and to which, on other grounds, his best consideration must have been given, for he wrote a Commentary upon the Apocalypse⁶.

The evidence, therefore, of Melito is important. He also received the Apocalypse as the work of St. John.

The latest witness to whom we shall appeal is S. Irenæus. He was probably a native of

¹ *Andreas* and *Arethas* (Prolog. in *Apocalyp.*) refer to Papias as vouching for the inspiration of the Apocalypse, and *S. Irenæus*, who unhesitatingly received it as genuine, refers to Papias as among his authorities. Cp. *Iren.* v. 33, Παπίας Ἰωάννου ἀκουστής, Πολυκάρπου δὲ ἐταῖρος. *Euseb.* iii. 39. *S. Hieron.* Catal. Script. xviii. tom. iv. p. 109, and Epist. ad Theodorum, iv. p. 581.

Euseb. iv. 18, διάλογον ἐπὶ τῆς Ἐφεσίων πόλεως πρὸς Τρύφωνα τῶν τότε Ἑβραίων ἐπισημότατον πεποιήται μέρμηται

τῆς Ἰωάννου Ἀποκαλύψεως σαφὲς τοῦ Ἀποστόλου αὐτὴν εἶναι λέγων.

³ *S. Justin*, Dialog. c. Tryphone, c. 80, 81. See also *S. Hieron.* Catal. c. ix.

⁴ Rev. iii. 1.

⁵ *Euseb.* iv. 26. *S. Hieron.* Catal. c. xxiv.

⁶ *Ibid.*

Asia Minor, whence he migrated to France, where he became Bishop of Lyons towards the close of the second century. In his youth he had been acquainted with S. Polycarp, who was placed in the see of Smyrna by the Apostles, and, as some affirm, by St. John himself¹; and is supposed by some learned men² to be no other than the *Angel of the Church of Smyrna*, who is addressed in the Apocalypse.

In his work against Heresies, published only about ten years after S. Polycarp's martyrdom, S. Irenæus refers to the Apocalypse³. He mentions *ancient* Manuscripts of it, which he had examined; and he speaks of a particular *reading*⁴ of a passage⁵ in the Apocalypse (that concerning the *number* of the Beast), as being confirmed by the authority of those "who had seen St. John face to face." In this work he quotes the Apocalypse no less than twenty times; he makes long extracts from it; and speaks of it unhesitatingly as inspired Scripture, and as the work of St. John.

The testimony of S. Irenæus is of more value, because it was probably derived from Asiatic Bishops; for example, from Papias, whom he mentions; and from S. Polycarp⁶, whose life, like that of his Master, St. John, seems to have been providentially prolonged to almost a patriarchal duration, in order that he might be a witness of the living Voice of Apostolic Teaching, till the Written Word was generally diffused.

2. Such, then, is the testimony from the country⁷ to which the Apocalypse was originally sent; such is the witness of the Asiatic Churches to which it was addressed. No evidence of a *contrary* kind can be adduced from those Churches, and from that age.

No doubt was entertained by the Apocalyptic Churches concerning the inspiration and genuineness of the Apocalypse. On the contrary, *those* were *condemned* as holding heretical opinions, the Alogi, for instance, of the second century, who denied the Apocalypse to be St. John's⁸. "We can appeal," says Tertullian, at the close of the second century, "to the Churches which are the foster-children of St. John; for though Marcion, *the heretic, rejects his Apocalypse*, yet the series of the Asiatic Bishops derives its origin from St. John⁹." All the Apocalyptic Churches ascribe the Apocalypse to St. John.

3. Let us consider now the facts before us.

A Writing, claiming to be from Heaven, dictated in solemn and sublime language, predicting future events, presenting, as it were, a series of pictures of the World's History to the end of Time, is sent to Seven Apostolic Churches of the most distinguished Cities of Asia; to Ephesus, the rich emporium of the East; to Smyrna, the nurse of Poets; and to Sardis, the ancient residence of Kings. It purports to come from an exile on the barren rock of Patmos, an isle almost within sight of Ephesus, and therefore accessible to those to whom the book is sent. It speaks in the voice of authority to those Churches, and to their spiritual Rulers; it pronounces judicial sentence upon them; it rebukes their failings, and commends their virtues; it promises blessings to those who receive the words of its prophecy, and denounces eternal woe on all who add to, or take away from, it. It speaks to men as being itself from God.

And what is the *result*?

This Book—with these claims, reproofs, promises, and threats—is *received* by all these Churches as the WORD of GOD; and is ascribed by them to the beloved Disciple, the blessed Apostle and Evangelist, St. John.

Such is their testimony; and they could not have been deceived in this matter. St. John was no stranger to them. He lived and died among them. If then the Apocalypse is *not* from God, and if it is not the work of St. John, it cannot be imagined that the Apostolic Churches of Asia would have conspired to receive it. Their duty, both to God and to the Apostle, required them not to do so. So far from *receiving* it, the Angels of these Churches, with one voice, would have *protested* against it. *Not only* they would *not have* recognized it as divine, not only they would not have received it as the work of St. John, but they would have *condemned* it as falsely ascribed to the Apostle, and impiously laying claim to the incommunicable attributes of God. It would have taken

¹ Tertullian, de Præscr. c. 32. S. Iren. iii. 3, 4, ap. Euseb. v. 20. Cp. Euseb. iv. 14. S. Hieron. Catal. Scr. xvii.

² For instance, by Archbp. Ussher.

³ Clinton, Fasti Romani, A.D. 166. Cave, i. pp. 66, 67, de Irenæo.

⁴ Iren. v. 30. Cf. Euseb. v. 8. Irenæus also quotes the Apocalypse as St. John's in Fragm. Pfaff. p. 26.

⁵ Rev. xiii. 18.

⁶ Euseb. iv. 14; v. 20.

⁷ Mr. I. C. Knight, in pp. 12—15 of an ingenious Essay on the Apocalypse (Lond. 1842), has shown reason for believing, that S. Ignatius, in Epist. ad Philad. 6, imitated the words in Rev. iii. 12.

⁸ Epiphanius, Hæres. li. 3, 4. 32, 33. Philastr. Hæres. lx. al. 13.

⁹ Tertullian, c. Marcion. iv. 5. See ibid. iii. 14.

a place among those *spurious* Revelations which were ascribed by heretics to Peter, Paul, and Thomas; and the World would have heard no more of the APOCALYPSE of St. JOHN.

4. If now we open the Book itself, every thing there harmonizes with this belief¹.

The Author calls himself *John*. "I, John, who am also your brother, and companion in tribulation²." "John to the Seven Churches which are in Asia³." "I John saw these things, and heard them⁴." Whom would this *name* suggest, placed thus by itself, without any epithet or accompaniment? Whom but the Apostle and Evangelist, St. John? He, and he alone, was John; their brother, their pastor, and their guide: and no one else in his age, *writing to St. John's own Churches*, would have ventured to assume the name of John, in this bold and unqualified simplicity.

Again; the Author writes from the isle of Patmos, where he was, "for the testimony of the Lord Jesus;" and we know that St. John was banished to that island by the Emperor Domitian, when he persecuted the Church⁵.

It may be asked, perhaps, Why then does he not *call* himself an *Apostle*? We may ask, in reply, Why does not St. John himself, in his Epistles? Why does not St. James? Why does not St. Jude? The name *John* would suffice to identify him; and, by withholding the *title* of *Apostle*, and calling himself only a *servant* of God, and their *brother* in tribulations, he would show, that though he had "the gift of prophecy, and was permitted to understand all mysteries, and to speak with the tongue of Angels⁶," yet he was not elated above measure "by the abundance of his Revelations⁷;" and the more he was exalted by God, the more he would humble himself with men. "The secret of the Lord is among them that fear him⁸;" "and mysteries are revealed unto the meek⁹."

Further; the Author of the Apocalypse, modest as he is in the description of himself, speaks, as we have seen, to the Angels of Asia with all authority: he distributes praise and blame like a Ruler and a Judge. Now, there was only *one* person then alive in the whole world who was entitled to use this language; and *that one* person was not only entitled to use it, by his double character as the last surviving Apostle, and as Metropolitan of Asia, but he was most solemnly bound to use it. By reason of his *office*, he was obliged, in duty to CHRIST, Who called him to it, to "speak, and exhort, and rebuke with all authority¹⁰." He was bound to be no respecter of persons; to "be instant in season, out of season; to reprove, rebuke, exhort¹¹." This person was ST. JOHN.

Again; we find that the Author of the Apocalypse, who writes to the Seven Angels, or Bishops, gives them an Apostolic *Benediction*,—The Grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with you¹². "And without all contradiction," says the Apostle, "the less is blessed of the better," or greater¹³. Therefore we may infer that the writer of the Apocalypse is some one greater than the Bishops of Asia. He is some one entitled to bless them. Now, there was one person in the world, and one alone, who, in a spiritual sense, was greater than the Bishops of Asia, and so was entitled to bless them, and might justly be expected to do so; and that person was ST. JOHN.

Lastly; the Catholic Church from primitive times, which is the Body of Christ, and to which He has promised His Spirit and His presence¹⁴, receives the Apocalypse as Canonical Scripture and as the work of St. John¹⁵. Her testimony is the testimony of Christ, Who is present with her; it is the testimony of the Holy Spirit, Whom Christ sent to be in her¹⁶.

5. There was a remarkable fitness in the selection of St. John, particularly of St. John at Patmos, for writing the Apocalypse.

He was the beloved disciple; he had been with our Lord in His Agony and when on the

¹ Some remarks have already been offered above on the objections derived from the difference of *style* between the Apocalypse and St. John's Gospel (*Euseb.* vii. 25). This question has been well discussed by *Guerike*, *Einleitung in das N. T.* § 60, p. 555. And, after all, the *subject* of the Apocalypse is so different from that of the Gospel, that arguments from *style* are scarcely admissible here. No one would argue from the Satires of Horace that he did not write the Odes. And yet how different is the style! What has been said above on the difference of style between St. Peter's two Epistles (pp. 71—77), may be applied, mutatis mutandis, here. Cp. above, p. 149, note.

² Rev. i. 9.

³ Rev. i. 4.

⁴ Rev. xxii. 8.

VOL. II.—PART IV.

⁵ See above, p. 157.

⁶ 1 Cor. xiii. 1, 2.

⁷ 2 Cor. xii. 7.

⁸ Ps. xxv. 13.

⁹ Eccles. iii. 19.

¹⁰ Tit. ii. 15.

¹¹ 2 Tim. iv. 2.

¹² Rev. i. 4; xxii. 21.

¹³ Heb. vii. 7.

¹⁴ Col. i. 24. Matt. xxviii. 20. John xvi. 13.

¹⁵ See the authorities in *Wetstein*, N. T. ii. p. 744, and *Kirch-
ofer*, pp. 296—328.

¹⁶ Cp. above, pp. 77, 78.

Cross; his brother Apostles had now been removed by death; and he was left, aged, an exile, and a prisoner, in a lonely island, for the testimony of the Truth in Christ.

As the winds blew, and the waves dashed on the rocky shores of Patmos, so the winds and waves of persecution were now beating on the Church. But the aged Apostle, who was confined within the narrow limits of Patmos, was admitted in the glorious visions of the Apocalypse to the presence of God. The Exile of earth became a Citizen of heaven; the cliffs of Patmos appeared more beautiful than Paradise. He was "in the Spirit on the Lord's Day." The Man of sorrows, Whom St. John had once seen crowned with thorns before Pilate, and bleeding on the Cross at Calvary, was now seen reigning in heaven adored by myriads of Angels, and coming on the clouds of heaven to judge the Quick and Dead.

This is very appropriate; it harmonizes well with the tender care of Christ for those who love Him, and suffer for Him. It is expressive of His love for His Church, left a widow for a while in this world. When on the Cross, He committed His Mother to St. John's care. By St. John, He reveals to His Church the future glory which will be hers, when she will be reunited to Him, and be the Bride in heaven.

Here, therefore, is a source of comfort to all Christians. Here on earth we are exiles; we are in Patmos. Especially, in these latter days, the heavens are dark; the sea is high; the waves dash upon the rock: "the floods are risen, O Lord; the floods have lift up their voice¹." This is an age of storms. The beach is strewn with wrecks. Yet in the gloom of this world, in this solitude and exile, we may have inward peace, and light and hope and joy. Loving Christ with St. John, suffering for Christ with him, we, like St. John, shall be visited by Christ. St. John's vision will be ours. His Revelation will be ours. Our Patmos will be Paradise. And we may pass from the storms of earth to the sunshine of heaven; and from the solitude of our worldly banishment to the mansions of our Father's House.

X. On the Text of the Apocalypse.

The History of the Original Greek Text of the APOCALYPSE is very remarkable.

Erasmus, its first Editor after the invention of printing, had only *one* MS., and that an imperfect one, of the *Apocalypse*. He supplied the last six verses, which were wanting in that MS., from the Latin Vulgate, translated by himself into Greek; and some words of Erasmus, not authorized by any MS., still remain in some editions of the Apocalypse printed at this day².

The second edition of the New Testament was that of the *Complutensian Polyglott*, so called from Complutum, or Alcalá in Spain, the place at which it was printed. This was in the year 1520. The Complutensian Editors, says Wetstein³, had only *one* MS. of the Apocalypse. They were followed in the Apocalypse by Erasmus in his fourth and fifth editions in 1527 and 1535, and by Robert Stephens in the year 1546, and again in 1549, 1550, and 1551. Wetstein⁴ affirms that Robert Stephens had only *two* MSS. of the *Apocalypse*, and that these were not accurately collated. The *third* edition of Stephens formed the basis of those of *Theodore Beza*, which appeared at Geneva in 1565, 1576, 1589, 1598, and also of the *Elzevir* edition, or *received text*, as it is commonly called, published at Leyden in 1624.

Beza's edition of 1598 was the groundwork of the English AUTHORIZED VERSION of the New Testament, published in 1611, and "appointed to be read in Churches."

Here two remarks may be made. The ENGLISH AUTHORIZED TRANSLATION of the APOCALYPSE does not rest upon the same sound foundation of MS. authority as the Authorized Translation of the *other books* of the New Testament. It stands in a place by itself, and ought to be regarded accordingly⁵.

No one need be startled by this statement. If the Apocalypse now existed only in the single MS. of Erasmus, no article of Christian doctrine would be in the least degree different from what it is. The numerous MSS. of the Apocalypse which have been collated since it was first printed, have not affected any doctrine of Christianity; but they have placed the *received* Articles of the Faith on a more solid basis.

¹ Ps. xciii. 4.

² See Bengel, p. 622.

³ Proleg. in Apocalyps. N. T. ii. p. 741.

⁴ Ibid.

⁵ "Lectio recepta Apocalypseos (says Wetstein, A.D. 1752,

l. c., p. 741), quæ ab Erasmanis profluxit, admodum infirmo nititur tibicine. Et tamen per integrum quod ab editione Stephanicâ elapsus est sæculum, viri docti etiam in corruptâ lectione quid libet potius invenire, quàm lectionem receptam vel confirmare vel emendare maluerunt."

In the interval of time which has elapsed between the publication of the *Authorized Version* and the present day, much has been effected for the confirmation and establishment of the Original Text of the *Apocalypse* by the labours of *Bishop Fell*, *Dr. John Mill*, *Bentley*, *Wetstein*, *Bengel*, *Matthæi*¹, *Alter*², *Birch*³, *Woide*, *Griesbach*⁴, *Scholz*⁵, *Ford*⁶, *Barrett*⁷, *Lachmann*, *Tischendorf*, *Tregelles*⁸, *Mai*, *Scrivener*, *Kelly*, and others⁹; and little now remains but to use diligently and faithfully the materials collected by them.

Their attention has been devoted mainly to the critical examination of Manuscripts; and it is due to them that at this time, nearly a *hundred* MSS. of the *Apocalypse* have been collated, some of which are of great antiquity and value.

Of these the four *most ancient* are,

A. The *Alexandrine*, in the British Museum, probably of the fourth century. A fac-simile of it was published by *Woide* in 1786, a magnificent work, reflecting great honour upon the Editor, and on those who generously assisted him. See above, on the Gospels, p. xxxiv, new edition.

κ. The *Sinaitic* MS. brought from Mount Sinai by *Tischendorf*; of the fourth century: see above on the MSS. of St. Paul's Epistles.

B. The *Basilian*, in the Vatican at Rome, No. 2066; of the sixth or seventh century. A transcript of it was published by *Tischendorf*, in 1846; and another has been published at Rome, as a Supplement to *Mai's* edition of the Codex Vaticanus, No. 1209.

This Basilian MS. is not to be confounded with Codex B, in the Vatican, No. 1209, containing other portions of the Greek Testament, but not comprising the *Apocalypse*. See above, on the Gospels, p. xxxiv.

C. The Palimpsest MS. of *S. Ephraim* the Syrian; so called from its having certain works of *S. Ephraim* written over the Greek Testament; probably of the fourth century. A transcript was published by *Tischendorf* in 1843.

By the goodness of Divine Providence these invaluable MSS. containing the Book of Revelation have been preserved to our own age, and have been made generally accessible at this day by means of transcripts. In this respect we of the present generation enjoy a privilege which was not granted to our forefathers, the ENGLISH TRANSLATORS, nor indeed to any of our predecessors. This circumstance will appear the more striking, when we recollect that one of these Ancient Manuscripts, the *Ephraim Palimpsest*, which, about a century ago, was almost illegible¹⁰, has now, within the last few years, been restored, as it were, to life by a chemical process, so that the reading of nearly every letter of it has been ascertained¹¹.

XI. Notice of some ancient Commentators on the *Apocalypse*, whose Works are extant¹².

I. *Victorinus*, Bishop of Petabium, or Petavium, Pettau, in Pannonia, circ. A.D. 270 (Cave, i. p. 147¹³). He is said to have suffered martyrdom in the Diocletian persecution, A.D. 303. The "Commentarius in Apocalypsim," ascribed to Victorinus, printed in *Bibliotheca Patrum Maxima*, iii. p. 414—421, and in a shorter form, entitled "Scholia in Apocalypsim," in *Biblioth. Patrum Gallandii*, iv. p. 52—65, whence it has been recently republished by the Abbé Migne. *Patrologia*, v. p. 318—348. The work of Victorinus was revised and modified by *S. Jerome* (see *Ambros. Ansbert.* in *Bibl. P. Maxima*, xiii. p. 404).

II. *Auctor Anonymus*, apud *S. Augustinum*, tom. iii. pp. 3106—3159, ed. Paris, 1837. This Exposition of the *Apocalypse*, which is very valuable, is in the form of Homilies or Sermons preached in the Church. It will be designated by *Aug.* ? in the following notes; see on ii. 1.

It has been ascribed by some to *Tichonius*, the celebrated Donatist Expositor, contemporary with *S. Augustine*, circ. A.D. 390. (Cave, i. p. 285.) *Tichonius* is known to have composed an

¹ Rigæ, 1782—1788. 12 tomis.

² Vindobonæ, 1786, 1787. 2 tomis, 8vo.

³ Hauniæ, 1800.

⁴ Halæ Saxonum, 1806. 2 tomis, 8vo.

⁵ Berolini, 1830—1836. 2 tomis, 4to.

⁶ In Appendice Codicis Vaticani, Oxon. 1799.

⁷ Cum Codice Evangelii S. Matthæi rescripto, Dublinii, 1801.

⁸ Lond. 1844.

⁹ Who has printed the *Apocalypse* from Cod. Vat. 2066.

¹⁰ It is described as such by *Montfaucon*, in the year 1708. *Palæogr. Gr.* p. 213. *Wetstein* says (in a letter to Bentley,

29 July, 1716), that it cost him two hours to read a page. *Bentley's Correspondence*, p. 510. Cp. p. 519.

¹¹ By means of the "tinctura Giobertina," in 1842. See *Monitum Editoris*, Pars ii. p. xvii.

¹² Compare *Calovius*, *Bibl. Illust.* N. T. Proleg. in Apoc. p. 1715, sq. *Lücke*, *Geschichte der Auslegung d. Apoc.* in vol. iv. of his *Kommentar über die Schriften d. Evang. Joannes*, pp. 951—1012, 2nd ed. The Rev. E. B. Elliott's *Horæ Apocalypticæ*, iv. p. 307, 4th ed. Dr. Todd on the *Apocalypse*, p. 269. See also particularly, *Le Long*, *Bibliotheca Sacra*, vol. ii.

¹³ Ed. Basil. 1741.

exegetical work on the Apocalypse (see *Bede's Commentary*, *passim*¹), and it is probable that these Homilies contain considerable portions of that treatise, adapted to the use of the Church.

III. *Primasius*, Bishop of Adrumetum in Africa, flourished A.D. 550. His "Commentarius in Apocalypsim" is contained in *Bibl. Patrum Maxima*, x. pp. 287—340, and has been published by the Abbé Migne in his *Patrologia*, tom. lxxviii. pp. 794—956.

IV. *Cassiodorus Aurelius Magnus*, "Senator Romanus, deinde Monachus Vivariensis in Calabria." (See Cave, *Hist. Lit.* i. p. 501.) He wrote his work, "De Divinis Lectionibus," circ. A.D. 556. His "Complexiones in Apocalypsim" were published at Rotterdam, 1723, 12mo. pp. 213—243, and are inserted in the Abbé Migne's *Patrologia*, tom. lxxx. pp. 1406—1418. Cassiodorus, in p. 9 of his work *De Divinis Lectionibus*, speaks of Primasius as his own contemporary, and refers to his work on the Apocalypse.

V. *Andreas*, Archbishop of Crete, supposed by some to have been afterwards Bishop of Cæsarea, in Cappadocia², probably in the sixth or seventh century. (Cave, i. p. 467. *Fabric. Bibl. Gr.* viii. 696, xi. p. 62, ed. Harles.) His Commentary on the Apocalypse is printed in Morell's edition of *S. Chrysostom*, tom. viii., and a Latin translation of it in *Bibl. Patr. Max.* tom. v. pp. 589—633. We may here mention the two other Greek Expositors, who derive their materials mainly from Andreas, Arethas and Œcumenius.

VI. *Arethas*, Bishop of Cæsarea, in Cappadocia, in the tenth century. (*Fabric. Bibl. Græc.* viii. p. 698, ed. Harles. Cave, i. p. 520, in *Œcumenii Opera*, ed. Paris, pp. 640—837, A.D. 1631.) A Latin translation of his Exposition is found in *Bibl. P. Max.* ix. pp. 741—791.

VII. *Œcumenius*, Bishop of Tricca, in Thessaly, probably in the tenth century. (Cave, ii. p. 112. *Fabric. Bibl. Gr.* viii. p. 692.)

Much has been effected recently towards an improved edition of these two Expositors by the late lamented *Dr. Cramer*, in his publication "*Œcumenii et Arethæ in Apocalypsim*," Oxonii, 1840. "Nobis," says he in his Preface, "plenissimum forsan Antiquorum Græcorum Patrum Commentarium, qui extat, in Apocalypsim, licuit vulgare." The learned Editor has printed new Scholia of Œcumenius, and has added to those already published of Arethas. The Exposition of Œcumenius commences at p. 497 and ends at p. 582 of *Dr. Cramer's* volume.

VIII. *Beda Venerabilis*; born near the mouth of the Tyne, in the county of Durham, A.D. 672, died A.D. 735. (Cave, i. p. 612.) *Explanatio Apocalypsis* in tom. xii. pp. 337—452 of *Bedæ Opera*, Lond. 1844. A valuable and interesting Exposition.

IX. *Ambrosius Ansbertus*, Gallus Presbyter (obiit A.D. 778), in *S. Johannis Apocalypsim libri x. ad sanctissimum in Christo Patrem ac Dominum D. Stephanum Divinâ Gratiâ Papam*; ed. princ. Col. 1536, fol. p. 442. *Bibl. P. Max.* xiii. pp. 403—639. (Cave, i. p. 631.)

X. *Berengaudus*, Monachus Benedictinus, circ. A.D. 800. *Expositio super vii. Visiones Apocalypseos*, inter *S. Ambrosii Opera*, ed. Bened. tom. ii. pt. ii. pp. 499—589.

XI. *Haymo*, "Episcopus Halberstattensis, Alcuini discipulus," obiit A.D. 853; an excellent Expositor. *Commentariorum in Apocalypsim Beati Joannis libri vii. jam primum in lucem editi, et ad multorum scriptorum Codicum fidem castigati Coloniae*, 1531, 12mo. (Cave, ii. p. 28.) Commentaries on the Apocalypse were written by *Alcuin* and *Rabanus Maurus* (*Trithem.* 251. 267), contemporaries of Haymo, but are not now extant.

XII. *Anselmus* Laudunensis (Laon, in Picardy) Benedictinus, Petri Abælardi magister; fl. A.D. 1103. In *Apocalypsim Enarrationes*, Coloniae, 1612, inter *Anselmi Cantuariensis Opera*, ii. p. 471, sqq. (Cave, ii. p. 187.)

XIII. *Bruno*, Abbas Monte-Cassinæ, ob. 1125. (Cave, ii. p. 158.) *Commentarius in Apocalypsim*, Opera, Venet. 1651. 2 tom. fol.

XIV. *Rupertus* Tuitensis (propè Coloniam Agrippinæ), ob. 1135. *Comment. in Apocalypsim*, lib. xii. ad Fredericum, Archiepiscopum Coloniensem, Colon. 1541, p. cxcv; Noriberg, 1526, ed. Paris, ii. p. 450, sqq. (Cave, ii. p. 193.)

XV. *Anselmus*, Episcopus Havilbergensis, de Sigillis Apocalypticiis scripsit, A.D. 1145. (Cave, ii. p. 224.) Some further account of this important treatise has been given, and some extracts from

¹ E.g. *Bede*, *Explan. Apocalyps. Epist. ad Euseb.*, "Has ergo regulas non in Apocalypsi tantum, id est, in Revelatione Sancti Joannis Apostoli, quam idem *Tichonius* et vivaciter intellexit, et veridicè satisque catholicè disseruit, præter ea duntaxat loca, in quibus suæ partis, id est, Donatistarum schisma defendere nisus." "Cujus quidem auctoris et nos in hoc opere sensum secuti, nonnulla quæ extrinsecus posuit, breviandi causâ, omisimus."

² Andreas of Crete was probably a different person from Andreas of Cappadocia. In the MSS. the Commentary on the Apocalypse is attributed, sometimes to the one, sometimes to the other. Arethas assigns it to his predecessor in the See of Cappadocia.

it have been printed, by the present writer in his Edition of the Greek Text of the Apocalypse, London, 1849, Appendix B.

XVI. *Ricardus de Sancto Victore*, propè Parisios, "natione Scotus, S. Bernardi familiaris," obiit 1173. In Apocalypsim S. Joannis libri vii. (Cave, ii. p. 228.) Opera, Rothomagi, 1650. 2 tom. folio.

XVII. *Joachimus Calaber*, Abbas Florentis sive de Flore, fl. A.D. 1200. (Cave, ii. p. 278.) His work on the Apocalypse was first published with the following title:—

"Expositio magni Prophetæ *Abbatis Joachim* in Apocalypsim: Opus illud celebre; Aurea, ac præ ceteris longè altior et profundior Explanatio in Apocalypsim *Abbatis Joachim* de statu Universali Reipublicæ Christianæ, deque Ecclesiâ Carnali in proximo *reformandâ*, atque in primævam sui ætatem redigendâ; triplici prius tamen percutiendâ flagello, moxque omnium Infidelium ad Christi fidem conversione; jam multis sepulta sæculis, sed adimplenda tempore instante ad utilitatem et consolationem fidelium nutu divino detecta atque reserata in lucem primo venit," Venetiis, 1527, 4to.

The date of Joachim's prefatory Epistle is printed "Floris. anno Dominicæ Incarnationis MC." It ought to be MCC.

A further account of Joachim's expositions of the Apocalyptic prophecies is given in Appendix C of the present Editor's volume above quoted, Lond. 1849; and *Gieseler*, Eccl. Hist. § 70.

XVIII. *Thomas Aquinas*, nat. 1224, ob. 1274. Thomæ Aquinatis in B. Joannis Apocalypsim Expositio nunc primum è tenebris eruta, Florentiæ, 1549, 12mo. p. 654. The preface speaks of it unhesitatingly as the work of Aquinas. Cave (ii. p. 306) denies the genuineness of this exposition, and conjectures that it was written by *Thomas Anglicus*, the monk of Ely, of the twelfth century.

XIX. *Joannes Petrus Olivi*, a Franciscan, of Languedoc, ob. 1297. Postilla in Apocalypsim. For a further account of *Peter Olivi*, and of his memorable labours on the Apocalypse, see *Gieseler*, Eccl. Hist. § 70, and Appendix D of the present Editor's Greek Text of the Apocalypse. Lond. 1849.

XX. *Albertus Magnus*, Provincial of the Dominicans, Master of Aquinas, Bishop of Ratisbon, died at Cologne, A.D. 1280. (Cave, ii. p. 311.) Commentarii in Apocalypsim. Basil, 1506.

XXI. *Petrus Aureolus*, sive Petrus de Verberia, Doctor facundus, Archiepiscopus Aquensis (of Aix), fl. 1310. (Cave, ii. p. 25, App.) His *Breviarium Bibliorum* contains his comment on the Apocalypse.

XXII. *Nicolas de Gorham*, of Merton College, in the fourteenth century. Comment. in Apocalypsim, Antwerp, 1617—1620, p. 178 sqq. (Cave, ii. p. 86 in Appendice.)

XXIII. *Jacobus de Paradiso*, Carthusianus, A.D. 1449. "De Septem Statibus Ecclesiæ in Apocalypsi descriptis, deque autoritate Ecclesiæ et ejus Reformatione." A valuable and interesting treatise, printed in *Browne's Fasciculus Rerum Expetendarum*, &c., ii. p. 102. Lond. 1690.

ΑΠΟΚΑΛΥΨΙΣ ΙΩΑΝΝΟΥ.

I. ¹ ἈΠΟΚΑΛΥΨΙΣ Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ, ἣν ἔδωκεν αὐτῷ ὁ Θεὸς δεῖξαι τοῖς δούλοις αὐτοῦ ᾧ δεῖ γενέσθαι ἐν τάχει, καὶ ἐσήμανεν ἀποστείλας διὰ τοῦ ἀγγέλου αὐτοῦ τῷ δούλῳ αὐτοῦ Ἰωάννῃ, ² ὃς ἐμαρτύρησε τὸν λόγον τοῦ Θεοῦ καὶ τὴν μαρτυρίαν Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ, ὅσα εἶδε. ³ ^b Μακάριος ὁ ἀναγινώσκων, καὶ οἱ ἀκούοντες τοὺς λόγους τῆς προφητείας, καὶ τηροῦντες τὰ ἐν αὐτῇ γεγραμμένα· ὁ γὰρ καιρὸς ἐγγύς.

⁴ ^c Ἰωάννης ταῖς ἐπτὰ ἐκκλησίαις ταῖς ἐν τῇ Ἀσίᾳ· χάρις ὑμῖν καὶ εἰρήνη ἀπὸ ὁ ὢν καὶ ὁ ἦν καὶ ὁ ἐρχόμενος· καὶ ἀπὸ τῶν ἐπτὰ πνευμάτων, ᾧ ἐνώπιον

a 1 John 1. 1.

b Rom. 13. 11.
James 5. 8.
1 Pet. 4. 7.
ch. 22. 7 10.

c Exod. 3. 14.
ver. 8.
ch. 3. 1. & 4. 5, 8.
& 11. 17. & 16. 5.

CH. I. 1. Ἀποκάλυψις Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ, κ.τ.λ.] *The Apocalypse, or Revelation of Jesus Christ, which God gave to Him, to show to His servants what things must come to pass shortly.* The Father loveth the Son, and showeth Him all things that Himself doeth (John v. 20); and the Everlasting Son, the Word of God, God with us (Matt. i. 23), God manifest in the flesh (1 Tim. iii. 16), reveals God's will to the world (see Matt. xi. 27. Luke x. 22. John i. 18). Hence the Apocalypse is the *Revelation of Jesus Christ* (cp. Gal. i. 12. 2 Cor. xii. 1). John (says Bengel) is the *writer* of this book, but its *Author* is Christ.

By some English Writers this Book is sometimes called, in the plural number, "the Revelations," but this is erroneous. The Book is Ἀποκάλυψις, *Apocalypse*, an *unfolding* or *revealing* of what is secret; as *Andreas* expresses it, it is ἡ τῶν κρυπτῶν δήλωσις (see the LXX, in 1 Sam. xx. 30). Hence *S. Irenæus* (v. 30) says, "the Apocalypse *was seen*" (ἐωράθη); a passage which shows that this title of the book, "the Apocalypse," is very ancient, probably from St. John himself.

It is this act of *revealing* which the title describes. Compare the use of this word in Rom. ii. 5; viii. 19; xvi. 25. 1 Cor. i. 7; xiv. 6. 2 Cor. xii. 1. 7. Gal. i. 12; ii. 2. Eph. i. 17; iii. 3. 2 Thess. i. 7. 1 Pet. i. 7. 13; it is the office of revealing the future which is assigned to Christ by God, and this truth is declared in the name and contents of the Apocalypse. Accordingly we shall see that it is Christ, Who commands John to write the seven Epistles to the Seven Churches, and reveals what some of them will suffer (i. 11. 19); it is Christ, Who opens the Book sealed with the Seven Seals (v. 7. 9), and reveals the future sufferings and final triumph of the Church (vi. 1—17; vii. 1—17); it is Christ, Who offers the prayers of all the Saints, which lead to the sounding of the Seven Trumpets which announce God's Judgments on His enemies (viii. 3—13; ix. 1—21; xi. 15); it is Christ, Who delivers the little Book opened to St. John, and gives him a commission to prophesy again (x. 1—11).

The *Divinity* of Christ is declared by what follows; "He sent and signified it by His angel to His servant John." Compare xxii. 16. The Angels are *Christ's* Angels, because He is God. See Matt. xxiv. 31.

— ᾧ δεῖ γενέσθαι ἐν τάχει] *which must come to pass shortly.* This expression is not inconsistent with the fact that some of these things would *seem long* in their accomplishment, to human calculation; as is evident from Luke xviii. 8, where Christ says that God is *long-suffering* (μακροθυμῶν) and yet executes His purposes ἐν τάχει, and so here He says, xxii. 7, ἰδοὺ ἔρχομαι ταχὺ, and still He is not yet come: cp. below v. 3, and v. 7.

— τῷ δούλῳ αὐτοῦ Ἰωάννῃ] *to His servant John.* The blessed Apostle, the beloved Disciple, who was admitted to see the heavenly visions which he is about to describe, is not "exalted by the abundance of his revelations" (2 Cor. xii. 7), but describes

himself by this title, "the *servant* of Christ." "Mysteries are revealed unto the meek." Ecclus. iii. 19.

2. ὃς ἐμαρτύρησε κ.τ.λ.] *who bare witness of the Word of God, and the testimony of Jesus Christ, as many things as he saw.* St. John thus intimates, that what he writes in the Apocalypse, is not from *himself*, but from *God*; that it is not from any private imagination, but that it is the testimony of Christ; and that he writes *whatever he saw* in the visions of God. Therefore he adds, "blessed is he who readeth, and who heareth (i. e. hearkens to, and obeys) the words of the prophecy, and observeth the things which are written therein." On the sense of ἀκούω with an accusative as here, see Acts ix. 7. On the meaning of ὅσα see note, John xxi. 25, and on the promise of blessedness to him that *readeth* and *keepeth*, see on James i. 22.

3. ὁ γὰρ καιρὸς ἐγγύς] *for the season is at hand*: the season (καιρὸς) at which they will come to pass is near. This assertion is always true, even to the end of time. For since the prophecies in this book extend from the Apostolic age to the Day of Judgment, some of them are continually on the eve of their accomplishment. Besides, since the duration of the present world is but a span when compared with Eternity, the season of Judgment is at hand; the *Judge standeth before the door* (James v. 9). Cp. 2 Pet. iii. 8, 9. *Arethas*.

4. Ἰωάννης ταῖς ἐπτὰ ἐκκλησίαις] *John to the Seven Churches that are in Asia.* The *Asia* here mentioned is the district more commonly known as Ionia and Lydia, and was called in Roman language Proconsular Asia. It was a province of not more than one hundred miles square, watered on the north by the river Caycus, on the south by the Mæander, and bounded on the east by the Phrygian hills, and on the west by the Mediterranean Sea. See on Acts ii. 9, and *Abp. Ussher's Treatise on the Original of Bishops and Metropolitans*, Oxf. 1641, p. 53, and following. Its capital was Ephesus, in which city St. John resided, wrote his Gospel, and died, and which is now named after him. See above, *Introduction* to St. John's Gospel, p. 267.

On these Epistles to the Seven Churches see further below, i. 11; ii. 1.

— χάρις ὑμῖν καὶ εἰρήνη] *Grace be to you, and Peace.* The salutation with which St. Peter's two Epistles, and all St. Paul's Epistles to Churches begin (see on 1 Thess. i. 1); and serving as a bond of Christian fellowship between St. John and those two Apostles. The Apocalypse also ends with the final salutation which was characteristic of St. Paul, *The Grace of the Lord Jesus Christ*. See above, on 1 Thess. v. 28.

— ἀπὸ ὁ ὢν καὶ ὁ ἦν καὶ ὁ ἐρχόμενος] *from Him Who is, and was, and is to come.* Ὁ ὢν means more than "Who is;" it means "the Being One," the "Ever Self-existing One," the First Cause of all existence.

This remarkable structure, in which the preposition ἀπὸ is

τοῦ θρόνου αὐτοῦ, ⁵ καὶ ἀπὸ Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ, ὁ μάρτυς ὁ πιστός, ὁ πρωτότοκος τῶν νεκρῶν, καὶ ὁ ἄρχων τῶν βασιλέων τῆς γῆς· τῷ ἀγαπῶντι ἡμᾶς καὶ λούσαντι ἡμᾶς ἀπὸ τῶν ἁμαρτιῶν ἡμῶν ἐν τῷ αἵματι αὐτοῦ, ⁶ καὶ ἐποίησεν ἡμᾶς βασιλείαν ἱερεῖς τῷ Θεῷ καὶ Πατρὶ αὐτοῦ, αὐτῷ ἡ δόξα καὶ τὸ κράτος εἰς τοὺς αἰῶνας τῶν αἰώνων· ἀμήν.

⁷ Ἰδοὺ, ἔρχεται μετὰ τῶν νεφελῶν, καὶ ὄψεται αὐτὸν πᾶς ὀφθαλμός, καὶ οἵτινες αὐτὸν ἐξεκέντησαν, καὶ κόψονται ἐπ' αὐτὸν πᾶσαι αἱ φυλαὶ

& 2. 5, 9. 1 John 1. 7. ch. 5. 10. & 20. 6. f Isa. 3. 13, 14. Dan. 7. 13. Zech. 12. 10. Matt. 24. 30. & 25. 31. & 26. 64. John 19. 37. Acts 1. 11. 1 Thess. 1. 10. 2 Thess. 1. 10. Jude 14.

followed by a *nominative* case, seems designed to remind the reader, that in the Apocalypse he is to be prepared for combinations independent of the ordinary rules of Grammar, and having a Grammar of their own,—the Grammar of Inspiration.

These remarkable structures, frequent in this Book, excite the reader's attention by their singularity, and serve as mementos that the truths which they express transcend the reach of human thought and language. Thus the combination of the preposition ἀπὸ here with the participle, ὁ ὢν, marks its connexion with the *indeclinable* Hebrew קָדוֹשׁ (*Jehovah*), and also, if we may so say, bespeaks the *indeclinability* of the Divine Essence, with which there is "no *variableness* or *shadow of turning*." James i. 17.

See below, v. 5, and *Winer*, Gr. Gr. pp. 64. 164; it indicates that the phrase ὁ ὢν καὶ ὁ ἦν καὶ ὁ ἐρχόμενος is a *proper name* reserved to God alone, and that He Who spake to John in Patmos is the same as He Who spake to Moses in the Wilderness, when He thus described Himself, Ἐγὼ εἰμι ὁ ὢν, "I AM the BEING One;" "I AM the ever EXISTING One," and ordered Moses to say, ὁ ὢν ἀπέσταλκέ με, "I AM hath sent me." Exod. iii. 14.

The commission given here to St. John resembles that given to Moses; and it will be seen that the Apocalypse presents a continuous series of typical analogies between the *Church of Christ*, whose future fortunes he reveals, and the history of the *Israelitish Church* led by Moses out of Egypt, in its pilgrimage through the wilderness, toward Canaan, the figure of Heaven. Cp. *Arethas* here, and see *Introduction* above, pp. 148. 149.

Elz. has τοῦ after ἀπὸ, but it is not in the best MSS.

— ἀπὸ τῶν ἐπὶ τὰ πνεύματων] *from the Seven Spirits which are before His throne*. From a comparison of this passage with Zech. iv. 10, speaking of those "seven, which are the Eyes of the Lord, which run to and fro through the whole earth," it has been inferred by some that the *Seven Spirits* here mentioned, are the *Seven principal Angels*, of which number Gabriel and Michael are two. Cp. Luke i. 19. The ancient opinion of the Hebrews on this subject is expressed in the book of Tobit, xii. 15, "I am Raphael, one of the *Seven Angels* . . . which go in and out before the presence of the Holy One;" and this opinion was entertained by *Irenæus*, cited by *Andreas*, and by *Clemens Alex.* Stromat. i. ad fin., and by *Andreas* and *Arethas*, and in later times by *Ribera*, *Viegas*, *Corn. à Lapide*, *Mede*, *Bossuet*, *Drusius*, *Bp. Bull* (Sermons, i. pp. 291, 292), and others. Cp. below, iii. 1, where Christ is said to have the *Seven Spirits* of God, and the *Seven Stars*, and iv. 5, where the *Seven Spirits* are typified by seven lamps, and v. 6, where they are symbolized by the *Seven horns* and seven eyes of the Lamb.

There would be, doubtless, an appropriate significance in the conveyance of the message of *Grace and Peace* from God and Christ through the ministry of the *Seven Angels* of the Church in Heaven to the *Seven Angels* of the Churches of Asia, who represent the fulness of the Apostolic Ministry of the Church Universal on Earth. See i. 20; ii. 1.

Perhaps, however, inasmuch as the number *Seven* in the Apocalypse symbolizes *completeness* (see on xii. 19), and inasmuch also as Angels are not called *Spirits* in this book, the *Seven Spirits* represent the *Holy Spirit*, in His sevenfold fulness, which rests on Christ, the Holy One of God (Isa. xi. 2; lxi. 1. Luke iv. 18), and which after His Ascension He sent, and is ever sending, to comfort and illuminate His Church, and therefore they may well be called *horns*, *lamps*, and *eyes*. Nor is there any harshness in the expression *Grace and Peace* be to you from the *Seven Spirits*; for these seven gifts of the Holy Spirit bestowed by Christ, Who received them from the Father (John xiv. 16), Who is the Wellspring of all good (see on 2 Cor. xiii. 14), are the means of all *Grace* and *Peace* to the Church; and so the words are understood by *Victorinus*, *Primasius*, *Andreas*, *Bede*.

The *septenary number* (says *Aug.*) is consecrated to the Holy Ghost in Holy Scripture, and is recognized as such by the Church. And (as is added by *Bede* here) the One Spirit is here characterized as *sevenfold*, because in the One Spirit is all fulness and perfection; and this interpretation is sanctioned by *Bp.*

Andrewes (Sermon "on the Sending of the Holy Ghost," iii. p. 134), and so *Bp. Wilson*, who says that the salutation is from "the Holy Ghost Who governs the Church of Christ, until His Coming again, and with His *sevenfold gifts* inspires it."

5. ἀπὸ Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ, ὁ μάρτυς ὁ πιστός] *from Jesus Christ, the faithful Witness*. The structure of ἀπὸ with a nominative may be compared with that in v. 4; and as in that passage it declared that there is no *variableness* or *shadow of turning* in God (James i. 17), so it may here be understood to signify, that whatever vicissitudes may occur in the affairs of Nations, and in the History of the Church, as revealed in the prophecies of this Book, yet "Jesus Christ is the same yesterday and to-day and for ever" (Heb. xiii. 8), and that He Who "came into the world to witness to the truth" (John xviii. 37), is always "the faithful witness;" and whatever corruptions of Christian doctrine may arise in the Church, yet His testimony is always *faithful and true*.

— ὁ πρωτότοκος τῶν νεκρῶν] *the first-begotten of the dead*. Death has become Birth, through Him Who is the *First-born* from the Grave. See above, on Acts ii. 24. 1 Cor. xv. 20. Col. i. 18. *Bp. Andrewes*, iii. 57.

— ὁ ἄρχων] *the Prince of the Kings of the Earth*, an appropriate declaration consequent on the statement of Christ's Victory over the Grave at his Resurrection, when He asserted this Supremacy (see Matt. xxviii. 18), and here it is the preamble of a Revelation which will disclose insurrections of *earthly Powers* against Christ, and His triumph over them (xix. 19—21).

— καὶ λούσαντι κ.τ.λ.] *and Who washed us from our sins by His blood*. Some MSS., viz. A, B, C, and several Cursives, and the Syriac and Armenian Versions and Fathers, *Andreas* and *Primasius*, and *Cassiodorus*, have λούσαντι, *Who redeemed us*, and so *Lachmann*, and *Düsterdieck*, but not *Ewald*, *De Wette*, *Tisch.*

This reading deserves consideration, and may perhaps be preferable. For the Copyists were more likely to alter λούσαντι into λούσαντι than *vice versa*; and the great proof of Christ's love is, that He redeemed us by pouring forth His Own Blood, as our ransom, λύτρον; and whereas we were held in bondage by reason of our sins, and were liable to everlasting death (Rom. vi. 17—23), our Redeemer delivered us from that captivity by paying that price which alone could satisfy God's justice, and procure our release, and He purchased us at that price for Himself. See Matt. xx. 28. Acts xx. 28. 1 Cor. vi. 20; vii. 23. Eph. i. 7. Col. i. 14. Heb. ix. 12. 1 Tim. ii. 6. 1 Pet. i. 18. On the use of ἐν as the instrument, see vi. 8.

6. καὶ ἐποίησεν ἡμᾶς βασιλείαν] *and He made us to be a kingdom, Priests to God and the Father*. So the best MSS. *Elz.* has βασιλεῖς, *Kings*; but the *spiritual* character of the Christian privileges is best expressed by the abstract word a *Kingdom*, which may be designed to be a caution against erroneous and antinomian notions which some have deduced from the declaration of Scripture, that all Christians are *Kings*. It is a phrase derived from the Ancient Scriptures (Exod. xix. 6; xxiii. 22), "Ye shall be to Me a royal Priesthood," βασιλεῖον ἱεράτευμα. Cp. 1 Pet. ii. 9, and *Winer*, p. 512.

Observe the aorist here, ἐποίησεν, He made; that is, by certain special acts on His part, His Incarnation, and Death, and Ascension. See below, v. 10.

The addition of a finite verb (ἐποίησεν), preceded by καὶ, to participles (ἀγαπῶντι—λούσαντι), is a Hebraistic peculiarity, as is observed by *Delitzsch*, quoted by *Hengstenberg*.

7. Ἰδοὺ, ἔρχεται μετὰ τῶν νεφελῶν] *Behold, He cometh with the clouds*, the clouds of the Last Judgment described by Daniel, vii. 13. St. John, being in the Spirit, already anticipates the end of all things, and sees it as already at hand; as it is to Him to Whom a thousand years are as one day (2 Pet. iii. 8), and by Whose inspiration he writes. See v. 3.

— καὶ οἵτινες αὐτὸν ἐξεκέντησαν] *and they also who pierced Him*, whether on the Cross, by nails and the spear, and by bitter mockeries and insults; or by their sins. Heb. vi. 6. On the variation here from the Septuagint Version of this text, cited from Zech. xii. 10, see above on John xix. 37, where is the same

g Isa. 41. 4.
& 44. 6. & 48. 12.
ver. 4.
ch. 21. 6.
& 22. 13.
h Rom. 8. 17.
Phil. 1. 7.
& 4. 14.
2 Tim. 1. 8.
& 2. 12.

τῆς γῆς· ναὶ, ἀμήν. ⁸ Ἐγὼ εἰμι τὸ Ἀλφα καὶ τὸ Ω, λέγει Κύριος ὁ Θεός, ὁ
ὢν καὶ ὁ ἦν καὶ ὁ ἐρχόμενος, ὁ παντοκράτωρ.

⁹ Ἐγὼ Ἰωάννης, ὁ ἀδελφὸς ὑμῶν καὶ συγκοινωνὸς ἐν τῇ θλίψει καὶ βασι-
λείᾳ καὶ ὑπομονῇ ἐν Χριστῷ Ἰησοῦ, ἐγενόμην ἐν τῇ νήσῳ τῇ καλουμένῃ Πάτμῳ
διὰ τὸν λόγον τοῦ Θεοῦ, καὶ διὰ τὴν μαρτυρίαν Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ.

variety; and where it is observed, that the text which speaks of Christ's suffering, affords also evidence of His Godhead.

This deviation from the LXX Version, and this identity of the rendering of this remarkable text in St. John's Gospel (xix. 37; cp. *Lee* on Inspiration, p. 345), and in the Apocalypse, are confirmatory of the belief that those two writings are from the same hand.

The frequent citations in this, the first chapter of the Apocalypse, from the ancient Hebrew Prophets, especially from *Daniel* and *Zechariah*, are doubtless designed to lead the reader to regard the *Apocalypse* as a sequel to, and continuation of, *Hebrew prophecy*, and as dictated by the Same Spirit Who spake by its mouth. And since the *Apocalypse* is the last prophetic Book of Holy Scripture, it may be regarded as the consummation of all God's prophetic Revelations to the world. See above, *Introduction* to this Book, pp. 150, 151.

— καὶ κόψονται ἐπ' αὐτὸν πᾶσαι αἱ φυλαὶ τῆς γῆς] and all the Tribes of the Earth will wail at Him: a sentence uttered by Our Lord Himself in the Gospel, Matt. xxiv. 30.

The Tribes of the Earth in this book are they who are of the earth, earthy, and are not like the Tribes of the Israel of God, the heirs of the heavenly Jerusalem, who have their hearts in heaven, their treasure in heaven, and their conversation in heaven (Matt. vi. 20. Phil. iii. 20). See below, iii. 10.

It is a saying of *S. Augustine*, which is of constant use in expounding the *Apocalypse*, "*Ecclesia Dei cælum est, inimici Ejus terra sunt*" (Serm. 57).

The tribes of the spiritual Israel, the Church Universal, are represented as sealed with the seal of God, at the final gathering of all his people, in the seventh Seal. See below, vii. 4—9.

But they who set their affections on things upon earth will wail at Christ's Coming to Judgment; while they who have set their affections on things above (Col. iii. 2) will rejoice at His appearance, and will "lift up their heads, because the day of their redemption draweth nigh" (Luke xxi. 28).

On the use of the verb κόπτομαι, *plango*, see above, Matt. xi. 17; xxiv. 30. Luke viii. 52; xxiii. 27; below, xviii. 9.

8. ἐγὼ εἰμι τὸ Ἀλφα καὶ τὸ Ω] I am the Alpha and the Omega. The first and the last letters of the Greek Alphabet are used by Christ in order to declare that He is the Beginning and End of all things. A similar mode of speech, derived from their own alphabet, was employed by the *Hebrews*, who said that Adam transgressed, and that Abraham observed the whole law "from Aleph to Thau;" see *Schoettgen*, pp. 1086, 1087. A like usage is found in later Greek writers. See *Welstein*, p. 749.

This use of letters of the Alphabet of the Greek or Gentile world, and not of the Hebrew, in the introduction of this Book, as a designation of Jesus Christ, and adopted by Himself as such, is characteristic of the universality of the Dispensation which it reveals, and of the incorporation of all nations of the Earth in the mystical Body of Christ. The numerical value of A is an Unit, and of Ω is eight hundred; and eight is the symbol of glory. See on Luke xxiv. 1.

These words, applied by Christ to Himself (xxi. 6; xxii. 13; cp. i. 17, 18), and compared with the declarations of *JEHOVAH*, Isa. 41. 4; xlv. 6; xlviii. 12, are also a plain assertion of Christ's Divinity and Co-eternity with the Father. See *Athanasius*, c. Arianos, Orat. iii. vol. i. p. 317; and cp. *Andreas*, *Ecumen.*, *Arethas*, here. *Bp. Andrewes*, ii. 162. *Bp. Pearson*, Art. ii. p. 233. *Dr. Waterland*, ii. 136. Observe the definite articles prefixed here to Alpha and Omega, indicating that He is the only Beginning and End of all things, and showing His Co-equality with the Father.

This declaration of Christ concerning Himself, "I am the A and the Ω," was reverently accepted by early Christian Art, and is often seen in ancient Christian *Inscriptions*, particularly in the *Catacombs* of Rome, where the symbols A, Ω are frequently ac-

companied by ✠ (Χριστός). See *Aringhi*, *Roma Subterranea*,

cap. xiii. and xv. *Bp. Kip* on the *Catacombs*, Lond. 1859, p. 110; and *Scott* on the *Catacombs*, p. 100; in one case the symbol is accompanied with the words ES DEIS, probably DEUS, "Thou art God," asserting the GODHEAD of CHRIST.

It is also adopted in Christian Hymnology, e. g. by *Prudentius*, in the fourth century, Cathem. ix. 10.

Corde natus ex Parentis ante mundi exordium,
Alpha et Ω cognominatus, Ipse fons et clausula
Omnium quæ sunt, fuerunt, quæque post futura sunt.

9. ἐγὼ Ἰωάννης—Πάτμῳ] I, John, your brother. Observe the humility of the beloved Disciple; see above, v. 1. I, John, your brother and partner in the affliction and kingdom and endurance in Christ Jesus (K and C omit Χριστῷ. A omits Ἰησοῦ, B has ε. X. Ἰ.) became (ἐγενόμην, not ἦν) a dweller in the Island called Patmos, on account of the word of God, and the testimony of Jesus Christ. Observe the gentleness with which he speaks of his exile and imprisonment for the Gospel; ἐγενόμην ἐν τῇ νήσῳ, I became—I found myself—for the sake of God's Word, an inmate of Patmos. He regards his banishment like a voyage and sojourn in a pleasant place; for he was there visited by Christ. There is also something beautiful and touching in the repetition of this word ἐγενόμην here. I became a dweller in Patmos, for the Word's sake, and I became a dweller in the Spirit, on the Lord's Day. To be in Patmos for the Truth's sake is a proper preparation for being in the Spirit, and for seeing Revelations of heaven.

The aorist ἐγενόμην does not intimate, as some have supposed, that the *Apocalypse* was not written in Patmos; see v. 11. It is like the epistolary aorist ἔγραψα, by which the writer puts himself in the place of the reader; see 1 Pet. v. 12.

St. John saw and wrote the Revelation in the isle of Patmos, one of the Sporades, in the Ægean Sea, to which he was banished by the Emperor Domitian about A.D. 95. See *Tertullian*, *Præscr. Hær.* 36. *Iren.*, c. Hær. v. 30. *Origen* in Matt. tom. xvi. *Euseb.* iii. 18; and cp. *Andreas* here, and *S. Jerome*, *Scr. Eccl.* x.; and above, *Introduction*, p. 157; and *Introduction* to St. John's Gospel, p. 267, note, where the passages are cited.

Smaller Islands, especially in the Archipelago, such as Gyaros, Seriphos, Patmos, were used by the Romans for purposes of penal deportation and imprisonment; see *Tacit.*, *Annal.* i. 53. *Juvenal*, i. 73; x. 170.

The island of Patmos still preserves some local traditions of St. John's sojourn there. A cave is shown where he is said to have seen the Revelation. *Tournefort*, ii. p. 198. *Pococke*, iii. p. 36. *Walpole*, *Turkey*, ii. p. 43.

At the opening of this book, Christ displays a specimen of the providential Scheme which is to be revealed in the *Apocalypse*. John was banished by the powers of this world; but Christ uses his exile and detention in Patmos as an occasion for revealing to him the glories of His Second Coming, and for commissioning him to write what he could not now preach by word of mouth, and to send the writing to the Seven Churches, so that it might be read by them and by all Churches in every age, even to the Coming of Christ.

St. John, an exile on earth, was admitted to visions of Heaven. Confined within the limits of Patmos, he was received into the courts of the Jerusalem that is above.

He who had been admitted to our Lord's most private retirements; to the most solemn scenes of His sufferings and sorrow; who had been with Him on the Mountain of Transfiguration, in the Garden of Gethsemane, in the High Priest's hall, and at the Cross; was now a prisoner in a lonely island.

All his brother Apostles had been taken away by Death. He was left the last. As the winds blew, and as the waves dashed on the rocky shores of Patmos, so the storms of the world were beating against the rock of the Church. But the aged and lonely Apostle was cheered with glorious visions. He was visited by JESUS CHRIST. The Man of Sorrows, whom St. John had seen in His agony at Gethsemane, He Whom He had seen standing bound before Caiaphas, crowned with thorns, mocked by Herod, condemned by Pilate, dying on the Cross, and pierced by the soldier, was now seen by him enthroned in heaven, and adored by Angels kneeling before Him. "I am the Alpha and the Omega, the First and the Last. I am He that liveth, and was dead; and, behold, I am alive for evermore, Amen; and have the keys of hell and of death."

Here is comfort to all in times of sorrow. They who love Christ with St. John, they who suffer with Christ, and for Him, will be visited by Him, and after the troubles of this world will pass to the peace of heaven. See above, *Introduction*, p. 162.

¹⁰ Ἐγενόμην ἐν Πνεύματι ἐν τῇ κυριακῇ ἡμέρᾳ, καὶ ἤκουσα ὀπίσω μου ^{i ch. 4. 2.} φωνὴν μεγάλην ὡς σάλπιγγος ¹¹ λεγούσης, Ὁ βλέπεις γράψον εἰς βιβλίον, καὶ ^{k ch. 2. 8. & 22. 13.} πέμψον ταῖς ἐπτὰ ἐκκλησίαις, εἰς Ἐφεσον, καὶ εἰς Σμύρναν, καὶ εἰς Πέργαμον, καὶ εἰς Θυάτειραν, καὶ εἰς Σάρδεις, καὶ εἰς Φιλαδέλφειαν, καὶ εἰς Λαοδίκειαν.

10. Ἐγενόμην, κ.τ.λ.] *I became in the Spirit on the Lord's Day*; the Day of the Lord's Resurrection from the Dead; a very appropriate season for the revelation of Christ in glory, and of the bliss of the Church Triumphant.

By the repetition of the word Ἐγενόμην St. John marks his transition from the outer visible world (ἐν Πάτμῳ) to the inner invisible world (ἐν Πνεύματι).

The expression—"the Lord's Day"—shows that the First Day of the Week, on which our Lord rose, was now observed by Christians as a day set apart for religious uses. In the words of *S. Augustine* (Epist. 119), "The Lord's Day being proclaimed to Christians by the Lord's Resurrection, thence became their festal Day."

A weekly Day of Rest typifies the Rest or *Sabbatism* which still remaineth to the people of God (see Heb. iv. 9). The Sabbath commemorated God's Rest after creation, which concerns all men; and the transfer of the Sabbath to the First Day recalls the mind to the blessing of Creation, begun on the First Day, and consecrated anew by those of Redemption and Sanctification, bestowed in the Resurrection of Christ on the First Day, and in the Descent of the Holy Ghost from heaven, on the First Day. The Sabbath of the *Jews* commemorated their deliverance from Egypt (Deut. v. 15). The Christian Sabbath celebrates the substance of which that national deliverance was a shadow; it celebrates the Exodus of mankind from a spiritual Egypt, in the Resurrection of Christ.

See note above on Matt. xxvii. 62; xxviii. 1. Luke xxiii. 56. Acts xx. 7; Col. ii. 16, and *Bp. Andrewes*, Sermon on 1 Cor. xi. 16, vol. ii. p. 426, who there says, "The Lord's Day hath testimony in Scripture." *Bp. White* on the Sabbath, Lond. 1636. *Bp. Cosin*, De die Dominico, Works, v. p. 529; and *Archbp. Bramhall* on the Lord's Day, Works, vol. v. pp. 9-85; and *Bp. Pearson* on the Creed, note, Art. v. pp. 497, 498; and *Grotius* here; and No. xlv. of the *Editor's Occasional Sermons*, "On the Christian Sunday;" and *Ellicott* on Col. ii. 17. *Tertullian* refers to this passage in his *De Animâ*, c. 9.

There is also another special aptitude and adjustment in the Visions of the Apocalypse to the first day of the week. For all these Visions—the Seals, the Trumpets, the Vials, are grouped in *sevens*; they begin on the first day of the Seven, the birthday of the Church, whose history and pilgrimage they reveal, till she comes, after the *Hexæmeron* of her trial, to the Sabbath of her Rest; and to the Octave of a glorious Resurrection.

11. ὁ βλέπεις γράψον] *what thou art beholding write forth* with (aorist) into a book.

— καὶ πέμψον ταῖς ἐπτὰ ἐκκλησίαις] *and send it to the Seven Churches*: that is, primarily to the Seven Churches in *Asia* here specified.

Hence the testimony of those Churches to the genuineness of the Apocalypse is of great weight. It was sent to them, and they bear witness that it was sent by the Apostle and Evangelist St. John. See above, the *Introduction* to this Book, pp. 154-6.

Tertullian (adv. Marcion. iv. 5) refers to this passage, and calls these Churches "alumnas Joannis."

Secondly, the message delivered to them was designed by the Great Head of the Church for the perpetual edification of all Churches in every age and country of the World. This is evident from the fact, that each of the Seven Epistles here sent contains the solemn words, "He that hath an ear, let him hear what the Spirit saith unto the Churches" (Rev. ii. 7. 11. 17. 29; iii. 6. 13. 22).

Besides, in Holy Scripture the number seven indicates completeness (see *Bahr*, Symbolik i. pp. 187-201), and it is specially used in the *Apocalypse* in this sense. The *Seventh Seal*, the *Seventh Trumpet*, the *Seventh Vial*, is the last in their own series respectively.

There were many more Churches in Asia than Seven when St. John wrote (e. g. *Colossæ*, *Hierapolis*, and probably *Tralles*, *Magnesia*, and others); and therefore, as is said by all the ancient Expositors (*Victorinus*, *Andreas*, *Primasius*, *Bede*, *Arethas*, and others), the design of the Holy Spirit, in adopting the perfect number seven as the number of Churches to whom the Epistles are to be sent, is to declare that in speaking to them He is speaking to all.

The words of *Victorinus* (Bishop and Martyr in the third century), whose comment on the Apocalypse is the oldest now extant, deserve to be cited here. "There are seven horns of the Lamb (Rev. v. 6), seven eyes of God (Zech. iv. 10), seven spirits

before the throne (Rev. i. 4; iv. 5), seven Candlesticks (i. 13), seven Women in Isaiah (iv. 1), seven Churches addressed in St. Paul's writings, seven Deacons (Acts vi. 3), seven Seals (Rev. v. 1), seven Trumpets (Rev. viii.), seven weeks ending at Pentecost (Lev. xxiii. 15), seventy weeks in Daniel (ix. 25), seven clean animals in the Ark (Gen. vii. 2), seven chastisements on Cain (Gen. iv. 15), seven years followed by a release of debt (Deut. xv. 1), seven Pillars in the House of Wisdom (Prov. xi. 1)." (*Victorin. de Fabricâ Mundi*.)

"Numero septenario Universæ Ecclesiæ significata est plenitudo: propter quod et Joannes Apostolus ad septem scribit Ecclesias, eo modo se ostendens ad unius plenitudinem scribere" (*S. Augustine*, de Civ. Dei xvii. 4).

St. John, in writing to Seven Churches of Asia, writes to all Churches of the world; and it has been observed by ancient Expositors (*Canon. Muratorian. ap. Routh*, R. S. iv. p. 2. *Victorinus. Cyprian*, de Exhort. Martyr. c. ii., and others), that the number of *Gentile Churches* to which St. Paul wrote Epistles is seven; and that what St. Paul wrote to them he wrote to all.

The Candlestick or *Lampstand* in the Temple had seven branches, i. e., three on each side and the shaft in the centre (Exod. xxv. 31, 32), and it was a figure of the Church fed by the Oil of Holy Scripture, and illuminating the World (see Zech. iv. 2, and below, i. 20, and especially xi. 4); whence *S. Irenæus* says, v. 20, that "the Church is the Seven-branched Lamp, holding the Light of Christ."

There are Seven Golden Candlesticks in the Apocalypse, and yet there was but one Seven-branched Golden Candlestick in the Temple, and in the visions of Zechariah. So there are particular Churches throughout the World; but all these together make One Church Universal; being fed with the same Oil of pure doctrine, and all constructed of the same pure material of fine gold.

Any one Candlestick may be removed (see on Rev. ii. 5), but the sevenfold unity is not disturbed by its removal. Any particular Church may fail, but the promise of Christ to the Church Universal is, that "the Gates of Hell shall never prevail against it" (Matt. xvi. 18).

— εἰς Ἐφεσον, κ.τ.λ.] *to Ephesus, and to Smyrna*. The Churches here mentioned are situated in a circular group (see v. 4), and are specified in the geographical order in which they would occur to the mind of a person writing from Patmos. See above, on 1 Pet. i. 1.

Some learned Modern Expositors (*Vitranga*, p. 31. *Venema*, p. 55. *Henry More*, p. 720, and others) regard the Seven Epistles as having a prophetic character, and as representing Seven successive states of the Christian Church in seven consecutive periods of time, dating from the Apostolic Age to the end.

But this is a notion which is not sanctioned by ancient Expositors, and seems to be unfounded.

It cannot be doubted that in writing to the Seven Churches St. John (as has been already observed) is writing to all; and that every Church of Christendom may see itself reflected in one or other of these Epistles. Indeed (as *Victorinus* says), in these seven Churches we see an image of the faithful of the whole Catholic Church. But the Epistles have an historical character (see ii. 6. 13. 15), and the arrangement of their order, as before said, appears to be geographical. Ephesus is fitly placed first, as being nearest to Patmos, and as being the Chief City and Church of Asia, where St. John himself lived and died.

— Σμύρναν] *Smyrna*: eight miles north of Ephesus. In Christian History it is celebrated as the Episcopal See of S. Polycarp, the scholar of St. John. See ii. 8-11. *Iren. ap. Euseb.*, iv. 14, 15. *Tertullian*, Præscr. § 32.

— Πέργαμον] *Pergamum*; rarely called Pergamus (*Strabo*, xiii. p. 924. *Winer*, ii. p. 224. *Trench*, on the Authorized Version, p. 44). But the Greek Expositors have ἡ Πέργαμος here (in *Caten.*, p. 208), and so *Diog. Laert.*, in Arcesida, iv. 30. It was in Mysia, on the Caycus. For further particulars concerning it, see on ii. 12.

— Θυάτειραν] So A, B, C.—*Elz.* has Θυάτεια. *Thyatira*, in Lydia, on the river Lycus; mentioned Acts xvi. 14.

— Σάρδεις] *Sardis*. The ancient capital of Cræsus and the Lydian Kings, on the river Pactolus, south of the plain beneath Mount Tmolus; the Episcopal see of Melito, in the second century. *Euseb.* iv. 13. 26; v. 24.

— Φιλαδέλφειαν] *Philadelphia*, in Lydia; deriving its name

1 Ezek. 1. 26.
Dan. 7. 13.
ch. 2. 1. & 14. 14.
& 15. 6.
m Dan. 7. 9.
ch. 19. 12.
n ch. 14. 2.
o Isa. 49. 2.
Eph. 6. 17.
Heb. 4. 12.
ver. 20.
ch. 2. 1, 12. & 3. 1.
& 19. 15, 21.
p Isa. 41. 4.
& 44. 6.
& 48. 12.
Dan. 8. 18.
& 10. 10.
ver. 11.
ch. 2. 8.

¹² Καὶ ἐπέστρεψα βλέπειν τὴν φωνὴν ἣτις ἐλάλει μετ' ἐμοῦ· καὶ ἐπιστρέψας εἶδον ἑπτὰ λυχνίας χρυσᾶς, ¹³ καὶ ἐν μέσῳ τῶν ἑπτὰ λυχνιῶν ὅμοιον Τίῳ ἀνθρώπου, ἐνδεδυμένον ποδήρη, καὶ περιεζωσμένον πρὸς τοῖς μαστοῖς ζώνην χρυσήν· ¹⁴ ἡ δὲ κεφαλὴ αὐτοῦ καὶ αἱ τρίχες λευκαὶ ὡς ἔριον λευκόν, ὡς χιών· καὶ οἱ ὀφθαλμοὶ αὐτοῦ ὡς φλόξ πυρὸς, ¹⁵ καὶ οἱ πόδες αὐτοῦ ὅμοιοι χαλκολιβάνῳ, ὡς ἐν καμίνῳ πεπυρωμένοι, καὶ ἡ φωνὴ αὐτοῦ ὡς φωνὴ ὑδάτων πολλῶν, καὶ ἔχων ἐν τῇ δεξιᾷ αὐτοῦ χειρὶ ἀστέρας ἑπτὰ, καὶ ἐκ τοῦ στόματος αὐτοῦ ῥομφαία δίστομος ὁξεία ἐκπορευομένη, καὶ ἡ ὄψις αὐτοῦ ὡς ὁ ἥλιος φαίνει ἐν τῇ δυνάμει αὐτοῦ.

¹⁷ Καὶ ὅτε εἶδον αὐτὸν ἔπεσα πρὸς τοὺς πόδας αὐτοῦ ὡς νεκρός· καὶ ἔθηκε

from Attalus Philadelphus, of Pergamus; at the foot of Mount Tmolus.

— Λαοδίκειαν] *Laodicea*, in Phrygia; called from *Laodice*, wife of Antiochus II., a celebrated commercial city, *Tacit. Ann.* xiv. 27; on the river Lycus, not far from Colossæ, see *Col. ii. 1*; iv. 14; it had a Chief Pastor, Archippus, in Apostolic times, *Col. iv. 16. Const. Apostol. viii. 47*; and a Bishop and Martyr, Sagaris, circ. A.D. 170. *Euseb. iv. 26*; v. 24.

¹² εἶδον ἑπτὰ λυχνίας χρυσᾶς] *I saw Seven Candlesticks* (or rather *Lamps*, or *Lampstands*) of Gold.

On the symbolic meaning of the number *Seven*, see below, note on xii. 19.

The word *Candlestick* has taken root in the English language as an emblem of a Church, and it seems almost impossible to eradicate it; but it must be borne in mind by the English reader that the word *Candlesticks* does not rightly represent those λυχναί, which were similar to the *Seven-branched λυχναί*, or *Lampstands*, which were to be kept continually burning in the *Levitical Tabernacle*, or *Temple* (*Exod. xxv. 31*; xxvii. 20. *Lev. xxiv. 1—4. 1 Kings vii. 49. Heb. ix. 1, 2*); and (as before observed, see v. 11) were fed with oil (cp. *Exod. xxvii. 20*) supplied through their branches, or tubes, into their bowls, and thus were very apt emblems of *Churches* (see v. 20), which have no independent light in themselves (as *Andreas* here observes), but are only vehicles (ὀχήματα) of light derived from above; being supplied by the Holy Spirit with a perennial stream of pure oil (see *Caten. pp. 194. 199*) flowing from the Word of God, and enabling them to enlighten the world—even the Angels of heaven—with the pure light of the Gospel (see *Eph. iii. 10*), and ever tended by Christ, and under him by the Christian Priesthood; as the *Seven-branched Lamp-stand* was tended by the Levites in the Temple. In like manner the Priests of the Church of Christ are bound to keep watch and ward by day and night, and to take good heed that the wicks of the Spiritual Lamp in the Christian Sanctuary are duly trimmed, and that the pipes are not clogged and obstructed by the clotted corruptions of unsound doctrine, and that the oil is not adulterated, and that the lights burn clearly; and they are responsible to Christ for the discharge of this duty, and He will remove their Candlestick if they neglect to perform it. See next note, and below on xi. 4.

¹³ καὶ ἐν μέσῳ τῶν ἑπτὰ λυχνιῶν] *and in the midst of the seven golden Lamps one like the Son of Man, clothed with a long garment, reaching down to His feet.* After ποδήρη the word χιτῶνα is to be understood. "One like the Son of Man," so Daniel describes Christ, *Dan. vii. 13*; x. 5. Christ is arrayed in a long garment, as the *High Priest* of the Church Universal. Compare *Ezek. ix. 2. 11*, and the description of the High Priest's robes in *Josephus*, *Ant. iii. 8. 4*; viii. 3. 8; xx. 1. 1, who uses the word ποδήρης, flowing to the feet, as applicable to the Sacred Vesture of the High Priest.

Christ is represented as walking in the midst of the Seven Golden Lamps (ii. 1), because, as the Priests in the Tabernacle and Temple lighted, and watched, and fed the Lamps (*Exod. xxvii. 20, 21*; xxxiv. 9. *Lev. xxiv. 2. 4*), so Christ observes the Churches of Christendom, which He illumines with the light of His Word, and feeds with the oil of His Spirit, and trims with His discipline, and guards with His care, and examines with His eye, whether they burn clearly with the luminous flame of true doctrine, and whether the liquid oil of the Spirit is corrupted with human admixtures, and the light of the lamp is dimmed with heresy, superstition, or unbelief.

— καὶ περιεζωσμένον] *and girded around at the breasts with a golden girdle.* This also is a sacerdotal attribute, showing that the Son of Man is here presented as the *High Priest* of the Church. Compare the language of *Josephus*, *Ant. iii. 7. 2*, concerning the girdle of the High Priest of the Levitical Dispensation; and see *Wetstein* here.

¹⁴ ἡ δὲ κεφαλὴ, κ.τ.λ.] *and His head and His hair white as white wool.* Here the same attributes are ascribed to Christ as are assigned to God by Daniel, vii. 9; x. 6. Cp. v. 8.

It is observed by *S. Irenæus* (iv. 20. 11), that the imagery by which Christ is here described represents His two Natures and His Sacerdotal Office. The Hair, white like wool, shows the holiness and glory of His Divinity; His attire displays His Priesthood; His feet of chalcob-libanum burning in a furnace represent His permanence, like the Bush in the Wilderness on fire, but not consumed (*Exod. iii. 2*); and the fire, adds *Irenæus*, may remind us of that conflagration with which He will execute Judgment at the end of the World.

¹⁵ οἱ πόδες αὐτοῦ ὅμοιοι χαλκολιβάνῳ] *and His feet like unto chalcob-libanus.* The etymology of the last word is doubtful; but inasmuch as the language of the Apocalypse coincides in many respects with that of Hebrew Prophecy, it is probably equivalent to the shining brass, or molten brass or copper, glowing in a state of incandescence and fusion, in *Dan. x. 6*, and *Ezek. i. 7. 13*. And this is confirmed by *Plin. N. H. xxxiv. 2*. The word occurs again, ii. 18.

It is rendered *aurichalcum*, or *orichalcum* (see *Cicero de Off. iii. 23. 12. Horat. Ars Poet. 202*), by the *Vulgate*, and is said by *Suidas* to be the same as *electrum*, which is a composite metal (*Plin. N. H. ix. 65*), made of gold and silver. See *Winer*, *R. W. B. ii. pp. 88, 89*, and it is rendered by some "brass from Libanus." (*Syr., Æthiop., Vatabl., Ebrard.*)

Some learned expositors (*Bochart, Grotius, Vitranga, Hengstenberg, Trench*) suppose that the word is compounded of χαλκός and the Hebrew לָבָן (*laban*), white; and that it signifies brass in a state of white heat.

If a conjecture of this kind is admissible, and if λιβάνος may be regarded as an adjective, a Greek root seems preferable to a Hebrew, and (as has been suggested by *Schwartz*, *Monum. Ingen. iv. 283*) it may perhaps come from λείβω, *liquo* (as στεγανός from στέγω, πιθανός from πείθω, and λιχανός from λείχω), and thus χαλκο-λίβανος may signify liquid or molten brass; and this would well suit the parallel places of the Old Testament and the context here, ὡς ἐν καμίνῳ πεπυρωμένοι, as heated in a furnace.

Or, the word may be derived from χαλκός, copper, and λίβανος, frankincense, and be a word similar to χρυσό-πρασος, and χρυσό-λίθος, and signify copper in a state of ignition, like frankincense when it is red-hot. Cp. *Andreas* and *Wetst.* here, and *Salmas. ad Solin. p. 810*.

¹⁶ καὶ ἐκ τ. στόματος] *and going out of His mouth a sharp two-edged sword*, the Word of God. *Tertullian* thus expounds it (c. *Marcion. iii. 14*), "the Apostle St. John, in the Apocalypse, describes a sword coming forth from the mouth of God, with two edges and sharp at the point, which is the Word of God, sharpened with the two edges of the two Testaments—the Law and the Gospel."

The judicial, punitive Power of God's Holy Word, as an instrument of His retributive Justice and indignation on the guilty, for their disobedience, is displayed in the Apocalypse in awful characters, see ii. 12. 16, and particularly xix. 15. 21. This attribute of God's Word is carefully to be observed, as serving to explain some Visions in this Book which would otherwise be obscure, and particularly xi. 3—6.

This imagery is also derived from the ancient Scriptures, *Isa. xi. 4*; xlix. 2. *Hos. vi. 5*; and is adopted by St. Paul, *Heb. iv. 12*. This sword of Christ is always called ῥομφαία in the Apocalypse (i. 16; ii. 12. 16; xix. 15. 21), never μάχαιρα, and perhaps this word may be chosen in order to express more clearly the terror of the Lord (2 *Cor. v. 11*), and of His Word to those who disobey Him.

¹⁷ καὶ ἔθηκε] *and He laid His right hand upon me*, as the Angel did on Daniel, viii. 18; x. 10.

τὴν δεξιὰν αὐτοῦ ἐπ' ἐμέ λέγων, Μὴ φοβοῦ, ἐγὼ εἰμι ὁ πρῶτος καὶ ὁ ἔσχατος,
 18^a καὶ ὁ ζῶν, καὶ ἐγενόμην νεκρὸς, καὶ ἰδὼν ζῶν εἰμι εἰς τοὺς αἰῶνας τῶν αἰώνων, q Job 12. 14.
Ps. 68. 21.
Isa. 22. 12.
Rom. 6. 9.
ch. 3. 7. & 20. 1.
r Mal. 2. 7.
ver. 16.
ch. 2. 1.
 καὶ ἔχω τὰς κλεῖς τοῦ θανάτου καὶ τοῦ ᾗδου. 19 Γράψον οὖν ἃ εἶδες, καὶ ἃ εἰσι,
 καὶ ἃ μέλλει γίνεσθαι μετὰ ταῦτα 20 τὸ μυστήριον τῶν ἑπτὰ ἀστέρων, ὧν
 εἶδες ἐπὶ τῆς δεξιᾶς μου, καὶ τὰς ἑπτὰ λυχνίας τὰς χρυσᾶς. Οἱ ἑπτὰ ἀστέρες
 ἄγγελοι τῶν ἑπτὰ ἐκκλησιῶν εἰσι· καὶ λυχνίαι αἱ ἑπτὰ ἑπτὰ ἐκκλησίαι εἰσί.

II. 1^a Τῷ ἀγγέλῳ τῆς ἐν Ἐφέσῳ ἐκκλησίας γράψον· Τάδε λέγει ὁ κρατῶν a ch. 1. 13, 20.

18. καὶ ἔχω τὰς κλεῖς] and I hold the Keys of Death and of Hades. Christ holds the Keys of Death, both of natural and spiritual Death; of natural Death, as He proved by raising the Dead, and by giving to His Apostles the power of raising the Dead, and by raising Himself from the Dead. See John v. 21.

He holds also the Keys of *Spiritual Death*. He quickens the soul, dead in trespasses and sins, by His Word and Sacraments (see on John v. 25); and as the appointed Judge of Quick and Dead, He will condemn the wicked at the Last Day, to that *spiritual death*, which is called in the Apocalypse the *Second Death*. See xx. 6. 14; xxi. 8. "For Hell itself is *secunda mors*, and is so termed by St. John." Bp. Andrewes, ii. 194.

He it is therefore "that openeth, and no man shutteth; and that shutteth, and no man openeth," iii. 7.

He has also the Keys of Hades—that is, of *ἡνεία*, *Scheol*, the region of disembodied spirits (see on Luke xvi. 23, and *Andreas* here), distinguished from *Hell*, *γέεννα*, or the Lake of Fire, which is the final abode of the reprobate (see xx. 10. 14, 15), and into which none are cast until the Day of Judgment.

Therefore the word *Ἅιδης* is not to be rendered *Hell*; we may adopt the word *Hades*, with *Hammond* and *Bp. Wilson*, pp. 700, 701, and others. See the notes in the American revised Version, pp. 86, 87, ed. 1854.

Our Lord used this Key on the Cross when He admitted the soul of the Penitent into *Paradise* (Luke xxiii. 43), and He will use it at the Great Day, when He will unlock the gates of *Hades*, and will call forth the Spirits of all men, and re-unite every soul to its own body, which He will raise from the grave (John v. 28); and summon all men in soul and body to His Judgment Seat, for their final doom of everlasting bliss or woe.

Elz. places τοῦ θανάτου before τοῦ Ἅιδου, but A, B, C place τοῦ θανάτου first; and so all the best Editions. This is the order of the words in all the other passages in which they occur in this book, see vi. 8; xx. 13, 14, and with good reason, because *Death* is the inlet of the soul into *Hades*.

19. καὶ ἃ εἰσι] and what they are. The word *εἰσι* here may signify what they mean; as is explained by what follows, "the seven stars are, i. e. they represent, the Angels of the Seven Churches; and the seven Lamps are, i. e. they represent, the Seven Churches." This interpretation is mentioned by *Arethas*, and is adopted by *Alcasar*, *Aretius*, *Launoi*, *Eichhorn*, *Herder*, *De Wette*, *Ewald*, and others.

St. John was not only admitted to see, and enabled to describe, the mysteries of the Spiritual World and of Futurity, but he was also empowered to explain them. Compare xvii. 9. 12. 15. 18, where the substantive verb *εἰμι* is used in this sense.

At the same time, in favour of the other interpretation (which is adopted by *A Lapide*, *Grotius*, *Vitranga*, *Bengel*, *Hengstenberg*, *Ehrard*, *Lücke*, *Düsterd.*, and our Authorized Version), "the things which are," it may be observed, that things present are described in the Seven Epistles (chaps. ii. and iii.), and there seems to be a designed contrast between "the things which are," and "the things which are about to come to pass," by which it is intimated that the present and future condition of the Churches are alike open to the eye of Christ.

20. ἄγγελοι] Angels of the Seven Churches. Angels, that is, their Chief Pastors, Bishops. The word *Angel*, or Messenger, had been applied to the Ministers of God, by ancient Prophecy. Cp. Mal. ii. 7. where see *S. Jerome*; cp. *Augustine*, Ep. xliii., *Epiphanius*, *Bede*, and *Aquinas* here; *Saravia*, de Minist. Eccles. p. 29; and *Ussher* on the Original of Bishops, p. 53; and *Bingham*, Antiquities, book ii. cap. ii. sect. 10, who says, "Hence, in after ages, Bishops were called *Angels* of the Churches." See below on ii. 1, and *Trench* here.

— λυχνίαι] The Seven Candlesticks—or rather Lamps—are Seven Churches. See on vv. 11, 12.

THE SEVEN EPISTLES TO THE SEVEN CHURCHES.

CH. II. 1. τῷ ἀγγέλῳ] To the Angel of the Church that is in *Ephesus*, write. Christ commands St. John to write to the Seven

Angels, as the Representatives of their several Churches. Thus Christ Himself recognizes that form of Church government in which one Person presides, as Chief Pastor, over a City and Diocese, such as that of *Ephesus*, which, as we know from Holy Scripture, particularly from St. Paul's address to the *Ephesian Presbyters* at *Miletus* (Acts xx. 17), and from his two Epistles to *Timothy*, the Bishop of *Ephesus*, contained within it many *Presbyters*. See above, the Introductory note on 1 Tim. iii., p. 433.

Tertullian (adv. Marcion. iv. 5) designates these Angels as *Bishops*. "Habemus Joannis alumnas Ecclesias; nam etsi Apocalypsin ejus Marcion respuit, ordo tamen *Episcoporum* ad originem recensitus in Joannem stabit auctorem." And *Aug.*? (see above, p. 163) says here, "Angeli non debent hic intelligi nisi *Episcopi*, aut *Præpositi Ecclesiarum*."

In these Epistles of the Apocalypse, Christ often blames the Angels of the Churches (see vv. 5. 14. 20; iii. 2. 17), but He never blames them for being Angels; that is, for occupying the chief place in their respective churches; which He certainly would have done, if such a pre-eminence in His Church had not been in accordance with His Will. See Matt. xx. 26. Luke xxii. 24–26.

On the contrary, Christ recognizes the Angels as the Heads and organs of their several Churches; and sends His Epistles to the several Churches, through them. He recognizes the Seven Angels as the official Representatives of the Seven Churches.

Besides,—what is very worthy of remark,—in the original Greek the various epithets (*dead, hot, cold, poor, rich, blind, naked*, and the like) which Christ uses in these two chapters to characterize the qualities and condition of these several Churches, do not agree in gender with the feminine word *Ἐκκλησία*, Church; but they agree with the masculine word *Ἄγγελος*, Angel. They are all masculine; not one of them is feminine. The address to the Churches is personal to their several Angels. As *Primasius* expresses it, "unam facit Angeli Ecclesiæque personam." He identifies him with it. The Bishop is regarded as "Persona Ecclesiæ" by the Chief Shepherd and Bishop of Souls (1 Pet. ii. 5). The Great Head of the Church lays on the Angels the failings of their Churches; and thereby He not only makes a practical recognition of Episcopal Authority, but also teaches a solemn lesson of Episcopal Responsibility.

This Scripture also supplies a sacred precedent, and divine direction, as to the size of *Dioceses*, and number of *Bishops*. The territory, in which these Seven Churches were situated, was not much larger in extent than that of some single modern Dioceses; and each great City had its Bishop (see i. 4). The practical application of this sacred precedent to our own Church and Country at this time deserves serious consideration.

— τῆς ἐν Ἐφέσῳ ἐκκλησίας] of the Church in *Ephesus*. He does not say "to the Angel of *Ephesus*," but to the Angel of the Church in *Ephesus*. Observe this title and style, which is employed by Christ in all His addresses to the Seven Angels of the Seven Churches. The Texts in v. 8, and in iii. 14, which seemed to offer exceptions to this rule, have been now restored from the best MSS.

This mode of address ought to regulate the language to be used by Christians toward Chief Pastors, and Cities, like those of *Ephesus*, *Smyrna*, &c. in the age of St. John, where the Civil Authorities are not yet Christian.

Accordingly, in the primitive writings of Apostolic men, the Church in a City is described as *παροικοῦσα*, that is, as *sojourning* in that City. Thus *S. Clement* (Ep. i.) says, "The Church of God that dwelleth at Rome" (ἡ παροικοῦσα Ῥώμην), to the Church of God that dwelleth at Corinth (τῇ παροικοῦσῃ Κόρινθον). Compare the language of St. John's scholar, *S. Ignatius*, at the commencement of his Epistles, e.g. ad *Ephes.*: "To the Church that is in *Ephesus*," (ad *Tralles*) "to the holy Church that is in *Tralles*."

The spiritual authority of Bishops flows from Christ alone. They are Chief Pastors of His Church, by virtue of their consecration to the Episcopal Office instituted by Him. But territorial titles are derived from God through the Power to which He has assigned dominion in this World, in which "He determines the

τοὺς ἑπτὰ ἀστέρας ἐν τῇ δεξιᾷ αὐτοῦ, ὁ περιπατῶν ἐν μέσῳ τῶν ἑπτὰ λυχνιῶν

bounds of habitation" (Acts xvii. 26). And when the Powers of this world become Christian, they exercise authority, in assigning the territorial limits within which the spiritual power, which is of divine origin and institution, is to be exercised. And when this is done, then the Bishop of the *Church in the City* becomes the *Bishop of the City* in which the *Church* is.

Thus, after the Empire became Christian, the Bishop of the Church in Ephesus became the *Bishop of Ephesus*, and he is so styled by Historians, Civil and Ecclesiastical. See *Hooker*, VIII. vii. *Abp. Bramhall*, i. p. 272. *Bp. Sanderson*, v. p. 157, and other authorities, quoted in *Theophilus Anglicanus*, pt. i. ch. xii. and pt. ii. ch. iii.

— ἐν Ἐφέσῳ] in *Ephesus*: the Metropolis of Asia (Acts ii. 9), and specially connected with St. John. See *Introduction* to his Gospel above, pp. 266, 267, and Rev. i. 11.

— Τὰδε λέγει] these things saith.

In proof of the exact symmetry and marvellous accuracy with which this divine book is written, it may be observed, that

(1) Each of the *Seven Epistles* is introduced with these words, "To the Church—write; These things saith;" and then a special title of CHRIST is introduced, suitable to the particular condition of the Church which is addressed in that particular Epistle.

(2) Each of the *Seven Epistles* then proceeds to proclaim the Divine Omniscience of CHRIST, and His ever-watchful observation of what is done in the Church. "I know thy works." See here, v. 2. 9. 13. 19; iii. 1. 8. 15.

(3) Each of the *Seven Epistles* contains the words, "He that hath an ear, let him hear what the Spirit saith unto the Churches;" marking the importance of the message; and that though it is addressed to one Church, it is designed for all: vv. 7. 11. 17. 29; iii. 6. 13. 22.

(4) The *Seven Epistles* are divided into two Parts, by the interweaving of two phrases in a remarkable manner;

The phrase concerning him "that overcometh," is placed first in the first three Epistles, and is placed last in the last four Epistles; and the phrase "He that hath an ear, let him hear what the Spirit saith unto the Churches," is placed first in the first three Epistles, and is placed last in the last four.

(5) All the Epistles contain some special warning or promise from Christ; and that warning or promise is appropriately adapted and adjusted to the attribute under which He presents Himself to each Church in succession. It is also accommodated to the special difficulties and dangers which have been overcome, or are to be overcome by that particular Church. Their respective adaptations to the attributes of Christ Himself may be seen as follows in one view.

(1) To *Ephesus*. Thus saith He that walketh amid the seven golden Lamps (v. 1), Repent, or I will remove thy Lamp (v. 5).

(2) To *Smyrna*. Thus saith the First and the Last who became dead, and rose again to life (v. 8), Be thou faithful unto death, and I will give thee the crown of life (v. 10).

(3) To *Pergamus*. Thus saith He that hath the sharp two-edged sword (v. 12), Repent, or I will fight against thee with the sword of My mouth (v. 16).

(4) To *Thyatira*. Thus saith the Son of God, Who hath His eyes like unto a flame of fire, and His feet like fine brass (v. 18), All shall know that I am He that searcheth reins and hearts (v. 23); that which ye have hold fast till I come (v. 25).

(5) To *Sardis*. Thus saith He that hath the Seven Spirits of God, and the Seven Stars (iii. 1), that is, Who governs the Angels in the Church in heaven, and upon the earth (see i. 4. 20), He that overcometh I will confess his name in the presence of My Father and of His Angels (iii. 5).

(6) To *Philadelphia*. Thus saith He that hath the key of David, Who openeth and no one shutteth (iii. 7), I have set before thee a door opened which no man can shut (iii. 8).

(7) To *Laodicea*. Thus saith the Amen, the faithful and true Witness (v. 14); and this Epistle contains a rebuke for lack of faithfulness and zeal in witnessing to the Faith: Because thou art neither cold nor hot I will vomit thee out of My mouth (v. 16).

There is, also, a gradual scale of ascent in the dignity and blessedness of Christ's promises to the several Churches. See below, on v. 7.

Such are some of the evidences of harmonious symmetry and elaborate accuracy in the composition of the Apocalypse.

S. Jerome well says (ad Paulin. Ep. 50), that the Apocalypse "has as many mysteries as words,—in verbis singulis multiplices latent intelligentiæ." And Henry More observes (v. 15), "that there never was a book penned with that artifice as this of the Apocalypse, as if every word were weighed in a balance before it was set down." These remarkable specimens of careful composition in its earlier chapters may have been designed to remind the reader, that every sentence of it is pregnant with meaning, and that in order to understand its Visions, the best method is to examine diligently every word of the Apocalypse.

— ὁ κρατῶν] He that holdeth the seven stars in His hand, who walketh in the midst of the seven golden Lamps. In the foregoing note it was observed, that each of the Seven Epistles is introduced with a recital of a particular title of Christ which has a special reference to the condition of the Church to which the Epistle is sent, and the warnings which it needs.

These several titles and their respective relations to the several Churches, will be here exhibited synoptically in one tabular view, which may help to bring out these points more clearly, and to keep them before the eye of the reader;

The Seven Epistles.

Ch. II. To Ephesus.	Ch. II. To Smyrna.	Ch. II. To Pergamos.	Ch. II. To Thyatira.	Ch. III. To Sardis.	Ch. III. To Philadelphia.	Ch. III. To Laodicea.
1. Unto the angel of the church in Ephesus write; These things saith he that holdeth the seven stars in his right hand, who walketh in the midst of the seven golden lamps; 2. I know thy works, and thy labour, and thy patience, and how thou canst not bear them which are evil: and thou hast tried them which say they are apostles, and are not, and hast found them liars: 3. And hast patience, and hast borne for my name's sake, and hast not fainted. 4. Nevertheless I have this against thee, that thou hast left thy first love. 5. Remember therefore whence thou art fallen, and repent, and do thy first works;	8. And unto the angel of the church in Smyrna write; These things saith the first and the last, which was dead, and is alive; 9. I know thy works, and tribulation, and poverty, (but thou art rich) and the blasphemy which thou bearest from them which say they are Jews, and are not, but the synagogue of Satan. 10. Fear not those things which thou shalt suffer: behold, now the devil will cast some of you into prison that ye may be tried; and ye shall have tribulation ten days: be thou faithful unto death, and I will give thee the crown of life.	12. And to the angel of the church in Pergamos write; These things saith he which hath the sharp sword with two edges; 13. I know thy works, and where thou dwellest, even where Satan's seat is: and thou holdest fast my name, and hast not denied my faith, in those days when Antipas was my faithful martyr, who was slain among you, where Satan dwelleth. 14. But I have a few things against thee, because thou hast there some that hold the doctrine of Balaam, who taught Balaam to cast a stumbling-block before the children of Israel, to eat things sacrificed unto idols, and to commit fornication. 15. So thou also hast some that hold the doctrine of the Nicolaitans, in like manner. 16. Repent therefore; or else I will come unto thee quick-	18. And unto the angel of the church in Thyatira write; These things saith the Son of God, who hath his eyes like unto a flame of fire, and his feet are like fine brass; 19. I know thy works, and charity, and service, and faith, and thy patience, and I know thy last works to be more than thy first. 20. Notwithstanding I have a few things against thee, because thou sufferest thy wife Jezebel, which calleth herself a prophetess; and she teacheth and seduceth my servants to commit fornication, and to eat things sacrificed unto idols. 21. And I gave her space to repent: and she will not repent of her fornication. 22. Behold, I cast her into a bed, and them that commit adultery with her into great tribulation, except they repent of their deeds. 23. And I will kill her children with death; and all the churches shall know that I am he which searcheth reins and hearts; and I will give unto every one of you according to	1. And unto the angel of the church in Sardis write; These things saith he that hath the seven Spirits of God, and the seven stars; I know thy works, that thou hast a name to live, and thou art dead. 2. Be watchful, and strengthen the things which remain, that were ready to die: for I have not found thy works perfect before my God. 3. Remember therefore how thou hast received and heard, and keep, and repent. If therefore thou shalt not watch, I will come on thee as a thief, and thou shalt not know what hour I will come upon thee. 4. But thou hast a few names in Sardis which have not	7. And to the angel of the church in Philadelphia write; These things saith he that is holy, he that is true, he that hath the key of David, he that openeth, and no man shutteth; and no man openeth; 8. I know thy works: behold, I have set before thee a door opened, which no man can shut: thou hast a little strength, and hast kept my word, and hast not denied my name. 9. Behold, I will make them of the synagogue of Satan, which say they are Jews, and are not, but do lie; behold, I will make them to come and worship before thy feet, and to know that I have loved thee. 10. Because thou hast kept the word of my patience, I also will keep thee from the hour of temptation, which shall come upon all	14. And unto the angel of the church in Laodicea write; These things saith the Amen, the faithful and true witness, the beginning of the creation of God; 15. I know thy works, that thou art neither cold nor hot: I would thou wert cold or hot. 16. So then because thou art lukewarm, and neither cold nor hot, I will spue thee out of my mouth. 17. Because thou sayest, I am rich, and increased with goods, and have need of nothing, and knowest not that thou art the wretched, one, and the miserable, and poor, and blind, and naked, 18. I counsel thee to buy of me gold tried in the fire, that thou mayest be rich; and white raiment, that thou mayest be clothed, and that the shame of thy nakedness do not appear; and to anoint thine eyes with eyesalve,

τῶν χρυσῶν. ² ^b Οἶδα τὰ ἔργα σου, καὶ τὸν κόπον σου καὶ τὴν ὑπομονήν σου, ^b ¹ John 4. 2. ^{vv} 9, 13, 19. καὶ ὅτι οὐ δύνη βαστάσαι κακοὺς· καὶ ἐπείρασας τοὺς λέγοντας ἑαυτοὺς ἀποστόλους εἶναι, καὶ οὐκ εἰσὶ, καὶ εὗρες αὐτοὺς ψευδεῖς, ³ καὶ ὑπομονήν ἔχεις, καὶ ἐβάστασας διὰ τὸ ὄνομά μου, καὶ οὐκ ἐκοπίασας. ⁴ Ἀλλὰ ἔχω κατὰ σοῦ, ὅτι τὴν ἀγάπην σου τὴν πρώτην ἀφῆκας. ⁵ Μνημόνευε οὖν πόθεν πέπτωκας, καὶ μετανόησον, καὶ τὰ πρῶτα ἔργα ποίησον· εἰ δὲ μὴ, ἔρχομαί σοι ταχύ καὶ κινήσω τὴν λυχνίαν σου ἐκ τοῦ τόπου αὐτῆς, ἐὰν μὴ μετανόησῃς. ⁶ ^c Ἀλλὰ ^c ver. 15.

To Ephesus.	To Smyrna.	To Pergamos.	To Thyatira.	To Sardis.	To Philadelphia.	To Laodicea.
orelse I will come unto thee quickly, and will remove thy lamp out of his place, except thou repent. 6 But this thou hast, that thou hatest the deeds of the Nicolaitans, which I also hate.		ly, and will fight against them with the sword of my mouth.	your works. 24 But unto you I say, that is, unto the rest in Thyatira, as many as have not this doctrine, and which have not known the depths of Satan, as they say, I cast not upon you any other burden. 25 But that which ye have hold fast till I am come.	defiled their garments; and they shall walk with me in white; for they are worthy.	the world, to try them that dwell upon the earth. 11 Behold, I come quickly: hold that fast which thou hast, that no man take thy crown.	that thou mayest see. 19 As many as I love, I rebuke and chasten: be zealous therefore, and repent. 20 Behold, I stand at the door, and knock: if any man hear my voice, and open the door, I will come in to him, and will sup with him, and he with me.
7 He that hath an ear, let him hear what the Spirit saith unto the churches;	11 He that hath an ear, let him hear what the Spirit saith unto the churches;	17 He that hath an ear, let him hear what the Spirit saith unto the churches;	26 And he that overcometh, and keepeth my works unto the end, to him will I give power over the nations: 27 And he shall rule them with a rod of iron, as the vessels of a potter are broken to shivers: even as I received of my Father. 28 And I will give him the morning star.	5 He that overcometh, the same shall be clothed in white raiment; and I will not blot out his name out of the book of life, but I will confess his name before my Father, and before his angels.	12 Him that overcometh will I make a pillar in the temple of my God, and he shall go no more out: and I will write upon him the name of my God, and the name of the city of my God, which is the new Jerusalem, which cometh down out of heaven from my God: and my new name.	21 To him that overcometh will I grant to sit with me in my throne, even as I also overcame, and am set down with my Father in his throne.
To him that overcometh will I give to eat of the tree of life, which is in the midst of the paradise of my God.	He that overcometh shall not be hurt of the second death.	To him that overcometh will I give of the hidden manna, and will give him a white stone, and on the stone a new name written, which no man knoweth saving he that receiveth it.	29 He that hath an ear, let him hear what the Spirit saith unto the churches.	6 He that hath an ear, let him hear what the Spirit saith unto the churches.	13 He that hath an ear, let him hear what the Spirit saith unto the churches.	22 He that hath an ear, let him hear what the Spirit saith unto the churches.

2. τὸν κόπον σου] *thy labour*—active energy: see 1 Thess. ii. 9, and he adds—

— καὶ τὴν ὑπομονήν σου] *and thy patience*,—a lesson to Pastors and Churches. The Angel is praised because he *unites active toil (κόπον) with patient endurance*; and because he exercises godly discipline in the correction of errors, and yet practises Christian forbearance towards the erring. See v. 4. Cp. 1 Thess. v. 14. Gal. vi. 2, and here, on v. 1.

— καὶ ἐπείρασας] *and thou didst try* (cp. 2 Cor. xiii. 5) *them who call themselves Apostles and are not*. Cp. 2 Cor. xi. 13. St. Paul had predicted the rise of false teachers among the Pastors of Ephesus (Acts xx. 30), and had warned the Ephesian Presbyters against them. And St. John, who warns his hearers to *try* the Spirits (1 John iv. 1), had condemned an Asiatic Presbyter for personating the Apostle St. Paul, by a writing published in his name. *Tertullian*, de Bapt. 17. *S. Jerome*, Scr. Eccl. 7.

The word εἶναι after ἀποστόλους is not in N, nor in A, C.

3. καὶ ὑπ. ἔ.] N adds here καὶ θλίψεις πάσας, a remarkable reading.

— καὶ ἐβάστασας] *and thou didst bear them, and hast patience*. “Bear ye (βαστάετε) one another’s burdens,” says St. Paul (Gal. vi. 2, see note); and “Bear (βάσταζε) all men (writes one Apostolic Bishop and disciple of St. John to another), as the Lord beareth thee, forbear all in love; bear (βάσταζε) the infirmities of all, as a complete athlete; the more the pain, the more the gain;” *ἔπον πλεῖων κόπος, πλεον κέρδος*. *S. Ignatius*, Epist. to S. Polycarp, chap. i.

— οὐκ ἐκοπίασας] *and thou didst not faint*. This is the reading of N and B and numerous Cursives; A, C have οὐ κεκοπίηκες. The sense is, “Novi laborem tuum; non tamen laboras” (*Bengel*). Thou toilest, but dost not feel the toil; such is thy patience.

4. τὴν ἀγάπην σου τὴν πρώτην ἀφῆκας] *thou hast left thy first love*; “the kindness of thy youth, the love of thy espousals” (Jer. ii. 2). The Church is addressed as a Bride (2 Cor. xi. 2. Cp. below, iii. 20, 21), and she is reproved for having abated the fervour of her early love to God, and to man in God (see 1 John iv. 7); that love, which she had shown by patience and long-suffering for His name’s sake, toward weak brethren. See *S. Augustine*, Epist. 41, vol. ii. p. 146.

This expression bespeaks a later date for the Apocalypse than the age of Nero, and confirms the ancient opinion that it was written in the time of Domitian. See *Introduction*.

5. μετανόησον] *repent*. From such passages as these the Ancient Fathers contended for the efficacy of *Repentance* after deadly sin, against the *Novatians* and others. See *S. Cyprian*, Epist. 52, and *S. Jerome* (contra Lucif. tom. iv. p. 304), who says, “The Angel of Ephesus is charged (in the Apocalypse) with having left his first love: the Angel of Pergamus is censured for eating things offered to idols: the Angel of Thyatira is blamed for suffering a Jezebel to teach. And yet Christ calls all these to *repentance*; which He would not have done, if He would not pardon them when penitent.” Cp. note above, on Acts viii. 22. Heb. iv. 5.

— ταχύ] Not in A, C, but in B.

— κινήσω τὴν λυχνίαν] *I will remove thy candlestick*; or rather thy *Lamp*. See i. 12, and *Introduction*, p. 153. However, in consequence of the common use of the word *candlestick* as a translation of the Apocalyptic λυχνία, we can hardly refrain from adopting it. The reader will recollect its meaning.

I will remove thy Candlestick. A remarkable expression, probably derived from the removal of the seven-branched Lamp from the Temple of Jerusalem, at the taking of the City by the Roman Conqueror, who carried it in triumphal procession to Rome; where it may still be seen at this day, engraved on the Arch of Titus, amid other trophies of his victory over the Jews.

I will remove thy Candlestick. This warning declares an important doctrinal truth. Any particular candlestick may be removed; that is, any one Church may fail, even though it have been founded by Apostles themselves, and be under their rule. But the light of the whole Catholic Church will never be extinct, because Christ, Who is the Light of the World, is ever walking in the midst of the Candlesticks, and has promised to be with His Church always, even to the end of the world (Matt. xxviii. 20), and to send the Holy Ghost to abide with her for ever (John xiv. 16; xvi. 13), and He has said that the “Gates of Hell shall not prevail against His Church” (Matt. xvi. 18); and she is called by St. Paul “the pillar and ground of the truth.” See 1 Tim. iii. 15.

Hence also we may infer, that though it cannot be said *a priori* that any Church will never err, and though it cannot be said that any man, or set of men in the Church, met in a Council or Synod, are infallible and will not err, yet we may say, and must say, that those doctrines which have been received as agreeable to God’s Word by the consent of the body of Christ or

d Matt. 11. 15.
& 13. 9.
Gen. 2. 9.
ch. 22. 2.

e Isa. 41. 4.
& 44. 6.
ch. 1. 8, 11, 17, 18.
f vv. 2, 13, 19.

τοῦτο εχεις, ὅτι μισεῖς τὰ ἔργα τῶν Νικολαιτῶν ἃ καὶ γὰρ μισῶ. ⁷ Ὁ ἔχων οὖς ἀκουσάτω τί τὸ Πνεῦμα λέγει ταῖς ἐκκλησίαις. Τῷ νικῶντι δώσω αὐτῷ φαγεῖν ἐκ τοῦ ξύλου τῆς ζωῆς, ὃ ἐστὶν ἐν τῷ παραδείσῳ τοῦ Θεοῦ μου.

⁸ Καὶ τῷ ἀγγέλῳ τῆς ἐν Σμύρνῃ ἐκκλησίας γράψον· Τάδε λέγει ὁ πρῶτος καὶ ὁ ἔσχατος, ὃς ἐγένετο νεκρὸς, καὶ ἔζησεν. ⁹ Οἶδά σου τὰ ἔργα, καὶ τὴν θλιψιν καὶ τὴν πτωχείαν, ἀλλὰ πλούσιος εἶ, καὶ τὴν βλασφημίαν ἐκ τῶν λεγόντων Ἰουδαίους εἶναι ἑαυτοὺς καὶ οὐκ εἰσὶν, ἀλλὰ συναγωγὴ τοῦ Σατανᾶ.

Church *Universal*,—such as are the doctrines contained in the Creeds,—are not erroneous, but true, and are most surely to be believed. See above, on Acts xv. 7.

Further, we may hence conclude, that whatever doctrine may be shown to have been *unknown to*, or *opposed by*, the Churches of Christendom in the first ages of Christianity, is *not true*, but *false*; and is not to be imposed upon any one as an article of Faith. See above, Gal. i. 8, 9. Jude 3.

6. μισεῖς τὰ ἔργα τῶν Νικολαιτῶν] *thou hatest the works of the Nicolaitans, which I also hate.* Cp. ii. 15. The Nicolaitans are described by *S. Irenæus* (i. 26), the scholar of Polycarp, the disciple of St. John, as deriving their name from *Nicolas*, one of the seven Deacons (Acts vi. 5), and as living in a dissolute and licentious state, “nullam differentiam esse docentes in mœchando et idolothytton edere;” and by *S. Hippolytus*, the scholar of Irenæus, in his recently discovered treatise, *Refut. hæres.* p. 259, ed. *Miller*. Both these authors refer to the Apocalypse. The Nicolaitans are also described by *S. Clement* (Strom. ii. 20, and iii. 4); by *Victorinus* here, *S. Hieron.* (c. Lucif. c. 43), and *S. Epiphani.* (hær. 25), *S. Augustin.* (hær. § 5); *Andreas* here, and p. 209 in *Catenâ*.

S. Clement, however, with some others of the Fathers, denies that *Nicolas* himself was responsible for their tenets and practices. Cp. *Ittig*, de *Hæresiarchis*, cap. ix. p. 87. *Tillemont*, *Mémoires*, ii. p. 19. *Oehler*, *Corpus Hæres.* p. 37. *Dr. Burton's* *Bampton Lectures*, pp. 152—155.

The Nicolaitans did indeed teach some of the doctrines of *Balaam* (ii. 14), but there seems no reason to believe that their name is derived from *Νικόλαος*, a Greek form of *Balaam*, Hebrew *בִּלְעָם*. *Bileam* = *absorbens populum*, or *victor populi* = *Νικό-λαος*, as is supposed by some, e. g. *Cocceius* (apud *Ittig*, p. 92), *Hermann*, *Vitringa*, *Wetstein*, *Eichhorn*, in *Rev.* i. p. 74; *Rosenmüller*, *Rev.* ii. 6; *Herder*, and others. See *Düsterdieck*, p. 141. *Gieseler*, *Church Hist.* i. 1, § 29.

The divine declaration, “*which I also hate*,” is a warning from Christ that He marks what is done in the Churches; He knows their works, see on v. 1, and will deal with them accordingly.

Observe, Christ praises the Angel for hating the *works* (not the *persons* of these heretics). True Christian Charity “*amat errantes, odit errores*.” Even the ancient heathen poet could say, “*Pacem cum hominibus, bellum cum vitiis habet*.” (*Publ. Syr.*)

7. ταῖς ἐκκλησίαις] *to the Churches.* This sentence, repeated seven times (see v. 1), proclaims that what the Spirit says here to any one Church, is said by Him to *all* the Churches of the world. See on v. 1, p. 172.

— τῷ νικῶντι] *to him that overcometh.* Another phrase repeated seven times: declaring that every Church will be assaulted by enemies, and will be tried by difficulties and dangers, and must therefore watch and pray; and have its eye fixed on Him Who is represented in the Apocalypse, going forth as a conqueror, “*overcoming and to overcome*” (vi. 2), and Who enables His soldiers to overcome (xii. 11), and will reward all who overcome (ii. 7. 11. 17. 26; iii. 5. 12. 21); see the tabular view of the Epistles, p. 172.

— τῷ νικῶντι δώσω αὐτῷ] *To him that overcometh, I will grant to him to eat of the tree of life, which is in the Paradise of my God.* The addition of the pronoun αὐτῷ after the dative νικῶντι, gives emphasis to the sentence. Cp. below, v. 17, and note on Matt. iii. 12, and 1 Pet. ii. 24.

The μου is in B and in many Versions and Cursives; not in A, C.

The language and imagery is from *Genesis*, ii. 9; iii. 22. Cp. *Ezek.* xxviii. 13. Christ the Second Adam promises more to his children than was given to the first Adam. By the eating of the one tree (ξύλον = *ῥῥ*, *Gen.* ii. 9), which was in the midst of the garden, Adam lost the benefit and delight of the other tree—the tree of life. But Christ by dying on the tree (Acts v. 30; x. 39. Gal. iii. 13. 1 Pet. ii. 24) has delivered mankind from the penalty entailed upon them by the eating of the one, and has given them the promise of a joyful fruition of the other.

Observe the adaptation of the reward to the work done. If thou resistest the temptation to gratify the carnal appetite, which indulgence leads to *death* (Rom. viii. 6. 13), and to eat of dainties offered to idols, and so overcomest the Tempter, I will give to thee to eat of the tree of life.

There is a gradual scale of ascent in the dignity and blessedness of the promises made by Christ in these seven Epistles to them that overcome.

They may conveniently be placed here together before the eye of the reader. Cp. above on v. 1, and the tabular view, pp. 172, 173.

(1) The first step in the heavenly ladder is here in the first Epistle; I will give him to eat of the Tree of Life, which is in the Paradise of My God.

Paradise is the abode of the departed Spirits of the righteous (see on Luke xxiii. 43, and on 2 Cor. xii. 4). And the first promise is to the soul of him that overcometh; his soul on its dissolution from the body will be admitted into Paradise by Him Who has the Key of Hades, and will feed on the Tree of Life in the midst of the spiritual Eden or Garden of delight.

(2) The second promise in the second Epistle (v. 11) to him that overcometh, relates to his body as well as his soul. He shall not be hurt by the second death. He shall be safe from that death—that everlasting death—to which the wicked will be condemned at the final Judgment, both in body and soul, in hell. See above, i. 18, and Matt. x. 28. Luke xii. 4; and below, xx. 14; xxi. 8.

(3) The third Epistle offers a higher degree of bliss to him that overcometh. I will give to him, says Christ, of the hidden manna, and a white stone, and on the stone a new name, which no man knoweth saving he that receiveth it (v. 17).

Here is a promise of intimate union with Christ, perfect remission of all guilt of sin, and of admission to the citizenship and joys of the heavenly Jerusalem—the everlasting abode of saints in glory; and to the fountain of the consummation of bliss, both in body and soul, for evermore. See on v. 17.

(4) The fourth Epistle offers a promise of still higher honour. He that overcometh and keepeth my works unto the end, to him will I give authority over the nations, and he shall rule them with a rod of iron; and I will give him the morning star (v. 28). Here is a pledge of glorious pre-eminence. See the note there, and above on Matt. x. 15. Luke xix. 17. 2 Cor. ix. 6.

(5) The fifth Epistle rises still higher. He that overcometh shall be clothed in white raiment, like the shining raiment of Christ Himself at the Transfiguration (Matt. xvii. 2. Mark ix. 3. Luke ix. 29), and like the bright raiment of the Angels (Mark xvi. 5. John xx. 12. Acts i. 10), and I will not blot out his name out of the book of life; I will confess his name before my Father, and before His Angels: he shall receive honour from Him Whose name is above every name. (Phil. ii. 9.)

(6) The sixth Epistle declares the everlasting state of felicity and glory of him that overcometh. I will make him to be a Pillar in the Temple of my God, and he shall go no more out. His happiness and honour shall be assured for Eternity, it shall stand fast as long as the heavenly Temple endureth in the New Jerusalem (iii. 12). He shall not only bear a new name, but I will write upon him the Name of My God, and the Name of the City of my God, and My own new Name.

(7) The seventh Epistle contains the consummation of all, enthronization in glory with Christ. To him that overcometh will I grant to sit with Me in My Throne, even as I also overcame and sat down with My Father in His Throne (iii. 21).

8. τῷ ἀγγέλῳ—Σμύρνῃ] *to the Angel of the Church that is in Smyrna*: perhaps *S. Polycarp*, the disciple of St. John, and martyr. See above, i. 11, and below, v. 10.

9. πλούσιος εἶ] *thou art rich*, in faith and good works. See James ii. 5. Cp. Matt. vi. 20. Luke xii. 21, and below, iii. 18.

— τὴν βλασφημίαν ἐκ τ. λ.] *the blasphemy which thou endurest from those who call themselves Jews, and are not, but a synagogue of Satan.*

The preposition ἐκ, which is omitted by *Elz.*, has been rightly restored from A, B, C, and is important to the sense.

¹⁰ ^g Μὴ φοβοῦ ἃ μέλλεις πάσχειν· ἰδοὺ δὴ μέλλει βαλεῖν ὁ Διάβολος ἐξ ὑμῶν εἰς φυλακὴν ἵνα πειρασθῇτε· καὶ ἔξετε θλίψιν ἡμερῶν δέκα. Γίνου πιστὸς ἄχρι θανάτου, καὶ δώσω σοι τὸν στέφανον τῆς ζωῆς. ¹¹ ^h Ὁ ἔχων οὖς ἀκουσάτω τί τὸ Πνεῦμα λέγει ταῖς ἐκκλησίαις· Ὁ νικῶν οὐ μὴ ἀδικηθῇ ἐκ τοῦ θανάτου τοῦ δευτέρου.

^g 1 Cor. 9. 25.
² Tim. 2. 5.
& 4. 7, 8.
James 1. 12.
^h Matt. 13. 9.
ver. 7.
ch. 20. 14.
& 21. 8.

¹² ⁱ Καὶ τῷ ἀγγέλῳ τῆς ἐν Περγάμῳ ἐκκλησίας γράψον· Τάδε λέγει ὁ ἔχων τὴν ῥομφαίαν τὴν δίστομον τὴν ὀξείαν. ¹³ Οἶδα τὰ ἔργα σου, καὶ ποῦ κατοικεῖς, ὅπου ὁ θρόνος τοῦ Σατανᾶ· καὶ κρατεῖς τὸ ὄνομά μου, καὶ οὐκ ἠρνήσω τὴν πίστιν μου καὶ ἐν ταῖς ἡμέραις αἷς Ἀντίπας ὁ μάρτυς μου ὁ πιστὸς μου, ὃς ἀπεκτάνθη παρ' ὑμῖν, ὅπου ὁ Σατανᾶς κατοικεῖ. ¹⁴ ^j Ἀλλὰ ἔχω κατὰ σοῦ ὀλίγα, ὅτι ἔχεις ἐκεῖ κρατοῦντας τὴν διδαχὴν Βαλαὰμ, ὃς ἐδίδασκεν τῷ Βαλὰκ βαλεῖν

ⁱ ch. 1. 16.
ver. 16.

^j Num. 24. 14.
& 25. 1. & 31. 16.

This reference to the Jews in the Epistle to Smyrna is illustrated by the ancient Epistle of the Church of Smyrna, describing the Martyrdom of the Bishop of Smyrna, Polycarp, St. John's own disciple, who may have been the Angel to whom this Apocalyptic Epistle is addressed. See the authorities in Jacobson, Patr. Apost. i. p. lvi. According to Bp. Pearson's calculations, S. Polycarp suffered martyrdom A.D. 147, and he declared in his address to the Proconsul that he had been a Christian for 86 years. See there cap. 9, p. 606, and the note of Abp. Ussher; and Ribera, Alcasar, Corn. à Lapide, and Hengstenberg here.

The ancient Smyrnan Epistle just noticed relates, that the Jews were specially eager in hastening the death of Polycarp, by collecting wood for his martyrdom by fire (Martyr. Polyc. § 13, p. 617, ed. Jacobson), and even after he had been burnt, the Jews tried to hinder the Christians from gathering up his remains for burial (Ibid. c. 17, 18, pp. 630, 631).

On the phrase "who call themselves Jews, but are not Jews, but a synagogue of Satan," cp. below, iii. 7. 9. 12; and Andreas here, who says well that a Jew, according to the etymology of the name (from ἱουδαῖος, *laudavit*), is properly one who confesses and praises the true God. (Cp. Gen. xxix. 35.) True Jews are they who believe in Christ; and, therefore, they who do not confess Him, are not worthy to be called Jews, but by their blasphemy against Him they prove themselves to be a Synagogue of Satan.

10. μὴ φοβοῦ] *fear not*; so A, B, C, but X has μηδὲν φ., *fear nothing*, and so most Cursives.

— δὴ] *already*—an important word; omitted by Elz., but restored from the best MSS., and preparing the Church for impending persecution.

— μέλλει βαλεῖν ὁ Διάβολος ἐξ ὑμῶν εἰς φυλακὴν] *the Devil is about to cast some of you into prison, that ye may be tried*. Thus Christ declares that the instigator of the persecutions against His Church is the Devil, the false accuser. Compare above on 1 Pet. v. 8, and below on vi. 3, 4. And it is observable that the aforesaid Epistle of the Smyrnan Church, describing the martyrdom of their Bishop, S. Polycarp, appears to have treasured up this language, addressed to itself by Christ. It thus speaks (c. 3); "The Devil devised many things against them (the Martyrs), but, thanks be to God, did not prevail over them all:" a sentence which shows that he did prevail over some, and illustrates the language of the Apocalypse here, and declares the fortitude of those who overcame him.

— θλίψιν ἡμερῶν δέκα] *a persecution of ten days*. B has ἡμέρας. Some ancient Expositors suppose that the phrase *ten days* is used here as a symbolical formula denoting "a few days," a "little while." See Arethas here; and this mode of speech seems to be authorized by Hebrew use, see Gen. xxiv. 55. Num. xi. 19. Dan. i. 12. 14, and Wetstein, note, p. 755, who quotes Terent. Heautont. v. 1. 36, "*decem dierum vix mihi est familia*."

Perhaps, however, the prediction may be interpreted literally. In the Asiatic Cities, such as Smyrna, Persecutions often broke out at particular seasons, especially at the celebration of the Heathen Games. Such was the persecution at Smyrna, in which Polycarp suffered, which was prolonged beyond the days appointed for the games; and perhaps it raged for *ten days*. See Martyr. Polycarp. c. 12; comp. c. 3.

— γίνου πιστὸς] *Become thou faithful unto death, and I will give thee the crown of life*. He says γίνου, *become*, because He is speaking of something future; and new measures of faith will be requisite to encounter the coming trial. "Polycarp by his patience," says the Epistle of the Church of Smyrna, c. 19, p. 632, "overcame the unrighteous ruler, and received the crown of Immortality."

These and other particulars in that Epistle (see last note but

one) show that the Apocalypse was known to the Church of Smyrna, and that the language addressed to it by Christ comforted it in persecution; and if we had other similar letters from the other seven Churches of Asia, we should probably see similar evidence in them. Evidence which is extant in another case may be seen below, iii. 8.

— τὸν στέφανον τῆς ζωῆς] *the crown of life*. Cp. 2 Tim. ii. 5; iv. 7, 8. 1 Cor. ix. 24, 25. Phil. iii. 14; below, iii. 11.

11. τοῦ θανάτου τοῦ δευτέρου] *the second death*, everlasting misery both of body and soul in hell (Victorinus). See above on i. 18. This term, *the second death*, was used by Hebrew writers, describing the woe of the wicked in the world to come. See the Rabbinical authorities cited by Wetstein, p. 756, and below, xx. 6.

The promise here is, that though their bodies may be killed by violence, yet they will not be hurt by *that* death which is really death (Matt. x. 28); but by being faithful unto death, they will by death gain a crown of life.

12. ἐν Περγάμῳ] *at Pergamum*. See i. 11.

13. ποῦ κατοικεῖς, ὅπου ὁ θρόνος τοῦ Σατανᾶ] *where thou dwellest, namely, where the throne of Satan is*. On the construction, see Winer, § 65, p. 539. Thus Christ declares Idolatry to be a work of Satan. Pergamum was noted for its idol-worship (Andreas), particularly for the worship of Æsculapius, whose emblem the serpent was, and who is so represented on the coins of Pergamum, and is called "Pergameus Deus." Martial, ix. 17. Cp. Tacit. Ann. iii. 63. See Wetstein, p. 756. Pergamum had become the property of Rome by bequest from its childless king, Attalus. Hor., 1 Od. i. 12; 2 Od. xviii. 5.

— καὶ οὐκ ἠρνήσω κ.τ.λ.] *and thou didst not deny the faith in Me, even in those days of persecution in which was Antipas, that faithful Martyr of Mine*.

Antipas was martyred at Pergamum (see Tertull. Scorpiace, cap. 12) in the persecution under Domitian, according to the Acts which describe his death; which, in part at least, are of a later date, but probably have an historical foundation. See Andreas here, and Tillemont, ii. 244. His day in the Greek and Roman Martyrologies is April 11.

Eusebius (iv. 15), after describing the martyrdom of S. Polycarp at Smyrna, mentions the martyrdom of Carpus, Papyrus, and Agathonice, at Pergamum.

There are some varieties in the text here: καὶ after μου is not in B, but it is in A, C; ἐν αἷς is in Elz., but αἷς is not in A, C; X has ἐν τ. ἢ ἐν ταῖς, but the second ταῖς has been corrected into αἷς; αἷς is in B, and retained by Tisch., who reads καὶ ἐν ταῖς ἡμέραις αἷς Ἀντίπας ὁ μάρτυς μου ὁ πιστὸς μου (X and B omit the second μου, but it is in A, C), ὃς ἀπεκτάνθη. Antipas (= Antipater, see above, Introd. to St. Luke, p. 157) is called the faithful Martyr (μάρτυς) by Christ, Who is "the faithful Martyr" (i. 5; iii. 14). And Stephen is called God's Martyr by St. Paul (Acts xxii. 20); thus the word μάρτυς (witness) has been consecrated by God the Son, and God the Holy Ghost, to describe the witness of those who remain faithful unto death, and seal their testimony with their blood.

14. τὴν διδαχὴν Βαλαὰμ] *the doctrine of Balaam*. Num. xxv. 1—3; xxxi. 16. See above, v. 6, and 2 Pet. ii. 15. Jude 11. This doctrine, which St. Peter and St. Jude had seen in its first rising, had now, in the time of the Apocalypse, brought forth its bitter fruits, in carnal sensuality and recklessness. Cp. Introduction, p. 158.

— τῷ Βαλὰκ] *to Balak*. On the dative case, suggested by the Hebrew בָּ, see Winer, § 32, p. 203, and Ewald, De Wette here. Cp. Job xxi. 22. The counsel of Balaam to Balak was to entice the Israelites to harlotry, and to the lustful and idolatrous worship of Baal-Peor, by means of the women of Moab and Midian. See Num. xxv. 1—3, and xxxi. 16. 1 Cor. x. 8. Joseph. Antiq. iv. 6. 6.

k Isa. 11. 4.
& 49. 2.
Eph. 6. 17.
2 Thess. 2. 8.
Heb. 4. 12.
ch. 1. 16.
& 19. 15, 21.
1 Matt. 13. 9.
vv. 7, 11.
ch. 3. 12.

σκάνδαλον ἐνώπιον τῶν υἱῶν Ἰσραὴλ, φαγεῖν εἰδωλόθута καὶ πορνεῦσαι·
15 οὕτως ἔχεις καὶ σὺ κρατοῦντας τὴν διδαχὴν Νικολαϊτῶν ὁμοίως. 16 ^k Μετα-
νόησον οὖν· εἰ δὲ μὴ, ἔρχομαί σοι ταχὺ, καὶ πολεμήσω μετ' αὐτῶν ἐν τῇ
ρομφαίᾳ τοῦ στόματός μου. 17 ^l Ὁ ἔχων οὖς ἀκουσάτω τί τὸ Πνεῦμα λέγει
ταῖς ἐκκλησίαις· Τῷ νικῶντι δώσω αὐτῷ τοῦ μάννα τοῦ κεκρυμμένου, καὶ δώσω
αὐτῷ ψῆφον λευκὴν, καὶ ἐπὶ τὴν ψῆφον ὄνομα καινὸν γεγραμμένον, ὃ οὐδεὶς
οἶδεν εἰ μὴ ὁ λαμβάνων.

m ch. 1. 14, 15.

18 ^m Καὶ τῷ ἀγγέλῳ τῆς ἐν Θυατείροις ἐκκλησίας γράψον· Τάδε λέγει ὁ Υἱὸς
τοῦ Θεοῦ, ὁ ἔχων τοὺς ὀφθαλμοὺς αὐτοῦ ὡς φλόγα πυρὸς, καὶ οἱ πόδες αὐτοῦ
ὅμοιοι χαλκολιβάνῳ. 19 Οἶδά σου τὰ ἔργα, καὶ τὴν ἀγάπην καὶ τὴν διακονίαν,
καὶ τὴν πίστιν καὶ τὴν ὑπομονὴν σου, καὶ τὰ ἔργα σου τὰ ἔσχατα πλείονα τῶν
πρώτων. 20 ⁿ Ἀλλὰ ἔχω κατὰ σοῦ ὅτι ἀφεῖς τὴν γυναῖκα σου Ἰεζαβὲλ, ἣ λέ-
γουσα ἑαυτὴν προφῆτιν καὶ διδάσκει καὶ πλανᾷ τοὺς ἐμούς δούλους πορνεῦσαι
καὶ φαγεῖν εἰδωλόθута. 21 Καὶ ἔδωκα αὐτῇ χρόνον ἵνα μετανοήσῃ· καὶ οὐ

n 1 Kings 16. 31.
2 Kings 9. 7.
Acts 15. 20.
1 Cor. 10. 19, 20.

15. ὁμοίως] *likewise*. So A, B, C, and Griesb., Scholz, Lach., Tisch.—Elz. has ὁ μισῶ, with many Cursives, and some Versions and Fathers. See v. 6. Perhaps the true reading is ὁ μισῶ ὁμοίως; or ὁμοίως, ὁ μισῶ, *likewise, which I hate*; and one of the readings, ὁμοίως, may have been absorbed into the other, ὁ μισῶ, or *vice versa*, by reason of the similarity of the words.

16. ἐν τῇ ρομφαίᾳ] *with the sword of My mouth*—as Balaam was resisted by the sword of the Angel (Num. xxii. 23), and was slain by the sword of Israel (Num. xxxi. 8). *Vitringa*.

17. τῷ νικῶντι κ.τ.λ.] *to him that overcometh, I will give to him of the manna that is hidden*—pure, holy, heavenly food, contrasted with the polluted meats offered to idols. Christ is the manna on which His people, the true Israel, feed: He “is the living Bread that came down from heaven; and they who eat of this bread shall never die.” (John vi. 49—58.) He was therefore typified by the manna, as He Himself declared in His discourse at Capernaum, where He taught the necessity of communion with Himself, as the source of life to the world. (See on John vi., and at end of the chapter, and 1 Cor. x. 3.) The manna which is here promised is *hidden*, because the life of the true Israelites is “*hid with Christ in God*.” (Col. iii. 3.) They are dead to the world, and buried with Him in Baptism (Rom. vi. 4. Col. ii. 12); and are raised together with Him, and have their conversation or citizenship in heaven (Phil. iii. 20); and are *unknown* to the world (2 Cor. vi. 9); and are strangers and pilgrims upon earth (1 Pet. ii. 11); but they ever dwell in Christ, and He in them, and live in the light of His countenance; and “the world knoweth them not, because it knew Him not.” (1 John iii. 1.) And as the Manna was enshrined in the Holy of Holies, and *hidden* from the public view (Exod. xvi. 33, 34. Heb. ix. 4), so He is hid from those who believe not, because the God of this world has blinded their eyes. (2 Cor. iv. 3, 4.) And even to the faithful the plenitude of their joy is not yet revealed; “Eye hath not seen it” (1 Cor. ii. 9), but it will be manifested in the Revelation of Christ, 1 John iii. 2.

— καὶ δώσω αὐτῷ ψῆφον λευκὴν] *and I will give to him a white stone*. In the Apocalypse *white* (λευκός, *lucidus, candidus*) is the colour appropriated to Christ (see below, vi. 1, 2). This consideration, together with the uses made of ψῆφοι, *calculi*, by the ancients, may serve to explain the meaning here. In ancient Courts of Justice, the acquittal of the criminal was declared by a majority of *white stones*, cast into the judicial urn. *Ovid*, Met. xv. 41, “*Mos erat antiquus, niveis atrisque lapillis, His damnare reos, illis absolvere culpā*.” Christ, the Redeemer of the World, and Judge of Quick and Dead, will pronounce the acquittal of him that overcometh, at the Great Day of Assize. So *Victorinus*, *A Lapide*, *Vitringa*, *Wolf*, and others.

This *white stone* is not only a stone of *acquittal*, but it is a *tessera* of citizenship, and a passport of *admission* to the spiritual banquet of the life eternal in the heavenly Jerusalem. See next note. It is observable also that among the ancients joyful days were marked with *white stones*. *Pers.* Sat. ii. 1, “*Hunc, Macrine, diem numera meliore lapillo*.” *Plin.* Ep. vi. 11. 3, “*O diem notandum candidissimo calculo*!”

Some Expositors have excepted against the admission of these allusions, as foreign to the mind of the Apocalypse. But the Holy Spirit does not disdain such references as these. On the contrary, He loves to *Christianize* all things. See 1 Cor. ix. 24, 27. Phil. iii. 14. Heb. xii. 10, and above, v. 10, and James i. 12.

— καὶ ἐπὶ τὴν ψῆφον κ.τ.λ.] *and upon the stone* (observe the accusative case) *a new name written, which no man knoweth save he that receiveth it*.

Here is an allusion to other ancient customs, viz., to the practice of giving tokens (σύμβολα, *tesserae*), by which persons bound by ties of mutual hospitality might recognize one another and enjoy offices of friendship (see the authorities in *Dr. Smith's Dict.* in vv. “*Hospitium*” and “*Tessera*”), and also to the usage of giving and receiving tokens of admission to partake in public largesses and banquets. *Xiphilin.* Epitome Dion. p. 228. *Hermann*, G. K. F. Alterth. de Griechen, § 50, and so *Arethas*, *Grotius*, *Hammond*, *Heinrichs*.

The name which Christ will give is a *new name*, promised by ancient prophecy (Isa. lxii. 2; lxv. 15), but revealed under the Gospel by Him Who “maketh all things *new*” (xxi. 5), and admits to the *New Jerusalem* (iii. 12), and enables to sing the *new song* (see v. 9); and it is a name which Christ says that no one knows except the receiver, perhaps with an allusion to the practice above noticed, by which it was provided that no one could use the “*tessera hospitalitatis*,” except the party to whom it belonged, and because no one can enter Christ's presence by means of the merits of *others*: every one must give an account of himself to God, and be rewarded according to his own works (Rom. xiv. 12); and because no one can feel the joy of remission of sins, except he who “knows the plague of his own heart” (1 Kings viii. 38), and *whose* sins are not only remitted, but *covered* (James v. 20; cp. Ps. xxxii. 1; lxxxv. 2); and no one can feel the felicity of communion with Christ and admission to His table in heaven, except the saints who are admitted to enjoy those privileges, which to *evil* men would have no relish, because they have not the spiritual palate by which they are to be tasted. Compare what is said of Christ's Name, xix. 12.

Some Expositors have supposed that in the white stone and the new name written upon it, there is a reference to the incommunicable Name of God, which they say was written on the Urim contained within the breastplate of the High Priest. (Exod. xxxix. 9.) But there is no evidence to show that any name was written on the Urim (cp. *Michaelis* in *Jahn*, Archæol. § 369). If there is any reference to the pectoral of the High Priest, it would seem more probable that the allusion is to the gems upon that pectoral, on which the names of the twelve tribes were written; and then the new name would be the name of the true Israel, the citizen of the *new Jerusalem*. See iii. 12.

20. ἀλλὰ ἔχω κατὰ σοῦ ὅτι ἀφεῖς κ.τ.λ.] *But I have this against thee, that thou sufferest thy wife Jezebel, who calleth herself a prophetess, and both teacheth and perverteth My servants to commit fornication, and to eat things offered to Idols*.

As to the reading of this text here, ἀφεῖς is in A, B, C, and is a form authorized by the LXX, Exod. xxxii. 32. See *Winer*, G. G. p. 75. And τὴν γυναῖκά σου, *thy wife* (instead of *Elz.*, τὴν γυναῖκα, *the woman*), is found in A, B (not in N), and many Cursives, and in the Syriac Version, and in *Andreas* and *Arethas*, *Cyprian* and *Primasius*, and is received by *Scholz*, *Lach.*, and *Tischendorf*.

The reading *ἡ, who*, for *ἣ, the article*, is approved by *Winer*, p. 473, but *ἣ* is authorized by similar examples of abrupt constructions in i. 5; iii. 12; xiv. 12.

The heresy here reprehended is that of those who said that it was not necessary to *suffer martyrdom* for Christ; and that, provided men had knowledge (γνώσκω), there was no sin in *eating*

θέλει μετανοῆσαι ἐκ τῆς πορνείας αὐτῆς. ²² Ἰδοὺ βάλλω αὐτὴν εἰς κλίνην, καὶ τοὺς μοιχεύοντας μετ' αὐτῆς εἰς θλίψιν μεγάλην, ἕαν μὴ μετανοήσωσιν ἐκ τῶν ἔργων αὐτῆς. ²³ καὶ τὰ τέκνα αὐτῆς ἀποκτενῶ ἐν θανάτῳ, καὶ γνώσονται πᾶσαι αἱ ἐκκλησίαι, ὅτι ἐγώ εἰμι ὁ ἐρευνῶν νεφροὺς καὶ καρδίας, καὶ δώσω ὑμῖν

o 1 Sam. 16. 7.
1 Chron. 28. 9.
& 29. 17.
Ps. 7. 10.
& 32. 19. & 62. 13.
Jer. 11. 20.
& 17. 10.
Matt. 16. 27.
John 2. 24, 25.
Acts 1. 24. Rom. 2. 6. & 14. 12. 2 Cor. 5. 10. Gal. 6. 5. ch. 20. 12.

things offered to idols, and in complying with all the requirements of the Idolatrous Persecutors of the Church. Cp. *Iren.* i. 26. 3, and above, *Introduction* to the Second Epistle of St. Peter, pp. 79, 80, and 2 Pet. ii. 2.

But what is the meaning of *thy wife Jezebel*?

She is described as calling herself "a prophetess," and as having children, i. e. disciples. See the use of this word *τεκνία* in 2 John i. 4. 13. 3 John 4.

Doubtless a female false Teacher ("hæretica fœmina," says *Tertullian*, de Pudicit. c. 18) is here condemned, such as in the next age were Priscilla and Maximilla, the prophetesses of Montanus (*Euseb.* v. 14. 16. 18), and it is observable that Thyatira was infested by the ravages of Montanism (*Epiph.* hæ. 51; cp. *Tillemont*, ii. pp. 195—203). It has been remarked by *S. Jerome* (ad Ctesiphontem), as a characteristic of heresies, that their promoters have usually associated women with themselves in propagating them. Simon Magus had his Helena; Nicolas and Marcion had their female votaries. Apelles had his Philumena. Montanus, Arius, Donatus, were aided by women in their heretical and sectarian designs. See note above, on 2 Tim. iii. 6. The act of teaching publicly in the Church had been forbidden to women by St. Paul writing to the Bishop of Ephesus (1 Tim. ii. 12).

We are not able to ascertain whether this false prophetess was actually the wife of the Chief Pastor of Thyatira. The name *Jezebel* is doubtless a symbolical one, like *Sodom* and *Egypt* (xi. 8), and *Babylon*, as used in this book; and is adopted to characterize the wickedness of this false prophetess, making herself like to the Sidonian Queen, who perverted the Israelites to Idolatry, and destroyed the true prophets of the Lord (1 Kings xvi. 31. 2 Kings ix. 7), and who, as almost all idolaters did, joined harlotry with false worship (1 Kings xviii. 19; xxi. 25).

This false prophetess, thus symbolically designated, may have been the wife of the Bishop. *S. Polycarp*, the disciple of St. John, writing to the Philippians, says that he is much grieved for the lapse of a certain Priest, called Valens, and of his wife, to whom (he says) may God give true repentance! *Polycarp*, ad Phil. c. ii.

If this false prophetess of Thyatira was the wife of the Angel of the Church, then by conniving at the wickedness of a wife like Jezebel, he made himself like unto Ahab, whom Jezebel his wife stirred up (1 Kings xxi. 25); and, if this was the case, here is a warning to Rulers of the Church, not to permit considerations of private affection to interfere with the discharge of public duty. "If the wife of thy bosom, or thy friend, which is as thine own soul, entice thee, thou shalt not consent unto him, neither shalt thou spare, neither shalt thou conceal him" (Deut. xiii. 6—8).

But perhaps the word *wife* is used figuratively here; as the word *children* is, and as the words "who commit fornication with her" are. And then the word *wife* would intimate that the Angel of Thyatira, by his weak connivance, and even overweening fondness for this false Prophetess, treated her as if she were endeared to him as his own partner. He, the Ruler of the Church of Thyatira, who was bound to love, and cherish, and protect that Church espoused to himself in a holy union in Christ, he, by his blind partiality and indulgence, made this false teacher to be as his own consort in spiritual wedlock, and he made himself a partner in her sins (1 Tim. v. 22).

This interpretation seems most in accordance with the strong and fervid language of the Apocalypse, where the faithful Church is called the wife of the Lamb (xix. 7; xxi. 9. Cp. Isa. liv. 6).

21. οὐ θέλει μετανοῆσαι] she is not willing to repent,—a strong testimony to the freedom of the human will. Cp. Matt. xxiii. 37. Luke xiii. 34, οὐκ ἠθέλησατε. Elz. has οὐ μετενόησεν; but the important reading of the text rests on preponderating authority, and is received by *Bengel*, *Griesb.*, *Matth.*, *Lach.*, *Tisch.*

Observe the preposition ἐκ after μετανοεῖν here, and in v. 22; ix. 20, 21, and xvi. 11, showing a complete change of mind, displaying itself in turning from previous acts, and out of a former mode of life, to a new and different practice and habit of existence.

This Epistle to the Church of Thyatira, and the other six Epistles, displaying different forms of errors prevalent in Churches even in the Apostolic age, are fraught with instruction concerning the necessity of Church-Communion.

VOL. II.—PART IV.

At Thyatira the Bishop of the Church allowed a Jezebel to teach; he is reproved by Christ for doing so; but the Communion over which he presides is still called a Church by Christ Himself. Its Lamp is not yet removed; and the Angel of the Church is still a Star in Christ's right hand (i. 19). The same remark may be applied to the other Apocalyptic Churches of Asia. Not one of them is represented as free from errors and blemishes in doctrine and discipline. But none of their members are therefore exhorted by Christ to quit their communion.

No man therefore is justified in leaving the communion of a Church which dispenses the Word and Sacraments of Christ by a lawfully appointed and constituted Ministry. There is no just plea for schism, in the allegation that errors in doctrine and discipline prevail in it. No Church on earth is perfect. Grave errors existed and were observed by Christ in these Apocalyptic Churches; but none of their members are counselled by Him to secede from them. The Churches themselves are exhorted to repent, and to do their first works (ii. 5), to strengthen the things that remain and are ready to die (iii. 2), or Christ will remove their Lamps (ii. 5). Their members are indeed bound to avoid the leaven of their false doctrine (Matt. xvi. 6. 11), but they are also bound to abide and communicate with those Churches in whatsoever truths of Christ those Churches still continue to hold, and in all His graces that they still continue to minister.

See above, notes on Matt. xxiii. 2, and on 1 Cor. i. 2.

But, if a Church not only tolerates errors in faith and practice, but proceeds to enforce errors as terms of communion with herself; if she requires every one to drink of her cup (xvii. 4); if she makes communion in error to be essential to communion with herself, as the Church of Rome now does; and if she anathematizes and excommunicates those who do not receive those errors as articles of Faith, and as necessary to salvation; then a Schism must ensue, and the sin of the Schism lies at her door. See above, the notes on John ix. 34, and on 1 Cor. i. 2, and vol. i. of the Editor's Occasional Sermons on this text.

22. ἰδοὺ βάλλω αὐτὴν εἰς κλίνην] Behold, I cast her into a bed, i. e. a "bed of sickness and affliction," as contrasted with the bed of sinful indulgence (Prov. vii. 16, 17) and spiritual harlotry. *Andreas*, pp. 213, 214. *Bp. Andrewes*, i. p. 315. The verb βάλλω, as the Latin *jacto*, is specially used in this sense. See Matt. viii. 6. 14; ix. 2, ἐπὶ κλίνης βεβλημένον. *Lucret.* ii. 34,

"Nec calidæ citius decedunt corpore febres,
Textilibus si in picturis ostroque rubenti
Jacteris, quàm si plebeiâ in veste cubandum est."

And the Catena (*Cramer*, p. 214) rightly explains the word by τὴν ἐπινόσον, the bed of disease. Our Lord here first threatens the spiritual harlot and her paramours with sickness, and then with death, v. 23.

— τοὺς μοιχεύοντας μετ' αὐτῆς] those who commit adultery with her; those, that is, who are faithless to Me, and are seduced by her. On spiritual faithlessness, described in the Apocalypse as fornication and adultery, see below, xvii. 1—3. Compare the contrast in 2 Cor. xi. 2.

The literal Jezebel was a type of these false Teachers in both respects; see above, v. 20.

The diseases consequent on literal harlotry are represented as a warning of the consequences resulting from spiritual fornication. In like manner, fire, the punishment of whoredom (Levit. xxi. 9), is, in the Apocalypse, the penalty of the harlotries of the corrupt Church (xviii. 8).

23. καὶ γνώσονται] and all the Churches shall know that I am He Who searcheth reins and hearts: that is, Who seeth what is most secret. There is no article in the original, and it is not to be inserted in the translation; the sense is, "I search all reins and hearts."

Here is a reference to the pretended γνῶσις of these false Teachers; cp. on 1 John ii. 3. They professed to dive into secret mysteries (see v. 24), and thus they seduced Christ's servants. But the time was coming, when, through their punishment, all should know that it is Christ Who reads the secrets of hearts. Here is another assertion of His Divinity. Christ here adopts the words spoken by Almighty God Himself, describing His own Omniscience, and applies them to Himself. See Ps. vii. 9; xlv. 21. Cp. Jer. xi. 20; xvii. 10.

▲ ▲

p ch. 3. 11.

q Ps. 2. 8.
Matt. 19. 28.
Luke 22. 29.
1 Cor. 6. 3.
ch. 3. 21.
r Ps. 2. 8, 9.
& 49. 15.
s vv. 7, 11, 17.

a ch. 1. 4, 16, 20.
& 2. 1. & 4. 5.
& 5. 6.

b ver. 19.
Matt. 24. 42, 43.
Luke 12. 39, 40.
1 Thess. 5. 2.
2 Pet. 3. 10.
ch. 16. 15.
c ch. 4. 4. & 6. 11.
& 7. 9, 13.
d Exod. 32. 32.
Ps. 69. 29.
Matt. 10. 32.
Luke 12. 8.
Phil. 4. 3.
ch. 13. 8.
& 20. 12. & 21. 27.

ἐκάστῳ κατὰ τὰ ἔργα ὑμῶν. ²⁴ Ὅσοι οὐκ ἔχουσιν τὴν διδαχὴν ταύτην, οἵτινες οὐκ ἔγνωσαν τὰ βάθη τοῦ Σατανᾶ, ὡς λέγουσιν, Οὐ βάλλω ἐφ' ὑμᾶς ἄλλο βάρος. ²⁵ Ἡ πλὴν ὁ ἔχετε κρατήσατε ἄχρις οὗ ἂν ἴξω. ²⁶ Καὶ ὁ νικῶν καὶ ὁ τηρῶν ἄχρι τέλους τὰ ἔργα μου, δώσω αὐτῷ ἐξουσίαν ἐπὶ τῶν ἐθνῶν, ²⁷ καὶ ποιμανεῖ αὐτοὺς ἐν ῥάβδῳ σιδηρᾷ, ὡς τὰ σκεύη τὰ κεραμικὰ συντρίβεται, ὡς καὶ ἐλθὼν παρα τοῦ Πατρὸς μου. ²⁸ καὶ δώσω αὐτῷ τὸν ἀστέρα τὸν πρωϊνόν. ²⁹ Ὁ ἔχων οὗς ἀκουσάτω τί τὸ Πνεῦμα λέγει ταῖς ἐκκλησίαις.

III. ¹ Καὶ τῷ ἀγγέλῳ τῆς ἐν Σάρδεσιν ἐκκλησίας γράψον. Τάδε λέγει ὁ ἔχων τὰ ἑπτὰ πνεύματα τοῦ Θεοῦ καὶ τοὺς ἑπτὰ ἀστέρας. Οἶδά σου τὰ ἔργα, ὅτι ὄνομα ἔχεις ὅτι ζῆς, καὶ νεκρὸς εἶ. ² Γίνου γρηγορῶν, καὶ στήρισον τὰ λοιπὰ, ἃ ἐμελλον ἀποθανεῖν. οὐ γὰρ εὗρηκά σου τὰ ἔργα πεπληρωμένα ἐνώπιον τοῦ Θεοῦ μου. ³ Μνημόνευε οὖν πῶς εἴληφας καὶ ἤκουσας, καὶ τήρει καὶ μετανόησον. Ἐὰν οὖν μὴ γρηγορήσῃς, ἴξω ἐπὶ σέ ὡς κλέπτῃς, καὶ οὐ μὴ γνῶς, ποίαν ὥραν ἴξω ἐπὶ σέ. ⁴ Ἀλλὰ ἔχεις ὀλίγα ὀνόματα ἐν Σάρδεσιν, ἃ οὐκ ἐμόλυναν τὰ ἱμάτια αὐτῶν, καὶ περιπατήσουσι μετ' ἐμοῦ ἐν λευκοῖς, ὅτι ἄξιοί εἰσιν. ⁵ Ὁ νικῶν, οὗτος περιβαλεῖται ἐν ἱματίοις λευκοῖς· καὶ οὐ μὴ ἐξαλείψω τὸ ὄνομα αὐτοῦ ἐκ τῆς βίβλου τῆς ζωῆς· καὶ ὁμολογήσω τὸ ὄνομα

— κατὰ τὰ ἔργα] according to their works: and not according to their outward professions; another allusion to these false Teachers, who said that, provided a man had knowledge, he needed not do good works; and who subverted moral practice by their licentious doctrines, and even made libertinism a part of their religion. See on 2 Pet. ii. 2. Jude 14, 15.

²⁴. οἵτινες οὐκ ἔγνωσαν τὰ βάθη (so A, B, C; Elz., βάθη) τοῦ Σατανᾶ] as many as did not know the depths of Satan. A reference to the language of these false Teachers. They promised to their votaries knowledge (γνώσις; cp. 1 Tim. vi. 20. 2 Pet. i. 2. 5. 1 John ii. 3. Irenæus, i. 1), and professed to initiate them in the depths of its profoundest mysteries, which they said were not to be fathomed by vulgar minds, or even by Apostles themselves (see on 2 Pet. ii. 2). Such language was used by the Gnostics, who called their mysteries, "the depths of God." See Irenæus (ii. 22. 3), and Tertullian (adv. Valentin., c. 1), "Altum est, aiunt."

Our Lord here sternly rebukes them, and condemns their so-called "depths of God" as "depths of Satan;" and He declares that ignorance of those depths is far more blessed than that vaunted knowledge which they promised to their hearers. The words ὡς λέγουσιν, "as they say," refer to τὰ βάθη, "the depths,"—a term often in the mouths of these false teachers. See A Lapide, Grotius, Wetst., Bengel, Herder, De Wette.

Or if, with other Expositors, the words "of Satan" are to be included in the quotation (as seems most in accordance with the structure of the sentence), then we must refer them to the Satanic mysteries into which these Gnostics pretended to initiate their hearers; some of them with impious audacity and fiendlike recklessness did not scruple to say that they could fathom the fearful depths of the Lake of fire; and some of them taught that it was even a duty for the true Gnostic to dive into all the gulphs of sensuality, and that he could not be hurt thereby, any more than gold by mud (see above on 2 Pet. ii. 2), and some of them did not hesitate to adore the Evil One himself, such as the Ophites, or Serpent-Worshippers (Philastr., Hær. 1), and Cainites (Ibid.). See Tillemont, ii. pp. 21. 121—132. Ittig, p. 120. Oehler, p. 24; and note above, on 1 John iii. 12; and on Jude 11.

— οὐ βάλλω ἐφ' ὑμᾶς ἄλλο βάρος] I cast not upon you any other burden (cp. Acts xv. 28), but what ye have, that hold ye fast, until I am come. Here is a protest from Christ against all additions to the Faith "once delivered to the Saints." See above, Jude 3, and on Gal. i. 8, 9.

The word ἴξω signifies "I shall be come" (adereo). It not only bespeaks the Coming of Christ, but His Presence, to execute vengeance. The ἂν bespeaks the uncertainty of the time when that Coming will be.

Observe the contrast between βάλλω here and in v. 22. I cast her into a bed of sorrow and death, but I do not cast any other burden upon you. There is judgment on the one side, and mercy on the other.

²⁶. ὁ νικῶν—δώσω αὐτῷ] As to the structure of the phrase, compare vi. 8; vii. 2; ix. 12. 14; xx. 8.

— δώσω αὐτῷ ἐξουσίαν ἐπὶ τῶν ἐθνῶν] I will give to him authority over the nations; that is, over heathens, as opposed to the true Israelites; I will give him authority over the heathen, whether they be false Teachers, such as this Jezebel, who would lead My servants to heathen worship and libertinism, by tempting them to eat sacrifices offered to heathen idols; or whether they be heathen Persecutors; he will be enabled to prevail over them, and to break them in pieces like potters' vessels, with the iron rod of My Word, which I will put into his hands, and I will endue him with Power to use it. Ps. ii. 8, 9; below, xii. 5; xix. 15.

This is genuine ἐξουσία (authority), a word which was often in the mouths of those who made their Christian liberty to be a cloke of sin. See on 1 Cor. xi. 10. 1 Pet. ii. 16.

This word ἐξουσία expresses lawful dominion; others may usurp power (δύναμις); but it is only Christ, the King of Kings, Who invests His servants with rightful dominion. Here is a protest against those who imagine some other source of authority besides God. See above, on Rom. xiii. 1—3.

²⁷. καὶ ποιμανεῖ] and he shall tend them with a rod of iron. Remark the oxymoron; He shall have the gentleness and love of a Shepherd for his flock (cp. below, vii. 17), but the pastoral crook will become a rod of iron in His hands, to shatter into shivers the potter's vessels of false doctrine: cp. xii. 5; xix. 15. He shall receive that Power from Christ, the true Shepherd-King: see Ps. ii. 9.

²⁸. καὶ δώσω, κ.τ.λ.] and I will give to him the morning star, which puts to flight the night, and ushers-in the dawn: an emblem of the victory of Light over Darkness, and of the triumph of the children of light over those false Teachers who are like "wandering stars, to whom is reserved the blackness of darkness for ever" (Jude 13); and therefore a fit emblem of Him Who is the Day-spring from on high (Luke i. 78), and brings life and immortality to Light, and Whose appearance at the Last Day will be like the Morning Star of Eternity, ushering in that Glorious Day which has no Evening: see xxii. 16, and who will grant to His faithful servants to shine like the stars for ever. Dan. xii. 3.

CH. III. 1. τὰ ἑπτὰ πνεύματα] the Seven Spirits. See i. 4.

3. ἴξω] I shall be present. See ii. 25.

4. ὀνόματα] names; persons. See Acts i. 15; below, xi. 13.

— οὐκ ἐμόλυναν τὰ ἱμάτια] did not defile their garments; their spiritual attire—in which they were clothed at their baptism, when they put on Christ,—see on Matt. xxii. 11, 12. Gal. iii. 27. Eph. iv. 24—and have not stained it with sin; Jude 23.

— ἐν λευκοῖς] in white—the colour of Christ; vi. 2.

— ἄξιοί εἰσιν] they are worthy: by making a right use of the means of grace offered by Him Who is the Lord our Righteousness (see on 1 Cor. i. 30; and Rom. v. 21), and Who alone can make them worthy; cp. below, xxii. 14.

5. ἐκ τ. βίβλου τ. ζωῆς] from the book of life. See Phil. iv. 3.

αὐτοῦ ἐνώπιον τοῦ Πατρὸς μου, καὶ ἐνώπιον τῶν ἀγγέλων αὐτοῦ. ⁶ Ὁ ἔχων οὖς ἀκουσάτω τί τὸ Πνεῦμα λέγει ταῖς ἐκκλησίαις.

⁷ Καὶ τῷ ἀγγέλῳ τῆς ἐν Φιλαδελφείᾳ ἐκκλησίας γράψον· Τάδε λέγει ὁ ἅγιος, ^{e ver. 14.} ὁ ἀληθινὸς, ὁ ἔχων τὴν κλεῖν τοῦ Δαυὶδ, ὁ ἀνοίγων καὶ οὐδεὶς κλείσει, ^{Job 12. 14.} καὶ κλείει καὶ οὐδεὶς ἀνοίξει. ^{Isa. 22. 22.} ⁸ Οἶδά σου τὰ ἔργα· ἰδοὺ δέδωκα ἐνώπιόν σου ^{ch. 1. 18.} θύραν ἀνεωγμένην, ἣν οὐδεὶς δύναται κλείσαι αὐτήν, ὅτι μικρὰν ἔχεις δύναμιν, καὶ ἐτήρησάς μου τὸν λόγον, καὶ οὐκ ἠρνήσω τὸ ὄνομά μου. ⁹ ^f Ἰδοὺ δίδωμι ^{f ch. 2. 9.} ἐκ τῆς συναγωγῆς τοῦ Σατανᾶ τῶν λεγόντων ἑαυτοὺς Ἰουδαίους εἶναι, καὶ οὐκ εἰσὶν, ἀλλὰ ψεύδονται· ἰδοὺ ποιήσω αὐτοὺς ἵνα ἤξωσι καὶ προσκυνήσωσιν ἐνώπιον τῶν ποδῶν σου, καὶ γνῶσιν ὅτι ἐγὼ ἠγάπησά σε. ¹⁰ Ὅτι ἐτήρησας ^{g Phil. 4. 5.} τὸν λόγον τῆς ὑπομονῆς μου, καὶ γὰρ σὲ τηρήσω ἐκ τῆς ὥρας τοῦ πειρασμοῦ τῆς ^{ch. 1. 3. & 2. 25.} μελλούσης ἐρχεσθαι ἐπὶ τῆς οἰκουμένης ὅλης, πειράσαι τοὺς κατοικοῦντας ἐπὶ ^{ch. 22. 7, 12.} τῆς γῆς. ^{h 1 Kings 7. 21.} ¹¹ ^s Ἐρχομαι ταχύ· κράτει ὁ ἔχεις, ἵνα μηδεὶς λάβῃ τὸν στέφανόν ^{Gal. 4. 26.} σου. ¹² ^h Ὁ νικῶν ποιήσω αὐτὸν στῦλον ἐν τῷ ναῷ τοῦ Θεοῦ μου· καὶ ἔξω οὐ ^{Heb. 12. 22.} ^{ch. 2. 17.} ^{& 21. 2, 10.} ^{& 22. 4.}

7. ὁ ἀληθινός] *the true*, as opposed to counterfeits. 1 John v. 20.

— ὁ ἔχων τὴν κλεῖν τοῦ Δαυὶδ] *He that hath the key of David*. The Church of Philadelphia was infested by Judaizing teachers (see v. 9), who claimed to themselves the promises made by God to the *Patriarchs* and to *Jerusalem*. Christ here condemns them, and consoles the Church by declaring that He Himself has the *key of David*, as the Hebrew Prophets predicted of the Messiah, typified by Eliakim (Isa. xxii. 20—22, quoted here by Christ), and that He and He alone can open the door of the true *Sion*, and admit to David's house. He is David's Lord as well as David's Son (Ps. cx. Matt. xxii. 44). *He is the Root* as well as the *Offspring* of David (see below, xxii. 16). He, by the administration of the Holy Sacrament of Baptism, and by the preaching of His Holy Word, unlocks the door of His Church, and admits into His Household, which is the depository of all saving grace (see above, on Matt. xvi. 19). He in Whom all treasures of knowledge and wisdom are hidden (Col. ii. 3), opens those treasures to His people; He Who has the keys of the Gate of the Heavenly Jerusalem (v. 12), will admit His faithful servants to the privileges of its glorious citizenship (cp. Gal. iv. 26. Heb. xii. 22; below, xxi. 2. 10). Cp. above, *Introduction*, pp. 149, 150.

But the *literal* Jews, who boast of that name, are *not* really Jews (see on ii. 9), they are not true confessors of God; they are *not* "true Israelites," are not "*the Israel of God*" (Gal. vi. 16), are not children of "*faithful Abraham*" (see Rom. ii. 28, 29; ix. 6, 7); they are not subjects of David's Kingdom and members of his household; they are not children of *Sion*; they are indeed a Synagogue—but it is a *synagogue of Satan* (cp. ii. 9). They who call themselves children of the kingdom, but do not own Christ as their King, will be thrust out of the Kingdom into outer darkness, where shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth (Matt. viii. 12; xxii. 13. Luke xiii. 28).

8. ἰδοὺ δέδωκα ἐνώπιόν σου θύραν ἀνεωγμένην] *behold, I have given before thee a door opened, which no one is able to shut*. Observe, the door is said to be *given*, given by Christ, who holds the Key, v. 7; and it is an *opened* door that is *given* by Him; cp. on v. 20. The perfect tense indicates that the door has been opened, and remains open.

The Judaizing false Teachers affirmed that they themselves had the *key of knowledge* (Luke xi. 52), and that unless men complied with their requirements they were *excluded* from God's household and from participation in the privileges of His covenant. This exclusive spirit had been censured by St. Paul, describing their arbitrary usurpations over men's consciences, in his Epistle to the Galatians—their will is "to *exclude* you" (Gal. iv. 17). And now Christ, who has the *key of David*, affirms that He has *opened the door* to the Gentile Christians of Philadelphia, and that no one can shut it against them. Christ is the *Door* (John x. 7. 9); and unless these Judaizing Teachers repent and consent to enter by this *one Door*, they, who would exclude others, will be shut out from the kingdom of heaven. See preceding note.

St. John's scholar, S. Ignatius, in his Epistle to the Church of Philadelphia, supplies the best commentary on these words of Christ to the same Church. "If any one preaches *Judaism*, do not ye hearken to him. It is better to receive Christianity from one who is circumcised, than to receive *Judaism* from one who is uncircumcised. Unless they preach Jesus Christ, they are mere pillars and tombs of the dead, on which the names of men are inscribed" (*Ignat. ad Phil. c. 6*).

Compare this with what our Lord says here, He that overcometh, I will make him a pillar in the Temple of my God, and will write upon him the name of My God, and the name of the city of My God, the new Jerusalem, which cometh down from heaven, and My new Name.

S. Ignatius adds, in his Epistle to Philadelphia (c. 9), "The Priests (i. e. of the Old Law; see Bp. Pearson there, p. 419) were good; but better is He Who is the *High Priest*, Who is entrusted with the true Holy of Holies, Who alone has the charge of the hidden things of God."

Compare our Lord's words here concerning Himself,—Thus saith the *Holy One* and the true, Who *hath the key of David*: v. 7.

S. Ignatius then proceeds; "Christ alone is the *Door* to the Father, the *Door* through which Abraham, and Isaac, and Jacob, and the Prophets, and the Apostles, and the Church, enter in; all these are thus joined together into unity with God. The *holy Prophets* preached Christ (cp. there, cap. 5), and the Gospel is the Consummation of Incorruption."

These allusions indicate that the language of the Apocalypse was familiar to S. Ignatius; and they are precisely such as might have been expected from one who was a scholar of St. John, and a Bishop of the Asiatic Church. They also confirm the evidence of the genuineness of the Ignatian Epistles themselves. Cp. the remarks of Mr. J. C. Knight on the Apocalypse, Lond. 1842, pp. 12—15.

— ἐτήρησας—οὐκ ἠρνήσω] *thou didst keep—and not deny* (aorists) at some special time of trial.

9. ἵνα ἤξωσι] *that they may come and bow down before thee*; quoted from Isa. xlix. 23; lx. 14.

— ἠγάπησά σε] *I loved thee*: see i. 5. Our Lord uses the word φιλῶ below, in v. 19: cp. note there, and above, on John xxi. 15, 16.

10. τοὺς κατοικοῦντας ἐπὶ τῆς γῆς] *those who dwell on the earth*; a phrase frequently used in the Apocalypse to characterize *earthly men*, who "set their affections on things on the earth, and not on things above." See on i. 7, and vi. 10. 15; xi. 10; xii. 12; xiii. 8. 14; xiv. 6; xvii. 2. 8: and cp. note above, on Luke xxi. 35.

11. ἵνα μηδεὶς] *that no one take thy crown*: a remarkable text, which some have interpreted as if there were a *certain number* of crowns, which, if some forfeited, others would receive. See Augustine, de correptione, c. 39.

It rather shows—what is evident from other Scriptures—that God willeth "all men to be saved." God has a crown for every one; and no man can lose his *own crown*, but by his *own fault*. See above, on 1 Tim. ii. 4; and 1 Cor. viii. 11; and Heb. ii. 9; and 2 Pet. ii. 1; and *Introduction* to the Epistle to the Romans, pp. 194—198.

It is also cited by the Fathers as showing that men may fall from grace. See above, iii. 5. Cyprian, de Unit. Eccles. p. 478.

12. ποιήσω αὐτὸν στῦλον] *I will make him to be a pillar in the temple of my God*. The Lamp in the Temple at Jerusalem was removed, and the Lamp of any Church on earth may be removed (see ii. 5), but he who overcometh shall be like a *Pillar fixed* in the Temple of God in the heavenly Jerusalem.

The reference here is probably to the *two Pillars* in the Temple of Solomon (2 Chron. iii. 17. 1 Kings vii. 21), which were called *Jachin* (יָכִין, *he will establish*), and *Boaz* (בּוֹאֵז, *in him is strength*); both names signifying *permanence*; both there—

μὴ ἐξέλθῃ ἔτι, καὶ γράψω ἐπ' αὐτὸν τὸ ὄνομα τοῦ Θεοῦ μου, καὶ τὸ ὄνομα τῆς πόλεως τοῦ Θεοῦ μου, τῆς καινῆς Ἱερουσαλὴμ, ἡ καταβαίνουσα ἐκ τοῦ οὐρανοῦ ἀπὸ τοῦ Θεοῦ μου, καὶ τὸ ὄνομά μου τὸ καινόν. ¹³ Ὁ ἔχων οὖς ἀκουσάτω τί τὸ Πνεῦμα λέγει ταῖς ἐκκλησίαις.

i Col. 1. 15.
ch. 1. 5, 6.
& 3. 7.

¹⁴ Καὶ τῷ ἀγγέλῳ τῆς ἐν Λαοδικείᾳ ἐκκλησίας γράψον· Τάδε λέγει ὁ Ἀμὴν, ὁ μάρτυς ὁ πιστὸς καὶ ἀληθινός, ἡ ἀρχὴ τῆς κτίσεως τοῦ Θεοῦ. ¹⁵ Οἶδά σου τὰ ἔργα, ὅτι οὔτε ψυχρὸς εἶ οὔτε ζεστός· ὄφελον ψυχρὸς ἢ ἢ ζεστός· ¹⁶ οὕτως, ὅτι χλιαρὸς εἶ, καὶ οὔτε ζεστὸς οὔτε ψυχρὸς, μέλλω σε ἐμέσαι ἐκ τοῦ στόματός μου.

k 1 Cor. 4. 8.

¹⁷ Ὅτι λέγεις, Πλούσιός εἰμι καὶ πεπλούτηκα, καὶ οὐδενὸς χρείαν ἔχω, καὶ οὐκ οἶδας ὅτι σὺ εἶ ὁ ταλαίπωρος καὶ ἐλεεινός, καὶ πτωχὸς καὶ τυφλὸς καὶ γυμνός,

l 2 Cor. 5. 3.
ch. 7. 13.
& 16. 15. & 19. 8.

¹⁸ συμβουλεύω σοι ἀγοράσαι παρ' ἐμοῦ χρυσίον πεπυρωμένον ἐκ πυρὸς, ἵνα πλουτήσης, καὶ ἱμάτια λευκὰ, ἵνα περιβάλλῃ καὶ μὴ φανερωθῇ ἡ αἰσχὺνὴ τῆς γυμνότητός σου, καὶ κολλούριον ἐγχρίσαι τοὺς ὀφθαλμούς σου, ἵνα βλέπῃς.

m Job 5. 17.
Prov. 3. 11, 12.
Heb. 12. 5, 6.
James 1. 12.
n Cant. 5. 2.
John 14. 21, &c.

¹⁹ Ἐγὼ ὅσους ἐὰν φιλῶ, ἐλέγχω καὶ παιδεύω· ζήλευε οὖν, καὶ μετανόησον. ²⁰ Ἴδου ἔστηκα ἐπὶ τὴν θύραν καὶ κρούω· ἐάν τις ἀκούσῃ τῆς φωνῆς

fore aptly symbolizing the elect saints of God in the Temple of the Church glorified. Compare Jer. i. 18. Gal. ii. 9.

In the ancient Temples also of Asia, to which St. John wrote, and of Greece, Pillars of temples were often sculptured in *human shape*, such as the Caryatides or Canephora now standing in the Erechtheum at Athens, and the Atlantes, Telamones, and Persæ, of which some specimens are still visible at Pompeii, and are represented in the paintings on the Baths of Titus at Rome.

Observe the adaptation of the promise and reward to the work done. *Hold fast* what thou hast, in the Church on earth; and thou shalt be a pillar *set fast* in the Temple of God.

The city of Philadelphia was very subject to Earthquakes. (*Strabo*, p. 868 and p. 936. Cp. *Tacit.* Ann. ii. 47. See *Wetstein* here.) A promise of stability and permanence has therefore a special significance here.

— ἐπ' αὐτόν] *upon him*; upon his forehead, ix. 4; xxii. 4.

— καινῆς Ἱερουσαλὴμ] *of the New Jerusalem*. The old, literal, Jerusalem had been laid waste by the armies of Rome, and the literal Israel had been scattered abroad throughout the world. But Christ comforts all true Israelites with the assurance that there is now every where, in all parts of the earth, and in all ages of the world, another Jerusalem, a new Jerusalem, the Christian Sion, in which the true Israelites, wherever they may be dispersed, may find a home. See *Introduction* to 1 Peter, p. 37, and above, p. 149.

This Jerusalem is also the new Jerusalem in another sense, because it is the royal city of Him Who "makes all things new" (xxi. 3), and in Whom, as the Second Adam, the new regenerate race of mankind has its Father: for whosoever is in Christ, is "a new creature; old things passed away, all things have become new" (2 Cor. v. 17. Cp. 1 John ii. 8. 2 Pet. iii. 13).

In his Gospel St. John never uses the form Ἱερουσαλὴμ, but always Ἱεροσόλυμα. In the Apocalypse he never uses the form Ἱεροσόλυμα, but Ἱερουσαλὴμ.

He thus seems to mark the difference between the old and new Jerusalem, even by the sound of the name itself; and he appropriates the Hebrew form to the new or Christian Sion, in order to remind both Christians and Jews that the faithful members of Christ the Son of David throughout the world, without respect to race, are now become the only real Jews, the true Israel of God.

— ἡ καταβαίνουσα] On the grammatical anomaly (such as frequently occurs in the Apocalypse), see ii. 20, and below, v. 11.

14. ὁ Ἀμὴν] *The Amen*. See *Bp. Andrewes*, v. 471.

— ὁ μάρτυς] *the true and faithful Witness*, who witnessed before Pontius Pilate a good confession (1 Tim. vi. 13). This is He that came by Water and Blood, and there are three that bear Witness on earth, the Spirit, the Water, and the Blood. 1 John v. 8.

— ἡ ἀρχὴ τῆς κτίσεως] *the Beginning of the Creation*. Not as the Arians erroneously taught, the first of God's creatures, but the uncreated Beginning, the initial Cause, and energizing Agent of Creation. See here *Andreas*, *Arethas*, *Vitringa*, *Hengstenberg*, and above, on Col. i. 15; and cp. above, i. 8, and xxii. 13. Christ calls Himself the beginning of the Creation of God, in this Epistle, especially to the Laodiceans, in order that they may not rely on themselves, or look for any good thing except from Him. He therefore counsels them to buy of Him (v. 18). And there may be some reference to the false teaching of those at Laodicea

and other places of Phrygia, who substituted *Angels* as *Creators* and *Mediators* in the place of Christ. See above, on Col. ii. 8.

15. ὄφελον] *would that thou wert cold or hot*. On this use of ὄφελον, see 1 Cor. iv. 8. 2 Cor. xi. 1, and Gal. v. 12. It does not here express an absolute wish, but a relative one. Rather than that thou wert lukewarm, I would that thou wert either cold or hot. Heathen ignorance is better than Christian indifference (Luke xii. 48. Cp. xxiii. 34. 1 Tim. i. 13). There is more hope of acting on those who have no knowledge of the Gospel, than on those who have a little knowledge, and are self-satisfied in it. This is more fully explained by what follows: "Thou sayest, I am rich, and have need of nothing, and knowest not that thou art the wretched one." Besides, the lukewarm make some profession of Christianity, which the cold do not; and thus the lukewarm do more harm to others. Men are not so liable to be led astray by open unbelievers as by indifferent Christians. They are on their guard against the former, who avow themselves open enemies; but they are liable to be carried away by the latter, who are false friends.

17. ὁ ταλαίπωρος] *the wretched one*. Observe the article. He who is spiritually poor, and yet imagines himself to be rich, is specially the wretched one: because, not knowing his own need, he does not resort to Him Who alone can give him the true riches.

A strong testimony from Christ against the delusive doctrine of those who allege that *personal assurance* is the essence of Faith. Contrast the case of the Centurion (Luke vii. 6), and of the Publican (xviii. 14), whom Christ Himself commends.

18. ἀγοράσαι] *to buy*. A word not necessarily implying that the Laodiceans have any equivalent of personal merit to offer as a price for divine grace (cp. Isa. lv. 1), but that spiritual blessings are to be procured from Christ alone, and not, as they vainly and presumptuously imagined, from themselves. We are to buy by an humble acknowledgment of our own nothingness and of Christ's fulness. They are best qualified to buy who know that they have no purchase-money but the merits of Christ, and who know and feel how precious those merits are.

At the same time the word *buy* implies an effort and sacrifice on the part of those who come to Christ, and this admonition is therefore understood by the Fathers to imply the duty of works of piety and charity. See *S. Cyprian*, de Opere et Eleemosynis, § 10.

— κολλούριον] *eyesalve*. A word probably derived from κολλύρα, a little round cake; in which form the eyesalve was made. See *Wetstein*. Hence the Latin "collyrium," *Horat.* 1 Ep. i. 29, "collyria lippus inungi," where the construction is the same as here. *Juvenal*, vi. 577.

19. φιλῶ] *I dearly love*. See above, v. 9. A tenderer word than ἀγαπῶ, and making this sentence still more emphatic than ἀγαπῶ would do. Some of those whom the world regards as most wretched, are God's darlings. And some of the World's darlings are "the wretched ones" in His sight.

20. ἰδὺν ἔστηκα ἐπὶ τ. θύραν] *Behold, I stand at the door and am knocking*. In all such sentences as that which St. John's Revelation hath, "I stand at the door and knock," the Pelagians' manner of construction was, that to knock is the free external offer of God's grace; to open is the work of natural will, by itself accepting grace, and so procuring or deserving whatsoever followeth. But the Catholic exposition of that, and

μου, καὶ ἀνοίξῃ τὴν θύραν, καὶ εἰσελεύσομαι πρὸς αὐτὸν, καὶ δειπνήσω μετ' αὐτοῦ, καὶ αὐτὸς μετ' ἐμοῦ. ²¹ Ὁ νικῶν, δώσω αὐτῷ καθίσαι μετ' ἐμοῦ ἐν τῷ θρόνῳ μου, ὡς καὶ ἐνίκησα, καὶ ἐκάθισα μετὰ τοῦ Πατρὸς μου ἐν τῷ θρόνῳ αὐτοῦ. ²² Ὁ ἔχων οὖς ἀκουσάτω τί τὸ Πνεῦμα λέγει ταῖς ἐκκλησίαις.

o Matt. 19. 28.
Luke 22. 30.
1 Cor. 6. 2.
2 Tim. 2. 12.
ch. 2. 26, 27.
p ch. 2. 7, 11, 17.
& 3. 6, 13.

IV. ¹ Μετὰ ταῦτα εἶδον, καὶ ἰδοὺ θύρα ἀνεωγμένη ἐν τῷ οὐρανῷ· καὶ ἡ φωνὴ ἡ πρώτη ἣν ἤκουσα ὡς σάλπιγγος λαλούσης μετ' ἐμοῦ, λέγων, Ἀνάβα ὧδε, καὶ δείξω σοι ἃ δεῖ γενέσθαι μετὰ ταῦτα. ² εὐθέως ἐγενόμην ἐν Πνεύματι· καὶ ἰδοὺ, θρόνος ἔκειτο ἐν τῷ οὐρανῷ, καὶ ἐπὶ τὸν θρόνον καθήμενος· ³ καὶ ὁ καθήμενος ὅμοιος ὀράσει λίθῳ ἰάσπιδι καὶ σαρδίῳ· καὶ ἱρίς κυκλόθεν τοῦ θρόνου ὅμοιος ὀράσει σμαραγδίνῳ.

a ch. 1. 10.

b Ezek. 1. 26.
& 10. 1.
ch. 1. 10.

all such sentences was, that to *stand* and *knock* is indeed a work of outward grace, but to *open* cometh not from man's will *without the inward illumination* of grace, whereupon afterwards ensueth continual augmentation thereof; not because the first concurrence of the will itself with grace, much less without, doth *deserve* additions after following; but because it is the nature of God's most bountiful disposition to build forward where His foundation is once laid. The only thing that Catholic Fathers did blame, was the error of them who ascribed any laudable motion, or virtuous desire tending towards heavenly things, to the *naked liberty of man's will, the grace of God being severed from it.* Hooker, book v. Appendix i. vol. ii. p. 687.

— δειπνήσω μετ' αὐτοῦ] *I will sup with him.* See John xiv. 23. These promises express the love of Christ for His Spouse the Church. Compare the words of the Bridegroom, Cant. v. 2, "It is the voice of my beloved that *knocketh*, saying, Open to me, my sister, my love."

21. καθίσαι] *to sit with Me in my throne.* Observe the preposition *ἐν*, *in* (not *ἐπὶ*, *upon*), here twice, the only two places where this preposition is used with *θρόνῳ* in the N. T., whereas *ἐπὶ* is used with other cases of *θρόνος* often. See Matt. xix. 28; xxv. 31. Rev. iv. 2. 9; v. 1. 7. 13; vi. 16, and *passim*.

This preposition *ἐν* appears to intimate admission *into* and session *in* the same throne; whereas *ἐπὶ* represents the act of taking a seat *upon* a separate throne.

I will grant to him to sit with Me in My throne. This is the climax and the consummation of glory. See above, on ii. 7.

There is a reference here also to the bliss and glory of the Church as the Queen at the right hand of her Lord and King. See Ps. xlv. 10. Cp. above, pp. 127, 128.

CH. IV.] St. John sees heaven opened, and is called up into heaven. He is *in the Spirit*, and beholds the THRONE of GOD in heaven, and the Four-and-twenty Elders round about the Throne, sitting in white garments and wearing crowns of gold; and in the midst of the Throne, and round about the Throne, the Four Living Creatures; and when the four Living Creatures sing the Trisagion to the BLESSED TRINITY, the Four-and-twenty Elders fall down and worship.

1. μετὰ ταῦτα] *after these things.* These words connect this Vision with St. John's age: whence it appears that the Four-and-twenty Elders and Four Living Creatures do not represent the Church Triumphant in that future heavenly glory, which will not be consummated till the end of time. See below, *vv.* 4—8.

— εἶδον] *I saw*: not "*I looked*;" the vision was revealed to him, he did *not* look for it.

— θύρα ἀνεωγμένη] *a door set open in heaven.* Observe here the perfect participle, the door had been opened and was *standing open*. The veil of the heavenly Holy of Holies had been removed by Christ (Heb. x. 19, 20), and heaven was laid open to the view. There is a comparison, and yet a contrast, between the heavenly Temple, and that which had existed upon earth during the Levitical dispensation, when the way into the Holiest had not yet been made manifest. Heb. ix. 8.

In this heavenly Temple, the Throne of God—which had been typified by the Ark and Mercy Seat in the Holiest Place—is visible; and the *Sea* and *Seven Lights*, which are allusive to the Molten Sea in Solomon's Temple (1 Kings vii. 23), and to the Seven-branched Lamp which stood in the Holy Place, and symbolized the Church, and was at some distance from the Mercy Seat of the Divine Throne in the Holy of Holies (see *Lightfoot*, p. 2055), are here *brought near* to the Throne of God, v. 6. For "we, who were formerly *afar off*, are now made nigh to God by the *blood of Christ*." Eph. ii. 13:

— ἡ φωνὴ ἡ πρώτη—λέγων] *the voice which I heard at first.*

See above, chap. i. 10. This seems to be the meaning. Remark the connexion of the *masculine* participle (λέγων), "speaking," with the feminine substantive "voice." The voice is personified into the speaker. Compare the similar construction, where the laws of grammar are made to give way to the powerful emotion in the writer's mind, v. 11; xi. 15; xix. 14. *Winer*, § 59, p. 466.

— ἀνάβα ὧδε] *Come up hither*:—*immediately I became in the Spirit.* The Evangelist being called up into heaven was *in the Spirit*; and being inspired by the Holy Ghost, he was transported into heaven, as the Apostle St. Paul in his "visions and revelations of the Lord," was caught up into the third heaven. 2 Cor. xii. 2.

3. καὶ ὁ καθήμενος κ.τ.λ.] *and he that sitteth on the throne like in sight to a Jasper-stone and a Sardine.* He Who *sitteth* is the TRIUNE GOD (see v. 8). This opinion is not invalidated by the fact that the Lamb is in the midst of the Throne (v. 6), and takes the sealed Roll from Him that *sitteth* on the Throne (v. 7). It is well observed by *A Lapide* here, that "the Son as *Man* can well be said, especially in a sublime Vision like this, to come to *God*." Our Lord's words on the Cross, Matt. xxvii. 46, and Heb. x. 6, are addressed to the Triune God. Compare the vision of Daniel, vii. 13, where the Son of Man comes to the Ancient of Days.

St. John declares in his Gospel (xii. 41) that the parallel Vision in Isaiah (vi. 1—3), which also contains the *Trisagion*, was a vision of the glory of *Christ*; and it was the glory also of the *Father* and of the *Holy Spirit*. See note above on John xii. 41, and the note on Col. i. 19. Cp. note below on v. 1.

— ὁ καθήμενος ὅμοιος ὀράσει, κ.τ.λ.] *He that sitteth is in sight like the Jasper and the Sardine Stone.* The Jasper is called *κρυσταλλίζων*, "like crystal," in xxi. 1; and it is the superstructure of the heavenly City (xxi. 18), and the first of the Twelve Stones, which represent the Apostles of the Lamb (xxi. 14. 19).

Jasper was of various colours, purple, blue, green, and distinguished by its brilliancy and beauty (*Plin.* xxxvii. 5), and almost always veined with white. Compare the treatise of *S. Epiphanius* on the Twelve oracular Gems on the pectoral of the High Priest, where the *Jasper* was the sixth (*Exod.* xxviii. 19; xxxix. 9); and see *Corsi*, *Pietre Antiche*, p. 137. *Rom.* 1828.

The *Sardine* stone is red, somewhat fiery and like blood, something similar to *Cornelian*. See *S. Epiphanius* l. c., de lapide *Sardio*, and *Corsi*, *Pietre Antiche*, pp. 159, 160.

The *Jasper* (says *Victorinus*) is like *water*; the *Sardine* is like *fire*; and thus these stones seem to represent God's Majesty and Justice as seen in His Judgments: that of the Flood, and that of the Fire of Sodom and the Last Day.

Or rather, the union of these two colours, the one of a brilliant and lively hue, the other of a deeper fiery and darker hue, may perhaps be designed to symbolize the union of Mercy and Glory, with Justice and Majesty in the Godhead, especially in the Gospel Dispensation. (*Rom.* iii. 26.) Similarly there is a combination of brightness and fire in Ezekiel's Vision (*Ezek.* i. 4), which also displays the Rainbow (i. 28). And this is illustrated by what follows.

— καὶ ἱρίς] *and a Rainbow, like unto an Emerald, round about the throne.* On the gender and declension of the adjective ὅμοιος, see *Winer*, G. G. § 11, p. 64. Cp. Luke ii. 13. Acts xxvi. 19. 1 Tim. ii. 8, 9.

The *Rainbow*, composed by the joint influences of shower and sunshine, is an emblem of Divine severity blended with Divine Love; a symbol of the dark shower of Divine Judgment illumined by the bright beams of Divine Mercy. Compare the Vision of Ezekiel, i. 28. The Bow is a Record of the *Deluge*, in which the world was drowned for sin, and speaks of sunshine after storm;

⁴ Καὶ κυκλόθεν τοῦ θρόνου θρόνοι εἴκοσι τέσσαρες καὶ ἐπὶ τοὺς θρόνους

and of the Divine Promise that the world should never more be destroyed by *water*: and yet it is also a silent memento of another Judgment, by *fire* (see Gen. ix. 13—16, and on 2 Pet. iii. 7).

The LXX never use the word *iris*, but *τόξον*, perhaps for fear lest a confusion might arise in their reader's mind between it and the *Iris* of ancient Mythology. And the *τόξον* is a weapon of war, below, vi. 2.

The word *iris* occurs again in this book as the characteristic of the Divine Presence in *Christ*, x. 1. And the Rainbow, formed of sunshine and rain, and also the emblem of *Hope*, has a fit place in this Vision of the heavenly Church, after the Gospel Dispensation, in which the dark cloud of men's sinful Nature is irradiated by the beams of the Sun of *Righteousness* (Mal. iv. 2), in the Incarnation of Christ, by which man is reconciled to God, and "Mercy and Truth meet together, Righteousness and Peace kiss each other." Compare the exposition of *Aug.* (?), who says that "the Bow appears in the sky, when the rain-fraught cloud is illumined by the beams of the sun. So, when the Sun of Righteousness, Who is Light Eternal, irradiated our human nature, then the Bow appeared in the cloud, for the World was reconciled to God, and has Hope of Salvation and heavenly Peace."

The *σμάραγδος*, *Emerald*, of a bright green colour, and one of the most brilliant of gems (*Plin.* xxxvii. 5. *Theophrast.* de Gemmis, § 44), is the fourth foundation-stone of the heavenly City (xxi. 19), and the third in the pectoral of the High Priest. (*Epiphan.* l. c.) How different from the Vision of Mercy and Love was the use made of the *Emerald* by two emperors of Rome in the age of St. John, in the earthly capital of the world! It is related of Nero that he used the emerald as a specular lens, wherewith he might view with greater delight the bloody conflicts and agonizing struggles of the Roman gladiators in the arena. *Plin.* l. c. The same is probably true of the Emperor Domitian. One emerald was called *Neronian*, another *Domitian*. *Corsi*, p. 186.

4—6. καὶ κυκλόθεν] and round about the throne twenty-four thrones (θρόνοι, cp. v. 1, 6. 7), and upon the thrones I saw the (τοὺς) twenty-four Elders sitting, clothed in white raiment, and on their heads crowns (στεφάνους, i. e. crowns of victory, see vi. 2) of gold.

And out of the Throne proceed lightnings and voices and thunders.

And seven Lamps of fire burning before the Throne, which are the Seven Spirits of God.

And before the Throne, as it were, a sea of glass like crystal. And in the midst of the Throne, and round about the Throne, four Living Creatures (ζῶα) full of eyes, before and behind. And the first Living Creature like a Lion, and the second Living Creature like a Calf, and the third Living Creature having the face of a Man, and the fourth Living Creature like an Eagle flying. And the four Living Creatures, each of them having six wings, and they have no rest night or day, saying, Holy, Holy, Holy.

As to the translation of this passage, it must first be observed—

(1) That whereas our Authorized Version often introduces the *past* tense in the rendering of it (e. g. "one sat," v. 2; "He that sat was," v. 3; "about the Throne were, and they had crowns of gold, and voices proceeded," v. 5; and "there were seven lamps and there was a sea; and the first beast was like," &c.); in no instance does St. John use a *past* tense here. The Vision represents the Everlasting Glory of God, and the *ever-present* Adoration of Heaven.

(2) The Authorized Version renders the word ζῶα by *beast*.

But the translation *Living Creatures* is to be preferred on many accounts. It is more accurate, as declaring the *life* (ζωή) in these heavenly beings, and as identifying them with the *Living Creatures* in the parallel Vision of Ezekiel, where they are called ζῶα by the LXX (Ezek. i. 20; x. 15. 17. 20), the rendering of the Hebrew חַיִּיּוֹת (*hayyoth*), *living creatures*, which are all collected into one חַיָּה (*hayyah*), *living creature* (Ezek. i. 20), a name connecting them with the *Ever-Living One*, *Jehovah* Himself, and with Christ who is ὁ ζῶν, "the Living One, and the Author of life." (John i. 4. Rev. i. 18.) And it obviates the confusion which, by the use of the word *Beasts*, might arise between these heavenly Animals and the mystical Beasts (θηρία) in chapter xiii. 1. 11, which are opposed to the Lamb, Ἀgnos, i. e. to Christ (xvii. 14); whereas the *Lamb* is here in the midst of these *Living Creatures*, and they adore Him (v. 6. 14).

What then is meant by the TWENTY-FOUR ELDERS and by the FOUR LIVING CREATURES?

It is probable that in a primary sense the *Four-and-Twenty Elders* represent the *Four-and-Twenty Books* of the Old Testament; and the *Four Living Creatures* represent the *Four Gospels*.

In a secondary sense it is probable, that the *Elders* represent the *Church* of the *Elder* dispensation, which received the Old Testament; and the *Four Living Creatures* may represent the *Church* of the *Gospel* Dispensation; and so conjointly, the *Elders* and *Living Creatures* represent the UNIVERSAL CHURCH of God, building her faith on the Holy Scriptures of the Old and New Testament.

In behalf of this opinion it may be remarked, that the *Elders* are introduced as forming a definite and well-known body: though they had not been mentioned before, St. John calls them here "the *Four-and-Twenty*."

Now, the Hebrews call the *Old Testament* by this name, "The *Twenty-Four*." It is the title prefixed to their Bible even to this day. See *Hottinger*, *Thes. Philog.* 1659, p. 101, who says, "The Old Testament is called by the Jews 'The *Twenty-Four*,'" —עשרים וארבע, *Viginti quatuor*. "Tot enim Veteris Testamenti sunt libri Canonici; *Galat.* de Arcan. Cathol. Ver. lib. i. c. 1. *Præfigitur hoc nomen*, ut plurimum, *fronti Bibliorum Hebraicorum* et impressorum et manuscriptorum. *Observa* autem I. libros Canonicos Veteris T. ab ipso Synedrio magno in 24 Volumina distributos. *Buxtorf.* *Comm. Masor.* c. xi. *El. Lev.* *Præfat.* iii. in lib. *Mas. hammas. Rivet.* *Isag. S. Scr.* p. 501. *Atque hinc præsens nomen Bibliis Sacris impositum. Obtinuit autem hic Veteris T. librorum numerus tempore etiam Hieronymi.*"

The Books of Moses.	{ Genesis, Exodus, Leviticus, Numbers, Deuteronomy. }	V.
Five Books of the former Prophets.	{ Joshua, Judges, Ruth, Samuel I. and II., Kings I. and II. }	V.
Books of the Prophets.	{ Isaiah, Jeremiah, Lamentations, Ezekiel, The Book of the Twelve Lesser Prophets. }	V.
The Hagiographa.	{ The Psalms, Proverbs, Ecclesiastes, or The Preacher, The Song of Solomon, The Book of Job, The Book of Daniel, The Books of Ezra and Nehemiah, The Book of Esther, The Books of Chronicles, I. and II. }	IX.

Total, XXIV.

Accordingly, the Books of the OLD TESTAMENT are so arranged in the Sixth Article of the Church of England as to make TWENTY-FOUR.

This exposition of the meaning of the *Twenty-Four Elders* in this Version dates from the third century after Christ. It is given in the Commentary of *Victorinus*, Bishop of Pettau, who says, "*Veteris Testamenti sunt Libri qui accipiuntur Viginti Quatuor*," and is confirmed by *S. Jerome*, who, more than any of the Fathers, was conversant with the Hebrew opinions concerning the Old Testament; and says that "the *Twenty-Four Books* of the Old Testament are represented in the Apocalypse of St. John under the figure of the *Twenty-Four Elders*, adoring the Lamb" (*Jerome*, *Prolog. Galeat. tom. i. p. 318 sqq.*, ed. Paris, 1693); and, speaking of certain Apocryphal books, he says that they are not "admitted among the *Four-and-Twenty Elders*" (in *Ezram*, i. p. 1106). The same interpretation is adopted by *Primasius*, Bishop of Adrumetum, "We receive *Twenty-Four Books* of the Old Testament as the *Twenty-Four Elders* sitting on their thrones;" and by *Ambrosius Ansbertus* (*Bibl. Patr. Max. xiii. p. 464*), and by the Venerable *Bede* and *Haymo*, Bishop of Halberstadt, in their Commentaries on the Apocalypse.

These *Four-and-Twenty Books* may fitly be called *Elders*, as belonging to the *older* dispensation. Compare Heb. xi. 2, where the word *elder* is used in that sense. And they may well be represented as enshrined here in the *heavenly Temple*, as the *Two Tables* of the old Covenant were in the *Holy of Holies* in the Ark (Exod. xxv. 21. Deut. x. 2. 5. Heb. ix. 4), and as the *Five Books* of Moses were, by the side of the Ark (see Deut. xxxi. 9. 24—26. Josh. xxiv. 26), which was the Throne of God (Exod. xxv. 18—22. Numb. vii. 89. 1 Sam. iv. 4. 2 Sam. vi. 2. Ps. lxxx. 1; xcix. 1).

Fitly also are they represented as seated on thrones, indicating the *permanence* of God's Word, which will remain when heaven and earth have passed away (Isa. xl. 8. Matt. xxiv. 35. Luke xvi. 17). The "Word of the Lord endureth for ever" (1 Pet. i. 25), and by it the World will be judged at the Last Day (John xii. 48). And well are they displayed as bearing crowns of *Victory*: for though the World may rebel against God's

τοὺς εἴκοσι τέσσαρας πρεσβυτέρους καθημένους, περιβεβλημένους ἐν ἱματίοις λευκοῖς, καὶ ἐπὶ τὰς κεφαλὰς αὐτῶν στεφάνους χρυσοῦς.

Word, yet it will triumph over all its opponents. See below, on xi. 11, 12.

In confirmation of this exposition it may be observed, that one of the main purposes of the Apocalypse is to console and strengthen the faithful who might otherwise be shaken in their faith by the indignities which the Word of God was to endure at the hands of evil men, some denying its Inspiration, some withholding it from the people, and adding the *Apocrypha* as of equal authority to the Old Testament, others setting at nought its precepts, and violating its laws, and defying its judgments.

Observe also, the Twenty-Four Elders are represented as sitting on *thrones* even by the side of the Triune God (v. 4). They have therefore a *divine* character. And yet they are also represented as *falling down* and casting their crowns before His Throne (v. 10). They have therefore also a *human* element. And in accordance with this union *Ezekiel* describes the Living Creatures as having a "man's hands under their wings" (i. 8; x. 8. 21). Such is Holy Scripture. The Spirit who speaks in Scripture is Divine, but the instrument used by Him is human. Scripture has divine wings, but it has a man's hand under its wings. It is the Voice of God to the world; but it is also the Voice of Man ascribing all praise to God.

This Interpretation is further confirmed by the combination here and in other parts of the Apocalypse of the *Four-and-Twenty Elders* with the *Four Living Creatures*. See here and v. 14; vii. 11; xiv. 3; xix. 4.

The *FOUR LIVING CREATURES*, in a primary sense, seem to represent the *Four Gospels*; and in a secondary sense, the *universal Church of Christ*, preaching the Gospel of Christ every where, and overcoming the World thereby.

The *Four Living Creatures* have been generally supposed by Ancient Expositors to signify the *FOUR GOSPELS*.

This Interpretation comes from the school of St. John himself. It is found in the writings of *S. Irenæus*, the scholar of *S. Polycarp*, the disciple of St. John. Christ is "the Divine Word," says *S. Irenæus* (III. ii. 8), "who is the Creator of all, and sitteth upon the Cherubim, and holds all things together; Who, having been manifested to men, gave us the *quadriform Gospel*, which is held together by one Spirit; as David, praying for his Advent, says, 'Thou that sittest above the Cherubim show Thyself' (Ps. lxxx. 1). For the Cherubim of *Ezekiel* have four faces, and their faces are emblems of the Son of God. For the first *Living Creature* (says St. John) is like a *Lion*, and shows Christ's royal character; the second is like a *Calf*, and shows His sacrificial and priestly office; and the third has the face of a *Man*, and shows His Advent in our human nature; and the fourth like an *Eagle* flying, shows the gift of the Spirit flying down and lighting on His Church. And the Gospels all harmonize with each other; and Christ sitteth upon them And thus the *Living Creatures* are *Quadriform*, and *Quadriform* also is the *Gospel*."

This exposition derives light from the consideration that while in the parallel vision of *Ezekiel*, each of the four Living Creatures is represented as having the face of a *Lion*, a *Calf*, a *Man*, and an *Eagle*; in the Vision of *St. John*, the first Living Creature is described as like a *Lion*, the second as a *Calf*, the third as a *Man*, the fourth as an *Eagle*. This is applicable to the Gospels. Each has a character of its own; one Gospel describing more minutely the Royal Office, another the sacrificial character of Christ, another displaying His Human Nature more clearly, and another exhibiting His Divine; and yet each of the four Gospels presents Christ as King, and Victim, and Priest, and as Man and God. As *S. Gregory* says (on *Ezekiel*), "Whatever is in one Gospel is in all the four, for all proclaim One Christ, God and Man. And yet each Gospel has its own character; and so the Living Creatures, each according to their own special purpose, preach Him Who is Man by being born for us, a Calf by dying for us, a Lion by rising in triumph, and an Eagle by His Ascension into heaven." And *S. Victorinus* says, in the third century, "that these evangelical declarations of God's Spirit are four and yet one, because they proceed from one Divine Source, like the four Rivers of Paradise flowing from one head" (Gen. ii. 10).

This view had been represented by the language of *Ezekiel*, who calls the living creatures *four*, and yet *one* (p. 182). See above. It had also, perhaps, been typified by the arrangements of the Tabernacle.

The Tabernacle of the Israelites—the figure of the *Universal Church*—was *quadrangular*. Encamped on the East side were three tribes, the chief being that of Judah, with the ensign of a *Lion*. (See the Rabbinical Authorities in *Mede's* works, pp. 437.

594, and *Lightfoot*, i. p. 2058, compared with Num. i. 52, and ii. 2—31.) On the West were three other tribes, the chief being Ephraim, with the ensign of an *Ox*. On the South were three other tribes, the chief being Reuben, with the ensign of a *Man*. On the North were three other tribes, the chief being Dan, with the ensign of an *Eagle*. Cp. below, on vii. 5—8, and on St. Luke, p. 163.

Thus these four Emblems typify the quadriform unity and completeness of the *WHOLE CHURCH* looking to the four Cardinal points of heaven, and diffused in the four quarters of the Earth; and triumphing over the World by means of the *Four GOSPELS*, borne as a *Standard* by the Army of the spiritual Israel—the Christian Church—to the four corners of the World.

On the whole it may be affirmed, that this exposition, which regards the *Four Living Creatures* as emblems of the *Four Gospels*, is sanctioned by the concurrent testimony of ancient Expositors. It may be seen in *Victorinus*, Bishop and Martyr in the third century, who says, "Quatuor animalia sunt quatuor Evangelia." Or as *Victorinus* here expresses it, "Christ in the Gospels is like a flying Eagle, because He overcame death and spreads out His Wings and soars aloft, and protects His people with His Wings." See below, xii. 14; and the Greek Interpreters in *Catená*, p. 245, thus speak, "In these Living Creatures we see the offices of Christ; in the Lion His Royalty; in the Calf His Sacrifice; in the Man His Incarnation; in the Eagle His bestowal of the heavenly gift of the Holy Ghost, which quickens all."

S. Jerome says (Epist. 50, ad Paulin., and Proem. ad Matth.), that "the Four Gospels are the Fourfold Chariot of God, and the true Cherubim, full of eyes and mutually interwoven with each other. One is like a Lion, another a Man, another a Calf, another a flying Eagle. Whence," he adds, "it is evident, that we may acknowledge only Four Gospels and no more; and must reject all other books pretending to Evangelical authority." Similar language is used by *S. Ambrose*, *S. Augustine* (in passages already quoted in the *Introduction* to the *Four Gospels*, p. xli, new edition, and in the *Introduction* to St. Luke, p. 163, and on St. Luke xv. 23), and *S. Gregory* (in *Ezek.* i. and x.), and by *Andreas*, *Primasius*, *Bede*, *Haymo*, and others. And though there are some discrepancies among these writers as to the particular Gospels which the *Four Living Creatures* respectively represented (see on the Gospels, *Introd.* p. xlii), yet these discrepancies show that these expositors do not merely transcribe one another's words, but derive their interpretations from independent sources, and serve to confirm the testimony in which they all agree, that the *Four Living Creatures* represent the *Four Gospels*.

If it should be objected, that it is too bold a figure to represent *Books* as *living*, it must be remembered that we are contemplating a heavenly Vision; and that the imagery of the Apocalypse, like that of Hebrew prophecy, is characterized by sublime and glowing aspirations; and that our ordinary estimates of Holy Scripture fall short of its true dignity, as portrayed by God Himself in Holy Writ. We are accustomed to regard Scripture as a *book* to be read, and we are too apt to forget its *living* energy. Our familiarity with it has sometimes tended to its disparagement. And the tone of Criticism with which it has been handled by many in later days, has greatly tended to impair the popular reverence for the Divine Word.

But God Himself describes Holy Scripture as a *living* agent. The Scripture *speaks* (Mark xv. 28. Rom. iv. 3; ix. 17; x. 11; xi. 2. Gal. iv. 30. 1 Tim. v. 18. James ii. 8. 23). Especially is this attribute assigned to it in St. John's Gospel (John vii. 38. 42; xix. 37). The Scripture *foresees* (Gal. iii. 8). God's Word is said to be *Life* (Deut. xxxii. 47). The Scripture is animated by the breath of God (2 Tim. iii. 16). The Sacred Oracles are *alive* (ζῶντα, Acts vii. 38), a phrase akin to the *Living Creatures* of the Apocalypse. Descriptions of the *Written Word* of God are often blended together with, and run into, descriptions of the *Incarnate Word Himself*; as in that sentence of St. Paul, "The Word of God is *living* (ζῶν), and sharper than any two-edged sword" (Heb. iv. 12), and it is said to have the power of *quickening* or *giving life* (Ps. cxix. 50; cp. James i. 18).

The truth of this interpretation seems to have been felt by the Church of Christ. The *Four Gospels* were placed on *thrones* in the ancient Councils of Christendom. In the Great Council of Ephesus, as *S. Cyril* says (Labbé, Council iii. p. 1044), "the Holy Gospel was on a throne preaching to the venerable Bishops, 'Judge ye right judgment.'" And Christian Art, both in Sculpture and Painting, has adopted the four Apocalyptic *Living Creatures* as symbols of the *Four Gospels*. Cp. *Thomasius*, Thesaurus Theologico-Philologicus, ii. p. 57.

c ch. 1. 4.
& 3. 1. & 5. 6.

d ch. 15. 2.

e Isa. 6. 2, 3.
ch. 1. 4, 8.
& 11. 17. & 16. 5.

⁵ ^c Καὶ ἐκ τοῦ θρόνου ἐκπορεύονται ἀστραπαὶ καὶ φωναὶ καὶ βρονταί· καὶ ἑπτὰ λαμπάδες πυρὸς καιόμεναι ἐνώπιον τοῦ θρόνου, αἷ εἰσι τὰ ἑπτὰ πνεύματα τοῦ Θεοῦ. ⁶ ^d Καὶ ἐνώπιον τοῦ θρόνου ὡς θάλασσα ὑαλίνη ὁμοία κρυστάλλῳ.

Καὶ ἐν μέσῳ τοῦ θρόνου καὶ κύκλῳ τοῦ θρόνου τέσσαρα ζῶα γέμοντα ὀφθαλμῶν ἔμπροσθεν καὶ ὀπισθεν. ⁷ Καὶ τὸ ζῶον τὸ πρῶτον ὅμοιον λέοντι, καὶ τὸ δεύτερον ζῶον ὅμοιον μόσχῳ, καὶ τὸ τρίτον ζῶον ἔχον τὸ πρόσωπον ἀνθρώπου, καὶ τὸ τέταρτον ζῶον ὅμοιον ἀετῷ πετομένῳ. ⁸ ^e Καὶ τὰ τέσσαρα ζῶα ἐν καθ' ἑαυτὸ ἔχον ἀνὰ πτέρυγας ἕξ, κυκλόθεν καὶ ἔσωθεν γέμουσιν ὀφθαλμῶν, καὶ ἀνάπαυσιν οὐκ ἔχουσιν ἡμέρας καὶ νυκτὸς λέγοντες, Ἁγίος, ἅγιος, ἅγιος Κύριος ὁ Θεὸς ὁ παντοκράτωρ, ὁ ἦν καὶ ὁ ὢν καὶ ὁ ἐρχόμενος.

⁹ Καὶ ὅταν δώσουσι τὰ ζῶα δόξαν καὶ τιμὴν καὶ εὐχαριστίαν τῷ καθημένῳ ἐπὶ τοῦ θρόνου, τῷ ζῶντι εἰς τοὺς αἰῶνας τῶν αἰώνων, ¹⁰ πεσοῦνται οἱ εἴκοσι τέσσαρες πρεσβύτεροι ἐνώπιον τοῦ καθημένου ἐπὶ τοῦ θρόνου, καὶ προσκυνήσουσι τῷ ζῶντι εἰς τοὺς αἰῶνας τῶν αἰώνων, καὶ βαλοῦσι τοὺς στεφάνους αὐτῶν

And the Sacred Poetry of the Church has accepted the same interpretation, and regards these Living Creatures as representing the fourfold Gospel, displaying the fourfold character of Christ. Thus, for example, the Ancient Christian Hymn thus speaks:—

“Currunt rotis, volant alis
Visus, sensus spiritalis;
Rota gressus est æqualis,
Ala contemplatio.
Quatuor describunt isti
Quadriformes actus Christi,
Et figurant, ut audisti,
Quisque suâ formulâ.
Natus homo declaratur,
Vitulus sacrificatur,
Leo mortem deprædatur,
Sed ascendit Aquila.”

(See *Clichtov. Elucid.* p. 212, or *Daniel, Thes. Hymnol.* ii. 84.)

Lastly, the soundness of an interpretation of a passage of Scripture, especially of a prophetic book like the Apocalypse, may be estimated and tested by the *practical and doctrinal religious uses* which are subserved by the Interpretation.

The *uses* of the present Interpretation are manifold.

(1) It rescues the mind of the reader from the danger to which he is exposed in modern times of disparaging Holy Scripture.

This Vision confirms the Faith of the Church in the Word of God; and it seems to be a special purpose of St. John in the Apocalypse to render this important service to the Church of Christ. It raises our eyes, and invites us to regard God's Word “as enduring for ever in heaven;” not as a lifeless Volume, but as *personified*, as *enthroned*, as wearing a crown of *Victory*. It teaches us to regard the Gospel, as *full of eyes*, as *winged*, and as proclaiming the *fourfold character of Christ*, and as the *Throne of God on which He sits*, and as His *Chariot on which He rides*. Lest, however, from the glory thus ascribed to Holy Scripture, we should imagine it to be proposed as an object of our adoration, the Vision represents the Elders and Living Creatures as worshipping the Triune God, and ascribing Glory to the Lamb. What St. John says of the *Gospel*, is true of *all* the Scriptures. “These are written that ye might believe that Jesus is the Christ the Son of God, and that believing ye might have life through His Name.” (John xx. 31.)

One use, therefore, of this exposition, is to remind us of the *Divine Inspiration of Holy Scripture*, and to guard us against all attacks of the Evil One against God's Word.

(2) Another practical use of this Interpretation is, as was suggested by *S. Jerome* and others in ancient days, to guard us against receiving *any other Books as Scripture*, which are *not* Scripture.

There are *Twenty-four Elders* in the Vision; and the ancient Church of God received only *Twenty-four Books* of the Old Testament; Christ Himself received *them*, and *them only* (see on Luke xxiv. 44). But the Church of Rome, although she professes great reverence for *S. Jerome*, and especially for his services in the cause of Holy Scripture (see the Collect in her Breviary for his festival, Sept. 30), and even now inserts his Prologues in her Vulgate, yet in direct opposition to *S. Jerome*, has added other books (*viz.* the Apocrypha) as equally inspired with the Books of

the Old Testament; and anathematizes all who do not receive those other Books as of equal authority with those which alone were received as inspired by the ancient Church of God, and by Jesus Christ Himself. (Council of Trent, Session iv.)

The Vision, therefore, thus interpreted, serves as a safeguard against those who would adulterate the divine Word with human alloy.

5. ἀστραπαὶ, κ.τ.λ.] *lightnings and voices and thunders*. This adjunct confirms the opinion that St. John is here speaking of God's Word. Thunder is the Voice of God. St. John himself, as a preacher of God's Word, was named by Christ “a son of *Thunder*.” See on Mark iii. 17; cp. below, x. 3.

— ἑπτὰ λαμπάδες] *seven torches of fire*: λαμπὰς in this book does not mean a *lamp* (see viii. 10), but a *torch* (cp. John xviii. 3); and these seven torches or flambeaux of fire burning before the Throne, are contrasted with the Star which *fell* as a *torch* from heaven (viii. 10); cp. *Wetstein*, i. p. 507; and *Trench*, *Synonyms N. T.* p. 193.

— τὰ ἑπτὰ πνεύματα] *the seven spirits*: see above, i. 4, and below, v. 6.

6. ὡς θάλασσα ὑαλίνη ὁμοία κρυστάλλῳ] *as a Sea of glass, like unto crystal*. See below, xv. 2, 3. *Sea*, in this book, represents the element of *tumult* and *confusion* in the lower world (see xiii. 1). But here, by way of contrast, there is, in the heavenly Church, a *Sea of glass*, expressive of smoothness and brightness, and *this* heavenly sea is of *crystal*: declaring that the calm of heaven is not like earthly seas, ruffled by winds, but is *crystallized* into an *eternity of peace*.

8. λέγοντες] *saying*. So A, B, and thirty Cursives.—*Elz.* has λέγοντα. This masculine participle, joined with the neuter ζῶα, expresses strongly the personal vitality of the *Living Creatures*.

— Ἁγίος, ἅγιος, ἅγιος] *Holy, Holy, Holy*. The thrice *Holy* is an Eucharistic ascription of Glory to the *Ever-Blessed Trinity*, and is derived from the Ancient Church of God (Isa. vi. 3), and is adopted by the Christian Church, which uses it in the *Trisagion* at the Holy Eucharist.

The Church has also declared her mind on the sense of these words, by appointing this Chapter of the Apocalypse as the Epistle to be used on the Festival of *Trinity Sunday*.

The Worship rendered to Almighty God by the *UNIVERSAL CHURCH* upon *earth*, reflects, as in a mirror, the worship of the *CHURCH* in *heaven*; and therefore the language of heavenly worship,—as here described, and below, v. 8—10, and Isa. vi. 3,—is happily embodied by the Church in the *TE DEUM*, which is her song of praise in Divine Service when she has read one Lesson of *Holy Scripture* from the Old Testament, and is about to read another from the New. See the *Rev. Philip Freeman* on the Principles of Divine Service, pp. 351—355, where the parallel is well drawn out.

9, 10. καὶ ὅταν] *And when the Living Creatures shall give (δώσουσι) glory and honour and thanks to Him that sitteth on the Throne, Who liveth for ever and ever, the Twenty-four Elders will fall down (πεσοῦνται) and will worship (προσκυνήσουσι) Him that liveth for ever and ever, and will cast (βαλοῦσι) their crowns before the Throne, saying,—*

9. ὅταν δώσουσι] *when they shall give*: as often as they shall give. On this use of the future, see *Winer*, § 42, p. 276.

10. πεσοῦνται—προσκυνήσουσι—βαλοῦσι] The preponderance of MSS. has the future tense here (and *not* the present), and so *Griesb.*, *Scholz*, *Tisch.* These future tenses seem to intimate

ἐνώπιον τοῦ θρόνου λέγοντες, ¹¹ Ἁξίος εἶ, ὁ Κύριος καὶ ὁ Θεὸς ἡμῶν, λαβεῖν ^{ch. 5. 12.} τὴν δόξαν καὶ τὴν τιμὴν καὶ τὴν δύναμιν, ὅτι σὺ ἔκτισας τὰ πάντα, καὶ διὰ τὸ θέλημά σου ἦσαν, καὶ ἐκτίσθησαν.

V. ¹ Καὶ εἶδον ἐπὶ τὴν δεξιὰν τοῦ καθημένου ἐπὶ τοῦ θρόνου βιβλίον ^{a Ezek. 2. 9, 10. Isa. 29. 11. Dan. 12. 4.} γεγραμμένον ἔσωθεν καὶ ὀπισθεν, κατεσφραγισμένον σφραγῖσιν ἑπτά.

that the action was still *future* when St. John wrote the Apocalypse. They also show, that the Adoration rendered by the *Four Living Creatures* is the signal for the Adoration to be given by the *Twenty-Four Elders*.

This harmonizes with the Exposition offered above. The *FOUR GOSPELS* proclaim the glory and the love of the Eternal Trinity, and teach the World to worship the Unity, in the power of the Divine Majesty; and they contain the Divine Commission to baptize all Nations into the Name of the FATHER, and of the SON, and of the HOLY GHOST. Thus they are ever singing in clear strains a doxology—the HOLY, HOLY, HOLY—to the Ever-Blessed Trinity. Thus the Gospels give the signal for the full expression of glory and praise rendered to God by the OLD TESTAMENT.

The *Evangelical Trisagion* of the Four Living Creatures evokes the Choral Antiphon of the *Elders*. The *New Testament*, in revealing the doctrine of the Ever-Blessed Trinity, displays the things which Prophets and Kings and Righteous men of old desired to see but had not seen (Matt. xiii. 17. Luke x. 24. Rom. xvi. 25, 26. Heb. xi. 13); the Mysteries of God's grace in the Lamb Who was slain, not only for the literal Israel, but to redeem *all men*, of "every kindred and tongue and people and nation, and to make them Kings and Priests to God" (Eph. i. 9; iii. 3–9. Col. i. 26). The types and prophecies of the *Old Testament*, which had before lain in dimness and obscurity, were lighted up by the Gospel; and what was before dumb *brake forth into singing* (Isa. xlv. 23), and gave glory to the Triune God.

They cast their crowns before the throne—a mark of subjection, and act of homage. *Tacit.*, Annal. xv. 29, "Ad quam (effigiem Neronis) progressus Tiridates sublatum capiti diadema subjecit." *Wetst.*

11. τὴν δόξαν] the glory, the honour, the power. To Thee, and to Thee alone, O God, it all belongs; cp. v. 13.

—διὰ τὸ θέλημά σου] for Thy will and pleasure. See Matt. xxvii. 18, διὰ φθόνον. Eph. ii. 4, διὰ τὴν πολλὴν ἀγάπην. *Winer*, p. 355.

—ἦσαν] they were: so the best MSS., and *Griesb.*, *Lach.*, *Tisch.*—*Elz.* εἶσι. But ἦσαν is very expressive, and far preferable. No sooner didst Thou *will* their Being, than they *were*. "God said, Let there be Light, and there *was* Light" (Gen. i. 3), φῶς ἐγένετο, it was made, and it existed (ἦν).

CH. V.] St. John sees a Roll upon (ἐπὶ) the right hand of the Triune God. It is sealed down (κατεσφραγισμένον) with seven seals. No one is able to open the Roll and to reveal its contents, but the "Lion of the Tribe of Judah" (v. 5), who is also here called the "Root of David," and the "Lamb who had been slain" (v. 6). Throughout the Apocalypse Jesus Christ, Who is the Λόγος or "WORD of God" (xix. 13), is represented as the Person by Whom God's Revelations are given to the world; see above, i. 1.

He comes, and takes the Roll out of the right hand of Him Who sitteth on the throne; and when he has taken the Roll, the Four Living Creatures and the Twenty-Four Elders sing a new song, and praise Him Who has redeemed men of all nations by His blood, and has made them Kings and Priests to God, and they reign on the earth (v. 10). This ascription of praise by the *Living Creatures*, and by the *Elders*, is followed by a hymn of Adoration to the LAMB, sung by myriads of *Angels*, and offering worship to the Lamb in terms (v. 12) like those which had been addressed to the TRIUNE GOD (iv. 11).

Lastly, all *Creatures* in all places unite in giving glory to the TRIUNE GOD and to the LAMB (vv. 13, 14).

1. εἶδον ἐπὶ τὴν δεξιάν] I saw upon the right hand of Him that sitteth on the Throne a Roll written within and on the back, sealed down with seven seals. The word βιβλίον ought not to be rendered here *Book*, but *Roll*, in order that the dominant idea of the gradual unrolling of the Volume, and of the unfolding of its contents, may be kept before the eye of the reader. The Roll is ἐπὶ τὴν δεξιάν, upon the right hand; the word *right hand* is the accusative case (τὴν δεξιάν, not τῇ δεξιᾷ, dative), which seems to indicate the truth that the Roll was not placed in it by any external power; but that it lies upon it as upon its foundation. The Roll of the World's destiny rests upon God's hand:

VOL. II.—PART IV.

cp. below, xx. 1; and Ps. xcv. 4, "In His hand are all the corners of the Earth," and all the events of Futurity.

The ancient Interpreters agree in regarding this Book or Roll as a *prophetic* one: in the words of *Prudentius* (Cath. vi. 84) describing this Vision,—

"Evangelista summi
Fidissimus Magistri,
Signata quæ latebant
Nebulis videt remotis;
Ipsam Tonantis AGNUM
De cæde purpurantem,
Qui conscium futuri
Librum resignat unus."

The Roll is sealed down, because it is a *prophetic* roll, and because the *future* is hidden from human eyes; and it is upon the right hand of Him that sitteth on the Throne, because the sufferings of the Christian Church, which are contained in this Roll, are under the control of God, and nothing can happen to her without His providential dispensation, Who ever sitteth (observe the present tense) on the throne. Cp. Ps. xcix. 1, "He sitteth between the Cherubim, be the Earth never so unquiet."

The Lamb, who is Christ, in His Human Nature—suffering—and meriting and obtaining all glory and power by His sufferings and perfect obedience (Phil. ii. 6–10), comes and takes the Roll out of the hand of Him that sitteth on the Throne. "He, as Son of Man (says *Primasius*), receives from the Father, and from Himself, that dispensation which is from both those Persons of the Trinity; for both sit together with the Holy Spirit on the Throne of God." See the language of St. Paul (Col. i. 19), signifying the consent of Christ as God to His own assumption of the nature of man. "According to His humiliation as man," says *Aug.* here, "Christ received the roll, and not according to His Godhead;" and he confirms this statement by the words of Christ Himself, "All power is given to Me," i. e. as Man. Matt. xxviii. 18. "Christ (says *Bede*) is here represented as a Lamb according to His suffering Manhood, taking a roll from the right hand of God. But in the glory of His Godhead He is ever at God's Right Hand." Cp. note above, iv. 3.

The seals of this prophetic Roll are seven, because seven is the sacred symbol of completeness; and because this Roll reaches to the rest or Sabbath of Eternity. As our Authorized Version rightly says in the heading of this chapter, "It contains a prophecy to the End of the World." See above, *Introduction*, pp. 151, 152; and below, viii. 1.

It is written within and on the back (ὀπισθεν, or as some MSS. read, ἔξωθεν—which is an explanatory gloss—outside)—another mark of its fulness and completion. According to ancient usage, a parchment roll was first written on the inside, and if the inside was filled with writing, then the outside was used, or back part of the roll; and if that also was covered with writing, and the whole available space was occupied, the book was called *opistho-graphos* (written on the back side; *Lucian*, Vit. Auction. 9. *Plin.* Epist. iii. 5); or written "in aversâ chartâ," *Martial*, viii. 22; whence *Juvenal*, describing a roll filled with writing to overflowing, says (Sat. i. 6),

"—summi plenâ jam margine libri
Scriptus, et in tergo, necdum finitus, Orestes."

See *Wetstein*, p. 768. This prophetic roll sealed up, filled with writing, and sealed with seven seals, contains a prophecy reaching to the end of the World. This is the uniform Exposition of all Ancient Interpreters, from the third century for a thousand years in uninterrupted succession.

The neglect of this fundamental truth has led to much perplexity and embarrassment in some modern Interpretations of the Apocalypse.

In order to have a clear idea of the Vision which now ensues, we must imagine a Roll, wrapped round a cylindrical wand, and sealed down with seven Seals (cp. *Jahn*, Archæol. § 88. *Winer*, R. W. B., ii. p. 422. Art. *Schreibkunst*). When one Seal is broken by the hand of Christ, a portion of the Roll is unwrapped, and its contents are disclosed; then a second Seal is broken; and so on, till the seven Seals are opened, and the whole Volume is unrolled.

B B

b Phil. 2. 10.
ver. 13.

² Καὶ εἶδον ἄγγελον ἰσχυρὸν κηρύσσοντα ἐν φωνῇ μεγάλῃ, Τίς ἄξιος ἀνοῖξαι τὸ βιβλίον, καὶ λῦσαι τὰς σφραγίδας αὐτοῦ; ³ ^b Καὶ οὐδεὶς ἠδύνατο ἐν τῷ οὐρανῷ, οὐδὲ ἐπὶ τῆς γῆς, οὐδὲ ὑποκάτω τῆς γῆς, ἀνοῖξαι τὸ βιβλίον, οὐδὲ βλέπειν αὐτό.

c Gen. 49. 9, 10.
Isa. 11. 1, 10.
Rom. 15. 12.
ch. 22. 16. & 6. 1.
d John 1. 29, 36.
1 Pet. 1. 19.
ch. 13. 8.
Zech. 3. 9.
& 4. 10.
ch. 4. 5.

⁴ Καὶ ἐγὼ ἔκλαιον πολὺν, ὅτι οὐδεὶς ἄξιος εὐρέθη ἀνοῖξαι τὸ βιβλίον, οὔτε βλέπειν αὐτό. ⁵ ^c Καὶ εἷς ἐκ τῶν πρεσβυτέρων λέγει μοι, Μὴ κλαῖε· ἰδοὺ ἐνίκησεν ὁ λέων ὁ ἐκ τῆς φυλῆς Ἰούδα, ἡ ρίζα Δαυὶδ, ἀνοῖξαι τὸ βιβλίον καὶ τὰς ἑπτὰ σφραγίδας αὐτοῦ.

⁶ ^d Καὶ εἶδον ἐν μέσῳ τοῦ θρόνου καὶ τῶν τεσσάρων ζώων, καὶ ἐν μέσῳ τῶν

This prophetic Roll or Volume is not traced with alphabetical characters, but with hieroglyphical symbols. The first symbol is exhibited at the opening of the first Seal, and the second symbol at the second Seal; and each symbol portrays the future state of the Christian Church in that period to which it refers; and so on, in succession, till we are brought, with the opening of the seventh Seal, to the final condition of the Church on earth.

This Roll, as we shall see, reveals a brief and rapid view of the successive sufferings of the Church of Christ from St. John's age to the end of the world.

3. καὶ οὐδεὶς ἠδύνατο] and no one was able to open the roll. Cp. Acts i. 7; and on the sense of the negative particles here and in the next verse, see Winer, pp. 435, 436.

4. ἐγὼ ἔκλαιον πολὺν] I was weeping much. Observe the imperfect tense; and ἔκλαιον, a stronger word than ἐδάκρυον. See Matt. xxvi. 75. Mark xiv. 72. Luke xix. 41.

5, 6. ἐνίκησεν ὁ λέων] The Lion who is (ὁ ὢν) of the tribe of Judah, the root of David, overcame—prevailed—to open the roll and its seven seals. . . . And I beheld, in the midst of the Throne and of the Four Living Creatures, and in the midst of the Elders, a Lamb standing, as it had been slain.

On the infinitive after ἐνίκησεν, see Winer, § 44, p. 284.

Christ alone is able to open the sealed book, and to reveal the future. See above, i. 1. Hence S. Hippolytus (p. 159, ed. Lagarde), quoting this chapter (vv. 1, 2. 6—9), remarks, that it is through Him alone that the sacred counsels of the Godhead are unlocked and revealed to man.

Observe the contrast between this manifestation of Christ, and that of Moses coming from the Mount. Moses veiled his face, but Christ unseals the Book. Cp. on 2 Cor. iii. 7. 13. 15.

Observe ὁ ὢν, He that is, He that exists, from the tribe of Judah; denoting Christ's continuance and energy. Cp. i. 4.

Observe also ἐνίκησεν here; He conquered; a word which prepares the way for the description in the first Seal (vi. 2), where Christ is represented as going forth conquering and to conquer (νικῶν, καὶ ἵνα νικήσῃ).

Here are three names of Christ;—the LION, the ROOT of DAVID, the LAMB.

The combination of these figures, all descriptive of the same Person, reminds the reader, that the language of the Apocalypse is not literal, but symbolical, and is to be interpreted accordingly.

The words "LION of the Tribe of Judah," the royal tribe, bespeak Christ's sovereignty, and are derived from Jacob's prophecy (Gen. xlix. 9, 10).

The name, "Root of David," proclaims that Christ is more than a Branch or Rod from out of the stem of Jesse (Isa. xi. 1). It declares that He is the origin of David. And here St. John joins with Isaiah, who describes Christ as the Rod of Jesse, and also the Root of Jesse. He is the Rod because He is Man; He is the Root because He is God. Cp. Andreas, p. 253.

He is also the Lamb; meek and innocent (Isa. liii. 7. Acts viii. 32); the true Paschal Lamb (1 Cor. v. 7), who delivers the spiritual Israel from the wrath of God, and from the sword of the destroying Angel; and they are redeemed with His precious blood, "as of a Lamb without blemish and without spot" (1 Pet. i. 19). He is the Lamb of God Who taketh away the Sin of the World (John i. 29).

Christ is called here the Lion (v. 5), and it is said that He has conquered (ἐνίκησεν), and then He is displayed as a Lamb who has suffered (v. 6); and why? because it was by His sufferings as a Lamb that He conquered as a Lion. And, therefore, while we love Him as the Lamb, let us fear Him also as the Lion. The Cross in the hand of the Lamb is the banner of His Victory. As the ancient hymn beautifully expresses it,

"Dic tropæum passionis, dic triumphalem crucem;
Pange vexillum, notatis quod refulget frontibus."

Prudentius (Cath. ix. 84).

Comp. above, Col. ii. 13—15.

It is remarkable, that, in describing Christ as the Lamb, St. John, in his Gospel, uses the word Ἀμνὸς (Agnus) (John. i. 29. 36), and so do other writers of the New Testament (1 Pet. i. 19. Cp. Acts viii. 32); and they never use Ἀρνίον. But, in the Apocalypse, St. John never uses the word Ἀμνὸς, but always uses Ἀρνίον; and in this book the word Ἀρνίον occurs about thirty times. For the probable reason of this difference of usage see below, on xvii. 3.

The LAMB is here represented standing, as having been slain (cp. Isa. liii. 7. Jer. xi. 19). Although Christ was slain, yet He stands. He was not overthrown. On the contrary, by falling He stood, and makes us (who fell in the first Adam) to stand upright in Him who is the Second Adam. His πτώμα is our σῶμα (see Matt. xxiv. 28). By dying He overcame Death; by His Death He destroyed him that had the power of it, even the Devil (Heb. ii. 14. Col. ii. 15. Hos. xiii. 14).

Observe here the contrast between the Ἀρνίον ὡς ἐσφαγμένον, the Lamb, as it were slain, in order to live for ever (see v. 12, and i. 18), and to be the cause of eternal Life to all; and what is said below in the Thirteenth Chapter concerning the head of the Beast, as it were slain to death (θηρίον, ὡς ἐσφαγμένον εἰς θάνατον, xiii. 3), and the declaration that he goeth to destruction (εἰς ἀπώλειαν ὑπάγει, xvii. 8. 11).

The Lamb is here displayed as in the midst (ἐν μέσῳ) of the Throne; "In Him dwelleth all the fulness of the Godhead bodily" (Col. ii. 9), and He "is in the bosom of the Father" (John i. 18).

He is also described as in the midst of the Living Creatures, and of the Elders; Christ, the Lamb slain from the foundation of the World (xiii. 8), is the central figure of the Four Gospels, and also of all the Books of the Old Testament. See Luke xxiv. 25—27. 44. John i. 45.

He is represented as having been slain, and as standing. This Passage affords a striking refutation of the modern notion of the Roman Church, that Christ's sacrifice is perpetually repeated upon Earth in the Holy Eucharist. As the ancient Expositors rightly interpret the passage, "The Lamb stands," He does not lie, as a Lamb which is slain, does. He stands, because He is risen, and dieth no more (i. 18. Rom. vi. 9). He stands, because He is our Advocate, ever living to make intercession for us (Heb. vii. 25), and because He is our Champion, ever ready to succour and defend us (Acts vii. 55, 56).

This is also manifest from the use of the perfect tense here, ἐσφαγμένον, which declares that the Lamb has been once immolated, and that the benefit of His sacrifice remains; and that He is not now continually being sacrificed (σφαζόμενον), and therefore He is here manifested in glory to St. John, as having triumphed over death by dying, and as having been made perfect through suffering (Heb. ii. 10). See Andreas, Arethas, and Haymo here.

This is also further intimated by the conjunction ὡς, as. St. John does not say that he saw a Lamb being sacrificed, but that he saw a Lamb standing, as if it had been sacrificed: that is, bearing marks of its sacrificial immolation that was past; as Christ showed the prints of the nails, and the mark of the spear in His side, to His disciples (Luke xxiv. 39, 40. John xx. 20. 27). Consequently, the song of the heavenly host is not, Worthy is the Lamb that is being slain, but Worthy is the Lamb that hath been slain (v. 12), and Worthy art Thou to receive the Book, for Thou wast slain (ἐσφάγης, observe the aorist), and didst redeem us by Thy blood (v. 9, see note).

Therefore, although Romish Divines affirm that the Sacrifice on the Cross is continued in the Holy Eucharist, and that Christ is every day immolated on the Altars of their Churches (see above, on Heb. x. 12), yet it is allowed by the best Romish Expositors of the Apocalypse, that this passage literally and grammatically interpreted is not to be expounded in that sense, "although the Holy Spirit may seem here to allude to it." See A Lapide here.

πρεσβυτέρων, ἄρνιον εσθηκὸς ὡς ἐσφαγμένον, ἔχον κέρατα ἑπτὰ καὶ ὀφθαλμοὺς ἑπτὰ, ἃ εἰσὶ τὰ ἑπτὰ τοῦ Θεοῦ πνεύματα τὰ ἀποστελλόμενα εἰς πᾶσαν τὴν γῆν.
⁷ Καὶ ἦλθε καὶ εἴληφε τὸ βιβλίον ἐκ τῆς δεξιᾶς τοῦ καθημένου ἐπὶ τοῦ θρόνου.
⁸ Καὶ ὅτε ἔλαβε τὸ βιβλίον, τὰ τέσσαρα ζῶα καὶ οἱ εἰκοσιτέσσαρες πρεσβύτεροι ἔπεσαν ἐνώπιον τοῦ ἄρνιου, ἔχοντες ἑκάστος κιθάραν, καὶ φιάλας χρυσᾶς γεμούσας θυμιαμάτων, αἱ εἰσὶν αἱ προσευχαὶ τῶν ἁγίων.⁹ καὶ ᾄδουσιν ᾠδὴν καινὴν λέγοντες, Ἄξιός ἐστι λαβεῖν τὸ βιβλίον, καὶ ἀνοῖξαι τὰς σφραγίδας αὐτοῦ, ὅτι ἐσφάγης, καὶ ἡγόρασας τῷ Θεῷ ἐν τῷ αἵματί σου ἐκ πάσης φυλῆς καὶ γλώσσης, καὶ λαοῦ καὶ ἔθνους,¹⁰ καὶ ἐποίησας αὐτοὺς τῷ Θεῷ ἡμῶν βασιλεῖς καὶ ἱερεῖς, καὶ βασιλεύουσιν ἐπὶ τῆς γῆς.

e Ps. 141. 2.
ch. 8. 3, 4.
& 14. 2.
f ch. 14. 3.
Ps. 40. 3.
& 96. 1.
ch. 4. 11.
Acts 20. 28.
1 Cor. 6. 20.
& 7. 23.
Eph. 1. 7.
Col. 1. 14.
1 Pet. 1. 18, 19.
2 Pet. 2. 1.
1 John 1. 7.
Dan. 4. 1.
& 6. 25.
ch. 7. 9. & 11. 9.
g Exod. 19. 6.
1 Pet. 2. 5, 9.
ch. 1. 6. & 20. 6.

— κέρατα ἑπτὰ] *seven horns*, i. e. universal dominion (see Matt. xxviii. 18). The horn is an emblem of *power*. See above, on Luke i. 69, and cp. below, xii. 3; xiii. 1. 11; xvii. 3. 7. 12. 16. *Seven* is the number of completeness; a symbol of Universality.

The *Seven Horns* are on the *Head* of the *Lamb*; all the spiritual power and privileges of Churches and of Christians is due to their foundation and elevation upon Christ. He is the *Rock* on which the Church is built. (Matt. xvi. 18.)

— τὰ ἑπτὰ τοῦ Θεοῦ πνεύματα] *the seven spirits of God*. See above on i. 4.

⁷. καὶ ἦλθε] *And He came, and hath taken the roll out of the right hand of Him that sitteth on the Throne*. Observe the perfect tense (εἴληφε) here (*He hath taken*), marking not only an act, but a state (see above on 1 John iii. 9, and cp. vii. 14; viii. 5, and note above on 2 Cor. vii. 5, ἔσχηκεν). He *hath taken* the book, and *holds it*. St. John sees Him in the Vision as *holding the Book*.

Christ *hath taken it*, and holds it as His *right* by virtue of His obedience and sufferings (see Phil. ii. 9). Contrast this with the call to John to take the little roll (x. 8).

⁸. ὅτε ἔλαβε] *when He took; not "when He had taken."* The heavenly song of praise to the Lamb coincides in time with Christ's act of taking the Roll.

— ἔχοντες] *having each of them a harp, and vials* (broad and shallow bowls) *of gold, full of incense, which* (bowls) *are* (i. e. signify, see i. 20) *the prayers of the saints*.

The word φιάλη (connected with φῶ, *suf-fio*, which may be compared with θύω, and *thus*, incense) does not signify a *vial* or *bottle*, but a broad shallow vessel, as the Latin *patera* from *pateo*, whence also *paten*, like a saucer or bowl-like dish (see the authorities in *Weststein*, p. 769), in which θυμίαμα, *frankincense*, was offered (cp. viii. 8; above, Luke i. 9. 13), which was a Hebrew emblem of *prayer*. (Ps. cxli. 2.) The word φιάλη is borrowed from the Temple-worship, and describes the sacred *bowls* in which aromatic incense (Exod. xxx. 7—10), lighted by coals taken from the great brazen Altar of sacrifice, in the outer Court of the Temple, was offered on the golden Altar in the inner Court or Holy Place before the Veil, in front of the Holy of Holies. Cp. *Lightfoot* on Rev. viii.

The Elders are represented here as having a *twofold* character. They are enthroned and have triumphal crowns of gold (see iv. 2). But they also *fall down and worship* the Lamb: and sing *praises* to Him and offer *prayers*. This corresponds with the twofold office of *Holy Scripture*. It has a divine power and authority, as God's Law. It is a *royal* Law (James ii. 8). Thus it is *enthroned* and wears a *crown*. But it is also expressive of man's desires and praises to God for His mercies in Christ. The Scriptures declare the longings of holy men for the Gospel, and they record their gratitude for it.

Observe that the *Angels* of *heaven* themselves are represented here as *taught* by the Living Creatures, and by the Elders, to praise the Lamb.

This also corresponds with the office and prerogative of *Scripture*. St. Peter declares that the *Angels* themselves *desire* to look into the things which are revealed in the Gospel. (1 Pet. i. 12.) And St. Paul says, that "now unto Principalities and Powers in heavenly Places (that is, even to the Holy Angels themselves), is made known through the ministry of the Church the manifold wisdom of God." See note above on Eph. iii. 10.

The Golden Candlestick, or *Lamp*, of the Church is illumined by the oil of the Spirit poured into it by the *Holy Scriptures* (see below, xi. 4). And thus the Church being enlightened by God's Word, is enabled to enlighten the world, and even to illuminate *Angels*, who thence learn a *new song*, and have a fresh theme for praise to God, and for adoration of Christ.

Accordingly S. Victorinus, writing in the third century, observes here, that "it is the preaching of the *Old Testament*,

together with that of the *New*, which enables the World to sing a *new song*. *New* indeed is the song, which speaks of God becoming man. *New* is the song, which speaks of the Manhood raised to heaven. *New* is the song, which declares that men are sealed with the Holy Ghost. And the theme of praise in the mouth of the *many Angels* is the salvation of the World by Christ."

Such a revelation as this from St. John, representing *Angels* in heaven as receiving a knowledge of holy Mysteries from the Scriptures, and as *adoring* the *Lamb*, would afford a salutary safeguard to his Asiatic Churches, who needed cautions against the worshipping of *Angels*, to the disparagement of the Majesty of Christ. Cp. note above on Col. ii. 8.

⁹. ὅτι ἐσφάγης] *because Thou wast slain, and didst purchase to God by Thy blood men from every tribe and tongue, and people, and nation, and madest them priests and kings to God, and they reign on the earth*.

After ἡγόρασας τῷ Θεῷ, Elz. has ἡμᾶς, *us*; but this is not in A or N, and is not received by Lach., Tisch.; and indeed it seems to be inconsistent with the reading αὐτοὺς, *them*, after ἐποίησας, in v. 10, where αὐτοὺς, *them*, and not ἡμᾶς, is exhibited by A, N, B, and by at least forty *Cursives*, and by the Syriac, Coptic, Æthiopic, Arabic, and other Versions, including the Amiatine MS. of the *Vulgate*; and is received by Griesbach, Scholz, Lachmann, Tischendorf, Bloomfield.

On the sense of ἐν here to specify the price paid, see 1 Chron. xxi. 24. Winer, p. 348.

The English Authorized Version has the perfect tense here, "Thou *hast* redeemed; Thou *hast* made priests." But the original has the aorist ἐσφάγης—ἡγόρασας, *Thou wast slain*, and, by being slain, Thou *didst purchase* or *redeem* men by Thy blood, that is, Thou *didst effect* this blessed work at a *special time*, by a *special act*, namely, by Thy death, suffered *once* for all, on the cross; and thus Thou *madest men* to be priests to God.

This Vision represents the unanimous consent of Holy Scripture glorifying the Lamb for the universal Redemption accomplished by His death. By the price of His blood shed once for all on the cross, by which He made "a full, perfect, and sufficient sacrifice, oblation, and satisfaction for the sins of the whole world" (see above on v. 6), He purchased to Himself an universal Church (Acts xx. 28; cp. 1 Cor. vi. 20; vii. 23, ἡγοράσθητε τιμῆς), redeeming all men from the bondage of sin and Satan; and paying their ransom to God (λύτρον, see on Matt. xx. 28. Eph. i. 7), and procuring for them pardon from Him (see on Rom. iii. 23—25), and purchasing for them a heavenly inheritance (see above on Eph. i. 14).

This doctrine of Universal Redemption by Christ, is represented here in its practical bearings and moral influence on human conduct. The *privileges* announced in it are coupled with a declaration of *duties*. All men, redeemed by Christ, are "redeemed to God;" that is, Christ ransomed them from the bondage of Satan to the service of God. They were made *Kings and Priests to our God*; Christ purchased for them a Kingdom, the Kingdom of Heaven, and has invested them with a share of His own royalties, by virtue of their mystical incorporation in Him, and by means of the royal unction which flows down from Him their Head on all His members. But these princely prerogatives are conditional on their being also *Priests, presenting themselves, their souls and bodies, a living sacrifice to God* (Rom. xii. 1, 2), and being a *holy Priesthood*, offering up *spiritual sacrifices* acceptable to God by Jesus Christ (1 Pet. ii. 5), Who "gave Himself for us that He might redeem us from all iniquity, and purify unto Himself a peculiar people zealous of good works." (Titus ii. 14. Cp. Eph. i. 4; ii. 10.)

The Alexandrine MS. has βασιλείαν here, a *Kingdom*, and so Lach. and Tisch. Cp. i. 6.

¹⁰. καὶ βασιλεύουσιν ἐπὶ τῆς γῆς] *and they are reigning on the earth*. Observe the present tense here; the reading of A, B,

h Dan. 7. 10.

i ch. 4. 11.

k Phil. 2. 10.
ver. 3.
1 Chron. 29. 11.
Rom. 9. 5.
1 Tim. 6. 16.
ch. 7. 10.

a ch. 5. 6, 7.

¹¹ ^h Καὶ εἶδον καὶ ἤκουσα φωνὴν ἀγγέλων πολλῶν κύκλῳ τοῦ θρόνου καὶ τῶν ζώων καὶ τῶν πρεσβυτέρων καὶ ἦν ὁ ἀριθμὸς αὐτῶν μυριάδες μυριάδων καὶ χιλιάδες χιλιάδων, ¹² ⁱ λέγοντες φωνῇ μεγάλῃ, Ἄξιόν ἐστι τὸ ἄρνιον τὸ ἐσφαγμένον λαβεῖν τὴν δύναμιν καὶ τὸν πλοῦτον, καὶ σοφίαν καὶ ἰσχὺν, καὶ τιμὴν καὶ δόξαν καὶ εὐλογίαν. ¹³ ^k Καὶ πᾶν κτίσμα, ὃ ἐν τῷ οὐρανῷ καὶ ἐπὶ τῆς γῆς, καὶ ὑποκάτω τῆς γῆς, καὶ ἐπὶ τῆς θαλάσσης ἃ ἐστι, καὶ τὰ ἐν αὐτοῖς, πάντας ἤκουσα λέγοντας, Τῷ καθημένῳ ἐπὶ τοῦ θρόνου, καὶ τῷ ἄρνιῳ, ἡ εὐλογία καὶ ἡ τιμὴ καὶ ἡ δόξα καὶ τὸ κράτος εἰς τοὺς αἰῶνας τῶν αἰώνων. ¹⁴ Καὶ τὰ τέσσαρα ζῶα ἔλεγον τὸ Ἀμήν καὶ οἱ πρεσβύτεροι ἔπεσαν καὶ προσεκύνησαν.

VI. ¹ ^a Καὶ εἶδον ὅτε ἦνοιξε τὸ ἄρνιον μίαν ἐκ τῶν ἑπτὰ σφραγίδων, καὶ

and *Syr.*, *Arabic*, *Coptic*, and some other Versions, and so *Lach.*, *Tisch.* Many Cursive MSS. have βασιλεύσουσι (*they shall reign*) in the future, and so *N.*, which has ἱερατεῖαν for ἱερεῖς; and *Elz.* reads βασιλεύσομεν (*we shall reign*). For a further exposition of the passage, see below on xx. 4.

^{11, 12.} καὶ εἶδον] *And I saw and heard the voice of many Angels.* The angelic song of praise to the Lamb is evoked by that of the Living Creatures. See above on v. 8.

— ἤκουσα φωνὴν—μυριάδες—λέγοντες] On these grammatical anomalies, frequent in the Apocalypse, cp. above, iv. 1; below, vi. 9; xi. 15.

— Ἄξιόν—τὴν δύναμιν] *Worthy is the Lamb that was slain to receive the power and the wealth.* Observe the articles here, *the power, the wealth*; a proof of the Divine Nature of Christ. He is worthy to receive *that* honour, which belongs to God, and has just been ascribed to Him, above, iv. 11; and He is a jealous God, and will not give His glory to *another* (see above on Phil. ii. 6); but He is here associated with the Lamb (v. 13) in a common ascription of praise.

Observe also that this ascription of praise to the Lamb is *sevenfold*; as in that ascription which is addressed by the Angels to God in vii. 11. Compare the *Doxology to Christ* in *S. Clement's Epistle*, c. 20:

^{13.} ὑποκάτω τῆς γῆς] *under the earth.* See above on Phil. ii. 10, and 1 Pet. iii. 19.

— ἡ εὐλογία] *the blessing, the honour, and the power.* Observe that all these substantives have the *article* in the original, intimating (as in the *Doxology of the Lord's Prayer*) that *the* Blessing, &c., is *restrained* to those to whom it is ascribed, i. e. that divine honour is to be ascribed to God and to the Lamb, and to *no one else*. See above, iv. 11, and below, vii. 12.

^{14.} τὸ Ἀμήν] *the Amen.* So *B* and several Cursives; and so *Tisch.* The article implies that the assent expressed by *Amen*, is an integral part of the Ritual of the Church. Compare 1 Cor. xiv. 16, πῶς ἐρεῖ τὸ ἀμήν ἐπὶ τῇ σῇ εὐχαριστίᾳ;

CH. VI.] The LAMB opens the SEALS of the Roll which represents a prophetic view of the History of the Christian Church, from the first Advent of Christ to the end of the World.

The FIRST SEAL opened—

^{1, 2.} καὶ εἶδον] *And I saw when the Lamb opened one of the seven seals, and I heard one of the four Living Creatures saying, as the voice of thunder, Come and see. And I saw and beheld a white horse, and He that sitteth on him, having a bow; and there was given unto him a crown of Victory, and he went forth conquering and that he might conquer.*

The opening of this the FIRST SEAL displays the victorious majesty of CHRIST, and of His Gospel going forth in its primitive purity and power. The horse, especially among the Jews, was symbolical of *war* (see above on Matt. xxi. 5, and cp. Ezek. xxvi. 10). The Rider on the *White Horse* is Christ. This is declared by St. John himself in the latter portion of the Apocalypse, where he says, "I saw heaven opened, and behold a *White Horse*; and He that sitteth upon him called *Faithful* and *True* (cp. iii. 14, where this is the title of *Christ*), and His Name is the WORD of God." (Rev. xix. 11—13.)

This is also evident from the colour of the horse, *white*, λευκός, white as *light*, *lux*, *lucidus*. This word λευκός, as used in the Apocalypse, is *not* the Latin *albus*, but it is *candidus*; "*aliud est candidum esse,—id est luce quâdam nitenti perfusum,—aliud album, quod pallori constat esse vicinum.*" *Servius* in *Æn.* xii. 84. (*Wetstein.*)

This colour is an emblem of purity and victory (see *Wetstein*), and is applied in the Apocalypse to *Christ*, and is even consecrated by a special restriction and limitation to Him. Thus we read of His hair *white* as wool (i. 14). He promises to His faithful followers a *white* stone (ii. 17); they will walk with Him in *white*

(iii. 4). He rides on a *white* cloud (xiv. 14); they follow Him on *white* horses (xix. 11. 14). His Bride is attired in *white* (xix. 8). He will sit on a great *white* Throne (xx. 11).

The Apocalypse here, as elsewhere, reproduces the imagery of ancient Hebrew Prophecy. David had seen and described Christ, *riding* as a Conqueror on a *horse*, and bearing in His hand a *bow*, as He is here seen by St. John. The Psalmist had greeted Him from afar, "Gird Thee with Thy sword upon Thy Thigh, O Thou most Mighty, according to Thy worship and renown; Good luck have Thou with Thine honour. *Ride* on, because of the word of truth, of meekness, and righteousness, and Thy right hand shall teach Thee terrible things. Thy *arrows* are very sharp, and the people shall be subdued unto Thee." (Ps. xlv. 4—6.)

Christ appeared in this form in the *first* age of the Church. This is what is here revealed in the *First Seal*. When our Lord had ascended in triumph into heaven (says *Victorinus* here) He sent His Holy Spirit; and His words went forth like *arrows from the Bow* of Evangelical preaching, and pierced the heart (cp. Heb. iv. 12), and vanquished the unbelief of the world. Therefore, he adds, "the *white Horse* represents the trumpet of Christ's Gospel preached throughout the world by the aid of the Holy Ghost." See also the excellent comment of *Aug.*? and *Primasius* on this seal. Indeed, all the ancient Expositors recognize CHRIST here as the *Rider on the white horse*. The Rider on the white horse (say the Ancient Greek Expositors in *Caten.* p. 263) is He of whom the prophet Habakkuk speaks, "Thou didst *ride* upon Thine *horses* and chariots of salvation. Thy *bow* was made quite naked." (Hab. iii. 8, 9.)

The poetical features of the noble description in the prophecies of Zechariah may also be recognized here. "When I have *bent Judah* for Me, filled the *bow* with *Ephraim*, and raised up thy sons, O *Zion*, against thy sons, O *Greece*, and made thee as the *sword* of a mighty man. And the Lord shall be seen over them; and his *arrow* shall go forth as the lightning." (Zech. ix. 13, 14.) The Apostles and Evangelists were "*sons of Zion*," they were taken from among the Jews; and they were like *Arrows* in the Quiver of Christ, Who "*bent Judah*" as a *Bow*, and "*filled His Bow with Ephraim*," when He sent them forth, who were from the seed of Judah and Ephraim. He sent them forth as Evangelical arrows, discharged by His mighty power from His divine Bow, as from that of a Royal Warrior. He routed His enemies and overthrew the opposing armies of *Greece*, that is, the Gentile World, by their means, and brought it into subjection to the mild yoke of the Gospel. (Cp. 2 Cor. x. 4.) As *S. Jerome* says (on Ps. xlv. vol. ii. p. 686), "*Paul* was like an *arrow* of the Lord, shot forth from the Lord's *bow* from Jerusalem even to Illyricum." (Rom. xv. 19.) Compare *Andreas* here.

Jesus Christ, in the days of his humiliation, had ridden on the *foal of an ass* into the Holy City, the Earthly Jerusalem, His own Capital, the City of the Great King; and had there been saluted with hosannas (Matt. xxi. 9), His path had been strewn with palms of victory (John xii. 13), and He had fulfilled the ancient prophecy of Zechariah, who had predicted that Royal Entry (Zech. ix. 9); and by riding on the foal into *Sion* He had prefigured the peaceful triumph of the Gospel over the Heathen world, subjected to His sway. See above on Matt. xxi. 5. Mark xi. 2—10. John xii. 14.

After His Ascension, the same Christ is now displayed in this Seal as no longer riding on the *foal of an ass*, meek and gentle, but as a Mighty Warrior riding on a *White Horse*, "*conquering and to conquer*," and having on His head a crown, the crown of victory, στέφανος. He has now overcome Death and Satan. He has triumphed over them by the Cross, which becomes to Him a triumphal Chariot (see on Col. ii. 15), and He rides upon it a mighty victor (see on 2 Cor. ii. 14); and He has given His disciples power to conquer (1 Cor. xv. 55. 57), and has sent forth His Holy Spirit from heaven to enable them to bear

ἤκουσα ἐνὸς ἐκ τῶν τεσσάρων ζώων λέγοντος ὡς φωνὴ βροντῆς, Ἔρχου καὶ ἴδε.

^{2 b} Καὶ εἶδον, καὶ ἰδοὺ ἵππος λευκός, καὶ ὁ καθήμενος ἐπ' αὐτὸν ἔχων τόξον· καὶ ἐδόθη αὐτῷ στέφανος, καὶ ἐξῆλθε νικῶν, καὶ ἵνα νικήσῃ.

^b ch. 19. 11.
Zech. 6. 3.
Ps. 45. 3—5.
ch. 14. 14.

³ Καὶ ὅτε ἤνοιξε τὴν σφραγίδα τὴν δευτέραν, ἤκουσα τοῦ δευτέρου ζώου λέγοντος, Ἔρχου. ^{4 c} Καὶ ἐξῆλθεν ἄλλος ἵππος πυρρός· καὶ τῷ καθημένῳ ἐπ' αὐτὸν ἐδόθη αὐτῷ λαβεῖν τὴν εἰρήνην ἐκ τῆς γῆς, καὶ ἵνα ἀλλήλους σφάξωσι καὶ ἐδόθη αὐτῷ μάχαιρα μεγάλη.

^c Zech. 6. 2.

His standard in triumph throughout the world, and to cast down "every thing that exalteth itself against the knowledge of God." (See on 2 Cor. x. 4, 5.)

The most striking characteristic of the *First Age* of the Church was the wonderful success of Apostolical Preaching, after the outpouring of the Holy Ghost on the day of Pentecost. "The Lord gave the word, great was the company of the Preachers" (Ps. lxxiii. 11); "their sound is gone out into all lands, and their words into the ends of the world" (Ps. xix. 4). "We Christians" (said a Father of the second century) "are but of yesterday, and we have filled the world,"—"Hesterni sumus, et orbem implevimus." *Tertullian* (Apol. 38).

This marvellous success of Christianity was therefore the appropriate subject of the prophetic vision of the FIRST SEAL.

The First of the Four *Living Creatures* is here introduced as calling attention to this glorious spectacle. He says (v. 1), "Come and see." That is, Come and see the Victory of Christ, the Royal Rider on the White Horse. This was a fitting office for the first of the Living Creatures. For he is described (iv. 7) as having a face like a *Lion*, the King and Conqueror of Beasts. The Living Creature who has the face of a *Lion* invites us to behold the Victory of the *Lion* of the royal tribe of Judah (see v. 5). The first Gospel, that of St. Matthew, specially called the attention of the Church to contemplate the character and office of Christ as *King*; see above, *Introduction* to the Gospels, p. xli.

The SECOND SEAL opened.

3, 4. καὶ ὅτε] And when He opened the second Seal, I heard the second Living Creature say, Come. And there went out another horse, that was red as fire (πυρρός): and it was given to him that sat thereon to take Peace from the earth, and that they should slay one another; and there was given unto him a great Sword (μάχαιρα).

Christ, Who has been displayed on the *white horse*, is followed, in the second, third, and fourth Seals, by another Power, riding on three Horses, in succession, of three different colours.

The Power introduced in these three Seals is opposed to Christ.

Christ, Who rides on the white horse, is described in the latter part of the Apocalypse as "He that sitteth on the horse" (xix. 19. 21). The *white horse* is "the horse;" it is the only Horse on which Christ rides. At the end of the Apocalypse He is still riding on the *white horse*, and the Armies in heaven follow Him on *white horses* (xix. 11. 14). *White* is the colour appropriated to Christ: see above, v. 2. The other Horses in the second, third, and fourth Seals vary in colour from one another, and are all opposed to white; they are *red*, *black*, *ghastly green*. They carry a Power adverse and antagonistic to Christ.

This appears also from the fact that they are attended by Allies who are Enemies of Christ. The Rider on the third of these horses is "Death, and the Grave follows with him;" and, as we read in another part of the Book, "Death and the Grave" are afterwards destroyed by Christ (xx. 13, 14).

Further; the declaration that Christ went forth conquering and to conquer (v. 2), is equivalent to an intimation, that He would have Adversaries to encounter, whom He will overcome. Christ comes forth first. Truth is before Error. God's first Will is, that all men should be saved. (1 Tim. ii. 4. See *Introduction* to Romans, p. 194.) The good seed is sown before the Tares (Matt. xiii. 27). Christ came forth in the first Seal. The Adversary appears afterwards in different forms in the second, third, and fourth Seals.

The scenery of the Exodus,—the type of Christ's Victory over Satan,—is ever re-appearing in the Apocalypse. The Victory of the Exodus is thus celebrated by Moses and Miriam; "Sing ye to the Lord, for He hath triumphed gloriously; the horse and his rider hath He thrown into the sea." (Exod. xv. 1. 21.)

The ancient Interpreters were agreed that the Horse in the first seal carries Christ, and that the Horses in the second and the two following Seals introduce a Power antagonistic to Christ. This ancient Exposition is thus expressed by Victorinus, Pri-

masius, Bede, and Haymo, who say, "In the first seal we see Christ and the glory of the primitive Church; in the next three seals we behold three forms of war (triforme bellum) against her." And before them, *S. Irenæus* thus speaks: "The Lord was born, in order to conquer, and of Him John speaks in the Apocalypse, 'He went forth conquering and to conquer.'" (*Iren.* iv. 21. 3)

This opinion is confirmed, as we shall see, by the other incidents of the three Seals. And this interpretation of the Seals conveys a striking and important moral.

In the first Seal we see Christ on the *white horse*, going forth conquering and to conquer. Such He appeared in the primitive age of Christianity. And if we turn to the last Vision of earthly things at the close of the Apocalypse, He there re-appears. There is the same *white horse*, and the same Rider upon it. "I saw heaven opened," says St. John, "and, behold, a white horse; and He that sitteth upon him is called Faithful and True, and in righteousness He doth judge and make war. On His head were many crowns. And He was clothed in a vesture dipped in blood, and His name is called THE WORD OF GOD. And the armies which were in heaven followed Him on white horses. And out of His mouth goeth a sharp sword; and He treadeth the winepress of the wrath of God" (xix. 11—15).

We here see the Majesty of Christ. Earthly powers will be shaken; His throne is immovable. He rides on, conquering and to conquer. Worldly things pass away; but His "years will not fail" (Ps. cii. 27). He is "the same yesterday, to-day, and for ever" (Heb. xiii. 8).

The SECOND SEAL, where the Rider brandishes the sword, represents the first assault which Satan made against the Church.

That assault was by Persecution. He first stirred the Jews against the Apostles. James the brother of John was killed by the sword (Acts xii. 2). The rancour of the Jews against the Gospel in different parts of the world, is described in the Acts of the Apostles (see Acts xiii. 50; xiv. 2. 19; xvii. 5. 13; xix. 33; and on 1 Thess. ii. 14, 15). Therefore St. Paul could say even then, "For Thy sake we are killed all the day long, we are accounted as sheep for the slaughter" (Rom. viii. 36).

Soon afterwards the Spirit of Persecution broke out in the Roman Empire against the Church. The *Cæsars*, "who bare the sword" of the world (Rom. xiii. 4), unsheathed it against her. The Apostle of the Gentiles was killed by that sword. St. Peter perished in the same cause, at the same place, Rome (see *Introduction* to Epistles to Timothy, pp. 423, 424).

This Rider on the RED HORSE (red like fire) went forth in the second and third centuries. To cite the words of the ancient Greek Expositors (in Caten. p. 265), "In this Seal we see a prophecy of what we ourselves have seen fulfilled by the Martyrs of the Church; the Power here represented wields a sword, and takes away peace from the earth, according to Christ's own language, 'I came not to send peace on earth, but a sword'" (see Matt. x. 34).

This is the Exposition which all the ancient interpreters have given of this seal. Satan has already been declared by Christ Himself to be the Author of Persecution (see ii. 10). Christ rides on a horse that is *white* like light (λευκός, lux): but the Enemy rides on a horse that is *red* like fire (πῦρ). The same word πυρρός is applied to the Dragon, Satan, who persecutes the woman, the Church; see below, xii. 3. The rider has in his hand a sword (μάχαιρα), the instrument of persecution, and used in Scripture as the symbol of it. Thus St. Paul asks, "Who shall separate us from the love of Christ? Shall tribulation, or nakedness, or peril, or sword?" (Rom. viii. 35.) And the Apostle, writing under the guidance of the same Spirit who inspired St. John, adds, "Nay, in all these things we are more than conquerors (ὑπερνικῶμεν) through Him that loved us." The Apostles and other Martyrs were enabled to conquer him who rode on the red horse, and wielded the Sword of Persecution; they conquered him by the blood of Christ (Rev. xii. 11), Who ever rides on the White horse, and went forth conquering and to conquer.

This Exposition is further confirmed by what is said under

d Zech. 6. 2, 6.

⁵ d Καὶ ὅτε ἤνοιξε τὴν σφραγίδα τὴν τρίτην, ἤκουσα τοῦ τρίτου ζώου λέγοντος, Ἔρχου, καὶ ἴδε· καὶ εἶδον, καὶ ἰδοὺ ἵππος μέλας, καὶ ὁ καθήμενος ἐπ' αὐτὸν ἔχων ζυγὸν ἐν τῇ χειρὶ αὐτοῦ. ⁶ e Καὶ ἤκουσα φωνὴν ἐν μέσῳ τῶν τεσσάρων

the fifth Seal (v. 9), "I saw under the altar the souls of them that had been slain (the same word as that used in the second Seal) for the Word of God, and for the testimony (μαρτύριον) which they held." Those Martyrs had been slain by the sword of him who rides on the red horse.

This Vision had been in part fulfilled when St. John wrote, and was to receive a still larger accomplishment.

Tertullian, speaking of the first Heathen persecution against the Church, adopts the emblem which St. John sees in the Rider's hand in this Vision,—the sword. "The Emperor Nero," he says, "was the first who raged against the Church with the sword of the Cæsars" (Apol. 5). The emblem of St. Paul as a Martyr, is the sword. Many of the Christians in the first age suffered death by fire. They were burnt by night, to enlighten the streets of Rome. See above, on Phil. ii. 15. They suffered under the violence of the Rider on the horse of fire, who wielded the sword.

St. John himself was a Martyr in will, under the power of Rome (see i. 9). Some of the most eminent of his disciples died the death of Martyrs, at the command of the imperial Power, which had the sword of the world. Their language illustrates this Vision of the Apocalypse. They felt this Rider's rage, when they thus wrote, "Why have I given myself up to death, to the fire, to the sword, and to the wild beasts? Yea, verily, when we are near the sword, we are near to God; when we are in the midst of wild beasts, we are in the hand of God. I endure all things in the name of Christ who strengtheneth me to suffer with Him." *S. Ignatius* (ad Smyrn. 4: cp. his words, ad Rom. 5.) And *S. Polycarp*, the Bishop of Smyrna, said to the Roman Proconsul, the executioner of Persecution against the Christians, "Thou threatenest me with fire, which burns only for a short season, but thou knowest nothing of that fire which is never quenched, and is reserved for the wicked" (*Martyr. Polycarp.* c. 11).

The Rider on the horse of fire, wielding the sword, went forth against Christ and the Church in Ten successive persecutions: First, under Nero; Second, under Domitian; Third, under Trajan; Fourth, under Marcus Aurelius Antoninus; Fifth, under Septimius Severus; Sixth, under Maximinus; Seventh, under Decius; Eighth, under Valerian; Ninth, under Aurelian; Tenth, under Diocletian; making a period of about 240 years, i. e. from A.D. 64, to A.D. 304. This is the enumeration of *S. Augustine*, de Civ. Dei xviii. 52. Cp. *Euseb.* viii.—x. *Lactantius*, de Morte Persecutorum, cap. 7—24. See the authorities in *Gieseler*, Ch. Hist. §§ 42. 56 and 57. A Poet, who has traced the History of the Church in our own land in pictures which often recall to the mind the imagery of the Apocalypse, thus speaks of the last and fiercest of these Persecutions,—

"Lament: for Diocletian's fiery sword
Works busy as the lightning . . .
Against the followers of the Incarnate Lord
It rages."
(*Wm. Wordsworth*, Ecclesiastical Sonnets, Sonnet vi.)

In this Seal the second of the *Living Creatures* is represented as saying Come. Some MSS. here add καὶ ἴδε, and others read, βλέπε, i. e. and see; but in A, B, C, and many cursives and versions, Ἔρχου stands alone: and this reading is adopted by *Lachm.* and *Tisch.* The same remark is applicable, with some slight modification, to the reading of verse 5 and verse 7, where A, C have ἔρχου only, and so *Lach.* and *Tisch.*

The invitation to see the suffering inflicted on the Martyrs fitly proceeds from the second of the *Living Creatures*, whose face is like a Calf or Ox (iv. 7), the sacrificial animal, and whose special office it is to display the sufferings of Christ (see above, *Introduction* to the Gospels, p. xli; and to *St. Luke's Gospel*, p. 163), Who is "the faithful and true MARTYR" (i. 5; iii. 14), the Exemplar and hope of all "the Martyrs of Jesus" (xvii. 6). See on Acts vii. 60, concerning the death of the Protomartyr, St. Stephen.

The THIRD SEAL opened.

5. καὶ ὅτε] And when He opened the third seal, I heard the third Living Creature say, Come and see. And I saw, and lo a black horse, and he that sitteth on him, having a balance in his hand.

And I heard a voice in the midst of the four Living Creatures say, A quart of wheat for a penny (or day's wages), and three quarts of barley for a penny (or day's wages), and the oil and the wine hurt thou not.

This Seal represents the Adversary of Christ and His Church in a new form.

He has now sheathed the Sword, the emblem of Power, and he has taken a Balance, the emblem of Equity, in its stead. He has dismounted from the horse of a fiery red, and now rides on a black horse; and a voice is heard, not from one of the Living Creatures singly as before, but from the midst of the Four, "A chænix of wheat for a denarius, three chænixes of barley for a denarius."

The measure here mentioned, the chænix, is about a quart measure (see *Hussey* on Ancient Measures, pp. 209—214), and was equal to two sextarii in liquid measure; and to two libræ, or pounds, in dry measure (see *Welstein*, p. 773); and the denarius was a day's wages for a labourer (see Matt. xx. 2), and the daily pay of a soldier (*Tacit.* Annal. i. 17). The chænix was only the eighth part of a modius; and a modius of wheat was usually sold for a denarius, and sometimes for half that sum (*Cicero*, Verr. iii. 81, and de Divin. c. 10).

Therefore this Seal denotes a Famine. The circumstance that corn is weighed in a balance, as if it were spicery, and not measured out in bushels, is itself a sign of Dearth. Cp. *Lightfoot* here.

The voice from the midst of the four Living Creatures says, "Hurt thou not the oil and the wine." It shows that they were in danger of being hurt. This voice restrains the power of the enemy, and forbids him to do what otherwise he would have done. It is a divine voice checking Satan's power, and protecting the Church.

Some modern Expositors have supposed that this Vision portended only a natural dearth and scarcity. But the Rider on the white horse was Christ, and the Power who follows on the other horses is opposed to Christ.

Therefore we must adopt here the opinion of the Ancient Interpreters, who say that the present seal represents a season of spiritual scarcity, a famine of the Word of God (*Amos* viii. 11), a leanness of the soul (*Ps.* cvi. 15). The prohibition to the Rider, "Hurt not thou the oil and the wine," a prohibition proceeding from the midst of the four Living Creatures, who adore Christ, is a restraint on the evil design of the Rider who would injure the spiritual oil and wine, that is, the means of Grace, which had been typified under those symbols in Ancient Prophecy (*Ps.* xxiii. 4, 5), and also by the words and acts of Christ, the Good Samaritan, pouring in oil and wine into the wounds of the Traveller, representing Human Nature, lying in the road (see above, on Luke x. 31).

The Horseman riding on the black horse and opposing Christ Who is on the white horse, and having Spiritual Famine in his rear, and being restrained from hurting the Oil and the Wine, holds in his hand a Balance (ζυγὸς = τάλαντον, τρυάνη, *Etym. M.*), the emblem of Justice. While therefore he practises wrong, he professes right: as the Prophet Hosea says, there is "in his hand a balance of iniquity" (ζυγὸς ἀδικίας, LXX, *Hos.* xii. 7). He is like a false Prophet, coming in sheep's clothing, but inwardly a ravening wolf (*Matt.* vii. 15).

This Vision has been interpreted by the History of the Church. At first, Satan assailed her by open violence, by the fire and sword of Persecution. That attempt has been fore-shown in the second Seal. Satan was disappointed. He was foiled and frustrated in that design. She was enabled to resist him by the power of Him Who had ridden forth on the white horse a conqueror and to conquer. The Power of Christ was seen in the sufferings of the Martyrs, who triumphed in death, and over it. Thus Satan's devices recoiled on himself. The charity, patience, and courage of Christian Martyrs, not only men, but tender women, and even children (see *S. Clement of Rome*, Epist. c. 6), led others to seek and obtain that divine grace, which enabled them to pray for their murderers, and to rejoice in their sufferings, and to die with praises on their lips. They thus excited others to follow them in the path of earthly affliction to the kingdom of heavenly glory.

As the Ancient Christian Apologist said to the heathen Persecutors, "Your cruelty draws others to us. The more we are mown down by you, the more our harvest grows; the blood of Martyrs is the seed of the Church" (*Tertullian*, Apol. ad finem. See above, on Acts viii. 1—4).

Satan therefore altered his plan of attack. He exchanged the sword of open violence for the balance of seeming Equity: and he dismounted from the fiery horse of Persecution; and next he rode forth upon the black horse of Heresy. He raised up many

ζῶων λέγουσαν, Χοῖνιξ σίτου δηναρίου, καὶ τρεῖς χοίνικες κριθῶν δηναρίου καὶ τὸ ἔλαιον καὶ τὸν οἶνον μὴ ἀδικήσης.

persons in the Church, who, under specious pretences of regard for Justice, Reason, and Peace, endeavoured to corrupt the Faith. He who had stirred up Persecution was the Author of Heresy. He who sows tares in Christ's field is the *Enemy* (Matt. xiii. 25. 39). The Christian Fathers ascribe Heresies to him. Thus *Theodoret* (Præf. in Hæret. fab. lib. iii.), "Heresies have arisen from the malice of the Devil."

The imagery of the Apocalypse is derived from ancient Hebrew Prophecy. The groundwork of its language here is in that of Hosea xii. 7, concerning Ephraim. Ephraim in the Apocalypse is a representative of enmity to *Judah*, the Church of Christ (see below on vii. 8). And Hosea thus describes *Ephraim*, "He is a *merchant*; the *balances of deceit* are in his hand, he loveth to oppress."

The characteristic of *Heresy* is to be a *Merchant*, and it bears a *balance in its hand*. "The Rider," says *Aug.*? "has a balance in his hand, for he professes that he is dealing equitably, and yet he is doing wrong." They who teach things contrary to sound doctrine, endeavour "by good words and fair speeches to deceive the hearts of the simple." (Rom. xvi. 18. Cp. Eph. iv. 14; v. 6. Col. ii. 4.)

The *Balance* is also a symbol of *traffic*. Here also we have light from Hosea (xii. 7) concerning the bearer of the false balance, "Ephraim is a *Merchant*." It is a mark of Heresy to trade in spiritual things for its own profit. They who brought in "heresies, denying even the Lord that bought them," are characterized by the Apostle as "making merchandise of souls, through covetousness, with feigned words." (2 Pet. ii. 3. Cp. note on 2 Cor. ii. 17.) They have men's persons in admiration because of advantage (Jude 16), and are therefore compared to Balaam, "who loved the wages of unrighteousness" (2 Pet. ii. 15).

Besides, it is the practice of Heretical Teachers to weigh the articles of Christian Doctrine in the *Balance of Human Reason*, or of its own *carnal Will*. Hence early Christian writers traced the origin of Heresy to heathen *Philosophy*. See *Irenæus*, ii. 14. 2. *Tertullian*, c. Hermog. c. 8; de Animâ, c. 3. 23; Præscr. Hæret. c. 30; and *S. Hippolytus* (Philosophumena, lib. v.), whose language illustrates the present passage of the Apocalypse; "We (Christians) derive our knowledge of divine truth from no other source but the oracles of God. Let us examine, therefore, what the *Holy Scriptures* declare, and let us acknowledge what they teach; not dealing with these things (the mysteries of Faith) according to our own Reason, or our own Will, nor doing violence to what God reveals; but let us see them in that light in which He has been pleased to unfold them in His Word. (*S. Hippolyt.* c. Noet. § 9.) Heretics forsake *Holy Scripture* and profess *Geometry*." (*S. Hippolyt.* ap. *Euseb.* v. 28.) They weigh mysteries in the balance of Reason.

Satan having failed in his endeavours to destroy the Church by violence, transformed himself into an *Angel of Light*. (2 Cor. xi. 14.) He raised up Heresiarchs who made plausible professions; and by their instrumentality he undermined the foundation of the Christian faith, and of virtuous practice, which is grounded upon it. (See above, *Introduction* to St. Peter's Second Epistle, pp. 71—73, and to St. John's First Epistle, p. 103.) They distracted and weakened the Church by schisms. Therefore this second attack was more perilous than the former. "Persecution makes Martyrs; but Heresy makes Apostates." *Tertullian*, Præscr. Hæret. c. 4. Cp. *Dean Stanhope* on the Gospels, iv. 478—480.

This Third Seal represents the machinations of Heresy against the Church; and the invitation to behold them comes from the third of the Living Creatures, whose face was like a *Man* (iv. 7). The disbelief of the *Incarnation* of Christ was the source of almost all the primitive heresies. See above on I John iv. 2, 3. "By this ye know the Spirit of God. Every spirit that confesseth Jesus Christ come in the flesh is of God; and every spirit that confesseth not Jesus come in the flesh is not of God; and this is the spirit of Antichrist." The doctrine of the humanity of Christ, not properly understood, was perverted into an occasion of a denial of His *Consubstantiality* with the Father. *Arius*, the promoter of that Heresy, is described by ancient authors as distinguished by those characteristics of philosophical calmness and seeming impartiality, which are symbolized by the Balance. See his character as drawn by *Socrates* (i. 5), and *S. Ambrose* (de Fide, i. 8), and *S. Jerome* (adv. Lucif. 3), who says that the Arian Heresy allied itself with the wisdom of this world, and derived its arguments from the Aristotelian Philosophy; and cp. *Hooker*, V. xlii. 2, and V. lii., where he traces the history of the Heresies concerning the *Incarnation*, and Two Natures and Person of Christ, from *Arius* to *Nestorius* and *Eutyches*.

It is therefore well said by some ancient Expositors, e. g.

Anselm, Bishop of Havelburg, that in this seal we may recognize the growth of Arianism and its progeny. "The Balance is the instrument of Heresy, which holds a balance of deceit in its hand, making a semblance of equity, and thereby deceiving the unwary." Cp. *Bede* here.

This interpretation is in harmony with the other incidents of this seal. "A voice is heard in the midst of the Four Living Creatures." It is not a voice uttered by any one of them singly, as in the other seals, but it comes forth from the midst of them all. This voice proclaims the true character of the rider on the black horse. It declares, that, whatever he may feign himself to be, he is an agent of ill.

Christ had been already described as in the midst of the Four Living Creatures (v. 6). He ever speaks in the Four Gospels. And His Words, there recorded by the Holy Ghost, enable the Church to detect and to refute Heresy. As the ancient Expositor (under the name of *Aquinas*) says here, "The Voice comes from the Four Living Creatures, namely, from the harmonious concord of the Four Evangelists, and reminds us that in evil days we must resort to the Sacred Page. Christ, by the Power of His Word, restrains the Evil One from hurting the oil and the wine of the Christian Sacraments." He has protected, and ever will protect them, against the assaults of the Enemy. Cp. *Primasius* here, "In vino et oleo vim sacramentorum prohibet violari." The doctrine of the Sacraments is identified with that of His Manhood; see above, *Introduction* to St. John, pp. 259—264, and to the Epistle to the Ephesians, pp. 275, 276. By guarding the one He defends the other.

The Voice which checks the course of the Evil One, and protects the true Doctrine of the Word and Sacraments of Christ from the enemy's arts and arms, comes forth from the midst of the Four Living Creatures—the Four Gospels. And we see a happy illustration of this prophetic Vision in the fact that in the ancient Councils of the Church, which were summoned for the repression of Heresy, the Four Gospels were placed on a Throne in the midst of the Synod. They were the Royal code by which the deliberations of those Councils were regulated and determined. In one of the Epistles of the great Council of Ephesus to Theodosius, the Emperor, it is said that "the Fathers of that Synod were assembled in the Church; and the Holy Gospels were placed on the Throne in the midst (ἐν τῷ μεσαιτάτῳ θρόνῳ), and displayed CHRIST Himself present among them." *Act. Concil. Ephes.* p. 175, and see *ibid.* p. 179, where similar expressions are used, τοῦ ἁγίου Εὐαγγελίου ἐν μέσῳ κειμένου, καὶ δεικνύοντος ἡμῖν παρόντα τὸν τῶν ὅλων δεσπότην Χριστόν. Other passages to the same effect are cited by *Suicer*, Thesaur. v. εὐαγγέλιον, p. 1227.

The Truth of this Vision portending the rise of Heresy—next in order to Persecution—by the agency of Satan against Christ and the Church, is clearly manifested by the testimony of ancient Church Historians. *Theodoret*, in the fifth century (*Eccles. Hist.* i. 2), giving a summary of the History of the Church after the cessation of Persecution, and the establishment of Christianity by *Constantine*, speaks in remarkable words, which afford a clear illustration of the Apocalyptic Visions of the Third Seal. "Then Churches were repaired, and Christians were appointed to be rulers of the Gentiles, and the temples of Idols were closed; and there were joyful assemblies in the Church. But the malignant and envious demon, the Foe of the World, could not brook this change from storm to peace; and he stirred up Heresies, in order to submerge the ship of the Church. He saw that the errors of Paganism had been exposed, and that the cheats of demons had been detected, and that the creature was no longer worshipped, and that the Creator was adored. Wherefore, he no more excited open assaults against God our Saviour, but having found certain men, graced with the Christian name, but slaves of ambition and vain-glory, he chose them as instruments of his machinations. Thus he brought men back to their old error, not indeed by leading them to adore the creature, but by endeavouring to degrade the Creator of the World to the rank of the creature. At that time there was a certain Presbyter of Alexandria, Arius. The adversary of the Truth suborned him, and by his means made confusion in the Church, and tempted him to oppose the Apostolic Doctrine of Alexander, the Bishop of that Church."

A similar view is presented by more recent Ecclesiastical Annalists. A compendium of Church History (derived from *Fleury*, *Tillemont*, *Alexander*, and *Ceillier*) presents the following summary: "The first attack which Satan made against the Church during three centuries having been unsuccessful, he devised a second: 'il va substituer à la vaine Philosophie des faux sages, les vains raisonnements des faux Docteurs; il va employer

f Zech. 6. 3.
Ezek. 14. 13, 21.
2 Esd. 15. 5.
Lev. 26. 22.

7 Καὶ ὅτε ἤνοιξε τὴν σφραγίδα τὴν τετάρτην, ἤκουσα τοῦ τετάρτου ζώου λέγοντος, Ἔρχου καὶ ἴδε. 8 καὶ εἶδον, καὶ ἰδοὺ ἵππος χλωρὸς, καὶ ὁ καθήμενος ἐπάνω αὐτοῦ ὄνομα αὐτῷ ὁ Θάνατος, καὶ ὁ Ἄιδης ἠκολούθει μετ' αὐτοῦ καὶ ἐδόθη αὐτοῖς ἐξουσία ἐπὶ τὸ τέταρτον τῆς γῆς ἀποκτεῖναι ἐν ῥομφαίᾳ, καὶ ἐν λιμῷ, καὶ ἐν θανάτῳ, καὶ ὑπὸ τῶν θηρίων τῆς γῆς.

contre la foi de l'Eglise l'abus du raisonnement soutenu par l'abus du pouvoir souverain." (Abrégé Chronol. de l'Histoire Ecclés. Paris, 1778. Tom. i. p. 259.) Lord Bacon, in his "Essay on Controversies," supplies an excellent historical comment on the prophetic Visions of the Second and Third Seals. "When the fiery trial of Persecution ceaseth, there succeedeth another trial; which, as it were, by contrary blasts of doctrine, doth sift and winnow men's Faith."

On the whole, then, we may acquiesce in the ancient interpretation of the first three Seals. The early Expositors may be safely followed here, because they are speaking of prophecies which had been fulfilled in their day. Their judgment on this matter is thus expressed in the Commentary published under the name of Aquinas,—

"The first Seal represents the primitive state of the Church.

"The second Seal displays the Persecution of the Church by the Heathen, in the days of the Martyrs.

"The third Seal unfolds the Persecution of the Church by Heretics."

Lastly, we may here apply the prophecy concerning Christ. "Thou shalt go upon the Lion and the Adder; the young Lion and the Dragon Thou shalt tread under Thy feet" (Ps. xci. 13). "The Devil," says Augustine, commenting on that prophecy, "is there represented as a Lion, and also as an Adder. And Christ's Victory over him in both these characters is signified in this Psalm. The Devil rages as a Lion: and he lies in ambush as an Adder. When the Martyrs were slain, then the Devil raged as a Lion; and when Heretics lay snares against the Church, then he lies in ambush as an Adder." But He who went forth conquering and to conquer, "goes upon the Lion and the Adder, and treads them under His feet." His Voice ever speaks in the Gospels, and reveals the wiles, and restrains the power, of the Enemy, and defends the Christian Sacraments. The Creeds of the Church, uttered by His Voice within her, are her symbols and watchwords; and the faithful in every age are enabled by His grace to contend earnestly for the faith, and to "tread on serpents and scorpions, and all the power of the Enemy." (Luke x. 19.)

The FOURTH SEAL opened.

7, 8. καὶ ὅτε] And when He opened the fourth seal I heard the Fourth Living Creature say, Come and see. And I saw and behold a pale horse: and his name that sat on him was Death, and Hades followed with him. And power was given unto them over the fourth part of the earth, to kill with the sword, and with hunger, and with death, and by means of the Beasts of the earth.

The Horse here mentioned is described as χλωρὸς, *gilvus*, of a pale yellowish green, a livid ghastly colour, like that of a corpse. See the authorities in Wetstein here, p. 773. The word χλωρὸς is joined with grass below, viii. 7, and in Mark vi. 39.

The Rider here is Death, and by his side is Hades, the personification of the Region of departed spirits (see on Luke xvi. 23, and above, i. 18). Hades is joined with Death, below, xx. 13, 14, where Death and Hades are cast into the Lake of Fire. Compare xxi. 4, and St. Paul's words in 1 Cor. xv. 55, derived from those of Christ Himself in the prophecy of Hosea, "O Death, I will be thy plagues; O Grave (Hades), I will be thy destruction." (Hosea xiii. 14.)

The word used in this seal for sword is different from that in v. 4, and signifies properly a Thracian sword, *framea* (*Hesych.*); it is not the imperial sword (μάχαιρα) of lawful Authority, such as that of the Emperors of Rome, but it is rather the barbarian scymitar (ρομφαία) of savage invaders; and it expresses the violence of wild and uncivilized marauders.

The Beasts of the earth here, θηρία τῆς γῆς, are savage powers exercising an earthly dominion for earthly ends (cp. the Apocalyptic phrase, "those who dwell on the earth," see on iii. 10).

Observe the article here, "the Beasts," showing that although they have not yet been mentioned, they are present to the divine foreknowledge, and will be described more fully in later parts of the Apocalypse. See particularly xi. 7; xiii. 1—17; xiv. 9—11; xvi. 2. 10. 13; xvii. 3—17; xix. 19, 20; xx. 4. 10.

This prophetic use of the definite article is striking and sub-

lime. It shows that all the imagery of the future is present in the Panorama of Omniscience to Him who inspires St. John.

These words, *the Beasts of the Earth*, thus introduced, connect the time of this seal with the time of other prophecies in other portions of the Apocalypse.

The words thus used in this book may be called chronological catch-words. They serve to rivet prophecies of contemporaneous events, and to mark identity of subject, as well as sameness of time. See above, Introduction, pp. 151, 152.

Here the Beasts are mentioned by anticipation. Similarly below, in ch. xi. 7, in the Vision of the two witnesses, it is said that "the Beast which riseth from the abyss" will make war with them. Nothing had as yet been said concerning the Beast, but he is afterwards described under that name in xvii. 8, and he is already present to the mind and eye of the Writer, illumined by the Holy Ghost.

The careful observation of these catch-words will often supply a clue to the sense of the prediction, and to its proper time and place in the prophetic volume. Evidences of the truth of this principle will be seen in the succeeding pages.

The Apocalypse is composed with marvellous accuracy and minute verbal precision (see above on chaps. ii. and iii.); and the use of a phrase in one part of the book serves often to determine its sense in another. This is what might be expected. The Apocalypse is a prophetic book; and the interpreter needs such helps as these: and the more he examines the language of the Apocalypse, the more he will be convinced that they are not denied him.

Let us apply this principle here. We find, on examination, that the word θηρίον, *Beast*, is used in no less than thirty-seven places of the Apocalypse, and always in a special sense, signifying a particular power; we may therefore reasonably infer that this word is used in the same sense in the passage now before us. Cp. notes below, x. 3, and on xi. 9.

This Seal, therefore, presents a compendious view of the sufferings which the Church of Christ would have to endure from various workings of the Evil One.

In the second seal the instrument of the Enemy was Persecution, in the third it was Heresy. But here in the fourth seal the evil is multifarious.

History explains this.

In the fifth and next following centuries the Heresies and Divisions of Christians gave occasion to incursions of Barbarians, such as the Goths (A.D. 410), the Huns (A.D. 452), the Vandals (A.D. 455), and other hordes, which overran a great part of Europe and Africa. They are represented in this seal; and its range extends to the ravages of Mohammedanism in the seventh century (A.D. 622), and beyond it.

The words *Famine* and *Death* signify the moral and spiritual woes of this period; woes consequent on Heresies and Schisms. The voice of sound learning and scriptural exposition had become feeble. Spiritual Dearth and Death were dominant in Christendom.

At length, also, in the ninth and tenth centuries, another Power began to domineer, which, on account of the extent and duration of its sway, will be more fully described in subsequent prophecies; and is now characterized by a few striking words, "the Beasts of the earth;" words which point out the chronological place of the present prophecy, and prepare the reader for the fuller description which will be presented to him hereafter. See chap. xiii. 1—18; xvii. 3—17; xix. 19, 20; xx. 4. 10.

The colour of the horse in this seal,—pale, or ghastly as a corpse,—and the companionship of Death, as well as Hunger, seem to bespeak the prevalence of deadness of soul, and of Infidelity.

The invitation to view the incidents of this seal is represented as proceeding from the Fourth Living Creature, who had the appearance of a flying Eagle (iv. 7). It was the special office of St. John, the writer of the Fourth Gospel, the Evangelical Eagle, to declare in that Gospel the divine power of Christ after His Resurrection (John xx., xxi.), when, like an Eagle, He had moulted the plumage of the Grave, and renewed His strength, and became young (Ps. ciii. 5), and mounted up with wings like an Eagle (Isa. xl. 31), and carried His young on His wings from their earthly nest, and soared with them to heaven. (See above on Matt. xxiv. 28. Luke xvii. 36.) And St. John in his Apocalypse de-

9^g Καὶ ὅτε ἤνοιξε τὴν πέμπτην σφραγίδα, εἶδον ὑποκάτω τοῦ θυσιαστηρίου τὰς ψυχὰς τῶν ἐσφαγμένων διὰ τὸν λόγον τοῦ Θεοῦ, καὶ διὰ τὴν μαρτυρίαν ἣν εἶχον^{10 h} καὶ ἔκραξαν φωνῇ μεγάλῃ λέγοντες, Ἔως πότε, ὁ δεσπότης ὁ ἅγιος καὶ ἀληθινός, οὐ κρίνεις καὶ ἐκδικεῖς τὸ αἷμα ἡμῶν ἐκ τῶν κατοικούντων ἐπὶ τῆς γῆς; ^{11 i} Καὶ ἐδόθη αὐτοῖς στολὴ λευκή· καὶ ἐρρέθη αὐτοῖς ἵνα ἀναπαύσωνται ἔτι χρόνον μικρὸν, ἕως πληρωθῶσι καὶ οἱ σύνδουλοι αὐτῶν καὶ οἱ ἀδελφοὶ αὐτῶν, οἱ μέλλοντες ἀποκτείνεσθαι ὡς καὶ αὐτοί.

scribes Christ's Victory over those adversaries, *Death, Hades*, and the *Beasts*, which are arrayed against Him in this seal. See below, xix. 20; xx. 13, 14.

THE FIFTH SEAL.

9—11. καὶ ὅτε] And when He opened the fifth seal, I saw under the altar the souls of them that had been slain for the word of God, and for the testimony which they held fast. And they cried with a loud voice, saying, How long, O Lord, the Holy One and true, dost Thou not judge and avenge our blood on them that dwell on the earth?

And a white robe was given unto each of them; and it was said unto them, that they should rest yet for a little time, until their fellow-servants also and their brethren, that are to be killed as they were, should be fulfilled.

The reading of the last word here is disputed. *Elz.* has πληρώσονται, which has not much authority. *Lach.* has πληρωθῶσιν, with A, C, and this seems the preferable reading. *Tisch.* has πληρώσωσιν, with B.

St. John being "in the spirit," was enabled to see departed spirits; he beheld them with the spiritual eye enlightened by the Holy Ghost. *Tertullian* (de Animâ, c. 8) says, "in spiritu factus animas martyrum conspicit." Cp. *ibid.* c. 10, and de Resur. carnis, c. 25. The souls of Martyrs are represented here as under the Altar; because they had been slain as Victims to God; their bodies had been sacrificed on His Altar, and their blood, in which is the life (Gen. ix. 4), had been poured out upon it, and flowed down beneath it, and cried from the ground, as did that of Abel the first Martyr. (Gen. iv. 10. Matt. xxiii. 35.)

The imagery of this Vision is derived from the sacrificial service of the Temple (Exod. xl. 29); "the blood of the victims being received by the sacrificing Priest in a vessel was poured out at the foot of the Altar." (*Jahn*, Archæol. § 377; see Levit. iv. 7; viii. 15. Isa. xxix. 1.) The sacrificial word (ἐσφαγμένων) here rendered slain, is the same as is applied to Christ, the True and Faithful Martyr, the Lamb slain (see v. 6. 9. 12; xiii. 8), and to the Martyrs (in xviii. 24). This imagery had been already adopted by the Apostle St. Paul at Rome, on the eve of his own martyrdom; "I am already being poured out, and the time of my departure is at hand." (2 Tim. iv. 6.)

St. John sees here the disembodied souls of departed saints; and he represents them, not as sleeping in insensibility, but as conscious of the past; and even as measuring the lapse of time, "Lord, how long?" and as earnestly longing and praying for the Coming of Christ. "How long, O Lord, the holy and true, dost Thou not judge?" "The souls of Martyrs," says *Tertullian* (Scorpice, c. 12), "repose in peace under the Altar, and cherish a spirit of patience (patientiam pascunt) until others are admitted to fill up their communion of glory." And *S. Irenæus* says (v. 31, Grabe), "The souls of the departed go to the place assigned them by God, and there abide until the Resurrection, when they will be reunited to their bodies; and then the Saints, both in soul and body, will come into the presence of God." Cp. *S. Cyprian* de Lapsis, p. 446; and de Bono Patientiæ, p. 592.

The souls here seen by St. John are those which repose "in Abraham's bosom," and have a foretaste of future glory (Luke xvi. 22). See the *Catena* here, pp. 274, 275; and *Aug.* (?), who says, "The souls of the saints are in Paradise (Luke xxiii. 43), but they are said to be under the Altar, because their blood is shed on the earth, and crieth from the ground."

St. John, in another part of the prophecy (see xx. 4), reveals a similar vision of the disembodied souls of the Martyrs in the intermediate state. That revelation is similar to St. Paul's representation of the present condition of the departed spirits of the Ancient Patriarchs, who wait till the General Resurrection and Day of Judgment for their "perfect consummation and bliss, both in body and soul, in eternal and everlasting Glory." (*Office for the Burial of the Dead.*) See Heb. xi. 40.

In the mean time, they enjoy the rest and refreshment of Paradise (Luke xxiii. 43), and are in Abraham's bosom (Luke xvi. 22). Therefore, as the Apocalypse says, "Blessed are the dead that die in the Lord, for they rest from their labours" (xiv. 13). The voice here assures them that the time of their

rest is short, that is, it is short, compared with the time of future fruition of joy in eternity: and that ere long, when the number of their fellow-servants and brethren, God's Martyrs, has been accomplished, their bliss will be consummated by the Resurrection of their bodies, and by the gracious invitation of Christ to "inherit the kingdom prepared for them from the foundation of the World." (Matt. xxv. 34.)

As to the sense of ἐκδικεῖς, see above, on the prayer of the poor widow, Luke xviii. 3. 5; and below, xviii. 20, and the words of the Psalmist, zealous for the vindication of God's honour by the execution of His judgments on those who blaspheme His Name: Ps. lxxix. 10—13.

It is well said by *Bede* here, "Those souls which offered themselves a living sacrifice to God, pray eternally for His Coming to judgment, not from any vindictive feeling against their enemies, but in a spirit of zeal and love for God's glory and Justice, and for the Coming of that Day, when sin, which is rebellion against Him, will be destroyed (see Heb. ix. 28), and their own bodies will be raised. And so in that prayer wherein Christ teaches us to forgive our enemies, we are also taught to say, 'Thy Kingdom come.'"

11. στολὴ λευκή] a white robe *Elz.* has here στολαὶ λευκαί, white robes, but the reading of A, B, C, στολὴ λευκή, in the singular, is far preferable, as indicating that the one and same white robe of Christ's righteousness was given to each of them (cp. xix. 14). All their unrighteousness is forgiven, and their sin is covered by that white robe (cp. James v. 20. 1 Pet. iv. 8), and they have a delightful consciousness of God's favour, and are with Christ (Phil. i. 23), and enjoy a blissful foretaste of heavenly and everlasting felicity.

INTRODUCTION TO THE SIXTH SEAL.

In the Apocalypse the number six always introduces a time of severe trial and suffering, previous to a seventh or Sabbatical period of Rest which ensues, and closes the series.

St. John saw the Visions of the Apocalypse on the Lord's Day (i. 10), the First Day of the week: and all these Visions are arranged in groups of sevens. Seven Epistles are sent; seven seals are opened; seven trumpets sound; seven vials are poured out. They all end in a Sabbath of rest, after an *hexæmeron* or six days' course of labour and sorrow. The number seven occurs nearly fifty times in the Apocalypse; see below, note at end of chap. xi.

There is a Harmony between the seven seals, indicating the seven successive periods of the sufferings of the Church, and the seven days of the Passion Week of Christ.

The first day of that week was Palm Sunday. Christ then came forth riding into Jerusalem, and was welcomed as a Conqueror and King. See on Matt. xxi. 1—11. Mark xi. 1—11. Luke xix. 29—44. John xii. 12—16.

So it was in the first seal. Christ came forth riding on the white horse, conquering and to conquer. See above, v. 2.

On the second day of that week, "the Chief Priests, and Scribes, and Chief of the People sought how they might destroy Him." Mark xi. 18. Luke xix. 47.

The Second Seal displays a similar working of the power of the Adversary against the Church (v. 3); and like analogies may be traced between the other days of the Passion Week of Christ, and the sufferings of the Church, as displayed in the seals.

The climax of Christ's Passion Week was Friday. The sixth Day was the Day of the Crucifixion.

So the Sixth Seal reveals the crisis of greatest suffering for the Church; it is the Friday of her Passion Week.

But it is also the eve of the Sabbath of her rest.

On the day of Christ's Passion, there was a strange and unnatural darkness. So, as this Seal reveals, will it likewise be in the sixth age of the Church, "When the Son of Man cometh, shall He find the Faith on earth?" see Luke xviii. 8. On Good Friday, there was desertion of Christ; and the Kings of the Earth stood up, and the Rulers took counsel together against the Lord and against His Anointed (Ps. ii. 2. Acts iv. 26, 27). So it will be in the last age of the Church. The Love of many will wax cold (Matt. xxiv. 12). Men will not endure sound doctrine

k ch. 16. 18.
Joel 2. 10, 31.
& 3. 15.
Matt. 24. 29.
Acts 2. 20.

l Ps. 102. 27.
Isa. 34. 4.
Heb. 1. 12.
ch. 16. 20.
m Isa. 2. 19.

¹² ^k Καὶ εἶδον ὅτε ἤνοιξε τὴν σφραγίδα τὴν ἕκτην, καὶ σεισμός μέγας ἐγένετο, καὶ ὁ ἥλιος ἐγένετο μέλας ὡς σάκκος τρίχινος, καὶ ἡ σελήνη ὅλη ἐγένετο ὡς αἷμα, ¹³ καὶ οἱ ἀστέρες τοῦ οὐρανοῦ ἔπεσαν εἰς τὴν γῆν, ὡς συκὴ βάλλει τοὺς ὀλύνθους αὐτῆς ὑπὸ ἀνέμου μεγάλου σειομένη, ¹⁴ ¹ καὶ ὁ οὐρανὸς ἀπεχωρίσθη ὡς βιβλίον ἐλισσόμενον, καὶ πᾶν ὄρος καὶ νῆσος ἐκ τῶν τόπων αὐτῶν ἐκινήθησαν ¹⁵ ^m καὶ οἱ βασιλεῖς τῆς γῆς, καὶ οἱ μεγιστᾶνες, καὶ οἱ χιλιάρχαι,

(2 Tim. iv. 3). The Woman will suffer persecution, and be driven into the wilderness (Rev. xii. 6. 14). As at the Crucifixion there was an Earthquake, and the rocks were rent (Matt. xxvii. 51), so it will be then. As Christ's Death brought confusion and overthrow to Satan and his adherents, and Victory to all true believers, and was their entrance to Rest and a Glorious Resurrection; so the sufferings of the last age will be succeeded by, and crowned with, everlasting felicity. Then especially the Church—and every true member of the Church—will find and feel that we must through *much tribulation* enter the *Kingdom of God* (Acts xiv. 22), and if we *suffer* with Him we shall also *reign* with Him: cp. Rom. viii. 17.

THE SIXTH SEAL.

12—17. καὶ εἶδον] *And I saw when He opened the sixth seal, and there was a great Earthquake, and the Sun became black as sackcloth of hair: and the whole Moon became as blood; and the Stars of heaven fell to the earth even as a fig-tree casteth her untimely figs when she is shaken of a mighty wind: and the heaven departed as a scroll when it is rolled together; and every Mountain and Island were moved out of their places. And the kings of the earth, and the great men, and the chief captains, and the rich men, and the mighty men, and every man bond and free, hid themselves in the dens and in the rocks of the mountains: and they say to the mountains and rocks, Fall on us, and hide us from the face of Him that sitteth on the throne, and from the wrath of the Lamb: for the great Day of His wrath is come; and who is able to stand?*

This prophetic description may be combined with that in vii. 1—3, revealing "the preparations for the accomplishment of the number of the Elect."

Some *Modern* Interpreters have supposed that this Sixth Seal refers only to the establishment of Christianity in the Fourth Century.

But all the ancient Expositors were agreed, as was observed before, that the Sixth Seal brings the prophecy down to the *last age* of the Church and the World. Cp. *Tertullian*, adv. Hermog. c. 34; and *S. Hippolytus*, pp. 113. 115 (ed. Lagarde); and the *Auctor Anonym.* adv. Novatianum, p. 781 of *S. Cyprian*, Works, ed. Venet. 1758; and the Ancient Greek Expositors here, in *Caten.*, p. 282; and *Primasius* and other Ancient Latin Interpreters of the Apocalypse.

As it is essential to the right understanding of the Apocalypse that this point should be settled, the following considerations are submitted to the reader, in confirmation of the Ancient Exposition.

(1) The Apocalypse is a sequel to the Book of Daniel. St. John takes the thread of Prophecy from the hand of Daniel. He deals with many of the same subjects, and adopts his imagery and language.

It is therefore highly probable that the Holy Spirit, Who inspired Daniel and St. John, and Who is a Spirit of Wisdom and Order, would present the prophetic Visions to their minds, according to the same plan.

In examining the prophecies of Daniel, we find that the Holy Spirit first presents a rapid sketch of the future from *Daniel's age to the Day of Doom*. This is done in the vision seen by Nebuchadnezzar, and *revealed* by God to Daniel, and interpreted by Daniel under the divine inspiration (Dan. ii. 31—45).

That first Vision in the Book of Daniel has its parallel in this first Vision of the Apocalypse.

Each of these Visions—that of the image in Daniel, and this of the Seals in St. John—displays a *brief view* of the future, *even to the end of the World*.

Again; in the Book of Daniel the Vision of the quadriform Image is succeeded by the Vision of the Four Beasts (vii. 1—27), in which the subject of the former prophecy is displayed in a different and ampler form; and that Vision is succeeded by other subsidiary Visions (viii. 2—25), in which some of the elements and features of the former Visions are exhibited in clearer outline and larger dimensions.

Precisely the same method is employed in the Apocalypse. See above *Introduction*, p. 152.

(2) If we scrutinize the context and contents of the Sixth Seal, we shall see that it *cannot* refer to the age of Constantine, nor to any *other age* than the *last age* of the Church.

The phenomena of this Seal do not belong to the fourth century. It could not be said *then*, that "The *Great Day of the wrath of the Lamb was come*" (v. 17); or that it was a time of general panic and confusion; or that it was succeeded by the completion and gathering together of God's elect from all nations under heaven, and by an universal triumph of His people, and by an universal ascription of praise to Him and to the Lamb, and by the admission of the Saints *to stand before His throne, and to serve in His Temple day and night* (vii. 15). When the Day of Universal Resurrection and of the Last Judgment shall come, then—but not till then—will the Saints be admitted into heaven, to stand before God's throne, and to *serve* in His Temple for ever. See above, *vv.* 10, 11.

The Events just specified form the immediate Sequel of the Sixth Seal.

Hence it is evident that the prophecies in the Sixth Seal were not fulfilled in Constantine's age, nor will they be accomplished till the eve of the consummation of all things.

(3) This appears also from the tenor of the prophecies in the preceding seals; which lead by a successive series of visions from the Time of Christ's First Advent to the last age of the Church.

Here then we have a clue to the interpretation of this Seal; and we shall find that the succeeding Visions are cleared up by this exposition, and reflect additional light upon it, and augment the evidence of its truth.

The imagery of this Seal is similar to that with which our Blessed Lord Himself describes the circumstances of His own *Second Coming to Judgment* (see Matt. xxiv. 29—31). "The *Sun* shall be darkened, and the *Moon* shall not give her light, and the *Stars* shall fall from heaven, and all the powers of the *heavens* shall be shaken; and *then* shall appear the Sign of the Son of Man in heaven, and then shall all the *tribes of the Earth* mourn, and they shall see the *Son of Man coming* in the clouds of heaven with power and great glory."

This prophecy of our Lord introduces the mention of the *last Trumpet*, and the gathering together of *His elect* from the four winds, from one end of heaven to another. Matt. xxiv. 31.

Here is another parallel to this seal; in which a command is given to the *four Angels at the four corners* of the earth, not to hurt the earth till the *Servants of God are sealed*; and then the number of the elect is completed (vii. 4—9).

Our Lord also in another place thus describes His own *Second coming*, "There shall be signs in the *Sun*, and in the *Moon*, and in the *Stars*, and upon the *Earth* distress of Nations, with perplexity, the Sea and the waves roaring; men's hearts failing them for fear, and for looking after those things that shall be coming *on the Earth*; for the powers of heaven shall be shaken; and then shall they see the *Son of Man coming* in a cloud with power and great glory" (Luke xxi. 25—27). See also the prophecies of Isaiah (li. 6. 2 Pet. iii. 7. 10, 11) concerning the last days. Those prophecies, and that of our Lord just quoted, harmonize with the Vision of this Seal, and show its reference to the same events.

Lastly, the imagery of this Seal connects it with other Visions in the Apocalypse itself, descriptive of the condition of the World in the *last age*.

The mention here of the war and rout of the *Kings of the Earth*, i. e. the powers of this world opposed to Christ and to the Kings from the *East* (xvi. 12), and the mention also of the *great Earthquake* in this Seal, and the moving of Mountains and Islands, seem to show that the time of this Seal coincides with that of the *Sixth* and *Seventh* Vials, described in the sixteenth Chapter as follows: "12. And the sixth angel poured out his vial upon the great river, Euphrates; and the water thereof was dried up, that the way might be prepared of the *kings from the East*. 13. And I saw three unclean spirits like frogs from the mouth of the dragon, and from the mouth of the beast, and from the mouth of the false prophet. 14. For they are spirits of devils, *working miracles*, which go forth unto the *kings of the earth*, and of the whole world, to gather them to the battle of that great Day of

καὶ οἱ πλούσιοι, καὶ οἱ ἰσχυροὶ, καὶ πᾶς δούλος καὶ ἐλεύθερος, ἔκρυψαν ἑαυτοὺς
εἰς τὰ σπήλαια καὶ εἰς τὰς πέτρας τῶν ὀρέων, ¹⁶ καὶ λέγουσι τοῖς ὄρεσι καὶ
ταῖς πέτραις, Πέσατε ἐφ' ἡμᾶς, καὶ κρύψατε ἡμᾶς ἀπὸ προσώπου τοῦ καθ-
ημένου ἐπὶ τοῦ θρόνου, καὶ ἀπὸ τῆς ὀργῆς τοῦ Ἀρνίου, ¹⁷ ὅτι ἦλθεν ἡ ἡμέρα ἡ
μεγάλη τῆς ὀργῆς αὐτοῦ, καὶ τίς δύναται σταθῆναι ;

n Isa. 2. 19.
Hos. 10. 8.
Luke 23. 30.
ch. 9. 6.
o Isa. 13. 6.
Joel 2. 11.
Zeph. 1. 14.
Ps. 76. 7.

VII. ¹ Καὶ μετὰ τοῦτο εἶδον τέσσαρας ἀγγέλους ἐστῶτας ἐπὶ τὰς τέσσαρας
γωνίας τῆς γῆς, κρατοῦντας τοὺς τέσσαρας ἀνέμους τῆς γῆς, ἵνα μὴ πνέῃ
ἄνεμος ἐπὶ τῆς γῆς μήτε ἐπὶ τῆς θαλάσσης, μήτε ἐπὶ τι δένδρον.

² Καὶ εἶδον ἄλλον ἄγγελον ἀναβαίνοντα ἀπὸ ἀνατολῆς ἡλίου ἔχοντα σφρα-
γίδα Θεοῦ ζῶντος· καὶ ἔκραξε φωνῇ μεγάλῃ τοῖς τέσσαρσιν ἀγγέλοις, οἷς

a Dan. 7. 2.

b ch. 14. 1.

God Almighty. 16. And they gathered them together into a place called in the Hebrew tongue Armageddon.

"17. And the seventh angel poured out his vial into the air; and there came a great voice out of the temple of heaven, from the throne, saying, It is done. 18. And there were voices, and thunders, and lightnings; and there was a great earthquake, such as was not since men were upon the earth, so mighty an earthquake, and so great. 19. And the great city was divided into three parts, and the cities of the nations fell; and Babylon the Great came in remembrance before God, to give unto her the cup of the wine of the fierceness of His wrath. 20. And every island fled away, and the mountains were not found."

In v. 12, after σελήνη, A, B, C have ὅλη, whole, which is omitted by Elz.

In v. 15 Elz. has πᾶς before ἐλεύθερος, but πᾶς is not in A, B, C. The panic and distress of this convulsion are described as so great that even slaves, who in the ancient States would not be much concerned by the distress of their masters, are involved therein.

15. πᾶς δούλος] every bondman and every freeman. Cp. Isa. xxiv. 2, and below, xiii. 16; xix. 18.

16. λέγουσι τοῖς ὄρεσι] they say to the Mountains, Fall upon us. Compare above, on Luke xxiii. 30. The kings of the Earth and Great Men of this world, who have not used their power as Vicegerents and Deputies of Christ, for the maintenance of His Truth, and for the promotion of His Glory, will then be fain to hide themselves in caves and dens of the earth, as the kings of Canaan did, when flying from Joshua, the type of Jesus (Josh. x. 16—22); but in vain.

— κρύψατε ἡμᾶς—ἀπὸ τῆς ὀργῆς τοῦ Ἀρνίου] hide us from the wrath of the Lamb. Awful and striking words. Save us from the wrath of Him whom we despised as weak and gentle as a Lamb, and whom we now find to be strong and terrible as the Lion.

He who was preached to us as the "Lamb of God, taking away the sins of the World," and dying to save us, is now become the Author of our punishment and woe. Dreadful discovery! Compare xiv. 14.

Perhaps also this will be said by some in a tone of desperate derision and fiendish blasphemy. Cp. xvi. 9. 11. 21.

Contrast this exclamation of agony with the ascription of salvation to God and the Lamb on the part of the servants of God (vii. 9). They will pass in safety through the great tribulation (vii. 14), and will stand for ever before the Throne of God and the Lamb (vii. 9), and the Lamb will lead them to waters of Life (vii. 17).

Brief Retrospect of the preceding SEALS.

In the First Seal we saw our Blessed Lord and Saviour arrayed as a mighty Warrior, crowned, riding in triumph on a white horse, conquering and to conquer. Such He appeared at the period of the First Seal; that is, in the primitive age of Christianity.

The succeeding Seals have displayed Satan, the Adversary of Christ and His Church. Christ, we have seen, is ever one and the same. He is ever on the white horse; ever pure, ever true, ever victorious. But Satan changes his form and colour. He is first terrible, on a horse of blood, and brandishes a sword. He next appears on a black horse, and holds a balance. He then comes forth on a pale horse, with Death, and Hades, and Hunger, and Beasts in his train. Christ is ever the same; but Satan assumes different shapes and colours, and has different weapons and allies, to suit the temper of the times. When he is foiled in one device, he resorts to another. He knows where men are most vulnerable, and assails them accordingly; and so it will ever be to the end of the world; when, having exhausted all his arts, he will, like the fabled Proteus after all his changes, return to his original shape, and fiercely persecute the Church (xx. 8, 9).

But now look at the end.

The day will at length come, when all his efforts will be defeated. Look at the close of the Apocalypse. He Who is on the White Horse has subdued all His enemies. The two Beasts (xiii. 1. 11), the allies of Satan, are taken by Christ, "and cast alive into the lake of fire" (xix. 20). "Death and Hades are cast into the lake of fire; which is the second death" (xx. 14). And at last, Satan himself is "cast into the lake of fire, to be tormented for ever and ever" (xx. 10).

The purpose therefore of the Seals is to assure the Christian Church that Christ has gone forth conquering and to conquer; and that whatever His enemies may do, His Victory is certain and will be eventually complete.

They also warn her, that she must not look for peace, or for perfect purity on earth. They reveal to her that she must expect to be tried by manifold forms of persecution from without, and of error from within. But she is also cheered with the assurance that all who remain true to Christ will be partakers of His Victory.

This design of the Seals is clearly brought out by the answer of the Angel at the end of the Vision of the sixth Seal, just before the final consummation, when he describes the whole company of those who are saved, even from the first Advent of Christ. "These," he says, "are they that are coming out of the great tribulation, and who washed their robes white in the blood of the Lamb" (vii. 14).

We are taught also by these Visions how History ought to be written, and how it ought to be read. And in speaking here of History we may include History not only of the Church, but of the World. Our Lord says, "the Field is the World" (Matt. xiii. 38). The Church is universal in time and place, and whatever concerns the World concerns the Church, and whatever concerns the Church, concerns all men.

We learn from these Visions to study History in this spirit. We learn to contemplate its events not only as facts teaching civil wisdom, but to regard them as St. John teaches us to do; that is, as exhibiting the operations of two opposite Powers, the power of Christ on one side, and the power of Satan on the other. Thus the early Christian Historians treated historical events; here is their great excellence. They looked on Persecution, and Heresy, and Superstition, and Infidelity, as weapons of Satan against Christ. In them they saw the Evil One riding, as it were, on the red horse, and the black horse, and the pale horse, against Him who sitteth on the white horse. If we do likewise, we shall study History with the spirit of St. John.

Lastly: to whom do we now belong? Whom are we following? Him Who rideth for ever on the white horse? or him who sitteth, now on the red horse, now on the black, now on the pale horse? Christ, or Satan? Doubtless in this world Satan has strong allies and terrible weapons; the sword, famine, the beasts, the grave. But *prospice finem*. Let us have our eye fixed on the end. Where shall we be then? With those who "follow Christ on white horses?" or with "the Beasts, the Grave, and Satan, who will be cast into the lake of fire, which is the Second Death?"

CH. VII. The SEALING of the SERVANTS of God; the accomplishment of His Elect.

1. καὶ μετὰ τοῦτο] So A, B, C. Elz. ταῦτα. And after this I saw four angels standing at the four corners of the earth, holding the four winds of the earth, that no wind should blow on the Earth, nor on the Sea, nor on any Tree. And I saw another angel ascending from the east, having the seal of the living God: and he cried with a loud voice to the four angels, to whom it was given to hurt the Earth and the Sea, saying, Hurt not the Earth, neither the Sea nor the Trees, till we have sealed the servants of our God in their foreheads. On these verses compare above, vi. 12. The Four Angels are represented as standing at the Four

c ch. 6. 6. & 9. 4.
Ezek. 9. 4.

ἐδόθη αὐτοῖς ἀδικῆσαι τὴν γῆν καὶ τὴν θάλασσαν, ³ λέγων, Μὴ ἀδικήσητε τὴν γῆν, μήτε τὴν θάλασσαν, μήτε τὰ δένδρα, ἄχρις οὗ σφραγίσωμεν τοὺς δούλους τοῦ Θεοῦ ἡμῶν ἐπὶ τῶν μετώπων αὐτῶν.

d ch. 14. 1.

⁴ Καὶ ἤκουσα τὸν ἀριθμὸν τῶν ἐσφραγισμένων, ἑκατὸν τεσσαράκοντα χιλιάδες ἐσφραγισμένοι ἐκ πάσης φυλῆς υἱῶν Ἰσραὴλ. ⁵ ἐκ φυλῆς Ἰούδα, δώδεκα χιλιάδες ἐσφραγισμένοι ἐκ φυλῆς Ῥουβὴν, δώδεκα χιλιάδες ἐκ φυλῆς Γὰδ, δώδεκα χιλιάδες. ⁶ ἐκ φυλῆς Ἀσὴρ, δώδεκα χιλιάδες ἐκ φυλῆς Νεφθαλεὶμ, δώδεκα χιλιάδες ἐκ φυλῆς Μανασσῆ, δώδεκα χιλιάδες. ⁷ ἐκ φυλῆς Συμεὼν, δώδεκα χιλιάδες ἐκ φυλῆς Λευὶ, δώδεκα χιλιάδες ἐκ φυλῆς Ἰσαχάρ,

Corners of the Earth, ready to gather in God's Elect from the four winds of heaven (see Matt. xxiv. 31), and to execute His Judgments on the ungodly. Compare Matt. xiii. 39. 41, and 2 Thess. i. 7, 8, where the Angels are represented as ministers of His power and retributive justice on His enemies.

Another Angel appears, ascending from the East or sun-rising (ἀνατολή). This Angel is either Christ Himself, or a special Messenger from Christ. Christ is described in Scripture, and particularly in this Book, as the Ἀνατολή, or East (see on Luke i. 78, and below, on xvi. 12), and this Angel is a superior Angel, for he here gives a command to the four Angels; and they are his ministers and agents.

Hurt not ye the Earth, he says, neither the Sea, nor any Tree, till we have sealed the servants of our God on their foreheads. The four Angels therefore are not only empowered to hurt, but they are also commissioned to Seal. The Sealing must first take place, before the infliction of vengeance.

The four Angels are commanded to restrain the Winds, or blasts of destruction, from blowing on the Earth, that is, on Earthly Powers, opposed to those of Heaven (see on i. 7; iii. 10), and from blowing on the Sea, the element of storms, which is the Apocalyptic emblem of Nations in a state of restless agitation, swelling, raging, and tossing their waves on high against God (cp. Ps. xxix. 9; xlv. 3; lxxv. 7); and from hurting the Trees, the Great and Powerful ones of this world, flourishing in the verdure and luxuriance of earthly prosperity. The Rich and Powerful of this world are often compared in Scripture to Trees, and are symbolized in its poetic imagery by Cedars of Lebanon, and Oaks of Basan for stateliness and strength, and by green Bay-trees for prosperity. Cp. Job xxix. 19. Ps. xcii. 12—14. Isa. ii. 13. Jer. xvii. 8. Ezek. xvii. 3, 4. Dan. iv. 10—16. Hos. xiv. 6, 7.

The Sealing takes place first; the Vengeance follows. The important fact is thus made manifest, that the main design and primary purpose of God's workings in this world is the preservation and beatification of His servants; and that the Punishment of the opposing powers of this World which are His Enemies, and are here represented by the Earth, Sea, and Trees, is only secondary and subordinate; that it is not directly designed by Him, but consequent on their sins. Cp. Matt. xxiv. 41.

The Angels are restrained from inflicting punishment, until they have sealed the servants of God on their foreheads. This action of sealing with the seal or signet of God, is equivalent to a declaration, that they, who are so sealed, appertain to God, and are distinguished as such from others who do not belong to Him, and are assured by Him of His protection against all evil; and that they are completed in number and consummated in happiness; cp. the use of σφραγίζω, to seal, in Isa. viii. 16. Dan. ix. 24. John iii. 33; vi. 27. Rom. xv. 28. Eph. i. 13; iv. 30.

This Vision may be compared with the Vision in Ezekiel (ix. 4—6), where the Saints are sealed with the letter Thau, the last letter of the Hebrew Alphabet (see the original Hebrew there, and also Vulg.); showing their constant perseverance to the end, and the unfailing protection of God. Cp. Bishop Andrewes, ii. p. 76.

The forehead is specified as that on which the divine impress is received. Cp. Rev. xxii. 4. The forehead is the most conspicuous part of the human body; as the ancient Fathers observe, it is the seat of boldness and constancy both for evil and good (see Jer. iii. 3. Ezek. iii. 7—9); and it shows whether a man is a faithful soldier of Christ, or sold in slavery to the Evil One.

Hence the Cross is impressed on the forehead in the Sacrament of Baptism (which was often called σφραγίς, or seal, by ancient Christian writers. See Euseb. iii. 23, in a narrative concerning St. John. Greg. Naz. Orat. xl. Suicer, Thesaur. p. 1198, v. σφραγίς), in order that he who bears it "may not be ashamed to confess the faith of Christ crucified, but may manfully fight under His banner against Sin, the World, and the Devil, and continue His faithful soldier and servant unto his life's end."

The Antichristian Power is also represented as imitating this by a similar process with regard to its own servants, whom it seals on the forehead (Rev. xiii. 16; xiv. 9; xx. 4).

4. καὶ ἤκουσα] And I heard the number of them which were sealed: and there were sealed an hundred and forty and four thousand of every tribe of the children of Israel. Of the tribe of Judah were sealed twelve thousand. Of the tribe of Reuben twelve thousand. Of the tribe of Gad twelve thousand. Of the tribe of Aser twelve thousand. Of the tribe of Nephtalim twelve thousand. Of the tribe of Manasses twelve thousand. Of the tribe of Simeon twelve thousand. Of the tribe of Levi twelve thousand. Of the tribe of Issachar twelve thousand. Of the tribe of Zabulon twelve thousand. Of the tribe of Joseph twelve thousand. Of the tribe of Benjamin were sealed twelve thousand.

With regard to the last of these verses it may be observed that Elz. repeats here the word ἐσφραγισμένων twelve times after χιλιάδες; but it is found only twice in A, B, C, and many Cursives. Also, Elz. has ιβ' instead of δώδεκα, which is in A, C; and in v. 4 Elz. has ρμδ' instead of the fuller orthography of the numerals.

What do these ONE HUNDRED AND FORTY-FOUR THOUSAND represent?

They do not signify the literal Israelites; but they represent the "blessed company of all faithful people," gathered together from all parts of the World, and constituting the Church Universal, redeemed by Christ's Blood, and sealed by His Spirit, and continuing stedfastly in the doctrine preached by His Apostles, sent by Him and taught by the Holy Ghost.

This is the interpretation given to this passage (vv. 2—12) by the Christian Church, appointing it to be read as an Epistle on the Festival of "ALL SAINTS." The truth of this interpretation may appear from the following considerations:—

(1) The 144,000 do not signify the literal Israel.

One of the main designs of the Apocalypse is, to show that believers in Christ are the true Israel of God; and that all the promises made by God to Abraham, the Patriarchs, and the Prophets, are fulfilled to those who are incorporated in the Mystical body of Christ, the true seed of Abraham, and abide in Him unto the end. See above, Introduction, p. 149.

St. John does not concede even the title of Jew to the literal Israel. "They say that they are Jews, and are not" (ii. 9; iii. 9). The Jerusalem, of which the Apocalypse speaks, is always the Christian Church (see iii. 12; xxi. 2. 10). The Sion is the spiritual Sion (see xiv. 1), the Royal City of Christ, Who has the key of David (see iii. 7), and Who is the Root and off-spring of David (v. 5; xxii. 16).

In this respect the language of the Apocalypse had been already anticipated by the Apostle of the Gentiles. "He is not a Jew," says St. Paul, "who is one outwardly, neither is that circumcision which is outward in the flesh: but he is a Jew who is one inwardly, and circumcision is that of the heart" (Rom. ii. 28, 29); and he says "We are the Circumcision" (Phil. iii. 3; cp. Col. ii. 11). "If ye be Christ's ye are Abraham's seed" (Gal. iii. 29. Rom. ix. 8). "Ye are come to Mount Sion, and unto the city of the living God, the heavenly Jerusalem, and to the spirits of just men made perfect." (Heb. xii. 22, 23; cp. Gal. iv. 26.)

Here was a source of inexpressible comfort to all the children of Abraham, especially in the latter days of St. John's age, when the literal Jerusalem was trodden under foot by the Gentiles. Its glories had been eclipsed by those of the Christian Church, or rather they had been swallowed up in its splendour. The spiritual Sion had risen on the ruins of the material Jerusalem. No longer were the eyes of the faithful to be fixed on the stones and buildings of the Temple, and on the transitory glories of its evanescent Ritual. They needed not the Levitical shadows, for they pos-

δώδεκα χιλιάδες⁸ ἐκ φυλῆς Ζαβουλὼν, δώδεκα χιλιάδες ἐκ φυλῆς Ἰωσήφ,
δώδεκα χιλιάδες ἐκ φυλῆς Βενιαμὶν, δώδεκα χιλιάδες ἐσφραγισμένοι.

sessed the Evangelical substance. They were now "fellow-citizens with the saints," in every age and clime, and they looked upwards to the solemn fabric and glorious solemnities of "the city that hath foundations;" "the Jerusalem that is above, which is the mother of us all." (Gal. iv. 26.) They beheld with the eye of Faith the great High Priest of their profession, ministering in the Heavenly Sanctuary within the Veil.

(2) Nor do the 144,000, who are sealed in this Vision, represent only the *Jews* who *believe* in Christ; they represent *all* the faithful, whether Jews or Gentiles.

The names of the Tribes specified here are not to be understood literally as signifying Tribes of Israelitish Christians. This is clear from the fact that one of the twelve tribes, that of *Dan*, does not appear at all in the List. It cannot be imagined that not a single person would be *saved* of that Tribe, to which many holy men had belonged.

Besides, *if* the names of the Tribes were to be taken literally, so ought also the number of those who are sealed in each tribe;

But it is incredible, that precisely the *same* number of persons should be saved from *each* of the Twelve Tribes here mentioned; and only so *small* a number as 144,000 should be saved in *all*.

(3) Therefore, we may rest assured that the interpretation is sound, which is supplied here by the ancient Expositors, and is adopted by some of the best modern commentators, especially *Vitringa* and *Hengstenberg* in his notes on xi. 13. *Neither* the names, nor the numbers, in this Vision are to be understood literally.

The present Vision becomes clear, when we regard these ONE HUNDRED AND FORTY-FOUR THOUSAND as representing the glorified company of the whole Church of the Saints of God. The number 144,000 represents their consummation. As is well said by *S. Augustine* (de Doctrinâ Christianâ), "The number Twelve multiplied into Twelve makes One Hundred and Forty-Four, the number in the Apocalypse, which designates the universal Society of the Saints:" and so *Aug.* here, "centum quadraginta quatuor Millia omnis omnino Ecclesia est."

The number here mentioned, 144,000, is produced by Twelve squared, multiplied into Ten cubed. *Twelve* is the number of the *Apostles*; and being multiplied into itself and by a Thousand, it offers an apt representation of the Company of believers, "of a thousand generations," holding the Apostolic doctrine and discipline unto the end, in solid constancy and unity.

Geometrical dimensions were often used by the ancients, as exponents of *moral qualities*. Thus we have ἀνδρα χερσὶ τε καὶ ποσὶ καὶ νόφ τετράγωνον (a man perfectly squared), in *Plato* (Protag. 339, B). Compare *Horace's* metaphor, "Fortis et in se-ipso totus teres atque rotundus." 2 Sat. vii. 86.

The Number *Twelve* in the Apocalypse represents what is *Apostolical*. Thus the faithful Church is crowned with *Twelve Stars* (xii. 1); the Church glorified in the heavenly Jerusalem has *Twelve Gates*, and *Twelve Angels*, and has the names of the *Twelve Tribes* of Israel inscribed upon the Gates (xxi. 12); and it has *Twelve* foundation-stones, and on them written the names of the *Twelve Apostles* of the Lamb (xxi. 14); and the heavenly City lies *four square*, with 12,000 furlongs on each side, and its walls are 12×12,000 cubits high (xxi. 17); and its *Twelve Gates* are *Twelve Pearls* (xxi. 21); and the Tree of Life yields *Twelve* Fruits (xxii. 2); all in harmony with our Lord's words to His

Apostles, "Ye shall sit on *Twelve* Thrones judging the *Twelve* Tribes of Israel." (Matt. xix. 28.)

Compare the note above, Matt. x. 2, on the Moral and Theological value and signification of the Number *Twelve*, and also on its components *Three* and *Four*; and see below on xi. 3.

This number, like the other numbers in the Apocalypse, has therefore a didactic character. The number *Twelve* times *Twelve* thousand, describing the Servants of God sealed in their foreheads, exhibits a fundamental principle, which may be demonstrated from other parts of Holy Scripture. It displays the duty of *internal union*, and of *visible communion*, and of *stedfast continuance* "in the doctrine and fellowship of the *Apostles*, and in breaking of bread and prayers." (Acts ii. 42.) "The sameness of the number sealed in each of these *Twelve Tribes*," say the ancient Greek Expositors, p. 287, "shows the universal dissemination of the *same Apostolic* seed; and the *multiplication* of twelve times twelve by a thousand shows the *fruitfulness* of the seed sown by the *Apostles*, who were the chosen disciples and divinely commissioned ministers of Him who was the Grain of Corn that fell into the earth and died, and brought forth much *fruit*" (John xii. 24). By the gracious influence of the Holy Ghost, poured out upon the seed, "a little one became a *thousand*, and a small one a strong Nation; the Lord hastened it in His time." (Isa. lx. 22.) "By this mystical number 144,000," says *Primasius*, "the innumerable multitude of the *Elect* is signified."

Further, lest any one should imagine, that this number of the *Twelve Tribes* of the sealed is to be interpreted *literally*, and that the servants of God make only so *small* a number as 144,000; or that these Tribes are *literally Tribes* of *Israel*; St. John takes care to add that they are *innumerable*, and come from *every nation* under heaven. He says, "After this I beheld, and, lo, a great multitude, which no man could number, of every nation, and tribes, and peoples, and tongues, stood before the Throne, and before the Lamb, clothed with white robes, and palms in their hands; and they cry with a loud voice, saying, Salvation to our God which sitteth upon the throne, and unto the Lamb."

It is well observed here by *Aug.* and *Primasius*, and *Bede*, that St. John here combines together in one those whom he had before specified *singly*. He thus aptly intimates that *each* of the elect in *each* tribe, in each age, and each country, of the spiritual Israel, is well known to Him who calleth all His sheep by name (John x. 3. 11), and numbereth every hair of our heads (Matt. x. 30), and that they are also *united* in *one body* in Christ, before His throne in heaven; they are all *joined* in the same Root of *David*, and all are the Seed of *Abraham*, by faith in Christ.

It being therefore understood, that they, who are sealed, represent the *complete number* of God's servants from every nation under heaven; the question now arises,

What principle determines the *arrangement* and *designation* of these Tribes of the *Christian Israel*,—that is, of the Church Universal, containing both Jews and Gentiles? See Acts xv. 9. Rom. iii. 29. 1 Cor. xii. 13. Gal. iii. 28. Eph. ii. 13—16. Col. iii. 11.

For an answer to this question, we must compare the arrangement of these *Twelve Tribes* in this Vision, with that of the *Twelve Patriarchs* of the literal Israel, as regulated by order of *birth* in the Old Testament. See Gen. xxix. 32—35; xxx. 1—24.

This comparison will be facilitated by the following synoptical Table:

The Twelve Patriarchs in order of Birth. Gen. xxix. 32; xxx. 1—24; xxxv. 16—20.	The Twelve Patriarchs in order of the Blessings of Jacob. Gen. xlix. 1—29.	Order of Patriarchs as enumerated Exod. i.	Order of the Twelve Tribes according to their Standards in the Tabernacle. Numb. ii.	Order of Tribes according to their Inhe- ritance in Canaan. Josh. xiii. to xix.	Order of the Twelve Tribes making the ONE HUNDRED AND FORTY-FOUR THOUSAND SEALED in the APOCALYPSE. Rev. vii. 4—9.
Reuben } Simeon } Sons of Leah. Levi } Judah }	Reuben Simeon Levi Judah	Reuben Simeon Levi Judah	North. DAN Asher Naphtali.	Reuben } East Gad } of Half Tribe of Ma- } Jor- nasseh (Josh. xxii.) } dan.	Juda Reuben Gad Aser Nephtalim
Dan } Naphtali } Sons of Bilhah. Gad } Asher } Sons of Zilpah. Issachar } Zebulun } Sons of Leah. Joseph } Benjamin } Sons of Rachel.	Dan Issachar Zebulun Dan Gad Asher Naphtali Joseph Benjamin	Issachar Zebulun Benjamin Dan Naphtali Gad Asher "Joseph was in Egypt already."	West. East. EPHRAIM JUDAH Manasseh Issachar Benjamin. Zebulun.	Judah Ephraim } Sons of Joseph. Manasseh } Benjamin Simeon Zebulun Issachar Asher Naphtali Dan	Manasses Simeon Levi Issachar Zabulon Joseph Benjamin.
			South. REUBEN Simeon Gad.		

e ch. 3. 5, 18.
& 6. 11.
ver. 14.

f Ps. 3. 9.
Isa. 43. 11.
Jer. 3. 23.
Hos. 13. 4.

⁹ Ἐπεὶ ταῦτα εἶδον, καὶ ἰδοὺ ὄχλος πολὺς, ὃν ἀριθμῆσαι αὐτὸν οὐδεὶς ἐδύνατο, ἐκ παντὸς ἔθνους καὶ φυλῶν καὶ λαῶν καὶ γλωσσῶν, ἐστῶτας ἐνώπιον τοῦ θρόνου καὶ ἐνώπιον τοῦ Ἀρνίου, περιβεβλημένους στολὰς λευκάς, καὶ φοίνικες ἐν ταῖς χερσὶν αὐτῶν. ¹⁰ καὶ κράζουσι φωνῇ μεγάλῃ λέγοντες, Ἡ σωτηρία τῷ Θεῷ ἡμῶν τῷ καθημένῳ ἐπὶ τῷ θρόνῳ καὶ τῷ Ἀρνίῳ.

On comparing the natural order by *birth*, with the order in the Apocalypse, we see the following *discrepancies*:

Judah is here placed before *Simeon* and *Levi*, and before *Reuben* the first-born. Here is another evidence of the *Christian* significance of these tribes.

Judah is placed first, because "our Lord sprang out of *Judah*" (Heb. vii. 14), and is the *Lion* of the tribe of *Judah* (Rev. vii. 5), and *Judah* and *Jerusalem* are the Apocalyptic names of the true Church of God. (Cp. above, ii. 9; iii. 9. 12, and below, xxi. 2. 10.)

Simeon and *Levi*, the second and third in order by natural birth, are degraded in the Apocalypse to the seventh and eighth places respectively. Here also is a proof that the names are not to be taken literally, but have a moral and spiritual sense. *Simeon* and *Levi* are reprobated by the Patriarch Jacob in his prophecy, for their subtlety and cruelty in punishing the wrong done to their sister (Gen. xlix. 5); and perhaps in their degradation they symbolize here a moral truth, that good ends are not to be attained by evil means, and that furious zeal, even in God's cause, is not pleasing to Him.

The fifth son of Jacob, namely, *Dan*, is altogether excluded from this list.

That tribe was notorious for its unhappy zeal in receiving and propagating idolatry (see Judges xviii. 1—31). This interpretation is suggested by Jewish writers themselves (e. g. the Targum of *Jonathan* on Exod. xvi. 8, and on Numb. xi. 1; xxii. 41, and Deut. xxv. 18), who represent the name of *Dan* as a proverbial by-word for idolatry (see *Wetstein*, p. 776).

"The reason for the excluding of *Dan*," says *Hengstenberg* on xi. 13, "is, that the only narrative of the Old Testament, in which *Dan* played a part, is that respecting the worship of idols in the Book of Judges (xviii. 1—31); so that the declaration in chap. xxii. 15 of the Apocalypse, 'without are idolaters,' is here represented by the omission of *Dan*."

Here therefore is a protest against *Idolatry*, as wholly disqualifying for admission into the number of God's Saints in glory. Here also is a preparation for the Judgments denounced against *Idolatry* in later parts of the Apocalypse (see ix. 20; xxi. 8; xxii. 15).

Here again the Prophecy of the Patriarch Jacob on his death-bed, concerning his seed, the heads of the twelve Tribes, and concerning those Tribes themselves, sheds light on this Apocalyptic Vision of the Tribes of the spiritual Israel, and is illustrated by it. There is a mystical analogy between the Prophecy and the Vision which has not yet been fully unfolded. *Dan* is omitted here; and in the patriarchal prophecy *Dan* is described in ominous words. *Dan* is first portrayed as a Judge or Ruler, and then it is added, "*Dan* shall be a serpent in the way, an adder in the path that biteth the horse heels, so that his rider shall fall backward."

The imagery of that Prophecy connects it with the Apocalyptic visions of the Power of Evil represented by the *Serpent* (xii. 9. 14, 15; xx. 2); and the *Rider* in the Prophecy may have also a connexion with the *Rider* in the Vision of the Seals of the Apocalypse (see above, vi. 4, 5), and may represent the destiny and punishment of Evil recoiling on and supplanting itself. There seems to be an expression of this feeling in the patristic Exposition, that "Antichrist would rise from *Dan*," *Hippolytus*, p. 7, ed. Lagarde; cp. *Irenæus* (v. 30. 2), who notices the omission of *Dan* here, and connects it with Jeremiah's prophecy, viii. 16, 17, "The snorting of horses was heard from *Dan*—behold, I will send serpents;" and he regards *Dan* as a symbol of the Man of Sin.

Another name of a Tribe omitted is *Ephraim*.

The defection of the Ten Tribes from the House of *David* and from the worship at *Jerusalem*, commenced with *Ephraim* (2 Sam. ii. 9), and was mainly promoted by *Ephraim* (1 Kings xii. 25. Isa. vii. 9. 17).

Samarina, the capital of Israel, and the Samaritan Temple at *Gerizim*, distinct from *Judah*, and the Temple at *Jerusalem*, were in the tribe of *Ephraim*. *Ephraim* is often mentioned by the Prophets as the rival of *Judah*, and as a synonym for Israel as opposed to *Judah*, and even combining with the enemies of *Judah* and *Jerusalem*, the Church of God; see particularly the words in Isa. vii. 2. It was told *Ahaz*, Syria is confederate with *Ephraim*: see also vv. 5 and 17, where *Ephraim* is charged with

the guilt of the schism of *Jeroboam* (see also Isa. ix. 9; cp. Jer. vii. 15).

The prophecies of *Hosea* abound with denunciations and warnings against *Ephraim* (Hos. v. 3. 9. 13; vi. 4. 10; vii. 1. 8; viii. 9. 11; ix. 3. 8. 11. 13; xi. 12; xii. 1. 14), which, assuredly, are applicable to the schisms and heresies, the unbelief and ungodliness of a corrupt Christendom.

Therefore, in the omission of *Ephraim* from the number of the Saints, there is a divine caution and exhortation addressed to Christians, that they should flee from those sins for which *Ephraim* is condemned by the Voice of God in the Old Testament; especially from the sin of *schism*.

The family of *Ephraim* is not dealt with here precisely in the same way as *Dan* is. *Dan* and his seed are altogether omitted. But *Joseph* the Father of *Ephraim*, and *Manasseh* the brother of *Ephraim*, are both admitted into this catalogue: whereas in the division of *Canaan* among the Tribes, *Joseph* had been represented by his two sons, *Ephraim* and *Manasseh*.

This may be designed to exhibit the contrast between the earthly and heavenly inheritance; and to show that the principles by which this Apocalyptic enumeration is regulated are not natural, but spiritual.

Ephraim's seed, in so far as they are children of *Joseph's* faith, may yet have an inheritance: though not as far as they commit those sins which gave *Ephraim* a character of rivalry and hostility to *Judah*, the true Church of God. And though *Ephraim* and *Manasseh* were brothers in blood, yet "one is taken, the other left" (Matt. xxiv. 40. Luke xvii. 34—36); so it will be in the heavenly *Canaan*. It is not natural birth, but spiritual birth, not carnal brotherhood, but brotherhood in *Christ*, which will gain an entrance there.

Naphtali, who by birth was fifth, is sixth in order in the Apocalypse. *Gad* and *Asher*, who were seventh and eighth by birth, are here placed second and third.

These three were children of handmaids: *Naphtali*, of *Bilhah*, *Rachel's* handmaid; *Gad* and *Asher*, of *Zilpah*, *Leah's* handmaid; and yet they are here elevated in rank, and are placed before *Simeon* and *Levi*, the children of *Leah*, and before *Manasseh*, descended, through *Joseph*, from *Rachel*.

The moral of this transposition is, that circumstances of worldly birth are of no account in the Christian Church; the sons of the stranger are brought to God's holy mountain (Isa. lvi. 6); the Church of God herself is a Spouse wedded from the heathen world (cp. on Matt. i. 3), and the Gentile is preferred to the Jew; "there are last that will be first, and first that will be last" (Luke xiii. 30).

The last four names are the same in the order of Birth, and also of the Apocalypse. One pair of them, *Issachar* and *Zebulun*, is from *Leah*; the other pair, *Joseph* and *Benjamin*, is from *Rachel*.

There is another resemblance in the two orders of names.

In the literal Israel, the children of the same mother were born, in successive births, by pairs. Thus, from *Leah* came *Reuben* and *Simeon*, *Levi* and *Judah*, by successive births. From *Rachel's* handmaid came, in like manner, *Dan* and *Naphtali*. From *Leah's* handmaid came *Gad* and *Asher*. From *Leah* came *Issachar* and *Zebulun*. From *Rachel* came also *Joseph* and *Benjamin* in successive births; see the synoptical table in p. 197.

The same principle is visible in the order of the Apocalypse.

Here *Judah* and *Reuben*, from *Leah*, are ranged side by side; so, from *Leah's* handmaid, *Gad* and *Asher*. From *Rachel's* handmaid, *Naphtali*. *Dan*, the son of *Rachel's* handmaid, is here omitted; and *Manasseh*, from *Rachel* through *Joseph*, is introduced; but not *Ephraim*, who does not appear. From *Leah*, *Simeon* and *Levi* are placed together, and another pair, *Issachar* and *Zebulun*. From *Rachel*, *Joseph* and *Benjamin*.

The foundation in the Old covenant was laid on a pair of Brothers, *Moses* and *Aaron*. And *Christ*, in calling His Twelve Apostles, chose three pairs of Brothers—*Simon* and *Andrew*; *James* and *John*; *James* and *Jude* (see note above, on Matt. iv. 18).

Thus Almighty God has recognized and commended natural relationship as the groundwork of Christian affection and co-operation. Doubtless it will be seen hereafter, that ties of natural kindred have been instrumental—according to the benevolent design of the Universal Father of the spiritual Israel—in pro-

¹¹ Καὶ πάντες οἱ ἄγγελοι ἐστήκεισαν κύκλῳ τοῦ θρόνου καὶ τῶν πρεσβυτέρων καὶ τῶν τεσσάρων ζώων, καὶ ἔπεσαν ἐνώπιον τοῦ θρόνου ἐπὶ τὰ πρόσωπα αὐτῶν, καὶ προσεκύνησαν τῷ Θεῷ ¹² λέγοντες Ἀμήν· ἡ εὐλογία καὶ ἡ δόξα καὶ ἡ σοφία καὶ ἡ εὐχαριστία καὶ ἡ τιμὴ καὶ ἡ δύναμις καὶ ἡ ἰσχὺς τῷ Θεῷ ἡμῶν εἰς τοὺς αἰῶνας τῶν αἰώνων, ἀμήν.

¹³ Καὶ ἀπεκρίθη εἰς ἐκ τῶν πρεσβυτέρων λέγων μοι, Οὗτοι οἱ περιβεβλημένοι τὰς στολὰς τὰς λευκὰς τίνες εἰσὶ, καὶ πόθεν ἦλθον; ¹⁴ καὶ εἶρηκα αὐτῷ, Κύριέ μου, σὺ οἶδας. Καὶ εἶπέ μοι, Οὗτοί εἰσιν οἱ ἐρχόμενοι ἐκ τῆς θλίψεως τῆς μεγάλης, καὶ ἔπλυναν τὰς στολὰς αὐτῶν καὶ ἐλεύκαναν αὐτὰς ἐν τῷ αἵματι τοῦ Ἀρνίου· ¹⁵ διὰ τοῦτό εἰσιν ἐνώπιον τοῦ θρόνου τοῦ Θεοῦ, καὶ λατρεύουσιν αὐτῷ ἡμέρας καὶ νυκτὸς ἐν τῷ ναῷ αὐτοῦ· καὶ ὁ καθήμενος ἐπὶ τοῦ θρόνου σκηνώσει ἐπ' αὐτούς· ¹⁶ οὐ πεινάσουσιν ἔτι, οὐδὲ διψήσουσιν ἔτι, οὐδὲ μὴ πέσῃ ἐπ' αὐτοὺς ὁ ἥλιος, οὐδὲ πᾶν καῦμα, ¹⁷ ὅτι τὸ Ἀρνίον τὸ ἀνὰ μέσον τοῦ θρόνου ποιμανεῖ αὐτοὺς, καὶ ὀδηγήσει αὐτοὺς ἐπὶ ζωῆς πηγὰς ὑδάτων, καὶ ἐξαλείψει ὁ Θεὸς πᾶν δάκρυον ἐκ τῶν ὀφθαλμῶν αὐτῶν.

g Isa. 1. 18.
Heb. 9. 14.
1 John 1. 7.
ch. 1. 5. & 6. 9.
& 17. 6.

h Isa. 4. 5, 6.
Ps. 121. 6.

i Ps. 121. 6.
Isa. 49. 10.

k Ps. 23. 1.
Isa. 25. 8.
John 10. 11.
ch. 21. 4.

moting spiritual edification and everlasting happiness and unity in the blessed family and household of the Saints glorified in heaven.

9. μετὰ ταῦτα εἶδον] *After this I beheld, and lo! a great multitude, which no man could number, of every Nation and Tribes and Peoples and Tongues stood before the throne and before the Lamb, clothed with white robes, and palms in their hands; and they cry with a loud voice, saying, Salvation to our God that sitteth upon the throne and unto the Lamb.*

On the accusative περιβεβλημένους, the reading of A, B, C, cp. xiv. 14; xviii. 12; see *Winer*, p. 414, and p. 511. Two constructions are blended together. Observe the transition from the singular ἔθνους to the plural φυλῶν; the words φυλῶν and λαῶν declare that not the Jews only (who appropriate the terms φυλὴ and λαὸς to themselves), but all men are tribes and people of God.

The true Israel of God, the Church called from all Nations, and now glorified and triumphant, after the completion of her pilgrimage through the wilderness of the world, and after her entrance into the Canaan of her rest, and to the heavenly Jerusalem, and after all her conflicts with spiritual Enemies, and after the gathering of her spiritual Harvest, sings *Hosannas* to God and to the Lamb.

13. καὶ ἀπεκρίθη] *And one of the elders answered, saying unto me, Who are these who are arrayed in the white robes? and whence came they? And I said unto him, Sir, thou knowest. And he said to me, These are they who come out of the great tribulation, and washed their robes, and made them white in the blood of the Lamb. Therefore are they before the throne of God, and serve Him day and night in His temple; and He that sitteth on the throne shall tabernacle upon them. They shall hunger no more, neither thirst any more; neither shall the sun light on them, nor any heat; for the Lamb which is in the midst of the throne shall feed them, and shall lead them unto fountains of waters of life: and God shall wipe away every tear from their eyes.*

They are clothed with white robes, and have palms in their hands, and sing *salvation* to our God and the Lamb. The *Palm* is an emblem of Victory. As such, it is found engraved on monumental slabs in the Catacombs of Rome, indicating that after the battles of life, they, who are buried there, have triumphed by the power of Christ. See *Aringhi*, *Roma Subterranea*, cap. xv., and cap. xx.

Doubtless, also, in this Vision, there is a reference to the rejoicing at the *Feast of Tabernacles*, ἡ σκηνοπηγία, which was the last of the three great annual Festivals of the Jews. It was in the seventh month, and lasted for seven days, and had a great sabbath on the eighth day, and was called "the Festival," the crown and glory of all Festivals, and closed the sacred rejoicings of the Hebrew year. See the notes above on John vii. 2. 37; and on Matt. xxi. 8, 9; and *Wetstein* here, p. 777.

That Festival commemorated the Journey of the Israelites through the wilderness, when they dwelt in *Tabernacles* or *Tents*, and God Himself *tabernacled* among them; and the Ingathering of the Fruits of the Harvest was celebrated with joy and thanksgiving at that feast.

They who took part in that festival bare *palm branches* in their hands, and cried with loud voices *Hosanna*, "Save us, we beseech Thee," and praised God for His mercies in the past year.

2 Macc. x. 6, 7. Indeed, the *Palm* branches were called *Hosannas*.

At that Feast also, they drew water in golden urns from the pool of Siloam, which had a typical reference to the future outpouring of the living waters of the Gospel. See on John ix. 7. They poured out that water from Siloam, on the great altar, in memorial of the water which had flowed from the smitten Rock in the wilderness, another type of Christ, 1 Cor. x. 4; and they chanted the great *Hallel* (Ps. cxiii.—cxviii.), in which they celebrated the deliverances from Egypt and their entrance into Canaan. "When Israel came out of Egypt, the sea saw that and fled: Jordan was driven back; Tremble thou Earth at the presence of the Lord, at the presence of the God of Jacob, who turned the rock into a standing water, and the flint-stone into a springing well" (Ps. cxiv. 1—8); and to it Isaiah alludes, "With joy shall ye draw water out of the wells of Salvation." (Isa. xii. 3.)

That sublime prophecy had pre-announced the pouring out of the living waters of Salvation, by the effusion of the Holy Ghost, consequent on the Incarnation of CHRIST, who is the Lord JEHOVAH (Isa. xii. 2), ever "in the midst" of the true Israel (v. 6), being EMMANUEL, *God with us*, Matt. i. 23.

Therefore, the inhabitants of the *Christian Sion* may well cry aloud and shout with *Hosannas*, as the literal Israel did at the feast of Tabernacles.

That Feast, which celebrated the ingathering of the Fruits of the Earth, typified the ingathering of the spiritual Harvest, consequent on the outpouring of the gracious rain of the Holy Spirit (Ps. lxxviii. 9), sent to God's inheritance, the Church, through the Incarnation of Christ and His Enthronization in our Nature at the Right Hand of God.

Indeed, the Feast of Tabernacles, commemorating the dwelling of the Israelites in tabernacles, and of the God of Israel Himself in a Tabernacle in the wilderness, appears to have been designed as a Type of the crowning mercy of God in the fulness of Time, when the Son of God Himself ἐσκήνωσεν ἐν ἡμῖν, i. e. pitched His tabernacle in our Nature (see on John i. 14); and of all the gracious gifts of the Living Waters of the Holy Ghost, and the Glorious Vision of God, and triumphant beatification of heaven, which result from the Incarnation. See above on John vii. 37.

The disciples of Christ and the People of Jerusalem, who took branches of *Palms*, and sung *Hosannas* to Christ, when He rode on the young ass in His triumphant Entry into Jerusalem, and when He gave a glimpse of His future glory, and symbolized the salvation of the *Heathen World* (see notes on Matt. xxi. 5, 8, 9), were moved to adopt the language and practices of the Feast of Tabernacles in their homage to Him at that time.

Hence we recognize the propriety and beauty of the imagery in this Vision of the Apocalypse.

The Israel of God, now that its journey and warfare is over, and that the Harvest of the Saints is gathered in, takes *palm branches* and sings *Hosannas* to God; and they are before the throne of God, and serve Him day and night in His temple, and God shall tabernacle upon them (σκηνώσει ἐπ' αὐτούς, see v. 15 here); He Who pitched His tabernacle with Israel in the wilderness of Arabia, He who overshadowed them with the *Pillar of Cloud*, and led them by the *Pillar of Fire*, He who pitched His tabernacle in us (John i. 14), shall now tabernacle upon them for ever;

VIII. ¹ Καὶ ὅτε ἤνοιξε τὴν σφραγίδα τὴν ἐβδόμην, ἐγένετο σιγὴ ἐν τῷ οὐρανῷ ὡς ἡμιώριον.

and as the *literal* Israel were fed from heaven with angels' food, and so the cravings of their *hunger* were satisfied; and as their *thirst* was slaked by the gushing stream in the sandy desert, and as they were sheltered from the scorching *heat of the sun* by the refreshing shade of the cloud, so the spiritual Israel shall feel God's love and goodness; *they shall hunger no more, nor thirst any more, nor shall the sun light upon them, nor any heat* (v. 16); and He who gave them manna from heaven and water from the rock in the wilderness; He whose mercies were celebrated and typified by drawing water from the well of Siloam; He who gave the *true manna* and the *living waters* in His Word and Sacraments, and in the gifts of the Holy Ghost, shall lead them to *fountains of waters of life, and shall wipe away every tear from their eyes*.

The rich store of allusions contained in the word *σκηνώσει* ought to be carefully treasured up in the mind of the reader, as showing that the Prophecies and Types of the Old Testament, especially in the Pilgrimage through the Wilderness, and the festive ceremonial of the Hebrew Ritual, will have their full accomplishment in the heavenly glory of Christ and His Saints (see Exod. xxv. 8; xxix. 43. Ps. lxxviii. 18. Ezek. xxxvii. 27. 1 Cor. x. 11).

The SEVENTH OF LAST SEAL. The End of the world.

CH. VIII. 1. καὶ ὅτε ἤνοιξε] *And when He opened the seventh seal, there was silence in heaven about the space of half an hour. There is silence for half an hour.* St. John has now a brief view of the eternal peace of heaven. "*Cernit initium quietis æternæ*" (Victorinus, Aug. 2, Primasius, Bede).

The *silence* here is described as *short*, because St. John has only a glimpse *here* of what will be described more fully hereafter (in chaps. xxi. xxii.), viz. the peace and happiness of heaven; and because he must now be called away to describe other Visions of a different kind. He is allowed to have a foretaste of the future peace of Eternity; and is then summoned from that *half-hour's silence* to listen to the terrible blasts of the SEVEN TRUMPETS.

This *silence* (say the ancient Greek Expositors, p. 298) may also serve to remind us, that the Second Advent of Christ is kept secret, and cometh not with observation (Luke xvii. 20), and the *silence* is short, only for *half an hour*, for that secret Coming will soon accomplish its work, by the speedy destruction of evil.

Thus end the SEVEN SEALS. The Roll, that had been *sealed up*, has now been opened, and all its contents unfolded to the View. Their moral is very consolatory and instructive. Cp. above, p. 195.

In the first seal, symbolizing the first age of Christianity, Christ went forth *conquering and to conquer* (vi. 2), triumphing over Sin and Satan by His Death and glorious Resurrection and Ascension. Yet, after that glorious Victory, He and His Church have been opposed by Satan, in various forms, on the red horse, on the black horse, and on the pale horse (vi. 4—8). This was revealed by the Visions of the Second, Third, and Fourth Seals. It has also been revealed in the Fifth and Sixth Seals, that they will still have to endure many afflictions *even to the end*; and that it will almost seem to the Saints departed that Christ was *tarrying too long*, and had forgotten His faithful servants (vi. 9—11). It has been also revealed in the Sixth Seal (vi. 12—17), that the *Last Days* of the Church will bring the *severest trial*; and that her path will be through *great tribulation* (vii. 14), to the fruition of eternal felicity.

But there is also consolation in this Prophetic Roll, for Christians of every age.

Christ will at length send forth His Angels to gather His Elect from the four winds, and not one of them will be hurt in the Judgments which will overtake the world. They will all be sealed by God as His own, and be preserved in the wreck; and when the number of God's servants is completed, and gathered in from all parts of the world, to which the Gospel will have been preached (vii. 9; cp. Matt. xxiv. 14. Mark xiii. 10), then all the Enemies of Christ will be overcome; then will ensue the *silence* of the Seventh Seal (viii. 1). No voice will be raised any more against God. All the Earth will keep *silence* before Him (Hab. ii. 20). After the Storm there will be Peace. The blessedness of His Servants will be consummated in the Society of the Holy Angels, and in the beatific Vision of God; they will praise God and the Lamb as their Saviour (vii. 10). All things will then be seen to have ministered to the manifestation of the divine love, and to have "worked together for good to them that love Him" (Rom. viii. 28), and be a theme for a never-ending ascription of "Blessing, and Glory, and Wisdom, and Thanks-

giving, and Honour, and Power, and Might, to God for ever and ever. Amen" (vii. 12).

St. John, having delivered this Prophecy, and having ministered this comfort to the Church of every age and country, now *re-ascends* to the *first age* of Christianity; or, as ancient Expositors express it, "*recapitulat ab origine*." He proceeds to reveal the prophetic History of the Christian Church from the beginning, in *another form* and aspect, in the SEVEN TRUMPETS.

What now is the design and character of the SEVEN TRUMPETS?

They are prophetic announcements of the *Divine Judgments* on the *Enemies* of Christ and His Church, from the time of His First Advent until the Day of Doom.

This will appear from the following considerations:

(1) The TRUMPETS follow next in order to the SEALS. The *Seals*, as we have already seen, have revealed a view of the *sufferings* of the Church from the time of the First Coming of Christ to the End of time, and of the full and final triumph of Christ, and of the everlasting blessedness of His servants, after the trials and tribulations of this world.

This prophetic view of the *happiness* which is reserved for the *righteous*, after *trials*, and *sufferings for the Truth*, is now succeeded by a prophetic view of *punishment* which will be inflicted on the *wicked*, after temporary *triumphs* and *oppressions of the Truth*.

On the one hand, God announces *reward* to the *good*; "Say ye to the *righteous*, it shall be *well with him*, for they shall eat the fruit of their doings." On the other hand, He adds a denunciation of *punishment* to the *wicked*, "*Woe unto the wicked*, it shall be *ill with him*, for the reward of his hands shall be given him" (Isa. iii. 11). This prophetic declaration displays in two consecutive sentences the substance of the moral of the SEALS, on the one hand; and of the TRUMPETS on the other.

The former sentence is the moral of the SEVEN SEALS.

The latter sentence is the moral of the SEVEN TRUMPETS.

(2) The *Seven Trumpets* are prefaced by *Prayers of the Saints* to God (viii. 2—4). The Trumpets are represented as sending forth divine *answers* to those prayers. The Saints of God are in a state of trial and tribulation; and their arms are Prayers and Tears. They commend their cause to God, and pray to Him for deliverance from their enemies. All Saints, whether on earth or under the altar (vi. 9), pray for the Coming of Christ's Kingdom, when all His Enemies will be put under His feet (1 Cor. xv. 24. 27), and when the happiness of all His faithful servants will be consummated both in body and soul in *heaven*.

The Twelfth Chapter of the Acts of the Apostles has displayed to us a striking specimen of this work of the Church, *praying* for deliverance from her enemies; and it has shown the result of her *Prayers* in the *overthrow of her Enemies*.

The Apostle St. James, the brother of St. John, had been slain by the sword of King Herod Agrippa; the Apostle St. Peter had been put in prison by the same King (Acts xii. 1—3). The Church makes unceasing intercessions for him (Acts xii. 5. 12). He is miraculously delivered by an Angel on the eve of the day when Herod would have brought him forth for execution; and Herod, the persecutor, is smitten by an Angel, when sitting on his Throne, in the height of his pride and glory (xii. 21—23).

That narrative presents an Epitome of the History of God's Judgments on the Persecutors of His Church; and may serve to illustrate the design of the *Trumpets*, preceded by the *prayers of the Saints* (viii. 2—4).

(3) In Holy Scripture the sound of the *Trumpet* is a preparative for *war*, especially for a war waged by God Himself and His people against their enemies. "If ye go to war in your land against the *Enemy* that *oppresseth* you, then ye shall blow an alarm with the *Trumpets*, and ye shall be remembered before the Lord your God, and be *saved* from your enemies" (see Numb. x. 9. Cp. Amos iii. 6).

The *Seven Trumpets* of the Apocalypse announce the goings forth of the Lord of Hosts to war, in order to save His people by punishing their oppressors.

(4) Again, in Holy Scripture, the *Trumpet* is the instrument to be used by the Israelites for *convoking* the People (Numb. x. 10).

It is also to be used to proclaim the year of Jubilee (Levit. xxv. 8—10).

Therefore, *Trumpets* are used with great propriety in the

^{2 a} Καὶ εἶδον τοὺς ἑπτὰ ἄγγέλους οἱ ἐνώπιον τοῦ Θεοῦ ἐστήκασιν, καὶ ἐδόθησαν αὐτοῖς ἑπτὰ σάλπιγγες. a Tobit 12. 15.
Luke 1. 19.
2 Chron. 29. 25-28.

^{3 b} Καὶ ἄλλος ἄγγελος ἦλθε, καὶ ἐστάθη ἐπὶ τὸ θυσιαστήριον ἔχων λιβανωτὸν χρυσοῦν· καὶ ἐδόθη αὐτῷ θυμιάματα πολλὰ, ἵνα δώσῃ ταῖς προσευχαῖς τῶν ἁγίων πάντων ἐπὶ τὸ θυσιαστήριον τὸ χρυσοῦν τὸ ἐνώπιον τοῦ θρόνου· ^{4 c} καὶ ἀνέβη ὁ καπνὸς τῶν θυμιαμάτων ταῖς προσευχαῖς τῶν ἁγίων ἐκ χειρὸς τοῦ ἀγγέλου ἐνώπιον τοῦ Θεοῦ· ⁵ καὶ εἴληφεν ὁ ἄγγελος τὸν λιβανωτὸν, καὶ ἐγέμισεν αὐτὸν ἐκ τοῦ πυρὸς τοῦ θυσιαστηρίου, καὶ ἔβαλεν εἰς τὴν γῆν· καὶ ἐγένοντο b ch. 5. 8. & 6. 9.
& 9. 13. & 14. 18.
c Ps. 141. 2.
Luke 1. 10.

Apocalypse to "call the nations to see the punishment of the Antichristian power, which, though Christian in name, persecutes the faithful" (*Bishop Wilson*). And the sounding of the Seven Trumpets of the Apocalypse ends in an universal *Jubilee* for the deliverance of the People of God (xi. 15).

(5) The *Trumpet* is also specified in the Gospel as the signal of the *Universal Judgment* of the Great Day. "The Lord Himself shall descend from heaven with a shout, with the voice of the Archangel and the *Trump* of God" (2 Thess. iv. 16). "The *Trumpet* shall sound, and the dead shall be raised" (1 Cor. xv. 52).

Therefore there is another remarkable fitness in the use of Trumpets in the Apocalypse, for the purposes which they here subserve.

The consequences of the Sounding of each of the Seven Apocalyptic Trumpets are of a *judicial* kind; the first Trumpet is followed by inflictions of *chastisement* on the *Earth* (viii. 7); the second Trumpet by *vengeance* on the *Sea* (v. 8, 9); the third Trumpet by *plagues* on the *Fountains of Waters* (v. 10, 11); and the fourth Trumpet by *visitations* on *heavenly bodies* (v. 12); and it is especially declared that the last three Trumpets are three Trumpets of *Woe* to the *inhabitants of the Earth* (viii. 13); that is, to the enemies of God and of the kingdom of *heaven* (see on i. 7; iii. 10). Finally, the *seventh* or *last Trumpet* of the Apocalypse is the *summons* of all Nations to the *Judgment-Seat* of Christ (see xi. 15-18).

Thus the six Trumpets represent the Judgments of God, as *preparatory* denunciations, warning men with a loud voice to "consider their ways," and to repent, and to prepare for the sounding of the *Seventh Trumpet*, which will convene them to the general Judgment of the *Last Day*.

Thus the design of God's Judgments, even in punishment, is mercy; "O Lord, when Thy Judgments are in the Earth, the inhabitants of the World will learn righteousness" (Isa. xxvi. 9).

The last Trumpet reveals the complete overthrow of Christ's Enemies, and the execution of His wrath on the wicked, and the blessed reward of the righteous, and the establishment of His Kingdom for ever (xi. 15-18).

Thus it instructs the World, especially Rulers and States. It displays the infatuation of those who oppose Christ and His Gospel, and declares the misery which will be their doom. The successive sounds of the Six Trumpets which announce *particular* judgments, are rehearsals of the sound of the *Seventh Trumpet*, which announces *Universal Judgment*; when it will be confessed by all, that "verily there is a reward for the righteous, doubtless there is a God that judgeth the earth." (Ps. lviii. 10.)

(6) Lastly, the Apocalypse is grounded on the principle, that the *Christian Church* is the true *Jerusalem*; and that its faithful members are the *Israel of God* (Gal. vi. 16). It teaches the Christian Church to read her *own history* in that of the *Israelites*, and in their Exodus from Egypt, and in their passage through the Red Sea, and in their Pilgrimage through the Wilderness of Arabia. The entrance of the Israelites into the Rest of Canaan under the leadership of Joshua, and the capture of the Cities of Canaan, and the subjugation of the Kings of the Canaanites by the armies of Joshua, and the People of God, are recognized in the Apocalypse as types and figures, and as prophecies and pledges of the conquests of the Christian Church under the guidance of her heavenly Joshua, Jesus Christ, and of her admission to the everlasting joys of her heavenly inheritance. See above, *Introduction*, pp. 149, 150, and on ii. 9, and on vii. 4-9.

Especially, as has been observed by ancient Expositors, there is a reference in the *Seven Trumpets* of the Apocalypse to the history of the capture of that great City,—which is one of the scriptural emblems of the Power of this World arrayed against Christ,—the city of *Jericho*.

By God's command, Joshua compassed Jericho *six* times on *six* successive days. First went the armed men, then *seven* Priests with *seven Trumpets* of rams' horns; then came the Ark; then the People followed. On each of the *six* days, the Priests blew the trumpets *once*, and the People were silent. But on the *seventh*

day the *seven* Priests, and the People with them, compassed the city *seven* times; and at the *seventh* time, when the *seven* Priests blew the *seven* Trumpets, all the People shouted with a great shout; and the wall of the City fell down *flat*, and the People went up and captured Jericho. (Josh. vi. 1-20.) And after its fall, they marched victoriously under the command of Joshua, the type of Jesus, to the possession of Canaan the promised land, the type of Heaven.

The Apocalyptic Vision reveals Seven Angels and Seven Trumpets. The first six Trumpets pre-announce successive Judgments of God. At length, when the *seventh* Trumpet sounds, the walls of this world's Jericho will fall flat, and the victorious army of the heavenly Joshua will follow the Captain of their salvation into their everlasting inheritance.

The PRAYERS of all Saints before the SOUNDING of the TRUMPETS.

2. καὶ εἶδον] And I saw the seven Angels which stood before God; and to them were given Seven Trumpets.

3. καὶ ἄλλος] And another Angel came and stood at the altar, having a golden censer.

Here is a reference to the act of the Priest ministering at the *Golden Altar of Incense* before the Veil in the Temple (see above on Luke i. 9, and Heb. ix. 4), and offering *incense* there, which is a type of *prayer* (see above, v. 8). And there was given unto him much incense, that he should give it to the prayers of all Saints upon the golden altar before the throne. Observe, there is no mention here, or in any other place of the Apocalypse, of an Altar before the Veil; the Veil has disappeared under the Gospel (Matt. xxvii. 51. Heb. ix. 8). The Apocalypse is an *unveiling* of heaven, now opened by Christ. The Holy of Holies is revealed, and the Altar is not before a Veil, but before the Throne. See above on iv. 1.

The Angel is not here represented as giving *efficacy* to the prayers of all Saints, but as taking part in them. There is a *communication* of Prayer between All Saints (namely, the Saints departed and the Saints on earth), and the *Holy Angels* in heaven. The Angels unite in offices of prayer with the Church on earth, and with the spirits of the Saints departed, for the deliverance of God's servants from their enemies. See Heb. xii. 22, 23, where the Saints on earth are represented as associated in one communion with the Angels and with the Spirits of *just men made perfect*. Cp. Bp. Pearson, Art. ix. p. 662, and Bp. Bull, Sermon on the Offices of the Angels towards the Faithful.

Some Interpreters suppose that the *other Angel* is Christ, our High Priest, the only Mediator between God and men (1 Tim. ii. 5), ministering in the heavenly Temple, where "He ever liveth to make intercession for us." Heb. vii. 25; ix. 24. Christ, in His *human* character and *priestly* office, may be called *another Angel*. He is so called, x. 1. Cp. xiv. 17; xviii. 1; xx. 1.

Hence Primasius says, "The Angel here is Our Lord, by whom all our prayers have access to God (Eph. ii. 18; iii. 12), and therefore the Apostle says, 'Through Him we offer the sacrifice of praise to God continually' (Heb. xiii. 15; cp. 1 Pet. ii. 5); and St. John says, 'He is our Advocate with the Father'" (1 John ii. 1). This interpretation is sanctioned by other ancient interpreters, such as *Aug. (?)* and *Bede*, and by *Vitringa*, *Böhmer*, and others of later date, and it represents the important truth, that the deliverance of God's people from the hands of their Enemies, smitten by His Judgments, is due to the ministry of Christ in heaven, presenting the incense of the Prayers of the Church, in the golden censer of His own merits.

The dative here, ταῖς προσευχαῖς, is a *dativus commodi*; the incense was given to the prayers, and made them *pleasing* to God. Cp. Winer, § 31, p. 193. And so the dative is rightly understood by *Vitringa*, *Ewald*, *De Wette*, *Ebrard*, and *Düsterdieck*.

4, 5. καὶ ἀνέβη] And the smoke of the incense (added) to the prayers of the Saints (cp. v. 3) went up before God out of the hand of the Angel. And the Angel has taken (εἴληφεν, has taken and holds; on this perfect tense, see above, note, v. 7) the censer, and he filled it from the fire of the Altar (of Incense, the

φωναὶ καὶ βρονταὶ καὶ ἀστραπαὶ καὶ σεισμός. ⁶ Καὶ οἱ ἑπτὰ ἄγγελοι οἱ ἔχοντες τὰς ἑπτὰ σάλπιγγας ἠτοίμασαν ἑαυτοὺς ἵνα σαλπίσωσι.

d Ezek. 38 22.
Isa. 2. 13.
ch. 9. 4. & 16. 2.

⁷ ^d Καὶ ὁ πρῶτος ἐσάλπισε· καὶ ἐγένετο χάλαζα καὶ πῦρ μεμιγμένα ἐν αἵματι, καὶ ἐβλήθη εἰς τὴν γῆν· καὶ τὸ τρίτον τῆς γῆς κατεκάη, καὶ τὸ τρίτον τῶν δένδρων κατεκάη, καὶ πᾶς χόρτος χλωρὸς κατεκάη.

e Jer. 51. 25.
Amos 7. 4.
ch. 16. 3.

⁸ ^e Καὶ ὁ δεύτερος ἄγγελος ἐσάλπισε· καὶ ὡς ὄρος μέγα πυρὶ καίόμενον ἐβλήθη εἰς τὴν θάλασσαν· καὶ ἐγένετο τὸ τρίτον τῆς θάλασσης αἷμα, ⁹ καὶ

type of Prayer), and cast it to the Earth; and there were Voices, and Lightnings, and an Earthquake; and the Seven Angels who had the Seven Trumpets, prepared themselves to sound their Trumpets.

Voices, Thunders, Lightnings, and Earthquakes, are signs and instruments of God's Judgments against His Enemies. (*A Lapide, Bengel, Ewald, De Wette, Hengstenberg.*) The Divine Judgments to be announced by the Seven Trumpets of the Seven Angels, are represented as consequent on the prayers of all the Saints—prayers presented in heaven by the Angel, perhaps Christ, who said, "I came to send fire on earth" (Luke xii. 49. *Primasius*). These judgments are preludes of the great fire of the Day of Judgment which will consume the world (2 Pet. iii. 7).

The Saints who are on earth, and the Saints departed, whose souls are in Paradise (see vi. 9), pray to God for the deliverance of His Church, and for the manifestation of His Power and Justice; and their Prayers are presented before the Throne of God; and in answer to their Prayers, He ordains or permits such penal Visitations on the world as are best adapted to those ends.

Here is a striking evidence of the power of united Prayer. It is a lever which moves the World.

THE FIRST TRUMPET.

7. ὁ πρῶτος] *The first Angel sounded, and there was hail and fire mingled with blood, and they were cast upon the Earth: and the third part of the Earth was burnt up, and the third part of the Trees was burnt up, and all Grass that was green was burnt up.*

The second seal had represented the Evil One riding on the horse of fire, and wielding the sword of Persecution, and shedding the blood of the Martyrs (vi. 4).

In that Seal the Church suffered; in this Trumpet, her enemies are punished.

The judgment here announced is upon the Earth,—that is, on the Earthly power, opposed to Christ and to His Church, which is the Kingdom of Heaven. This Judgment is upon the Earth (as opposed to Heaven), and upon Trees which grow from the Earth, and look stately and tall, and derive their strength from the Earth; and upon the Green Grass which clothes the Earth.

This Judgment is represented as inflicted by hail (showing a storm from the north) and fire mingled with blood; and the third part of the Earth is consumed by fire; and the third part of the Trees, that is, of Princes and Potentates, proud, powerful, and prosperous (see Isa. ii. 13; and x. 17, 18, LXX; and above, note on vii. 1. 3), is consumed by fire; and all the Grass that was green, that is, the glory and beauty of the earthly power, is consumed by fire. Cp. Isa. xl. 6—8.

Here again is a reference to the history of the ancient People of God.

This and the succeeding Judgments denounced on the worldly Power, which persecutes Christ and His Church, correspond to the Judgments inflicted by God upon the worldly power of Pharaoh, the oppressor of God's people, who was chastened by a plague of hail, and fire with the hail, which smote every herb of the field, and brake every tree of the field; only in the land of Goshen, where the children of Israel were, was there no hail. (Exod. ix. 23—26)

This imagery seems to be adopted here, in order to show the similarity of the condition of the Church under Moses and under Christ; and to indicate that the purpose of this visitation was similar to that of the Egyptian plague; in a word, that the Trumpet announces a Judgment from God on the worldly power—typified by Pharaoh—for persecuting His People.

The extent of the visitation here is indicated by the use of the words the third part (i. e. a large part) of the earth, and the third of the trees. Cp. v. 9, and ix. 15. 18; xii. 4.

When the Apocalypse was written, the Church of Christ was persecuted by the power of this world—the power of heathen Rome. The Apostle, St. John himself, the disciple whom Jesus loved (John xxi. 7), was a prisoner for the Word of God (Rev. i. 9); and he describes himself "as the brother and companion" of others "in tribulation."

The Church of Christ was then in Egypt; the Cæsars were her Pharaohs. The first Trumpet predicts the woes which would fall, like a storm of hail and fire, on the earthly power of the Roman Empire, rebelling against heaven; and would afflict the princely Oaks and tall Cedars of that proud dynasty, and would wither up its pomp and glory like green Grass scorched by the Sun.

This Trumpet is like a retributive sequel to the second seal. It represents the woes which would fall on the Roman Empire in the fourth century, when it was a prey to the fire and sword of military violence, and was smitten by a hail-storm from the north, whence the Gothic tribes descended as in a tempest upon it. See the striking language of *S. Jerome* (de morte Nepotiani, ad finem), who gives a summary view of the miseries of the Roman Empire, and of the divine judgments executed on its Emperors, Constantius, Julian, Valentinian, Valens, Gratian, Valentinian II., and on Roman Princes and Potentates, and even private persons, and exclaims, "The mind shrinks with horror from contemplating the ruins of our age." "Horret animus ruinas nostri temporis persequi; Romanus orbis ruit, nostris peccatis (he speaks as a Roman) barbari fortes sunt." And in his second book against Jovinian (ad fin.), he addresses Rome and says, "If thou art penitent like Nineveh, thou mayest escape the malediction with which the Saviour of the world threatens thee in the Apocalypse." The irruption of the Goths into Italy is compared to a storm of hail, and is called a judgment from heaven by *Claudian*, de bello Gætico, v. 172,

"Seu gravis ira Deum seriem meditata ruinas
Ex illo quocunque vagos impegit Erinnyes
Grandinis aut morbi ritu."

Compare *Bp. Wilson's* note here.

THE SECOND TRUMPET.

8. καὶ ὁ δεύτερος ἄγγελος ἐσάλπισε] *And the second Angel sounded, and as it were a great Mountain burning with fire was cast into the Sea: and the third part of the Sea became blood;*

9.] *And the third part of the creatures which were in the Sea, the things which had lives, died, and the third part of the Ships was destroyed.*

The Second Trumpet follows naturally from the first. Here also is mention of fire and of blood. "He that leadeth into captivity shall go into captivity, he that killeth with the sword must be killed with the sword" (xiii. 9).

A great Mountain burning with fire is cast into the sea, which is the Apocalyptic emblem of tumultuous commotion and turbulent rage (see v. 13; vii. 1. 3; xxi. 1, and compare above, note on iv. 6).

The removal of Mountains, and the casting of them into the sea is a scriptural metaphor, descriptive of violent commotions, as in Ps. xli. 2, "We will not fear, though the Earth be moved, and the Mountains be carried into the midst of the Sea."

This present prophecy indicates the convulsion of a great and conspicuous Earthly power, which had been firmly fixed, like a Mountain, on a solid basis, and rooted in the earth. This Earthly power is also compared to a burning Mountain; it is like a volcanic Mountain burning with fire, and pouring forth its desolating streams of lava, withering and scorching the neighbouring territory.

Here is a noble image of a proud earthly military Dynasty, sending forth the torrents of its legionary forces to waste provinces, and to burn villages and cities as with a flood of fire.

The Prophecy predicts the precipitation of this volcanic Mountain into another element of a very different kind, one of fluid restlessness and tumultuous agitation.

In the Old Testament, the great City and Empire of Babylon is called "a destroying Mountain, which destroyeth the Earth," and God threatens to roll it down from the rocks and make it a burnt mountain (Jer. li. 25).

In like manner, the Empire and City of Rome are here compared "to a great Mountain," on account of its grandeur and power. And it might well be called a "burning Mountain," for it used its power to destroy the servants of God by fire in its

ἀπέθανε τὸ τρίτον τῶν κτισμάτων τῶν ἐν τῇ θαλάσσῃ, τὰ ἔχοντα ψυχὰς, καὶ τὸ τρίτον τῶν πλοίων διεφθάρη.

own streets (see above, on Phil. iii. 15), and in many cities of the Empire.

In this respect, the mention of *fire*, characterizing Rome as a *Mountain*, serves to connect this Judgment of the *Second Trumpet* with the *Second Seal*, where the Enemy of the Church is described as riding on the horse like *fire* (πυρρός).

That Great Imperial Mountain was uprooted by the assaults of the Goths, Vandals, and Huns; and the mighty Empire was dismembered and decomposed; and its solid Mass was dissolved and melted away into a swelling Sea, which was long agitated by the winds and waves of revolutionary storms and political hurricanes.

Thus the Christian reader of the Apocalypse was led to recognize in the incursions of Barbarians into the Roman Empire, a divine judgment upon it for its sins, especially in persecuting the Church. The Second Trumpet revealed the judgments inflicted upon Rome for the wrongs it did in the Second Seal.

Indeed, those barbarians proclaimed themselves to be executioners of God's judgments on Rome; *Salvian* (a Latin Christian writer of that age), in his treatise on the Divine Government (lib. vii.), says, "they confessed that what they did, was not their own doing, and that they were hurried on by the Divine Command." "Ipsi fatebantur non suum esse quod facerent; agi enim se divino jussu et perurgeti." Hence, says he, we may infer the magnitude of our sins, since these barbarians are impelled, against their will, to punish us.

It may also be observed, that in the incursions of these hordes of barbarians into the Southern provinces of Europe, the wisdom and power of God were glorified, and His truth was manifested, and His kingdom was advanced, and "the fierceness of man turned to His praise" (Ps. lxxvi. 10).

For, by means of those immigrations, these barbarous tribes received the knowledge of Christianity. Many of them embraced the Gospel with fervour, and founded Christian Kingdoms in Europe. See *Dean Jackson's* remarks on *God's Providence* in raising up the *Huns* to punish *Rome*.

"The rule of God's liberality in disposing Kingdoms, is the correspondency or proportion which temporal greatness holds with the execution of His will; whether for punishing those which have made up the measure of their iniquity, or for the propagating or preservation of His Church already planted, or for preparing or ploughing up the hearts of wild and unnurtured Nations for better receiving the seed of His Gospel.

"When the measure of that prosperity which God, for these and like purposes, had allotted *Rome* *Heathen*, and 'her iniquity became full,' she and her Provinces became a swifter prey to barbarous Nations, than any neighbour countries had been to her. The incredible success of the *Goths* and *Vandals*, of the *Franks* and *Almains*, &c., specially of the *Huns*, whose furious progress was like to the vulture's flight, and seemed to presage the slaughter which they made, will justify the probability either of *Xenophon's* stories concerning *Cyrus*; or of *Curtius*, *Arrianus*, or other writers of *Alexander's* conquests. Howbeit, this great power was not given them altogether to destroy others, but withal to edify themselves in the faith, and to be made partakers of God's vineyard, which He had now in a manner taken from these ungrateful husbandmen whom they conquered. The *Franks* became Christians through fear of the *Almains*. Dread of the *Huns* did drive the *Burgundians* to seek sanctuary in the same profession. And no question, but such of the ancient Christian inhabitants as outlived these storms, did believe God and His servants better afterwards than they had done before. Never were there any times more apt or more powerful to kindle devotion in such as were not altogether frozen in unbelief, or benumbed with the custom of sinning, than these times were. *Rome*, which had been the watch-tower of politic wisdom, became more stupid than *Babylon* had been, when the day of her visitation did come upon her. Her citizens (were a mere politician to be their judge) deserved to be buried in their city's ruins, for not awaking upon such and so many dreadful warnings as she had." *Dean Jackson* on the Creed, book vi. pt. ii. chap. xxvii. vol. v. p. 436.

9. τὰ ἔχοντα ψυχὰς] the things which had lives, died. This phrase is to be explained from other similar ones in this book. The saints of Christ are described as not loving their lives (τὰς ψυχὰς) unto death (xii. 11), and as conquering by the blood of the Lamb. And in the plague of the second Vial, every ψυχὴ ζῶν is said to have died (xvi. 3), and *Babylon* at her fall is represented as despoiled of every desire of her ψυχὴ (xviii. 14), that is, all the delights of animal existence and gratification; all "the lust of her eyes and the pride of life."

In accordance with this sense of the word ψυχὴ, the word

ψυχικὸς is opposed to πνευματικὸς in the New Testament. The former is the carnally-minded, the latter is the spiritual (see above, 1 Cor. ii. 14; xv. 44. James iii. 15. Jude 19).

Next, it is to be remembered, that, in the Apocalypse, the verb ἔχω signifies to hold fast, as a treasure, to grasp tenaciously as the main good (see vi. 9; xii. 17).

Hence it follows that the sense of these words (τὰ ἔχοντα ψυχὰς, ἀπέθανε) is, that they, who amid the Judgments that came upon Rome, would not be weaned from the pleasures of this life, but still doted upon them; they, who thus clung to their mere animal life (ψυχὴ), died, died in body and soul by that death which is indeed to be called death.

On the other hand, the faithful Christian was assured, that whatever might happen to his ψυχὴ, or animal life, in this world, he would be preserved for another world, in body, soul, and spirit (see on 1 Thess. v. 23), by the power of Him Who overcame Death, and Who is "the Resurrection and the Life." Thus Christ's own words would be true, that they who found their life (ψυχὴν), would lose it; and that they, who lost their lives for His sake, would find them (Matt. x. 39), or, as He expresses it elsewhere (Luke xvii. 33), "he that seeks to save his life (ψυχὴν) shall lose it, and he who loses it, shall make it live" (ζωογονήσει); and again (John xii. 25), "he that loveth his life (ψυχὴν) shall lose it, and he that hateth his life in this world, shall keep it to everlasting life" (ζῶν; where the distinction between ζῶν and ψυχὴ is to be carefully observed).

Probably St. John had these words of our Lord in his mind, when he wrote the Apocalypse; and he supposed that his readers would remember them, and apply them to the interpretation of his own language here and throughout this book. Hence it is rightly said by some ancient Expositors here, e. g. *Aug.* that the ungodly are here described by St. John as those "qui habebant animas, in carne vivi, sed spiritualiter mortui."

Observe also, that St. John appropriately uses here the neuter gender to describe these worldly-minded persons who cling to their animal life and its pleasures; they are τὰ ἔχοντα ψυχὰς. He does not call them men, but things, the things which have lives, animal lives, and nothing more; they die, while they seek to live, and because they seek life, and that only; and he thus contrasts them with the male child of the Church mentioned below (xii. 5), that is, those noble, masculine spirits who are the genuine offspring of Christ, and willingly lay down their lives for Him Who died to redeem them, and thus live in death, and by death; being born thereby into that endless life (ζῶν αἰώνιον), which alone deserves to be called life.

The carnal lives and voluptuous habits of the Roman Princes and Potentates of this time, the Trees of the Second Trumpet, are described by *Ammianus Marcellinus* (xiv. 6, and xxviii. 4), in passages cited in the xxxist chapter of *Gibbon's* Decline and Fall of the Roman Empire.

It is remarkable, that, at the capture and plunder of Rome by Alaric and the Goths in the third siege (A.D. 410), when "at the hour of midnight the Salarian gate was silently opened, and the inhabitants of Rome were awakened by the tremendous sound of the Gothic Trumpet" (*Gibbon*, chap. xxxi.), the fury of the invaders was restrained in a marvellous manner from injuring the Christian Church. Alaric said that he "waged war with the Romans, and not with the Apostles" (*Isidor. Chronic.* p. 714. Cp. *Oros.* vii. 39, and *Procop.* de bell. Vand. i. 2, cited by *Gibbon*). *S. Augustine* in his work "De Civitate Dei," written on the occasion of this event, in order to vindicate the Christian Religion against the allegations of Heathens who imputed their woes to the wrath of their Heathen Gods against those who had renounced Heathenism for Christianity,—observes, "that the Barbarians spared the Romans for the sake of Christ. Witness," says he, "the tombs of the Martyrs, and the Churches of the Apostles, which received as in an asylum both Christians and Pagans in that devastation of the City. The fury of the barbarians raged up to their doors, and there paused" (*De Civ. Dei*, i. 1). And he affords an interesting illustration of this text when he says, that "many Heathens thus escaped, who now revile the Gospel, which was the cause of their deliverance; and impute the woes of Rome to Christ; and the benefits they then received they ascribe to their own destiny; whereas they ought to ascribe the evils they then endured to the goodness of God, Who is wont to correct men's sins by sufferings, and to try men's virtues by affliction, and to translate Piety into a better world, or to retain it on earth for godly uses; and they ought to ascribe to Christ's Gospel the wonderful fact, that, contrary to the custom of wars, the Barbarians spared those who took refuge in places dedicated to the worship of Christ; and they, who made use of His Name

f Isa. 14. 12.
ch. 16. 4.

g Ruth 1. 20.
Exod. 15. 23.
Jer. 9. 15.

¹⁰ Καὶ ὁ τρίτος ἄγγελος ἐσάλπισε· καὶ ἔπεσεν ἐκ τοῦ οὐρανοῦ ἀστὴρ μέγας καιόμενος ὡς λαμπὰς, καὶ ἔπεσεν ἐπὶ τὸ τρίτον τῶν ποταμῶν, καὶ ἐπὶ τὰς πηγὰς τῶν ὑδάτων· ¹¹ καὶ τὸ ὄνομα τοῦ ἀστέρος λέγεται ὁ ἄψινθος· καὶ ἐγένετο τὸ τρίτον τῶν ὑδάτων εἰς ἄψινθον· καὶ πολλοὶ τῶν ἀνθρώπων ἀπέθανον ἐκ τῶν ὑδάτων, ὅτι ἐπικράνθησαν.

¹² Καὶ ὁ τέταρτος ἄγγελος ἐσάλπισε· καὶ ἐπλήγη τὸ τρίτον τοῦ ἡλίου, καὶ τὸ

in order to escape *temporal death*, ought to be impelled to resort to Him, in order to escape the pains of death eternal." See also *ibid.* i. c. 3, 4.

S. Augustine deplores the infatuation of the Romans who would not be corrected by *God's Judgments* inflicted on them by the armies of the Barbarians. "You," he exclaims, "have been trodden under foot by the enemy, and yet have not put a rein on your luxury; you have forfeited the benefits of your calamities, you have been made most wretched, and have remained most wicked,—*miserrimi facti estis, et pessimi permansistis, et tamen quod vivitis Dei est, qui vobis parcendo admonuit ut corrigamini poenitendo.*"

— τὸ τρίτον τῶν πλοίων διεφθάρη] *the third part of the ships was destroyed.* The Trumpet announces that *ships*, the instruments of Commerce and Wealth and Luxury, will be ruined. *Isaiah*, in a prophetic passage similar to the present, after the mention of God's vengeance against *every one that is proud and lofty*, typified as here by *Trees, cedars, and oaks*, speaks of Judgments upon *ships* of *Tarshish* (ii. 16), where the LXX has ἐπὶ πᾶν πλοῖον θαλάσσης.

It is a remarkable fact in the history of *Alaric's* campaign in Italy (in A.D. 409), that "instead of assaulting the Capital at once," he directed his efforts against the arsenal of its *ships*, the Port of Ostia, the emporium of its commerce, and magazine of its provisions, and "as soon as he was in possession of that place he summoned the City of Rome to surrender at discretion; and his demands were enforced by the declaration, that a refusal or even a delay would be instantly followed by a destruction of the magazines on which the life of the Roman people depended. The clamour of the people and the terror of famine subdued the pride of the senate," and *Alaric* was received within the walls of Rome. *Gibbon*, ch. xxxi.

THE THIRD TRUMPET.

10, 11. καὶ ὁ τρίτος ἄγγελος ἐσάλπισε] *And the third Angel sounded, and there fell from heaven a great Star, burning as a lamp, and it fell upon the third part of the rivers, and upon the fountains of the waters; And the name of the Star is called the Wormwood: and the third part of the waters was turned into wormwood; and many men died of the waters, because they were made bitter.*

Here A, B have ὁ ἄψινθος, *the Wormwood*.—*Elz.* omits the article.

A *Star*, in the language of the Apocalypse, is a Luminary of the Church. *The Seven Stars* are the *Angels of the Seven Churches* (i. 20), that is, chief Ministers of the Seven Churches. A *fallen Star* is therefore emblematic of a false teacher. Cp. ix. 1. He is said to be like a *torch* (λαμπὰς), because he has no heavenly light; but flares with earthly flame, mingled with lurid smoke. He was set by God in the firmament of the Church, to be a guide to others; but he *falls* and becomes like a "wandering *Star*, to which is reserved the *blackness of darkness* for ever" (*Jude* 13).

His name is called ὁ ἄψινθος, *the Wormwood*.

Wormwood is very bitter (*Billerbeck*, *Flora Class.* pp. 213, 214), and in certain cases produces convulsions, delirium, epilepsy, and death (see *Winer*, R. W. B. ii. p. 688); and is here, as in other places of Scripture, descriptive of *false doctrine*. *Take heed*, says *Moses*, when he warns the Israelites against corrupt doctrines and practices, *lest there should be among you a root that beareth gall and wormwood.* (*Deut.* xxix. 18.) And so *God* says by *Jeremiah*: *Because the prophets cause My people to err, behold, I will feed them with Wormwood.* (*Jer.* xxiii. 15; see also *Amos* v. 7; vi. 12.) *He will choose their delusions, and punish them with their own devices.* And *St. Paul* in the same spirit says, *Looking diligently lest any fail of the grace of God; lest any root of bitterness springing up trouble you, and thereby many be defiled.* (*Heb.* xii. 15.) And *St. John's* scholar, *S. Ignatius*, in several places, speaks of *heresy* as a *noxious plant*, κακὴ βοτάνη (*Eph.* 10, *Trall.* 6, *Phil.* 3).

This fallen *Star*, whose name is *Wormwood*, represents *Heresy*; and particularly those *Heresies* concerning the Natures and Person of *Christ*; and the Divinity of the Holy Spirit; and Divine Grace and Free Will; which prevailed in the fifth and sixth centuries after *Christ*.

Almost all those Persons who gave their name to those *Heresies* were gifted with great mental endowments. They were *Stars*: *Stars* set in the heaven of the Church to enlighten others. *Arius* was distinguished by his ready eloquence and logical acumen. *Nestorius* was a Bishop famous for holiness and learning. *Eutychianism* owed its origin to the head of a monastic body. *Pelagius* was remarkable for moral strictness of life.

Here also is another reference to the History of *Israel*. *Moses*, the *faithful servant* of *God*, and the leader of His people in the wilderness, cast *wood*, which *God* showed him, into the *bitter waters of Marah*, and made them *sweet*. (*Exod.* xv. 23.) But here the *false Teacher* reverses that action. The *Star* burning like a lamp, whose name is *Wormwood*, falls into the waters and makes them *bitter*. Instead of guiding men by the steady light of true doctrine, over the troubled sea of this world, it falls into the rivers and wells of Salvation, and embitters the sweet waters of Holy Scripture, by the infusion of heretical interpretations, and destroys the souls of men.

This exposition is authorized by ancient Interpreters. This *Star* represents a constellation falling from the firmament of the Church. This *Star* symbolizes heretical teachers embittering the waters of Holy Scripture. (*Aug.?* *Bede*, *Aquinas*.) And so *Lightfoot* here, "The third Trumpet brings the *Star*, 'Wormwood,' upon the rivers and fountains of waters; which seemeth to denote the grievous heresies that should be in the Church, which should corrupt and embitter the pure springs of Scripture, the fountains of truth." And so *Vitringa*, *Bengel*, and many others cited by him.

Thus we are taught to regard *Heresies* in their true light; that is, as *punishments* for the sins of men.

Grievous punishments they also were, even in a temporal sense, as was seen in the fury of the Asiatic Monophysites, of the African Circumcellions, and of the Arian Vandals, under *Genseric*, A.D. 477, and *Huneric*, A.D. 484, and *Thrasimund*. See the contemporary History of *Victor Vitensis* in *Ruinhardt's* *Historia Persecut. Vandal.* 1694, and *Vitringa*, *Anacr.* p. 100.

But these and other *Heresies* were also trials and exercises of Faith, Hope, and Love; and so served to the manifestation of *God's* grace and glory, and to the purification of His Church. *There must be Heresies*, says the Apostle, *that they which are approved may be made manifest among you.* (1 Cor. xi. 19.)

Indeed, if there had been no *Heresies*, the Church would not possess the explicit declaration of the Christian Faith which she now has in her Creeds.

The opposition of Heretics constrained her to examine carefully the Holy Scriptures; and to proclaim clearly to the world what is the true Faith which is contained in those Sacred Writings, and which she had received from *Christ* and the Apostles; and to deliver a solemn protest and warning against the erroneous and strange doctrines with which Heretics endeavoured to corrupt that Faith.

Thus *Heresies* themselves, while they were Punishments to the godless, served to prove and confirm the belief of Christians, and to place the True Faith in a clearer light, and to establish it on a more solid foundation.

This was a blessed consummation of trial; and such a result as that might well be the object of the prayers of Saints.

Here also we may observe the difference of treatment of similar subjects in the *Trumpets* and *Seals* respectively; and this serves to bring out the difference of their character. In the *Seals*, *Heresy* is represented as a trial of the Church, and as a severe suffering to be endured by her (vi. 5, 6). In the *Trumpets*, *Heresy* is treated as a Judgment inflicted on men for sin, and brought upon them by themselves.

This Trumpet leads the way to

THE FOURTH TRUMPET.

12. καὶ ὁ τέταρτος ἄγγελος ἐσάλπισε] *And the fourth Angel sounded, and the third part of the Sun was smitten, and the third part of the Moon, and the third part of the Stars; so that the third part of them should be darkened, and the day should not shine for a third part of it, and the night likewise.*

Here we pass from visitations on the elements of earth to

τρίτον τῆς σελήνης, καὶ τὸ τρίτον τῶν ἀστέρων, ἵνα σκοτισθῇ τὸ τρίτον αὐτῶν, καὶ ἡ ἡμέρα μὴ φάνη τὸ τρίτον αὐτῆς, καὶ ἡ νύξ ὁμοίως.

¹³ Καὶ εἶδον, καὶ ἤκουσα ἑνὸς ἀετοῦ πετομένου ἐν μεσουρανήματι λέγοντος φωνῇ μεγάλῃ, Οὐαὶ, οὐαὶ, οὐαὶ τοῖς κατοικοῦσιν ἐπὶ τῆς γῆς ἐκ τῶν λοιπῶν φωνῶν τῆς σάλπιγγος τῶν τριῶν ἀγγέλων τῶν μελλόντων σαλπίζειν.

IX. ¹ Καὶ ὁ πέμπτος ἄγγελος ἐσάλπισε καὶ εἶδον ἀστέρα ἐκ τοῦ οὐρανοῦ ^{a Luke 8. 31. & 10. 18. ch. 17. 8.} πεπτωκότα εἰς τὴν γῆν, καὶ ἐδόθη αὐτῷ ἡ κλεῖς τοῦ φρέατος τῆς ἀβύσσου. ² καὶ ἤνοιξε τὸ φρέαρ τῆς ἀβύσσου καὶ ἀνέβη καπνὸς ἐκ τοῦ φρέατος ὡς καπνὸς καμίνου μεγάλης· καὶ ἐσκοτίσθη ὁ ἥλιος καὶ ὁ ἀήρ ἐκ τοῦ καπνοῦ τοῦ φρέατος. ³ Καὶ ἐκ τοῦ καπνοῦ ἐξῆλθον ἀκρίδες εἰς τὴν γῆν, καὶ ἐδόθη αὐταῖς ἐξουσία ὡς ἔχουσιν ἐξουσίαν οἱ σκορπίοι τῆς γῆς. ⁴ καὶ ἐρρέθη αὐταῖς ἵνα μὴ ἀδικήσωσι ^{b Ezek. 9. 4. ch. 6. 6. & 7. 3.} τὸν χόρτον τῆς γῆς, οὐδὲ πᾶν χλωρὸν, οὐδὲ πᾶν δένδρον, εἰ μὴ τοὺς ἀνθρώπους οἵτινες οὐκ ἔχουσι τὴν σφραγίδα τοῦ Θεοῦ ἐπὶ τῶν μετώπων αὐτῶν. ⁵ Καὶ

judgments in a higher region, that of *heaven*. The *Sun* is smitten, and the third part of the *Moon*, and the third part of the *Stars*.

Here we see a prophecy of a great prevalence of errors, defections, apostasies, and confusions in *Christendom*; such as abounded in the Seventh Century.

This view prepares us for

The FIFTH TRUMPET.

13. καὶ εἶδον] *And I beheld and heard one Eagle flying in mid-heaven, and saying with a loud voice, Woe, Woe, Woe, to the inhabitants of the Earth by reason of the remaining voices of the trumpet of the three Angels, which are yet to sound!*

The reading ἀετοῦ (*an eagle*) is in A, B, and in several Cursive MSS., and in many Versions, and is received by *Griesb., Scholz, Lach., Tisch.—Elz.* has ἀγγέλου. No copyist would have substituted ἀετοῦ for ἀγγέλου here; and therefore, on this and other grounds, ἀετοῦ is to be preferred.

The flying Eagle announces a triple *Woe* to the inhabitants of the *Earth*—that is, to those who are of the *earth, earthy*; and are not loyal subjects of Christ, and faithful citizens of the Kingdom of *heaven*. See above on iii. 10.

Observe also, St. John says that he beheld and saw one Eagle, ἐνὸς ἀετοῦ. The Eagle in mid-heaven here is called εἰς ἀετὸς, *One Eagle*. This *Oneness* marks some special messenger. This *One* Royal Bird, this *King of Birds*, here probably signifies Christ Himself, who is called in the Apocalypse "*the Great Eagle*" (xii. 14, where see note).

There is a similar use of the numeral εἰς, *one*, in xviii. 21, εἰς ἄγγελος ἰσχυρὸς, *One special Angel who is strong*, and xix. 7, εἶδον ἕνα ἄγγελον ἐστῶτα, *I saw One Angel standing*. In both these cases the *One* Angel seems to designate Christ. On this emphatic use of εἰς, see *Winer*, § 18, p. 106.

Christ's *Royalty*, in His Human Nature, especially as *triumphing* over *Death*, and as *ascending* in glory into heaven, is marked by the emblem of the *Eagle* (see on Matt. xxiv. 28. Luke xvii. 37; above on iv. 7), as it is in another respect, by that other emblem in the Apocalypse, where He is called the *Lion*, the King of Beasts (v. 5). In chap. x. 3, He is said to roar as a *Lion*. Why may He not therefore be here said to fly as an *Eagle*? especially as Jehovah Himself deigns to speak of Himself under this similitude, in His care for His people, in their deliverance from Egypt, and in their passage through the wilderness, to which there is a continual reference in this Vision of the trumpets. "As an *Eagle* stirreth up her nest, fluttereth over her young, spreadeth abroad her wings, taketh them, beareth them on her wings, so the LORD did lead him." (Deut. xxxii. 11, 12.)

The Eagle flies ἐν μεσουρανήματι, in *mid-heaven*, i. e. in the *zenith* (see *Eustath.* ad *Iliad.* ix. 68. *Wetst.*), so as to be manifest to all, like the sun at noon.

What now is the moral of this Vision?

It is this: The Trumpets, as we have seen, were introduced by a Vision of the heavenly Temple, and by the ministry of an *Angel*—probably Christ Himself, as Man, in His Priestly character—presenting before the Throne in heaven the prayers of All Saints (viii. 2—5).

The deliverances of God's Church, and all the discipline with which He purifies her in this World, by means of the Divine Judgments announced by the Trumpets, and executed by Him on the dwellers upon the earth, that is, on the proud and godless of this world, have been already represented as re-

sults of the *Prayers of the Saints*, presented by the Angel in the golden censer in heaven.

Thus the Church has been assured of God's protection; and she is encouraged to trust in Him, and pray for the Coming of Christ.

What next follows?

Three several and extraordinary *Woes* are now announced with a special preamble, and by a special Vision. *One Eagle* is seen stretching out his wings and flying in mid-heaven, and is heard crying, "WOE, WOE, WOE, to the inhabitants of the Earth, by reason of the remaining voices of the three Angels, which are about to sound."

Thus the Church is assured, that, however terrible these judgments may be, they are foreknown and controlled by Him who bore His people out of Egypt of old, and carried them through the wilderness on *Eagles' wings*; and that whatever may betide the inhabitants of the *Earth*, in the storm of His wrath against them for their ungodliness, she herself, who is *not* of the *Earth*, but has her hopes and her heart in *heaven*, "will be defended under His wings, and be safe under His feathers," as it is said in the Psalm (xci. 4); and that He will protect her from her Enemy the Dragon, as is written in the same Psalm concerning Christ, Who is "*the great Eagle*" (Rev. xii. 14)—on whose Wings the Church is borne. "Thou shalt go upon the Lion and the Adder, the young Lion and the Dragon Thou shalt tread under Thy feet." (Ps. xci. 13.)

This exposition is illustrated and confirmed by the language of the Apocalypse in the Twelfth chapter, to which a reference has just been made. See xii. 2, 3, 13, 14.

There we read, "*Woe to the Earth*" (xii. 12), as here, "*Woe to the inhabitants of the Earth*;" and that when the Dragon saw that he was cast out, he persecuted the Woman, i. e. the Church; and that "to the woman were given the two wings of the great Eagle, that she might fly into the wilderness into her place"—just as the Ancient Church fled from Pharaoh, the persecuting King of Egypt, a type of the worldly oppressors of the Church—and there she is *nourished* from the face of the Serpent (xii. 14); and she may now say, "I will get me away far off, and remain in the wilderness, I will make haste to escape, because of the stormy wind and tempest." And the Spirit comforts her with words of peace, "O cast thy burden on the Lord, and He shall *nourish* thee, and shall not suffer the righteous to fall for ever; As for my enemies, O God, Thou shalt bring them into the pit of destruction." (Ps. lv. 7, 8, 23, 24.)

The FIFTH TRUMPET;

CH. IX. 1—11. καὶ ὁ πέμπτος ἄγγελος ἐσάλπισε] *And the fifth Angel sounded, and I saw a Star that had fallen from heaven unto the earth: and to him was given the key of the bottomless pit.*

And he opened the bottomless pit (or abyss): and there arose a smoke out of the pit, as the smoke of a great furnace; and the sun and the air were darkened by reason of the smoke of the pit.

And there came out of the smoke Locusts upon the earth and unto them was given power, as the Scorpions of the earth have power.

And it was commanded them that they should not hurt the grass of the earth, neither any green thing, neither any tree: except only the men who have not the seal of God on their foreheads.

And to them it was given that they should not kill them,

c Isa. 2. 19.
Jer. 8. 3.
Hos. 10. 8.
Luke 23. 30.
ch. 6. 16.
d Exod. 10. 4.
Wisd. 16. 9.
Joel 2. 4.

e Joel 1. 6.

ἐδόθη αὐταῖς ἵνα μὴ ἀποκτείνωσιν αὐτοὺς, ἀλλ' ἵνα βασανισθῶσι μῆνας πέντε καὶ ὁ βασανισμὸς αὐτῶν ὡς βασανισμὸς σκορπίου, ὅταν παίσῃ ἄνθρωπον. ⁶ ^c Καὶ ἐν ταῖς ἡμέραις ἐκείναις ζητήσουσιν οἱ ἄνθρωποι τὸν θάνατον, καὶ οὐ μὴ εὕρῃσουσιν αὐτόν· καὶ ἐπιθυμήσουσιν ἀποθανεῖν, καὶ φεύζεται ὁ θάνατος ἀπ' αὐτῶν. ⁷ ^d Καὶ τὰ ὁμοιώματα τῶν ἀκρίδων ὅμοια ἵπποις ἡτοιμασμένοις εἰς πόλεμον· καὶ ἐπὶ τὰς κεφαλὰς αὐτῶν ὡς στέφανοι ὅμοιοι χρυσῷ, καὶ τὰ πρόσωπα αὐτῶν ὡς πρόσωπα ἀνθρώπων, ⁸ ^e καὶ εἶχον τρίχας ὡς τρίχας γυναικῶν, καὶ οἱ ὀδόντες αὐτῶν ὡς λεόντων ἦσαν· ⁹ καὶ εἶχον θώρακας ὡς θώρακας σιδηροῦς, καὶ ἡ φωνὴ τῶν πτερύγων αὐτῶν ὡς φωνὴ ἁρμάτων ἵππων πολλῶν τρεχόντων εἰς

but that they should be tormented five months: and their torment is as the torment of a scorpion, when it hath struck a man. And in those days shall the men seek death, and shall not find it; and shall desire to die, and death shall flee from them. And the forms of the Locusts are like unto horses prepared unto battle; and on their heads are as it were crowns of gold, and their faces as the faces of men. And they had hair as the hair of women, and their teeth were as teeth of lions. And they had breastplates, as it were breastplates of iron: and the sound of their wings was as the sound of chariots of many horses running to battle. And they have tails and stings like unto scorpions, and in their tails is their power to hurt the men five months; they have over them a King, the angel of the bottomless pit; his name in the Hebrew tongue is Abaddon, and in the Greek tongue he hath a name Apollyon.

The Vision here, in v. 1, represents the Star not as *falling*, but as *having already fallen* (πεπτωκότα), and to this star is given the *key of the bottomless pit* (τοῦ φρέατος τῆς ἀβύσσου), literally, of the *pit of the abyss*; or, in other words, of the *aperture*, by which there is egress from, or ingress into, the *abyss*. The φρέαρ is the "orificium abyssi." (Bengel.)

The sense of the word ἀβύσσος has been already examined in the note on Luke viii. 31. It does not mean the *Lake of Fire*, from which it is distinguished in the Apocalypse. See on xx. 1—3, compared with xx. 10. It does not mean that *final abode* of the Evil One, and of his associate spirits, but it signifies his *present residence* and stronghold.

A *Star*, in the language of the Apocalypse, is a Christian Teacher (i. 16. 20; viii. 10). The *Star which had fallen from heaven to the earth*, represents the *heretical apostasy* of some who were designed to be *Lights* in the Church. This *Star* has the *key of the abyss*, and *opens the pit*. *Heretical Teachers* are thus represented as being the *cause of the opening of the abyss*, and of the *issue of the smoke* from it, which is described as darkening the air and the sun; that is, obscuring the heavenly light of Christ and of His Gospel.

Smoke issues from the Pit; and an army of Locusts comes forth out of the *smoke* upon the earth. They do not come *directly* from the *Pit* itself, as the Beast does, in chap. xi. 7, but the army of Locusts issues forth out of the smoke.

They are described as like unto *Scorpions* of the earth.

Our Lord has spoken of *Scorpions* in a *spiritual* sense, as instruments of Satan. "I give you power to tread on *serpents* and *scorpions*." (Luke x. 19.) And in the mention of them here, there is also a reference to the enemies by which the Ancient Church of God was assailed in the wilderness, and to the mercy of Almighty God, "Who led her through the great and terrible wilderness, wherein were fiery *serpents* and *scorpions*." (Deut. viii. 15.)

These Locusts of the Apocalypse are represented as enemies to the *soul*; "they have no power to injure the *Grass*, nor any green *thing*, nor any *Tree*, except (ἐἰ μὴ) the men who have not the *seal of God* on their foreheads." Elz. has μόνους, only, here after ἀνθρώπους, but it is not in A, C, and is probably only a gloss. It is added in v. 10, that they have power to *hurt the men* five months. Observe the article τοὺς before ἀνθρώπους; "they have power to hurt *the men*," i. e. *the men* mentioned here, who have not the seal of God on their foreheads.

Observe here also the use of ἐἰ μὴ, *save only*; these Locusts cannot hurt the *vegetation* of the earth—and therefore they are not *natural* locusts—but they only hurt *men*, and only a *particular class* of men, viz. *those men* who have not on their foreheads the *seal of God*, which declares them to be His, and assures them of His defence. (See above, vii. 3.)

These Locusts are described as *conquering*; they have *golden crowns of Victory* (vi. 2, στεφάνους); their faces are human; their hair is long like that of *women*; and they are in form like *Horses of War*, to which even natural Locusts bear some resem-

blance (see Joel ii. 4. Winer, R. W. B. i. 487), and Locusts are therefore called in Italy "*cavallette*."

But, whereas *natural* Locusts are described in Scripture as "not having any king" (ἀβασίλευτον γένος, Prov. xxx. 27), these *spiritual* Locusts are represented here as having a king over them, who is the *Angel of the abyss*, and whose name is expressed here in Hebrew (אַבְדֹן, Abaddon), and also in Greek (Ἀπολλύων), both names signifying *Destroyer*; and thus he stands in contrast as the Adversary of the *Creator* and *Preserver*, whose name is specified in Scripture in those two languages, viz. in Hebrew אַבְבָּא (Abba), and in Greek Πατήρ, *Father*. See on Rom. viii. 15. Gal. iv. 6.

The name is given in both languages in both cases, because the one is the universal *Enemy*, Satan, the other is the *Father* of all, "rich in mercy to all" (Rom. x. 12), both Jew and Greek (Rom. iii. 29).

It is specified here as a characteristic of these Locusts, that they are withheld from *killing* men; but permission is given to them to exert their power under a control and restraint, so that men *should be tried*, and *tormented* by them *five months*. Observe the change of *voice* here, from active to passive. God *restrains* them from *killing* men; and He suffers that men *should be tried by them* for a certain period. The language of the original marks the Divine agency in a more striking manner (ἐδόθη αὐτοῖς ἵνα μὴ κ.τ.λ.); it was *given* to them that they should *not kill* them, but that men should *be tormented* by them.

When we consider these circumstances, and review the characteristics of the Trumpets, and contemplate the events predicted by the preceding Trumpets, we see good reason for believing, with many learned and judicious Interpreters, that the present Trumpet, the Fifth, announced the woes inflicted by *Mohammedanism*.

In further corroboration of this opinion, it may be observed, that the judicial Woe of this Trumpet is represented as due to the agency of the *Star which has fallen* from heaven; that is, to the operation of the false doctrine and corrupt worship of those who ought to have been *Luminaries* in the firmament of the Church. The Locusts issue from the smoke that arises from the pit of the abyss, unsealed by the fallen Star.

Mohammedanism owed its origin to Heresies, Schisms, and corruptions in Christendom.

When the Arians had propagated their pernicious dogma, that the Son of God is a creature, and when it had been affirmed by others in Christendom, that He was a mere man, it followed as a natural consequence, that other persons would be represented as equal or superior to Him. If Jesus Christ was no more than a Prophet, then Mohammed, who came after Him, might be greater than Jesus Christ. In other respects also, defection, and degeneracy in the faith and ritual of Christendom, were preparatory and auxiliary to the spread of Islamism. The doctrine of the Divine Unity, studiously asserted in the Koran, gave an advantage to the new religion as contrasted with the popular form of Christianity, which was tinctured by superstition and idolatry. "Mahomet," says Neander (Church History, vol. v. p. 111), "proclaimed that he had been sent by God to be a restorer of *pure Theism*, and to cleanse it of those strange elements, with which it was mixed in Judaism and Christianity. The war which he waged was directed against the *vain corruptions* of those earlier Revelations; and he might be fairly justified in accusing the professors of Christianity, *such as he saw it*, of falsifying the original worship, as when he assailed the adoration of the *Virgin Mary* and of the *Saints* [and of images]. And the *Schisms* and *bitter animosities* among the different sects of Christians, presented another point of comparison, in which the religious *unity* displayed by the votaries of the Koran appeared in a favourable light." Neander has also observed (Ch. Hist. v. 114), that the

πόλεμον¹⁰ καὶ ἔχουσιν οὐρὰς ὁμοίας σκορπίοις καὶ κέντρα, καὶ ἐν ταῖς οὐραῖς αὐτῶν ἡ ἐξουσία αὐτῶν ἀδικῆσαι τοὺς ἀνθρώπους μῆνας πέντε·¹¹ ἔχουσιν ἐφ' f ver. 1.

divisions which existed among the Oriental Christians, and hindered them from making any well-organized resistance to the aggressions of the enemy, gave great facilities to the victorious advance of the Mohammedan Saracens. Cp. *Grotius*, de Verit. Rel. Christ. vi. § 1.

The emissaries of this plague, in the Fifth Trumpet, are called *Locusts*, and they are compared to *Horses* and *Scorpions*. All these physical objects are associated with *Arabia*, the native country of *Mohammedanism*. The Locusts which were brought by Moses as a plague upon Pharaoh and upon Egypt, came from *Arabia*. (Exod. x. 13. Cp. *Winer*, R. W. B. i. p. 490.) The Mohammedan military power was distinguished by its cavalry. "*Arabia*," says *Gibbon*, "in the opinion of the naturalist, is the genuine and original country of the horse; the merit of the Barb, the Spanish and the English horse, is derived from a mixture of Arabian blood." (*Gibbon*, Decline and Fall, &c., ch. I., near the beginning.) The noblest description of the war-horse was probably written in *Arabia*. (Job xxxix. 19.) *Scorpions* also are mentioned in Scripture as characteristic of the Arabian wilderness. (Deut. viii. 15.) All the features of this Vision attract the mind to *Arabia*.

These Locusts are described as conquerors, having crowns of Victory on their heads, and the sound of their wings is like that of many horses running to battle. Islamism propagated itself by conquest; and the rapidity with which its conquests were achieved, and the vast extent of its dominion, and the splendour of its victories, are almost without a parallel in the history of the world. In eighty years it overran, or rather flew with wings, over Palestine, Syria, Armenia, a great part of Asia Minor, Persia, part of India, Egypt, Numidia, Portugal, and Spain.

Another characteristic of these Locusts is, that they have faces like Men, and hair as of Women, that is, long hair. (Cp. 1 Cor. xi. 14.) Mohammed himself is thus described; "his hair, hanging over his shoulders, retained its dark colour to the day of his death." (*Arnold's Ishmael*, p. 86.)

The Arabians and Saracens are described by ancient writers as wearing their hair "long and flowing, and sometimes plaited like women." See *Plin.* N. H. vi. 26. *Ammian. Marcellin.* xxxi. 18, where *Valesius* says, "Such was the costume of the Saracens, wearing their hair long and braided, hanging down on their backs, 'crinitis vittatisque capitibus.'"

A recent writer on Islamism thus speaks, "Moslem historians maintain that the Locust Armies carried on their wings the Arabic inscription 'We are the Host of Allah; every one of us carries ninety-nine eggs; and if we had a hundred, we would destroy the world and all that is therein.'" *Dr. J. M. Arnold's Ishmael*, p. 252. Thus they identified themselves with the Locusts of the Apocalypse; the brood of Abaddon, the Destroyer; thus also they owned that they were restrained by a controlling Power.

It is also specified in the Vision that these Locusts are restrained from killing the men, but that men would be tormented by them five months.

The Persecution waged by Mohammedanism was distinguished in this respect from that of ancient Heathen Rome, which martyred Christians as such, and is represented in the Apocalypse as riding on a horse of fire, with a sword in its hand (vi. 3, 4). And the Persecution carried on by Mohammedanism was also distinguished from the Persecutions waged on the Saints of God by the two Beasts of the Apocalypse, who make war with the Saints, and kill those who do not worship the image of the Beast (xiii. 7-15; cp. xvii. 6).

Mohammedanism did indeed tempt men by many allurements to adopt its own creed; and this was a severe torment. It was, in the strict sense of the word, a βασανισμός; it was a touchstone (βάσανος) of their faith. Cp. 1 Pet. i. 7, where the Apostle compares persecution to the trial of precious metals.

Christians were subjected to many disabilities and humiliating distinctions and oppressions, if they refused to profess Islamism; but they were not compelled to renounce their faith. This fact is established by the authorities in *Gibbon's Decline and Fall*, chap. li., near the end; and by the quotations from the Koran by *Gieseler*, Church Hist. § 127, who says, "Jews and Christians were tolerated by the Arabs on condition of paying a poll-tax; and though sometimes severely oppressed (βεβασανισμένοι), they were not compelled to change their religion; still, however, the advantages held out to those who adopted Islamism attracted many converts. Mahomet, in the Koran, made it a duty of believers to carry on religious war for the purpose of exterminating idolatry, and making Jews and Christians tributary."

In the conquest of Egypt by Amru, circa A.D. 639, the Bishop and Community of the Coptic Church near Memphis,

"submitted to the invaders, and paying a poll-tax secured to themselves their property and liberty of conscience." *Arnold's Ishmael*, p. 222, ed. 1859.

Neander observes (Church Hist., Third Period, First Section, near the end), "The Saracens, who, in the course of the seventh and eighth centuries, exercised rule in Asia, in Syria, and the neighbouring provinces, and in Northern Africa, did not persecute the old Christian inhabitants on account of their faith, if they paid the appointed tribute: but there were not wanting occasions for the exercise of wilful oppression, insult, and cruelty: those who only adhered in uncertainty to a dead faith" (i. e. "they who had not the seal of God on their foreheads") "might allow themselves to become converts to a religion which was extending itself by manifold influences, and flattered the passions of the natural man, and was supported by all the weight of authority."

It is said in this prophecy (v. 6), that in those days shall the men seek death. Observe here "the men," the men who have not the Seal of God (v. 4; cp. v. 10). This is a scriptural description of extreme misery, and represents the torment to which those men would be reduced under Mohammedan rule. Cp. Jer. viii. 3, where the prophet speaks of the sufferings of the rebellious Jews scattered abroad; "Death shall be chosen rather than life, by all the residue of them that remain of this evil family, which remain in all places whither I have driven them, saith the Lord of hosts." Not that the dispersed Jews did really all prefer death, for few had the courage to be martyrs; but the misery of their life is thus described by a comparison which represents it as worse than death. Cp. Job iii. 21, where Job's wretchedness is represented in similar terms, "Wherefore is light given to him that is in misery, and life unto the bitter of soul, which long for death, but it comes not, and dig for it more than hid treasures?" The language of the Patriarch of Arabia appropriately describes the sufferings of Arabian Christians under the rule of the Arabian false Prophet and his Saracenic followers.

The question concerning the meaning of the five months, during which these Locusts are described as hurting men (v. 10), will be considered hereafter in a general note on the times and numbers in the Apocalypse, at the end of chap. xi.

In the mean time, it may be observed that natural Locusts have that time (viz. five months) appointed to them; their power of hurting extends from April to September, when they are rendered torpid by the cold. *Bochart*, Hierozoic. pars post. iv. c. 8, p. 495. Cp. *Eichhorn*, *Ewald*, *De Wette*.

And the moral of this sentence is, that, as natural locusts have their season of five months prescribed and limited by God, so these spiritual locusts will not be able to exercise their power of injuring men beyond the period which is determined by Him; and thus it will be seen and acknowledged, that the wonderful conquests of the Saracenic and Turkish armies were not achieved by their own inherent strength and energy, but by the Divine Permission, and for the execution of Divine Judgments.

It may perhaps be asked by some, in reference to this exposition;

How can it be said that Mohammedanism did not hurt any thing save only those men who had not the seal of God on their foreheads? Did not Mohammedanism hurt some faithful Christians, who had the Seal of God on their foreheads?

The answer to this question is supplied by other parts of Holy Scripture.

They who hurt are compared here to scorpions: their power is called ἐξουσία, authority, permission, from God (cp. Rom. xiii. 1-3), and the word used here for to hurt is ἀδικεῖν (vv. 3, 4). Also, the word here used for "it was commanded" is ἐπρέθη; and this word, used about twenty-five times in the New Testament, is always predicated of God. It was God therefore Who restrained these scorpions from hurting (ἀδικεῖν) any "who have His Seal on their foreheads."

Let us now refer to the words of our Blessed Lord to His disciples, as recorded by St. Luke, x. 18, "I was beholding Satan falling as lightning from heaven." Compare the star fallen from heaven here (v. 1). Our Lord then says, "Behold, I give you the power" (τὴν ἐξουσίαν, authority, the same word as here), "to tread upon" (ἐπάνω, over, and upon) "serpents and scorpions, and upon all the power" (δύναμιν, physical force, distinguished from ἐξουσία) "of the Enemy; and nothing shall in any wise hurt you" (ὅμᾶς οὐ μὴ ἀδικήσῃ, the same word as here).

Therefore, whatever injuries might be inflicted by those scorpion-like Locusts upon the dwellers on the earth who have not the seal of God on their foreheads, the Locusts would be

αὐτῶν βασιλέα τὸν ἄγγελον τῆς ἀβύσσου, ὄνομα αὐτῷ Ἑβραϊστὶ Ἀβαδδὼν, καὶ ἐν τῇ Ἑλληνικῇ ὄνομα ἔχει Ἀπολλύων.

g ch. 8. 13.

¹² g Ἡ οὐαὶ ἡ μία ἀπῆλθεν· ἰδοὺ, ἔρχονται ἔτι δύο οὐαὶ μετὰ ταῦτα.

h ch. 7. 1.

¹³ Καὶ ὁ ἕκτος ἄγγελος ἐσάλπισε· καὶ ἤκουσα φωνὴν μίαν ἐκ τῶν τεσσάρων κεράτων τοῦ θυσιαστηρίου τοῦ χρυσοῦ τοῦ ἐνώπιον τοῦ Θεοῦ ¹⁴ h λέγοντα τῷ ἔκτῳ ἀγγέλῳ, Ὁ ἔχων τὴν σάλπιγγα, λῦσον τοὺς τέσσαρας ἀγγέλους τοὺς δεδεμένους ἐπὶ τῷ ποταμῷ τῷ μεγάλῳ Εὐφράτῃ. ¹⁵ Καὶ ἐλύθησαν οἱ τέσσαρες ἄγγελοι οἱ ἡτοιμασμένοι εἰς τὴν ὥραν καὶ ἡμέραν καὶ μῆνα καὶ ἑνιαυτὸν, ἵνα ἀποκτείνωσι τὸ τρίτον τῶν ἀνθρώπων. ¹⁶ i Καὶ ὁ ἀριθμὸς τῶν στρατευμάτων τοῦ ἵππικοῦ δύο μυριάδες μυριάδων· ἤκουσα τὸν ἀριθμὸν αὐτῶν. ¹⁷ k Καὶ οὕτως εἶδον τοὺς ἵππους ἐν τῇ ὁράσει, καὶ τοὺς καθημένους ἐπ' αὐτῶν, ἔχοντας θώρακας πυρίνους καὶ ὑακινθίνους καὶ θειώδεις· καὶ αἱ κεφαλαὶ τῶν ἵππων ὡς κεφαλαὶ λεόντων· καὶ ἐκ τῶν στομάτων αὐτῶν ἐκπορεύεται πῦρ καὶ καπνὸς καὶ θεῖον. ¹⁸ Ἀπὸ τῶν τριῶν πληγῶν τούτων ἀπεκτάνθησαν τὸ τρίτον τῶν ἀνθρώπων, ἐκ

i Ps. 68. 17.
Dan. 7. 10.
k Isa. 5. 28, 29.
l Chron. 12. 8.

subject to His rule, and be restrained by His control, and they would not be able to hurt (*ἀδικεῖν*) any of His faithful servants, the true members of Christ, "Who has bruised the head of the *Serpent*" (Gen. iii. 15), and Who would bruise Satan under their feet (Rom. xvi. 20), and Who has assured His disciples of every age that they would have the power—the authority—(*τὴν ἐξουσίαν*) "to tread upon serpents and *scorpions*, and upon all the power of the enemy." Whatever might happen in this world to their perishable bodies, their sufferings would redound to their greater glory (Rom. viii. 18. 2 Cor. iv. 17. 1 Pet. i. 6, 7; iv. 13), and they "would be more than conquerors through our Lord Jesus Christ" (Rom. viii. 35—37. 1 Cor. xv. 57), "For the eyes of the Lord are over the righteous, and His ears are open unto their prayers, but the face of the Lord is against them that do evil. And who is he that will harm you if ye be followers of Him that is good (*τοῦ ἀγαθοῦ μιμηταί*)? But and if ye suffer for righteousness' sake, happy are ye, and be ye not afraid of their terror, neither be ye troubled, but sanctify the Lord God in your hearts" (1 Pet. iii. 12—15).

The following historical, doctrinal, moral, and practical inferences may be deduced from the vision of the Fifth Trumpet.

(1) Mohammedanism is not to be regarded as a *true religion*; but as an emanation from the bottomless pit, the abode of the Evil One.

(2) Mohammedanism was *permitted* by God to come forth from the abyss to scourge mankind for *corrupting* the *true Faith* and *Worship*, and for their manifold schisms and divisions, and for their want of zeal and earnestness in maintaining and propagating the Truth.

(3) Heresy and Schism, Superstition and Idolatry, are great evils, not only in themselves, but in their consequences. The fallen Star unsealed the Pit, and the Pit sent forth the smoke, and the smoke sent forth the Locusts. Arianism introduced Islamism. The schisms of Christendom made it a prey to the sword of the False Prophet. Superstition and Idolatry gave an easy triumph to the armies of him who proclaimed as his watchword, "There is One God." God Himself pointed out the sins of Christians by the punishment which He inflicted upon them. He *adapted* their *punishment* to their *sins*; and thus called them to *repentance*. They had despised the love of the True Prophet, revealing Himself as *God*, and they were chastised by the cruelty of the False Prophet. They were distracted by feuds; and they were made to bow their neck to the yoke of a Power which would have forced them all into unity. By the worship of the *creature* they had almost fallen into *Polytheism*, and they were chastised by him who proclaimed himself the restorer of *Monotheism*.

(4) The spirit of comparative forbearance, which in some respects characterized Mohammedanism, was not due to any moderation in its author; for the Locusts are described as under the rule of him who is called the *Destroyer* (v. 11); but solely to the *restraining* power and mercy of *Almighty God*.

(5) Mohammedanism itself, with its rapid and extensive conquests, not having in it the sinful and debasing elements of Idolatry, may be regarded as having served as a barrier against the incursions of Pagan Idolatry from without, and as a safeguard against the corruptions of Superstition *within* the Church; especially in the East; and thus, in a certain sense, may be recognized as subservient to God, in preserving Christendom from even a worse evil. It had the effect of stimulating the courage, and

of reviving the faith of many; and perhaps the condition of Christianity in Asia, Africa, and Greece, might have been far more miserable than it was, if the Christians had not been awakened from their slumber, and excited by their trials to put forth new energy, and to flee with fervent devotion to God as their only refuge in adversity.

(6) Whatever woes may be inflicted on the world under the tyranny of Mohammedanism, or of any other false religion, yet the true servants of God, who *have His seal on their foreheads*, are safe from harm.

They have "authority from Him to tread upon serpents and scorpions and on all the power of the enemy, and nothing will in any wise hurt them."

Therefore the True Faith is to be held fast as the Christian's armour, and as a safeguard in all the perils of his pilgrimage through this transitory world to his heavenly rest.

(7) The sway of Mohammedanism is not only limited by God in *degree*, but in *time*; its power is to *hurt the men* (i. e. the careless and faithless, and not the true Christian, v. 4) for an *appointed season*, called in the prophecy *five months*. Then its power will fall, perhaps as rapidly as it rose. Here is another proof of its *earthly* origin. Islamism has its "*five months*," but the Gospel of Christ is *everlasting* (Rev. xiv. 6). The Locusts have a King over them, the *Destroyer*, and he goeth to destruction. But Christ is King of Kings, and Lord of Lords, and His Kingdom will have no end (xvii. 14; xix. 16).

11. αὐτῶν βασιλέα] N has αὐτῶν τὸν βασιλέα and φ ὄνομα αὐτῷ.

12. ἡ οὐαὶ] The first woe is past; behold, there come two woes more after these things.

THE SIXTH TRUMPET.

13. καὶ ὁ ἕκτος] And the sixth Angel sounded, and I heard a voice from the four horns of the golden altar before God,

14.] saying to the sixth Angel, who had the trumpet, Loose the four Angels which have been bound at that great river, Euphrates.

15.] And the four Angels were loosed, which had been prepared for the hour, and day, and month, and year, for to slay the third part of men.

16.] And the number of the army of the horsemen were two myriads of myriads; I heard the number of them.

17.] And thus I saw the horses in the vision, and them that sat on them, having breastplates of fire, and of jacinth, and brimstone: and the heads of the horses are as the heads of lions: and out of their mouths issueth fire and smoke and brimstone.

18.] By these three plagues was the third part of men killed, by the fire, and by the smoke, and by the brimstone, which issueth out of their mouths.

19.] For their power is in their mouth, and in their tails; for their tails are like unto serpents, and have heads, and with them they do hurt.

In v. 12 A and N have ἔρχεται, and B has οὐαὶ καὶ μετὰ ταῦτα. In v. 13 N omits μίαν ἐ. τ. τ. κεράτων. A omits τεσσάρων. In v. 14 B has λέγοντος, but A has λέγοντα, and A, B have ὁ ἔχων. Elz. has ὁς εἶχε. In v. 18 A, B, C have πληγῶν, which is omitted by Elz. In v. 19 B, C have ἡ γὰρ ἐξουσία τῶν ἵππων (A has τόπων). Elz. has αἱ γὰρ ἐξουσίαι αὐτῶν. Instead of ἔχουσαι N has ἐχούσας, perhaps for ἐχούσαις. In v. 20 Elz. omits the article τὰ (which is in A, B, C) before εἶδωλα.

τοῦ πυρὸς καὶ τοῦ καπνοῦ καὶ τοῦ θείου τοῦ ἐκπορευομένου ἐκ τῶν στομάτων αὐτῶν·¹⁹ ἡ γὰρ ἐξουσία αὐτῶν ἐν τῷ στόματι αὐτῶν ἐστὶ, καὶ ἐν ταῖς οὐραῖς

In order to understand this Vision, it must be borne in mind that the design of the *Trumpets* is not to represent the doings or sufferings of the *good*, nor the *sins* of the *wicked*, but the *punishments* inflicted upon the wicked for their sins.

Next it must be observed that the Vision of this Trumpet, the Sixth, stands in remarkable contrast, in *some* respects, with that of the preceding or Fifth Trumpet. The *Woe* represented by the *fifth* Trumpet proceeded from the *pit of the abyss*, opened by a *Star* that had *fallen* from heaven. That *Woe* was produced by a power which had *fallen from God*.

But here, in the Sixth Trumpet, the agency which becomes a *Woe*, is represented as proceeding from *God*.

The signal which sets it in operation is not, as there, from *below*, and from the *Evil One*, but it is from *above*, even from the presence of *God Himself*. *I heard a voice from the four horns of the golden altar before God, saying to the Angel, who had the Trumpet, Loose the four Angels that have been bound.*

The Loosing of the Four Angels is, therefore, a *divine act*.

Next, the Four Angels, which are here loosed, are *Angels of God*.

The word *Angels* is of very frequent occurrence in the *Apocalypse*; but in no instance, when thus placed absolutely, as here, does it signify an *evil Angel*.

The number *four*, as used in this Book, indicates *Universality*, which appertains to Him in Whose Hand are the *four corners* of the *Earth* (see chap. xi. at the end). And these *four Angels* in the *Sixth Trumpet*, which are His agents in punishment, may be compared to those *Four Angels* in the *Sixth Seal* (vii. 1, 2), who stand at the *four corners* of the *Earth*, to whom it is given to *hurt* (ἀδικῆσαι, vii. 2, 3, the same word as is used here in vv. 10, and 19) *the Earth and the Sea*.

Besides, the number assigned to the Army here displayed, is *two Myriads of Myriads*; and this is an immense number, far exceeding any *human force*.

The number *Myriads of Myriads* had already been used in this Book to describe the number of *Angels about the throne of God* (see v. 11). And Daniel uses the same number in speaking of *God's Angels* (Dan. vii. 10), and St. Jude speaks of the *Lord* coming with *myriads* of His Holy Angels (Jude 14. Cp. Heb. xii. 22). And the number of *God's Angels* in Ps. lxxviii. 17, when literally translated, is precisely the same as here.

Again, the *colour* of their breastplates serves also to mark these armies as belonging to *God*.

No one will despise inferences from *colours* as well as from *numbers*, who has carefully considered their use in the *Levitical Ritual*; which is, as it were, an *Ante-Chapel* to the inner shrine of the *Apocalypse*.

This colour *jacinth* appears as a *sacred colour* in the *Levitical Dispensation*, where the word *jacinth* is used by the *LXX*, in the description of the curtains and ornaments of the *Tabernacle* (Exod. xxv. 5; xxvi. 14; xxxv. 7. 23; xxxvi. 19; xxxix. 34), and the holy garments of the *High Priest* (Exod. xxviii. 5—8), and the breastplate and the *Ephod* (xxviii. 15. 28, 29. 33), and the *Veil of the Holy of Holies* (xxxvi. 35; xxxviii. 18: cp. 2 Chron. iii. 14), and the covering of the *Ark* (Numb. iv. 6), and of the *Table of Shewbread* (iv. 8), and of the *Golden Candlestick*, and of the *vessels of the Holy Place*, and of the *Golden Altar of Incense* (iv. 9—13). Compare the remarks of *Bahr*, *Symbolik*, i. 303, and 325, where he shows that *jacinth* (dark blue) was set apart under the *Levitical Law* as a *sacred colour*. The deep blue of the *Sky*, and of the *Sea*, in which *God's* majesty and glory are conspicuous, are like natural exponents of this symbolical consecration.

The word *βακίθινος* (of *jacinth*, or *deep blue*), as well as *λευκός*, *white*, in the *Apocalypse*, indicates a *sacred colour*. It adorns the livery of *God's* servants, and the uniform of His soldiers. One of the precious stones of the *Twelve Apostolic Foundations* of the heavenly *Jerusalem* in the *Apocalypse* is *jacinth* (xxi. 20).

The heads of the horses in this *Apocalyptic Vision* are described as like heads of *Lions* (v. 17). Already the first of the *heavenly Living Creatures* had been described as like a *Lion* (iv. 7), and in two places of the *Apocalypse* *Christ Himself*, in His royal and prophetic office, is described as a *Lion* (above, Rev. v. 5; below, x. 3).

Besides, the purpose for which these Angels are loosed, and this Army is sent forth, is a *holy one*.

It is, in order that *men should repent*; and it is said, as it were, with indignant surprise, that the men who were not killed by this visitation *did not repent* of the works of their own hands (v. 20).

VOL. II.—PART IV.

This then seems to be clear, that these Angels are *Angels of God*; that this army is *an army of God*; and that it is set in motion by a command of *God*, and with a design worthy of *God*.

But it may be said, Are there not other circumstances in this Vision which are at variance with this divine character?

(1) The Angels are said to *kill* (ἀποκτείνειν) the third part of men, v. 15.

True, but precisely the same thing is said of the agency of the *Two Witnesses*, mentioned in the eleventh chapter, who are clearly sent by *God*, and are called *His Witnesses* (xi. 3), and are received up to Him in triumph and glory (xi. 12); and the same word is used in the description of the punishment inflicted on those who reject them. If any one wills to hurt them he must be *killed* (ἀποκτανθῆναι, v. 5), and the consequences of their triumph are, that 7000 men were *killed* (ἀπεκτάνθησαν).

The attention of the reader is specially invited to *that Vision* of the *Two Witnesses* (xi. 3—14), which seems, when carefully examined, to leave no room for doubt as to the true interpretation of *this Vision* of the *Four Angels*. Indeed, *both* these *Visions* are designated by the *same name*: both represent "*the Second Woe*." See ix. 12, and xi. 14.

Further, the same action of *killing* is predicated in the *Apocalypse* of *Christ Himself*. He describes Himself as *killing* the children of the *False Teacher* with death (ii. 23). And we read, that "the rest of the men (who are arrayed against Him) were *killed by the sword of Him Who sitteth on the Horse; by the sword that proceedeth out of His mouth*" (xix. 21).

Indeed, all these sayings are repetitions of what He Himself declares in the *Gospel*, "Those *mine enemies*, which would not that I should reign over them, bring hither, and *slay* them before Me" (Luke xix. 27).

(2) Again, it may be objected, that an army of *God* could not be described under such a figure as this; "out of their mouths *issueth fire and smoke and brimstone*"; by these *three* plagues was the third part of men killed, by the *fire* and by the *smoke* and the *brimstone*, which *issueth out of their mouths*" (vv. 17, 18).

But here again it may be observed, that precisely the same thing is predicated of the *Two Witnesses of God*, in the next chapter. "If any man willet to hurt them, *fire issueth out of their mouth*, and *devoureth their enemies*; and if any man willet to hurt them, he must in this manner be *killed*; these have power over the waters to turn them to blood, and to *smite* the earth, as often as they will, with *all plagues*" (xi. 5, 6).

It may be also remembered, that, in the *Hebrew Prophets*, smoke and fire are represented as coming forth from *God's* countenance (as in Ps. xviii. 8), to consume His foes. And it is predicted of *God's* enemies in this book, that they shall be tormented with *fire and brimstone* in the presence of the *Holy Angels*, and in the presence of the *Lamb* (xiv. 10; cp. xix. 11). Thus *Fire and Brimstone* are represented as instruments of the wrath of the *Lamb* (see above, vi. 16), the *Meek and Holy One* Himself, Who shed His blood to take away the sins of the world, and Who is infinite in mercy to those who love and obey Him; but to those who despise and resist Him our God is a "*consuming Fire*" (Heb. xii. 29).

The *Trumpets* represent *God's* wrath and indignation against His *enemies*; and the execution of His retributive *Judgments* upon them for their abuse of His mercies, and contempt of His Majesty, and violation of His *Law*.

No wonder, therefore, that the elements of *Hell* itself should be represented as weapons of His Justice, and as His "*instruments of death*" (Ps. vii. 13) against the rebellious. Cp. Isa. xxx. 33.

(3) It may also be objected that an army sent by *God* could not be compared to *horses* "whose power is in their mouth, and in their tails; for their *tails* are like *serpents*, and they have heads, with which they hurt" (v. 19).

To this it may be replied, that *God's* dispensations in this world, and His messages to it, are likened, by *Hebrew Prophets*, to an *army of horsemen*, especially in His judicial retributions on *Egypt*, the *Enemy of His People*. "Thou didst ride, O Lord, upon *Thine horses* and Thy Chariots of *Salvation*. Thy bow was made naked, even Thy Word; Thou didst walk through the sea with *Thine horses*; through the heap of great waters" (Hab. iii. 8, 9. 15).

In the *Apocalypse* *Christ* is represented as a *Warrior* riding on a *Horse*, and His armies follow Him on horses, and His enemies are *killed* by the *sword* of Him Who rideth on the *Horse* (xix. 11. 19. 21), and the blood of the winepress of His wrath cometh up to the bridles of the *Horses* (xiv. 20).

E E

αὐτῶν αἱ γὰρ οὐραὶ αὐτῶν ὅμοιαι ὄφεσιν, ἔχουσai κεφαλὰς, καὶ ἐν αὐταῖς ἀδικοῦσι.

Next, as to the imagery of the *Serpents*, we may refer again to the circumstances of the *Exodus*, which are *perpetually recurring in the Apocalypse*, especially in the Visions of the Trumpets. The very badge of office of the Hebrew Legislator, the instrument by which Moses wrought his miracles, by which God punished His enemies and delivered His people, was changed into a *serpent*. (Exod. iv. 2, 4, LXX.)

This was its first appearance. And it is added, "*Moses fled from before it*." (Exod. iv. 3.) But God commanded him to take hold of it by its *tail*, in which is the serpent's sting; and which is noted in this Apocalyptic Vision as noxious to God's enemies (v. 19); "and Moses put forth his hand, and caught it, and it became a *rod in his hand*" (v. 4). Thus it was shown that God's faithful servants (Heb. iii. 2—5) can take hold of and handle that which is destructive to His adversaries, and that they can work wonders with it. This was a very significant emblem of Holy Scripture, the first books of which were written by him who bore the *rod of power*, which became a *serpent*. In the Septuagint Version of the same chapter (iv. 17), we read that God said to Moses, Thou shalt take into thine hand this *rod*, which *has been changed into a serpent* (τὴν στραφεῖσαν εἰς ὄφιν), and with it thou shalt do signs . . . And Moses returned into the land of *Egypt*, and took the *rod of God* in his hand (iv. 20; see viii. 5, 16; x. 13; xiv. 16).

When Moses and his brother Aaron came before Pharaoh, in order to show that the power was not in *Moses himself*, but from God, Aaron was commanded to take the rod, and to cast it before Pharaoh and his magicians; and the rod of God became a *serpent*; and after a trial, in which God allowed the magicians to exercise some supernatural power, for they cast down their rods and they became *serpents*, Aaron's rod *swallowed up their rods* (vii. 10—12).

Again, in the wilderness, a *serpent of brass*, by God's command, was made the instrument of *health* to the *faithful* Israelites, who were cured by it from the bite of the serpents of fire, by which He punished the wicked for unbelief. (Numb. xxi. 6, 9. 1 Cor. x. 9.) And this serpent of brass was a figure of Christ,—the Saviour of all who believe, the Healer of the wounds inflicted by the bite of the *old serpent of Fire*. (See notes on John iii. 14, 15. Gal. iii. 13.)

Therefore, we arrive at the conclusion, that the Army in this Apocalyptic Vision is an Army of God.

The question now arises, What agents of God are specially represented in this Vision?

In answer to this inquiry, let us observe, that—

The cause of the *punishment* is intimated in the words, "Loose the four Angels that *have been bound at the river Euphrates*."

Some Expositors understand by these Angels and their host, some great *earthly* powers,—Turkish, Saracenic, Oriental,—and suppose that they will come forth from the *literal river Euphrates*.

But this opinion is untenable. The Euphrates is the river of Babylon; and Babylon in the Apocalypse is *always* used in a *figurative* sense: it designates the *Great City*, concerning which more will be said hereafter. We cannot therefore concur with those Interpreters, who, while they understand Babylon in a *typical* sense, interpret the *river* of Babylon in a *literal* sense. If Babylon is figurative (as doubtless is the case), *Euphrates*, the *river of Babylon*, must be *figurative* also.

What City is typified by Babylon will be considered hereafter.

The *Four Angels of God* are represented here as having been *bound* by an evil power in the mystical Babylon. They are *bound* as Christ was *bound*; and He was sent bound (δεδεμένος, the same word as here; see on John xviii. 24) to Caiaphas and Pilate. (Mark xv. 1.) Here again is another resemblance to what is represented in the next chapter as done to God's *Two Witnesses*. They are represented as in a worse state than bound—even *killed*, as Christ also was *killed*; killed in "*that great City*," namely, the mystical Babylon. (See note on xi. 8.)

The Divine Angels are now loosed; their number is *four*, signifying the *universality* of their commission.

They are said to be prepared for the *hour* and *day*. Observe the definite article here (v. 15).

This is one of the passages, in which great mistakes have been made and propagated, from want of attention to the original. Even a chronological period has been deduced from this passage, understood to mean *an hour, a day, a month, and a year*; and

on the *hypothesis* that a prophetic *day* is equivalent to a *year*, that period has been imagined to be 391 years.

But the hour can be no other than the *hour* of God's judgment, as it is explained hereafter in chap. xiv. 15; cp. xi. 13. The *day* can be no other than the *great Day* of His wrath (xvi. 14; cp. vi. 17). "*The Day*," says St. Paul (1 Cor. iii. 13), "shall make it manifest," i. e. the *great Day*. The month and the year are the Month and Year of God's Vengeance on the wicked. See Isa. xxxiv. 8; lxi. 2. Jer. li. 6. Cp. Hos. v. 7. Zech. xi. 8.

This is elucidated by what our Blessed Lord Himself says, "He that rejecteth Me, and receiveth not My words, hath One that judgeth him—the *Word* that I have spoken, *that* shall judge him in the *Last Day*" (John xii. 48).

The Four Angels represent the Divine Word; and there is a propriety in the number *Four* in that respect also, inasmuch as the Divine Word is summed up in the *Fourfold Gospel*. The fourfold *Evangelium* is preached by the *Four Angels*.

At the awful Day of Doom the power of *God's Word* will be felt and recognized by all. *That Word* is prepared for "*The Day*," to be the rule and standard by which every sentence pronounced at that great Day of Assize will be determined, and according to which all to whom it has been preached will be judged at that Day.

On the whole, we may conclude that this Vision represents the diffusion of the Fourfold Gospel to the four quarters of the Earth. It predicted that the Word of God would be *bound*. This prophecy has been fulfilled. God's Word *has been bound*. It was bound for a long time; it was not read to the people; it was chained in the fetters of a dead language; and so it remained, as it were, in prison for many centuries. And even to this day, in many countries, the Word of God is bound by some who profess themselves to be Chief Rulers in the Church of God.

The Ancient Expositors of the Apocalypse had not the benefit of the light which has been thrown on this prophecy by *events*, such as they could never have anticipated. They had not seen the *binding of the four Angels*, and their subsequent *release* in later days. They had not seen the *Holy Scriptures chained and imprisoned*, and afterwards let loose by God. And yet even some of the Ancient Interpreters of the Apocalypse concluded, from the tenor of this prophecy, that the *Angels* here mentioned must be *Messengers of God*. Thus *Arethas* and *Ecumenius*.

This Vision has revealed also the result which we have seen, and now see. It foretold that the Holy Scriptures, though *bound as captives* for a time, would be *loosed* by the command of God, and that they would traverse the world like an innumerable Army. And although they are God's army, and therefore are divine, and ministers of salvation to many, yet the Vision has declared that the Holy Scriptures would be like instruments of punishment and death to the enemies of God.

Therefore this Vision inculcates an important religious and moral truth. It reminds us that the present *diffusion of the Holy Scriptures* may be a terrible *Woe*. The Scriptures are not to be regarded simply as a blessing to those who receive and obey them; and a blank and cipher to those who reject or slight them. No. Scripture is like the rod in the hand of Moses. It is a rod by which the hand of Faith works miracles for God's people; and it is a serpent to destroy His enemies. It is either Life or Death. It either saves or kills. As Christ was set for the fall of some, and the rising of others (Luke ii. 34), and is a precious stone to many (Isa. xxviii. 16), and the head-stone of the corner (Matt. xxi. 42), but whosoever shall fall on this stone shall be broken, and on whomsoever it shall fall, it will grind him to powder (Matt. xxi. 44. Luke xx. 18. Cp. 1 Pet. ii. 7, 8), so it is with His *Word*; "it is a savour of Life unto Life" to those who receive it, but "of Death unto Death" to those who disobey or despise it (2 Cor. ii. 15, 16).

The Flood, which was a type of *Baptism* (see on 1 Pet. iii. 21), saved Noah and his family; but it *destroyed* the unbelieving. The other Sacrament brings life to those who receive it aright; but they who do not discern the Lord's body, eat and drink condemnation to themselves (1 Cor. xi. 29).

So it is with all God's gifts to men. They have all a double edge. Especially is this the case with Holy Scripture. It is a *Woe* to the wicked. And this is what the present Trumpet declares.

Our Lord Himself authorizes and confirms this interpretation of the Vision now before us.

He describes His own Presence as a *Woe* to some. "*Woe*

20¹ Καὶ οἱ λοιποὶ τῶν ἀνθρώπων, οἳ οὐκ ἀπεκτάνθησαν ἐν ταῖς πληγαῖς ταύταις, οὐ μετενόησαν ἐκ τῶν ἔργων τῶν χειρῶν αὐτῶν, ἵνα μὴ προσκυνήσουσι τὰ δαιμόνια, καὶ τὰ εἰδῶλα τὰ χρυσᾶ καὶ τὰ ἀργυρᾶ καὶ τὰ χαλκᾶ, καὶ τὰ λίθινα καὶ τὰ ξύλινα, ἃ οὔτε βλέπειν δύναται, οὔτε ἀκούειν, οὔτε περιπατεῖν·
21 καὶ οὐ μετενόησαν ἐκ τῶν φόνων αὐτῶν, οὔτε ἐκ τῶν φαρμακειῶν αὐτῶν, οὔτε ἐκ τῆς πορνείας αὐτῶν, οὔτε ἐκ τῶν κλεμμάτων αὐτῶν.

X. 1^a Καὶ εἶδον ἄλλον ἄγγελον ἰσχυρὸν καταβαίνοντα ἐκ τοῦ οὐρανοῦ, περιβεβλημένον νεφέλην, καὶ ἡ ἱρις ἐπὶ τὴν κεφαλὴν αὐτοῦ, καὶ τὸ πρόσωπον αὐτοῦ ὡς ὁ ἥλιος, καὶ οἱ πόδες αὐτοῦ ὡς στῦλοι πυρὸς, 2^b καὶ ἔχων ἐν τῇ χειρὶ αὐτοῦ βιβλαρίδιον ἀνεωγμένον· καὶ ἔθηκε τὸν πόδα αὐτοῦ τὸν δεξιὸν ἐπὶ τῆς θαλάσσης, τὸν δὲ εὐώνυμον ἐπὶ τῆς γῆς· 3 καὶ ἔκραξε φωνῇ μεγάλῃ ὥσπερ λέων μυκάται, καὶ ὅτε ἔκραξεν, ἐλάλησαν αἱ ἑπτὰ βρονταὶ τὰς ἑαυτῶν φωνάς· 4^c καὶ

unto thee, Chorazin, Woe unto thee, Bethsaida; for if the mighty works which were done in thee had been done in Tyre and Sidon, they would have repented long ago in sackcloth and ashes" (Matt. xi. 20, 21). Compare what is said here, v. 20, "they repented not of their works."

"If I had not come and spoken unto them they had not had sin, but now they have no cloke for their sin" (John xv. 22).

In v. 18, the four Angels are said to smite the world with plagues (πληγαῖς). And precisely the same thing is said to be done by God's Two Witnesses; "They smite the Earth with every plague as oft as they will," below, xi. 6; and Christ says of Himself, "O Death, I will be thy plagues," Hos. xiii. 14.

Men and Nations may despise Scripture, and defy its warnings, and break its commandments; and, in the language of this Vision, they may be destroyed by the fire and smoke and sulphur which issue from the mouth of God's host; they may be made desolate by War, Plague, and Famine, which are His Ministers, executing His righteous judgments on mankind for their disobedience to His Word; and yet they may not be conscious of the cause of their sufferings—for this very reason, because they do not revere His Word in which that cause is revealed.

The Holy Scriptures which were bound as captives for many generations have now been set free. Thus the four Angels have been loosed, which were bound at the river Euphrates.

The Word of God has been translated into all languages. Thus the Angels have been loosed. By the aid of Printing, copies of the Scriptures have been multiplied innumerable. Thus, also, the Angels have been loosed. The Scriptures, in swiftness and strength, like an innumerable Army of Horsemen, are now sweeping over the world. Their sound is gone forth into all lands, and their words unto the ends of the world (Ps. xix. 4). These are the Chariots of God's Power. This is His Host. Christ, the Word of God, is with them, and leads them on to Victory.

And let us be sure that this Propagation of the Gospel is, to those who disregard and disobey it, a terrible Woe.

Therefore, well might the Sixth Angel take up the trumpet, and sound, Woe to the World. Woe to the World because of offences. Woe to the World, for its neglect of the Gospel. Let us hear the heavenly blast now sounding in our ears. Some nations have set at nought, in their Laws, the clearest precepts of the Gospel. Many of the wise of this world deny its Inspiration. Others are overwhelmed with the cares of this world; others live in the pleasures of sin, and the lusts of the flesh, as if the Scriptures did not exist. Even Churches have bound the Angels, and killed the Witnesses. And yet the Gospel is the Voice of God. The Word of God is the Army of God. Alas! for all who despise it. Woe to all who reject it. Plagues, Pestilences, Famines, Wars are the penalties on mankind for their contempt of it in this world; and in the world to come,—the Second Death.

20. καὶ οἱ λοιποὶ] And the rest of the men which were not killed by these plagues yet repented not of the works of their hands, that they should not worship their devils, and their idols of gold, and silver, and brass, and stone, and of wood: which neither can see, nor hear, nor walk: Neither repented they of their murders, nor of their poisonings, nor of their fornication, nor of their thefts.

In v. 20 A, B, C have τὰ (which is omitted by Elz.) before εἰδῶλα; and the articles here are important, as showing that men did not desist from worshipping the evil spirits, and the idols which they had been wont to worship, their idols: intimating

therefore the sins of mankind before this Trumpet, and the still greater sins after it; and the punishments that might be expected as their consequences.

It is here declared, that idolatry is worship of devils, δαιμόνια; and this is the doctrine of St. Paul (see 1 Cor. x. 20) and of the Holy Spirit in the Old Testament (see Deut. xxxii. 17). Concerning the teaching of devils, see 1 Tim. iv. 1.

These passages reveal the hidden working of Satan and his associates in the world.

The rest of the language concerning idols is similar to that of Ps. cvi. 37, and cxiii. 5, 7, in the LXX.

The order of sins here recited is that in which they are recited in Holy Scripture in the Decalogue; first sins against God, Idolatry; then Murder, against the Sixth Commandment; then Fornication, against the Seventh; then those against the Eighth. This confirms the exposition just offered,—of the Vision of the Sixth Trumpet.

The word φαρμακεία—literally the use of φάρμακα, drugs—and its cognate terms, are used in the Old Testament by the LXX to describe the magical arts of the Egyptian sorcerers (Exod. vii. 22; viii. 18), and the witchcraft of Jezebel (2 Kings ix. 22), and of Babylon (Isa. xlvii. 9, 12. Dan. ii. 2. Cp. Deut. xviii. 10. Mal. iii. 5).

The scientific discoveries of modern times, and the great facilities afforded to the use of φάρμακα in slow poisons, or in other silent, insidious, and almost inscrutable processes, give a peculiar significance to these words in the Apocalypse, where they occur oftener than in the rest of the New Testament, and may serve to show the prescience of its Divine Author, and its applicability to the later ages of the world.

The word φαρμακεία—the use of φάρμακα, or drugs—is here appropriately placed between φόνοι, murders, and πορνεία, fornication; φαρμακεῖς are placed between πόρνοι, fornicators, and εἰδωλολάτραι, idolaters, in xxi. 8; and φαρμακοὶ are joined with πόρνοι, fornicators, and φονεῖς, murderers, in xxii. 15. φαρμακεία is placed between εἰδωλολατρεία, idolatry, and ἔχθραι, strifes, by St. Paul, in Gal. v. 19.

One of the uses of poisons which seems to be specially noted in Holy Scripture, and which appears to have suggested the combination of this word with the word πορνεία, is the use made of φάρμακα in producing abortion; see on 1 Tim. v. 14, and Suicer, Thes. v. φάρμακον, where it is observed that Fornication leads to the use of drugs (φάρμακα) in causing Abortion and Infanticide. The word φαρμακεία also signifies tampering with the health of others, or one's own, by means of drugs, φάρμακα, potions, philtres, often connected with magical arts and incantations, and with a view to sins of unholiness, both of bodily and spiritual fornication.

The Vision of the Sixth Trumpet,—when understood according to the interpretation just given,—prepares the way for what follows; and therefore the Vision now ensuing affords a confirmation of that exposition of the Sixth Trumpet.

THE LITTLE BOOK, OR ROLL.

CH. X. 1. καὶ εἶδον] And I saw another mighty Angel coming down from heaven, clothed with a cloud: and the Rainbow upon his head, and his face as it were the Sun, and his feet as pillars of fire:

2.] And having in his hand a little Roll that had been opened and he set his right foot upon the sea, and his left on the earth,

3.] And he cried with a loud voice, as a Lion roareth: and when he cried, the seven thunders spake their voices.

E E 2

ὅτε ἐλάλησαν αἱ ἑπτὰ βρονταὶ ἡμελλον γράφειν καὶ ἤκουσα φωνὴν ἐκ τοῦ οὐρανοῦ λέγουσαν, Σφράγισον ἃ ἐλάλησαν αἱ ἑπτὰ βρονταὶ, καὶ μὴ αὐτὰ γράψῃς.

4.] And when the seven thunders had spoken, I was about to write: and I heard a voice from heaven saying unto me, Seal those things which the seven thunders spake, and write them not.

5.] And the Angel which I saw stand upon the sea and upon the earth lifted up his right hand to heaven,

6.] And swore by Him that liveth for ever and ever, who created heaven, and the things that therein are, and the earth, and the things that therein are, and the sea, and the things which are therein, that there shall be no delay,

7.] except in the days of the voice of the seventh angel, when he shall be about to sound, and the mystery of God was finished, as he preached as glad tidings to his servants the prophets.

8.] And the voice which I heard from heaven spake unto me again, and said, Go take the little Roll which has been opened in the hand of the Angel which standeth upon the sea and upon the earth.

9.] And I went unto the Angel and said unto him, Give me the little Roll. And he saith unto me, Take it, and eat it up: and it will make thy belly bitter, but in thy mouth it will be sweet as honey.

10.] And I took the little Roll out of the Angel's hand, and ate it up: and it was in my mouth sweet as honey: and as soon as I had eaten it, my belly was made bitter.

11.] And he saith unto me, Thou must prophesy again upon many peoples, and nations, and tongues, and kings.

In v. 1, observe ἡ ἵρις, the Rainbow, the reading in A, B, C. In N there is a strange reading, θρίξ. Elz. omits the article. The Rainbow is an attribute of the Divine Majesty as already represented in a former vision (iv. 3), and it is here like a halo round the head of the Angel, and marks him to be no other than CHRIST. "The Cloud" also in which He is clothed bespeaks this (see Acts i. 9. Rev. i. 7; xi. 12; xiv. 14—16), and the words, "His face as the Sun," are also declaratory of the presence of Christ (see Matt. xvii. 2, and compare above, i. 16, and below, xii. 1). In the feet as of fire we see another attribute of Christ (see above, i. 15; ii. 18), and further, the voice as of "a Lion" (in v. 3) is also significant of Christ, "the Lion of the tribe of Judah" (v. 5). This "other Angel," therefore, is Christ (cp. viii. 3), and so the words are understood by Bede, Alcasar, Hengstenberg, and many other Expositors.

Christ is represented in this Vision, first, as "Mighty," because, as the sequel shows, He would have many adversaries, and would overcome them all.

Next, "the Cloud," in which He "is clothed," speaks of His Ascension and of His second Coming to Judgment (Rev. i. 7. Acts i. 9. 11).

"The Rainbow" expresses His Mercy to the good, tempering His Justice and Judgments to the rebellious (see above, iv. 3).

"His face as the Sun," proclaims His Divine Glory.

"His Feet as Pillars," firmly set, and "of Fire," indicate that His kingdom is immovable (Dan. ii. 44), and that although the World should rebel against it, it will never be destroyed, and that He will consume, as with fire, all who resist Him (Dan. vii. 9, 10—14; cp. above, i. 15).

His Feet are firmly planted "on the Sea" (vv. 2. 5), the fluid element denoting Nations in a state of turbulence and agitation (see vii. 3; viii. 8), for He will tread beneath His feet the swelling surge of human pride and passion, as He walked on the waves of the sea of Galilee in the storm (Matt. xiv. 25). And His feet are set on the Earth, the emblem of worldly Power opposed to the Kingdom of Heaven (see i. 7; iii. 10), for all things are subject to Him (see Ps. viii. 6. Matt. xxviii. 18), and however Nations and Kings may rise up against Christ (Ps. ii. 2, 3; see below, xix. 19), He will put all His enemies under His Feet (Ps. cx. 1. Matt. xxii. 44. 1 Cor. xv. 25).

He is described as "crying with a loud voice, like the roaring of a Lion," the King of Beasts, when agitated with rage; for, "to cry with a loud voice as a Lion roareth" (says Andreas), is a sign of wrath; and Christ, as King of the World, and Lord of the Church, is indignant with those who usurp His sovereignty; and will execute vengeance upon them. Cp. Joel iii. 16.

The word here used to describe the sound uttered by the Lion is μυκάται. The ancient Greek Interpreters observe that this word is applied to Oxen rather than to Lions (see Wetstein here), who are said βρύχεσθαι or ὠνεσθαι (see above, 1 Pet. v. 8). But Theocritus (xxvi. 21) has μύκημα λεαίνης. However, this utterance of the Lion seems to be the prelude of louder and more terrible signs of indignation.

This imagery aptly introduces the prophecy in the ensuing chapters (xiii.—xx.), where the two Beasts, θηρία, are represented as rising up against Him Who is the Lion, and as overcome by Him.

The SEVEN THUNDERS, consequent upon the utterance of His Voice, are signs of His power and indignation.

These utterances are called "The Seven Thunders," as if they were well known, for such, as the ancient Greek Expositors observe (Caten. p. 328), is the force of the Article here. Cp. note above, on vi. 8.

Seven is the Apocalyptic symbol of completion (see i. 10; v. 6; xi. at end). The Seven thunders are all the Thunders.

Thunder is the voice of God, and accompanied the publication of His Law on Sinai (Exod. xix. 16; xx. 18), and the execution of His judgments in Egypt (Exod. ix. 23. 29), and on the world (Ps. lxxvii. 18; civ. 7).

In the xxixth Psalm (as Hengstenberg has observed) there is a sevenfold mention of the voice of the Lord (vv. 3, 4 twice, 5, 7, 8, 9). And in the Apocalypse there is a sevenfold repetition of Thunder, which marks, by successive peals, the manifestation of God's power and majesty, and their final consummation in the last Thunder of universal Judgment. The 1st mention of Thunder is in the Vision of the Heavenly Throne (Rev. iv. 5). 2nd. In the opening of the First Seal, where the Rider on the white horse is revealed (vi. 1). 3rd. In the introduction to the Seven Trumpets (viii. 5). 4th. After the sounding of the Seventh Trumpet (xi. 19). 5th. Before the Song of the 144,000 standing on Mount Zion with the Lamb (xiv. 2). 6th. On the outpouring of the Seventh Vial of God's wrath on the Kingdom of the Beast (xvi. 18). 7th. After the destruction of Babylon (xix. 6).

The SEVEN THUNDERS are here mentioned as uttering their own voices (τὰς ἐαυτῶν φωνὰς—N has ταῖς ἐ. φωναῖς) collectively with one universal peal of Judgment, and giving a rehearsal of the Judgment to come, in consequence of the utterance of the Voice of Christ, the Lion of the Royal Tribe of Judah; showing that the Thunders of God's Judgments are wielded by Christ, Who is Judge of all (John v. 22); and will serve at the awful Day for the full and final vindication of His Kingly Majesty, against those who encroach on His prerogatives, or are not loyal to His Throne. This is a fit prelude to the ensuing Visions, which reveal special judgments on adversaries within His Kingdom.

The SEVEN THUNDERS represent the consummation of God's Judgments.

St. John was about to write what the Seven Thunders spake (for ὅτε N has ὅσα, and has ὅσα for ἃ after σφράγισον), but he is commanded to seal what the Seven Thunders uttered, and not to write those things; that is, as the ancient Greek Expositors interpret the words (in Catenâ, p. 331), he is commanded "to keep them secret, because the full revelation of them is reserved for the last times."

The sense of σφραγίσω, to seal, as applied to words, is to be illustrated from its use in this book, and in the visions of Daniel. In xxii. 10, St. John is ordered "not to seal the words of the prophecy of this book;" for, it is added, "the season" (of their fulfilment) "is at hand." In the book of Daniel, vii. 26, we read (according to the version of Theodotion), καὶ σὺ, Δαυὶδ, σφράγισον τὴν ὕμνον, ὅτι εἰς ἡμέρας πολλὰς. There Daniel was commanded to seal the Vision, because its accomplishment was distant: it would be unsealed by Time. And in Dan. xii. 4, where the Vision is concerning the Final Consummation, as here, the prophet was commanded "to hide the words, and to seal the book, σφραγίσαι τὸ βιβλίον, till the season of the end," ἕως καιροῦ συντελείας.

Then follows the oath of the Angel, which marks the parallelism of Daniel's Vision with the present, and leads the reader to consider the one as a clue to the interpretation of the other.

The sense therefore here is, "Seal thou up the things which the Seven Thunders uttered, and write them not; because they belong to the end of all things, which is yet far off; and they will make themselves heard and known by all men, when Christ comes to Judgment." Our Lord's own description of His coming to Judgment illustrates this commission. For "as the Lightning cometh out of the East and shineth even unto the West, so shall also the Coming of the Son of Man be." (Matt. xxiv. 27. Luke xvii. 24.) The season of that Coming is sealed up, and cannot be read (see Isa. xxix. 11). It is not written, but it will write itself with the Lightning's flash upon the clouds of heaven.

St. John, who is commissioned to reveal, is also commissioned

⁵ ^d Καὶ ὁ ἄγγελος, ὃν εἶδον ἐστῶτα ἐπὶ τῆς θαλάσσης καὶ ἐπὶ τῆς γῆς, ἦρε ^d Dan. 12. 7. τὴν χεῖρα αὐτοῦ τὴν δεξιὰν εἰς τὸν οὐρανόν, ⁶ ^e καὶ ὤμοσεν ἐν τῷ ζῶντι εἰς τοὺς ^e ch. 16. 17. αἰῶνας τῶν αἰώνων, ὃς ἔκτισε τὸν οὐρανὸν καὶ τὰ ἐν αὐτῷ, καὶ τὴν γῆν καὶ τὰ ἐν αὐτῇ, καὶ τὴν θάλασσαν καὶ τὰ ἐν αὐτῇ, ὅτι χρόνος οὐκέτι ἔσται ⁷ ^f ἀλλὰ ἐν ^f ch. 11. 15.

to seal. He is enabled to disclose many future events, but he is not permitted to declare the *time of the end*. He has no message to deliver concerning the *season of Christ's Coming to Judgment*. He declares that Christ *will come* (i. 7), and that all will be judged by Him when He comes (xx. 12). But the *time* of that Coming is *sealed up*, in order that we may be always ready for it (Luke xii. 40). He thus discourages vain speculations upon it, and encourages us to watch and pray, that we may be prepared for it.

In v. 2, the *LITTLE BOOK*, or rather *ROLL* (see above, v. 1), is said to *have been opened*, or *unrolled* (ἀνεφωγμένον); and so it is again described in v. 8, *opened in the hand of the Angel*, intimating that the Volume had been once shut, but has now been unrolled by the Angel, and that it *lies open* in His hand. Such is the meaning of the perfect tense. See on 1 John iii. 9.

St. John is commanded to eat the *ROLL*. The Roll here is characterized by a diminutive, βιβλαρίδιον (so A and N, but C* has βιβλιδάριον, and so B in v. 9; C** has βιβλαρίδιον). It is a *little Roll*, less than the βιβλίον, or Roll, described above in chaps. v. and vi., which, as we have seen, contained a prophecy of the sufferings of the *Universal Church*, even to the *end of the world*.

This *lesser Roll* may be regarded therefore as containing a *prophetic episode*; and it is delivered by Christ, by whom it has been unrolled, to St. John.

It is, *comparatively*, a *little Roll*, because, as we shall see, the contents of it do *not* concern the *whole Church of all time*—as the βιβλίον did—but only a *portion* of the Church for a particular time. We shall see reason to believe the *little roll* of St. John concerns the Power which is called the *LITTLE HORN* by Daniel (Dan. vii. 8. 20), namely, the spiritual power of Rome. But lest we should imagine that the Little Roll is very limited in its application, its delivery to St. John is accompanied with a commission to prophesy “concerning many Peoples, Nations, Tongues, and Kings,” v. 11.

St. John is commanded by a voice from heaven to ask the Angel for this *little Roll*: and the Angel gives it to St. John, and commands him to eat it, to consume it (κατα-φαγεῖν), that is, to *make it his own*, to *incorporate* it in himself. On this sense of *eating*, see Jer. xv. 16, and cp. Acts x. 13. By this union of the divine element with himself, St. John is enabled to prophesy. He receives divine food, and is *inspired* thereby.

He eats the Roll, and it is in *his mouth sweet as honey*, but as soon as he has eaten it, his *belly is bitter*; doubtless because of its contents, “full of lamentation and woe.” And, together with this eating of the Roll, he receives a new prophetic commission, “Thou must prophesy again upon (ἐπὶ) many Peoples, and Nations, and Tongues, and Kings,” v. 11. On this use of ἐπὶ, upon, concerning, cp. John xii. 16. Heb. xi. 4; it is like the Latin *super* in “multa *super* Priamo rogitans, *super* Hectore multa.” (Virgil, Æn. i. 750.) Winer, Gr. Gr. § 48, p. 351.

St. John receives a commission to prophesy concerning many Nations and Kings; and (as many commentators have observed, Grotius, Alcasar, Ewald, De Wette, Hengstenberg, Ebrard, see Dusterdieck, p. 353) he executes that commission in the following chapters, particularly xvii. 2. 10. 12. 15; xviii. 3; xix. 19; xxi. 24.

We have a parallel to, and an illustration of, this action also in Hebrew Prophecy.

The Prophet Ezekiel was commanded to take a Roll, which was spread out open before him, and to eat it; and it was in his mouth as honey for sweetness, but therein was written “lamentation, and mourning, and woe” (Ezek. ii. 9, 10; iii. 1—3); and the Prophet Ezekiel having eaten the Roll, which was as honey in his mouth, and with which he was to fill his bowels, and to cause his belly (κοιλίαν) to eat (see v. 3), was lifted up in the spirit, and went in bitterness (v. 14); or, as the original expresses it, he went away bitter, בָּר, in the hot anger of his spirit, “amarus in indignatione,” Vulg.; and “the house of Israel,” to whom he was sent to deliver the message, is described by him as οἶκος παραπικρῶν, “an embittering house,” a people causing bitterness to God and His Prophets, by their sins (ii. 5—8; iii. 9. 26, 27; xii. 2, 3. 9. 25; xvii. 12; xx. 13; xxiv. 3; xlv. 6).

That Vision of Ezekiel affords the clue for the interpretation of this Vision of the Apocalypse.

The Vision of the Throne of God and of the Living Creatures, which Ezekiel saw, and describes in the beginning of his prophecy (Ezek. i. 3—28), has been already compared with the

similar initiatory Vision of St. John, at the opening of the prophetic portion of the Apocalypse (iv. 2—11).

The resemblance now becomes more striking; especially when the Vision of Ezekiel, as represented in the Septuagint Version, which was read by the Churches of St. John, is set beside that of St. John.

Let the Greek Text here of the Evangelist be compared with the words of Ezekiel in that Version,—καὶ εἶδον, καὶ ἰδὸν χεῖρ ἐκτεταμένη πρὸς με, καὶ ἐν αὐτῇ κεφαλὴς βιβλίου, καὶ ἀνείλησεν αὐτὴν ἐνώπιόν μου, καὶ ἐγέγραπτο ἐς αὐτὴν θρήνος καὶ μέλος καὶ οὐαὶ (compare “the woe” here in the Apocalypse, xi. 14), καὶ εἶπε πρὸς με, Τίς ἀνθρώπου (Son of Man, a phrase never applied to a Prophet in the New Testament, as being now consecrated to CHRIST), κατὰφαγε τὴν κεφαλίδαν ταύτην, καὶ πορεύθητι καὶ λάλησον τοῖς υἱοῖς Ἰσραὴλ· καὶ διήνοιξεν τὸ στόμα μου, καὶ ἐψώμισέ με τὴν κεφαλίδαν ταύτην, καὶ εἶπεν πρὸς με, Τὸ στόμα σου φάγεται, καὶ ἡ κοιλία σου πλησθήσεται τῆς κεφαλίδος ταύτης· καὶ ἔφαγον αὐτὴν, καὶ ἐγένετο ἐν τῷ στόματί μου ὡς μέλι γλυκάζον (Ezek. ii. 9, 10; iii. 1—3).

Ezekiel then receives a commission to speak to the *house of Israel*: he is told that he is not sent to *strangers*, but to the *house of Israel*, to God's own *Church and People* (iii. 4—6), and they are an “*embittering house*” (v. 9).

The Roll is first *sweet* and then *bitter* to him. And the Little Roll is first *sweet* and then *bitter* to St. John.

In the next chapters (iv., v., vi., vii., viii., ix.) Ezekiel declares a prophecy of *woes* to *Jerusalem* and *Israel* for their sins, especially their *idolatries* (ch. vii.).

In this remarkable parallelism we may recognize a confirmation of the opinion, grounded on internal evidence, that the message contained in this *little Roll* of the Apocalypse, specially concerns the *House of Israel* of the Gospel Dispensation; that it concerns degenerate branches of the *Christian Church*, embittering God and His Prophets, and is declaratory of divine Judgments on a part of *Christendom* for its sins.

Let us now examine the other particulars of this Vision.

In vv. 5 and 6 the Angel *lifts up his hand*, as usual in oaths, and *swears* by Him that liveth for ever and ever. The *hand* is the symbol of *action*: and the *lifting it up* is a pledge that the thing sworn will surely be done (*Andreas*). “The Lord will make bare His holy arm” (Isa. liii. 10), and assert His power in the sight of the world. We may compare the action of the Angel in the vision of Daniel (xii. 7), who “*lifted up his right hand* and left hand to heaven, and *swore* by (ἐν) Him that liveth for ever and ever.” N omits ἐν.

On this use of ἐν, = *by*, after verbs of swearing, cp. Matt. v. 34. Winer, § 48, p. 348.

The Angel here is Christ (see vv. 1—3). Christ is here represented in His human nature, as King of the Church and the world; what follows concerns the prerogatives of His *Mediatorial Kingdom*, which will one day “be delivered up by Him” to God. See on 1 Cor. xv. 24.

Observe that the *opened Roll* is in Christ's hand (vv. 2. 8), which He lifts up to heaven. The opened Roll is *very visible*.

In v. 6, χρόνος does not mean *time* here in the sense sometimes assigned to it; nor does χρόνος οὐκ ἔσται signify “there shall be *time* no longer,” but it signifies “there shall be no longer *delay*,” and ἀλλὰ means *except*, or *save only* (see Matt. xx. 23. Mark x. 40).

The sense is, “there shall be no longer any *delay*, or respite for repentance to the wicked, or postponement of reward to the righteous, *save only* in the days of the *last Angel*, when he is about to sound His Trumpet to call the World to Judgment.”

N has ἔστιν for ἔσται, an observable reading, “there is no more *delay*.”

Almighty God in His mercy will give a brief respite on the eve of the final consummation and general Judgment, in order that the ungodly may *repent*. Cp. St. Peter's explanation of the *delay*, 2 Pet. iii. 4—9; and Rom. ii. 4: and the use of the word χρονίζει in Matt. xxiv. 48; xxv. 5. Luke xii. 45; and Heb. x. 37, ἡξει, καὶ οὐ χρονιεῖ: and above, ii. 21, ἔδωκα αὐτῇ χρόνον ἵνα μετανοήσῃ: and in the sense of *delay* of reward to the righteous, see the use of the word χρόνος in vi. 16. These passages afford the best comment on the sense of χρόνος here; and in this sense the words are understood by A Lapide, Grotius, Vitringa, Eichhorn, Ewald, De Wette, Hengstenberg. See Dusterdieck, p. 348.

ταῖς ἡμέραις τῆς φωνῆς τοῦ ἐβδόμου ἀγγέλου ὅταν μέλλῃ σαλπίζειν, καὶ ἐτελέσθῃ τὸ μυστήριον τοῦ Θεοῦ, ὡς εὐηγγέλισε τοὺς ἑαυτοῦ δούλους τοὺς προφήτας.

g ver. 4.

⁸ Καὶ ἡ φωνὴ ἣν ἤκουσα ἐκ τοῦ οὐρανοῦ πάλιν λαλοῦσαν μετ' ἐμοῦ, καὶ λέγουσαν, Ὑπαγε, λάβε τὸ βιβλαρίδιον τὸ ἠνεωγμένον ἐν τῇ χειρὶ τοῦ ἀγγέλου τοῦ ἐστῶτος ἐπὶ τῆς θαλάσσης καὶ ἐπὶ τῆς γῆς. ⁹ Καὶ ἀπῆλθον πρὸς τὸν ἄγγελον λέγων αὐτῷ δοῦναί μοι τὸ βιβλαρίδιον· καὶ λέγει μοι, Λάβε καὶ κατάφαγε αὐτὸ, καὶ πικρανεῖ σου τὴν κοιλίαν, ἀλλ' ἐν τῷ στόματί σου ἔσται γλυκὺ ὡς μέλι.

h Ezek. 3. 1—3.
& 2. 10.i Ezek. 3. 3.
& 2. 10.

¹⁰ Καὶ ἔλαβον τὸ βιβλαρίδιον ἐκ τῆς χειρὸς τοῦ ἀγγέλου, καὶ κατέφαγον αὐτό· καὶ ἦν ἐν τῷ στόματί μου ὡς μέλι γλυκὺ· καὶ ὅτε ἔφαγον αὐτὸ, ἐπικράνθη ἡ κοιλία μου. ¹¹ καὶ λέγει μοι, Δεῖ σε πάλιν προφητεῦσαι ἐπὶ λαοῖς καὶ ἔθνεσι καὶ γλώσσαις καὶ βασιλεῦσι πολλοῖς.

a Ezek. 40. 3, &c.
& 41. & 42. & 43.
ch. 21. 15.

XI. ¹ Καὶ ἐδόθη μοι κάλαμος ὅμοιος ῥάβδῳ λέγων, Ἐγειρε καὶ μέτρησον τὸν ναὸν τοῦ Θεοῦ, καὶ τὸ θυσιαστήριον, καὶ τοὺς προσκυνοῦντας ἐν αὐτῷ

In v. 7, καὶ ἐτελέσθη (the reading of A, N, C) τὸ μυστήριον, "and the Mystery was fulfilled," ἐτελέσθη is the *prophetic past tense*, signifying, that, although the event is still *future*, yet it is *certain*; and in the divine foreknowledge and decree, it is *already done*. See the note above, on John xv. 6, ἐβλήθη; and compare the use of the *prophetic aorist* in xvi. 1. This use of καὶ with the aorist is derived from that of the Hebrew *Vau* with the Perfect. See Exod. xvi. 6; xvii. 4, where the LXX have καὶ with the future (Ewald, Ebrard): and cp. Winer, Gr. Gr. § 40, p. 248.

God sees the Mystery as *already accomplished*. It is therefore said here that He *preached the glad tidings*, or Gospel, *of it to His own servants the Prophets*. The Patriarchs "were evangelized, as well as we," Heb. iv. 6.

On the *accusative* after εὐηγγέλισε, v. 7, cp. Acts xiii. 32, and Winer, § 32, p. 199.

The ancient *Prophets* are called "*God's servants*" in the Apocalypse (cp. xviii. 20; xxii. 9); and thus the agreement of the Apocalypse with ancient Hebrew Prophecy is declared.

Christ lifts up His hand, and swears. This act of swearing shows, that on account of the overflow of iniquity, even in the Christian Church, the World would begin to doubt the truth of *Christ's Kingdom* and Universal Sovereignty. This Oath of Christ is designed to put *an end to such doubts*. Cp. St. Paul's remarks on the use of *Oaths*, as an "end of strife" or of contradiction (ἀντιλογία); especially as applicable to the Oath of *God Himself*, assuring the world of *Christ's everlasting Priesthood* (Heb. vi. 16—18; vii. 20—28).

This oath of Christ declares, that though the triumph of His Kingdom may seem improbable, on account of the multitude and power of the enemies even *within His own Kingdom*, yet the establishment of that Kingdom is certain; as was revealed to David (Ps. ii. 1—12), and to Daniel (ii. 44; vii. 9, 10, 14).

From these Oaths of God and of Christ, it is rightly inferred by Theologians that oaths are *lawful* for certain purposes, and on certain occasions, under the Gospel. See Bp. Andrewes, Sermons, vol. v. pp. 72—79, on Jer. iv. 2; and cp. notes above, on Matt. v. 34.

In v. 9, on the use of the *infinitive*, δοῦναι, depending on λέγων, cp. Acts xxi. 21. Col. iv. 6. Winer, § 43, p. 283.

The question arises; Why does St. John receive this commission at this particular point in the prophetic Visions, namely, under the *Sixth Trumpet*, or *Second Woe*?

The *Trumpets* announce *God's judgments* on His enemies (see viii. 2). Therefore the *commission* to prophesy, and to proclaim the punishments reserved for those who invade the royal prerogatives of Christ, finds properly its place in the Series of the Trumpets.

The reception also of the *LITTLE ROLL* fitly dates from the *Sixth Trumpet*, because—as we have seen—the *Sixth Trumpet* specially declares the punitive power of God's *holy Word* (see above, ix. 13—21); and because this *LITTLE ROLL* opened in the Hand of Christ, the *INCARNATE WORD*, proclaims, as we shall see, the woes which will overtake those *Christians* who disobey the Law written in the *opened Book* of His *WRITTEN WORD*. That Book of Books in the Hand of Christ has now been opened in the eyes of all. It has been revealed to all by the *loosing of*

the *Four Angels* that had been bound (see ix. 13—21); it has been displayed to all the World by the diffusion of the fourfold Gospel to the four corners of the earth.

It has also been *opened*, in another sense, because what was dimly foreshadowed by types and prophecies in the Old Dispensation, is now fully unfolded in the reading and preaching of the Gospel.

For another reason also, this declaration of Judgment on degenerate Christians, despising or hindering God's Holy Word, finds its appropriate position here in the *Sixth Trumpet*. The *Sixth Trumpet*, like the *Sixth Seal* (see vi. 12—16), bears an analogy to the *Sixth Day* of Christ's *Passion Week*. On the *Sixth Day* of that week the *Priests*, and *Scribes*, and *Pharisees*, who bare rule in the *literal Jerusalem*, killed Him Who is "the *True and Faithful Witness*." (Rev. i. 5; iii. 14.) This they did, because they, who were the appointed Guardians and Interpreters of Scripture (Mal. ii. 7. Cp. Matt. xxiii. 2), *knew not the Scriptures*, that is, did *not consider* them, did not set themselves to discover their true meaning, nor the *voices of the Prophets read every Sabbath day*; therefore, *they fulfilled them, in condemning Him*. (Acts xiii. 27. Cp. 2 Cor. iii. 14.)

This *LITTLE ROLL* reveals a like sin in some of those who bear rule in the *spiritual Jerusalem*. It reveals the *sufferings* which the *Word of God* would have to endure from some degenerate Rulers in the Christian Church. See on xi. 7, 8. It reveals likewise the Judgments which would be inflicted upon them for their sins. See xi. 13.

In confirmation of these statements, it may be observed that the *Sixth Trumpet* is called "the *Second Woe*" (ix. 12, 13). That Trumpet announced the punitive power of Holy Scripture. And the revelation in the *Little Roll* concerning God's *Two Witnesses* ends thus: "the *Second Woe* is past," xi. 14.

This revelation therefore belongs to the *Second Woe*, and it accords with the Vision of the *Sixth Trumpet*, which is the Trumpet of the *Second Woe*. The *Sixth Trumpet*, which proclaims "the loosing of God's four Angels that had been bound," has revealed the punitive power of God's Word *generally*. The *Little Roll* describes His judgments on those in *His Church* who disobey that Word, and make it of none effect.

The ancient Greek Expositors observe (in Catenâ, p. 335), that the commission "to prophesy again concerning *Peoples*, and *Nations*, and *Tongues*, and many *Kings*," shows that the *accomplishment* of this Prophecy was *not near at hand* in St. John's age. The repetition of the words, "*Peoples*, and *Nations*, and *Tongues*, and *Kings*," in the prophecy concerning the *mystical Babylon*, xvii. 12, 15, indicates that this commission refers to events predicted in *that* prophecy; see the *RETROSPECT*, at the end of chap. xviii.

CH. XI.] Prophetic View of the History of HOLY SCRIPTURE; relatively to ROME:

1, 2. καὶ ἐδόθη μοι] And there was given me a *Reed* like unto a *Rod*, saying, Rise, and measure the temple of God, and the altar, and them that worship therein; and the court which is without the temple cast out, and measure it not; for it is given unto the *Gentiles*; and they will tread the *holy City* forty and two months.

² ^b καὶ τὴν αὐλὴν τὴν ἑξῶθεν τοῦ ναοῦ ἔκβαλε ἑξῶ, καὶ μὴ αὐτὴν μετρήσης, ὅτι ἐδόθη τοῖς ἔθνεσιν καὶ τὴν πόλιν τὴν ἁγίαν πατήσουσι μῆνας τεσσαράκοντα καὶ δύο.

^b Ezek. 40. 17, 19, 20.
ch. 13. 5.
Ps. 79. 1.
Luke 21. 24.

After *ῥάβδος* some MSS. prefix the words καὶ ὁ ἄγγελος εἰστήκει, and the Angel stood. But this is not in A or in numerous Cursives, or in the *Vulg.*, *Coptic*, or *Æthiopic*, and some other Versions; or in some Greek and Latin Fathers, and is rejected by *Lach.*, *Tisch.*, and *Düsterdieck*. It seems to be a gloss introduced to account for the abruptness of the diction here; but makes no alteration in the sense.

On this *absolute* use of the nominative λέγων, cp. iv. 1; xiv. 7; xix. 6: it is derived from the Hebrew נִשְׁמַע, and is of frequent occurrence in the LXX; e. g. Isa. vii. 2; xxx. 21. See *Winer*, § 59, p. 474.

St. John having been directed to ask for the *opened Roll*, and having received it from the hand of the Angel, and having eaten it, and having been commissioned to *prophecy again* (x. 11), has now a *Reed* put into his hand, and he is *commanded to measure the temple* (or rather the *sanctuary*, ναὸν, not ἱερόν: see on John ii. 19. 2 Thess. ii. 4), and the *Altar* (θυσιαστήριον), and *them that worship therein: and to cast out the court outside the temple, for it was given to the Gentiles: and they will tread the Holy City Forty and Two Months*.

This Vision also has a parallel in the prophecies of Ezekiel, where the Prophet sees an Angel *measuring a Temple and a City* on a mountain in the land of *Israel*, purified from Idolatry and hallowed anew (xliii. 7—12). The Angel measures them with a *measuring reed* (καλάμῳ, Ezek. xl.—xliii.), and when they have been measured, the Glory of the Lord came upon them from the *East* (the type of Christ, Luke i. 78; above, vii. 2; below, xvi. 12), and His Voice was like the noise of many waters, and the Earth shined with His glory, which filled the House (xliii. 1—5).

A similar Vision appeared to Zechariah; the imagery of whose prophecies is presented in this Vision to St. John. "I lifted up mine eyes and looked, and behold a Man with a measuring line in his hand; then said I, Whither goest thou? And he said unto me, *To measure Jerusalem*. And another Angel went out to meet the Angel that talked with me, and he said, Run, speak to this young man, saying, *Jerusalem shall be inhabited*, for I, saith the LORD, will be unto her a wall of fire round about, and will be the Glory in the midst of her." (Zech. ii. 1—5.)

This Vision, like the Vision of Ezekiel, undoubtedly referred to the *Christian Church*, and displayed the Divine Presence within her, and prepared the way for the present Vision of St. John.

The action of *measuring* is one of *appropriation* and of *preservation* (Numb. xxxv. 5. Jer. xxxi. 39. Hab. iii. 6. Zech. ii. 2), and also of *partition* and *separation* (2 Sam. viii. 2).

The *Temple of God* here (ναὸς), is always the *Church* in the Apocalypse, and in the Apostolic Epistles generally; see above on 2 Thess. ii. 4. It is never used in them, or in the Revelation, to designate the *literal Temple of Jerusalem*. See above, iii. 12; vii. 15; xi. 19; xiv. 15. 17.

The *Altar* refers to the *Golden Altar of Incense* which stood in the ναὸς, *sanctuary*, or *Holy Place*.

Hence the action of measuring here is not only applied locally, but *personally*; St. John is ordered to measure the *worshippers*; the *living stones*, which make the *true Temple of God*. "Ye are the Temple of God" (ναὸς Θεοῦ), says St. Paul (1 Cor. iii. 16; vi. 19. 2 Cor. vi. 16), "and the whole body of the faithful grows together" (as a living thing) "in Christ into a Temple holy to the Lord." (Eph. ii. 21.) And St. Peter speaks of them as "*living stones*, grounded on Christ the Corner-Stone, and built up into a spiritual house;" and not only as *living*, but as *sentient*, *acting*, *worshipping*; set in the Church "to offer spiritual sacrifices acceptable to God by Him." (1 Pet. ii. 5, 6.)

The true *worshippers* of Christ have His protection guaranteed to them. They are girt in with the *measuring line* of His Omnipresent Love. Cp. Matt. xxviii. 20.

Further, the Head of the Church, by commanding St. John to *measure the Temple*, or rather the *Sanctuary* (ναὸν), and the *Altar*, assures the faithful of all ages, that, whatever may be the power and rage of those who are here called ἔθνη, *Gentiles*, that is, men separate from, and hostile to, the *true Israel*, the *Christian Sion* (see ii. 26, compared with ii. 9, iii. 9), yet her *Sanctuary* and *Altar* will *always* be preserved and protected by Christ, as His own peculiar portion; He will be "a wall of fire round about it, and will be the Glory in the midst of it." (Zech. ii. 5.)

This assurance has been fulfilled by the preservation of the Holy Scriptures, and of the Sacraments, of Christ, and of an Apostolic Ministry, offering the Incense of Prayer, and ministering the Word and Sacraments. They have been defended by Christ

against all the arms and artifices of Satan, from without, and from within, who has ever been endeavouring to "hurt the oil and the wine." See above, vi. 6.

There is one remarkable *difference* between this Vision of St. John and the two parallel visions of Ezekiel and Zechariah.

In those Visions of the two Hebrew Prophets, the measuring Reed was in the hand of an *Angel* (Ezek. xl. 3. Zech. ii. 1—3). And an Angel was the *Agent* in measuring the City and Temple.

But here, in the Apocalypse, the Reed is *given* into the hand of *St. John*, and he is commanded to measure the Temple; and this command is from Christ Himself (see v. 3, and cp. x. 1).

To this observable difference it may be added, that the measuring Reed (κάλαμος), put into St. John's hand by Christ, is described as like to a Rod. And the word ῥάβδος, Rod, is coupled three times in the Apocalypse with the adjective σιδηρῆ, *iron* (ii. 27; xii. 5; xix. 15). And in the same places it is coupled also with the verb ποιμαίνειν, to *tend*, as a *Shepherd* does. The idea is thus suggested of a *pastoral staff*.

These circumstances may be explained as follows:

HOLY SCRIPTURE is the Rule of Faith to the Christian Church. Holy Scripture is the *Reed* by which the *sanctuary* and the *Altar*, and those that worship therein, are to be measured (see above, on Gal. vi. 16. 2 Tim. iii. 15, and 1 Pet. iv. 11). The Greek word κάλαμος, *Reed*, used here, and by the LXX, about fifteen times in the Vision of Ezekiel, where the Angel measures the Church, is the equivalent to the Hebrew קֶנֶף (*kaneh*). From that Hebrew word, *kaneh*, the word κανὼν, *canon* (*rule*), *canna* (*reed, cane*), comes, and has passed into our own theological language; the *Canon* of Scripture,—that is, the *canonical Books* of the Two Testaments,—is our Rule of Faith (Art. vi.). In the words of Bp. Cosin (*Canon of Scripture*, p. 1), "The Books of Scripture are therefore called *Canonical*, because they have in all times been acknowledged by God's Church to be the *Infallible Rule* of our Faith."

Cp. *Credner* (*Geschichte des Kanons*, Halle, 1847, p. 6). Das griechische Wort κανὼν, verwandt mit κάννα, *Rohr* (*Reed*), entspreche dem alt-hebräischen קֶנֶף, welches von der Grundbedeutung *Rohr, Halm* (κάλαμος), die weiteren Bedeutungen *gerader Stab, Mess-stab, gerader Schaft*, u. s. w. ableitet. . . . Vergl. Apokalypse, xi. 1. κάλαμος ὁμοῖος ῥάβδῳ und dazu *Victorinus Petavionensis* (Gallan. Bibl. Patr. iv. p. 59). "Hæc est arundo et mensura Fidei." Origen de Princip. i. præf. "Certa linea perfectaque Regula (κανὼν)."—*S. Amphilochius* ends his verses enumerating the books of Scripture thus, οὗτος ἁπενδύσ-
τατος Κανὼν ἂν εἴη τῶν θεοπνεύστων γραφῶν.

The REED—the Hebrew *Kaneh*, a *reed*, whence the word *Canon* is derived—represents the *Canon—or Rule—of Holy Scripture*, completed and sealed by Christ. This *Reed* is said to be like unto a *Rod*; the Rod of *iron* frequently mentioned in the Apocalypse. Holy Scripture, though it *measures* as a *Reed*, yet is not frail and quivering as a *Reed*. It is not shaken by the winds of vain doctrine (Matt. xi. 7. Eph. iv. 14). It is not, as some Romish writers have ventured to call it, "a *Lesbian rule*," or "rule of *lead*," which may be easily bent and twisted many different ways. The evidence of this may be seen in the sequel of the Editor's Letters on the Church of Rome, Letter iv. p. 75. No, it is a Rod of *iron*, which cannot be bent or broken, but will break all its foes in pieces, like a potter's vessel. And yet by this *Reed* Christ is said ποιμαίνειν, to *do the work of a Shepherd* (Rev. ii. 27; xii. 5), for by the pastoral staff and Reed of His Word, all faithful shepherds under Him, Who is the Good Shepherd (John x. 11. 14), the Chief Shepherd (1 Pet. v. 4), guide the sheep of His pasture, and prove their love to the Shepherd by tending and feeding His Sheep (John xxi. 16).

This Exposition, which recognizes the Holy Scripture here as the *Reed like unto a Rod*, by which the Church is to be measured by St. John, is authorized by many ancient and modern Interpreters. "In Virgâ rectitudo Scripturæ intelligitur," says *Haymo*. So *Aquinas* in Apoc. xxi. "per Arundinem auream intelligitur Sacra Scriptura." So *Berengaudus* (Rev. ii. 24), "Virga ferrea Evangelium figurat, quo omnis error destructus est," and so *Vitranga*, *Anacrisis*, p. 453, "Calamus mensorius, quo dimensio peragenda est, haud dubiè est Verbum Dei, Lex et Testimonium, Lex regni Christi, unicus Canon et norma veri."

This interpretation of this Vision is also happily illustrated by the historical fact, that *St. John* was the person who was specially appointed by God to complete the *Canon of Holy Scripture*, and to assure the Church of its integrity and inspiration. His Gospel

c ch. 20, 4.
& 12, 6, 14.
d Zech. 4. 2, 3,
11, 14.

³ καὶ δώσω τοῖς δυσὶ μάρτυσί μου, καὶ προφητεύσουσιν ἡμέρας χιλίας διακοσίας ἐξήκοντα περιβεβλημένοι σάκκους· ⁴ οὗτοί εἰσιν αἱ δύο ἐλαῖαι καὶ αἱ δύο λυχνῖαι αἱ ἐνώπιον τοῦ Κυρίου τῆς γῆς ἐστῶτες.

was the last written of all the Gospels; and his Epistles and Apocalypse were the last written of the other books of the New Testament. See above, *Introduction* to the Four Gospels, p. xlv, and to St. John's Gospel, pp. 256. 266, and *Introductions* to St. John's Epistles and to the *Apocalypse*.

Hence in this Vision of the Apocalypse, the last written of all the Books of Holy Scripture, St. John receives the Reed from Christ, and measures the Church.

Thus we recognize another doctrinal and practical use of this Vision. It assures the Church, that the New Testament, as completed and sealed by St. John, comes from the hand of the Great Angel of the Covenant, Whose countenance is as the Sun, Whose head is arched-over by the Rainbow, the emblem of Mercy and Justice, and Who is clothed in the cloud of heavenly Majesty; Who guided the Ancient Church in the Wilderness by the Pillar of Cloud and Fire, Who treads all Earthly things under His feet, and walks on the Waves, and rides on the Storms of this World; to Whom All Power in Heaven and Earth is given (Matt. xxviii. 18)—JESUS CHRIST.

This Vision places before the eyes of all, as in a lively picture, the important doctrinal truth, deducible from other parts of Holy Writ, that HOLY SCRIPTURE is the RULE OF FAITH; and that whatever lies beyond the lines which Holy Scripture has traced, "is not to be required of any man that it should be believed as an Article of the Faith, or be thought requisite or necessary to salvation" (Art. vi. of the Church of England); and to serve as a warning to those who would add any articles to "the Faith once for all delivered to the Saints" (Jude 3).

It serves as a safeguard against the errors of the Romish Church, which adds the Apocrypha, as of equal value, to the Canonical Books of the Old Testament; and which also places her own Traditions upon a par with the Word of God. The proofs of these statements have been given by the present Editor elsewhere, "Letters on the Church of Rome," Letters iii. iv. and v.

This exposition is further confirmed by what follows concerning the Two WITNESSES, vv. 3, 4.

The Court outside the Sanctuary is said to have been given to the Gentiles, and they will tread down the Holy City forty and two months.

The word "Gentiles" in the Apocalypse, as above observed, signifies the enemies of Christ; being opposed to Jews, who, in this book, are true believers, faithful Christians (see ii. 9; iii. 9), true Confessors of the faith, those who are "Jews inwardly" (Rom. ii. 29), children of "faithful Abraham," Israelites indeed, in whom there is no guile (John i. 47. Cp. *Vitringa*, pp. 79. 137. 303. 451. 454).

There is here a reference to our Lord's prophecy concerning the literal Jerusalem. Jerusalem (He said) shall be trodden by the Gentiles (παρουμένη ὑπὸ ἐθνῶν), till the seasons of the Gentiles shall be fulfilled (see on Luke xxi. 24), and doubtless our Lord's prophecy had also a secondary meaning, in reference to the spiritual Jerusalem, the Christian Sion, which is presented to St. John in this Vision (see on Luke xxi. 25).

This Vision therefore represents a corrupt state of Christendom. The outer Court of the Temple is given to the Gentiles, and they will tread the Holy City. Many enemies of God will domineer there. And the line of demarcation between them and the true worshippers, is to be drawn by the measuring Reed, like unto a Rod. The Reed of Holy Scripture measures the Church; and it draws the line between true Israelites, and those who, in the divine Eye, are like "heathen men and publicans" (Matt. xviii. 17). As Bede well says, in commenting on this passage, "They who in name only are joined to the Church, and do not belong to the Altar, and to the Holy of Holies, are cast out by the Gospel-Rule, and are numbered with the Heathen. 'For all the Glory of the King's Daughter is from within'" (Ps. xlv. 14).

The Two WITNESSES. The Two OLIVE TREES; and Two CANDLESTICKS.

3, 4. καὶ δώσω] And I will give to My Two Witnesses, and they shall prophesy a thousand two hundred and threescore days, clothed in sackcloth.

These are the two Olive trees, and the two Candlesticks, or Lamps (see i. 12, 13. 20), standing before the Lord of all the earth.

As to the reading of this passage; in v. 3 A, B have περιβεβλημένους; v. 4, A, B, C have Κυρίον. Elz. has Θεοῦ.

"I will give;" their power is a grant from Me; the streams of Divine Grace shall ever flow into them from the fountain of Divine Wisdom, and will enable them to prophesy or preach. God is the Fountain of the stream, which flows into the OLIVE TREES, and by them into the LAMPS.

What are these Two WITNESSES?

By some they have been supposed to be two persons, who would appear and preach for the time here mentioned.

Some of the ancient Fathers were of opinion that Enoch and Elias, or Moses and Elias, or other two persons were intended by them; see for example, Justin Martyr, c. Tryph. c. 49. Tertullian, de Anim. c. 35, and S. Hippolytus, de Christo et Antichristo, pp. 21—23. S. Hilary on Matt. xx., Evangelium Nicodemi, ed. Thilo, pp. 757—765, and the learned Editor's notes on this subject, and the note above on Matt. xvii. 10. Perhaps the requests of the two disciples, St. John and St. James, in Matt. xx. 21, may have been suggested by some such popular belief among the Jews, of the future pre-eminence of two favoured persons in the kingdom of the Messiah.

However true it may be, that this Vision of the Apocalypse may have a partial fulfilment in some pairs of persons combating side by side for the Truth, and specially honoured by Christ, as His Two Witnesses; yet it cannot be imagined, that any of the Saints who have entered into Paradise, and rest from their labours, should be brought back into this world to be treated with cruelty and ignominy upon earth. And the language of the prophecy has a wider and higher range than to any sons of men, as will be seen in considering it as a whole.

It is well said by an ancient Expositor here, Hoc est quod Apostolus dixit (1 Thess. iv. 17), "Rapiemur in nubibus obviam Christo." Ante adventum autem Domini nulli hoc posse contingere scriptum est, "Initium Christus, deinde hi qui sunt Christi, in adventu Ejus" (1 Cor. xv. 23). Unde excluditur omnis suspicio quorundam qui putant hos duos Testes duos viros esse. Aug.?

The Two WITNESSES are called the Two OLIVE TREES, and THE TWO CANDLESTICKS, or LAMPS, standing (ἐστῶτες) before the Lord of all the Earth. On the use of the masculine ἐστῶτες see Winer, § 59, p. 474. It signifies that the Witnesses (μάρτυρες) typified by the emblems are the principal objects which are to be contemplated as standing in the presence of God.

God is represented here as the Lord of all the Earth, because the Message to be delivered by His Two Witnesses concerns all the Earth; and because Earthly Powers will despise that Message (see v. 10), and because God will prove His Dominion by punishing those who despise it.

The clue to the interpretation of this Vision also may be derived, in part, from the parallel vision in Zechariah (Zech. iv. 2—14).

There the Prophet is comforted by an assurance, not only that the literal Temple of Jerusalem would be rebuilt by Zerubabel, although it had many adversaries, but he is cheered with a Vision of the glorious building of that spiritual fabric, the Church of Christ, which was typified by it.

This consolatory assurance is communicated to Zechariah by the Vision of a Golden Candlestick or Lamp (λυχνία), with seven branches; and supplied with oil by Two OLIVE TREES which are above it (v. 3), one on the right, the other on the left. And he is informed, that this work will be done by the Spirit of God, and not by human power (iv. 6). And in answer to his question addressed to the Angel, "What are the two branches of the Olive trees which pour the oil out of themselves by the tubes of gold into the Candlestick or Lamp?" the Angel replies, "These are the two anointed ones (literally, sons of oil) standing before the God of all the earth."

The resemblance of this Vision to that of St. John will be obvious by a comparison of the words of Zechariah as they stand in the Septuagint, with those of St. John. Zechariah's words are ἰδοὺ λυχνία χρυσὴ ὅλη—καὶ δύο ἐλαῖαι ἐπάνω αὐτῆς (iv. 2, 3), καὶ εἶπα πρὸς αὐτόν· τί αἱ δύο ἐλαῖαι αὗται; τί οἱ δύο κλάδοι τῶν ἐλαιῶν, οἱ ἐν ταῖς χερσὶν τῶν δύο μυζωτήρων τῶν χρυσῶν, τῶν ἐπιχεόντων καὶ ἐπαναγόντων τὰς ἐπαρυστρίδας τὰς χρυσᾶς; καὶ εἶπε πρὸς με, οὗτοι οἱ δύο υἱοὶ τῆς πίστεως παρεστήκασι Κυρίῳ πάσης τῆς γῆς (iv. 11, 12. 14).

The Apocalypse itself teaches, that a seven-branched Candle-

5 Καὶ εἴ τις αὐτοὺς θέλει ἀδικῆσαι, πῦρ ἐκπορεύεται ἐκ τοῦ στόματος αὐτῶν, καὶ κατεσθίει τοὺς ἐχθροὺς αὐτῶν· καὶ εἴ τις θέλει αὐτοὺς ἀδικῆσαι, οὕτως δεῖ αὐτὸν ἀποκτανθῆναι· 6 οὗτοι ἔχουσιν τὴν ἐξουσίαν κλεῖσαι τὸν οὐρανὸν, ἵνα

e Exod. 7. & 8.
& 9. & 10. & 12.
1 Kings 17. 1.

stick or Lamp is an emblem of a CHURCH (i. 20; cp. ii. 1. 5). Hence *S. Irenæus* says (v. 20), "The Church preaches the truth; and she is the seven-branched Candlestick (*Lucerna*) bearing the light of Christ." Ubique Ecclesia prædicat veritatem, et hæc est septāμνος (with seven wicks) Lucerna, Christi bajulans lumen. The Golden seven-branched Candlestick or Lamp represents the CHURCH receiving the oil of the Holy Spirit, and discharging her office of shedding forth divine light.

The Visions in Zechariah and the Apocalypse represent the important doctrinal truth, that the oil is not in the Lamp itself, but is derived from something external to it, and above it; namely, from the two Olive Trees. Zechariah declares that the work of constructing the Candlestick, and of supplying it with oil, is not by human power, but by the HOLY SPIRIT of God (iv. 6), "Not by might nor by power, but by My Spirit, saith the Lord of Hosts."

Since therefore the oil is not originally in the Lamps, but in the Olive Trees, and since the work is ascribed to the Holy Ghost, therefore the Olive Trees must represent the means by which the Holy Ghost gives oil to the Church, and enables it to enlighten the world with Divine Truth. Those means are the HOLY SCRIPTURES of the Old and New Testaments.

Accordingly, many ancient Expositors were agreed that the Two Olive Trees represent the TWO TESTAMENTS, by which the Holy Ghost gives light to the Church, and through the Church illumines the World.

"The Two Witnesses," says *Primasius*, "represent the Two Testaments preached by the Christian Church to the World: the Church, like a Candlestick, is illumined by the light of the Two Testaments; and the Church may well be represented by Two Lamps, for the Church displays a twofold light, derived from the Two Testaments; and the Church is made up of two societies, Jews and Gentiles, meeting together in Jesus Christ; and there is no contradiction of unity in this number two, any more than there is a contradiction in the preceding Vision of the Seven Golden Candlesticks, which are particular Churches, but taken together, symbolize the one Catholic Church." See above, i. 12. So also *Aug.* ? p. 3310, "Duo Candelabra Ecclesia est; pro Numero Testamentorum dixit duo: ita et ex Septem Candelabris una Ecclesia est. Nam Zacharias (Zech. iv. 2, 3) unum Candelabrum vidit Septiforme, et has duas Olivas, id est, Testamenta, infundere oleum Candelabro, id est, Ecclesiæ." So also *Bede* and *Bp. Andrewes* (c. Bellarmin. cap. 11), who concurs in the opinion that the Two Witnesses signify the Two Testaments. Similarly *Vitringa*, *Anacr.* p. 468, "Oleæ figurant Spiritum Sanctum (ut liquet ex v. 6) dona et gratiam suam communicantem per medium Verbi Dei divisi in Libros Veteris et Novi Testamenti."

In the Vision of Zechariah, the Church is represented by One Candlestick, and in the Apocalypse by Two. Here is circumstantial variety and substantial identity. There is One Church of Christ, because Jews and Gentiles are joined together in Him, and yet in a certain sense there are two Churches which were typified by the mother and colt in the triumphal entry into Jerusalem (see on Matt. xxi. 5). And by this Apocalyptic Vision of the Two Candlesticks, drinking in oil from the two Olive trees, the Jewish Church, on its side, is reminded that it cannot have light without the New Testament; and the Christian Church is taught, on its side, that it cannot burn brightly without the Old.

Hence, *S. Augustine* says (Serm. 137, 6, on John x. 1—16), "that in many places of Holy Scripture we find mention of Two Churches, which are in fact one," like "the two walls which meet in the One Corner-Stone, Jesus Christ." See Eph. ii. 20.

This Vision is fraught with instruction.

(1) The Candlesticks receive their light from the Olive Trees. The Church of God must look for light "to the Law and to the Testimony; and, if she speak not according to this Word, it is because there is no light in her." (Isa. viii. 20.) The Scriptures of the Two Testaments are her Olive Trees. For they are λόγια ζῶντα, living oracles (Acts vii. 38); they are planted in the House of the Lord (Ps. lii. 9), ever flourishing with fresh leaves, ever ministering the oil of gladness and food of light. She must be pure and holy, like the Golden Seven-branched Candlestick, set on a firm oasis in the presence of God, and she must extend her branches far and wide to diffuse her light and irradiate the world. Like the Golden Candlestick, the Church has no light in herself. She can do nothing without the Olive Trees. If the golden channels which connect her bowls with their branches, are

choked, then she will burn dimly; if they are broken, she is eclipsed, and the Tabernacle of the World is dark.

(2) The Two Olive Trees stand side by side, showing that "the Old Testament is not contrary to the New, nor the New to the Old" (Art. vii.). The Law and the Gospel interweave their branches and blend their light together, and the same God is Author of them both.

(3) These two Witnesses stand before the Lord of the Earth. The Church preaching the word of God "is the Pillar and Ground of the Truth" (1 Tim. iii. 15). Christ is ever with her (Matt. xxviii. 20), and He has promised, that the "gates of Hell shall never prevail against her" (Matt. xvi. 18). Being illumined by the light of the Two Testaments, she stands steadfast in obedience to God; and is supplied with an unfailing stream of oil in the Holy Scriptures, which makes her ever to shine in the eye of the world.

(4) Next, we may remark that these Olive Trees and these Candlesticks are only two; that is, God has revealed Himself under the Law and under the Gospel. No other Religion, con-signed to written documents, is from God: no third Witness is to be expected from Him.

(5) Next, we have divine admonition here as to the authentication of Scripture itself. The Two Candlesticks receive oil from the Two Olive Trees. Almighty God employs, and ever has employed, the Candlesticks to diffuse the light from the Olive Trees. Thus He has appointed His Church to receive, guard, interpret, and disseminate Scripture; and whatever has been always so guarded and authenticated by the Church, that we believe and are certain to be Scripture: or, in the language of the Sixth Article of the Church of England, "In the name of the HOLY SCRIPTURE we do understand those Canonical Books of the OLD and NEW TESTAMENT, of whose authority was never any doubt in the CHURCH."

(6) Again, here is a warning against the error of the Church of Rome, which says that she herself is the Church of God, and gives authority to the Bible. See evidence of this in the Editor's Letters on the Church of Rome, Letter iv. of the Sequel, pp. 75. 273. The Candlesticks do not give light to the Olive Trees, but the Olive Trees pour oil into the golden pipes of the Candlestick. The Church does not give authority to the Word; but through the Church the Word illuminates the World.

(7) Here also we see a caution against those who stop the channels of the oil of Holy Scripture from flowing freely into the Church, or adulterate the divine oil with human admixtures; and thus do what in them lies to mar the work of the Spirit, and impair the use of the Candlesticks by making the wicks fungous, and the light dim, and the air noisome, and the nations blind; and incur the wrath of Him "Who walketh in the midst of the Golden Candlesticks" (i. 13), and tempt Him to remove their own candlestick from its place (ii. 5).

(8) The Two Olive Trees and the Two Candlesticks are called the TWO WITNESSES, and they are said to prophesy (v. 3), that is, to preach (see 1 Thess. v. 20); and, as we shall see, their actions, and sufferings, and triumphs are compared to those of Moses and Elias (v. 6), and of Christ (vv. 7—13). Christ the Incarnate WORD is God's Witness to the World; He is "the True and Faithful Witness" (i. 5; iii. 14). The Word preached is His "Witness to the World." He Himself gives it that title. "This Gospel of the Kingdom must be preached as a witness to all nations, and then shall the End come" (Matt. xxiv. 14). The Two Olive Trees pouring their oil into the Candlesticks, and the Candlesticks receiving the oil and enlightening the World, are His two witnesses; and in the mouth of these "Two Witnesses every word shall be established" (Matt. xviii. 16).

(9) Lastly, this exposition is confirmed and illustrated by its context. The transition was very natural from the Reed like a Rod to the Two Witnesses; for the Word of God, which measures the Faith of the Church, is His Witness to the World. The ignominious treatment which the Word of God would receive, is predicted in the Vision before us, by the mournful garb of the Two Witnesses, who are represented as preaching in sack-cloth; and this follows very appropriately after the Vision in the last chapter but one, which represented the Loosing of the Four Angels (ix. 15—19), and its consequences, as already explained, and as will now further appear.

5, 6. καὶ εἴ τις] And if any man willeth to hurt them, fire proceedeth out of their mouth, and devoureth their enemies: and if any man desireth to hurt them, he must in this manner be killed.

μὴ ὑετὸς βρέχῃ τὰς ἡμέρας αὐτῶν τῆς προφητείας· καὶ ἐξουσίαν ἔχουσιν ἐπὶ τῶν ὑδάτων στρέφειν αὐτὰ εἰς αἷμα, καὶ πατάξαι τὴν γῆν ὅσάκις ἐὰν θελήσωσι ἐν πάσῃ πληγῇ.

f Dan. 7. 21.
ch. 13. 1, 7, 11.
& 17. 8.

⁷ Καὶ ὅταν τελέσωσι τὴν μαρτυρίαν αὐτῶν, τὸ θηρίον τὸ ἀναβαῖνον ἐκ τῆς ἀβύσσου ποιήσει μετ' αὐτῶν πόλεμον, καὶ νικήσει αὐτοὺς καὶ ἀποκτενεῖ αὐτούς.

g ch. 17. 2, 5.
& 18. 10.

⁸ Καὶ τὸ πτώμα αὐτῶν ἐπὶ τῆς πλατείας τῆς πόλεως τῆς μεγάλης, ἣτις καλεῖται πνευματικῶς Σόδομα καὶ Αἴγυπτος, ὅπου καὶ ὁ Κύριος αὐτῶν ἐσταυρώθη. ⁹ Καὶ βλέπουσιν ἐκ τῶν λαῶν καὶ φυλῶν καὶ γλωσσῶν καὶ ἐθνῶν τὸ πτώμα αὐτῶν ἡμέρας τρεῖς καὶ ἥμισυ, καὶ τὰ πτώματα αὐτῶν οὐκ ἀφιοῦσιν τεθῆναι εἰς μνήμα.

¹⁰ Καὶ οἱ κατοικοῦντες ἐπὶ τῆς γῆς χαίρουσιν ἐπ' αὐτοῖς καὶ εὐφραίνονται· καὶ δῶρα πέμπουσιν ἀλλήλοις, ὅτι οὗτοι οἱ δύο προφῆται ἐβασάνισαν τοὺς κατοικοῦντας ἐπὶ τῆς γῆς. ¹¹ Καὶ μετὰ τὰς τρεῖς ἡμέρας καὶ ἥμισυ πνεῦμα ζωῆς ἐκ τοῦ Θεοῦ εἰσῆλθεν ἐν αὐτοῖς· καὶ ἔστησαν ἐπὶ τοὺς πόδας αὐτῶν, καὶ φόβος μέγας ἐπέπεσεν ἐπὶ τοὺς θεωροῦντας αὐτούς. ¹² Καὶ ἤκουσαν φωνὴν

These have the authority to shut heaven, that it rain not in the days of their prophecy: and have authority over the waters, to turn them to blood, and to smite the earth, as often as they will, with all plagues.

5. εἴ τις θέλει] if any one willeth. Cp. ii. 21. Philemon 14. In v. 6 A, C have τὴν, which is omitted by Elz.

What has been said above, on the *Loosing of the Four Angels*, and their *punitive power* (ix. 15—19), may serve in part as a commentary on these verses.

In the language here used concerning the *Two Witnesses*, there is a reference to the acts of *Elias* and *Moses*.

In the days of *Elias*, says our Lord, *the heaven was shut up three years and six months*. Three years and six months are equal to 1260 days, the time specified here. *Elijah* said to *Ahab*, There shall not be dew nor rain these years, but according to my word (1 Kings xvii. 1). And *St. James* says that *Elias* prayed that it might not rain, and it rained not on the earth by the space of *three years and six months* (James v. 17). More will be said hereafter on the meaning of this period of time, in the note at the end of this Chapter.

Fire comes out of the mouth of the two Witnesses to consume their enemies (v. 5).

The enemies of *Elijah* were consumed by fire, 2 Kings i. 10. Cp. Luke ix. 54. *Ecclus.* xlviii. 1. The Two Witnesses are caught up into heaven, v. 12; so was *Elias*, 2 Kings ii. 11.

There is also a reference to the acts of *Moses* turning the waters of the land of Egypt into blood (*Exod.* vii. 19), and smiting the land with ten plagues (*Exod.* ix. 14).

We shall see also in the following verses, that their Acts, Sufferings, and Victory, are compared with those of Christ Himself (vv. 7—12).

At the time of the Transfiguration, *Moses* was the Representative of the Law; *Elias*, the Representative of the Prophets; Christ, the Representative of the Gospel (see on Matt. xvii. 23). And the *Old Testament* was commonly called "*Moses and the Prophets*" by Christ and by the Jews. See Luke xvi. 29; xxiv. 27. 44.

Very appropriate therefore is this comparison of the acts and sufferings of the Two Testaments, and those of *Moses*, *Elias*, and Christ.

The woes here specified fall upon all who despise the Scriptures. If any one despises them, fire cometh out of their Mouth, and consumes their enemies. They can shut heaven, like *Elias*, and exclude all who reject them. The dews of divine grace are withheld from all who scorn them. The heavens are brass and the earth is iron to their foes. The Waters of salvation become blood to revilers or scoffers of Scripture. To them the Blessing is a Bane; the Scripture a Scourge; Preaching a Plague; the Word a Woe.

7—10. καὶ ὅταν τελέσωσι] And when they shall have finished their witness, the Beast that ascendeth out of the bottomless pit, or abyss, shall make war against them, and will overcome them, and kill them; and their dead body (will lie) in the broadway of the Great City, which spiritually is called Sodom and Egypt, where also their Lord was crucified. And some of the peoples and tribes and tongues and nations see their dead body three days and an half, and do not suffer their dead bodies to be put in a monument.

And they that dwell upon the earth rejoice over them, and

make merry, and shall send gifts one to another: because these two Prophets tormented them that dwell on the earth.

In v. 7, on ὅταν τελέσωσιν, "when they shall have finished," see *Winer*, § 42, pp. 275, 276.

11—13.] And after the three days and an half the Spirit of life from God entered in them, and they stood upon their feet; and great fear fell upon them which saw them. And they heard a great voice from heaven saying unto them, Come up hither. And they ascended up to heaven on the cloud; and their enemies beheld them. And in that hour was there a great earthquake, and the tenth part of the city fell, and in the earthquake were slain of men seven thousand: and the remnant were affrighted, and gave glory to the God of heaven.

14.] The second Woe is past.

Some various readings are to be first noted here.

In v. 7, after θηρίον A adds τὸ τέταρτον (the fourth), connecting this prophecy with that of *Daniel*, ch. vii.

In v. 8 A, B, C have πτώμα, dead body, in the singular number. And so *Griesb.*, *Scholz*, *Lach.*, *Tisch.* A remarkable reading, and doubtless the correct one; showing that the Two Witnesses have two bodies (v. 9), and yet one body; they are two and yet one; the Old and New Testaments are two, and make one Book, the only Written Word of the One True God; "Omnis Scriptura Sancta unus liber appellatur," *S. Jerome*, in *Esa.* xxx. *Elz.* has πτώματα here.

8—12. ὅπου καὶ ὁ Κύριος αὐτῶν] where also their Lord was crucified. So A, B, C, and so *Griesb.*, *Scholz*, *Lach.*, *Tisch.* *Elz.* has ὁ Κ. ἡμῶν.

The true reading brings out the similarity between the sufferings of Christ, the Incarnate Word, and those of the Two Witnesses, which are His Written Word.

9. βλέπουσιν] they behold. So A, B, C, in the present tense; and so *Griesb.*, *Scholz*, *Lach.*, *Tisch.* *Elz.* has the future here, and ἀφήσουσι; but A, C have ἀφιοῦσι, and so *Lach.*, *Tisch.* As to the form of the verb see *Mark* i. 34; xi. 16. The present tense is the prophetic present, and is more expressive, as bringing before the eyes a thing still future, and vividly displaying it as present. Cp. *Matt.* xxiv. 40. *John* xvi. 15. *Heb.* i. 11. See *Winer*, § 40, p. 238.

— μνήμα] monument, tomb. So B, in the singular number, and so *Griesb.*, *Scholz*, *Lach.*, *Tisch.* *Elz.* has μνήματα, in the plural.

B, C have χαίρουσιν in the present tense; and so *Griesb.*, *Scholz*, *Lach.*, *Tisch.* There is a lacuna in A.

A, C have εὐφραίνονται also in the present tense, and so *Lach.*, *Tisch.*

In v. 12, B and many Cursive MSS. and Versions have ἤκουσα, I heard; and so *Tisch.*

And when they shall have finished their testimony, or work of witnessing to the world, the Beast that ariseth up out of the bottomless pit will make war against them, and will kill them.

Here is a reference to the History of Christ, "the True and Faithful Witness," which we see in this Vision will be reproduced, as it were, in the History of His Holy Word; and in the treatment it will receive.

When the Lord of the Two Witnesses had finished His testimony—which lasted, as is most probable, three years and a half (see on *John* v. 1), or 1260 days, the term here assigned, as by analogy, to His Witnesses (v. 3)—when He had finished His testimony after that period of time, He was delivered up by the

μεγάλην ἐκ τοῦ οὐρανοῦ λέγουσαν αὐτοῖς, Ἀνάβατε ὧδε· καὶ ἀνέβησαν εἰς τὸν οὐρανὸν ἐν τῇ νεφέλῃ, καὶ ἐθεώρησαν αὐτοὺς οἱ ἐχθροὶ αὐτῶν¹³ καὶ ἐν ἐκείνῃ τῇ ὥρᾳ ἐγένετο σεισμὸς μέγας, καὶ τὸ δέκατον τῆς πόλεως ἔπεσε, καὶ ἀπεκτάνθησαν ἐν τῷ σεισμῷ ὀνόματα ἀνθρώπων χιλιάδες ἑπτὰ· καὶ οἱ λοιποὶ ἔμφοβοι ἐγένοντο, καὶ ἔδωκαν δόξαν τῷ Θεῷ τοῦ οὐρανοῦ.¹⁴ Ἡ οὐαὶ δευτέρα^{h ch. 8. 13. & 9. 12. & 15. 1.} ἀπῆλθεν· ἰδοὺ, ἡ οὐαὶ ἡ τρίτη ἔρχεται ταχύ.

¹⁵ Καὶ ὁ ἑβδομος ἄγγελος ἐσάλπισε· καὶ ἐγένοντο φωναὶ μεγάλαι ἐν τῷ οὐρανῷ^{i ch. 10. 7.} λέγοντες, Ἐγένετο ἡ βασιλεία τοῦ κόσμου τοῦ Κυρίου ἡμῶν καὶ τοῦ Χριστοῦ αὐτοῦ, καὶ βασιλεύσει εἰς τοὺς αἰῶνας τῶν αἰώνων.¹⁶ Καὶ οἱ εἴκοσι τέσσαρες^{k ch. 4. 4, 10. & 5. 8.} πρεσβύτεροι οἱ ἐνώπιον τοῦ Θεοῦ καθήμενοι ἐπὶ τοὺς θρόνους αὐτῶν ἔπεσαν ἐπὶ

Chief Priests of Jerusalem and crucified, and they and the world rejoiced over Him (John xvi. 20), as if He had been destroyed; as *earthly* men are here described as exulting over the death of the Witnesses; but *in a little while* (John xvi. 16. 20, 21) He arose from the dead, and there was a *great earthquake*, and the *keepers* of the sepulchre did *shake for fear*, and became as *dead men* (Matt. xxviii. 2—4), and He *ascended on a cloud* into heaven (Acts i. 9).

In order to remind the reader of this analogy between the Two Witnesses and Christ, it is said that the Witnesses ascend on the cloud (τῇ νεφέλῃ), that is, the cloud of Christ's Glory. (Cp. i. 7; x. 1; xiv. 14. 16.)

The war against the Witnesses, and their death, are here ascribed to "the Beast that ascendeth from the abyss." This Beast has not yet been described. This peculiar use of the article (as already observed) may be called *prophetic*; it indicates that the object is already visible to the eye of the writer, who is illumined by the Holy Spirit. It may also be designed here to remind the reader that the Beast here mentioned had been already described by another writer of Holy Scripture, the Prophet Daniel (ch. vii. 19), and thus St. John knits on his own prophecy to that of Daniel. Compare the words here used with those of Daniel, vii. 21, ἐποίει πόλεμον μετὰ τῶν ἁγίων καὶ ἴσχυσε πρὸς αὐτούς. St. John also thus connects his own language here with the fuller description which he will give hereafter of this Power. See xiii. 7; xvii. 18, where the Beast is said as here to ascend out of the abyss. He thus brings the past and future into one view. On this prophetic use of the article, see above, in iv. 4; "the Four-and-Twenty Elders" (x. 3), "the seven Thunders" (xi. 8), "the great City," to be described afterwards (xiii. 14), "the two wings of the great Eagle," intimating that the mind of the inspired Writer had a full view of the idea, though not familiar to the reader. So xix. 20, "the lake of fire," to be described afterward in xx. 10. 14, 15; xxi. 8.

Their dead body (it is added) lieth in the *broadway* (πλατεῖα) of the Great City. "The great City:" here is another anticipation: this name designates the City which is to be described fully hereafter. The words, "the Great City," occur nine times in the Apocalypse (xi. 8; xiv. 8; xvi. 19; xvii. 18; xviii. 10. 16. 18. 21). In xxi. 10, the reading of *Elz.* has been corrected by *Griesb., Scholz, Lach., Tisch.*

In all these passages the same City is designated by them; namely, the spiritual Babylon; "Babylon the Great," as it is always called, never "Babylon" simply; see xvi. 19; xvii. 5; xviii. 2. 10. An Angel of God has explained what City is meant by the words "the Great City;" see below, xvii. 18.

What this Great City is, will be considered more fully hereafter, when it is described. See below, preliminary Note on chap. xvii.

The dead body of the Two Witnesses is here said to lie in the *broadway of the Great City*, which spiritually (i. e. mystically, or symbolically) is called *Sodom and Egypt*, where also their Lord was crucified.

We are not here (says *Hengstenberg*, p. 529) to think of the literal Jerusalem; but Jerusalem here denotes the Church degenerate through the ascendancy of the worldly spirit, and filled with offences; as, on the other hand, the new Jerusalem denotes the Church purified. The term *spiritually* is to be also annexed to the expression, "where their Lord was crucified." Outwardly, the Lord was crucified in the literal Jerusalem; but *spiritually* He is crucified in the degenerate Church. This interpretation had been already authorized by the early Expositors. "The Great City is here that which is called Babylon, where their Lord was crucified in His members in the world" (*Haymo*). And Christians who revolt from Christ are said by the Apostle to crucify Christ afresh. Heb. vi. 6.

A corrupt Church identifies itself with the literal Jerusalem,

whose Priests and Rulers rejected and crucified Christ, just as the Priests and Rulers even of our Lord's age, are said by Him to identify themselves with *their forefathers* of by-gone generations, by *imitating* their acts. He says to the Scribes and Pharisees of His own age that "the blood of all the righteous would come on them, from the blood of righteous Abel to the blood of Zacharias, son of Barachias, whom ye slew." See on Matt. xxiii. 35.

"The Great City," or mystical Babylon, is here compared to the degenerate Jerusalem which crucified Christ.

Jerusalem was the Church of God; and the reference to Jerusalem here shows that St. John is not speaking of the World which knows not God, but he is speaking of a corrupt Church, which has fallen away from Him.

This corrupt Church is also called *Sodom* for its immorality (Gen. xiii. 13. Deut. xxxii. 32), as Jerusalem herself is by the Prophets (Isa. i. 10. Cp. iii. 9. Jer. xxiii. 14. Ezek. xvi. 46. 48, 49. 55); and she is called *Egypt* also for her idolatry (see Ezek. xxiii. 3. 8. 19. 27).

9.] They (of the Great City) do not suffer their bodies (the bodies of the Two Witnesses) to be put into a monument.

"The dead bodies of Thy servants" (says the Psalmist in Ps. lxxix. 2, 3) "have they given to be meat to the fowls of the air, and the flesh of thy saints unto the beasts of the earth—and there was no man to bury them." The word here used for grave is not τάφος, but μνῆμα, monument, in the singular.

It may be designed to signify that not only would the people of the mystical Babylon treat the Two Witnesses with contempt and destroy them, but would not allow any record of them to be made; and would, as far as possible, obliterate all traces of them.

It has been well observed on the word μνῆμα here, that this act of the enemies of the Witnesses is done, "ne eorum memoria habeatur, quia monumenta sunt ad memoriam" (*Aquinas*); and *Haymo* here expounds μνῆμα by "monumentum, quod moneat."

Something of the spirit described in this Vision is seen in those of the Church of Rome, who, on the plea of obscurity in Holy Scripture, withhold it from the people, and so virtually kill it; and who will not allow Holy Scripture to be committed to those enduring monuments of literature, such as editions, and vernacular translations; by which its words may be engraven on the memory of man, "in perpetuam rei memoriam."

The complete accomplishment of this part of the prophecy seems to be reserved to the last days of the World. For it is said, "when they shall have finished their Witness" (v. 7), which will not be till the eve of the end; and this prophecy is immediately succeeded by the Third Woe, or Last Trumpet, the Trumpet which will call all men to Judgment (vv. 15. 18).

13.] The Great Earthquake here described seems to connect the time of this the Sixth Trumpet with that of the Sixth Seal. See above, vi. 12—17. The plagues here described, says *Aug.* (?) are those which will afflict mankind for their contempt of the Two Witnesses, that is, the Two Testaments of God. And so *Bede*.

—ὀνόματα ἀνθρώπων] names of men: persons known and distinguished, whose names were often in people's mouths. Cp. iii. 4.

—χιλιάδες ἑπτὰ] seven thousand: a complete overthrow; see note at the end of this Chapter concerning numbers.

—ἔδωκαν δόξαν] they gave glory to the God of heaven, who thus proved His supremacy over the powers of earth (see v. 10, and cp. v. 20), a prophecy of the results to be anticipated from God's Judgments on "the Great City" mentioned v. 18.

THE SEVENTH, OR LAST TRUMPET, THE THIRD WOE, THE LAST JUDGMENT.

15. καὶ ὁ ἑβδομος ἄγγελος ἐσάλπισε] And the seventh Angel sounded; and there were great voices in heaven, saying, The kingdom of the world is become the kingdom of our Lord and of his Christ; and He shall reign for ever and ever.

1 ch. 1. 4. 8.
& 16. 5. & 19. 6.

τὰ πρόσωπα αὐτῶν, καὶ προσεκύνησαν τῷ Θεῷ ¹⁷ λέγοντες, Εὐχαριστοῦμέν σοι, Κύριε ὁ Θεὸς ὁ παντοκράτωρ, ὁ ὢν καὶ ὁ ᾗν, ὅτι εἴληφας τὴν δύναμίν σου τὴν μεγάλην καὶ ἐβασίλευσας ¹⁸ καὶ τὰ ἔθνη ὠργίσθησαν, καὶ ἦλθεν ἡ ὀργή σου, καὶ ὁ καιρὸς τῶν νεκρῶν κριθῆναι, καὶ δοῦναι τὸν μισθὸν τοῖς δούλοις σου τοῖς προφήταις καὶ τοῖς ἁγίοις, καὶ τοῖς φοβουμένοις τὸ ὄνομά σου τοῖς μικροῖς καὶ τοῖς μεγάλοις, καὶ διαφθεῖραι τοὺς διαφθείροντας τὴν γῆν.

m ch. 15. 5.

¹⁹ καὶ ἡνοίγη ὁ ναὸς τοῦ Θεοῦ ἐν τῷ οὐρανῷ, καὶ ὤφθη ἡ κιβωτὸς τῆς διαθήκης αὐτοῦ ἐν τῷ ναῷ αὐτοῦ· καὶ ἐγένοντο ἀστραπαὶ καὶ φωναὶ καὶ βρονταὶ καὶ σεισμὸς καὶ χάλαζα μεγάλη.

16.] *And the four-and-twenty elders, which sit before God on their seats, fell upon their faces, and worshipped God,*

17.] *saying, We give thee thanks, O Lord God Almighty, which art, and wast; because thou hast taken to thee thy great power, and didst show thyself to be King.*

18.] *And the nations were wroth, and thy wrath is come, and the season of the Dead, that they should be judged, and that thou shouldst give their reward unto thy servants the Prophets, and to the Saints, and them that fear thy name, small and great; and shouldst destroy them which destroy the earth.*

In v. 15 A, B, C have ἐγένετο ἡ βασιλεία, *the kingdom of this world became*; βασιλεία in the singular number, and so Griesb., Scholz, Lach., Tisch. Elz. has the plural. The true reading brings out in clearer contrast *the kingdom of the World*, as opposed to *the kingdom of Christ*; and its entire subjection to it. On the *eternity* of the kingdom of Christ, according to the Article in the Creed, "Whose Kingdom shall have no end," see above, on 1 Cor. xv. 25.

In v. 17 Elz. has καὶ ὁ ἐρχόμενος after ᾗν, but this is not sanctioned by the best MSS., and is rejected by Griesb., Scholz, Lach., and Tisch.

17. καὶ ἐβασίλευσας] *and didst reign*: that is, didst assert Thy royal power, and show thyself King. Cp. Deut. xxxii. 20. 35. 41; and below, xix. 6. The aorist is from the LXX Version of Ps. xcvi. 1, ὁ Κύριος ἐβασίλευσεν (πῆρ, malak), ὀργιζέσθωσαν λαοί. Observe the paronomasia in ὠργίσθησαν and ὀργή.

18. ὁ καιρὸς τῶν νεκρῶν κριθῆναι] *the season for the Dead to be judged*. A mark of time, connecting this portion of the prophecy with the fuller description of the Last Judgment in xx. 11, 12.

19. καὶ ἡνοίγη] *And the temple of God was opened in heaven, and there was seen in his temple the Ark of his covenant; and there were lightnings, and voices, and thunderings, and an earthquake, and great hail.*

The Heavenly Holy of Holies is opened, and the inner shrine is revealed, in which is the Ark of the Covenant; the Throne of God "Who sitteth between the Cherubim:" Lightnings are seen, and Thunders are heard: there is a great Earthquake; the Day of Grace is past, the season of Judgment has begun.

In this mention of the *Ark of the Covenant* and its concomitant Judgment, there seems to be a reference to that event in the History of the Ancient People of God, which presents itself at the beginning of the Vision of the Trumpets, namely, the Entrance into Canaan, the type of Heaven, and the Victory of Joshua, the type of Jesus, and the destruction of Jericho, the type of the City of this World (see above, on viii. 2—6). That Victory was achieved on the seventh day, when the seven Priests, who had compassed the City six times on each of the six preceding days, were compassing the City for the seventh time on the seventh day, and blew the seven trumpets of rams' horns, and the Ark of the Covenant of the Lord followed them; and the People shouted, and the walls fell down flat, and the people entered the City (Josh. vi. 4—16).

Here, at the sounding of the Seventh Trumpet, which has brought us to the end of all earthly things, St. John pauses; as he had done at the end of the seventh seal; and, after his manner, reverts to the first age of the Gospel, and will now begin to prophesy again.

He has now traced, as we have seen, the prophetic history of HOLY SCRIPTURE. He has revealed the fact, that many bearing the Christian name, will not be thankful for that gift of God; that Scripture will be treated with contumely, in the same manner as its Divine Lord, by a corrupt and degenerate Church. Thus he warns the faithful Christian not to be dismayed or staggered by this strange spectacle, when it is displayed.

He is now about to return to the first age of Christianity, as has been rightly observed by the Ancient Expositors, in order to deliver a parallel prophecy concerning the divinely-appointed

Guardian, Witness, and Interpreter of Holy Scripture; the CHRISTIAN CHURCH. He will now reveal what she herself must expect from the same quarter, namely, from a corrupt Church.

The connexion of SCRIPTURE with the CHURCH had been displayed in the Vision of the Olive Trees, and the Candlesticks; and thus a preparation was made for this transition from the prophetic HISTORY of SCRIPTURE, to the prophetic HISTORY of the CHURCH, in relation to a particular form of spiritual defection.

The parallel between the fortunes of SCRIPTURE and the CHURCH is also marked by a chronological characteristic. The Two Witnesses prophesy, or preach, in sackcloth, *one thousand two hundred and sixty days* (xi. 3). Similarly the Woman,—that is, the CHURCH,—to be described in the following Vision, is in the wilderness for *one thousand two hundred and sixty days* (xii. 6).

Here we are led to an interesting and important Question, viz.

What is the meaning of the NUMBERS in the Apocalypse?

(1) We may begin with the number SEVEN, which meets us at the opening of the Apocalypse.

This number is composed of 3+4. The number Three is a divine number; the number of the Ever-blessed Trinity. We find it in the Old Testament in the Trine Benediction (Numb. vi. 24—26); and in the Seraphic Trisagion (Isa. vi. 3).

The Number Four in Scripture is expressive of universality of space. (Four winds, four corners of the earth. Matt. xxiv. 31. Acts x. 11. Rev. vii. 1.) See above on Matt. x. 2.

The Number Seven expresses completeness; especially completeness after labour to produce it.

The clue to this meaning seems to be presented by the Scriptural History of the Work of Creation of the Universe by God; "In six days the LORD made Heaven and Earth, and on the seventh Day He rested" (Exod. xxxi. 17. Cp. Gen. ii. 2). And this rest of God was a type of that *Eternal Rest* (σαββατισμός) which "remaineth to the People of God." (Heb. iv. 9.)

The Seventh Day in the History of the Creation differs from all the other six Days. They all have an Evening. "The Evening and Morning were the First Day." And so it is said of each of the other five days. But the Seventh Day has no Evening. It is a type of that Rest which has no end.

Enoch, the seventh from Adam, did not die, but was translated (see Jude 14. Heb. xi. 5). He was like a personified Sabbath. He was a type of the faithful who walk with God, and do not see death, and rest in Christ (Matt. xvi. 28. John viii. 51. Rev. xiv. 13).

Thus in the beginning of Holy Scripture we see the number Seven consecrated as a symbol of Rest after work done in a preceding series of Six.

In almost all the Holy Days of the Levitical Law we see the predominance of this element of Seven: e.g. in the Sabbath; the Passover (Exod. xii. 15, 16); the Pentecost (Deut. xvi. 9); the Feast of Tabernacles (Deut. xvi. 13, 15).

We see the same symbol in the entrance to Canaan, the type of Heaven, promised to the true Israelites.

Six Times Seven Stations brought the People through the wilderness to the promised land. (See Numb. xxxiii. 1—50; and S. Jerome de xlii. Mansionibus in eremo.)

For Six successive days the Great City Jericho was encompassed, and on the Seventh it fell, and the people entered in with a shout of victory. (See above, on viii. 2—6.)

In the Second or New Creation we see a similar principle. In the Genealogy, with which St. Matthew's Gospel begins, there are Six Sevens, which bring us from Abraham to Christ; in whom all the faithful have Rest. (See on Matt. i. 17.)

In St. Luke's Genealogy of Christ (iii. 23—38), Ten times Seven Generations bring us from Christ through Adam to God. (See on Matt. xviii. 22.)

XII. ¹ Καὶ σημείον μέγα ὤφθη ἐν τῷ οὐρανῷ· γυνὴ περιβεβλημένη τὸν ἥλιον, καὶ ἡ σελήνη ὑποκάτω τῶν ποδῶν αὐτῆς, καὶ ἐπὶ τῆς κεφαλῆς αὐτῆς

Thus then we see that the sacred purpose of the number *seven* is to signify *rest* after *toil*. This is its use in the Apocalypse.

The *Seven Seals* exhibit the sufferings of the Church in her pilgrimage through the world, and lead her to her eternal Rest. (Rev. vi. 1; viii. 1.)

The *Seven Trumpets* proclaim all God's judgments on her enemies and the enemies of Christ, till the end, when the Kingdom of this World becomes "the Kingdom of the Lord and of His Christ." (Rev. viii. 2; xi. 15, 17, 18.)

The *Seven Vials* pour out all God's wrath on a particular form of wickedness which rebels against Him (xv. 7; xvi. 17).

Other Septenary combinations there are, all expressive of *completion*; all terminating after a successive series in some great consummation, just as the Hexæmeron of Creation ended in the Sabbath of God.

(2) The number *Four* seems to have the same relation to *space*, that the number *seven* has to *time*; it signifies completeness, universality. It rests on a *natural* basis, that is, on the idea of space considered in reference to the four cardinal points.

Thus, in the ancient Scriptures, we find the expression "the four winds of heaven" as significant of all space (Dan. viii. 8, 22. Zech. ii. 6); and this expression is adopted by our Lord Himself in the Gospel. (Matt. xxiv. 31. Mark xiii. 27.)

In the Apocalypse, the number *four* appears often in this sense. Thus, just before the final consummation we see *four* Angels standing on the four corners of the Earth, that the wind should not blow on the earth (vii. 1. Cp. xx. 8). And this consideration may serve to explain such phrases as the following, "the blood from the winepress flowed to *four times four hundred furlongs*" (xiv. 20), that is, was extended far and wide.

(3) The Number *Twelve* (4×3) bears a similar relation to *mankind*, that *seven* has to *time*, and *four* has to *space*; and this reference is one which belongs to *mankind* considered in union with God. See above, on Matt. x. 2.

In the old dispensation, we see this Number Twelve in the *Twelve Sons of Israel*, the *Fathers of the Twelve Tribes* of the People of God. In the Gospel it reappears in the *Twelve Apostles*, the *Patriarchs of the Spiritual Israel*. See above, on Matt. x. 2. "These Twelve are the labourers who were to be sent by Christ, and who were to baptize the *Four* quarters of the *World* into the Faith of the *THREE PERSONS of the Godhead*." Aug. (in Ps. lix. Cp. Matt. xxviii. 19.)

Accordingly, in the Apocalypse we see that the *whole body* of the *Saints of God*, the *true Israelites* who are admitted as citizens of the heavenly Jerusalem, are represented as consisting of *Twelve Thousand* out of each of the *Twelve Tribes* of the children of Israel (vii. 4—9) = 144,000.

It would, however, be a great error to imagine that the Elect of God are *limited* to this number. Indeed, the Apocalypse itself forbids us to do so; it declares them to be innumerable. The number *twelve times twelve thousand* is not to be taken *literally*. It does not express a *quantity*, but a *quality*. It teaches us the important truth, that this great, this innumerable company of true Israelites, are united in one Faith, that is, in the Faith taught by the *Twelve Apostles* of Christ. See above, on vii. 4—9.

The same truth is taught in the Vision of the *faithful Church*, who is represented as a Woman having on her head a crown of *Twelve Stars*; that is, as crowned with the Diadem of Apostolic Doctrine and Discipline (xii. 1). And it appears in the structure of the heavenly Jerusalem, or Church glorified, which is described as having "Twelve foundations, and in them names of the Twelve Apostles of the Lamb" (xxi. 14).

Thus this number *Twelve* in the Apocalypse conveys with it in a significant manner the doctrinal and practical truth, that it is necessary to avoid the error of those, on the one side, who would have only *one Universal Bishop*; and of those, on the other, who despise all *Apostolic* discipline; and that it is requisite to hold fast that faith and regimen, and that form of sound words and virtuous practice which was delivered by the Twelve Apostles to the world, in order that all men might thereby come to the rest and glory of the heavenly Jerusalem.

Thus much may be said concerning what may be called *perfect numbers*, in the Apocalypse.

(4) On the number *one Thousand*, the cube of *ten*, see below, xx. 2.

(5) We may now turn to others of a different import.

The number *Six*—not attaining to the perfection of *Seven*, the sacred number of *rest*, seems to represent a *crisis of suffering*, or a *falling short* of the Truth.

On the *sixth* day of Passion Week, Christ was crucified.

And throughout the Apocalypse, the *sixth* period, in the groups of *seven*, is the time of *severest trial*. It is, as it were, the Eve of the End; the "Day of Preparation" before the Sabbath, to the Good; the hour of Repentance before condemnation, to the Evil.

Thus the *Sixth Seal* represents the time of severest suffering to the Church (vi. 12). The *Sixth Trumpet* displays a prelude of the last Judgment to the wicked (ix. 14—21). The *Sixth Vial* is the signal for the battle of the great Day of God (xvi. 12), and the precursor of the final voice "It is done" (xvi. 17).

The symbolical meaning of the number *six*, as expressive of *falling short* of the *rest* that *remaineth* to the *people of God* (Heb. iv. 9), which, as we have seen, is expressed in the number next after it, namely, *Seven*, is exhibited in a remarkable way in the number of the *Beast*, opposed to the Lamb; namely, in the number *six* repeated thrice, 666 (Rev. xiii. 18), which shows a triple declension (viz. in *units, tens, and hundreds*) from *sabbatical rest and holiness*, represented by the number *Seven*.

(6) To indicate an *imperfect* term of *duration* in which evil is inflicted or endured, we find the following numbers, which exhibit some remarkable parallelisms, in the Apocalypse.

The Holy City is given to the Gentiles to be trodden down during *forty-two months* (xi. 2).

It is given to the Beast to exercise his power *forty-two Months* (xiii. 5).

Here is one parallelism of *oppression*; now follows another, of *suffering*:

The Two Witnesses (representing the Two Testaments or Word of God) preach in sackcloth *1260 Days* (xi. 3).

The Woman (or faithful Church of God) is in the Wilderness *1260 Days* (xii. 14).

She is also said to be in the wilderness *a time, times, and half a time*, i. e. $3\frac{1}{2}$ years (xii. 6).

All these several numbers represent the *same duration* of *time*, differently expressed.

The *forty-two months* = $42 \times 30 = 1260$ days = $3\frac{1}{2}$ years.

The *1260 days* = 42 months = $3\frac{1}{2}$ years.

Three and a half is *seven* years broken in two.

Forty-two is *Seven* multiplied by *six*, the number of *imperfection*.

These numbers have an *historical* basis in the actions and sufferings of the Ancient Church of the *literal Israel*, and of the Great Head of the Church, *Jesus Christ* Himself.

The number *forty-two* connects the History of the Christian Church with that of the *Israelitish Church* in the Wilderness. Its stations are enumerated in the Book of Numbers, and they are *forty-two*. (Numb. xxxiii. 1—50.) "And all these things," says St. Paul, "happened to them *as types of us*." (1 Cor. x. 6—11.) The *forty-two* mansions of the *Israelitish Church* are analogous to the *forty-two* months of the *Christian Church*. They foreshadow her history in her pilgrimage through the Wilderness of this World to the promised Land of Heaven.

This number 42 months, or 1260 days, equals *three years and a half*.

This term of *three years and a half* appears under that name as a type of suffering and persecution in Holy Writ. The famine in the days of Elias, when the Church of God was persecuted by Ahab and Jezebel, lasted for *three years and a half*. (Luke iv. 25.)

The time in which the ancient Church underwent persecution under Antiochus Epiphanes, was *three years and a half*. Josephus, B. J. v. 9. Prideaux, Connexion, on A.D. 168, pt. ii. book iii.

The earthly Ministry of the Great Head of the Church, during which He endured rebuke and contradiction from the corrupt and degenerate Teachers of His own People, lasted, it is probable, for *three years and a half*. See above on John v. 1; cp. Lowth on Dan. xii. 7. It is well said by Dr. Lightfoot (Harmony of the New Test., note on this chapter), that the *forty-two months*, 1260 days, or $3\frac{1}{2}$ years, are symbolical of *times of trouble*. He observes that the *Jews* have learned to make the same construction of it: and this also, that comfort might stand up against misery, was the time of our Saviour's Ministry. Christ preached *three and a half* years in trouble. (Cp. also Lightfoot on Matt. iii. 16.) So the Two Witnesses in the Apocalypse preach in sackcloth. He having finished His ministry was slain; so they. He revived and ascended; so they likewise. Their case is paralleled with Christ's, their Master's. See also Lightfoot's Choro-graphical Inquiry, chap. vi. sect. iv.: "The waste of sacred things by Antiochus lasting for *three years and a half*, the Jews

στέφανος ἀστέρων δώδεκα· ² καὶ ἐν γαστρὶ ἔχουσα κράζει ὠδίνουσα καὶ βασανιζομένη τεκεῖν.

³ Καὶ ὤφθη ἄλλο σημεῖον ἐν τῷ οὐρανῷ· καὶ ἰδοὺ δράκων μέγας πυρρὸς, ἔχων κεφαλὰς ἑπτὰ καὶ κέρατα δέκα, καὶ ἐπὶ τὰς κεφαλὰς αὐτοῦ ἑπτὰ διαδήματα·

retained that very number as famous, inasmuch that they often make use of it when they would express any thing very sad and afflictive. . . And perhaps it had been much for the reputation of the Commentators upon the Book of *Revelation*, if they had looked upon that number and the *forty and two months*, and the *thousand two hundred and sixty days* as spoken *allusively*, and not applied it to any precise or determinate time." See also his Sermon on Dan. xii. 12, p. 1250; and cp. *Vitringa*, pp. 449. 463.

What then, in fine, are the *uses* of these NUMBERS in the Apocalypse?

They do not indeed enable us to do what our Blessed Lord Himself has told us is not in our power. "It is not for *you* to know the *times and seasons* which the Father has put in His own power." (Acts i. 7.) They are not designed to gratify the cravings of a vain curiosity. They do not enable us to foresee and foretell the future. They do not qualify us to construct a prophetic Ephemeris or Apocalyptic almanack.

But they have more important uses than these.

They have, as we have seen, a doctrinal and moral import. They teach us the necessity of unity and constancy in the one true faith, and of communion and fellowship in the discipline and regimen of the Apostolic Church of Christ.

They also serve to connect and rivet certain prophecies together. The mention of the *forty-two months*, during which the Holy City is trodden down by the Gentiles (xi. 2), shows that the period in which this will be done is *contemporaneous* with the dominion of that power which is called the power of the *Beast*, and exercises its sway for a period described by the same chronological symbol of forty-two months (xiii. 5). So the mention of the 1260 Days, in which the Witnesses are said to preach in sack-cloth, connects *their* sufferings with those of the Church in the Wilderness, who is said to be there for a like period of 1260 Days, and it shows that the *Word of God* and the *Church of God* will be fellow-sufferers at the same time. They show that the sufferings of Scripture will coincide with those of the Church.

Besides, they have an *analogical* value. The Church, which is said to be in the wilderness 1260 days, is also said to be there for *three years and a half*. They remind the faithful Church that she is to look for trials—trials *such* as were endured by the ancient Church of Israel in her forty-two sojournings in the Wilderness;—trials *such* as were endured by Elias under Ahab, by the Maccabees under Antiochus, and by Christ from His own People. They encourage us with the joyful assurance, that if we are true to God, and maintain his cause with zeal, courage, and charity, then, though we suffer, we shall conquer also, as Elias did, as the Maccabees did, and as Christ did; that our sufferings will soon be over; that they will appear like a *few days*; then even for us there will be a Chariot of fire; and a heavenly Feast of Dedication; and a Cloud of glory; and a glorious Ascension into heaven, and an eternity of joy.

CH. XII.] Prophetic View of the HISTORY of the CHURCH; relatively to ROME:

St. John now *reascends* to the *first age* of Christianity, as he had done after the opening of the SEVENTH SEAL (see above, viii. 1); and, as the ancient Expositors have observed, he now proceeds to reveal the future History of the CHRISTIAN CHURCH; *not* in her *universality*, but in her relation to a *particular* power, which will now be more fully described—the Power of ROME.

The WOMAN clothed with the SUN, and crowned with TWELVE STARS, represents the *faithful Church*.

1—6. καὶ σημεῖον] *And there appeared a great wonder in heaven; a Woman clothed with the Sun, and the Moon under her feet, and upon her head a crown of Twelve Stars. And being with child she crieth, travailing in birth, and pained to be delivered.*

And there appeared another wonder in heaven: and behold a great dragon, red as fire (πυρρὸς), having Seven Heads and Ten Horns, and upon his Heads seven Diadems. And his tail draweth the third part of the Stars of heaven, and did cast them to the earth: and the Dragon standeth before the Woman who was ready to be delivered, in order that he may devour her child as soon as it was born. And she brought forth a Son, a Male Child, who is to rule all nations with a rod of iron: and her Child was caught up unto God, and to His throne.

And the Woman fled into the Wilderness, where she hath a

place prepared of God, that they should feed her a thousand two hundred and threescore days.

As to the reading of this passage. In v. 5, *Elz.* has ἄρρενα; but A, C have ἄρσεν, which can hardly have been introduced by the copyists; and so *Lachmann* and *Tisch.* The sense is, *she brought forth a son, a male*; τέκνον, *child*, being understood; there is an emphasis on the *masculine dignity and vigour* of the son, who is thus more distinctly marked. Compare Mal. i. 14, where ἄρσεν is thus put absolutely, a *male*, and the use of the word ἄρσεν by the LXX in Job iii. 3, and Isa. lxvi. 7, ἔτεκεν ἄρσεν, said of the Church as here.

Especially compare Exod. ii. 2, ἐν γαστρὶ ἔλαβεν, καὶ ἔτεκεν ἄρσεν, said of *Moses*, who, in his deliverance, and in his actions, in smiting the kingdom of Egypt with his rod, was a type of the Male Child of the Church, represented in this Vision as delivered from the Serpent, who was symbolized by Pharaoh the Egyptian King, in his persecutions of the ancient People of God.

The WOMAN in this Vision is the CHRISTIAN CHURCH. She appeared in *heaven*, for her origin is *from above*; hers is the kingdom of heaven. She is *clothed with the Sun*, for Christ is the *Sun of Righteousness* (Mal. iv. 2), and is compared in the Apocalypse to the Sun (i. 13—16; x. 1), and He is her Light; and they "who are baptized into Christ have *put on Christ*." (Gal. iii. 27.) She is *clothed with Christ*; as God is said to deck Himself with *light* as with a *garment* (Ps. civ. 2). She *has the Moon under her feet*, because she will survive the changes of this world. As *S. Hippolytus* says, de Christo, § 60, p. 31, ed. Lagarde, "By this Woman, St. John most clearly designates the Church, clothed with the Everlasting Word, Who is more bright than the Sun;" and as *Primasius* expresses it, "The Church being clothed with Christ, treads upon the mutabilities of the World." Cp. *Bede*, *A Lapide*, *Vitringa*, *Herder*, and others.

She has on her head a CROWN of Victory (στέφανος). This Crown is of TWELVE STARS.

Twelve is the *Apostolic* number (see note at end of ch. xi.), and Stars are emblems of Christian Teachers (i. 20). Her Crown signifies, that the Victories of the Church are achieved by the Apostolic Doctrine and Discipline, which is planted as a Crown upon her head, by Christ her King. "The Crown of Twelve Stars," says *S. Hippolytus* (l. c. p. 32), "indicates the *Twelve Apostles*." "It is an emblem of the Apostles, who by the light of the glorious Gospel, put to flight the darkness of Error, and by whose agency Christ, the Head of the Church, vanquished the World." *Haymo*. And so *Aquinas*, who refers to 2 Cor. ii. 14, and so *Bede*, *A Lapide*, *Vitringa*, and others.

The Woman cries, *travailing in childbirth, and pained to be delivered*. On the *infinitive* after βασανιζομένη, cp. *Winer*, § 44, p. 287. In this world, the Church, like Eve, brings forth children in sorrow. (Gen. iii. 16.) "Be in pain," says the Prophet Micah, "and labour to bring forth, O daughter of Zion, like a woman in travail." (Micah iv. 10; cp. Isa. lxvi. 8—10.)

v. 3. *And there appeared another great wonder in heaven, and behold, a great dragon red (as fire).*

This *other* wonder is also said to appear in *heaven*, because the Power here represented assails the Church,—the kingdom of *heaven*.

The Dragon is "the Old Serpent," who is called in this book the Dragon, see vv. 9. 15, 16, where the names *Satan*, *Devil*, *Dragon*, and *Serpent*, are interchanged.

He had been already described as a Dragon in Ps. xci. 13, and Isa. xxvii. 1. And by this name, the Power of *Egypt*, as the Enemy of God and of His ancient Church, is described in the Prophets, see Isa. li. 9. Ezek. xxix. 3.

The Christian Church, in this Vision of the Apocalypse, as in very many others of this Book, is regarded as having been prefigured by the ancient Church of God in *Egypt*, and in the *Exodus*, and in the *Wilderness*.

The Dragon is red as fire (πυρρὸς), that is, he is here displayed as *persecuting* the Woman. See above, vi. 4, where Satan goes forth on the horse red as fire, to wage war against the primitive Church.

The Dragon is also described here as having *Seven Heads* and *Ten Horns*, and upon his Heads *Seven Diadems*. Diadems are symbols of *Royalty*. Horns are emblems of *Power*. (Luke i. 69.) The number *Seven* represents *completeness* (see note at the end of chap. xi.). And combined with the number *Ten*, *Ten*

⁴ καὶ ἡ οὐρὰ αὐτοῦ σύρει τὸ τρίτον τῶν ἀστέρων τοῦ οὐρανοῦ, καὶ ἔβαλεν αὐτοὺς εἰς τὴν γῆν· καὶ ὁ δράκων ἔστηκεν ἐνώπιον τῆς γυναικὸς τῆς μελλούσης τεκεῖν, ἵνα ὅταν τέκῃ τὸ τέκνον αὐτῆς καταφάγῃ.

⁵ ^a Καὶ ἔτεκεν υἱόν, ἄρσεν, ὃς μέλλει ποιμαίνειν πάντα τὰ ἔθνη ἐν ῥάβδῳ ^a Ps. 2. 9. ch. 2. 27. & 19. 15. σιδηρᾷ· καὶ ἡρπάσθη τὸ τέκνον αὐτῆς πρὸς τὸν Θεὸν καὶ πρὸς τὸν θρόνον αὐτοῦ.

⁶ ^b Καὶ ἡ γυνὴ ἔφυγεν εἰς τὴν ἔρημον, ὅπου ἔχει ἐκεῖ τόπον ἡτοιμασμένον ἀπὸ ^b ch. 11. 3. τοῦ Θεοῦ, ἵνα ἐκεῖ ἐκτρέψωσιν αὐτὴν ἡμέρας χιλίας διακοσίας ἐξήκοντα.

horns, it connects this manifestation of the Dragon with the display of his power, as wielded by the *Fourth Great Monarchy*, that of *Rome*. See below, xiii. 1, and xvii. 3. 7. At the time here represented, the *Kingdoms of the Roman World* were under the *Dragon's* control. Our Lord Himself called him in that age the *Prince of this World* (John xii. 31), and St. Paul called him "the god of this world" (2 Cor. iv. 4. Cp. Eph. ii. 2; vi. 12. Col. ii. 15).

The *Diadems* here are *Seven*, and they are upon the seven *Heads* (ἐπὶ τὰς κεφαλὰς), and in this respect they differ from those of the Beast in xiii. 1, where they are *ten*, and ἐπὶ τῶν κεράτων, on the ten *Horns*.

The difference of the case after ἐπὶ in these two passages is to be noticed. With the *accusative*, the sense is, that the *Diadems* were upon the *Heads*; and the idea there is, one of firm collocation and settled subsistence upon the *Heads*. With the *genitive*, the idea expressed by it is that the *Horns* were surmounted by *diadems*. Cp. *Winer*, pp. 334. 362, and below, xiii. 1, where is an example of ἐπὶ with both cases.

The *Dragon*, Satan, has *Seven Diadems*, emblems of royalty. They are not on his *horns*, but upon his *seven heads*, which are more closely united to the body than *horns* are; and thus he is represented as exercising his dominion in one corporate Empire.

The *Beast* has not his *diadems* on his *seven heads*, but on *ten horns*, which have more the character of a separate existence, and also of a more precarious stability; indeed, his *horns* are said to give their power to him (xvii. 13). He rises from the *seven heads* (see xvii. 10), and exercises his power *mediately* by the *horns*, and not in the same corporate unity as the *Dragon* does.

In v. 4 the *Dragon* is said to draw with his tail a *third part* (i. e. a *large part*, see above, viii. 7—12) of the *Stars of heaven*.

The *Dragon* himself was once a bright *Star* in heaven. He was *Lucifer, son of the Morning* (Isa. xiv. 12). He had many bright *Stars* associated with him in a heavenly constellation. His fall was theirs.

The fall of the Angelic star led to the fall of the Angelic Constellation. The *Dragon's Tail* drew down in its train many bright *Luminaries, who kept not their first estate*, in the firmament of heaven. (Jude 6.)

The circumstance, that, in the ancient *Uranography*, one of the constellations was designated Δράκων, *Draco*, may perhaps be not irrelevant here.

This act of *drawing down Stars* from heaven, is expressed in the *present* tense, and by the verb σύρω, which sometimes signifies violent, and sometimes gentler, attraction, as in a σύρμα, *syрма*, a long trailing robe. See Acts viii. 3. John xxi. 8. Isa. iii. 15, where it is said of a robe; and Micah vii. 17, where it is applied to a serpent. The word σύρω, in the *present* tense, well describes the work which the *Apostate Serpent* is always doing in the Church; where he endeavours to draw down Teachers from their place in the Church, whether by force or flattery. Compare the words in Dan. viii. 10, where the *Little Horn* is said to cast down some of the *stars of heaven*, and trample them under his feet. As *Augustine* says (Epist. 119), and *Haymo* here, "The stars are falling from heaven, whensoever men, who seemed to shine by God's grace in the Church, yield to temptation, and fall away."

In v. 4, the *Dragon* stands before the *Woman*, and is ready to devour her child as soon as she is delivered.

His design is like those of his personal Representatives and royal Instruments, Pharaoh in Egypt and Herod in Jewry; the former against the *male children* of Israel, who were to be cast into the river Nile (Exod. i. 22. Acts vii. 19), the other seeking to destroy the *Man Child*, Christ Jesus (Matt. ii. 13).

The *Woman* brings forth a son—a male, (see note above on the reading here in v. 5,) who is to tend (as a shepherd) all the *Nations with a rod of iron*; and her Child is caught up to God and to His throne.

At first sight these words appear applicable only to CHRIST.

But, what is true primarily of Christ is, by virtue of His

Incarnation, and mystical union with all true members of His body, and by reason of the working of His grace, transferred to them. Hence St. Paul says, "My little children, of whom I travail in birth again, until Christ be formed in you" (Gal. iv. 19). So, in a figurative sense, the *Church* is in labour with children, till *Christ* be formed in them. They are *sons of God* by adoption and grace (John i. 13. 1 John iii. 1), by reason of Christ's Incarnation, and their baptismal Incorporation in Him, Who is "Emmanuel, God with us," "God manifested in our flesh" (Matt. i. 23. 1 Tim. iii. 16. Gal. iii. 26. Rom. viii. 15. 17). Therefore David had said, "Behold ye the Philistines also, and they of Tyre, with the Morians, lo! there was he born, and of Sion it shall be reported, that He was born in her" (Ps. lxxxvii. 4, 5). Christ, Our King and Priest, "has made us Kings and Priests to God." By His ascension into heaven, we are even made "to sit together with Him in heavenly places" (Eph. i. 20; ii. 6), and our "Citizenship is in heaven" (Phil. iii. 20).

And though it is primarily true of Christ that He tends the nations with a rod of iron (Ps. ii. 9), yet He Himself has said, "He that overcometh and keepeth my words unto the end, to him will I give authority over the Nations, and he shall rule them with a rod of iron, as potters' vessels are broken in pieces" (Rev. ii. 26, 27).

Thus Christ Himself has interpreted the present Vision. And to cite one of many ancient interpreters here, *S. Hippolytus* says (l. c. p. 32), "The Church in this world never ceases to bring forth the Word, who is persecuted by the world; she is ever bringing forth the male child, the mature Christ, the Son of God, God and Man, by preaching Him to all Nations." And as *S. Gregory* says, in reference to our Lord's saying in Matt. xii. 48, where see the note, "Christ is born in our hearts by the Preaching of His Word."

The *Rod of iron* is Christ's Word, the *Holy Scripture* (see ii. 27; xii. 5), and by it the *male children*, the masculine spirits of Christ's Church, are endued with power from Him to rule the Nations, and overcome the World. With it they shiver into atoms the potter's vessels—that is, the earthly, brittle theories of corrupt Religion and carnal Philosophy; and, having performed their mission on earth like *Elijah*, like him they are caught up to heaven. They are exalted in a glorious apotheosis. "To him that overcometh," saith Christ in the Apocalypse, "will I grant to sit with Me in My Throne, even as I also overcame, and am set down with My Father in His Throne" (iii. 21).

In v. 6, The *Woman* flees to the *Wilderness*, where she has her place prepared by God that they may nourish her 1260 days.

On the structure ὅπου ἐκεῖ cp. v. 14, and above, iii. 8; vii. 2. Pharaoh, King of Egypt, who persecuted the Ancient Church of God, is, as we have seen, called a *Dragon* in the prophetic language of Scripture (see on v. 3).

The *Ancient Church* fled into the *Wilderness of Arabia*, under the guidance of *Moses*, who was the typical representative of the *male child* of the Church (see Exod. ii. 2, in LXX, and above, on v. 5), and who was marvellously saved from the royal *Dragon* of Egypt, and smote the land and people of Egypt with plagues by his rod (see Exod. iv. 17).

In like manner the Christian Church is here represented as flying into the *Wilderness* after the birth of her male child, who was to rule the Nations with a rod of iron.

The Church is here represented as nourished in the *Wilderness, in the place prepared for her by God for 1260 days*, or *Forty-two Months*; as the ancient Church, which was with *Moses in the wilderness* (see note above, on Acts vii. 38), was nourished with *manna* (Exod. xvi. 15. 35. Ps. lxxviii. 24, 25. Neh. ix. 15. John vi. 49. 1 Cor. x. 3), in her *Forty-two Stations* in the *Wilderness*.

This period of time, *Forty-two Months*, corresponds in duration with the period in which the *Two Witnesses* are said to prophesy or preach in sackcloth in the prophetic Vision in xi. 3, and with the sway of the *Little Horn* in Daniel vii. 25. See below, v. 14.

c Dan. 10. 13, 21.
& 12. 1.
Jude 9.

d Dan. 2. 35.
e Gen. 3. 1, 4.
Luke 10. 18.
John 12. 31.
1 Cor. 11. 3.
ch. 20. 2.

f Job 1. 9.
& 2. 5.
Zech. 3. 1.
ch. 11. 15.

7^c Καὶ ἐγένετο πόλεμος ἐν τῷ οὐρανῷ· ὁ Μιχαὴλ καὶ οἱ ἄγγελοι αὐτοῦ τοῦ πολεμῆσαι μετὰ τοῦ δράκοντος· καὶ ὁ δράκων ἐπολέμησε καὶ οἱ ἄγγελοι αὐτοῦ·
8^d καὶ οὐκ ἴσχυσαν, οὐδὲ τόπος εὐρέθη αὐτῶν ἐν τῷ οὐρανῷ· 9^e καὶ ἐβλήθη ὁ δράκων ὁ μέγας, ὁ ὄφιν ὁ ἀρχαῖος, ὁ καλούμενος Διάβολος καὶ ὁ Σατανᾶς, ὁ πλανῶν τὴν οἰκουμένην ὅλην, ἐβλήθη εἰς τὴν γῆν, καὶ οἱ ἄγγελοι αὐτοῦ μετ' αὐτοῦ ἐβλήθησαν.

10^f Καὶ ἤκουσα φωνὴν μεγάλην ἐν τῷ οὐρανῷ λέγουσαν, Ἄρτι ἐγένετο ἡ

The duration of the Earthly Ministry of Christ Himself was probably a *time, times, and half a time*, i. e. 3½ years, or 42 months. See above, on John v. 1.

The pilgrimage of "the Church, which is *His Spouse and Body*" (see Eph. v. 23—29. Col. i. 18. 24), is represented as corresponding in duration to that Ministry; and this analogical synchronism declares the sympathy which subsists between Him and her. Hence *Bede* here says that this period of 1260 days designates the sojourn of Christ's Church, because Christ, whose Body the Church is, preached for that period of time upon earth.

For a further explanation of the meaning of these periods of time, see above, note at end of Eleventh Chapter, "On the NUMBERS in the Apocalypse."

It has been asserted by some Romish Theologians, that the Woman in this Vision represents the *Blessed Virgin Mary*. But the Exposition now given is that which is dictated by the language of the Text, and was received by the early Interpreters of this Book.

In addition to those interpreters already cited, we may refer to *Methodius* (Bishop of Patara, and Martyr, in the third century), who says (in *Catenâ*, p. 352), "The Woman is the Church: for the things here spoken are *not consistent* with the circumstances of the generation of Christ, Who was already born before the epoch of this Vision. The Church is clothed with the Sun of Righteousness, and she has a crown of twelve Stars, namely, the Apostles of Christ. Therefore we must understand that the Woman here is the Church, and *not* the *Blessed Virgin*; for the Mystery of the Incarnation had been accomplished *long before*." [The edition of the *Catena* (1840) has γάλα here; read πάλαι.] "The Church" (he continues), "which is the New Jerusalem, is in travail, as St. Paul says, and groans in labour with the redeemed, until Christ be formed in them (Gal. iv. 19), and she fears the Dragon, until she escapes his snares, and brings forth Christ in every man, that is, Christ spiritually formed in every man. He is both our Head and Body; He who died for us speaks in us, and has made us to be His members." *S. Augustine* (in Ps. 142) says, "The Woman is clothed with the Sun, the Sun of Righteousness; He Who is her male child, builds up *Sion*, and is also born in *Sion*. She, the *City of God*, is protected by the Light of Him, Who, as to the flesh, is born in her; and she has the Moon under her feet, because she overcomes the mortality of the waxing and waning flesh," and ad *Catechum.* (vol. vi. p. 65), "The Church in every age is bringing forth members of Christ."

This Exposition is also expressed by *Primasius*, who says, "Caput Ecclesiæ Christus in singulis membris dicitur nasci.—*Omnes enim qui in Christo Jesu baptizati estis Christum induistis* (Gal. iii. 27), *Et raptus est filius ad Deum et ad thronum Ejus*: licet in capite Christo præcesserit, congruit tamen et *Corpori Ejus*. Hinc illæ voces Apostoli, *Qui nos resuscitavit et considerare fecit in cælestibus* (Eph. ii. 6), *et conversatio nostra in cælis est*" (Phil. iii. 20). And *Bede* says, "Semper Ecclesia, Dracone licet adversante, Christum parit; masculum autem dicit, victorem Diaboli qui *fæminam* (Evam) vicerat. . . . Ecclesia quotidie gignit ecclesiam, mundum in Christo vincen-tem." See also *Aug.* ? "Ecclesia semper generat Dei membra—masculum autem dicit victorem adversus Diabolum;" and *Haymo*, ad loc. "Membra Christi quotidie parit sancta Ecclesia. Rectè autem sancti sub nomine masculorum comprehenduntur, quia fortiter contra adversa istius sæculi pugnant, sicut fecerunt sancti Apostoli et Martyres. De omnibus electis potest intelligi, qui in Suo Capite acceperunt potestatem ut regant gentes virgâ ferreâ, et confringendi eas tanquam vas figuli."

This true Exposition is happily embodied in the Collect for *Christmas Day*, and in *Bp. Taylor's Prayer* (Life of Christ, i. p. 28), "Grant, O God, that I may entertain the Holy Jesus, conceive Him in my soul, nourish Him with the expresses of most holy and innocent affections, and bring Him forth, and publish Him in a life of piety and obedience, that He may dwell in me for ever."

7—9. καὶ ἐγένετο πόλεμος] and there arose war in heaven; Michael and his angels go forth to fight with the Dragon; and the Dragon fought and his angels, and prevailed not; neither was their place found any more in heaven. And the great

Dragon was cast out, that old Serpent, called the Devil, and Satan, who deceiveth the whole world; he was cast out into the earth, and his angels were cast out with him.

In v. 7 *Elz.* has ἐπολέμησαν and κατὰ, but the reading in the Text (τοῦ πολεμῆσαι) is authorized by the best MSS., and is received by *Griesb.*, *Scholz*, *Lach.*, *Tisch.* On the use of the article with the Infinitive, where a design is implied, see above, Luke ii. 27. Acts vii. 19. Cp. Zech. iii. 1, LXX, and *Winer*, § 44, p. 293. The present construction seems to be without an exact parallel in the New Testament (see *Winer*, and *Lücke*, and *Düsterdieck* here), inasmuch as *no verb*, expressing a design, precedes the infinitive; we may however suppose such a verb; and an ellipse of this kind need not excite surprise in the Apocalypse.

Observe, St. John now reverts to an earlier period, in order to recite the antecedent history of the Dragon, and to explain the circumstances under which he was led on to persecute the Woman; and he traces that history till it is brought down, in v. 14, to the same point as in v. 6, namely, to the escape of the Woman in the Wilderness.

It is necessary to attend carefully to this process of recapitulation, which is so frequent in the Apocalypse (see above, *Introduction*, p. 147, and xii. 1, and below, xx. 1). "It is a common thing in the Apocalypse" (says *Bossuet* in ch. vii.) "to exhibit events in general outline, and to unfold them afterwards in more minute detail." This is what is done now. Satan is displayed as he was before his fall from heaven.

On one side is MICHAEL, the Archangel, and his Angels, on the other Satan and his Angels. MICHAEL, whose name, מִיכָאֵל, signifies, *Who is like unto God?* (contrast the words, xiii. 4, τίς ὅμοιος τῷ θηρίῳ; and see note above, Jude 9,) stands up for the children of God's people (Dan. xii. 1. Cp. Dan. x. 12, 13. 20, 21), against the Adversary, who deceives the world. Some Expositors have supposed that Michael here is a name for Christ Himself; but the other opinion expressed above has been rightly maintained by *Bengel*, *Ewald*, *De Wette*, *Hofmann*, *Ebrard*, and others. See *Düsterdieck*, p. 400.

v. 8. "Their place was not found any more in heaven." Compare Jude 6.

v. 9. "He that deceiveth the whole world." The deceits by which Satan cheated the World in Oracles, Sorcery, Soothsaying, Magic, and other frauds, are here specially noticed. These were put to flight by the power of Christ and of the Holy Ghost, in the Preaching of the Gospel by the Apostles and others in the first ages of Christianity.

Our Lord Himself, speaking of the consequence of the preaching of the Seventy Disciples, reveals the spiritual struggle and the Victory, "I was beholding Satan, as lightning fall from heaven" (Luke x. 17, 18. Cp. John xii. 31; xvi. 11). See the note above, on Acts xvi. 16, where is a remarkable specimen of that mysterious conflict, and of the victory achieved by the Apostle St. Paul over the Python or Serpent, who deceived the world.

The Revelations of the ministry of the Holy Angels, assisting the faithful in combating the Evil Angels warring against them, may instruct the Christian student, in reading Church History, and cheer the Christian soldier, in the conflicts of life.

The young man's eye was opened at Dothan; and "he saw chariots of fire and horses of fire around Elisha" (2 Kings vi. 17). "The Angels of the Lord encamp about those who fear Him" (Ps. xxxiv. 7), and the Angels are sent "to minister to them that are heirs of salvation" (Heb. i. 14). The agency of Angels is often presented to the view by the Holy Spirit in the Acts of the Apostles (see notes on Acts xii. 15. 21, 22). The presence of Angels in Christian Assemblies and in the holy worship of the Church, is made the groundwork of practical admonition by St. Paul, 1 Cor. xi. 10.

10—12. καὶ ἤκουσα φωνήν] and I heard a loud voice in heaven, saying, Now is come the salvation, and the strength, and the kingdom of our God, and the power of His Christ, for the Accuser of our brethren was cast down, who accuseth them before our God day and night; and they overcame him by the Blood of the Lamb, and by the Word of their testimony, and they loved

σωτηρία καὶ ἡ δύναμις καὶ ἡ βασιλεία τοῦ Θεοῦ ἡμῶν, καὶ ἡ ἐξουσία τοῦ Χριστοῦ αὐτοῦ, ὅτι κατεβλήθη ὁ κατήγορος τῶν ἀδελφῶν ἡμῶν, ὁ κατηγορῶν αὐτῶν ἐνώπιον τοῦ Θεοῦ ἡμῶν ἡμέρας καὶ νυκτὸς, ^{11 g} καὶ αὐτοὶ ἐνίκησαν αὐτὸν ^{g Rom. 8. 33, 34, 37. & 16. 20.} διὰ τὸ αἷμα τοῦ Ἀρνίου καὶ διὰ τὸν λόγον τῆς μαρτυρίας αὐτῶν, καὶ οὐκ ἠγάπησαν τὴν ψυχὴν αὐτῶν ἄχρι θανάτου. ^{12 h} Διὰ τοῦτο εὐφραίνεσθε οἱ οὐρανοὶ ^{h Ps. 96. 11. Isa. 49. 13. ch. 8. 13.} καὶ οἱ ἐν αὐτοῖς σκηνοῦντες· οὐαὶ τῇ γῇ καὶ τῇ θαλάσσῃ, ὅτι κατέβη ὁ Διάβολος πρὸς ὑμᾶς ἔχων θυμὸν μέγαν, εἰδὼς ὅτι ὀλίγον καιρὸν ἔχει.

¹³ Καὶ ὅτε εἶδεν ὁ δράκων ὅτι ἐβλήθη εἰς τὴν γῆν, ἐδίωξε τὴν γυναῖκα ἣτις ἔτεκε τὸν ἄρρενα· ^{14 i} καὶ ἐδόθησαν τῇ γυναικὶ αἱ δύο πτέρυγες τοῦ ἀετοῦ τοῦ ^{i Dan. 7. 25. & 12. 7. ver. 6.} μεγάλου, ἵνα πέτηται εἰς τὴν ἔρημον εἰς τὸν τόπον αὐτῆς, ὅπου τρέφεται ἐκεῖ

not their lives unto death. Therefore rejoice, ye heavens, and ye that tabernacle in them. Woe to the earth and the sea! for the Devil is come down unto you, having great wrath, because he knoweth that he hath but a short season. Observe the articles here, "The Salvation," &c. the promised and long-expected Salvation has now at length arrived.

Satan is the Accuser (κατήγορος, A has κατήγωρ) of the Saints, as he was of Job (Job i. 9; ii. 4, 5, and see Bp. Andrewes, v. p. 482). He is the διάβολος, or Calumniator, opposed to Christ our παράκλητος, Advocate and Intercessor.

Satan is also the Accuser of the Brethren, and he accused them before God, that is, in the face of God, and in spite and defiance of Him (see the words concerning Nimrod, Gen. x. 9), when he prompted those lying calumnies, with which the early Christians were traduced by the Heathen votaries and vassals of the Dragon, who vilified the brethren, as guilty of nefarious crimes, and as the authors of all the miseries which befell the Roman Empire. See Minucius Felix, c. 9. Athenag. Apol. c. 4. Tertullian, Apol. c. 8. 14. 40, and S. Augustine, Prolog. De Civ. Dei, and Dean Stanhope on the Epistles, iv. p. 474, and above, note, ii. 10.

The primitive age of Roman Persecution and Christian Martyrdom is presented to the view in this Vision (v. 11), and it displays the Triumphs achieved by those who were cleansed and saved by the blood of the Lamb, and shed their blood for Him.

Those soldiers of Christ overcame Satan by the Blood of the Lamb; because Christ by His blood had paid the price of their ransom from Satan's power; and they overcame him by the "Sword of the Spirit," which is the Word of God (Eph. vi. 17), as Christ did at the Temptation (see on Matt. iv. 4).

On this use of διὰ, as the cause and instrument by which a thing is done (v. 11), see iv. 11, and Winer, § 49, p. 356, and above, on Rom. viii. 11, and below, xiii. 14.

They loved not their lives unto death. That is, they persevered unto death in hating their life (ψυχὴν) for Christ's sake, and thus by death they gained eternal life (ζωήν). See above, on viii. 9, and cp. ii. 10.

They who tabernacle in the heavens behold their struggle, and sing songs of praise for their Victory.

The Angels are said here to tabernacle (σκηνοῦν) in the heavens. Here is an allusion to the earthly history of the Church.

The Church of Israel sojourned in Tabernacles in the Wilderness, and God dwelt among them in a Tabernacle, the figure of heavenly things (Heb. viii. 5). The great Hebrew Feast of Tabernacles was commemorative of the blessings vouchsafed by God's presence to His Church in the Wilderness, and was prophetic of the blessings to be derived from the Incarnation of the Son of God, and to be consummated hereafter in Heaven. In process of time the Son of God Himself came from Heaven, and tabernacled in us (John i. 14). He now dwells with the Angels, and He will dwell for ever with His Saints, as in a Tabernacle, in the Church glorified (see above, vii. 15; xxi. 3). And they who now in this earthly pilgrimage, make a right use of the blessings vouchsafed in Christ's Incarnation will be partakers for ever of the glories of that heavenly Tabernacle.

The season of liberty and warfare which the Devil now has, is short, compared with that of his future detention in everlasting chains of penal fire; see below, xx. 10, and note above on Matt. viii. 29, "Art Thou come to torment us before the season?"

13, 14. καὶ ὅτε εἶδεν ὁ δράκων] and when the Dragon saw that he was cast unto the earth, he persecuted the Woman which brought forth the male child. And to the Woman were given the two Wings of the great Eagle, that she may fly into the Wilderness, into her place, where she is nourished for a time, and times, and half a time, from the face of the Serpent.

St. John recurs to what he had been describing before in VOL. II.—PART IV.

vv. 4—6, the wrath of the Dragon against the progeny of the Church.

He represents the Dragon as persecuting the Church in his fury, because his frauds have been exposed and put to flight by the preaching of the Gospel. The Devil tempted Eve, the First Woman, the spouse of the First Adam, the "Mother of all Living" (Gen. iii. 20), the type of the Church. He now tempts the Church (see above, on 2 Cor. xi. 3). And she is carried by the two Wings of the Great Eagle into the Wilderness, where she is nourished for a time, times, and half a time, that is, three prophetic years and a half.

St. John is here brought again to the same point as in v. 6, the escape of the Woman into the Wilderness.

She is carried there on "the Two Wings of the Great Eagle." Observe the definite articles here, "the Two Wings of the Great Eagle."

Who is this Eagle, and what are His Two Wings?

The Ancient Church, escaping from Pharaoh and from Egypt, is described by God, in Holy Scripture, as borne by Him on Eagles' wings (Exod. xix. 4. Cp. Deut. xxxii. 11).

The Eagle is the King of Birds. Christ, Our King, Who is compared to the Lion, the King of Beasts (v. 5), is also likened to the Eagle, the King of Birds. And the Eagle is the Serpent's foe, as naturalists observe. "Between the Eagle and the Dragon there is a constant enmity; the Eagle seeking to kill the Dragon, and the Dragon breaking the Eagle's eggs; and when he hears the noise of the Eagle's wings in the air, he speeds to his den and hides himself." Cp. Horat. 4 Od. iv. 1:

"Qualem ministrum fulminis Alitem (the Eagle),

Cui rex Deorum regnum in aves vagas

Permisit—

Nunc in reluctantes Dracones

Egit amor dapis atque pugnae."

And Plin. H. N. v. 4, "Acrior est (Aquilæ) cum dracone pugna, et multò magis anceps." On the Macedonian coins of Amyntas, Father of Philip, there was a figure of an Eagle seizing a Dragon. See Wetstein, p. 798.

Our Divine Eagle, Jesus Christ, wages war with the spiritual Dragon.

The Eagle, also, bears its offspring on its wings (Deut. xxxii. 11), and casts off the feathers of old age, and renews its youth (Ps. ciii. 5).

So, our Divine Eagle, Jesus Christ, cast off the plumage of the grave, and soared in His glorious Ascension above the Clouds, and He carries His children with Him to His throne in Heaven, and is the Protector and Saviour of His Church (see above, on iv. 7; vii. 15), and they, like young eagles, flock together to Him. See note above, on Matt. xxiv. 28. Luke xvii. 36.

The Two Wings of the Great Eagle are the "Wings of Christ." "Christ" (says S. Hippolytus, l. c. p. 32) "stretched out his arms like Wings on the Cross, and called all to shelter beneath Him, as a Hen gathereth her chickens under her wings" (Matt. xxiii. 37); and as God by the prophet says, "to you who fear My Name, the Sun of Righteousness shall arise with healing in His Wings" (Mal. iv. 2).

These Two Wings are emblems of the Two TESTAMENTS. The Two Testaments are the Wings of Christ, the Incarnate Word. The Church flies on their pinions in her Missionary course through the Wilderness of this World. She is borne on the Wings of the Holy Scripture into all the world. As Primasius says here, "The Church uses the Two Testaments as her wings," and Aug. says, "The two Wings of the Great Eagle are the Two Testaments." "Their sound is gone out into all lands" (Ps. xix. 4). The flutterings of those Divine Wings, the flappings of those heavenly pinions, are heard every where, and they waft the Church into all lands. Christ rides on them as on the chariot

καιρὸν καὶ καιροὺς καὶ ἡμισυ καιροῦ, ἀπὸ προσώπου τοῦ ὄφεως· ¹⁵ καὶ ἔβαλεν ὁ ὄφεις ἐκ τοῦ στόματος αὐτοῦ ὀπίσω τῆς γυναικὸς ὕδωρ ὡς ποταμὸν, ἵνα αὐτὴν ποταμοφόρητον ποιήσῃ· ¹⁶ καὶ ἐβοήθησεν ἡ γῆ τῇ γυναικὶ, καὶ ἤνοιξεν ἡ γῆ τὸ στόμα αὐτῆς καὶ κατέπιε τὸν ποταμὸν ὃν ἔβαλεν ὁ δράκων ἐκ τοῦ στόματος αὐτοῦ. ¹⁷ ^k Καὶ ὠργίσθη ὁ δράκων ἐπὶ τῇ γυναικὶ, καὶ ἀπηλθε ποιῆσαι πόλεμον μετὰ τῶν λοιπῶν τοῦ σπέρματος αὐτῆς, τῶν τηρούντων τὰς ἐντολὰς τοῦ Θεοῦ καὶ ἔχόντων τὴν μαρτυρίαν Ἰησοῦ.

^a Dan. 1. 7.
ch. 17. 3, 9, 12. ¹⁸ Καὶ ἐστάθην ἐπὶ τὴν ἄμμον τῆς θαλάσσης· XIII. ¹ ^a καὶ εἶδον ἐκ τῆς θαλάσσης θηρίον ἀναβαῖνον, ἔχον κέρατα δέκα καὶ κεφαλὰς ἑπτὰ, καὶ ἐπὶ τῶν κεράτων αὐτοῦ δέκα διαδήματα, καὶ ἐπὶ τὰς κεφαλὰς αὐτοῦ ὀνόματα βλασφημίας.

b ch. 12. 9. ² ^b Καὶ τὸ θηρίον ὃ εἶδον ἦν ὅμοιον παρδάλει, καὶ οἱ πόδες αὐτοῦ ὡς

of the Winged Cherubim, the "quadriga Domini." See above, on iv. 6.

The truth embodied in this symbol has received a beautiful practical illustration from the usage of Christians, in placing the Two Testaments upon the Two Wings of an Eagle in Churches, and reading the Lessons of Holy Scripture therefrom.

In v. 14 it is said that the Church is to be nourished for a time, times, and half a time, from the face of the Serpent.

This prophetic period is the same as that which is assigned by Daniel to the sway of the Little Horn, who rises from among the ten horns, or Kings, of the Fourth or Roman Empire (Dan. vii. 2—27).

The word *καιρὸς* signifies *one year*, and *καιροὶ* signifies *two years*. Cp. *Winer*, § 27, p. 160. There is no dual in the N. T.

This note of time serves thus to connect this Apocalyptic prophecy with that of Daniel, and it also connects them both with the time of the *preaching* of the *Two Witnesses* in sackcloth, and with the pilgrimage of the *Woman*, or Christian Church, in the wilderness (see above, on v. 6, and on chap. xi. at the end).

15. *καὶ ἔβαλεν*] and the Serpent cast out of his mouth water as a river after the Woman, that he might cause her to be carried away of the river. And the Earth helped the Woman, and the Earth opened her mouth, and swallowed up the river which the Dragon cast out of his mouth.

The Dragon, enraged by the exposure of his deceits, by which he had deluded the world, and finding that the Christian Church had not been destroyed by Persecution, but rather had grown under it (see above, on the Third Seal, vi. 5), as the Ancient Church, when persecuted by Pharaoh, the instrument of the old Dragon, had increased in Egypt (cp. Exod. i. 2. 7. 20. Ps. cv. 24), now resorts to another artifice.

He casts out of his mouth water as a river to overwhelm her with a Flood.

Waters are Apocalyptic emblems of *Multitudes* (see xvii. 15); and a Torrent, flowing with violence, and sweeping over the land, is an emblem of a hostile army, rushing onward with an impetuous invasion; and is so applied in Holy Scripture. See Isa. viii. 8; xvii. 12; lix. 19. Jer. xlv. 7; xlvii. 2.

This Flood poured forth by the Dragon, after the time of the primitive Persecutions of the Church, seems to represent the Deluge of barbarous Nations, streaming down from the North on Europe and Africa, and disturbing the peace of Christendom, and reducing lands and cities to desolation, and threatening to drown the Church.

Such were the inroads of the Goths and Huns, and especially of the Vandals in the fifth century. See above, on viii. 8.

But by God's mercy these floods were swallowed up by the earth. These barbarians subsided in the countries which they had invaded, and were converted to Christianity. See *Bp. Wilson's* note here, and *Dean Jackson*, quoted above, p. 198, and *Archdn. Harrison* on the Prophecies, p. 341, and the following statements by a recent Historian of the Church: "At first, the Heathens of Rome and Italy imputed their own calamities to the Christians, and when the West of Europe had been inundated by the barbarous hordes, they affirmed that these disasters were sent by the gods (see *Aug. C. D.* v. 21), and they predicted a speedy downfall of Christianity. But they were silenced, when even the German conquerors became converts to Christianity." "The amalgamation of the German conquerors with the older inhabitants of the land, and the development of the new European nations, were universally effected by similarity of faith." *Gieseler*, Church History, § 79, and § 123.

Thus the Earth helped the Woman. This Prophecy also received a fulfilment in the Christianization of the earthly power of

Rome, which had been arrayed by the Dragon against the Woman. The first Christian Emperor *Constantine*, in one of his letters to *Eusebius*, refers to this prophecy, and says that the Dragon had been cast out by God's Providence and his own ministry (*Euseb. de Vit. Const.* ii. 46); and he placed in front of his palace a picture representing the Cross over his own head, and the Dragon beneath him cast into the abyss; for, adds *Eusebius* (*ibid.* iii. 3), "the oracles of God in the books of the Prophets described the Enemy as a Dragon and a Serpent."

17. *καὶ ὠργίσθη*] And the Dragon was wroth with the Woman, and went away to make war with the remnant of her seed, which keep the commandments of God, and hold fast the testimony of Jesus Christ.

The Dragon went away to make war with the remnant of her seed.

That new form of warfare is now to be displayed in the next Chapter, in the Vision of the Two Beasts.

These words supply important chronological data, as showing that the two Beasts, now to be described, represent a power subsequent in its appearance to that of the Persecutions in the earlier ages of the Church, and posterior also to the pouring forth of the Flood in the preceding verses, v. 15.

The words *ἔχόντων τὴν μαρτυρίαν* signify more than *having* the witness; they mean, *holding it fast*. Cp. vi. 9; xix. 10. 1 John v. 10.

There is a remarkable parallel between the working of the Evil One here and in the Seals, vi. 3—8. There Satan first appeared on the horse of fire, *πυρρὸς* (v. 4), that is, of Persecution. So here he is first displayed as *πυρρὸς*, red like fire. There, having failed of his efforts in that respect, he resorted to another device, and mounted the black horse (v. 5), and next the pale horse; and then we heard a mention of the Beasts (see above on vi. 8). And in like manner we are now brought to the Beasts in the Vision next ensuing (xiii. 1—18), in which they will be described with greater fulness and clearness.

18. *καὶ ἐστάθην*] And I stood, I was placed, upon the sand of the sea. A, C have *ἐστάθην*, and so *Vulg.*, *Syr.*, *Æthiopic*, and *Armenian* Versions. But N and B have *ἐστάθην*, and so the majority of MSS., and *Griesbach*, *Matth.*, *Tischendorf*, *Ewald*, *De Wette*.

In v. 12, there was a prophetic denunciation of Woe to the Earth and to the Sea; and now we are about to see two Beasts arising, one from the Sea (xiii. 1), and the other from the Earth (xiii. 11).

This station on the Sand, and the Vision of the Beast, rising from the Sea, the element of commotion, are contrasted with the Vision of the Lamb standing on the Mount Sion with His faithful servants, xiv. 1—5.

CH. XIII. 1—10. *καὶ εἶδον*] And I saw a Beast rising up out of the sea, having ten horns and seven heads, and on his horns ten crowns, and upon his heads names of blasphemy.

And the Beast [wild Beast] which I saw was like unto a leopard, and his feet as of a bear, and his mouth as the mouth of a lion: and the Dragon gave him his power, and his throne, and great authority.

And I saw one of his heads as having been slain to death; and the wound of his death was healed; and all the Earth wondered after the Beast.

And they paid worship to the Dragon who gave the authority unto the Beast: and they paid worship to the Beast, saying, Who is like unto the Beast? and who is able to make war with him?

And there was given unto him a mouth speaking great things

ἄρκου, καὶ τὸ στόμα αὐτοῦ ὡς στόμα λέοντος· καὶ ἔδωκεν αὐτῷ ὁ δράκων τὴν δύναμιν αὐτοῦ, καὶ τὸν θρόνον αὐτοῦ, καὶ ἐξουσίαν μεγάλην.

and blasphemies: and power was given unto him to act forty and two months.

And he opened his mouth in blasphemy towards God, to blaspheme His name, and His tabernacle, and them that tabernacle in heaven.

And it was given unto him to make war with the Saints, and to overcome them; and power was given him over all kindreds, and tongues, and nations. And all that dwell upon the earth will worship him, whose names are not written in the book of life of the Lamb that hath been slain from the foundation of the world.

He that hath an ear, let him hear. He that gathereth a captivity goeth into captivity: he that killeth with the sword must be killed with the sword. Here is the patience and the faith of the saints.

The word *θηρίον* is here rendered *Beast*; and no other English word can be adopted for it. But the English word *Beast*, derived from *Bestia*, does not exactly represent the original. The Latin equivalent to *θηρίον* is not *bestia*, but *fera* (whence *ferox*, fierce, ferocious), which is derived from *φῆρ*, the Æolic form of *θηρ*, *θηρίον*, and signifies a savage, predatory animal.

It has been imagined by some modern Interpreters, dwelling on the signification of the word *Beast*, and its derivatives in other languages, that the primary idea presented here in the Apocalypse by the word *θηρίον*, is one of revolting bestiality.

But this view is inconsistent with the use of the word *θηρίον* in Holy Scripture, and in the best Authors. The word *θηρίον*, used by the Septuagint and Theodotion, in the Visions of Daniel (iv. 9. 11, and passim; and vii. 3. 5—7, and passim), which are introductory to those of the Apocalypse, represents the Hebrew and Chaldee *חַיָּוִת*, *חַיָּוִת*, *חַיָּוִת*, the fundamental idea of which is *animal life*. And the Syriac Version renders the word *θηρίον* in the *Apocalypse*, by "*animal of teeth*," showing that the idea of wild ferocity was uppermost in the Translator's mind.

The Leopard and the Lion, which contribute their features to constitute this Apocalyptic *θηρίον* (see v. 2), are not hideous and loathsome, but noble and beautiful in appearance.

The Wild Beasts which were kept by the Romans for Gladiatorial shows, and to which the Christian Martyrs were exposed, were usually called *θηρία*, and they were commonly *Lions*.

There is a contrast in the *Apocalypse* between the *θηρία* or *Beasts* on the one side, and the *Ἀρνίον* or *Lamb* on the other; between the lawlessness, pride, and ferocity of the one, compared with the innocence, meekness, and gentleness of the other.

The *Horns* of the Beast are mentioned in this Vision *before* the *Heads*, because when the Beast was arising from the Sea, the *Horns* would first appear.

In a subsequent Vision, when the Beast *has arisen*, and has advanced to a later stage of its history, the *Seven Heads* are mentioned *before* the *Ten Horns*. See xvii. 3. 7.

The *Diadems* are *not* on the *Heads* of the *Beasts*, as was the case with those of the *Dragon*, in xii. 3; but they are on the *Horns*. This is important to be observed. The Beast does not exercise *his* dominion with the same direct agency and corporate unity as the *Dragon* did; but he exercises it *mediately*, by other Potentates, which did not exist in St. John's age; see xvii. 12, and on xii. 3.

The Beast is seen *rising* from the *Sea*, that is, from a confused and tumultuous element. See above, vii. 1, 2, and viii. 8, and below, xxi. 1. The Power of the Beast is thus represented as due to a confused and restless condition of civil affairs, and as emerging therefrom.

By the mention of the *sea* here, the reader's attention is also called to the Vision of Daniel, who sees four Beasts (*θηρία*) arising from the Sea. (Dan. vii. 3.)

Those Four Beasts represented the *Four great successive Empires* of the world. I. ASSYRIAN, II. MEDO-PERSIAN, III. MACEDONIAN OR GREEK, IV. ROMAN.

This is the uniform exposition of the best Interpreters, dating almost from St. John's age. See *S. Irenæus*, v. 26. *S. Hippolytus*, de Antichristo, c. 49. *Tertullian*, de Resur. Carnis; and *S. Cyril*, Cateches. xv. *S. Jerome* on Dan. vii., and Epist. ad Algas. Qu. 2; and *Theodoret*, ad Dan. vii.; and cp. *Winer*, R.W.B. ii. p. 611, art. "Thiere."

The language of St. John here is very similar to that of Daniel there—as represented in the *Greek Versions* of the LXX and Theodotion; and it is evident, from a comparison of the two prophecies, that this Vision of St. John is designed to be a sequel

of that of Daniel. Compare the words of the Text here with those of Daniel,—τέσσαρα θηρία μεγάλα ἀνέβαινον ἐκ τῆς θαλάσσης· τὸ πρῶτον ὡσεὶ λέαινα, καὶ θηρίον δεύτερον ὅμοιον ἄρκῳ (the form of this word ἄρκῳ, not ἄρκτῳ, in the Greek Versions of Daniel, and in the Apocalypse here, in the best MSS., affords a noticeable coincidence) καὶ θηρίον ἄλλο ὡσεὶ πάρδαλιν.

In this Vision of Daniel—who looks *forward* from the *Assyrian* Dynasty, under which he was living, to the three *succeeding* ones, the Medo-Persian, Greek, and Roman—we see first the *Assyrian Lion*, next the *Medo-Persian Bear*, and then the *Greek Leopard*. In this Vision of the *Apocalypse* of St. John—who looks *backward* from the *Roman* Dynasty, under which he was living, to the three *preceding* dynasties—we see the *three Animals* of Daniel, mentioned in an *inverted order*, and *combined* in the first Beast, here displayed. Hence it is evident that this Apocalyptic Beast *comes next* after the *Greek Leopard*, and that he has *absorbed*, as it were, the dominion of the three preceding Beasts into himself.

The Fourth, or *Roman* Beast of *Daniel*, is also described as having *Ten Horns* (δέκα κέρατα, Dan. vii. 7), which are declared to be the *Ten Kings* which would rise up from out of the Fourth Empire, i. e. the *Roman*. See Dan. vii. 23, 24. Cp. *Iren.* v. 25, 26. 30; and *Theodoret* in Dan. vii. vol. ii. pp. 1195, 1196, who says, "the Fourth Beast is the *Roman* Empire; and the *Ten Horns* indicate, that, at about the time of the end of that Empire, *Ten Kings* will arise from it." And so *S. Jerome* in Dan. vii., who says, "the fourth Empire, which *now* exists, is that of *Rome*."

The Apocalyptic Beast has likewise *ten Horns* (δέκα κέρατα), and his identity with the fourth Beast of Daniel is thus marked.

It is observable also, that Daniel has *not* likened the *fourth* Empire, or *Roman*, to any particular animal, although he had compared the first three Empires of the world to three several animals, viz. *Lion*, *Bear*, and *Leopard*.

The Holy Spirit who inspired Daniel seems thus to have intentionally left room, and to have prepared the way, for marking the identity of the *Apocalyptic* Beast with the Fourth Beast of *Daniel*. He now represents the Apocalyptic Beast as succeeding the *Leopard*, as the *Leopard* had succeeded the *Bear*, and as the *Bear* had succeeded the *Lion*; and he represents the Apocalyptic Beast, as composed of the three,—the *Leopard*, the *Bear*, and the *Lion*.

St. John takes up and continues the prophecy of Daniel, and he also adds to it. He represents the fourth Beast at a *later stage* of its history.

He represents it not only as having *Ten Horns*, but also as having *Seven Heads*; and he describes one of these seven heads as *having been slain unto death* (v. 3), and he adds that the *wound of the Beast's death* (ἡ πληγὴ τοῦ θανάτου αὐτοῦ) *had been healed*.

What do these *seven Heads* represent?

They do *not* represent the *kingdoms* which were to arise out of the Fourth, or *Roman* Empire; that feature is represented by the *Ten Horns*, bearing *Crowns* (διαδήματα, emblems of royalty). See below, xvii. 12, 13. 16, 17.

The meaning of the *Heads* is afterwards declared by an Angel to St. John, when he sees the same Beast, in a yet more advanced stage of its history. *I saw*, he says, a Beast "*full of the names of blasphemy*" (xvii. 3); thus he identifies *that* Beast with what he *now* sees, which is described as having on his heads "*names of blasphemy*," v. 1; and that identity is also declared by the characteristic of "*the Seven Heads and Ten Horns*" (xvii. 3). And the Angel says, "I will tell thee the *Mystery* of the Beast that hath the *seven heads* and the *Ten Horns*. The *seven Heads* are (i. e. they represent) *seven Mountains* on which the *Woman* sitteth. And they are (i. e. they also represent) *seven Kings*; the five fell, the one exists, the other came not yet; and the Beast that was, and is not, he is the eighth [king], and is also from the seven [heads], and he is going to perdition" (xvii. 7. 9, 10).

Therefore the *Heads* have a double signification; they declare the *local position* of the seat of the Beast; they show that his residence is in the City of the Seven Hills—*Rome*. See below, preliminary note to chap. xvii., and on xvii. 7—10.

His residence, at that *later stage* of his history, is still the *same* as when he is first displayed in this chapter, where he appears in his imperial heathen form, as the fourth great Monarchy of the world—the Monarchy of *Rome*.

c ch. 17. 3.

³ καὶ μίαν ἐκ τῶν κεφαλῶν αὐτοῦ ὡς ἐσφαγμένην εἰς θάνατον καὶ ἡ πληγὴ τοῦ θανάτου αὐτοῦ ἐθεραπεύθη.

The Heads also describe *successive* Powers, ending in the Beast. See xvii. 7—10.

The *Ten Horns* mean *Ten Kings* (xvii. 12), that is, ten *kingdoms*, as the parallel vision of Daniel explains the word. And here the *Seven Heads* are also said to mean *Seven Kings* (xvii. 10), that is, they signify seven successive *Powers*, of which *five* were past when St. John saw the vision (xvii. 10), and one was *existing*, and the seventh was to exist for a short time only; then the Beast would assume his *final development*, in which he would go "*unto perdition*" (xvii. 11).

What these successive seven Powers are, will be considered hereafter, on xvii. 9—11.

In the mean time, it is requisite to bear in mind, that the character of the Beast *varies greatly* from time to time in the successive periods of his history, as displayed in the Apocalypse. This will be evident from a consideration of the parts of this prophecy contained in chap. xiii. to chap. xx. inclusive. The neglect of this observation has produced confusion in the interpretation of this portion of the Apocalypse.

The *first stage* of the Beast's existence is described in v. 2 of the present chapter. There the *Dragon*, or Devil, gives him his *power*, and his *throne*, and great *authority*. Observe the word ἐξουσία, *authority*, something more than *power*, δύναμις. See on Rom. xiii. 1.

This *first state* of the *Beast*, as here represented, is that of the *Roman Empire* while *Heathen*.

This Interpretation is adopted by almost all Expositors, ancient and modern. See the commentaries of Victorinus, Bede, Alcasar, A Lapide, Hammond, Bossuet, Wetstein, Grotius, Eichhorn, Herder, Ewald, De Wette, Lücke, Bleek. That power rose out of discordant tumults and revolutionary elements, which might well be likened to a *sea* (v. 1).

In v. 3 one of the heads of the Beast is seen as *having been slain to death*; and the wound of his death was healed.

The head that was *first* wounded *after* the age of St. John was the *Imperial* head of Rome.

It was wounded in A.D. 476, when Romulus Augustulus, the last Roman Emperor, abdicated the imperial dignity, and the Roman Empire ceased to be.

It is *not* said in this prophecy that the *Head* was restored, but that the *wound of the death* of the Beast was healed, and he *lived* (vv. 12. 15).

It is added (v. 3), that *all* the *Earth* (i. e. the *earthly-minded*, see v. 8, and above on i. 7; iii. 10) wondered, gazed with admiration *after* the Beast; i. e. they followed in his train. See this use of ὀπίσω, John xii. 19.

The Beast now appears in *another* stage of his history, but he keeps his *name*; he is still a θηρίον; he has a wild and ferocious nature; and it is in *this* character that the Vision deals with him.

This is necessary to be observed.

The *Imperial* Power of Rome was succeeded by the *Papal*, and the Papal Power exercised as wide a sway, and a far more dominant one, than ever the Imperial had done.

In the words of an Historian of the Middle Ages, "The noonday of Papal Dominion extends from the Pontificate of Innocent III., inclusively, to that of Boniface VIII.; or, in other words, through the thirteenth century. Rome inspired during this age all the terror of her ancient name. *She was once more Mistress of the world: and Kings were her vassals.*" (Hallam, Middle Ages, ii. p. 284.) Thus "the deadly wound was healed."

In the words of Bp. Andrewes (c. Bellarmine, p. 296), "The seven-headed beast is the Roman power in its *different successive* forms, first as it was under the Pagans, and next as it is under the Popes. That power received a *deadly* wound in the *Empire*, and revived under the *Papacy*" (p. 289). See further below on chap. xvii. 8.

Doubtless the Papal Power has, and ever has had, some *other* elements in it *besides* those of a Wild Beast; but it is in its character as a Wild Beast that it is here contemplated by St. John.

The Papal Power, as far as it is *Christian*, and teaches Christian truths, is *not* the *object* of the Apocalyptic prophecy. But the Prophecy deals with the Papal Power, as far as it is a lawless, fierce, and persecuting power; in a word, as far as it is a θηρίον, a *Beast*, and is *opposed* to the Ἀρνίον, or *Lamb*, which is *Christ*.

It cannot be said with some modern interpreters, that, inasmuch as the Papal Power had, and still has, much that is *Christian* in it, it could not be represented by a *Beast* (θηρίον).

It is confessed by *all* Expositors, that the old *Heathen* Empires are called *Beasts* by Daniel (vii. 3. 5—7). But they had many *good* features in them. The *heathen* Empire of Rome is called a *Beast* in the Old and New Testaments; and yet, inasmuch as it had authority from God, and ministered justice in its Tribunals, it is also described in Scripture as a "*minister of God to man for good*," and was to be revered as such. (Rom. xiii. 1—4. 1 Pet. ii. 13.)

So the old Babylonish Empire is called a *Beast* in Holy Scripture (Dan. vii. 4), because it was guilty of *cruelty*; and yet its King, Nebuchadnezzar, is called *God's servant*, and the Jews are commanded to *obey him* (Jer. xxvii. 8; xxxix. 18); and holy men, such as Daniel, who calls it a *Beast*, and Shadrach, Meshach, and Abednego, who knew that it was revealed in that character, were *Ministers* of the Empire of Babylon.

The Persian Empire is also called a *Beast* in Holy Scripture (Dan. vii. 5), and yet *Cyrus* its king is called *God's Shepherd*, and *God's Anointed* (Isa. xlv. 28; xlv. 1), and Daniel, who calls it a *Beast*, served under the Princes of that Dynasty.

These considerations afford a reply to the allegations of some recent writers, who say, that the Papal Power could not be the object of this prophecy, inasmuch as it had good and holy men subservient to it, and inasmuch as the Word of God was preserved under its sway, by faithful Pastors, and the Baptism of Christ was administered, and Bishops and Pastors of Christian Churches have received their Holy Orders, transmitted from Christ through the intermediate agency of the Roman Church.

Such allegations as these are irrelevant and illogical. They proceed from an exclusive school of Theology, which does not rightly distinguish between *personal acts*, and *official qualifications*: and which interprets words and sentences, which are spoken with special application, as if they were general and universal. The vicious character of such reasoning has been exposed by *S. Augustine*, in his controversy with the Donatists of older times, and by *Richard Hooker*, in later days, especially in the Third Book of his Ecclesiastical Polity (see iii. 1. 8—14).

Let such persons be requested to consider that Christ characterized Judas as "*the son of perdition*" (John xvii. 12), and that he said to St. Peter, when he would dissuade Him from suffering, "*Get thee behind me, Satan*" (Matt. xvi. 23. Mark viii. 33). These titles, given by Christ, were doubtless deserved by those to whom they were given, in respect of the *particular acts* which elicited those names. But the *Baptism of Christ*, which was administered by the Apostles, Judas and Peter, was not therefore invalid.

When Judas betrayed Christ for money, he was the *son of perdition*, but when he administered the Baptism of Christ he was an *instrument of salvation*; when Peter dissuaded Christ from suffering on the Cross, he was like *Satan*, but when he preached Christ and suffered on the Cross for Christ, he was like an *angel of God*.

These principles ought to be applied to the question before us. *Dean Jackson*, on the Creed, book xii. ch. xviii., says, "Now, though the Bishop of Rome be more than a heretic, even the Man of Sin, nevertheless, seeing he sitteth in the *Temple of God* (2 Thess. ii. 4), even the acts of his Ministration or Priesthood are good; nor are the Bishops consecrated by him so polluted by Communion with him in their consecration, but that their Episcopal acts be lawful and good, so long as they observe the form of Ordination or Administration of Sacraments prescribed by Christ and His Apostles. The Word preached by them likewise hath the force and efficacy of begetting faith in their hearers' hearts." And he compares their case to that of the Scribes and Pharisees in Matt. xxiii. 3, and of Caiaphas in John xi. 50. Cp. *Hooker*, V. lxiii. 2. Serm. ii. § 27. *Bp. Sanderson*, Preface to his Sermons, vol. ii. pp. xxxvi—xlvi, and vol. v. p. 246. *Abp. Bramhall*, i. p. 119; ii. p. 38. *Bp. Bull*, ii. p. 203, or the notes above, on Matt. xiii. 30, where it is shown that a Church, though almost overgrown with tares, is still *God's Field* by reason of His good seed in it; and note on Acts vii. 38, where *God's people*, though polluted with idolatry, are still called a *Church*, by reason of His Presence, and of His Law, and Worship; and the notes on 1 Cor. i. 2, and above, on ii. 1.

The real question, therefore, to be considered in interpreting this Prophecy, is not, whether the Papacy has the Word and Sacraments of God, or whether many holy men lived under it; but, the question is, whether the *Papal Roman Power*, which succeeded the *Pagan Roman Empire*, has committed *acts of violence*, and displayed a *wild and ferocious spirit*; and whether it exhibited this spirit towards *many Christians*, and for a *considerable length of time*.

Καὶ ἐθαύμασεν ὅλη ἡ γῆ ὀπίσω τοῦ θηρίου, ^{4 d} καὶ προσεκύνησαν τῷ δρά- d ch. 18. 18.
κοντι, ὅτι ἔδωκεν τὴν ἐξουσίαν τῷ θηρίῳ, καὶ προσεκύνησαν τῷ θηρίῳ λέγοντες.
Τίς ὅμοιος τῷ θηρίῳ; καὶ τίς δύναται πολεμῆσαι μετ' αὐτοῦ;

^{5 e} Καὶ ἐδόθη αὐτῷ στόμα λαλοῦν μεγάλα καὶ βλασφημίας· καὶ ἐδόθη e Dan. 7. 8, 11
αὐτῷ ἐξουσία ποιῆσαι μῆνας τεσσαράκοντα δύο. & 11. 36.
ch. 11. 2, 9.

If this has been the case, then the *Papal* Roman power had the marks and attributes of a *Wild Beast*, and it deserved the name of a *Wild Beast* as much as the *Pagan* Empire itself did, to which it succeeded. It was even *more* like a *wild Beast* than the *Heathen* Empire was, inasmuch as it sinned *against* clearer knowledge, and acted in a temper directly opposed to the Example of the LAMB, and to His Gospel, which it had in its hands, and which it professed to preach; and inasmuch also as its cruelty was directed against the *followers* of the Lamb, and inasmuch as in persecuting them it persecuted Christ (Acts ix. 4, 5), and therefore it was like a *Wild Beast* raging furiously against the LAMB Himself.

The historical evidence of its conduct in this respect is too strong to be gainsaid.

On the 24th of August, 1572, St. Bartholomew's Day, five thousand Christians were assassinated at Paris, by command of a King, who acted under the direction of the Papacy; and within a few days after, 25,000 more were slain, in six towns of France. See *Ranke's History of the Popes*, p. 147, who says that the numbers killed in that massacre amounted to 50,000. Some days after this massacre Pope Gregory XIII. showed his approval of it, and went in procession to the Church of St. Louis at Rome, to give God thanks for it; and he commanded a Medal to be struck in the Papal Mint, to commemorate the slaughter, and on that medal he inscribed the words, "UGONOTTORUM STRAGES" ("Massacre of the Hugonots"), and he there represented that savage work as done by an *Angel of heaven*. This medal may be seen in *Numismata Pontificum*, p. 87, Lutet. 1679; cp. *Clarendon's Religion and Polity*, p. 427. Cp. below, xvii. 6.

Again; in the exterminating Wars of Religion, as they were called, waged by the Papacy against the Albigenses and Waldenses, about a million of souls were slain, as *Perionius* testifies, and his testimony is strengthened by the relation of *Thuanus*. And from the first institution of the Jesuits, under the special favour of the Papacy, to the year 1480, 900,000 persons were slain for their religion in Hungary, Bohemia, and other countries. The Duke of Alva declared that he destroyed 36,000 Protestants in the Netherlands in a few years. In the space of thirty years, 150,000 Christians perished for their religion by the hands of the Inquisition. The historical authorities for these statements may be seen in *Joseph Mede's Works*, p. 503, ed. 1677.

Such acts as these, continued during a period far longer in duration than that of the Persecutions of the Christians by *Heathen* Rome, sufficiently prove the fitness of the word *θηρίον*, or *Wild Beast*, to designate a Power, which displayed itself in such features to the world.

4. προσεκύνησαν τῷ δράκοντι] *They paid worship to the Dragon who gave the authority to the Beast.*

How, it may be asked, could any *Christians* be said to worship or pay homage to the *Dragon*, i. e. the Devil or Satan?

Observe the word *προσκυνεῖν*. This verb, rendered "to worship" in our Version, does not necessarily, nor usually, imply that highest *religious worship*, which is due to Almighty God, but homage and obeisance, expressed by *kissing the hand* to the object of reverence: whence the Latin *ad-oro*. See above, note on Heb. xi. 13.

In Gen. xxiii. 7, Abraham is said *προσκυνεῖν* τῷ λαῷ τῆς γῆς, which merely means that he did homage to the people by respectful inclination of the body. Cp. there, v. 12, and in Gen. xxvii. 29, Isaac says to Jacob that his brethren *προσκυνήσουσιν* αὐτῷ, and in Dan. ii. 46, Nebuchadnezzar the King is said *προσκυνεῖν* to Daniel. In the New Testament the word often occurs in a similar sense. See Matt. ii. 2. 8; viii. 2; xviii. 26. Acts x. 25. Rev. xxii. 8.

Observe also the case after *προσκυνεῖν*, the *dative*, as A, B, C have it, not the *accusative*. The distinction may be perceived by comparing such texts as Matt. iv. 10, τὸν Θεόν σου προσκυνήσεις. Cp. Luke iv. 8. John iv. 23, with Matt. ii. 2. 11; iv. 9; viii. 2; ix. 18; xiv. 33; xxviii. 9. Cp. *Wetstein*, i. p. 242.

The *accusative* signifies an act of worship paid *directly* to an object; thus *προσκυνεῖν Θεόν* is to honour God *as God*.

This distinction is remarked by the Grammarians, e. g. *Herodian*, Philetaer. p. 445.

But the *dative* case does not necessarily imply this. The use of the *dative* may be explained by the words of St. Paul in 1 Cor.

x. 20, quoting Deut. xxxii. 17, "What the Heathen sacrifice, they sacrifice *to devils*, and not to God." The Heathen did not pay worship to devils, *as devils*. But God regards all divine worship paid to any one but Himself as paid *to Satan*, who is the author of idol-worship. And St. Paul speaks from the *divine point of view* there, as St. John does here. They who abet the Beast in acts of fraud, lying, perfidy, wrath, malice, and murder, which are from the Devil (John viii. 44. 1 John iii. 12), and in deeds of savage cruelty against God's servants, and in acts of religious worship to *images*, or to *any creature*, are doing the Devil's work, and ministering to his glory.

This is a view which men may not commonly take of *cruelty*, *treachery*, *lying*, and *idolatry*; but it is the view which God takes of those sins; and He presents it for our warning in Holy Scripture, especially in the Apocalypse: as to idolatry, see Lev. xvii. 7. Deut. xxxii. 17. Ps. cvi. 37. 1 Cor. x. 20, 21. 2 Cor. vi. 15, 16, and compare the note above on ix. 20, 21.

In v. 5, *There was given him* (i. e. to the Beast in his present form, as now displayed) *a mouth speaking great things*, στόμα λαλοῦν μεγάλα. So Daniel speaks of the Little Horn which grew out of the Fourth Beast, τὸ κέρας ἐκεῖνο εἶχε στόμα λαλοῦν μεγάλα.

St. John adds that he had authority to act *forty-two months*, i. e. 3½ prophetic years.

So Daniel speaks of the Horn, vii. 25, δοθήσεται ἐν χειρὶ αὐτοῦ ἔως καιροῦ καὶ καιρῶν καὶ ἔως ἡμίσεος καιροῦ, i. e. 3½ years, or *forty-two months*, the time here assigned by St. John to the Beast. On this stage of the Beast's existence cp. above, xi. 3; xii. 6. 14, and below on xvii. 10. (Dan. vii. 25.)

In the prophecy of Daniel, the *Little Horn* is represented as absorbing into itself all the power of the Beast; in fact the Beast passes as it were into the Horn, and is identified with it. The Horn is the Beast in a later stage of its existence. Here is a correspondence with St. John's Vision. There the Beast has seven Heads, and is itself *from the Seven*; and is an Eighth King. See on xvii. 10, 11.

The language of Daniel is similar to that of St. John; and both are evidently speaking of the same Power. And since the Power, of which *Daniel* is speaking, is confessedly one which grew up out of the *Roman Empire*, we here see a confirmation of the proofs already adduced, that the power described by St. John is one which rose up out of that Empire.

Indeed, the *identity* of the Beast is preserved in St. John; but the Beast appears here in a later stage, and in a modified form.

These descriptions also, of that Power in the prophecies of Daniel and in this of St. John, are very similar to the prophetic portrait drawn by St. Paul (in the Second Chapter of the Second Epistle to the Thessalonians) of the Power which was to succeed on the dissolution of the Roman Empire; and they mutually illustrate each other. Accordingly, they were generally believed by ancient Expositors to delineate the same object. See *S. Iren.* v. 26, where he connects the prophecy of Daniel (vii.) with this of the Apocalypse, and with that of St. Paul, 2 Thess. ii. 3, and so *S. Hippolytus*, De Christo, §§ 47, 48, p. 23, and *S. Jerome* on Dan. vii. *S. Cyril*, Cateches. xv. 11—14. *Theodoret* on Dan. vii.

The following synoptical view of these prophecies of Daniel, St. Paul, and St. John, may assist the reader in comparing them.

DANIEL.	ST. PAUL.	ST. JOHN.
(Chap. vii.)	(2 Thess. ii.)	(Revelation.)
The Little Horn	The Man of Sin	The Beast
rises up in the midst of the <i>ten horns</i> —which are <i>ten kings</i> (vii. 7. 24), arising out of the head of the <i>fourth Beast</i> (vii. 24; vii. 8. 20)—who rises from the <i>sea</i> (vii. 3), and is the <i>fourth kingdom</i> (vii. 17; cp. Dan. ii. 40—44). The Little Horn differs from, and is more	rises, as soon as he that letteth is taken away (ii. 6, 7).	rises from the sea (xiii. 1), is <i>compounded</i> of the emblems of the first <i>three kingdoms</i> of Daniel (see on v. 2); is wounded mortally, but receives a new life (xiii. 3. 12. 14); has <i>ten horns</i> (xiii. 1; xvii. 3. 12), which have crowns and are <i>ten kings</i> (xiii. 1;

⁶ Καὶ ἤνοιξε τὸ στόμα αὐτοῦ εἰς βλασφημίας πρὸς τὸν Θεὸν, βλασφη-
μῆσαι τὸ ὄνομα αὐτοῦ, καὶ τὴν σκηνὴν αὐτοῦ τοὺς ἐν τῷ οὐρανῷ σκηνούντας.

DANIEL.

stout, than the other horns (vii. 20. 24), is a King (vii. 24), has the eyes of a Man (vii. 8), has a mouth speaking great things

speaks great words against the Most High, and wears out the saints of the Most High (vii. 25), persecutes during a time, times, and half a time (i. e. three and a half years, vii. 25).

Finally the Beast (whose power subsists in the Little Horn) is slain, and his body given to the fire (vii. 11).

The evidence already adduced in the notes on St. Paul's prophecy, 2 Thess. ii. 3—11, shows that the Power, of which St. Paul speaks, was to arise *after*, and in the room of, the Heathen Roman Empire; and corroborates the arguments brought forward to prove that the Power here displayed in the Apocalypse is that Power which succeeded in the place of the Roman Imperial Power.

It is, therefore, the *Roman Papal Power*.

This proof is further strengthened by the fact that the Power of which St. Paul speaks, is described by him as sitting in the Temple of God (εἰς τὸν ναὸν τοῦ Θεοῦ), that is, in the Christian Church. See on 2 Thess. ii. 4.

It hardly needs be shown, that the Papacy has a mouth which speaketh great things, putting forth high and haughty claims in bold language.

At the Coronation of every Pope, the Tiara, or Triple Crown, is placed on his head in the lofty balcony in the façade of St. Peter's Church at Rome, in the sight of thousands; and he is crowned, with these words, "Receive the Tiara adorned with three Crowns, and know thyself to be the Father of Princes and of Kings, the Ruler of the World (RECTOR ORBIS)."

This language has been used for many centuries, and was applied to the present Pope on the day of his Coronation, Sunday, June 21, 1846.

The CLAIMS of the PAPACY are thus stated by one of the Popes themselves, Gregory VII., and are set down in the Church History of Cardinal Baronius (Gregory VII. Ap. Card. Baronium, Annal. Eccles. A.D. 1076), and are entitled "Dictatus Papæ," Dictates of the Pope. Surely we may say that he who utters them has "a mouth that speaketh great things" (v. 5), and fulfils the Apocalyptic prophecy;

"That the Roman Pontiff alone is rightly called Universal.

"That all Princes should kiss his feet.

"That his Name is the only Name in the world ('unicum nomen in mundo').

"That he may dethrone Emperors.

"That no Chapter or Book of Holy Scripture is canonical without his authority.

"That all greater causes of every Church ought to be referred to him.

"That the Church of Rome never has erred, and never will err.

"That a Pope of Rome, if he is canonically ordained, is indubitably rendered holy by the merits of St. Peter.

ST. PAUL.

a Man (ii. 3).
a Mystery (ii. 7).
sitteth in the Temple of God, and is worshipped (ii. 4).

worketh signs, and wondrous things (ii. 9).

exalteth himself against all that is called God (ii. 4).

is the son of perdition (ii. 3).

will be consumed with the spirit of Christ's mouth (ii. 8).

ST. JOHN.

xvii. 12), who receive power with the beast, and give their strength to him (xvii. 12, 13. 17).

has the number of a Man (xiii. 18).

becomes the seat of the Woman, whose name is Mystery (xvii. 5. 7); he is worshipped (xiii. 4. 8), has a mouth speaking great things (xiii. 5).

worketh great wonders by agency of the second Beast (xiii. 12, 13).

opens his mouth in blasphemy against God (xiii. 5, 6), wars against the saints (xiii. 7), acts forty-two months, or three and a half years (xiii. 5), goeth unto perdition (xvii. 8. 11).

the Harlot sitting upon him is burned with fire (xviii. 8), and finally the Beast himself is cast into the lake of fire (xix. 20; xx. 10).

"That no one is a Catholic, who does not agree with the Church of Rome.

"That the Pope is able to release subjects from their allegiance to evil men."

Such claims as these are usurpations of what appertains only to God, and are rightly called *blasphemous*.

In v. 6 the Beast is described as guilty of *blasphemy*.

It has been alleged by some, that a Power which confesses the true Faith of Christ in the three Creeds, as the Papacy does, cannot be charged with *Blasphemy*; and that the Blasphemy ascribed to the Beast indicates that the Beast is *not* a Christian Power.

But, observe the words of St. John. He says that "the Beast utters great and blasphemous words, and opens his mouth unto blasphemies toward (πρὸς) God, to blaspheme His Name, and those who dwell in His tabernacle in heaven. This is not the same thing as is predicated below of some who are said to blaspheme God (βλασφημεῖν τὸν Θεόν, xvi. 11. 21), with direct and outrageous impiety.

Is then the Papacy chargeable with acts or words which are *blasphemous* towards God?

Certainly it is.

The word "*blasphemy*" in Holy Scripture not only means an open utterance of impious language against God, but it signifies an *assumption* of those attributes which belong to God alone.

When the Jews said to our Lord, "Thou blasphemest," they did not mean thereby, that He was uttering any thing openly against God. No; they used this term when He forgave sins, for, "Who can forgive sins, but God only?" (Mark ii. 7. Matt. ix. 2.) He claimed *Divine Power*. And, if He had claimed it wrongly, this claim was *blasphemy*. Hence also, they said on another occasion, For a good work we stone thee not, but for *blasphemy*, because that thou being man makest thyself God (John x. 33).

Again, when Christ said to the High Priest, "Hereafter ye shall see the Son of Man sitting on the Right Hand of Power, and coming on the clouds of heaven," the High Priest rent his clothes and said, He hath spoken *blasphemy* (Matt. xxvi. 64, 65). He hath claimed for Himself what belongs only to God. And if this claim was *not* a just one, it was *blasphemy*. Hence it is clear, that they are guilty of *blasphemy*, who assume to themselves powers and honours which belong to God.

Apply this test to the Papacy. It claims for itself *Infallibility, Indefectibility, Eternity*. These are usurpations of the incommunicable NAME. "When that which is *temporal* claims *Eternity*, this is a name of *blasphemy*," says S. Jerome, ad Algasiam, Qu. xi.

The ancient Expositors thus understood this passage. In the Commentary of Bede (which is compiled from older authorities) it is said that "the Power foreshown in the Beast will impiously usurp the dignity of God's Name, and will presume to call the Church his own," "dignitatem sibi Nominis Dei impius usurpans Ecclesiam quoque suam nominare præsumet."

This has been fulfilled in the Papacy in a remarkable manner. It calls the Church *its own*.

The Papacy is chargeable with "*blasphemy* towards God and His Name," in the Canonization and Adoration of Saints, and in the worship of Images, and especially in its devotion to the Virgin Mary, whom it calls the "Queen of heaven," and exalts to the Throne of God; thus setting up other objects of worship besides Him Who alone is to be adored (Matt. iv. 10. Luke iv. 8).

The Papacy is chargeable with blasphemy against His Tabernacle; that is, the Christian Church, and those who tabernacle in heaven. It makes itself guilty of this blasphemy, by usurping to itself all the titles of the Holy Catholic Apostolic Church of Christ, which is God's Tabernacle; and by anathematizing as apostates and reprobates, those who are loyal subjects of the kingdom of heaven, and sound members of the mystical Body of Christ Himself, and who dwell in His heavenly Tabernacle, and hear His Word, and receive His blessed Sacraments, and "contend earnestly for the faith once delivered to the Saints" (Jude 3), and who know, that they themselves would be liable to the anathema uttered by the Holy Spirit in Holy Scripture, (see on Gal. i. 8, 9), if they were to receive any novel doctrines, such for instance as that of the Immaculate Conception, and others which are now propounded as necessary to salvation by the Roman Papacy. See above, on Jude 3.

This blasphemy against Christ's faithful servants is uttered by the Papacy on many occasions, especially in the anathematizing Bull commonly called "In Coena Domini," and required to be read annually on Thursday before Easter; which may be seen

⁷ Καὶ ἐδόθη αὐτῷ πόλεμον ποιῆσαι μετὰ τῶν ἁγίων, καὶ νικῆσαι αὐτούς· καὶ ἐδόθη αὐτῷ ἐξουσία ἐπὶ πᾶσαν φυλὴν καὶ λαὸν καὶ γλῶσσαν καὶ ἔθνος.

f Dan. 7. 21.
ch. 11. 7.

⁸ Καὶ προσκυνήσουσιν αὐτὸν πάντες οἱ κατοικοῦντες ἐπὶ τῆς γῆς, ὧν οὐ γέγραπται τὸ ὄνομα ἐν τῷ βιβλίῳ τῆς ζωῆς τοῦ Ἀρνίου τοῦ ἐσφαγμένου ἀπὸ καταβολῆς κόσμου.

g Exod. 32. 33.
Phil. 4. 3.
ch. 3. 5. & 17. 8.
& 20. 12. & 21. 27.

in the *Bullarium Romanum*, tom. iv. p. 118, ed. Lutet. 1742. *Streitwolf*, Libri Symbolici Eccl. Cath. Rom. ii. p. 353.

It is illogical and futile to plead, as some persons do, that the Papacy holds the Creeds in her hands, and therefore cannot be said to blaspheme. She has added her claims to the Creeds, and she imposes those claims on all men, as of equal authority with the Creeds. This is an act of blasphemy; and this sin is not lessened, but is rather aggravated, by her possession and profession of the Faith, as declared in the Creeds. The sin is committed against light and knowledge, and is a heavier sin on that account.

From a consideration of her claims as just stated, and from the clear testimony of History to the manner in which those claims have been enforced, it has been concluded by many of the most judicious, learned, pious, and charitable divines of the Church of England, that this Prophecy of the Apocalypse has been fulfilled by the Papacy. See *Hooker*, Sermon v. § 15. *Bp. Andrewes* contra Bellarmin. cap. xii. pp. 273—296. *Dean Jackson* on the Creed, book xii. *Bp. Sanderson*, iii. p. 146. *Bp. Wilson*, of Sodor and Man, vol. vi. pp. 704, 705; and notes on chapters xii. xiii. xvii.

v. 8. All who dwell upon the earth, that is, the great body of worldly-minded persons (see iii. 10), will worship him. The words πάντες, all, and πάντοτε, always, are often used in Holy Scripture to express what is commonly prevalent and habitual. See Exod. ix. 9. Cp. v. 19. Exod. ix. 25. Cp. x. 5. Exod. xxxii. 3. Cp. 1 Cor. x. 7. Matt. iii. 5, πᾶσα Ἰουδαία, and πᾶσα περίχωρος, i. e. the greater part; cp. Mark i. 5, and Luke xviii. 1, πάντοτε, and xxiv. 53, διαπαντός, always, i. e. constantly: and Acts x. 2. See *Glass*, Phil. S. pp. 881, 882.

Care is taken in this prophecy to guard the reader against the notion, that these words are to be understood to signify an universal apostasy, and that the Visible Church failed under the Papacy. In the next chapter we have a view of those faithful people who were not seduced by its errors, xiv. 1—7. The Roll which introduces these Visions is called a LITTLE ROLL, although it concerns many people. See above, x. 2. 9. And even just before the fall of Babylon it is intimated that there are in it some people of God, for even then it is said, "Come out of her, My People" (xviii. 4).

v. 8. The Lamb is said to have been slain from the foundation of the world; because in the Divine Mind He was foreseen as our Propitiation, and we were foreknown in Him (Eph. i. 4—11), and His Death was represented in Types, and foretold in Prophecies, even from the beginning of the world; namely, by the creation of Eve, the mother of all living, and the type of the Church, from the side of Adam, the type of Christ (see above on John xix. 34), and in the promise of the Woman's Seed, whose heel would be bruised by the Serpent, and who would bruise the Serpent's head (Gen. iii. 15. See *Bp. Pearson* on the Creed, Art. iv. p. 396), and because His death had a saving efficacy for all men, even from the beginning. See *Bp. Andrewes*, i. 164.

v. 10. If any one leadeth into captivity, he goeth into captivity.

This seems the true reading and meaning of the words as expressed by some editions of the *Vulgate* and *Irenæus*, "qui in captivitatem duxerit ipse capietur." The reading συνάγει introduced by *Elz.* after the first αἰχμαλωσίαν is a gloss. The repetition of the words seems to be grounded on Jer. xv. 2.

The sense is, They whom the Beast gathers together into his society are like a troop of captives, led together by him into slavery. See this use of αἰχμαλωσία in Numb. xxi. 1. 2 Chron. xxviii. 5. Isa. xx. 4. Ezek. xi. 25. Hab. i. 9.

The abstract term captivity for captives is very expressive. He professes to collect men together into a Church; but they are like a band of captives, carried by him into bondage. His retribution will be, that he himself will be carried captive. He has slain many Martyrs by the sword. His recompense will be, that he himself will be slain with the sword. See 2 Thess. ii. 8. Rev. xix. 15.

Here is the patience and the faith of the Saints, a remarkable saying; showing that the Empire of the Beast would be of wide extent, and of long duration. Cp. v. 7.

Some objections have been alleged against the interpretation now propounded; and may be summarily noticed here;

Objection 1—

It has been said by some, that St. John would not have prophesied concerning trials so far off from those of his own age, as the afflictions of the Church under the Papacy.

Answer—

This objection is derogatory to the character of divine Prophecy, and is refuted by the language of the Apocalypse, and of the Book of Daniel, written six centuries before it, which reveal the Day of Judgment and the trials immediately preceding it, Rev. xi. 18; xx. 12, 13. Dan. vii. 21—27.

Objection 2—

It has been said by some, that the power here described is not a Christian power, but is an openly infidel one, rebelling in undisguised impiety against God.

This allegation has been already considered above on v. 5. See also below on v. 11.

Objection 3—

It has been said by some, that a body of persons such as are here described "can have no true sacraments," and that those Reformed Churches, which have received their own Holy Orders from Christ through the medium of Rome, and which acknowledge the Baptism and Holy Orders of Rome, would be condemned by this Prophecy, if the Papacy were such a body as is here described.

This objection also has been considered above, xiii. 1—3, and will be further noticed below in the interpretation of chap. xvii.

Objection 4—

It has been said by some, that many pious and holy men and women have lived under the Papacy, and have regarded the Church of Rome with reverence and affection, as the centre of religious unity; and that it cannot be imagined, that Almighty God would have allowed them to be so much deceived by it, as they must assuredly have been, if the Papacy is portrayed in this Prophecy.

This objection also has been examined, in part, above on xiii. 1—4.

To those considerations may be added the following. Many good and holy men and women lived and died at Jerusalem in the age of our Lord and His Apostles; such as Symeon, Anna (cp. Luke ii. 25), Nicodemus, Joseph of Arimathea, and others; and they regarded Jerusalem with reverence, as the centre of religious unity. Our Blessed Lord Himself communicated with the Scribes and Pharisees in the public worship of the Synagogue, and in the reading and hearing of the Old Testament, and the religious services of the Temple. Even after the Crucifixion of Christ by the Rulers of the Jews (Luke xxiv. 20. Acts v. 30; x. 39) the Apostles of Christ communicated with them in the public liturgy (Luke xxiv. 53. Acts iii. 1) of the Temple and of the Synagogues.

In like manner, holy and religious men under the Papacy communicated with it in those divine truths and spiritual graces which Almighty God bestowed in His Holy Word and Sacraments, dispensed by its ministry; but holy and religious men did not, knowingly, communicate with it in the acts of violence, treachery, and cruelty, which were too often perpetrated by many of its Rulers; nor did they communicate consciously in the corruptions of sound doctrine which were propagated by them.

On the contrary, many holy and pious men, who lived under the Papacy, censured those acts, and protested loudly against those corruptions; and, even if they were deceived by its claims, yet under the circumstances of the times in which they lived, ignorance or error were then comparatively venial.

But when those corruptions were more clearly manifested by the revival of Learning in the fifteenth century after Christ, and by the wider circulation of the Holy Scriptures, consequent on the invention of Printing; and when those corruptions were enforced by the Church of Rome on the consciences of all men at the Council of Trent, in the sixteenth century after Christ, then many wise and holy men, and societies of men, even whole Nations and Churches, emancipated themselves from the bondage of those corruptions, and they have been blessed by Almighty God with marks of His favour, and they have been made happy instruments in His hands for the advancement of His Kingdom, by the preaching of His Holy Word, and the dispensation of His Holy Sacraments, by an Apostolic Ministry throughout the world.

h ch. 2. 7.
i Gen. 9. 6.
Isa. 33. 1.
Matt. 26. 52.
ch. 14. 12.

^{9 h} Εἴ τις ἔχει οὖς, ἀκουσάτω. ^{10 i} Εἴ τις εἰς αἰχμαλωσίαν, εἰς αἰχμαλωσίαν ὑπάγει· εἴ τις ἐν μαχαίρᾳ ἀποκτενεῖ, δεῖ αὐτὸν ἐν μαχαίρᾳ ἀποκτανθῆναι· ὧδέ ἐστιν ἡ ὑπομονὴ καὶ ἡ πίστις τῶν ἁγίων.

k ch. 11. 7.

l ver. 3.
ch. 19. 20.

^{11 k} Καὶ εἶδον ἄλλο θηρίον ἀναβαῖνον ἐκ τῆς γῆς, καὶ εἶχε κέρατα δύο ὅμοια ἀρνίῳ, καὶ ἐλάλει ὡς δράκων· ^{12 l} καὶ τὴν ἐξουσίαν τοῦ πρώτου θηρίου πᾶσαν ποιεῖ ἐνώπιον αὐτοῦ· καὶ ποιεῖ τὴν γῆν καὶ τοὺς κατοικοῦντας ἐν αὐτῇ, ἵνα προσκυνήσωσι τὸ θηρίον τὸ πρῶτον, οὗ ἐθεραπεύθη ἡ πληγὴ τοῦ θανάτου αὐτοῦ.

11—18. καὶ εἶδον ἄλλο θηρίον] *And I saw another Beast coming up out of the earth; and he had two horns like a Lamb, and he was speaking as a Dragon.*

And he exerciseth all the authority of the first Beast in his sight, and causeth the Earth and them which dwell therein to worship the first Beast, whose deadly wound was healed.

And he doeth great wonders, and that fire may come down from heaven on the Earth in the sight of men.

And he deceiveth them that dwell on the Earth by the wonders which he hath power to do in the sight of the Beast; saying to them that dwell on the Earth, that they should make an image to the Beast, who hath the wound of the sword, and lived.

And it was given to him to give breath unto the image of the Beast, that the image of the Beast should both speak, and should cause that as many as would not worship [or do homage to, προσκυνήσωσι τῇ εἰκόνι, see v. 4] the image of the Beast, should be killed.

And he causeth all, both small and great, rich and poor, free and bond, to give themselves a mark in their right hand, or in their forehead: and that no man may be able to buy or sell, save he that hath the mark, the name of the Beast, or the number of his name.

Here is wisdom. Let him that hath understanding count the number of the Beast: for it is a number of a man: and his number is six hundred sixty-six.

This second Beast is described as having *horns*—visible emblems of *power* (see v. 6; xii. 13)—like a *Lamb*, i. e. like the *horns* of a *Lamb*. Cp. *Homer*, *Iliad* xvii. 51, κόμαι χαρίτεσσιν ὅμοιαι, and see 2 Pet. i. 1. Jude 7. *Winer*, § 66, p. 549.

St. John uses a particular word in the Apocalypse for *Lamb*, viz. Ἀρνίον (see above, on v. 6). He never uses ἀμνός, which is found in his Gospel and in other parts of Scripture (John i. 29. 36. Cp. Acts viii. 32. 1 Pet. i. 19), where ἀρνίον never occurs. But Ἀρνίον occurs about thirty times in the Apocalypse, and it always signifies *Christ*. And this word Ἀρνίον, *LAMB*, in the number of its syllables, accent, termination, and gender, stands in direct antithesis, or contrast, to the word θηρίον, or *BEAST*.

The *Lamb*, which is *Christ*, is described above as having *horns* (see v. 6), and the *Beast* is here described as having *horns*, like those of the *Lamb*; that is, he claims to exercise the *power* of *Christ*.

The verbal precision, which is a remarkable characteristic of the Apocalypse (see above, on ii. 1), proves that the Beast here described as having the horns of a *Lamb*, that is, as exercising the power of *Christ*, is *not* a heathen or infidel Power, but is a Power which professes *Christianity*. The emblems of his dominion, and the most conspicuous features of his body, are like those of a *Lamb*, i. e. *Christ*.

And yet his utterance is described as like that of a *Dragon*. This word δράκων, *dragon*, or *serpent*, does not always imply open ferocity, but often means wiliness and craft. The word Ἀρνίον, or *Lamb*, indicates a profession of *Christian innocence*; and the word δράκων, *Dragon*, or *Adder*, signifies that this profession is united with the subtlety of the *Serpent* who deceived Eve (2 Cor. xi. 3). Cp. *Wetstein*, ii. p. 794, and note above, p. 187, from *S. Augustine*. *Primasius* here observes, that “this Beast is said to speak as a *dragon*, because he deceives by hypocrisy or semblance of the truth:” and the old commentator in *S. Augustine’s* works on this passage says, “this Beast displays himself with a semblance of Christianity as a *Lamb*, in order that he may insinuate secretly the poison of the *Dragon*. This,” he adds, “is an *heretical Church*.”

Hence this Beast is hereafter described as the *false Prophet* (xvi. 13; xix. 20; xx. 10), or *false Teacher* (see 2 Pet. ii. 1. 1 John iv. 1. Cp. note, 1 Thess. v. 20. Rom. xii. 6). Our Lord’s warning applies here, “Beware of *false Prophets* (or *Teachers*), who come in *sheep’s clothing*” (with the semblance of a *Lamb*), “but inwardly they are *ravens*” (Matt. vii. 15). Accordingly, in v. 14, this Beast is said πλανᾶν, to *deceive*, a word descriptive of *false Teachers* (cp. 2 Pet. ii. 18; iii. 17. 1 John ii. 26; iii. 7; iv. 6. 2 John 7), and which recalls our

Lord’s warning concerning the latter days, “Many *false Prophets* shall arise, and shall *deceive* (πλανήσουσι) many (Matt. xxiv. 11); and many *false Christs* and *false Prophets* (words which might almost seem to mark the relation of the two Beasts in the present Vision) shall arise, and shall work great *signs and wonders*, so as to *deceive* (πλανᾶν), if it were possible, the very elect. Behold, I have told you before.” Matt. xxiv. 24, 25.

We may therefore safely adopt the interpretation of the ancient Expositors, who recognized in this *Second Beast* a succession of *Teachers of unsound doctrine*, labouring with great subtlety and success for the aggrandizement of the former Beast. *S. Irenæus* (v. 28) calls the second Beast *the armour-bearer* (ὕπερασπιστήν) of the former Beast; and it will be seen in the sequel, that, after fighting side by side, they will come to the same end at the same time (xix. 20).

The ancient Expositors had not seen, in their days, the particular form of religious seduction which is predicted by this Vision; and they therefore could not fully interpret this prophecy. See above, *Introduction*, pp. 153—156.

But Time has unfolded it to later ages. The energy, learning, intelligence, subtlety, unity, and perseverance, with which that great Ecclesiastical Corporation, the Romish Hierarchy, extending itself into almost all the Countries of the world, has laboured for many centuries, and is still labouring, for the spiritual aggrandizement and exaltation of the Roman Papacy, and for the subjugation of all men to its sway, is here delineated by the Spirit of Prophecy.

This Power rises from the *Earth*; it professes to have heavenly aims and ends, but is too often actuated by desire of earthly power, and motives of worldly ambition.

Bp. Andrewes says, “This second Beast represents the Roman Hierarchy, which both by speaking and writing proclaims the Pope as Vice-God.” (*Bp. Andrewes*, contra Bellarmin. p. 287, ed. 1610, where the prophecy is further explained.)

The primary purpose of that Hierarchy, as the prophecy has predicted, is to make the *Earth* and all that dwell therein *do homage* to the former Beast, whose *deadly wound was healed*, v. 12, and to make an *image* to the Beast who hath the wound of the sword, and lived.

Observe these latter words, studiously reiterated, in order to show that it is *not* for the Roman *Pagan Empire* that this second Beast labours, but for the Roman Power, *killed* as far as its *Pagan Empire* is concerned, and still “*having* the wound of the sword” in *that* respect, and yet *alive* again; that is, it labours for the Roman power, *not* as *Pagan*, for it is *dead* as to its *Paganism*, and yet still *lives* in the *Papacy*.

The decree of Pope Boniface VIII., that “it is necessary to eternal salvation for every *human creature* to submit to the Roman Pontiff” (Extrav. Com. lib. i. tit. viii. cap. 1), and the statement of Cardinal Bellarmine (de Pontifice, cap. i. 10), that the “doctrine of the *Pope’s Supremacy* is the essence and sum of *Christianity*,” contain the very pith and marrow of the system propounded by the Romish Hierarchy.

Perhaps the best comment on this verse (v. 12) is to be found in the *Oaths* which are taken by all Priests and Bishops of the Roman Church throughout the world; in which they bind themselves to be “faithful and obedient to their Lord, the Pope,” and “to uphold and maintain the Popedom of Rome, the royalties of St. Peter, and to defend them against all men;” and in which they swear that they “will cause to be preserved, defended, augmented, and promoted, the rights, honours, privileges, and authority of the Church of Rome, and of the Pope, and of his successors;” and “that they will keep, and cause to be kept by others, its decrees, ordinances, sentences, depositions, reservations, provisions, and commandments.” The original of this Oath may be seen in the *Pontificale Romanum*, p. 62, published at Rome, A.D. 1818.

Such are the obligations of Roman Bishops; and all Ecclesiastics, regular and secular, of the Church of Rome throughout the world, take an Oath, in which they declare that they “acknowledge the Church of Rome to be the mistress of all

13 ^m Καὶ ποιεῖ σημεῖα μεγάλα, καὶ πῦρ ἵνα ἐκ τοῦ οὐρανοῦ καταβαίῃ εἰς τὴν γῆν ἐνώπιον τῶν ἀνθρώπων. 14 ⁿ καὶ πλανᾷ τοὺς κατοικοῦντας ἐπὶ τῆς γῆς διὰ τὰ σημεῖα ἃ ἐδόθη αὐτῷ ποιῆσαι ἐνώπιον τοῦ θηρίου, λέγων τοῖς κατοικοῦσιν ἐπὶ τῆς γῆς, ποιῆσαι εἰκόνα τῷ θηρίῳ, ὃς ἔχει τὴν πληγὴν τῆς μαχαίρας

^m Matt. 24. 24.
² Thess. 2. 9.
ch. 16. 14.
ⁿ ch. 16. 14.
& 19. 20.

Churches," and swear to "pay true obedience to the Roman Pontiff, the successor of Peter, the Vicar of Jesus Christ, and to maintain all things decreed in the General Councils, especially in the Council of Trent;" and they swear "that they reject and anathematize all things contrary thereto, and that they will hold firm unto death this true faith, out of which there is no salvation, and will take care that it be held and taught by all under their authority." This Oath may be found in editions of the Decrees of the Council of Trent, and in the Roman Canon Law, p. 111, ed. 1839.

vv. 13, 14. This second Beast is said to work signs or wonders, and to deceive by means of those wonders.

It is affirmed by Papal Divines that the presence of miracles is an "essential note of the Church" (Bellarmine, de Ecclesiâ, lib. ii.), where "gloria miraculorum" is reckoned as the eleventh note of the Church. Some of the wonders, which they affirm to have been worked for the exaltation of their own faith, are too well attested to be denied. The Holy Scripture expressly declares that miracles will be wrought for the trial of the faithful by teachers of strange doctrines, for the maintenance of those doctrines (cp. Deut. xiii. 1—5), especially in the latter days (Matt. xxiv. 24. 2 Thess. ii. 9); whereas, on the other hand, there is no reason now to look for further evidence (Luke xvi. 29), except in the fulfilment of prophecy (cp. 2 Pet. i. 19), in behalf of the Truth; and the appeal made by the Papal Hierarchy to the "glory of miracles," manifested among themselves, seems to be a fulfilment of prophecy, warning the world against its seductions.

This second Beast is also said (v. 13) to work great signs, so that he may make fire to come down from heaven on to the earth. A, C have ἵνα καὶ πῦρ, and so Lach., Tisch.

The Apostle and Evangelist St. John himself had once asked our Lord to allow him to make fire come down from heaven on those who would not receive them; our Lord replied, "Ye know not what manner of spirit ye are of" (Luke ix. 35—55).

That incident affords the best exposition of this verse. It is not affirmed that the Beast actually makes fire to come down; but that he works that it may come down.

This is fulfilled in the operations of the Roman Hierarchy when they imprecate God's wrath, and call down the consuming fires of His vengeance, on those who will not receive their doctrines, and who in any way contravene their practices.

There is a solemn form of imprecation which is set forth to be pronounced annually by all Romish Primates, Patriarchs, Archbishops, and Bishops on the day on which our Blessed Saviour instituted the Feast of love. This form of imprecation is called "In Cœnâ Domini;" "In the Lord's Supper."

This form of Imprecation has been authorized and enjoined by twenty different Popes, and anathematizes as Heretics all Protestants, and declares them to be incapable of enjoying civil rights, and liable to temporal penalties, and even to death. Thus it fulfils the divine prediction in v. 13. It may be seen in the Roman Bullarium, iv. p. 118, ed. 1722.

The awful form of cursing by "book, bell, and candle," used by the Roman Hierarchy in our own land in former times, by which men were "given over utterly to the power of the fiend, and their souls to be quenched in the pains of hell-fire," may be seen in Foxe's Acts and Monuments, p. 947, and in Wordsworth's Eccles. Biog. i. p. 220, ed. 1839.

In that form the Papal Hierarchy claimed the power to execute this curse; the tenor of it was, "we give them over utterly to the power of the fiend; and let us quench their souls as they be dead this night in the pains of hell-fire, as this candle is now quenched and put out."

Thus they assumed the power ascribed here to the second Beast.

This prophecy has also been fulfilled in a signal manner by that portion of the Roman Hierarchy which works, and has worked, for many years by the instrumentality of the Inquisition, which calls itself the "Holy Office," and enforces the doctrines of the Papacy, and especially the dogma of the Papal Supremacy, by fire, sword, and rack. The badge of the Holy Office is a drawn sword with an olive-branch: thus while it does the work of the Beast, it wears the semblance of the Lamb; above, v. 11. See Limborch, Hist. Inquisitionis, pp. 370—373.

In v. 14 the Second Beast is said to deceive by means of the signs and wonders which it was given him to work. Observe the

word given: the agency of evil is limited by God. He allowed the Magicians of Egypt to work miracles, that His own power in overcoming them by His servant Moses might be more glorious. Exod. vii. 11. 22; viii. 7. 18, 19. Christ permitted devils to go into the swine, and to carry them into the deep, that thus He might overcome the devil, and that His love and power in delivering us from him might be more glorified. Matt. viii. 31, 32.

The second Beast is said to command the "dwellers on the earth," that is, men who are not loyal subjects of the kingdom of heaven, to make an image to the Beast who has the wound of the sword, and lived. It is remarkable that the best MSS., A, B, C, and others, have not ὁ, in the neuter, as Elz., but have ὁς here, in the masculine gender, and so Lach., Tisch.—showing the personality of the former beast.

It is added, that it is given to the second Beast to give breath to that image, in order that it should speak, and cause that, whoever would not pay homage to the image of the Beast, should be killed.

The reading τῇ εἰκόνι (the dative case, cp. ch. xvi. 2; xix. 20; xx. 4) is sanctioned by B, and more than thirty MSS., and some Fathers; and so Lach. and Tisch. See above on v. 4. The accusative is also used at a later stage of the prophecy, after the fall of Babylon, xiv. 9.

What is this Image of the Beast?

It is described not only as an Image made to the Beast, but also as an Image of the Beast. See here v. 15, and xiv. 9. 11; xv. 2; xvi. 2; xix. 20; xx. 4.

The word εἰκὼν, image, effigies, designates a prosopopœia, or personification of something abstract; see Dr. Bentley on Free-thinking, p. 278, near the end, who quotes Plato as saying, that if men could have ἐναργὲς εἶδωλον, a conspicuous image of Wisdom before their eyes, they would be enraptured with her beauty; see also Cicero, de Officiis, i. 5, and de Finibus, ii. 16.

In the Apocalypse the word εἰκὼν, image, signifies also an εἶδωλον, idolum, in the sense of an object to be adored, as images of heathen deities were; cp. the use of the word εἰκὼν in Rom. i. 23.

The first Beast itself is the Papacy; and the εἰκὼν or Image of it is the personification of the Papacy, in the visible form of the Pontiff for the time being. Every one who is created Pope—whatever may be his character for learning, piety, ability, or morals, even though he be a Hildebrand or a Borgia—yet immediately on his creation is made into an Image or Idol by the Second Beast or Roman Hierarchy; and is displayed to the homage of the world; and this process of making an Image or Idol of every Pope for the time being, has now been continued for many centuries.

On the first occasion when a new Pope appears in public after his election to the Pontificate, he is elevated into an object of adoration in the temple of God.

The new Pope, wearing his mitre, is lifted up by Cardinals, and is placed by them on the High Altar of the principal Church at Rome—St. Peter's. He is there seated upon the Altar of God: and while he there sits, the Roman Hierarchy bow down before him and kiss those feet which tread on the Altar of God.

This Ceremony of Adoration is prescribed by the official Book of Roman Ceremonies, entitled "Cæremoniale Romanum;" it may be seen described in lib. iii. sect. i. of the edition of 1572; and it has been performed on the election of every Pope for many centuries in succession. It was performed to the present Pope on Wednesday, 17th June, 1846.

This Ceremony is called by Roman writers the "Adoratio Pontificis," and it is represented in the Roman coinage with the following remarkable inscription, "QUEM CREANT, ADORANT," "Whom they create, they adore," Whom the Roman Hierarchy make by their own votes to be Pope—him they adore when made: they worship the work of their own hand. They make an image, and then worship it.

The worship of the εἰκὼν or Image is here described in the Apocalypse by the word προσκυνεῖν (see also xiv. 9; xvi. 2; xix. 20; xx. 4), and this word is exactly represented by the Latin word adorare; the word used here for προσκυνεῖν in the Roman Vulgate Version of the Apocalypse; this word adorare is chosen by the Roman Hierarchy to describe the homage which they themselves pay to the person of every Pope in succession on his

H H

o ch. 19. 20.
& 16. 2.

p ch. 19. 20.
& 20. 4.

καὶ ἔζησε ¹⁵ καὶ ἐδόθη αὐτῷ πνεῦμα δοῦναι τῇ εἰκόνι τοῦ θηρίου, ἵνα καὶ
λαλήσῃ ἡ εἰκὼν τοῦ θηρίου, καὶ ποιήσῃ ἵνα ὅσοι ἂν μὴ προσκυνήσωσι τῇ
εἰκόνι τοῦ θηρίου ἀποκτανθῶσι ¹⁶ καὶ ποιῇ πάντας, τοὺς μικροὺς καὶ τοὺς
μεγάλους, καὶ τοὺς πλουσίους καὶ τοὺς πτωχοὺς, καὶ τοὺς ἐλευθέρους καὶ
τοὺς δούλους, ἵνα δώσιν αὐτοῖς χάραγμα ἐπὶ τῆς χειρὸς αὐτῶν τῆς δεξιᾶς, ἢ ἐπὶ

election to the Popedom, as may be seen in the following Roman books, *Lettenburgh's Notitia Curiae Romanae*, p. 125, ed. 1683, and the works of other Romish writers (*Mazaroni* and *Stevanus*) de *Adoratione Pontificis*, and *Histoire du Clergé*, dedicated to Pope Clement XI., Amst. 1716, vol. i. p. 17. *Tosi*, *Corte di Roma*, a work approved by the Master of the Sacred Palace in 1764, p. 75. An engraving representing the "*Adoratio*" may be seen in *Picart*, *Cérémonies*, vol. i. p. 296.

A specimen of the feelings animating the Papal Hierarchy, and of the language uttered by them, when bowing before the Papal Image, may be seen in the words addressed by Cardinal Colonna in the name of the Clergy to Pope Innocent X. at his Coronation in St. Peter's, in A.D. 1644. "Most Holy and Blessed Father, Head of the Church, *Ruler of the World*, to whom the keys of the Kingdom of Heaven are given, whom the *Angels in heaven revere*, and whom the gates of Hell fear, and whom the *whole World adores* ("quem totus mundus adorat"), we venerate and adore Thee, and commit ourselves and all that is ours to thy paternal and more than divine disposal." The original words may be seen in *Banck's Roma Triumphans*, p. 384, ed. Franeker, 1656.

The Coronation of the Pope with the Tiara or triple Crown succeeds his Enthronization. The latter is performed, as was said above, inside the Church of St. Peter, where he is enthroned on the High Altar. The Coronation takes place outside the Church, on a lofty balcony, above the Piazza of St. Peter's, where the ceremony is witnessed by many thousand spectators. It is performed in these terms; "Receive the tiara, adorned with three crowns, and know thyself to be the Father of Princes and Kings, the *RULER OF THE WORLD*" (*Rectorem Orbis*). These words were addressed to the present Pope, Pius IX., June 21, 1846.

In v. 15 the Second Beast is said to give *breath* to this Image, that the Image should *speak*.

This prophecy describes the process by which the *Papal Image* gives utterance to what is *breathed into* it by the *Papal Hierarchy*.

It is a remarkable fact, that the *Papal Hierarchy* first consult together, and frame decrees, or prepare rescripts either in Councils summoned by the Pope, or by some other means prescribed by him; and when this preliminary process has been gone through, then they submit their decrees to the Pope, and desire him to ratify their verdicts by his authority.

Thus they give *breath* to the *Image*, which they themselves have made, and then the *Image speaks*; and what it utters becomes an *Article of Faith*, and is imposed on all men as necessary to salvation.

The Twelve new articles of the Trent Creed were framed and promulgated in this manner. The Trent Council was convened by the Pope. The Council prepared the decrees; they brought them to the Pope, Pius IV. Thus they breathed breath into the Papal Image, and the Papal Image spake what they had breathed into it. And those Twelve new Articles (such as the doctrine of Seven Sacraments, Transubstantiation, Half-Communion, Purgatory, Propitiatory sacrifice of the Mass, Worship of Images, &c.) have now become, as they affirm, an essential part of the Christian Faith, and they all make a solemn adjuration that no one can be saved unless he profess them,—"*extra hanc fidem nemo salvus esse potest.*" See the Tridentine Creed put forth by Pope Pius the IVth, A.D. 1564, annexed to the Decrees of the Trent Council; and the same Pope's Bull of Confirmation of the said Decrees, A.D. 1563.

A striking specimen of the manner in which this prophecy is fulfilled in the Papacy, has been recently displayed to the world.

On the 8th December, 1854, the Pope promulgated in St. Peter's Church at Rome the new Doctrine of the Immaculate Conception, and affirmed that it was thenceforth necessary to salvation to believe that the Blessed Virgin was exempt from original sin, and that all who do not believe this dogma make shipwreck of the faith, and have fallen from the unity of the Church ("*nafragium fidei fecisse, et ab unitate Ecclesiae defecisse*").

The mode in which this extraordinary promulgation was effected is specially worthy of notice.

Some years before that promulgation, namely, on the 2nd of February, 1849, the Pope had addressed letters to all the *Bishops* of his Communion, and in those letters he had stated, that some persons were surprised "that the honour (of being born without sin) was not yet attributed to the most holy Virgin by the Church

and *Apostolic See*;" and he then desired the Bishops to communicate to him "what *their opinion was* concerning the definition of the Immaculate Conception of the Virgin Mary,"—"quid ipsi de hac definitione sentirent." The Bishops said in reply, that they all desired such a definition from him.

The Pope then consulted the *consistory of the Cardinals*; and they also made the same request.

Nearly six years passed, but at length on the 8th of December, 1854, the Representative of the Roman Hierarchy approached the foot of the Throne on which the Pontiff sat in the Church of St. Peter at Rome, and said, "In the name of the Sacred *College of Cardinals*, and of the *Bishops of the Catholic Church*, and of all the faithful, we humbly and earnestly demand, O most holy Father, that you would *raise your Apostolic voice*, and pronounce the dogmatic decree of the Immaculate Conception of Mary, which will be a subject of joy to heaven, and of exultation to earth." To quote the words of the Roman record of that day, "The Pontiff replied, that he received willingly the prayer of the *Sacred College*, and of the *Episcopate*, and of the faithful; and after the hymn '*Veni Creator*,' he read with a loud voice the decree, in which he solemnly defined, that the Blessed Virgin, from the first instant of her being conceived, was preserved free from all stain of original sin."

After the reading of this Decree, the same Representative of the Hierarchy returned to the foot of the Throne of the Pontiff, and "returned thanks to him for *having defined* this dogma, and prayed him to *publish* the Papal Bull concerning it." The Pontiff gave his consent, and the Bull was published, bearing date "the sixth of the Ides of December, 1854."

"The Hierarchy returning from Rome to their Dioceses, and announcing to their people what they have heard from the *Oracle of the Vatican*, will tell them what honours are rendered to the Blessed Virgin in the Capital of the Catholic World; and the History of the Church will note the 8th of December, 1854, among its most memorable days, when the august Mother of the Saviour of the world received a new triumph from the *chair of truth*."

Such is the language of the documents published at Rome. The originals may be seen in No. xliii. of the Editor's Occasional Sermons, pp. 29—47, and in No. xii. p. 93.

And now, when it is objected, that this dogma of the Immaculate Conception is a *novel doctrine*, a doctrine, as the Pope confessed, not before defined by the Church of Rome herself, and first promulgated by her in the middle of the nineteenth century, and that it is contrary to the Holy Scriptures, the reply given is, "*Roma locuta est*," *Rome has spoken*, "The Oracle of the Vatican has given its response;" let the Earth keep silence before it.

So indeed it is. *Breath has been given* by the *Hierarchy* to the *Image*, which their own hands had made, and had set up to be adored. *It has spoken* in that same Temple of God in which they had set it up to be adored, and in which they fell down before it, when it sat on the Altar of God.

Thus the Apocalyptic prophecy has been fulfilled by them in the eyes of those "who read, and keep the sayings of this book" (xxii. 7. 9).

In v. 15 the second Beast is said to *work that the image may cause all who do not worship it to be killed*.

The Popes, inspired by the Hierarchy, have devised and enforced an Oath, by which all Roman Bishops bind themselves "to *persecute* and to *impugn*, as far as they are able, *all heretics* and schismatics, and rebels against their Lord, the Pope, and his successors," that is, all who do not submit to his claims to Supremacy and Infallibility. See the Oath in the *Pontificale Romanum*, p. 63, ed. Rome, 1818.

In v. 16 the second Beast is said to cause all men to *give to themselves a mark* on their right hand, or on their forehead, and that no one may be able to buy or sell except he that hath the mark, the name of the Beast, or the number of his name.

Observe the words "*give to themselves*;" the best MSS. have δῶσιν (not δώσῃ as in *Elz.*), and so in *Catenâ*, p. 383; a remarkable sentence, intimating *compulsion* under the semblance of *choice*; that is, the mark which the hierarchy enforces is represented as imprinted voluntarily by those persons on whom they enforce it. It is like an oath imposed, and yet seemingly taken with good will.

v. 18. Here is wisdom. Let him who hath understanding

τὸ μέτωπον αὐτῶν ¹⁷ καὶ ἵνα μή τις δύνῃται ἀγοράσαι ἢ πωλῆσαι, εἰ μὴ ὁ ^{q ch. 14. 11. & 15. 2.}
ἔχων τὸ χάραγμα, τὸ ὄνομα τοῦ θηρίου, ἢ τὸν ἀριθμὸν τοῦ ὀνόματος αὐτοῦ.

¹⁸ Ὡδε ἡ σοφία ἐστίν· ὁ ἔχων νοῦν ψηφισάτω τὸν ἀριθμὸν τοῦ θηρίου· ^{r ch. 17. 9.}
ἀριθμὸς γὰρ ἀνθρώπου ἐστὶ, καὶ ὁ ἀριθμὸς αὐτοῦ χξϞ'.

count the number of the Beast; for it is the number of a man; and his number is Six Hundred Sixty-Six.

There are three distinct things to be considered here;

- (1) The Mark of the Beast.
- (2) The Number of the Beast.
- (3) The Name of the Beast.

(1) On the MARK of the Beast.

The word rendered mark is χάραγμα, from χαράσσω, to engrave. Cp. Acts xvii. 29, and here and in the other passages of the Apocalypse (xiv. 9. 11; xvi. 2; xix. 20; xx. 4) it denotes such a kind of engraving as indicates that the person on whom the engraving is made, is the property of, and is subject to, the person whose χάραγμα, mark, cypher, or stamp, is engraved upon him who bears it.

In ancient times, marks were impressed on men for certain special purposes; Slaves were branded with the names of their Masters; Soldiers punctured their flesh with the mark of the General under whom they served; votaries of heathen deities stamped themselves with the names and marks of those deities. Cp. 3 Macc. ii. 29, and see notes above, on Gal. vi. 17, where St. Paul says, "I bear in my body the marks of the Lord Jesus;" S. Ambrose (ap. Wetst.), "slaves are inscribed with the mark of their lord; and soldiers are inscribed with the mark of their leader."

The χάραγμα therefore, or mark, of the Beast, indicates that they who wear it are servants, soldiers, and votaries of him whose mark they wear.

The mark is here described as imprinted on the right hand, or on the forehead. The right hand is the organ of working, the forehead is that of profession. The servants of God are represented in this book as having His seal and His name on their foreheads (see vii. 3; ix. 4; xiv. 1-9; xxii. 4; cp. Ezek. ix. 4), because they confess Him before men. Those who receive the mark of the Beast in their foreheads, profess his faith; they who receive it also on their hands, execute in deed what they profess in word,—“accipiunt inscriptionem in fronte propter professionem (says the old commentary in Augustine's works here), in manu propter operationem;” and Bp. Andrewes here, p. 291, says, “the forehead shows faith, the hand works,” the one openly confesses, the other boldly executes.

What then is that χάραγμα, or mark, which, at the instance of the Hierarchy, men are said to imprint on themselves?

It is such a Confession of faith and obedience as that already noticed of Pope Pius IV., which contains a solemn vow of subjection to the Papacy, and to the Decrees of the Council of Trent; and which is affirmed by the Papacy and its Hierarchy to be necessary to be received by all who desire to be saved,—“extra hanc fidem nemo salvus esse potest.” “That profession of faith,” says Bishop Andrewes here, “is implicitly required of all men by the Papacy; all who are baptized are reckoned, by the very fact of their baptism, to be subjects of the Pope, who claims to be the spiritual head of the Church.”

There is a difference, which is marked in the prophecy, where it is said that they receive the mark on their right hands, or on their foreheads. The Papal Hierarchy have the mark on their foreheads and on their hands, because they make a profession by words, and exhibit it in works; others, who do not make such a direct profession by words, yet have it on their hands, because they are virtually bound to execute it by deeds.

In v. 17 it is said that no one may buy or sell,—that is, carry on any commerce,—except he has this mark.

This has been and is fulfilled in the Papacy, in two ways: First, by actual restraints of temporal traffic; such restrictions have been imposed on persons whom it calls heretics, and disqualifies, as such, for commerce and secular emoluments. See Limborch, Hist. Inquis. pp. 38. 48, 49. 71. Vitringa, p. 624.

Secondly, by inhibiting them from all spiritual commerce and religious communion.

This doubtless is the fuller sense of the prophecy, as has been noticed by ancient Expositors. Thus Haymo says, “the mark of the Beast is his Creed; and no one is permitted by him to preach, unless he has his mark, namely, his faith;” and Aquinas says, vol. xxiv. p. 311, 3, qu. 63. 3. 3, that the mark of the Beast is a “profectio illiciti cultus.”

The word Symbolum, in Ecclesiastical language, signifies a Creed, which is the bond and token of spiritual fellowship of all who sail together in the sacred vessel of the Church; and this

word Symbolum, in the language of commerce, signifies a token of communion; and thus the word symbol affords an illustration of the metaphor here, and in other places of the Apocalypse. As is well said by Primasius and Bede, “By this mention of buying and selling, we are taught that as the Church of Christ delivers the Creed (Symbolum) to her people for their spiritual good, so on the other hand these persons are prohibited from buying and selling, unless they have the mark of the Beast: as merchants who sail in the same ship are known by the same sign.”

This sense of the Prophecy is exemplified in the Papacy.

The Roman Hierarchy affirms that all who do not bear the Pope's mark—that is, who do not hold the Trent Creed, and submit to him as Supreme Head of the Church on Earth, are cut off from communion with the Body of Christ.

They affirm that no one is a lawful Priest or Bishop, or can communicate any spiritual grace by the ministry of Christ's word and sacraments, unless he bear the Pope's mark; that is, unless he receive a commission to do so from him, and take an oath of obedience to him.

They even affirm, that if a Roman Bishop become an Archbishop, he cannot exercise even Episcopal authority, unless he sue for, and obtain another mark of subjection from the Pope,—namely, the Pallium from Rome. See the Pontificale Romanum, ed. 1818, p. 87.

Thus all powers of spiritual commerce are made to depend on the reception of a mark from the Pope.

(2) On the NUMBER of the Beast.

17, 18.] What now is the meaning of the following words?—Except he who has the name of the Beast, or the number of his name. Here is wisdom. He that hath understanding, let him count the number of the Beast; for it is the number of a man, and his number is 666.

Let him who has understanding count the number, for it is the number of a man; that is, it can be counted, because it is a human number, and not a divine number, which no one is able to count (see above, vii. 9, and below, xx. 8); it is the number of a man, although he who wears it professes himself to be little less than a god (see v. 4); and perhaps in a special sense it is said that it is the number of a man, because the power here described is that of ἀνθρώπου ἀμαρτίας, portrayed by St. Paul, 2 Thess. ii. 3, “the man of sin.” As the ancient Expositor in the works of Aquinas says, “it is the number of a man, not of a God, although he will exalt himself as God against what is called God, and is worshipped—as the Man of Sin.” And so Bede, who says here, “Est homo peccati, filius perditionis,” 2 Thess. ii. 3.

Let us first consider the number of the name.

The number of the name is stated by St. John himself, and is expressly declared to be 666.

This number is remarkable in reference to the name of Christ the Lamb—with whom the Beast is placed in contrast.

The name of the Beast makes three sixes: 666. The name of JESUS (Ἰησοῦς) makes (according to the numerical value of its Greek letters) three eights, viz. 888. And the number eight is the symbol and number of resurrection and triumph. See above on Luke xxiv. 1. Thus it stands in striking contrast to the number here mentioned, 666.

The symbol of Christ is  XP, the two first letters of

Χριστός, Christ (see on i. 8), and was adopted by the Emperor Constantine and the Roman Christians as the badge and ensign of the Empire, on its military standards and coins. See Euseb. vit. Const. ii. 28. 30. 3. Sozomen. Hist. Eccl. i. 3. Ruffin. 1. 9. Lactant. de mart. Persecut. c. 44, and the Coins of Constantine, in Gravii Thes. Rom. vol. x. p. 1529, and Suicer, Lex. art. Λάβapov, and Ducange, vol. ii. p. 263.

This symbol of Christ (XP), arranged thus, is equivalent to seven hundreds.

Seven, as already observed (see note at end of chapter xi.), is the numerical symbol of rest after toil and conflict, and is characteristic of Him in Whom alone the soul can find rest (see Matt. xi. 28, 29).

The number of the Beast is composed of three sixes, 666.

The number six, especially in the Apocalypse, is the symbol of conflict and distress; the sixth day of the week, the day of Christ's Crucifixion, the sixth seal, the sixth trumpet, the sixth

a ch. 5. 5. & 7. 4.

XIV. 1^a Καὶ εἶδον, καὶ ἰδοὺ τὸ Ἀρνίον ἑστὸς ἐπὶ τὸ ὄρος Σιών, καὶ μετ'

vial, are all significant of critical seasons of rebuke, and blasphemy, and woe (see above at the end of chap. xi.).

Besides, these *three sixes* represent a threefold failure and declension from that *sabbatical rest* and *perfection*, which is represented by the *number seven*; which, as before observed, is a symbol of Christ and the true Church.

The "*bearing of a number*" is a mode of speech derived from ancient usage. The *deities of heathens* had mystical numbers consecrated to them; and their *worshippers* bare those sacred numbers. Thus the mystical number of the Sun was 608, which, expressed in Greek letters, is XH, and this was borne by his votaries. See *Martian. Capellus*, de Nuptiis Philologiæ, i. 2. *Selden's Works*, iii. pt. 2, col. 1402; and *Grotius* here.

S. Irenæus, remarking on the peculiar arithmetical value of the name *Jesus* (Ἰησοῦς), as containing *three eights*, 888 (*Iren.* i. 15. 2, and ii. 24, 1, ed. Stieren, or pp. 72. 163, ed. Grabe), observes also that the number 666, containing *three sixes*, represents a *triple apostasy*, or *falling away* (*Iren.* v. 27, 28, ed. Stieren, or pp. 446, 447, ed. Grabe); and *Irenæus* identifies the Apocalyptic power here described with that of the *apostasia*, or *falling away*, portrayed by St. Paul, who had used the same word *apostasia* to describe it (*Iren.* ii. 25, Stieren; or p. 443, Grabe). See above on 2 Thess. ii. 3.

S. Irenæus observes that Holy Scripture mentions that the Flood came in the *six hundredth* year of Noah (Gen. vii. 11), and that the golden image of the King of *Babylon*, which tried the faith of the Three Children, was *sixty* cubits in height and *six* in breadth. (Dan. iii. 1.)

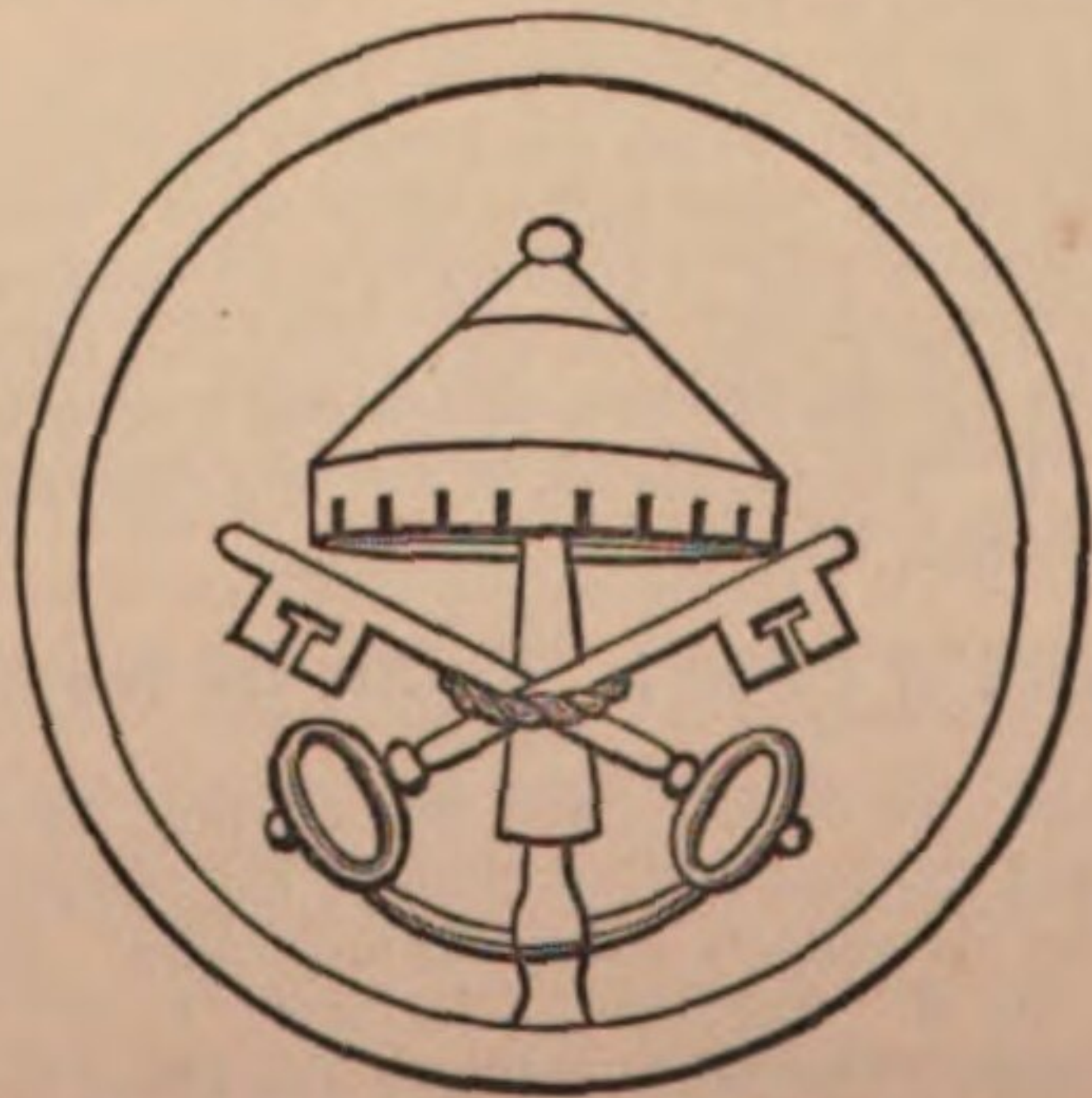
It has been observed by some ancient Expositors, that Holy Scripture has recorded that the number of Talents of gold paid as yearly tribute to King Solomon amounted to 666 (1 Kings x. 14). Solomon, though in some respects a type of Christ, yet is also represented in Holy Scripture as *multiplying horses* (1 Kings x. 29), contrary to God's command (Deut. viii. 16), and departing from David's example (Ps. xx. 7), and trusting in worldly and temporal power rather than in God; and as *multiplying wives* against God's command (Deut. viii. 16), and as lapsing into idolatry (1 Kings xi. 1—4).

The numerical symbol of the Beast, 666, indicates that he aims at and aspires to the attributes of Christ, and puts forth a semblance of Christian Truth, but *falls away* from it in a *triple decline* and *degeneracy*. Such a religious communion as once held the truth as it is in Christ, in its perfection and integrity, as the Roman Church did (see Rom. i. 8), and now displays a triple declension in faith, practice, and worship, seems to be aptly symbolized by such an arithmetical combination as 666.

Besides, this number has found a literal fulfilment in the Papacy.

We derive our knowledge of the *Imperial χάραγμα* from coins and other public documents. Let us resort to similar evidence for the *Papal Mark*.

The *Labarum* of *Imperial Christian Rome* is not borne by Papal Rome, but has been succeeded by another symbol, represented below; concerning which the Editor of *Numismata Pon-*



tificum, p. 191, ed. Paris, 1679, says, "Tritus est hic et valdè obviu nummus;" and p. 167, "ita vulgaris est, ut in ipso diutius immorari sit superfluum;" and p. 154, "vulgare est hoc numisma, quod toties repeti solet quoties nova cuditur moneta."

The KEYS arranged as there seen, constitute the badge of the Papacy.

The KEYS declare its claim to *universal supremacy*.

The words TIBI DABO CLAVES REGNI COELORVM (Matt. xvi. 19), inscribed inside the cupola of St. Peter's, are a demonstration of the grounds on which the claims of the Papacy are made to rest, and an assertion of the authority which those words are supposed by it to have conveyed.

The soldiers of Imperial Rome fought under the standard of the Cross; so those of Papal Rome fight under the standard of the Keys.

The Roman Emperor might be said to *conquer by the one*, EN ΤΟΥΤΩ ΝΙΚΑΝ; so they who successfully resist the power of Papal Rome may be said to be *conquerors over the other*, ΝΙΚΑΝ ΕΚ ΤΟΥ ΧΑΡΑΓΜΑΤΟΣ (Rev. xv. 2).

The χάραγμα in the Apocalypse forms a *Number*, and is to be counted (v. 17).

Does the badge of the Keys, as figured on the coins of the Papacy, correspond, *when counted*, to the χάραγμα described by St. John?

A copy of it, taken from Papal coins, has been inserted above. When the MONOGRAM there represented is resolved into its elements, the following letters appear:—

(1) ΧΞΣΤ
(2) ΧΞΣ

Let these elements be counted

χ = 600

ξ = 60

σ = 6;

and στ is equivalent to τ, and we have χξτ = 666. Or if τ be regarded as the *digamma*, there is the same result.

In *Isaac Casaubon's Diary*, ii. p. 800, A.D. 1610, is the following entry, "Papa χξτ."

(3) On the NAME of the Beast.

The name in question must satisfy the following conditions:

(1) The letters must, when calculated according to their numerical value, amount to 666.

(2) It must be descriptive of the character of the Beast.

(3) His adherents, who are said to *bear his name*, must be known to own themselves his subjects, and bound by his laws in respect to that particular attribute which the name declares, just as the Saints are said to *bear the name* of Christ and His Father (ii. 3. 13; iii. 12; xiv. 1; xxii. 4), because they own them as the true objects of worship, and themselves their servants.

S. Irenæus (in v. 30. 2, Stieren; p. 449, Grabe), and after him his scholar, *S. Hippolytus* (de Christo, p. 26, ed. Lagarde), mention ΛΑΤΕΙΝΟΣ, *Latinos*, as probably the name in question, for in the Greek notation—

λ = 30

α = 1

τ = 300

ε = 5

ι = 10

ν = 50

ο = 70

σ = 200

total, 666. And, adds *Irenæus*, this name makes up the requisite number, 666, and is very probable, because the *last* kingdom (i. e. the *fourth* of Daniel) "has this name, for they who now reign are called *Latins*."

This remark is important, as showing the opinion existing even in the age of *Irenæus*, the second century, that the Beast would be connected with the *Latin* race. And *S. Hippolytus* says, that the *Latins* were then the rulers of the world, and their name being summed up together into the name of one man, makes ΛΑΤΕΙΝΟΣ.

Both these writers mention some other names also as probable, but this name ΛΑΤΕΙΝΟΣ (as *Bp. Andrewes* observes, p. 293) is the most probable among them.

It is no objection to this opinion that the word is sometimes written ΛΑΤΙΝΟΣ. The form ε: is authorized by usage. See *Düsterdieck*, p. 456, and this is received by *Eichhorn*, *Ewald*, *De Wette*, and many others.

The Papal Power has succeeded to the Seat of the Latin or Western Empire; and in religious matters it is essentially *Latin*. It has preferred the *Latin Version* of the Scriptures even to the Hebrew and Greek originals, and affirms that its own Latin Translation is to be the authentic standard of Holy Writ.

It says in the fourth Session of the Council of Trent, that "if any one does not receive as sacred and canonical all the books which it recites, with all their parts" (some of which are apocryphal), "as they are accustomed to be read in the Catholic Church, and as they are contained in the Old *Latin Vulgate*, he is to be anathema." And, it adds, "that the old *Latin Vulgate* edition is to be held to be *authentic* in all sermons and expositions."

In defiance of God's authority pronouncing a blessing on all who search the Scriptures (Acts xvii. 11. Luke xvi. 31. 2 Tim. iii. 15. Rev. i. 3), the Papacy has been very loth to communicate the blessing of vernacular versions of the Scriptures to the people, and has kept them almost locked up in her own *Latin Version*;

αὐτοῦ ἑκατὸν τεσσαρακοντατέσσαρες χιλιάδες, ἔχουσαι τὸ ὄνομα αὐτοῦ, καὶ τὸ ὄνομα τοῦ Πατρὸς αὐτοῦ γεγραμμένον ἐπὶ τῶν μετώπων αὐτῶν. ^{2 b} καὶ ἤκουσα ^{b ch. 1. 15. & 5. 8. & 19. 6.} φωνὴν ἐκ τοῦ οὐρανοῦ ὡς φωνὴν ὑδάτων πολλῶν, καὶ ὡς φωνὴν βροντῆς μεγάλης· καὶ ἡ φωνὴ ἦν ἡκουσα ὡς κιθαρωδῶν κιθαριζόντων ἐν ταῖς κιθάραις αὐτῶν. ^{3 c} καὶ ᾄδουσιν ὡς ᾠδὴν καινὴν ἐνώπιον τοῦ θρόνου, καὶ ἐνώπιον τῶν τεσσάρων ^{c ch. 5. 9. Heb. 12. 23.} ζώων καὶ τῶν πρεσβυτέρων· καὶ οὐδεὶς ἠδύνατο μαθεῖν τὴν ᾠδὴν, εἰ μὴ αἱ ἑκατὸν τεσσαρακοντατέσσαρες χιλιάδες οἱ ἡγορασμένοι ἀπὸ τῆς γῆς. ^{4 d} Οὗτοί ^{d 1 Cor. 6. 20. 2 Cor. 11. 2. James 1. 18. ch. 3. 4. & 5. 9.} εἰσιν οἱ μετὰ γυναικῶν οὐκ ἐμολύνθησαν, παρθένοι γάρ εἰσιν· οὗτοί εἰσιν οἱ ἀκολουθοῦντες τῷ Ἀρνίῳ ὅπου ἂν ὑπάγῃ· οὗτοι ἡγοράσθησαν ἀπὸ τῶν ἁν-

and although the Latin Vulgate itself was a *Version* made originally for the edification of the people of Italy, it does not allow them the free use of the Scriptures in their own tongue. In spite also of the divine command, to "pray with the understanding" (see on 1 Cor. xiv. 14—20), the Papacy has been very reluctant to grant the use of public prayer in the native language of the nations over whom she exercises her sway, and has restrained the accents of public supplication to God within the trammels of her Latin Missal and Breviary. See *Dr. Bentley's* language on this subject in his Sermon on 2 Cor. ii. 17, vol. iii. pp. 247, 248, ed. Dyce.

It may indeed be alleged against this exposition, that the Pope does not bear the name *Latinus* or *Latin*.

But this is no valid objection. It suffices, if he is in fact what that name declares.

Indeed we should hardly look for a very obvious name here, because the Prophecy describes the search for it as an exercise of wisdom, a trial of understanding, and a work of calculation,—"Here is wisdom: let him that hath understanding count, or calculate, the number of the name."

Holy Scripture says that Christ's "name is the Branch" (Zech. vi. 12), and that "this is the name whereby He shall be called, the Lord our Righteousness" (Jer. xxiii. 16; xxxiii. 6), and that "a Virgin shall conceive and bear a Son, and they shall call His name Emmanuel" (Matt. i. 23). And yet we do not hear that Christ was ever called by any of these names: yet the prophecies which thus speak have been most surely fulfilled, because Christ *was*, and *did*, what those names declare.

So it may be with the name before us. The Papacy has succeeded to the seat of the Latin Empire, and rules in the capital of the Latin world. And it is indeed a wonderful characteristic of his empire, that this Latin Ruler will not allow any one of the nations on the earth to *buy or sell*, that is, to have any spiritual commerce with men or God by preaching, or prayer, unless they accept his Latin language in the place of God's own original Hebrew and Greek in the Holy Scriptures, and unless they accept his Latin language in the place of their own mother tongue, in common prayer and public praise to God, and in the administration of the Holy Sacraments. He would bring all nations of the earth under his own Latin yoke, and thus exercise over them an Imperial sway which was never wielded by Heathen Rome in the palmiest days of her power.

Thus, the exposition given by *S. Irenæus* and *S. Hippolytus* in the second and third centuries, has gained by time a force and clearness which they could not foresee; and if it was, as they affirm, very probable then, it is still more probable now.

The LAMB standing upon MOUNT SION, and the ONE HUNDRED AND FORTY-FOUR THOUSAND with Him.

CH. XIV. 1—5. καὶ εἶδον] And I saw, and, lo, the Lamb standing upon the mount Sion, and with Him an hundred forty and four thousand, having His name and His Father's name written in their foreheads.

And I heard a voice from heaven, as the voice of many waters, and as the voice of a great thunder: and I heard a voice of harpers harping with their harps: And they sing as it were a new song before the throne, and before the four Living Creatures, and the Elders: and no man could learn that song but the hundred and forty and four thousand, which were redeemed from the earth.

These are they which were not defiled with women; for they are virgins.

These are they which are following the Lamb whithersoever He goeth. These were redeemed from among men, a first-fruit unto God and to the Lamb. And in their mouth was found no lie: for they are without fault.

This chapter follows the preceding in a natural connexion. It contains a cheering consolation, a triumphant acclamation, and hortatory admonition, consequent upon what has been revealed

in the foregoing Vision of the dominion of the Beast, and the persecution of the faithful.

Observe the contrast here.

The LAMB (Ἀρνίον) is displayed standing, in opposition to the BEAST (θηρίον). The Beast had been seen rising from the Sea (xiii. 1), the element of tumultuous agitation; but the LAMB stands upon the Mount Sion, "which shall never be removed" (Ps. cxv. 1; cp. Ps. ii. 6; cx. 2; cxlvi. 10).

Mount Sion represents the City of the true Church of God, the City of the Lamb (cp. above, ii. 9; iii. 9), and is opposed to Babylon, which is the enemy of God's People, and is the city of the BEAST. (See xvii. 4, 5. 18.)

With the Lamb are seen standing a hundred and forty-four thousand (12 × 12,000). This number represents completeness and union in the true doctrine and discipline of Christ, as preached by the Twelve Apostles. See above on vii. 1—9, and note at end of chap. xi. and on xii. 1, and below, xxi. 14.

The symbolical number of 144,000 has a moral significance. These 144,000 stand in the same relation to the portion of the Church which is the subject of these later Visions, as the 144,000 in the Sixth Seal (vii. 4—9) do to the Universal Church of all ages and places of the world.

By this complete Apostolic number, these faithful confessors are contrasted with those who have the number of the Beast, which represents a defection from the Truth (see on xiii. 18). And they have the name of the Lamb and of His Father (so the best MSS.) on their foreheads; and so they are contrasted with those who receive the mark or name of the Beast on their foreheads. (See xiii. 16, 17; xiv. 11.)

This Vision, therefore, reveals the cheering truth, that, although, during the sway of the Beast, who had been displayed in the foregoing chapter, many would fall from the faith, and would do homage to him (see xiii. 8. 16), yet the true Catholic Apostolic Church of Christ would never fail, and would finally triumph over the power of the Beast, and would stand with the Lamb on Mount Sion, in His Kingdom, which will never be destroyed; and is hereafter revealed as established "on a great and lofty Mountain." See xxi. 10.

In v. 1, on the perfect participle ἑστὸς see above, Matt. xxiv. 15, and ἑστάναι, 1 Cor. x. 12. Winer, § 14, p. 72.

St. John hears a sound of jubilee coming out of heaven (v. 2).

The heavenly voices rejoice in the Victory of the Apostolic company of the 144,000 on Mount Sion. The heavenly quire celebrates their victory, by singing a new song before the Throne, and before the Four Living Creatures and the Elders, the emblems of the HOLY SCRIPTURES of the Old and New Testament (see on iv. 4—6), because the Victory has been gained through the power of God and His Holy Word.

In v. 4 the Apostolic Company of the 144,000 on Mount Sion who stand with the Lamb, are described as they which were not defiled with women: that is, they were not corrupted by the spiritual harlotries of Babylon, the false Church who is seated on the Beast, and who lures men with her fascinations, and bewitches them with her charms, and tempts them to drink of the cup of her strange doctrines; and who will be more fully described hereafter (xvii. 1—5). They have not defiled themselves with any spiritual fornications, such as that of the woman Jezebel, the false Teacher, already described as deceiving God's servants, and tempting them to commit fornication, and to be false to their plighted troth and allegiance to Him (see above, on ii. 20. 22).

They were not sullied with any such defilements; for "they are Virgins." Their souls had been espoused to Christ in spiritual wedlock, in Holy Baptism, by an Apostolic ministry, as St. Paul says to the Corinthians (2 Cor. xi. 2), *I espoused you as a chaste Virgin to one Husband, Christ.* "A pure faith is the virginity of the soul" (S. Aug. See on 2 Cor. xi. 2). They have

e Ps. 32. 2.
Zeph. 3. 13.
Eph. 5. 27.
Jude 24.
f ch. 8. 13.

θρώπων ἀπαρχὴ τῷ Θεῷ καὶ τῷ Ἀρνίῳ· ⁵ καὶ ἐν τῷ στόματι αὐτῶν οὐχ
εὐρέθη ψεῦδος· ἄμωμοι γάρ εἰσιν.

g Gen. 1. 1.
Ps. 33. 6.
& 124. 8. & 146. 6.
Acts 14. 14.
& 17. 24.

⁶ Καὶ εἶδον ἄλλον ἄγγελον πετόμενον ἐν μεσουρανήματι, ἔχοντα εὐαγγέλιον
αἰώνιον εὐαγγελίσαι ἐπὶ τοὺς καθημένους ἐπὶ τῆς γῆς, καὶ ἐπὶ πᾶν ἔθνος καὶ
φυλὴν καὶ γλῶσσαν καὶ λαόν, ⁷ λέγων ἐν φωνῇ μεγάλη, Φοβήθητε τὸν Θεὸν
καὶ δότε αὐτῷ δόξαν, ὅτι ἦλθεν ἡ ὥρα τῆς κρίσεως αὐτοῦ· καὶ προσκυνήσατε
τῷ ποιήσαντι τὸν οὐρανὸν καὶ τὴν γῆν καὶ τὴν θάλασσαν καὶ πηγὰς
ὕδατων.

h Isa. 21. 9.
Jer. 51. 8.
ch. 18. 2, 3, 10,
21. & 16. 19.
& 17. 2, 5.

⁸ Καὶ ἄλλος δεύτερος ἄγγελος ἠκολούθησε λέγων, Ἐπεσεν, ἔπεσε Βα-
βυλὼν ἡ μεγάλη, ἡ ἐκ τοῦ οἴνου τοῦ θυμοῦ τῆς πορνείας αὐτῆς
πεπότικε πάντα τὰ ἔθνη.

endeavoured to preserve their virgin purity of Soul in the true faith, "whole and undefiled," and to "perfect holiness in the fear of God," in spirit, soul, and body (2 Cor. vii. 1. 1 Thess. v. 23), and love the Lord in *uncorruptness*, ἀφθαρσία. See on Eph. vi. 24.

"The Virgins here mentioned," says the ancient Expositor in the works of *Augustine* (iii. pp. 31. 37), "are not only chaste in body, but they represent the Christian Church, which keeps the faith pure, not stained with any adulteration of heresy, nor with the sensual indulgences of this world: and we all, by baptism, and by Repentance after Baptism, may be Virgins, in the inner man, and may be without guile."

The word *παρθένος* is applied to *men* as well as to *women*. See *Suicer* in voce, and *Fabric.* Cod. Apocr. V. T. ii. 92. *Kypke*, Obs. Sac. on this passage. St. John himself is sometimes called *παρθένος* by Ecclesiastical Writers.

These Virgins represent the faithful Bride, married to the spotless Lamb (see xix. 7. 9), and they have not been seduced from their love to Christ by any of the ministers of the *Beast*: they are they who are following the Lamb wheresoever He goeth. If He goes to Gethsemane, they follow Him thither; if He goes to Calvary, they take up their Cross and follow Him thither. He is gone to heaven, and they will be with Him there also.

In v. 4 remark the *present participle* οἱ ἀκολουθοῦντες, they *who are* following the Lamb. Cp. οἱ ἐρχόμενοι ἐκ τῆς θλίψεως (vii. 14), and τοὺς νικῶντας ἐκ τοῦ θηρίου (xv. 2). This Hebraistic use of the *present participle* with the definite article, giving it the force of a *noun substantive*, is very expressive, as denoting the prominent feature, and distinctive characteristic which is designed for the reader's attention. Cp. οἱ ἐν Κυρίῳ ἀποθνήσκοντες (xiv. 13), these who are *dying* in the Lord, οἱ προσκυνῶντες τὸ θηρίον (xiv. 11), οἱ τηροῦντες τὰς ἐντολὰς τοῦ Θεοῦ (xiv. 12). See *Winer*, § 18, p. 100, and § 45, p. 316, and note above, on Matt. iv. 3, ὁ πειράζων.

In v. 5 *Elz.* has δόλος, but A, B, C have ψεῦδος, a *lie*, and so *Griesb.*, *Scholz*, *Lach.*, *Tisch.*, *Tregelles*. Cp. the contrast in the prophecy of St. Paul concerning the Man of Sin, with his *lying* wonders, τέρατα ψεύδους, and adherents, who are given over to love the *lie* (τὸ ψεῦδος), which he upholds (2 Thess. ii. 9—11).

On the word ἄμωμος, *without blemish*, see Eph. i. 4; v. 27. Col. i. 22. The Saints are made spotless by the blood of the Immaculate Lamb, Who redeemed them, and washed them from their sins, and Who, by offering Himself to God as "a Lamb *without blemish* (ἄμωμον) and without spot" (1 Pet. i. 19. Heb. ix. 14), enables them to "offer themselves living sacrifices, holy and acceptable to God" (Rom. xii. 1. Heb. xiii. 15).

In v. 5, after εἰσιν, *Elz.* has ἐνώπιον τοῦ θρόνου τοῦ Θεοῦ, but this addition is not in A, B, C, and is rejected by *Griesb.*, *Scholz*, *Lach.*, *Tisch.*, and *Tregelles*, and it is liable to objection on this account, because the servants of God, who are here presented to the view, are *not yet exalted to heavenly glory* and everlasting felicity, but are on *Mount Zion*, the Christian Church, and they are a *first-fruit* to God and the Lamb (v. 4).

The triumphal song does not originate with this Apostolic company of the 144,000, but it comes forth from *heaven* (vv. 2, 3), from the lips and harps of Angels, chanting their *victory*; and it is *learned* by the Apostolic company (v. 3), who are on *Mount Zion*. The triumphs of the Church on Earth are celebrated by the Church in heaven: and the Church on Earth learns the song of praise, and echoes the joyful sound. The γὰρ after ἄμωμοι is not in A, C, and is omitted by *Lachmann*.

The ANGEL flying in mid-heaven with the EVERLASTING GOSPEL to preach to ALL.

6, 7. καὶ εἶδον] *And I saw another Angel flying in mid-heaven, having the everlasting Gospel to preach unto them that sit on the earth, and unto every nation, and kindred, and tongue, and people, saying with a loud voice, Fear God, and give glory to Him; for the hour of His judgment is come: and worship Him that made heaven, and earth, and the sea, and the fountains of waters.*

Here is another Contrast.

The *Beast* has been represented in a preceding Vision as warring against HOLY SCRIPTURE, and killing the Two WITNESSES (see on xi. 3—7), which were raised again by the Spirit of God. The Scriptures have been also represented in another foregoing Vision as having been *bound* at the Great River *Euphrates*, which is the River of the *Great City*, the *Mystical Babylon*, the seat of the *Beast* (see above on ix. 14, and below, xvii. 3—5), and as having been afterwards *loosed* at God's command (see above on ix. 14).

As a natural sequence of those Visions, an *Angel* is now revealed flying in *mid-heaven*,—that is, conspicuously soaring aloft in triumph in the zenith of the sky, in the sight of all the world, and bearing "the EVERLASTING GOSPEL to preach unto (ἐπὶ, so A, B, C, *Lach.*, *Tisch.*, *Tregelles*) those who are sitting upon the Earth," sitting in worldliness and carnal indifference (see on Luke xxi. 35, and above, iii. 10), and to preach unto (ἐπὶ) every nation, and tribe, and tongue, and people.

This Preaching of the Gospel is a preparation for the End, as Christ Himself has declared. See Matt. xxiv. 14.

The Gospel which the Angel bears is called the EVERLASTING GOSPEL. Here is another contrast to the agency of the *Beast* above described, and of his adherents. The Gospel of Christ is the *everlasting* Gospel. It is unchanged and unchangeable. Nothing can be taken from it, and nothing can be added to it. The Gospel is One and the same Gospel as it was 1800 years ago. It is the same Gospel for all Nations, and for all ages, even unto the end of the world. And St. Paul has said, "If any one, or even an *Angel* from heaven, preach to you any thing, *besides* what we preached, let him be *anathema*." (See on Gal. i. 6—9.)

Yet, in spite of that *Apostolic anathema* twice repeated, the adherents of the *Beast* have pronounced *their anathema* on all who do not receive the *new* doctrines which they have added to the Gospel of God.

The words with which the Trent Council concluded its deliberations were words of malediction, "*Anathema, Anathema*;" and they were reiterated against all those who will not accept their novel decrees. *Concil. Trident.* Session xxv. Decr. 4, 1563.

In that Council the Papacy affirmed that its own *Latin Version* is to be the authentic Standard of Holy Scripture: and it has denied the free use of vernacular Versions of the Holy Scriptures to Nations under its sway (see above on xiii. 17, 18): but in this Vision the Angel *flies* (such is his eagerness and love) to preach the *Everlasting Gospel* unto every nation, and tribe, and language, and people.

The Angel also commands the world to *worship God*. Here is another contrast to the agency of the second *Beast* or false Teacher described above, who has horns like a *Lamb*, and endeavours to make every one *worship the Beast*, and his *Image* (see xiii. 11, 12. 15).

ANTICIPATION of the FALL of BABYLON.

8. καὶ ἄλλος] *And there followed another Angel, saying, "Fell, Fell, Babylon the Great," who hath given to all nations to drink of the wine of the wrath of her fornications.*

Remark the *aorist* here, ἔπεσεν, repeated, "*Fell, Fell, Baby-*

9 Καὶ ἄλλος ἄγγελος τρίτος ἠκολούθησεν αὐτοῖς λέγων ἐν φωνῇ μεγάλῃ, Εἴ τις προσκυνεῖ τὸ θηρίον καὶ τὴν εἰκόνα αὐτοῦ, καὶ λαμβάνει χάραγμα ἐπὶ τοῦ μετώπου αὐτοῦ ἢ ἐπὶ τὴν χεῖρα αὐτοῦ, ¹⁰ καὶ αὐτὸς πίεται ἐκ τοῦ οἴνου τοῦ θυμοῦ τοῦ Θεοῦ, τοῦ κεκερασμένου ἀκράτου ἐν τῷ ποτηρίῳ τῆς ὀργῆς αὐτοῦ, καὶ βασανισθήσεται ἐν πυρὶ καὶ θείῳ ἐνώπιον τῶν ἁγίων

i Ps. 75. 8.
Isa. 51. 17.
Jer. 25. 15.
ch. 16. 19.
& 19. 20. & 20. 10.

lon the Great." The English words "is fallen" do not exactly represent the Angel's prophecy. The meaning is,—though Babylon is now so great, and seems so strong, yet she *fell*. He foresees her fall as an event so certain that he describes it as *past*. On this prophetic use of the *aorist*, which expresses the *certainly* and *suddenness* of the fall, as if it were by a single blow, see above on ἐτελέσθη, x. 7.

There is also a peculiar significance in these words ἐπεσε, ἐπεσε Βαβυλὼν ἡ μεγάλη, as connecting this Apocalyptic prophecy concerning the fall of the *mystical* Babylon with the predictions of the *Hebrew Prophets* concerning the fall of the *literal* Babylon. Compare here Isa. xxi. 9, πέπτωκε πέπτωκε Βαβυλὼν, and Jer. li. 8 = xxi. 8, in the Septuagint Version, ἐπεσε Βαβυλὼν. And this *parallelism* between Hebrew Prophecy and the Apocalypse suggests and teaches, that as certainly and as suddenly as the *literal* Babylon fell, so certainly and so suddenly will the *mystical* Babylon fall.

Babylon fell. Here is an *anticipation*. It is a characteristic of the Apocalypse, as it is of Hebrew Prophecy, to *anticipate* future events, and to speak of them as having already *taken place*: and afterwards to *return*, by way of *recapitulation*, and to enlarge more fully upon them. See Augustine, de Civ. Dei xx. 14, "recapitulando dicit, tanquam ad id rediens, quod distulerat;" and *ibid.* c. 17, in Apocalypsi Joannes "eadem multis modis repetit." See above, Introduction, p. 151, and below, xx. 1—7, and cp. Dürstiedt, Einleitung, pp. 15—21.

Here, then, is a prophetic pre-announcement of an event which is to be described more fully *hereafter*—the *fall of the mystical Babylon*. See below, xvii. 1—18, pp. 250—253, where the question will be considered,—What City is meant by "Babylon the Great?"

It is not said here that Babylon was able to *compel* all nations to drink of her cup. The verb ποτίζω is used in *fourteen* other places of the New Testament, and in no case does the verb ποτίζω bear that meaning. The sense is, that she *endeavours* to make all Nations to drink of her golden cup (see xvii. 4). This cup is declared to be full of the *wine of the wrath*, that is, the *wrath* of God (cp. ἡ ὀργή, 1 Thess. ii. 16. Ps. lxxv. 9. Isa. li. 17. Jer. xxv. 15, 16), who, in His righteous retribution, will give to her to *drink of the cup of the wine of the fierceness of His wrath* (xvi. 19; cp. xiv. 10).

She is arrayed in splendid attire (xvii. 3), and professes to give them a delicious beverage from her golden chalice; but it will be found by those who drink it, to be no other than the *wine of the wrath of God*. And it is said to be the *wrath* of her *fornication*, because her fornication is the *cause* of that wrath, and because it is the *object* against which that wrath is directed.

On this use of the genitive, see above on Luke vi. 12, and Winer, § 30, pp. 167—169.

Some recent expositors have rendered these words, "Who hath *forced* the nations to drink of the wrath of her fornication;" and have interpreted the word *fornication* to mean "*secular commerce*," and "*wrath*" to signify the *violence* with which the commerce is driven forward. Such interpretations may be mentioned as indicating the results produced by the erroneous theory, that St. John is here speaking of a *secular* or *heathen* power; and as serving, among other evidences, to show the unsoundness of that theory.

WARNING AGAINST WORSHIP OF THE BEAST.

9. καὶ ἄλλος] And another third Angel followed them, saying with a loud voice, If any man worshippeth the Beast and his Image, and receiveth his mark upon his forehead or upon his hand, he also shall drink of the wine of the wrath of God which is mixed undiluted into the cup of His indignation; and he shall be tormented with fire and brimstone before the Lamb. And the smoke of their torment ascendeth up for ever and ever: and they have no rest day nor night, who worship the Beast and his Image, and whosoever receiveth the mark of his name.

— εἴ τις προσκυνεῖ] If any man worshippeth the Beast, he shall drink of the wine of the wrath of God.

These words contain an answer to the objections of some who allege, that the interpretation propounded above—which applies the description of the Beast to the Roman Papacy—cannot be true, inasmuch as it would involve a denial of the salvability of all who lived under it.

This objection is unfounded.

The Apocalypse itself refutes such a supposition. It declares that there are some *servants of God* in *Babylon*, the city of the Beast, and that there will be some servants of God in her there even till the eve of her fall. It contains a warning to God's people to *come out* of her; and it is evident from this warning, that some who are in her are *people of God* (xviii. 4).

Many, doubtless, there are, and ever have been, under the Papacy like those of Thyatira, who are described in this book as not knowing the *depths of Satan* (ii. 24).

It is not till after the *fall of Babylon*, already anticipated in v. 8, and now supposed to *have taken place*, that the solemn and awful denunciation contained in these verses (v. 9, 10) is uttered. But *that* fall has not taken place yet. It is *present* to God, who foreknows all things. Indeed, it is so certain, that it is represented as already *past* (v. 8). But it is still *future* to us. Rome still stands. The woe pronounced in these verses will light on those who have seen the dreadful judgments which will be executed by God on Babylon, and yet will not profit by the warning of her fall, but will persist in worshipping the Beast, even to the end. See note on v. 11.

But here a caution is necessary.

Many, doubtless, there were in *former* times in *our own* land, who had not the privilege, which *we* enjoy, of hearing the voice, "Come out of her, My People." They had not the warnings of the Everlasting Gospel: to them it was almost a sealed book. And this, too, is still the case with many in *foreign* lands. And since men's responsibilities vary with their privileges, and God judgeth men according to what they have, and not according to what they have not, therefore Christian Love, which hopeth all things, will think charitably, and if it speak at all, will not speak harshly of them.

This is true. But this is not all. What will be the lot of those who *hear* the voice, "Come out of her," and do not *obey* it? And, still more, what will be the lot of *those* who *go in* to Babylon and dwell there, when the voice from heaven says, "Come out of her, My people?"

The holy *Angels* are represented here as preaching the Gospel (v. 6), and announcing God's *warnings* to the world, especially those warnings which concern Babylon, and the power of the Beast (v. 8, 9, 11).

Let us, therefore, take heed not to weaken the force of these divine warnings, lest we ourselves be excluded from the blessed company of the Angels. We may hope for the enjoyment of their society, if with hearts like theirs, full of love to God, and of zeal for the salvation of mankind, we announce these warnings to others, and labour and pray for those who are in need of these admonitions.

It is to be carefully observed, that in the present Chapter we are brought to the very eve of the *Second Advent* of Christ; see vv. 7. 14, 15. 18.

Here is another example of *anticipation* which is very common in the Apocalypse. If (as some have said, and even still say) the *Beast*, as represented here, means the *Heathen Empire of Rome*, and if, as some allege, Babylon means the *Heathen City of Rome*, then the warnings of this Chapter would be altogether irrelevant. The *Heathen Empire of Rome* has disappeared more than a thousand years ago, and the *Heathen City of Rome* is no longer Mistress of the Earth. There is not, nor has there been for ten centuries, any need of an Angel from heaven to warn the world *not to worship Heathen Rome*.

But there is great need of an angelic voice to warn the world not to bow down, in their Consciences, Judgments, Reasons, and Wills, to another power, whose throne is at Rome; and who has exercised for many centuries, and still exercises a spiritual sway in the world.

In v. 10 the wine of God's wrath is said to be *mixed* (κεκερασμένος), and yet to be *undiluted* or *unmixed* (ἀκράτος).

Here is an *oxymoron*, showing that this saying is a *spiritual* one, and *not* to be taken *literally*. The wine of God's wrath is *mixed*, because it is mingled with the *bitter ingredients* of His indignation; as wine among the Hebrews sometimes was *mixed* with *drugs*, for the purpose of giving it greater potency (see Ps. lxxv. 9, and on Matt. xxvii. 34). But it is also *unmixed*, as not

k Isa. 34. 10.
ch. 19. 3.

l ch. 13. 10.

m 1 Cor. 15. 18.
1 Thess. 4. 14.

n Ezek. 1. 26.
Dan. 7. 13.
ch. 1. 13. & 6. 2.

o ch. 16. 17.
Joel 3. 13.
Matt. 13. 39.
Jer. 51. 33.

ἀγγέλων καὶ ἐνώπιον τοῦ Ἀρνίου. ¹¹ καὶ ὁ καπνὸς τοῦ βασανισμοῦ αὐτῶν εἰς αἰῶνας αἰώνων ἀναβαίνει, καὶ οὐκ ἔχουσιν ἀνάπαυσιν ἡμέρας καὶ νυκτὸς οἱ προσκυνοῦντες τὸ θηρίον καὶ τὴν εἰκόνα αὐτοῦ, καὶ εἴ τις λαμβάνει τὸ χάραγμα τοῦ ὀνόματος αὐτοῦ. ¹² Ὡδε ἡ ὑπομονὴ τῶν ἀγίων ἐστίν· οἱ τηροῦντες τὰς ἐντολὰς τοῦ Θεοῦ καὶ τὴν πίστιν Ἰησοῦ.

¹³ Καὶ ἤκουσα φωνῆς ἐκ τοῦ οὐρανοῦ λεγούσης, Γράψον· Μακάριοι οἱ νεκροὶ οἱ ἐν Κυρίῳ ἀποθνήσκοντες ἀπάρτι. Ναὶ, λέγει τὸ Πνεῦμα, ἵνα ἀναπαύσονται ἐκ τῶν κόπων αὐτῶν· τὰ δὲ ἔργα αὐτῶν ἀκολουθεῖ μετ' αὐτῶν.

¹⁴ Καὶ εἶδον, καὶ ἰδοὺ νεφέλη λευκὴ, καὶ ἐπὶ τὴν νεφέλην καθήμενον ὅμοιον ἄνθρωπου, ἔχων ἐπὶ τῆς κεφαλῆς αὐτοῦ στέφανον χρυσοῦν, καὶ ἐν τῇ χειρὶ αὐτοῦ δρέπανον ὀξύ. ¹⁵ Καὶ ἄλλος ἄγγελος ἐξῆλθεν ἐκ τοῦ ναοῦ κρᾶζων ἐν φωνῇ μεγάλη τῷ καθημένῳ ἐπὶ τῆς νεφέλης, Πέμψον τὸ δρέπανόν σου καὶ θέρισον, ὅτι ἦλθεν ἡ ὥρα θερίσαι, ὅτι ἐξηράνθη ὁ θερισμὸς τῆς γῆς. ¹⁶ Καὶ ἔβαλεν ὁ καθήμενος ἐπὶ τὴν νεφέλην τὸ δοῆπανον αὐτοῦ ἐπὶ τὴν γῆν, καὶ ἐθερίσθη ἡ γῆ.

being tempered with any elements of mercy; as wine among the Hebrews and other ancient nations was diluted with water. See Isa. i. 22, and cp. *Jahn*, *Archæol.* § 144.

In v. 11 οἱ προσκυνοῦντες τὸ θηρίον is a stronger expression than "those who worship the Beast;" it means those whose distinguishing characteristic is, that they are worshipping the beast, and persist in worshipping him, even to the end. On this sense of the present participle with the article, see above, v. 4, cp. vv. 12, 13.

This characteristic is so strongly marked that they are here represented as keeping it even after their death; they, who are the worshipping votaries and vassals of the Beast, they who live and die with this character stamped upon them, have no rest day or night after death.

12. Ὡδε ἡ ὑπομονή] Here is the patience of the Saints: they that are the keepers of the commandments of God and of the faith of Jesus.

13.] And I heard a voice from heaven saying, Write, Blessed are the dead, they who are dying in the Lord henceforth: Yea, saith the Spirit, that they may rest from their labours; and their works do follow with them.

They who are the keepers of the faith of Jesus, that is, the faith taught by Jesus (see on Rom. xii. 6. Jude 3, and of which He is the object, see xii. 17), are contrasted with those who have been just described (in vv. 9 and 11), as the worshippers of the Beast and the wearers of His mark, that is, the upholders and promoters of his profession of faith. The contrast between the number of Jesus and that of the Beast has been mentioned above, on xiii. 18.

After λεγούσης in v. 13, *Elz.* adds *μοι*, but this is not in the best MSS., and is rejected by *Griesb.*, *Scholz*, *Lach.*, *Tisch.*, *Tregelles*.

The word ἀπάρτι, henceforth, from this time forth (see John i. 52; xiii. 19; xiv. 7), intimates that there is a special blessedness announced from heaven to those who in times of great trouble and trial remain unwavering and firm, and stand fast, keeping the commandments of God, and the faith of Jesus. This mention of the faith of Jesus is a caution against the Judaistic notions of St. John's days, and reminds the reader that the *Sion* of the Apocalypse (see v. 1) is the Church of Jesus Christ.

Some Ancient Expositors connect ἀπάρτι with *val*. See *Andreas*, *Primasius*, *Bede*, and so *B.* and *Vulg.*, "Amodo, jam, dicit Spiritus;" the meaning of which would be that they who depart hence in the Lord enjoy immediate blessedness after their dissolution (see on Luke xxiii. 43). But wherever *val* is used in the New Testament, it stands the first word in the sentence. Perhaps, however, this sense, in a somewhat modified form, is the true one. Blessed are they who are dying in the Lord; and then a pause is to be made, and ἀπάρτι may stand by itself, the word blessed being repeated: blessed they are even from this moment in which they are dying; the present participle being used here. Yea, saith the Spirit, blessed are they who are thus dying, that they may rest from their labours.

They (says *Bede*) who worship the Beast to the end never rest after their death (see v. 11), but they who die in the Lord enjoy repose and are blessed, even from the moment of their death. And so the passage is understood by *A. Lapide*, *Wolf*, *Ewald*, *De Wette*, *Hengstenberg*, *Ebrard*; see *Düsterdieck*, p. 470. Thus this passage would indeed declare the immediate

blessedness of the faithful, whose complete blessedness is hereafter declared in xix. 9, which is the consummation of this declaration (cp. *Hengstenberg* here). Yea, even so saith the Spirit, blessed are they who thus depart this life, not that they may perish (1 Cor. xv. 18), or pass into a place of everlasting torment (v. 10), as will be the lot of those who persist in worshipping the Beast, after the fall of Babylon, and continue worshipping him even to the end (vv. 8—11), but who go hence in order that they may rest in peace from their labours (see above, on vi. 11. Cp. *Winer*, p. 409), and their works are not lost, but follow with them, and will receive an eternal reward at the Great Day.

A, C have ἀναπαύσονται here, and this has been compared with the form ἐκάην from *καίω* (see *Winer*, § 15, p. 80), but there seems to be little analogy between the two. B has ἀναπαύονται.

A, C have γὰρ before ἔργα, and so *Lachmann* and *Tregelles*; but B and the majority of Cursives have δὲ, and so *Tisch.*, and this reading seems preferable as introducing an additional circumstance of blessedness.

Preparation for the LAST JUDGMENT.

14—16. καὶ εἶδον] And I saw, and behold a white cloud, and one sitting on the cloud like unto the Son of man, having on his head a golden crown, and in his hand a sharp sickle. And another angel came out of the inner temple, crying with a loud voice to him that sat on the cloud, Thrust in thy sickle, and reap: for the season is come to reap; for the harvest of the earth is ripe. And he that sat on the cloud thrust in his sickle on the earth; and the earth was reaped.

One like the Son of Man is Christ (see i. 13) in His Human Nature coming to judge the world. He sitteth, because He is the Judge; and He sitteth on the Cloud, which is like His judgment-seat and chariot, on which He is described as coming in glory to judgment (see Dan. vii. 13. Matt. xxiv. 30; xxvi. 64. Luke xxi. 27. Acts i. 11; above, i. 7; x. 1; and xi. 12), and this cloud is white like light, the colour of Christ (see vi. 2). And He has a golden crown of victory, as in the First Seal. See vi. 2, and *Andreas* here.

Hitherto we had heard the voices of the *Heralds* announcing the approach of their Lord, but now we see the JUDGE (*Bede*).

He receives a commission to reap. The commission comes through the Angel from God. The Angel is only the bearer of it. The commission comes from the *vaids* of God; that is, from the inner shrine of the heavenly Temple, from the oracle of the Heavenly Holy of Holies, in which the Godhead dwells in ineffable glory, and it comes to Christ as *Son of Man*. "The Father judgeth no man, but hath committed all judgment to the Son, and hath given Him authority to execute judgment also, because He is the Son of Man" (John v. 22. Acts x. 42; xvii. 31). And the hour appointed for the Last Judgment is determined by the FATHER. (Matt. xxiv. 36. Acts i. 7.)

Vision of the LAST JUDGMENT. The work of JUDGMENT is described under a double figure.

1, As a HARVEST; 2, as a VINTAGE.

The dominant idea in the metaphor of the Harvest is the ingathering of the Good; the dominant idea in the metaphor of the Vintage is the crushing of the Wicked.

The Harvest is mentioned first: and this priority shows that Christ's first desire is that all should be saved (see 1 Tim. ii. 4).

17 Καὶ ἄλλος ἄγγελος ἐξῆλθεν ἐκ τοῦ ναοῦ τοῦ ἐν τῷ οὐρανῷ ἔχων καὶ αὐτὸς δρέπανον ὀξύ. 18^p καὶ ἄλλος ἄγγελος ἐξῆλθεν ἐκ τοῦ θυσιαστηρίου, ὁ ἔχων ^{p ch. 16. 8. Joel 3. 13.} ἐξουσίαν ἐπὶ τοῦ πυρὸς, καὶ ἐφώνησε κραυγῇ μεγάλη τῷ ἔχοντι τὸ δρέπανον τὸ ὀξύ λέγων, Πέμψον σου τὸ δρέπανον τὸ ὀξύ, καὶ τρύγησον τοὺς βότρυνας τῆς ἀμπέλου τῆς γῆς, ὅτι ἤκμασαν αἱ σταφυλαὶ αὐτῆς. 19^q Καὶ ἔβαλεν ὁ ἄγγελος ^{q ch. 19. 15.} τὸ δρέπανον αὐτοῦ εἰς τὴν γῆν, καὶ ἐτρύγησε τὴν ἀμπελον τῆς γῆς, καὶ ἔβαλεν εἰς τὴν ληνὸν τοῦ θυμοῦ τοῦ Θεοῦ τὸν μέγαν. 20^r Καὶ ἐπατήθη ἡ ληνὸς ἔξωθεν ^{r Isa. 63. 3. Lam. 1. 15. ch. 11. 8. & 19. 14.} τῆς πόλεως, καὶ ἐξῆλθε αἷμα ἐκ τῆς ληνοῦ ἄχρι τῶν χαλινῶν τῶν ἵππων, ἀπὸ σταδίων χιλίων ἑξακοσίων.

XV. 1^a Καὶ εἶδον ἄλλο σημεῖον ἐν τῷ οὐρανῷ μέγα καὶ θαυμαστὸν, ἀγγέλους ^{a ch. 12. 1, 3. & 14. 10. & 16. 1. b ch. 4. 6. & 5. 8. & 13. 15, 17. & 14. 2. & 21. 18. Matt. 3. 11.} ἑπτὰ ἔχοντας πληγὰς ἑπτὰ τὰς ἐσχάτας, ὅτι ἐν αὐταῖς ἐτελέσθη ὁ θυμὸς τοῦ Θεοῦ. 2^b Καὶ εἶδον ὡς θάλασσαν ὑαλίνην μεμιγμένην πυρί· καὶ τοὺς νικῶντας

The *Harvest* is the manifestation of God's *Love* in the ingathering of the *good wheat* into the *heavenly barn* (Matt. xiii. 39). In like manner when Christ describes the transactions of the Great Day, He *speaks first of the reward* to them on the *right hand* (Matt. xxv. 34), and *afterwards* He pronounces the doom of those on the *left hand* (v. 41).

The Parable of the Tares and the Wheat is not at variance with this view; for *there* the whole drift of the Parable is concerning the existence of *evil* in the world, and in the Church: and *evil* is therefore put prominently forward: and the Wheat could not be reaped with the sickle, *unless* the Tares growing with it had been first rooted up (Matt. xiii. 30. 39. 43).

In accordance with this view of the divine desire for the *salvation* of *all men*, the work of reaping the *Harvest* of the *good seed* is here done by *Christ Himself*, the Son of Man (v. 14), but He executes by an Angel the work of the *Vintage*.

It is indeed Christ Who treads the Winepress (see xix. 15), "for all judgment is committed to Him."

The World's VINTAGE.

17—20. καὶ ἄλλος] And another angel came out of the inner temple which is in heaven, he also having a sharp sickle. And another angel came out from the altar, he that hath authority over the fire; and cried with a loud cry to him that had the sharp sickle, saying, Thrust in thy sharp sickle, and gather the clusters of the vine of the Earth; for her grapes are fully ripe. And the angel thrust in his sickle into the Earth, and gathered the vine of the earth, and cast it into the great Winepress of the wrath of God. And the Winepress was trodden without the City: and blood came out from the Winepress, even up to the bridles of the Horses, for the space of a thousand six hundred furlongs.

In v. 18 A, C have δ before ἔχων, and so Lach., Tisch. Elz. omits it. In v. 19 A, B, C have τὸν μέγαν, and so Griesb., Scholz, Lach., Tisch., Tregelles; and some of the old Commentators (e. g. Primasius) have remarked on this singular combination of a masculine adjective with a feminine substantive. Cp. Winer, § 59, p. 466. If the reading is correct, perhaps this is another specimen of the practice of the writer of the Apocalypse endeavouring to stimulate the attention of the reader to things and persons of unparalleled grandeur and sublimity by bold solecisms (see above, i. 4). The substantive ληνὸς is feminine, but his view of it, as *here used*, may be, that a feminine adjective would be too weak to describe its awful fury: and that the exceeding terror of the *winepress of the wrath of God* may best be described by a combination at variance with ordinary human utterances concerning the things of this lower world. Even in heathen Poets we find something of the same anomalous combination, e. g. in *Æschyl.* Eumen. 551, Wellauer; *Agam.* 545, Blomf. *Eurip.* Hippol. 387. *Pindar*, Olymp. vi. 23, Heyne. Cp. Matt. G. G. § 436. There was something of the same δεινότης in the acclamation "Moriatur pro rege nostro Mariâ Theresâ."

The casting of Grapes into a *Winepress*, and the act of *treading* them under the feet, so that the juice flows out of them in purple streams, is emblematic in Holy Scripture of *destruction of Enemies* in battle, with great *carnage* (Isa. xvii. 6. Jer. xlix. 9. Lam. i. 15). It is especially descriptive of the Last Judgment to be executed by Christ. For He in His own Death and Passion poured out His own blood in the Winepress of God's fury against the Sin of the World, and thus he was a Saviour and a Redeemer of all, before He became their Judge. But when the Day of grace

and salvation is past, and the Day of Doom is come, and the season of the *World's Vintage*, then He will tread all His enemies *under His feet* (1 Cor. xv. 25. 27) with the same ease as the treader of grapes in a Winepress tramples the ripe, luscious fruit; He will trample them in the great Winepress of the wrath of God. Compare the prophecy of Isaiah (lxiii. 1—6), where the two ideas above expressed are combined in one picture; and see Joel iii. 9. 13, where the imagery of the Vintage is used to describe the Judgment of God.

This judgment and destruction of His Enemies will be *universal*. None will escape. The blood is therefore described as flowing from the Winepress for 16,000 *furlongs*, i. e. 4 × 4000, which is symbolical of *all space*,—"per quatuor omnis mundi partes," says *Primasius*. See above, on ch. xi. at end.

On the use of ἀπὸ here, to signify *distance*, see on John xi. 18; xxi. 8.

The Winepress is trodden *from without the City*; for no unclean thing can enter *into* the City, the Holy City (xxi. 27; xxii. 15). Elz. has ἔξω here; but A, B, C have ἔξωθεν, and so Griesb., Scholz, Lach., Tisch., Tregelles.

The blood is said to reach up to the *bridles of the Horses*. This mention of *Horses*, in connexion with the *Winepress*, may at first cause surprise. But it serves an important purpose. It is doubtless designed to show, that the words are to be understood *figuratively* and *not literally*; a purpose which is also answered by the combination of a sickle with the *vintage* (v. 18). And the *Horses* are mentioned here, in order to *connect* this prophecy of Christ's Triumph over His enemies with the vision of His Victories on the *White Horse* revealed in the first Seal (vi. 2), and with His final conquest in xix. 11—14, where He is described as "riding on the *White Horse*, and His Armies follow Him on *White Horses*, and He has a vesture dipped in blood, and He treadeth the *Winepress of the fierceness and wrath* of the Almighty; and He hath on His vesture His name written, KING of KINGS, and LORD of LORDS." Observe the combination of the *Winepress* with the *Horses* in *that Vision*, as *here*.

CH. XV. 1. καὶ εἶδον] And I saw another sign in heaven, great and marvellous, seven angels, having seven plagues, which are the last, for in them is finished the wrath of God.

St. John, having been brought, in the foregoing chapter, to the eve of the Day of Judgment, now *re-ascends*, as usual, to an *earlier point* in the Prophecy; and *enlarges* on the judicial chastisements to be inflicted on the Empire of the Beast.

Those chastisements are called the *Seven last Plagues*, or SEVEN VIALS (see v. 5, and xvi. 1).

The plagues which are to be poured out upon the Empire of the Beast are called *the last*, for in them is *filled up* the wrath of God.

Here is another Evidence that the Empire of the Beast is a Power that will endure to the *eve of the end*; and cannot be (as some have imagined) the *Heathen Empire of Rome*.

The aorist ἐτελέσθη (literally, *was finished*) is the prophetic aorist, which speaks of a thing foreseen and decreed by God as *already done*. See above, note on ἐτελέσθη, x. 7.

ANTICIPATIONS, continued and expanded, of the future VICTORY of the Faithful over the Power of the Beast.

2. καὶ εἶδον] And I saw as it were a sea of glass mingled with fire, and those who come forth conquering from the Beast and his image, and the number of his name, standing on the sea of glass, having harps of God. And they sing the song of Moses the

c Exod. 15. 1.
Ps. 111. 2.
& 139. 14.
& 145. 17.

d Isa. 66. 23.
Jer. 10. 7.

e Num. 1. 50.
ch. 11. 19.
f ch. 1. 13.
Exod. 28. 6, 8.
Ezek. 44. 17, 18.

ἐκ τοῦ θηρίου καὶ ἐκ τῆς εἰκόνης αὐτοῦ καὶ ἐκ τοῦ ἀριθμοῦ τοῦ ὀνόματος αὐτοῦ, ἑστῶτας ἐπὶ τὴν θάλασσαν τὴν ὑαλίνην, ἔχοντας κιθάρας τοῦ Θεοῦ.^{3 c} καὶ ᾄδουσι τὴν ᾠδὴν Μωϋσέως δούλου τοῦ Θεοῦ, καὶ τὴν ᾠδὴν τοῦ Ἀρνίου, λέγοντες, Μεγάλα καὶ θαυμαστὰ τὰ ἔργα σου, Κύριε ὁ Θεὸς ὁ παντοκράτωρ, δίκαιαι καὶ ἀληθιναὶ αἱ ὁδοί σου, ὁ βασιλεὺς τῶν ἐθνῶν.^{4 d} τίς οὐ μὴ φοβηθῇ σε, Κύριε, καὶ δοξάσει τὸ ὄνομά σου; ὅτι μόνος ὁσῖος· ὅτι πάντα τὰ ἔθνη ἤξουσιν καὶ προσκυνήσουσιν ἐνώπιόν σου, ὅτι τὰ δικαιώματά σου ἐφανερώθησαν.

^{5 e} Καὶ μετὰ ταῦτα εἶδον, καὶ ἡνοίγη ὁ ναὸς τῆς σκηνῆς τοῦ μαρτυρίου ἐν τῷ οὐρανῷ.^{6 f} καὶ ἐξῆλθον οἱ ἑπτὰ ἄγγελοι, οἱ ἔχοντες τὰς ἑπτὰ πληγὰς, ἐκ τοῦ ναοῦ, ἐνδεδυμένοι λίνον καθαρὸν λαμπρὸν, καὶ περιεζωσμένοι περὶ τὰ στήθη

servant of God, and the song of the Lamb, saying, Great and marvellous are thy works, O Lord God the Almighty: righteous and true are thy ways, thou King of the Nations. Who shall not fear thee, O Lord, and glorify thy name? for thou only art holy: for all the nations shall come and worship before thee; for thy judgments were made manifest.

St. John sees a *sea of glass mingled with fire*. Here is an allusion to the deliverance of the Israelites from the captivity of Egypt, and to the Divine retribution executed on the enemies of the ancient People of God. The *fire* is the emblem of Judgment. The *sea* which St. John beholds calls to mind the *Red Sea* which overwhelmed God's foes with its waves, but which is not a tumultuous element to His *faithful servants*, but a placid sea of *glass*, like the crystal sea in Heaven described above, iv. 6.

Standing on its shore are seen those who come forth conquerors out of the bondage of the *Beast*, that is, those who are delivered from his sway, as the Israelites were in their Exodus from the land of Pharaoh, and from the house of bondage, and who emerged in triumph from the waters of the Red Sea. This is the idea expressed in the phrase *τοὺς νικῶντας ἐκ*, a very significant phrase, as showing that their *victory* consisted in *deliverance* from the Dominion under which they had been enslaved, and from the dangers by which they were compassed. Compare the phrase *μετανοεῖν ἐκ*, ii. 21, 22; ix. 20, 21; xvi. 11; and cp. Ps. xviii. 21, "Thou hast heard me out of the horns of the unicorns," and *Winer*, § 47, p. 329.

Observe the use of the participle with the article, *τοὺς νικῶντας*, literally, the *conquering ones*, those who *conquer*, and *continue conquering*; and are presented to the view as *ever conquering*, inasmuch as the fruits of their victory are *everlasting*. See above, on xiv. 4, *οἱ ἀκολουθοῦντες τῷ ἀρνίῳ*.

The *κιθάραι τοῦ Θεοῦ*, *harps of God*, are those which sing His praise, and are dedicated wholly to that purpose. Cp. v. 8; xiv. 2.

Here is comfort to the Churches of England, Ireland, America, and others which have been delivered from the bondage of the Papacy. There is also admonition to them in this prophetic Vision. Let them stand, as it were, on the sea-shore, as the Israelites did on the Eastern side of the Red Sea, and let them praise God for their deliverance. Let them have *harps of God* in their hands, and sing the *song of Moses the servant of God*, as the ancient Church did after its Exodus (Exod. xv. 1. 6. 13), and as Moses did on that occasion and at the close of his life (Deut. xxxiii.), and let them sing the song of the *Lamb*, for they *overcome by the blood of the Lamb*, and by the *Word* of their *testimony* (xii. 11). In other words, let them *not be content* with having *renounced the errors* of the Papal Egypt, but let them *hold fast the true faith*. Let them offer a pure and holy service to God; let them sing with their hearts, and in their lives, a perpetual song of love and obedience to Him and to the Lamb.

On the form of the adjective, *ὑαλινὸς*, of *glass*, see above, note on I Cor. iii. 1. *Winer*, § 16, p. 89.

In v. 2 Elz. has ἐκ τοῦ χαράγματος αὐτοῦ after εἰκόνης αὐτοῦ καὶ, but those words are not in A, B, C, and have been rejected by Griesb., Scholz, Lach., Tisch., Tregelles.

Also Elz. has ἀγίων, of *saints*, at the end of v. 3, but ἐθνῶν, of *Nations*, is the reading of A, B. Compare Jer. x. 7. And this reading has been received by Griesb., Scholz, Lach., Tisch., Tregelles. C has αἰώνων, but this (as Tregelles has observed) is only a slight variation from ἐθνῶν, arising from the similarity of sounds of αἰ and ε in the ancient pronunciation—still maintained in Greece—and from the likeness of the letters Θ and Ω.

Remark, that God is here praised as *King of Nations*. He judges *Nations* as well as *Individuals*, and in the *last days* His Divine Judgments will be more and more *manifest*, because *Nations* will have *no national existence* in the *next world*, and

therefore *Nations* must expect to be judged in *this world*. Let *Nations* therefore take warning from this prophecy.

v. 4. "Thou only art *holy*," ὁσῖος.

The God whom Christians worship is the only God who is ὁσῖος, *holy*; the deities of the heathen are *unholy*. Even their worshippers represent them as actuated by evil passions, such as cruelty, anger, envy, lust. "Thou only, O God, art *holy*;" see Ps. xcix. 3. 9.

On the meaning of the word δικαιώματα in v. 4, see note above on Rom. i. 32.

Preparation for the pouring out of the *SEVEN VIALS* on the Empire of the *Beast*.

5. καὶ μετὰ ταῦτα] *And after this I saw, and the inner-temple of the tabernacle of the testimony in heaven was opened: And the seven Angels came out of the inner-temple, who have the seven plagues, clothed in pure and white linen, and having their breasts girded with golden girdles. And one of the Four Living Creatures gave unto the seven Angels seven golden Vials full of the wrath of God, who liveth for ever and ever. And the inner-temple was filled with smoke from the glory of God, and from His power; and no man was able to enter into the inner-temple, till the seven plagues of the seven Angels should have been finished.*

The place from which the seven Angels who have the seven plagues come forth is the *ναὸς*, the *inner-temple* in which God dwells (*ναεῖ*). See on xi. 1, 2, and on 2 Thess. ii. 4.

It is called the sanctuary of the tabernacle of the *testimony*, because the *testimony* (μαρτύριον) was in the Holy of Holies in the Levitical Temple; and it bare *witness* to, and was *typical* of, the offering to be made by Christ, the Great High Priest, in the true heavenly Holy of Holies, before the Mercy-seat of God. See above, note on 1 Tim. ii. 6.

The seven Angels come forth from the Heavenly Holy of Holies, the throne of God's majesty and mercy, and the sanctuary in which Christ is ever offering *prayer*, and in which the testimony of His Love is enshrined, and they are arrayed in *pure, bright linen garments, and with golden girdles about their breasts*, v. 6; that is, they are arrayed in the attire of *Priests* of the heavenly temple (see above, i. 13; and cp. Exod. xxviii. 6. 8); and one of the four Evangelical *Living Creatures* (see above, iv. 6) gives them their instruments of vengeance.

These instruments are called *Vials*, or rather sacred *bowls*, for *sacrificial* purposes (see above on v. 8, and below, xvi. 1), showing that the office which these seven Angels are commissioned to execute is a *sacred* one. They are not swayed by the impulse of human passion in undertaking it; it is a sacerdotal office, a religious function, discharged in obedience to God's command, issuing from His heavenly throne, and for the vindication of His honour and service, and for retribution on His enemies, who have despised and disobeyed the law of *His testimony*. It also calls to mind, that the destruction of those who impiously rebel against God, is, as the Hebrew Prophets represent it, like a great *sacrifice* (cp. Isa. xxxiv. 6; lxiii. 1. Jer. xlv. 10. 18. Zeph. i. 7; cp. above, James v. 5; below, xix. 17), and that it is a consequence of the *prayers* of the Church for deliverance, and of Christ the Mediator and Advocate, the King and Judge of all.

In this respect, as in others, which will be noted hereafter, the *VIALS* which are poured out upon a particular form of hostility to God, bear a striking resemblance to the *TRUMPETS*, which announce God's Judgments generally against the wicked. The *VIALS* are to the Empire of the *Beast*, what the *TRUMPETS* are to the *whole body* of *God's enemies*, with this difference, that the *Trumpets* announced Judgments, the *Vials* execute them. Cp. on viii. 2—6.

ζώνας χρυσᾶς⁷ καὶ ἐν ἐκ τῶν τεσσάρων ζώων ἔδωκε τοῖς ἑπτὰ ἀγγέλοις ἑπτὰ φιάλας χρυσᾶς, γεμούσας τοῦ θυμοῦ τοῦ Θεοῦ τοῦ ζώντος εἰς τοὺς αἰῶνας τῶν αἰώνων.⁸ Καὶ ἐγεμίσθη ὁ ναὸς καπνοῦ ἐκ τῆς δόξης τοῦ Θεοῦ, καὶ ἐκ τῆς δυνάμεως αὐτοῦ καὶ οὐδεὶς ἠδύνατο εἰσελθεῖν εἰς τὸν ναὸν, ἄχρι τελεσθῶσιν αἱ ἑπτὰ πληγαὶ τῶν ἑπτὰ ἀγγέλων.

^g Exod. 40. 34.
¹ Kings 8. 10.
Isa. 6. 4.
² Thess. 1. 9.

XVI. ¹ Καὶ ἤκουσα μεγάλης φωνῆς ἐκ τοῦ ναοῦ, λεγούσης τοῖς ἑπτὰ ἀγγέλοις, Ὑπάγετε καὶ ἐκχέετε τὰς ἑπτὰ φιάλας τοῦ θυμοῦ τοῦ Θεοῦ εἰς τὴν γῆν.

² Καὶ ἀπῆλθεν ὁ πρῶτος καὶ ἐξέχεε τὴν φιάλην αὐτοῦ εἰς τὴν γῆν καὶ ἐγένετο ἑλκος κακὸν καὶ πονηρὸν ἐπὶ τοὺς ἀνθρώπους τοὺς ἔχοντας τὸ χάραγμα τοῦ θηρίου, καὶ τοὺς προσκυνούντας τῇ εἰκόνι αὐτοῦ.

^a Exod. 9. 9—11.
ch. 13. 14, 16, 17.

v. 8. The smoke in the inner-temple is like a prelude to the breaking forth of the fire of God's wrath. It is the warning of coming judgments now to be described. Cp. Exod. xix. 18. Isa. vi. 4. Heb. xii. 18. No one could enter the Inner-Temple on account of the Divine presence in the manifestation of the Divine indignation.

Cp. Exod. xl. 34, 35, where Moses is not able to enter the Tabernacle; and 1 Kings viii. 10, 11, where no one could stand to minister because of the cloud. If that was the case in consequence of the cloud, which was not an evidence of anger, how much more would it be here, by reason of the smoke, which is a precursor of the outbreak of the fiery indignation of God!

THE SEVEN VIALS.

CH. XVI. 1—10. καὶ ἤκουσα] And I heard a great voice out of the inner-temple saying to the seven angels, Go your ways, and pour out the vials of the wrath of God into the earth.

And the first went his way and poured out his vial into the earth; and there came a noisome and grievous boil upon the men which have the mark of the Beast, and upon them which worship his image.

And the second poured out his vial into the sea; and it became as the blood of a dead man: and every soul alive died, — those that were in the sea.

And the third poured out his vial into the rivers and fountains of waters; and they became blood. And I heard the angel of the waters say, Righteous art Thou, O Lord, which art, and wast, holy art Thou, because Thou didst judge thus. For they poured out the blood of saints and prophets, and Thou hast given them blood to drink; they are worthy. And I heard the altar say, Even so, Lord God Almighty, true and righteous are Thy judgments.

And the fourth poured out his vial upon the sun; and it was given unto him to scorch men with fire. And men were scorched with great heat, and blasphemed the name of God, who hath the authority over these plagues: and they repented not to give Him glory.

And the fifth poured out his vial upon the throne of the beast; and his kingdom was filled with darkness: and they were gnawing their tongues for the pain, and they blasphemed the God of heaven because of their pains and their sores, and repented not of their deeds.

The same imagery is preserved as in the preceding chapter; the scenery is derived from Egypt: and the Empire of the Beast is scourged by Plagues, like those which fell on Pharaoh and his people.

These Plagues are poured forth from VIALS.

To understand the full meaning of the word *Vials*, we must refer to the history of the Egyptian plagues.

"The Lord said unto Moses and Aaron, Take to you ashes of the furnace, and let Moses sprinkle it toward the heaven in the sight of Pharaoh; and it shall become small dust in all the land of Egypt, and shall be a boil breaking forth with blains upon man and upon beast, throughout all the land of Egypt. And they did so. And the Magicians could not stand before Moses because of the boils; for the boils were upon the Magicians, and upon all the house of Pharaoh." (Exod. ix. 8—11.)

One of the Egyptian plagues was a *boil* on the Egyptians, even on the *Magicians* and house of *Pharaoh*; and the first of these Seven Plagues of the Apocalypse is a *boil* upon all who have the *mark of the Beast*.

The word used by St. John to describe this plague is *ἑλκος*, the same word as used by the LXX in the Books of Moses to describe the plague on the Egyptians. See Exod. ix. 10, 11. Deut. xxviii. 27. 35.

In Egypt the action was performed by Moses and Aaron the Priest with common fire from the furnace; but here the plagues

are poured forth by Angel Priests with φιάλαι, VIALS. This word, as was before observed (v. 8), is not to be understood in its common English acceptation. It does not signify a bottle, but a bowl-like dish. It is a word borrowed from the *Temple-Worship*, and describes the *sacred bowls*, in which the aromatic incense that was lighted by coals taken from the great brazen altar of sacrifice, which stood in the outer court of the Temple, was offered on the *Golden Altar*, which stood in the inner court or Holy Place, before the Veil.

The Vials, then, are *sacred Vessels*. The incense now contained in them is called the *Wrath of God*; and there is a contrast between φιάλη γέμουσα θυμοῦ, and φιάλη γέμουσα θυμιαμάτων. (Rev. v. 8.) The former, instead of containing θυμίαμα, incense, contains θυμὸς, *wrath*, burning like fire. We have, in English, a parallel to this, in our word *incensed*.

The incense of God's wrath is poured out by Angel-Ministers coming forth from the heavenly oracle; and it is poured forth on the power of the Beast, on which the Harlot City, Babylon the Great, sits enthroned. (Rev. xvii. 3. 7. 18.)

The act of pouring forth had already been used in Hebrew Prophecy as an image descriptive of the execution of Judgments from heaven (see Ps. lxxix. 6. Zeph. iii. 8); and it exhibits, in a striking manner, the ease with which the Almighty Ruler of the World, the King of Nations (xv. 3), punishes the most powerful Kingdoms of the Earth. He pours out upon them some of the ingredients of the cup of His wrath, and forthwith they are destroyed thereby.

The sixth plague of Egypt—that of the boils—is the first plague here. The reason of which (as Dr. Lightfoot has suggested) seems to be, that the sixth plague of Egypt was on its false Teachers, the Magicians; and they could not stand before Moses (see Exod. ix. 11); and the Empire, on which these Apocalyptic Plagues are poured, is not only a temporal Power, but a spiritual Empire.

The vessels here used as instruments of punishments are holy Vessels, filled with coals from God's altar, by ministering Angels in priestly attire; and, according to that adaptation and adjustment which usually subsist between divine punishments and the human sins which are punished, the sacred Vials are poured out by Angel Priests, coming forth from the heavenly Church, upon an hierarchical Empire, for spiritual sins.

Vials are holy Vessels, and the use of Vials in the execution of Vengeance, represents the change of instruments of blessing into weapons of chastisement. It exhibits a solemn warning, a moral lesson, and spiritual admonition. Wherever means of grace are not duly used, they recoil on those to whom they have been offered, and become means of punishment. These Vials represent blessings changed into banes. The greater the gifts of God are to a Church, the more fierce will be His wrath against her, if she abuse them. "Now, O ye Priests," says God by Malachi (ii. 1), "this commandment is for you, If ye will not hear to give glory to My Name, I will send My curse upon you, and will curse your blessings."

"Thanks be to God," says St. Paul, "Who always leads us in triumph in Christ and maketh manifest the savour (or odour, rather) of His knowledge in every place. For we are a sweet savour (or perfume, rather) of Christ in them that are saved, and in them that perish. To the one we are a savour (odour) of death unto death; to the other a savour (odour) of life unto life. And who is sufficient for these things? For we are not as the many who corrupt the Word of God." (2 Cor. ii. 14—16.)

The Apostles of Christ, who dispense the Word and Sacraments in truth and godly sincerity (2 Cor. ii. 17) in His name Who gave Himself for us, an offering and a sacrifice to God, for a sweet-smelling savour (Eph. v. 2), are like the Priests of the Temple offering sweet incense to God on the altar of His Sanctuary, which

^b Exod. 7. 17, 20.
ch. 8. 8, 9.

^{3 b} Καὶ ὁ δεύτερος ἐξέχεε τὴν φιάλην αὐτοῦ εἰς τὴν θάλασσαν καὶ ἐγένετο αἷμα ὡς νεκροῦ καὶ πᾶσα ψυχὴ ζῶσα ἀπέθανεν, τὰ ἐν τῇ θαλάσῃ.

⁴ Καὶ ὁ τρίτος ἐξέχεε τὴν φιάλην αὐτοῦ εἰς τοὺς ποταμοὺς καὶ εἰς τὰς πηγὰς

oblation is acceptable to Him in Christ, "Who has entered within the Veil" (Heb. vi. 19); and this Ministry of Apostles, and Apostolic men, is a sweet-smelling odour to Life Eternal for all who gladly receive what they deliver.

But, if a Church adulterates the Word and Sacraments, the aromatic incense of their spiritual censers fills up the *Vials of God's wrath*, and instead of ascending into Heaven in fragrant clouds, it descends upon her in fiery streams. The blessings of His Word and Sacraments become Plagues. Scripture becomes a Scourge, and the Word a Woe. *They are an odour of death unto death.*

All the Vials are poured into (εἰς) the earth; and yet one of them, especially, is described as poured into the earth (v. 2), and another is poured into the sea (v. 3), and another into the rivers (v. 4), and another upon the sun (v. 8). All are poured from heaven downward into the lower earthly region; and each is poured upon special objects in that lower region.

Observe also the change in the use of the preposition prefixed to the several objects of the seven Vials. The first three Vials are poured εἰς, or into; i. e. into the earth; into the sea; into the rivers. The last four Vials are poured ἐπὶ, or upon, with an accusative; i. e. upon the sun; upon the Throne of the Beast; upon the river Euphrates; upon the air (ἀέρα).

The former preposition (εἰς, into) seems to denote *infusion into and admixture with* the object of punishment; the latter (ἐπὶ, upon) seems to denote the Divine dominion over the object which has exalted itself against God, and to indicate His Majesty and Vengeance triumphing and treading upon it.

Remark also that the VIALS are represented as poured out successively, without any such interruptions or episodes as occur in the series of the TRUMPETS. They all concern the same Empire, that of the Beast, and this consecutive and continuous character seems to represent the regularity and celerity with which the Divine Judgments will be inflicted upon it.

The FIRST VIAL is poured into (εἰς) the earth, as the First Trumpet ushered in a Judgment on the earth: and there comes a boil (ἐλκος, ulcer, ulcer), sore and grievous, upon the men who have the mark of the Beast and worship his image.

This plague sent into the Earth is directed against that carnal, earthly element, which is opposed to the spiritual and heavenly. See i. 7; iii. 10; xiii. 12. It is upon men's persons, and represents something loathsome, as well as painful.

Before we enter on the exposition of this and the following Vials, it is requisite to premise, that, although even now, at the present time, the state of Europe exhibits some striking evidences of the fulfilment of these Visions of the Vials, yet it is probable that what we now see is only a portion of the evidence; and is like a prelude and specimen of what will be more fully developed in later times; as may be inferred from their name, "the last plagues."

The contempt of God's Holy Word has already brought forth many foul boils, and blotches, and eruptions upon those who are subject to the Papacy. Almighty God, in His Word, condemns those who forbid to marry (1 Tim. iv. 3); St. Peter,—whom the Popes profess to succeed, and on whom they build their claims,—was a married man (Mark i. 30), and had his wife with him in his Apostolic journeys (1 Cor. ix. 5); and St. Paul gives precepts concerning the wives and children of the Clergy (1 Tim. iii. 1—5. 12).

But, in defiance of this divine warning, example, and doctrine, the Papacy has enforced celibacy on her ecclesiastics for nearly a thousand years. This enforcement has engendered many impurities both of body and soul. Cp. Gieseler, Eccl. Hist., Third Period, § 65.

Again, the Papacy claims to dispense with the Law of God in Matrimonial causes, and to supersede the degrees of Consanguinity and Affinity, which are set forth in the Word of God, and thus many unholy and incestuous Marriages have been contracted under its sanction, which have entailed a miserable inheritance of imbecility and ignominy on many princely houses. Evidence of this may be seen in Sandys, Europæ Speculum, p. 41, ed. 1673.

Further; the ministry of the Confessional familiarizes the Romish Priesthood and People with thoughts and actions which ought to be veiled in silence, and mars that modest delicacy of feeling which is one of the best safeguards of virtue. It provides

a ready expiation for gross sin; and the doctrines of the Casuists,—such as Liguori and others,—who have devised ease for the troubled conscience, by subtle equivocations and mental reservations, have produced foul sores on the social and domestic constitution of Nations subject to the Papacy, and especially on the Hierarchical body; sores visible to all, and like penal retributions for the neglect of those precepts of Chastity, and motives to purity, which are supplied in God's Word and Sacraments.

The Vials of His wrath for this desecration of Holy Things have been poured on the Papal Empire, and have produced a loathsome disease like the boils of Egypt.

THE SECOND VIAL.

In v. 3 the Second Vial is poured into the Sea; and it becomes blood, as of a dead man; as in the Second Trumpet (viii. 8), and every soul alive died,—the things that were in the sea.

This is explained by another passage in the Apocalypse. The Woman who is enthroned on the Beast, is said to sit upon many waters (xvii. 1), and the waters where the Harlot sitteth, are explained to mean Peoples, and Multitudes, and Nations, and Tongues (xvii. 15).

These are now described as a Sea.

The Sea in the Apocalypse represents Nations in a restless state, tossed about by winds and storms of passion, like the Sea to which the wicked are compared by Isaiah, "the wicked are like the troubled Sea, when it cannot rest, whose waters cast up mire and dirt; there is no peace, saith my God, for the wicked" (Isa. lvii. 20, 21).

The language of this Vial may be illustrated by the description in chap. viii. 9, ἀπέθανε τὸ τρίτον τῶν κτισμάτων τῶν ἐν τῇ θαλάσῃ, τὰ ἔχοντα ψυχὰς, where see the note.

The sense of the word ψυχὴ here appears to be the same as there, and to designate the carnal mind; and the word ζῶσα, living, is added to show that, while alive in name, they are in fact dead. They are like the Church of Sardis described above, chap. iii. 1, "Thou hast a name that thou livest, and thou art dead" (νεκρός).

The carnally-minded widow "is dead while she is living" (ζῶσα τέθνηκε, 1 Tim. v. 6). These passages supply the best comment on the present one. A, C have ζῶης here, but this reading may be ascribed to want of perception of the oxymoron in ζῶσα ἀπέθανε, supposed to be a contradiction. However, if ζῶης is the true reading,—and it derives some authority from ψυχὴ ζῶης in Gen. i. 30, and it is received by Lachmann and Tisch.,—it will make little difference in the sense. Cp. Winer, § 30, p. 169.

There is also a peculiar significance in the neuter here, τὰ, namely, the things in the sea; intimating that carnal minds lose the genuine properties of men, and are merely like inanimate things, and become κτίσματα, creatures, as they are called in the parallel place above in viii. 9, which happily illustrates the meaning here; see the note there. Elz. omits τὰ, but it is in A, C, and is restored by Lach., Tisch., Tregelles. The reading τὰ is also confirmed (as Hengstenberg has observed) by the parallel passage in the Septuagint concerning the Egyptian plague of blood, Exod. vii. 20, 21.

An important lesson and practical religious truth may be derived from this passage. A life tossed about in the restless sea of popular passions, and agitated by the fickle winds and waves of popular tumults, may appear to the world to be full of energy; but it is not life; it is not worthy of that name; it ought rather to be called death. And they who pass their lives in such a tempestuous element, and are swayed to and fro by it, forfeit the genuine characteristic of independent men; they lose the masculine vigour of true Christians (cp. xii. 5); they become things,—the sport and laughing-stock of the veering gale.

THE THIRD VIAL.

v. 4. The third Vial is poured into the rivers and the wells of water, and they become blood.

Here also is a parallel to the plagues of Egypt. Exod. vii. 19, 20. Ps. lxxviii. 44, and compare above, the third Trumpet, viii. 10, 11.

The rivers and wells are the channels and springs of the prosperity and health of the Power which is here punished.

The prophecy contained in this Vial has also already been in part fulfilled. It foretold calamities to be inflicted on the resources of the Papacy; and announced that those very things which were once tributary to it, and supplied it with the means of

τῶν ὑδάτων καὶ ἐγένετο αἷμα. ^{5 c} Καὶ ἤκουσα τοῦ ἀγγέλου τῶν ὑδάτων λέ- ^{c ch. 1. 4, 8. & 4. 8. & 11. 17.}
γοντος, Δίκαιος εἶ, ὃ ὦν καὶ ὃ ἦν, ὅσιος, ὅτι ταῦτα ἔκρινας, ^{6 d} ὅτι αἷμα ἁγίων ^{d Isa. 49. 26. Matt. 23. 34.}
καὶ προφητῶν ἐξέχεαν, καὶ αἷμα αὐτοῖς δέδωκας πιεῖν ἄξιοί εἰσι. ^{7 e} Καὶ ^{e ch. 9. 13. & 15. 3.}
ἤκουσα τοῦ θυσιαστηρίου λέγοντος, Ναὶ, Κύριε, ὁ Θεὸς ὁ παντοκράτωρ, ἀλη-
θινὰ καὶ δίκαιαι αἱ κρίσεις σου.

⁸ Καὶ ὁ τέταρτος ἐξέχεε τὴν φιάλην αὐτοῦ ἐπὶ τὸν ἥλιον καὶ ἐδόθη αὐτῷ ^{f vv. 11, 21. Dan. 5. 22, 23. ch. 9. 20.}
καυματίσαι τοὺς ἀνθρώπους ἐν πυρί. ^{9 f} καὶ ἐκαυματίσθησαν οἱ ἄνθρωποι ^{f vv. 11, 21. Dan. 5. 22, 23. ch. 9. 20.}
καῦμα μέγα· καὶ ἐβλασφήμησαν τὸ ὄνομα τοῦ Θεοῦ τοῦ ἔχοντος τὴν ἐξουσίαν
ἐπὶ τὰς πληγὰς ταύτας· καὶ οὐ μετενόησαν δοῦναι αὐτῷ δόξαν.

^{10 g} Καὶ ὁ πέμπτος ἐξέχεε τὴν φιάλην αὐτοῦ ἐπὶ τὸν θρόνον τοῦ θηρίου καὶ ^{g ch. 13. 2. & 9. 2. & 11. 10.}

greatness, would be turned against it, and become occasions and instruments of its suffering and shame.

This may be applied to the traffic of the Papacy in *Indulgences*, and *Legendary Fables*, and *Miracles*, which were for many centuries like *wells* and *rivers* of wealth to the See of Rome; but which became the sources of her weakness, by opening the eyes of Nations to the fraudulent cheats and impostures practised by her, and by arousing their indignation against her. See the evidence in *Gieseler*, Eccl. History, Third Period, Division iv. chap. vi. and viii.

In v. 4 A has ἐγένοντο: in v. 5 Beza and Elz. 1633, have ὁ ἐσόμενος, but this has little, if any, MS. authority.

The pouring out of this Vial, by which the *rivers* and *wells* are said to be changed into blood, is declared to be due to the sins of those who are punished, in pouring out the blood of Saints and Prophets; that is, of holy men, especially preachers of the Gospel. See xi. 3. 10.

In v. 7, we read, "I heard the Altar saying, Yea, O Lord, the God, the Almighty."—The Altar speaks. Such is the reading of the best MSS. received by *Griesb.*, *Scholz*, *Lach.*, *Tisch.*, *Tregelles*; and so the words are interpreted by *Bengel*, *De Wette*, and *Düsterdieck*. The reading ἄλλου, *alterius*, seems to be due to Latinizing MSS., and to be a repetition of *altaris*. The Altar speaks; for it is God's Altar; and this is in harmony with the general tone of the Apocalypse, in which the things of the Living God are themselves endued with life. Thus the Gospels are ζῶα, *living creatures* (iv. 6). The Altar speaks, as the Blood of Abel is said to cry (Gen. iv. 10; cp. Heb. xii. 24), and the Stones of Jerusalem to cry out (Luke xix. 40). The Altar speaks, because the souls of the Martyrs, who had been slain by the Beast, are described as *Victims* whose blood has been poured out upon God's Altar (see above, vi. 9, and 2 Tim. iv. 6). The Altar itself, though typified by what was of stone and brass, yet, inasmuch as it is a heavenly Altar, and an Altar of God, is beautifully represented as feeling compassion for the sufferings of His Martyrs, and as rejoicing in the vindication of God's honour by the execution of His judgments on those who had slain His servants.

The sublime address of the Prophet of Judah to the Altar of Jeroboam, "O Altar! Altar!" (1 Kings xiii. 2), is conceived in the same spirit of poetic beauty, and oratorical vehemence, which is characteristic of Hebrew Prophecy, and which often finds utterance in the Apocalypse, and makes it to be one of the noblest Poems, as well as sublimest Prophecies, that have ever been given to the world.

THE FOURTH VIAL.

v. 8. The Fourth Vial is poured upon (ἐπὶ) the Sun; and the Sun scorches the men (that is, the men of this Empire; cp. vv. 2. 21, and above, ix. 4. 10, "the men who had not the Seal of God") with fire; and they blaspheme the name of God.

On the accusative καῦμα see Luke xii. 47. *Winer*, § 32, p. 204.

Observe the change of preposition here. The first three Vials are poured into (εἰς) the elements, &c., which are the objects and instruments of punishment; the last four are poured upon them. See above on v. 1.

The verb ἐδόθη, "it was given," does not intimate any benefit bestowed upon the recipient, but it intimates that all these penal results are due to the permission of God. Cp. the use of ἐδόθη in vi. 4. 8; ix. 1. 3. 5.

The objects, upon which the Vials are poured out, are elements and powers of the Empire of the Beast.

The Sun is the glory of that Empire, that which dazzled men with its brilliance. The Sun is here represented as scorching men by its heat. This image is derived from the history of the Exodus, and of the pilgrimage in the wilderness, when the people

of God were sheltered from the sun's glare by the pillar of cloud by day, Exod. xiii. 21, 22; xl. 38. Numb. xiv. 14. And it is a figure frequently occurring in Hebrew prophecy (as Isa. iv. 6; xlix. 10. Ps. cxxi. 6), and is repeated in the Apocalypse, vii. 16; cp. Ps. cv. 38.

This prophecy also has been partly accomplished already.

The temporal splendour of the Papacy has already had an effect similar to that which is here described. The earthly grandeur of the Romish Hierarchy, its lavish expenditure in pompous pageantries, and in sumptuous edifices, its prodigal profusion in the aggrandizement of Papal families, and in their luxurious affluence of Palaces, Equipages, Pictures, Statues, Demesnes, and Gardens, have made themselves felt by those under its sway, in galling exactions, and oppressive burdens entailed upon them for the maintenance of the solar splendour of that brilliant magnificence. The meridian glory of this Spiritual Empire has scorched the people of the Romagna and of Italy by the glare of its rays.

The provision of revenues for the erection and decoration of the Church of St. Peter at Rome by means of a shameless sale of Pardons and Indulgences, may be cited as one example among many of the manner in which the grandeur of Papal Rome has been created and supported; and its traffic in Bulls, Dispensations, and the levy of Annates and First-fruits, and Peter-Pence, and other onerous imposts, and the simoniacal sale of Ecclesiastical Preferments, in all countries under its sway; and the burdensome taxation of those under its temporal monarchy, have been like parching heat, withering the herbage and exhausting the resources of the soil.

The historical proofs which substantiate these statements are open to all. A summary of them may be seen in *Isaac Casaubon's* Dedication to his *Exercitationes Anti-Baronianæ*, p. 9. *Sir R. Twysden's* Vindication, chap. iv. *Dr. Inett's* Origines, ii. pp. 488—503, and *Gieseler*, Eccl. Hist., Third Period, Division iii. ch. i. § 55. 84. 103. 105, who thus speaks (in § 103): "All kinds of Church-oppression, which, when essayed by temporal Princes, had been resisted by the Papacy, were now practised in a greater degree by the Papacy itself."

The consequence of this parching heat may be described in the words of St. John (v. 9); "the men blasphemed the name of God; and they did not repent to give Him the glory."

This unhappy result has been already displayed to the world.

The usurpations and corruptions of the Papacy have already produced a baneful harvest of Infidelity and Blasphemy.

Men, seeing and feeling in their own persons that evil practices are promoted and enforced under spiritual sanctions, and with spiritual penalties, by a Christian Government, even by the Government of one who calls himself the Head of the Church and the Vicar of Christ upon Earth; and not being acquainted with any other form of Christianity than that which presents itself too often before them as a minister of superstition and imposture, tyranny, and wrong, have been led to identify Christianity with Papal corruptions and usurpations, and have been goaded on by a spirit of vindictive resentment and indignation to blaspheme the Gospel itself, as if it were the cause of their sufferings. One of the worst evils produced by the fanaticism, fraud, and oppression practised by the Papacy, is this: that it has estranged whole Nations from Religion, and has driven them by a reckless recoil and desperate reaction into Infidelity; and has thus prepared the way for some future terrible outbreak of anarchical rebellion against all lawful authority, and even for an impious insurrection against Christ Himself.

THE FIFTH VIAL.

v. 10. The fifth Vial is poured upon the throne of the Beast; and his kingdom is darkened.

Here is another reference to the plagues of Egypt, that of

ἐγένετο ἡ βασιλεία αὐτοῦ ἐσκοτωμένη· καὶ ἐμασῶντο τὰς γλώσσας αὐτῶν ἐκ τοῦ πόνου, ^{11 h} καὶ ἐβλασφήμησαν τὸν Θεὸν τοῦ οὐρανοῦ ἐκ τῶν πόνων αὐτῶν καὶ ἐκ τῶν ἐλκῶν αὐτῶν· καὶ οὐ μετενόησαν ἐκ τῶν ἔργων αὐτῶν.

h ch. 9. 21.
i ch. 9. 14.
Jer. 50. 38.
Isa. 41. 2, 25.

^{12 i} Καὶ ὁ ἕκτος ἐξέχεε τὴν φιάλην αὐτοῦ ἐπὶ τὸν ποταμὸν τὸν μέγαν τὸν Εὐφράτην· καὶ ἐξηράνθη τὸ ὕδωρ αὐτοῦ, ἵνα ἐτοιμασθῇ ἡ ὁδὸς τῶν βασιλέων

the "darkness that could be felt." (Exod. x. 21. Cp. Ps. cv. 28. Wisd. xvii. 21.)

They did not repent from their deeds; but their hearts were hardened—like that of Pharaoh. Exod. x. 27.

They were biting their tongues for the pain. On the use of ἐκ see viii. 13 above; ix. 21. Acts xxviii. 3. Winer, § 47, p. 329.

THE SIXTH VIAL.

12. καὶ ὁ ἕκτος] And the sixth poured out his vial upon that great river, the Euphrates; and the water thereof was dried up, that the Way might be prepared of the Kings who come from the sunrising.

The mention of the Euphrates reminds us that the Vision concerns the Power which sits upon the Beast, and is the mystical Babylon (xvii. 1–5).

What is its EUPHRATES?

In the Apocalypse, Babylon is not the literal city; and Euphrates, the river of Babylon, is to be understood spiritually. See note above on ix. 14.

There is an allusion here to the manner in which the literal or Assyrian Babylon was taken; namely, by the drying up of its great River, the River Euphrates.

It has been said, indeed, by some learned persons (e. g. Hengstenberg) that the Apocalypse does not derive any of its imagery from events related by Heathen writers, such as Herodotus and Xenophon, who describe the taking of Babylon by Cyrus, when he had drained the Euphrates from its bed, and made for his army a passage by the dry channel into the city.

This may be true; but it is to be remembered, that the drying up of the Euphrates by Cyrus, as a preparation for the capture of Babylon, is not only described by heathen historians, Herodotus (i. 190), and Xenophon (Cyrop. vii. 5), but was also predicted by the Holy Spirit Himself, speaking by the mouth of the Hebrew Prophets, Isaiah (xliv. 27) and Jeremiah (l. 38; li. 36).

It cannot reasonably be doubted, that St. John here refers to that circumstance; and this reference to the means which led to the capture of the literal Babylon, has been rightly recognized by the ancient Expositors: e. g. Haymo, who says, "Euphrates quippe fluvius Babylonis est; Medi et Persæ hunc diviserunt fluvium, et per ejus alveum ingressi sunt Babyloniam."

The glory and strength of the literal Babylon was the Euphrates; and its channel was made dry by Cyrus, and so Babylon was taken.

The glory and strength of the mystical Babylon is her Supremacy, spiritual and secular, which have blended their streams in a swelling and navigable flood; by which her ships have gone forth, like those of a Merchant City, and riches have flowed into her bosom from all nations of the earth.

Accordingly, an Expositor of the Apocalypse, who lived in the fourteenth century, Peter Olivi, thus speaks, "The Primacy of the Pope, and the multitude of those who are subject to him, are, as it were, a River Euphrates, which hinders the passage of the Kings of the East;" and obstructs the expeditions of those who desire to see the Evangelical restoration of the Christian Church. See Baluzii Miscell. i. p. 213, sqq. The tide of this Papal Euphrates, which has long impeded the march of the Kings of the East, is already ebbing, and will one day be dried up, and open a way for them.

What is this WAY?

In Scripture language "the way" is the "Way of God;" the "Way of Salvation." See above, Acts ix. 2; xvi. 17; xix. 9. 23; xxii. 4; xxiv. 14. 22.

Who are the KINGS of the EAST?

The expression is figurative, and to be understood spiritually. The words rendered Kings from the East are οἱ βασιλεῖς οἱ ἀπὸ ἀνατολῆς ἡλίου: that is, the Kings from the rising of the Sun.

The Sun here is CHRIST. He is "the Sun of Righteousness rising with healing on His wings" (Mal. iv. 2). "He is the Day-spring (Ἀνατολή) from on high" (see on Luke i. 78; cp. Zech. iii. 8; vi. 12, where Christ is called Ἀνατολή in LXX).

In the Apocalypse the Church is clothed with the Sun, xii. 1, that is, with Christ; and the Angel who seals the elect comes from the rising of the Sun, vii. 2; and Christ says, "I Jesus am the bright and Morning Star," xxii. 16; cp. ii. 28.

The above interpretation is given by the ancient Expositors.

See Aug. ? Bede, Haymo, and others. The words of Bede are, "The saints are the Kings of the East, whose way is made open by the drying up of the Euphrates."

The reference here made to the capture of the literal Babylon, as prefiguring the fall of the mystical Babylon, is fraught with practical instruction at the present time;

(1) Some persons may now be in danger of being deluded by the confident language and bearing of Rome. They may imagine that a cause pursued with such sanguine reliance must be good. But let them remember the parallel—Babylon. Its streets echoed with music; its halls resounded with mirth and revelry; the king's guards were intoxicated at the gates of the city and at the very doors of the palace, and the vessels of God were on the table at the royal banquet, when the fingers of a man's hand came forth from the wall,—and Babylon fell. See Dan. v. 5, and Isa. xxi. compared with Xenophon, Cyrop. vii. 5.

So it may be with the Papacy. It may be most infatuated when most in peril. It may vaunt its power, and make new aggressions, and put forth new doctrines, and be entranced in a dream of security, when its doom is nigh. And, as the great river, the river Euphrates, the glory and bulwark of Babylon, became a road for the Conqueror of the city, so the swelling stream of Rome's temporal and spiritual Supremacy, which has now flowed on so proudly for so many centuries, and has served for the aggrandizement of the Papacy, may be in God's hands the means and occasion of its fall. The reason of this is obvious. The Papacy puts forth lofty claims, above all human pretensions, and rivalling the divine attributes. Such claims as these, uttered in proud language, and resting on unsound foundations, provoke the indignation and hostility of men—and how much more of Him who is a jealous God, and will punish all usurpations of His own Prerogatives! The Papal Supremacy will one day be dried up, and will supply the appointed means of the Papal downfall. It will be like the channel of the Euphrates, and give an entrance to its enemies, into the beleaguered city.

(2) It is said by St. John, that the Euphrates is to be dried up, in order that the way of the Kings from the East may be prepared.

Cyrus, "the shepherd" of God (Isa. xlv. 28), "the anointed of God" (Isa. xlv. 1), the King who was raised up from the East (Isa. xli. 2. 25), for the preparation of whose way God dried up the rivers (Isa. xlv. 27), was a signal instrument for executing God's counsel, and for performing all God's pleasure (Isa. xlv. 28; xlv. 11), not only in punishing Babylon for its pride, cruelty, blasphemy, and idolatry (see Isa. xlv. and xlvii. Dan. v. 22–24, and Hab. ii. 5–20), but also in delivering God's people from their captivity in Babylon, and for restoring Jerusalem (Isa. xlv. 28. Ezra i. and ii.). See the excellent remarks in Dean Jackson, on the Creed, v. 404–414, book vi. pt. ii. ch. xxvi. Dean Prideaux's Connexion, B.C. 538–536.

From the past history of the literal Babylon we may gather some anticipations with regard to the future fate of that Power which is compared to Babylon in the Apocalypse—the Power of Rome. The drying up of the Euphrates for the march of the Persian King, and the consequent capture of the literal Babylon by Cyrus, was, in God's hands, the occasion of the liberation of the literal Israel; and of the rebuilding of the literal Jerusalem.

It may reasonably be expected, that the drying up of the Papal Euphrates, in order to expedite the march of the spiritual soldiers of Him Who was typified by Cyrus, and Who is the true King from the East, JESUS CHRIST, and the fall of the mystical Babylon, may be preparatory to the deliverance of many of God's People, who are now in spiritual bondage at Babylon, and for their restoration to their true home, in the Spiritual Sion, the Christian Church.

Perhaps, also, in God's divine purpose it may not be without its gracious results to God's own ancient People, the JEWS.

It is, and long has been, a deeply-rooted opinion among the Jews, that, as the Restoration of their forefathers by Cyrus did not take place till Babylon was taken, and then immediately ensued, so "the Redemption of Israel cannot be accomplished before Rome is destroyed." See R. Kimchi in Abdiam עַם חֶרֶן שְׂרָאָה cum devastabitur Roma (Edom), erit redemptio Israeli; cp. Mede's Works, p. 902.

There is much reason in this supposition:

τῶν ἀπὸ ἀνατολῶν ἡλίου. ¹³ ^k Καὶ εἶδον ἐκ τοῦ στόματος τοῦ δράκοντος, καὶ ἐκ τοῦ στόματος τοῦ θηρίου, καὶ ἐκ τοῦ στόματος τοῦ ψευδοπροφήτου πνεύματα τρία ἀκάθαρτα, ὡς βάτραχοι. ¹⁴ ¹ εἰσὶ γὰρ πνεύματα δαιμονίων ποιοῦντα σημεῖα, ἃ ἐκπορεύεται ἐπὶ τοὺς βασιλεῖς τῆς οἰκουμένης ὅλης, συναγαγεῖν αὐτοὺς εἰς τὸν πόλεμον τῆς ἡμέρας ἐκείνης τῆς μεγάλης τοῦ Θεοῦ τοῦ παντοκράτορος.

¹⁵ ^m Ἴδου, ἔρχομαι ὡς κλέπτης· μακάριος ὁ γρηγορῶν καὶ τηρῶν τὰ ἱμάτια αὐτοῦ· ἵνα μὴ γυμνὸς περιπατῇ, καὶ βλέπωσι τὴν ἀσχημοσύνην αὐτοῦ.

k 1 John 4. 1, 3.
ch. 12. 3, 9.
& 19. 20. & 20. 10.
1 1 Tim. 4. 1.
2 Thess. 2. 9.
James 3. 15.
ch. 13. 13, 14.
& 17. 14.
m Matt. 22. 44.
Luke 12. 39.
2 Cor. 5. 3.
hess. 5. 2.
2 Pet. 3. 10.
ch. 3. 3, 4, 18.

For, when we consider the stumbling-blocks which the Papacy places in the way of the conversion of the *Jews*, by adding the Apocryphal Books,—as of equally divine authority,—to the Hebrew Scriptures, and by its adoration of the Blessed Virgin, and of Saints, Angels, and Images,—idolatrous practices, which the Jews, having once so severely suffered for Idolatry, regard with the greatest abhorrence,—we cannot but believe, with humble submission to the mysterious counsels of Divine Providence, that there is a solemn truth in this their popular conviction; and that the spiritual Redemption of Israel will be ushered in by the fall of Rome.

It may also be reasonably supposed, that together with this reference to the *drying up of the Euphrates*, previously to the capture of Babylon, and the liberation of God's People, by Cyrus marching from the East, there is also an allusion to the circumstances of the *drying up of the River Jordan* to facilitate the passage of *Joshua*, before the capture of *Jericho*: see Josh. iv. 22, 23.

This is the more probable, because there is a constant retrospect in the Apocalypse to the circumstances of the Exodus, and to the pilgrimage in the wilderness, and to the victorious entrance under Joshua, into Canaan, the type of Heaven. See above concerning the Trumpets, viii. 6.

It is also remarkable, that in the book of Joshua there is a marked emphasis laid on the fact that he and his army came into Canaan from the *sunrising*: see Josh. i. 15; iv. 19, where the Septuagint has ἡλίου ἀνατολῆς—the words here used by St. John.

If this be so, we may derive another anticipation from this reference;

The drying up of the stream of the Papal Supremacy may be preparatory to new victories to be achieved by Christ the Divine Joshua, and to the overthrow of the Jerichoes of this world, and to the glorious entrance of His faithful soldiers into their promised Land, and to the full and final possession of their everlasting inheritance in heaven.

Three UNCLEAN SPIRITS come forth from the mouth of the Dragon, and of the First and Second Beast; and gather together the kings of the whole world for the great conflict of ARMAGEDDON, against Christ.

13. καὶ εἶδον] And I saw three unclean spirits like frogs from out of the mouth of the dragon, and from out of the mouth of the beast, and from out of the mouth of the false prophet. For they are spirits of devils, working miracles, which go forth upon the kings of the earth, and of the whole world, to gather them to the battle of that great day of God Almighty.

Here we are again reminded of Egypt and its plagues.

"Aaron stretched his hand over the waters of Egypt, and Frogs came up and covered the land" (Exod. viii. 6). "Their land brought forth Frogs; yea, even in their Kings' chambers" (Ps. cv. 30).

Aaron brought up Frogs on Egypt; and the Magicians of Egypt did the same; they also brought up Frogs; but this was their last action of a supernatural kind. When Aaron smote the dust of the earth, and it became lice, the Magicians attempted to do the same, but they could not, and they said, "This is the finger of God!" (Exod. viii. 19.)

The Dragon, the Beast, and the False Prophet are here seen leagued together; and as it was with the literal Egypt, so it will be with them; they will send forth frogs; but as the ancient Interpreters have observed, this will be their last struggle, as it was of the Magicians, and be the omen of their defeat. As St. Paul says, speaking of the Magicians of Egypt, they shall proceed no further (2 Tim. iii. 8, 9).

The Apostle St. Paul, in the passage first cited, appears to offer an explanation of the meaning of the *sending forth of frogs* by the Magicians of the Papal Egypt,—“They are men of corrupt minds, reprobate concerning the faith,” “men who have the form of godliness, but denying the power thereof” (see note on 2 Tim. iii. 1—9), “lovers of their own selves, covetous, boasters, proud,

blasphemers, disobedient to parents, unthankful, unholy, without natural affection, truce-breakers, false accusers.”

St. Paul has there described a confederacy like that in this Apocalyptic Vial, where the Dragon or Satan, the Beast, and the False Prophet are united. He represents a combination of corrupt Religion having a form of Godliness, and allied with Lawlessness and Infidelity.

These emissaries thus leagued together will endeavour to enlist the world in a campaign against true Religion. They will draw out their forces in terrible array; and while Christ, the King from the East, is marshalling His legions from the bright Day-spring under His heavenly banner, they will come forth from the realms of darkness, and muster their forces for the conflict.

They are called βάτραχοι, frogs, and unclean spirits (v. 13). They are strangers to the clear light and fresh streams of divine Truth, and dwell in the slime and quagmire of sordid cogitations, loving the slough of debasing lusts, or the misty glimmerings of false Philosophy and worldly Policy, and yet are puffed up with pride, and speak swelling words, and come forth in the evening of the World's existence, and make it ring with their shrill discord.

Such are they who do not own that the glory of the Highest, and the eternal happiness of men, are the true ends, and right reasons, and immutable laws of all Government, secular and spiritual; but limit its aims to earth, and degrade it into an abject slave of human opinions, and human appetites. Such are they, who do not receive the doctrines of Religion as God has been pleased to reveal them, but would make themselves the standards and oracles of Truth, and would make Truth to vary with their own proud and fickle caprices. In a word, such are they who do not raise their eyes upward to the sun and stars of God's Power, Providence, and Wisdom, set in the clear vault of His glorious firmament, but look downward to earth, and judge of the things of heaven as they are reflected in the watery mirror of the low pools and miry marshes of their own minds.

These unclean spirits, it is said, *work miracles*.

We are, therefore, to be prepared to hear of strange apparitions. The emissaries of whom St. John speaks will be permitted to show “signs and wonders, with all power, after the working of Satan,” Matt. xxiv. 24. 2 Thess. ii. 9; as the Magicians of Egypt were *with their enchantments*, Exod. vii. 11. 22; so as to deceive, if it were possible, *the very elect*, Matt. xxiv. 24. Mark xiii. 22.

Further: *These spirits*, it is added, *go forth upon the Kings of the Earth* to gather them to the Battle.

The *Kings of the Earth* are opposed to the *Kings of the East*, that is, they are opposed to Christ and to those whom Christ has *made to be Kings* (v. 10), by their incorporation in Himself, *Whose Kingdom is the Kingdom of Heaven* (xvii. 14), and Who is *King of Kings* (xix. 16).

The unclean spirits are said to go forth *upon* (ἐπὶ) the kings of the World; which seems to denote, that these spirits will not only address themselves *to*, but also will exercise some influence *upon and over*, these kings. Cp. *Winer*, § 49, p. 362.

Thus St. John foreshows that the Papacy, when distressed by the *drying up of its Euphrates*, will resort for help even to godless powers; that it will advocate doctrines of political licentiousness, and flatter Rulers with seducing words for their own advantage; that it will countenance men in disobeying the divine Word, as the Egyptian Magicians encouraged Pharaoh in his resistance to God; that it will palliate crimes which the Gospel condemns; that its emissaries will encourage disloyalty and Insurrection against Christian powers opposed to themselves, and will invoke benedictions on Rebellion, and be like Hierarchs of Revolution.

The scene of the future conflict is called “in the Hebrew tongue ARMAGEDDON,” of which more will be said hereafter. See v. 16.

But in the mean time, while these preparations are going on Christ mercifully interposes and pronounces a warning.

v. 15. Behold, I come as a thief. Blessed is he that watcheth

n ch. 19. 19.

16ⁿ Καὶ συνήγαγεν αὐτοὺς εἰς τὸν τόπον τὸν καλούμενον Ἑβραϊστὶ Ἀρμαγεδών.

o ch. 21. 6.

17^o Καὶ ὁ ἑβδομος ἐξέχεε τὴν φιάλην αὐτοῦ ἐπὶ τὸν αέρα· καὶ ἐξῆλθε φωνὴ μεγάλη ἀπὸ τοῦ ναοῦ ἀπὸ τοῦ θρόνου λέγουσα, Γέγονε· 18^p καὶ ἐγένοντο ἀστραπαὶ καὶ φωναὶ καὶ βρονταὶ, καὶ σεισμός ἐγένετο μέγας, οἷος οὐκ ἐγένετο ἀφ' οὗ ἄνθρωπος ἐγένετο ἐπὶ τῆς γῆς, τηλικούτος σεισμός οὕτω μέγας.

q ch. 14. 8, 10.
& 18. 5.
Isa. 51. 22, 23.
Jer. 25. 15, 16.

19^q Καὶ ἐγένετο ἡ πόλις ἡ μεγάλη εἰς τρία μέρη· καὶ αἱ πόλεις τῶν ἐθνῶν ἔπεσαν.

Καὶ Βαβυλὼν ἡ μεγάλη ἐμνήσθη ἐνώπιον τοῦ Θεοῦ, δοῦναι αὐτῇ τὸ ποτήριον τοῦ οἴνου τοῦ θυμοῦ τῆς ὀργῆς αὐτοῦ.

r ch. 6. 14.
s ch. 11. 19.
& 16. 9, 11.
t vv. 9, 11.

20^r Καὶ πᾶσα νῆσος ἔφυγε, καὶ ὄρη οὐχ εὐρέθησαν· 21^s καὶ χάλαζα μεγάλη ὥς ταλαντιαία καταβαίνει ἐκ τοῦ οὐρανοῦ ἐπὶ τοὺς ἄνθρώπους· καὶ ἐβλασφή-

and keepeth his garments, lest he walk naked, and they see his shame.

See above, on 1 Thess. v. 2. 4, and on the garments, and on the word *naked*, see above, iii. 4, 5. 17, 18.

Preparations for ARMAGEDDON.

The conflict itself does not take place yet; it is described hereafter (see xix. 19—21). We have now only a view of the gathering together of the hostile forces against Christ.

v. 16. And they gathered them together into a place called in the Hebrew tongue Armageddon.

As to the reading of the word, B and some Cursives have Μαγεδών, or Μαγεδδών; A has Ἀρμαγεδών, and ποταμὸν for τόπον. Lachmann and Tisch. print the word with an aspirate, Ἀρμαγεδών, and ancient Latin authorities have *Hermagedon*.

What is meant by AR-MAGEDDON, or Har-magedon?

Observe that St. John here specially calls attention to the Hebrew etymology, by saying that the place is called in the Hebrew tongue *Ar-magedon*, or *Har-magedon*.

Ar-mageddon, or *Har-magedon*, is formed of two Hebrew words; the one ἡρ, *har*, signifying a *Mountain*, the other, a cutting to pieces; from γαδ, *gadad*, *excidit*; and thus it means the *Mountain of excision*, or of *slaughter*.

When the prophet Zechariah is speaking of the destruction of all nations that come against the City of God, he says that there will be a great mourning in the valley of Megiddon (Zech. xii. 9); and *Megiddon* is there translated by the Septuagint Interpreters, *cut up*, or *destroyed*. LXX, Zech. xii. 11, ῥοῶνος ἐν πεδίῳ ἐκκοπτομένου.

Lightfoot and Vitringa, who have called attention to this etymology, do not seem to have been aware that they had been anticipated by Andreas and Arethas ad loc., and in the Ancient Greek *Catena*, Cramer, p. 420, and also by *Œcumenius*, ibid. p. 552, who deserve to be cited. *Catena*, Cramer, p. 420, xvi. 16, τόπον τὸν καλούμενον Ἑβραϊστὶ Ἑρμαγεδών τόπον νῦν τὸν καιρὸν ἀκουστέον· τῷ καιρῷ τοίνυν τούτῳ οἱ ἀπὸ πονηρῶν πνευμάτων ἀπατηθέντες καταλαμβάνοντες τεύξονται διακοπῆς· τοῦτο γὰρ Ἑρμαγεδών ἢ Ἑβραϊκῇ λέξις εἰς τὴν Ἑλλάδα διδλεκτον διαπορθευομένη νοεῖν παρέχει.—*Œcumenius*, ibid. p. 552, τὸ Ἀρμαγεδών διακοπή ἢ διακοπτομένη ἐρμηνεύεται, ἐκεῖ γὰρ τὰ ἔθνη συναγόμενα ἐκκόπτεσθαι νοεῖν ἀκόλουθον.

The word *Armageddon*, then, signifies a *Mountain of slaughter*; like that valley of *decision* or *cutting off*, described by the Prophet Joel (iii. 14), and it is a figurative expression similar to that in the same Prophet, namely, the valley of *Jehoshaphat* (Joel iii. 2. 12), or *judgment of God*. There may be also a reference in this word to the Hebrew root γα, to *gather together in a troop for an attack*.

The word *Ar-mageddon* seems also designed to signify a defeat and slaughter, such as that of the Kings of Canaan at *Megiddo*, in the region of Galilee, wrought by a *miraculous* interposition of Almighty God, discomfiting the vast and terrible army of Sisera and his confederate Princes. "The Kings came and fought, then fought the Kings of Canaan in Taanach by the waters of *Megiddo*. They (the armies of God) fought from heaven; the stars in their courses fought against Sisera" (Judges v. 19, 20).

The Holy Spirit, by the mouth of David, specially speaks of these Kings as types of God's foes, in their sin and doom. "Do Thou to them as unto the Midianites; unto Sisera, and unto Jabin, at the brook of Kison; who perished at Endor, and became as the dung of the earth" (Ps. lxxiii. 9).

These Kings had oppressed Israel, and were routed by the army of God at *Megiddo*; and, in like manner, earthly powers

will rise against Christ and His Church, and be defeated in a marvellous manner, in a great encounter, which is called by St. John *Ar-mageddon*.

It will also be remembered, that King Josiah was defeated and mortally wounded at *Megiddo* (2 Chron. xxxv. 20. 22); and though Josiah was a pious King, yet, when at *Megiddo*, he was disobeying a Divine command, given him by the Prophet Jeremiah. 1 Esd. i. 25—32, where the LXX has Μαγεδδών, *Mageddon*. See also S. Jerome, ad Ctesiphontem, ad finem, and Ep. 86, ad Eustach.—Campi *Mageddo* Josiæ necis conscii. He was endeavouring to repel Pharaoh-Necho, who was marching towards the river *Euphrates* to besiege Babylon, and so Josiah was then an ally of *Babylon*.

Thus the name *Megiddo* or *Mageddo* had been prepared for St. John as a word denoting the scene of a defeat and slaughter of God's foes, and allies of the city of the Beast.

Megiddo itself was in a *Valley* (2 Chron. xxxv. 22. Zech. xii. 11), and *Harmagedon* is a *Mountain*; but this circumstance does not present any difficulty; on the contrary, it may serve to remind the reader that the word is not to be understood literally, but to be regarded as a symbolical word; and the characteristic significance of the *Mountain* of destruction is, that the defeat will be conspicuous to the world.

This gathering together of the Kings of the *Earth* to *Armageddon*, or *Har-magedon*, at the instance of unclean spirits going forth from out of the mouth of the Dragon, the Beast, and False Prophet, intimates (as has been observed by ancient Expositors, *Primasius*, *Haymo*, and others), that there will be a muster of earthly powers, combined together in an unholy confederacy and league of godless Policy and corrupt Religion, like that of Pilate with the Chief Priests against the Lord and His Anointed: and it pre-announces the signal discomfiture and manifest cutting off of those powers, as on a lofty Mountain, visible to all, by the might of Him Who is the Conqueror on the White Horse, and Who will slay His enemies with the *Sword that goeth forth out of His mouth* (xix. 15).

But it is only the gathering together of these forces, which is described here. The description of the conflict of *Har-magedon*, and the issue of it, is reserved for a later period in the prophecy. See xix. 19—21, where it is said, "I saw the Beast, and the Kings of the *Earth*, and their Armies having been gathered together (*συνηγμένα*) to fight the battle (*ποιῆσαι τὸν πόλεμον*), with Him that sitteth upon the Horse, and with His armies. And the Beast was taken, and the False Prophet that is with him, and they were cast into the lake of fire, and the rest were killed with the sword of Him that sitteth on the Horse."

This conflict does not take place yet. See below, xix. 19—21.

THE SEVENTH VIAL.

In the mean time the SEVENTH VIAL brings with it a judgment on the mystical *Babylon*, which is the capital city of the Empire of the Beast.

17—21.] And the Seventh Angel poured out his vial upon the air; and there came a great voice from the temple, from the throne, saying, It is done.

And there were lightnings, and voices, and thunders, and there was a great earthquake, such as was not since men were upon the earth, so mighty an earthquake, so great.

And the great City was made into three parts, and the cities of the nations fell; and Babylon the Great came in remembrance before God, to give unto her the cup of the wine of the fury of his wrath.

And every island fled away, and mountains were not found. And there cometh down upon the men great hail out of

μησαν οἱ ἄνθρωποι τὸν Θεὸν ἐκ τῆς πληγῆς τῆς χαλάζης, ὅτι μεγάλη ἐστὶν ἡ πληγὴ αὐτῆς σφόδρα.

XVII. ¹ Καὶ ἦλθεν εἰς ἐκ τῶν ἑπτὰ ἁγγέλων τῶν ἔχόντων τὰς ἑπτὰ φιάλας,

a Jer. 51. 13.
Nah. 3. 4.
ch. 16. 19. & 18. 3.

heaven, about the weight of a talent: and the men blasphemed God because of the plague of the hail; for the plague thereof is great exceedingly.

The Air (ἀήρ) here (v. 17) is the region of darkness, in which the powers of evil abide. See Eph. ii. 2.

The great City Babylon is divided into three parts, and the cities of the Nations or Gentiles (τῶν ἐθνῶν) fall. These cities are those which are opposed to Christ, and to the Christian Sion (see xi. 2, and cp. ii. 26; xi. 18; xix. 15; xx. 8); they are contrasted with the true Israelites, the true Jews, those who are Jews inwardly, whose circumcision is of the heart, in the spirit (see Rom. ii. 29; above, ii. 9; iii. 9).

Babylon the Great comes into remembrance in the sight of God to give to her the cup of the wine of the fury of His wrath (cp. above, xiv. 8).

The fuller description of Babylon the Great, her site, her wealth, her magnificence, her sins, and her fall, is contained in the two following chapters, the xviith and xviii.

In the mean time, it is to be observed that although in this Vial Babylon, the Great City, the capital of the Empire of the Beast, comes into remembrance before God, and is now about to fall; yet, as appears from the Prophecy, the Beast itself, and its ally the False Prophet, will not be destroyed with the Fall of Babylon, but will survive that fall; and will appear in hostile array against Christ, in the conflict of Armageddon (see xix. 19).

Yet further, even after their defeat and doom, described in xix. 20, Satan, or the Dragon, will still remain to wage war against Christ (xx. 8); but finally he also will be defeated and cast into the Lake of Fire (xx. 10).

Thus, then, the following chronological series of events is presented in the Prophecy;—

(1) The drying up of the spiritual Euphrates, the river of the mystical Babylon, to prepare the way for Christ's people, the Kings of the East, coming against the mystical Babylon (xvi. 12).

(2) The mustering of the Kings of the Earth, or Powers opposed to the kingdom of Heaven, at the instance of the emissaries of the Dragon, the Beast, and False Prophet, against Christ and his armies (xvi. 14).

(3) God's Judgments upon Babylon, the capital City of the Beast. The Fall of Babylon.

(4) The great conflict of the Powers of the Earth, which had been leagued together and mustered under the Dragon, the Beast, and the False Prophet, against Christ.

Their signal rout and discomfiture in the battle of Armageddon, the great day of God Almighty.

(5) The defeat and doom of the Beast and of the False Prophet (xix. 20).

(6) The gathering together of the forces of the Dragon, or Satan, against Christ (xx. 8).

(7) The defeat and doom of the Dragon (xx. 10).

(8) The full and final triumph of Christ. Cp. xi. 15—17.

(9) The General Resurrection (xx. 13).

(10) The Universal Judgment (xx. 11—13. Cp. xi. 18).

(11) The revelation of the Lake of Fire (xx. 14; xxi. 8).

(12) The revelation of the Heavenly City (xxi. xxii. Cp. vii. 4—17).

ETERNITY.

But, before these events are presented to the view, we now have in the next chapter a prophetic enlargement concerning the great City, the Mystical BABYLON; and concerning the BEAST, upon which she sits; and concerning her splendour, her sins, and her fall;

CH. XVII. 1. καὶ ἦλθεν] And there came one of the seven angels who had the seven vials, and talked with me, saying, Come hither, I will show unto Thee the Judgment of the great Harlot that sitteth on the many waters: with whom the kings of the earth committed fornication, and they who are dwellers in the earth were made drunk with the wine of her fornication.

And he carried me away in the Spirit into a wilderness: and I saw a Woman sitting upon a scarlet-coloured Beast, full of the names of blasphemy, having seven heads, and ten horns.

And the Woman was arrayed in purple, and scarlet, and gilded over with gold, and precious stones, and pearls; having a golden cup in her hand full of abominations and the uncleanness of her fornication; and upon her forehead a name written, Mystery, Babylon the Great, the Mother of the Harlots, and the abominations of the Earth.

VOL. II.—PART IV.

And I saw the Woman drunken with the blood of the Saints, and with the blood of the Martyrs of Jesus; and when I saw her I wondered with great wonder.

And the Angel said unto me, Wherefore didst thou wonder? I will tell thee the Mystery of the Woman and of the Beast that carrieth her, which hath the seven heads and the ten horns.

The Beast that thou sawest, was, and is not, and is about to ascend out of the bottomless pit, and to go into perdition, and they who are dwellers on the earth, whose names are not written in the book of life, will wonder when they see the Beast, that it was, and is not, and will appear.

Here is the understanding which hath wisdom; the Seven Heads are Seven Mountains, upon which the Woman sitteth.

And they are Seven Kings: the five are fallen, the one is, the other is not yet come: and when he is come, he must continue a little while.

And the Beast that was, and is not, even he is an eighth (King) and is from the seven, and goeth into perdition.

And the Ten Horns which thou sawest are Ten Kings, who have not received a kingdom as yet; but receive power as kings one hour with the Beast. These have one mind, and give their power and strength unto the Beast. These will make war with the Lamb, and the Lamb will overcome them, for He is Lord of Lords, and King of Kings, and they that are with Him called, and chosen, and faithful (will overcome them).

And he saith unto me, The Waters which thou sawest where the Harlot sitteth, are peoples, and multitudes, and nations, and tongues.

And the Ten Horns which thou sawest and the Beast, these will hate the Harlot, and will make her desolate and naked, and will devour her flesh, and will burn her utterly with fire. For God put in their hearts to perform His mind, and to perform one mind, and give their kingdom unto the Beast, until the words of God shall be fulfilled.

And the Woman which thou sawest is that great City, which reigneth over the kings of the earth.

PRELIMINARY NOTE on this, the XVIIITH CHAPTER.

In order to understand this prophecy, it is requisite to ascertain clearly the subject of it.

What is the City of which St. John here speaks?

Certain criteria are supplied by him for the determination of this question.

(1) He says, "Here is the understanding which hath wisdom; the Seven Heads (of the beast) are (that is, they signify, or represent, see i. 19, 20) the Seven Mountains on which the woman sitteth" (v. 9).

(2) He also calls it "the great City," and it is a city which was in existence in his age (see v. 18).

At that time there was one City, a Great City, built on Seven Mountains,—Rome. The name of each of its Seven Mountains is well known: they were the Palatine, Quirinal, Aventine, Cælian, Viminal, Esquiline, Janiculan. In St. John's time Rome was usually called "the Seven-hilled City" (ἡ πόλις ἡ ἑπτὰ λόφος, *urbs septicolis*). She was celebrated as such in an annual national festival, the *Septimontium*. And there is scarcely a Roman Poet of any note, who has not spoken of Rome as a City seated on Seven Mountains,—Virgil, Horace, Tibullus, Propertius, Ovid, Silius Italicus, Statius, Martial, Claudian, Prudentius; in short, the unanimous voice of Roman Poetry, during more than five hundred years, beginning with the age of St. John, proclaimed Rome as "the Seven-hilled City."

The passages referred to from these writers are as follows;

Virgil, Georg. ii. 535. Æn. vi. 784, "Septemque una sibi muro circumdabit arces." Horace, Carmen Sæc. 7, "Di, quibus septem placuere colles." Tibullus, ii. 5, 55, "Carpite nunc tauri de septem montibus herbas." Propertius, iii. 10, 57, "Septem urbs alta jugis toti quæ præsidet orbi." Ovidius, Trist. i. 4, 69, "Sed quæ de septem totum circumspicit orbem Montibus imperii Roma deumque locus." Silius Italicus, xii. 606, "Defendere tecta Dardana, et in septem discurrere jusserat arces." See also x. 587; xvi. 620. Statius, Silv. iv. 3, 26, "Septem montibus admove Baia." Martial, iv. 64, 11, "Hinc septem dominos videre montes, Et totam licet æstimare Romam." Claudian, xii. 19 (ed. Gesner), "Aurea septem-geminas Roma coronet arces." See also xv. 194. Prudentius, de Romano Martyre, 411, "Divûm favore cum puer Mavortius Fundaret arcem septicollem Romulus."

K κ

καὶ ἐλάλησε μετ' ἐμοῦ, λέγων, Δεῦρο δείξω σοι τὸ κρίμα τῆς πόρνῃς τῆς
 b Jer. 51. 7.
 ch. 14. 8. & 18. 3. μεγάλης, τῆς καθημένης ἐπὶ τῶν ὑδάτων τῶν πολλῶν, ² ^b μεθ' ἧς ἐπόρνευσαν οἱ

This prophecy of St. John is also illustrated in this respect from another source, equally open to the eyes of the world—Coins.

On the Imperial Coinage of that age, Rome is displayed as a Woman sitting on Seven Hills, as she is represented in the Apocalypse. See the coin of Vespasian, described by *Capt. Smyth*, Roman Coins, p. 310. *Ackerman*, i. p. 87, "Rome seated on seven hills; at the base Romulus and Remus suckled by the wolf; before, the Tiber personified." It is figured in *Gessneri Numismata*, Tab. lvii. Cp. *Vaillant*, p. 30.

(3) St. John gives another criterion by which the Woman is to be identified. He says that she is the reigning city of his age. "The Woman which thou sawest (he says) is that great City which reigneth (literally, "which hath royal sovereignty"—ἡ ἔχουσα βασιλείαν) over the kings of the earth" (v. 18). The reigning City of that age was Rome.

If we refer to the Latin Poets of that time, we find that the epithets commonly applied to Rome are The great; The mighty; The royal Rome; The Queen of Nations; The Eternal City; The Mistress of the World; as, see for example, "Maxima rerum Roma," *Virg. Æn.* v. 600. 660. *Manil.* iv. 773. *Propert.* iv. 1. *Hor.* 1 Sat. v. 1. 1 Ep. vii. 44. *Ovid*, Met. xv. 445.

If, again, we contemplate the public feelings of the World as expressed on the Coins of that period, we there see Rome, as the great City, deified, crowned with a mural diadem, holding in her palm a winged figure of Victory, which bears in its hand a Globe, the symbol of Rome's Conquests and Universal Sway. See the figures described, and the citations collected, in *Spence's Polymetis*, p. 243, and *Vaillant*, Numismata Ærea Imperatorum, Paris, 1695, p. 205, "Dea Roma; Roma Æterna . . . dextrâ Victoriam tenens." See also 191, and *Gessner*, Tab. lviii. and lxii.

The City on Seven Hills is ROME; the great City which reigned over the kings of the earth was ROME.

Therefore the City here described by St. John is ROME.

(4) Next, the City here described by St. John is called by him "BABYLON;" "BABYLON the GREAT" (v. 5). He cannot be speaking of the literal Babylon in Assyria; for that was not built on seven Mountains; nor did it then reign over the Kings of the earth.

What he means to say is, that the City of which he is here speaking, resembles Babylon; and it may, therefore, in the figurative language commonly used in the Apocalypse, be called Babylon.

Rome was in many respects a second Babylon. Babylon had been the Queen of the East, in the age of the Hebrew Prophets; and Rome was the Queen of the West, when St. John wrote. Babylon had been called in the Old Testament "the Golden City," "the glory of kingdoms," "the beauty of the Chaldees' excellency." Babylon boasted herself to be Eternal. She said in her heart, "I will ascend into heaven, I will exalt my throne above the stars of God. I shall be a Lady for ever. I am, and none else beside me: I shall not sit as a widow, neither shall I know the loss of children" (Isa. xiii. 19; xiv. 4. 13; xlvii. 7, 8).

In these respects Babylon was imitated by Rome. She also called herself the Golden City, the Eternal City.

The words ROMÆ AETERNÆ are found on the imperial coins of Rome, e. g. on those of Gallienus, Tacitus, Probus, Gordian, and others. The Bishop of Rome is called *Urbis Æternæ Episcopus*, by *Ammian. Marcellin.* xv. 7. Cf. xiv. 6; xvi. 10; xix. 10. The Jupiter of *Virgil* speaks the national language when he says (*Æn.* i. 278), "His ego nec metas rerum nec tempora pono; Imperium sine fine dedi."

Again: the King of Babylon "was the rod of God's anger, and the staff of His indignation" against Jerusalem for its rebellion (Isa. x. 5). Babylon was employed by God to punish the sins of Sion, and to lay her walls in the dust.

So, in St. John's age, the Imperial legions of Rome had been sent by God to chastise Jerusalem for her sin in rejecting His Holy Word, and crucifying His beloved Son.

Again: the sacred Vessels of God's Temple at Jerusalem had been carried from Sion to Babylon, and were displayed on the table at the royal banquet in that night, when the fingers of a man's hand came forth from the wall and terrified the Chaldean King. (*Dan.* v. 5, 6.)

So, the sacred Vessels of the Jewish Temple, which were restored by Cyrus, and the Book of the Law, and the Golden Candlestick (*Joseph. B. J.* vii. 5), and the Table of Shewbread, were carried captive in triumphal procession from Sion to Rome; and even now their effigies may be seen at Rome, near the site of the Roman Forum, carved in sculpture on the marble sides of the triumphal Arch of Titus, the Imperial Conqueror of Jerusalem.

And the Jewish Candlestick is figured on a coin of Vespasian, with the legend "HIEROSOLYMA CAPTA." *Gessner*, Tab. lviii.

The Jews commonly gave to Rome the name of Babylon. See the authorities in *Mede's Works*, p. 902. *Winer*, R. W. B. ii. p. 335, art. Rom.

So did the Christians. See *S. Hippolytus*, de Christo, § 35, who quotes this and the following chapter. *Tertullian*, adv. Jud. c. 9; c. Marcion. iii. 13. *Euseb.* ii. 15. *S. Hieron.* in Esa. xlvii. 1; and *Victorinus*, *Primasius*, and *Cassiodorus* on this chapter. We may sum up all in the words of *S. Augustine*, "Rome is a second Babylon" (de Civ. Dei xvi. 17; xviii. 2, 23).

Let us now review the evidence before us.

We see that the Woman here described is designated by St. John—

(1) As a great City, seated on seven Mountains.

(2) As that great City, which in the time of St. John reigned over the Kings of the Earth. And

(3) It is called Babylon.

What City corresponds to this description?

It cannot be the literal Babylon, for she was not built on seven hills, nor was she the Queen of the Earth in St. John's age. It is some great City which then existed and reigned over the Kings of the Earth. Among the great Cities, which then were, one was seated on Seven Hills. She was universally recognized in St. John's age as the Seven-hilled City. She is described as such by the general voice of her own most celebrated writers for five centuries; and she has ever since continued to be so characterized. She is represented as such on her own coinage, the coinage of the World. That City then reigned over the Kings of the Earth. She exercised Universal Sovereignty, and boasted herself Eternal. That same City resembled Babylon in many striking respects: in dominion, in wealth, and in historical acts, especially with regard to the ancient Church and People of God. This same City was commonly called Babylon by St. John's own countrymen, and by his disciples. And, finally, the voice of the Christian Church, in the age of St. John himself, and for many centuries after it, has given an almost unanimous verdict on this subject:—that the Seven-hilled City, the Great City, the Queen of the Earth, Babylon the Great of the Apocalypse, is the City of ROME.

This conclusion is so clear and certain, that it is admitted even by the Divines of Papal Rome.

Thus, for example, *Cardinal Bellarmine* says, "that Rome is signified in the Apocalypse by the name of Babylon" (de Rom. Pont. ii. c. 2, § Præterea, tom. i. p. 232, ed. Colon. 1615). And *Cardinal Baronius* (*Annal.* ad A.D. 45, Num. xvi.) owns "that all persons confess that Rome is denoted by the name of Babylon, in the Apocalypse of St. John." "In Apocalypsi Joannis Romam Babylonis notatam esse nomine in confesso est apud omnes." And the celebrated French Prelate *Bossuet*, in his Exposition of the Book of Revelation, observes, that "the features (in the Apocalypse) are so marked, that it is easy to decipher Rome under the figure of Babylon." *Bossuet*, Préf. sur l'Apocalypse, § vii., "C'est une tradition de tous les Pères que la Babylone de l'Apocalypse c'est l'ancienne Rome. Tous les Pères ont tenu le même langage. Avec des traits si marqués c'est une énigme aisée à déchiffrer, que Rome sous la figure de Babylone."

Here then we see the question is brought into a narrow compass. It is affirmed by Romish writers, as well as by others, that Babylon in the Apocalypse is the City of Rome.

But here a separation takes place.

The Divines of Papal Rome assert that St. John in this prophecy is speaking of Rome as a City, and not as a Church.

Many of those Divines say, that St. John's prophecy concerned Rome as heathen, but does not concern it as Christian; and they affirm that the prophecies in this chapter, and in the next, predicting the fall of Babylon, have been already fulfilled. They allege, that these prophecies were fulfilled when Rome was taken by the Goths in the fifth century of the Christian era. See *Bellarmin.* de Pontif. ii. c. 11. *Baronius*, Annales ad A.D. 45, Num. xviii.; and *Bossuet*, who says, "La Babylone, dont Saint Jean prédit la chute, étoit Rome conquérante et son empire: et la chute de Rome, arrivée sous Alaric, est un dénouement de la prophétie de Saint Jean." *Bossuet*, Préf. sur l'Apoc. § viii. x., vol. xxiv. of his works, ed. Paris, 1827.

Let us examine this hypothesis.

(1) The destruction of the great City, the Mystical Babylon, is represented in the Apocalypse as a punishment for her sins when brought to a head. "Her sins, it is said, had reached to

βασιλεῖς τῆς γῆς, καὶ ἐμεθύσθησαν οἱ κατοικοῦντες τὴν γῆν ἐκ τοῦ οἴνου τῆς πορνείας αὐτῆς.

heaven, and God remembered her iniquities," which had become full. (Rev. xviii. 5.)

But, when Rome was taken by Alaric and the Goths, she had become *Christian*. As one of the ancient Fathers, S. Jerome, says (c. Jovinian. lib. ii. ad finem), "she had *wiped off* the blasphemy on her forehead by the *confession of the Christian faith*." Rome had then *ceased to persecute the Christians*; and, as we learn from S. Augustine (de Civ. Dei, ad init.), the invasion of the Goths was represented by her *heathen* writers as a consequence of the anger of the *heathen Deities* against the City for its neglect of the *old religion*, and for the favour shown by it to Christianity.

Therefore, the capture of Rome by Alaric cannot have been the destruction which is here foretold in the Apocalypse.

(2) Again: the destruction of Rome, as foretold in the Apocalypse, is to be *total and final*. It is here prophesied that she will be *burnt up with fire* (xvii. 16; xviii. 9), and the smoke of her burning shall ascend for ever (xviii. 9. 18; xix. 3); and that she shall be plunged into perdition like a great millstone into the sea, and that she shall be *found no more at all* (xviii. 21); and that the voice of harpers and musicians shall be no more heard in her, and that no craftsmen shall be found in her, and the light of a candle shall no more shine in her (xviii. 22, 23); in a word, that the city described in the prophecy shall be *utterly destroyed*.

But this cannot be said to have taken place when Rome was captured by the Goths, nor to have ever taken place—as yet. Rome has *not been burnt with fire*, and the smoke of her burning does not ascend to heaven. The voice of harpers has not ceased within her. She has *not been taken up like a great millstone and plunged into the sea*. The sound of music is yet heard in her palaces: they are still adorned with pictures and statues. The riches of her purple, and silk, and scarlet, and pearls, and jewels, are still displayed in the attire of her Pontiff and her Cardinals in their conclaves. Cavalcades of horses and chariots, and trains of religious processions move along her streets; clouds of frankincense arise in her temples, which on high festivals are hung with tapestry, and brocade, and embroidery; her precious vessels glitter on her altars; her rich merchandise of gold and silver is still purchased; her *dainty and goodly things* are not yet departed from her. She still sits as a Queen and glorifies herself and says, "I am no widow" (xviii. 17). She still claims divine titles, and calls herself *Eternal*!

Therefore, we are brought again to the conclusion, that the prophecies of the Apocalypse concerning the fall of Rome, were *not fulfilled* in the destruction of Rome in the fifth century, but concern the Rome of a later age.

(3) These Prophecies also declare, that Rome, *after her destruction*, will become a *desolate wilderness*, and the habitation of *unclean creatures*. St. John's words are, "*Babylon the Great fell*, and is become the *habitation of devils*, and the hold of every *foul spirit*, and the cage of every unclean and hateful bird" (xviii. 2). Will it be allowed by Romish Divines that this is now fulfilled? Will they allow that after its capture by the Goths Rome became, and is still, "*the habitation of devils, the hold of every foul spirit, the cage of every unclean and hateful bird*?" Could she be described in such dark colours as these?

Certainly not. After the taking of Rome by Alaric, Rome had many holy men within her. She was still a source of blessings to other nations. She had a Gregory the Great, Bishop of Rome, who sent an Augustine to England, at the end of the sixth century, and whose writings will ever be read, and whose memory will ever be revered, with grateful regard by the faithful.

Even now, we are fully persuaded, Almighty God has *some people* in Rome. He Himself says, on the very eve of her fall, "Come out of her, *My People*" (see below, xviii. 4). And in the language of *Romish Divines*, Rome is still the "*Capital of Christendom*," the "*Holy City*," the "*spiritual Sion*." They call her Sovereign "*the Supreme Pontiff*," "*Holy Father*;" his States are "*the States of the Church*;" and his throne, "*the Holy See*."

Therefore these Apocalyptic prophecies were *not fulfilled* in *Heathen Rome*.

But it is allowed by Romish Divines, as well as by other writers, that they concern *Rome*. Therefore they concern Rome, *not as she was when Pagan*, but they concern her such as she *became*, after she had ceased to be Pagan, and after long-continued sin, which at length will reach to heaven, and bring down God's judgments upon her, and involve her, as the prophecy reveals, in utter destruction, total desolation, and irreparable ruin.

When Rome had ceased to be Heathen, and when her Imperial Power was extinct, and when also the *Imperial Power* of her *German Masters* was broken (see below on v. 10), Rome became subject to the *Bishop* of that city; and after the lapse of

some centuries, the *Bishop of Rome* acquired a spiritual and temporal sway, under the titles which he then assumed of *Sovereign Pontiff* and *Supreme Head of the Universal Church*, and *Vicar of Christ upon Earth*, and "*Ruler of the World*" (see above on xiii. 5—7, and below on v. 10). He stood in a more lofty eminence than had ever been attained by the Cæsars. That position has now been occupied by him for eight hundred years.

Here then we already see reason to believe that these prophecies, which are generally acknowledged to concern *Rome*, and which were *not fulfilled* in *Heathen Rome*, refer to that City in which the *Bishop of Rome* now lives and reigns, and in which he has reigned for many centuries.

In order to escape this conclusion, some *other Romish Divines* allege, that although—as they candidly confess—these Prophecies cannot fairly be said to have been fulfilled in *ancient Heathen Rome*, yet it is possible that Rome may again *become Heathen*, and that these Prophecies may *then* be fulfilled in her.

This is the hypothesis of some learned Romish Theologians. It is maintained by *Suarez, Viegas, Ribera, Lessius, Menochius, Cornelius à Lapide*, and others, particularly *Dr. Manning* in our own day. This hypothesis is important to be noticed, as an avowal on their part that the other theory above stated of their co-religionists—*Bellarmino, Baronius, and Bossuet*, and many more (see above p. 250)—who say that these prophecies were fulfilled in *ancient Heathen Rome*—is untenable.

Here then is a remarkable phenomenon. Here are two discordant schools of Romish Theologians. The one school says, that these Apocalyptic Prophecies concern the Rome that was destroyed more than a *thousand years ago*. The other school affirms, that they relate to the Rome of some *future time*. They *differ* widely from each other in the interpretation of these Prophecies, which, as they *all agree*, concern their own *City*. And yet they say that they have an *Infallible Interpreter* of Scripture resident at Rome! And they boast much of their own unity!

There is something ominous in this *discord*. But it makes their *agreement* more striking. It confirms the proof that these Apocalyptic prophecies concern *Rome*.

Both these schools of Roman Catholic Expositors allow that *Babylon is Rome*. A remarkable avowal; which is carefully to be borne in mind.

The hypothesis that these prophecies concern some *future* heathen Rome is irreconcilable with the language of St. John.

St. John refers to Rome reigning over the Kings of the Earth in his own day. He then proceeds to reveal her future history. No intimation is given of any break in the thread of his prophecy. But *if Babylon* is some heathen Rome, in ages yet to come, as well as the Rome of St. John's age, there must be a chasm in that history of nearly two thousand years.

St. John also says, that the *Beast* on which the *Woman sitteth* is an *eighth King or Kingdom*; and that *five heads, or Kingdoms*, had already fallen in St. John's age; that the *sixth* was then in being; that the seventh would continue only for a *short time*, and then the *Beast* with the woman sitting upon it, would be revealed; and the *Beast*, in *that phase*, is declared to be *of the seven and to be an eighth*. See below on v. 11.

It is clear that an *uninterrupted succession* of Powers is here represented, and that consequently the *Beast* must have appeared long ago, with the *Woman* sitting upon it.

Therefore, since it is generally agreed that these prophecies concern *Rome*, and since they were *not fulfilled* in *Heathen Rome*; and since they concern Rome as she was to become after she had ceased to be Heathen; and since, after she had ceased to be Heathen, she became in course of time subject to the Bishop of Rome, and has continued to be subject to him for many hundred years, therefore, our conclusion is, that they concern Rome as the capital City of the Bishop of Rome, and of the Papal World.

After a careful meditation, for many years, upon these prophecies concerning the Apocalyptic Babylon, the present writer here solemnly, in the presence of the Omniscient Searcher of hearts, Who dictated these awful predictions, records this as his deliberate judgment upon them, probably for the last time. He has endeavoured seriously to examine all the *objections* which have been urged against this interpretation. He has found that those objections, as far as they have any validity, affect some minor incidents and subordinate details in the *mode* in which that interpretation is sometimes stated; but do not in the least affect the *principle*, or in any way impair the soundness of that interpretation itself. And when he has proceeded to examine other *different* interpretations of these Prophecies—such, for instance, as that interpretation which applies these Prophecies to *Heathen*

c ch. 13. 1.
& vv. 7, 8.

³ καὶ ἀπήνεγκέ με εἰς ἔρημον ἐν πνεύματι, καὶ εἶδον γυναῖκα καθημένην ἐπὶ θηρίον κόκκινον, γέμον ὀνόματα βλασφημίας, ἔχον κεφαλὰς ἑπτὰ καὶ κέρατα δέκα.

Rome, or to some *Infidel* Power—he has found all those other interpretations to be so vain and futile, and so inconsistent and irreconcilable with the general scope and language of these Prophecies themselves, that even on this account he has been confirmed in the conviction that the Interpretation adopted in these notes, is the *true, and only true* Interpretation.

We may now proceed to consider this chapter in detail, and see whether this conclusion is confirmed by such an examination.

1. δεῦπο δείξω σοι] *Come, I will show thee the judgment of the great Harlot.*

The City of Rome is here called a *Harlot*. Is this word applicable to a *Church*? Is it applicable to the Church of Rome?

Such is Christ's love for His *faithful* people, that He is pleased to speak of His own relation to them under the term of *marriage*. The *Church* is His *Spouse* (John iii. 29. Eph. v. 23—32). "*I have espoused you, as a chaste Virgin, to Christ,*" says St. Paul to the Corinthians (2 Cor. xi. 2). Hence spiritual *unfaithfulness* to Christ is represented in Scripture as *adultery*.

This idea runs through the whole Book of Revelation. In the *Church* of Pergamus there are said to be some who *hold the doctrines of Balaam*, and cause others to *commit fornication* (ii. 20). At Thyatira there is a Jezebel, who, by her false *teaching*, *seduces Christ's servants*; and they who *commit adultery with her* are threatened with tribulation (ii. 20. 22).

On the other hand, the *faithful, who follow the Lamb whithersoever He goeth*, are said to be *Virgins*, and not to have been *defiled with women*; that is, not sullied with *spiritual harlotry* (xiv. 4).

The name *Harlot*, therefore, describes a *Church*, which has fallen from her first love, and has gone after other Lords, and given to them the honour due to CHRIST alone.

But, here it is objected by some Romish Divines—If a faithless Church had been here intended by St. John, he would not have called her a *Harlot*, but an *Adulteress*, and he would not have designated her by the name of a *heathen city, Babylon*, which *never* owned the true God, but by the name of some City, such as *Samaria*, which *once knew Him*, and afterwards fell away from Him. (*Bossuet*, Préface sur l'Apocalypse, vii.—ix.)

But to this allegation it may be replied, that a faithless Church may be, and often is, called in Scripture a *Harlot*, when she mixes false doctrine and worship with the true faith. Thus Isaiah says concerning Jerusalem, the ancient *Church* of God, "*How is the faithful city become a harlot!*" (Isa. i. 21.) And Jeremiah, "*Thou hast played the harlot with many lovers.*" (Jer. iii. 1.) And Hosea, "*Though Israel play the harlot, let not Judah offend.*" (Hosea iv. 15.)

The original word which is uniformly used for *harlot* by St. John in the Apocalypse is πόρνη, *Porné*. And this *same* word (πόρνη), or its derivatives, is used in the passages just quoted, and is employed in the Greek Septuagint Version of the Prophets of the Old Testament, at least *fifty times*, to describe the spiritual fornication, that is, the *corrupt doctrine and practice* of the *Churches* of Israel and Judah; e. g. Ezek. xvi. 15. 22. 33. 35; xxiii. 7. 8. 11. 14. 17—19. 29. 35. 43. 45; xliii. 7. 9. Jer. ii. 20; iii. 1. 2. 6. 9; xiii. 27. Hosea ii. 2. 4. 5. 10; iv. 12. 15. 18; v. 4; vi. 10; ix. 1. Isa. i. 21. Micah i. 7. Nahum iii. 4. So ἐκπορνέω very frequently.

Therefore the word *Harlot* does designate a *Church*; and if the Church of Rome is described by *that* name in the Apocalypse, then the word *harlot*, as applied to her, indicates the *multitude* of her *sins*. And the name *Babylon* (like *Sodom* in Isaiah i. 10) applied to *Judah*, the ancient *Church* of God, shows the heinousness of her iniquity. Cp. Rev. xi. 8.

The question therefore is—

Has the *Church* of Rome been unfaithful to Christ? Does she teach new doctrines, and draw any of His servants from their allegiance to Him, their only Lord, to other objects of veneration and love? Is she thus guilty of *harlotry*?

This question receives a sufficient answer from the Twelve new articles of the Trent Creed, which is imposed on all by the Church of Rome; and from her worship of Saints, and especially of the Blessed Virgin Mary. See above on the xiii. chapter. The *Harlot* is also described as *sitting as a Queen* "*on the many waters*;" and these are explained in the prophecy to signify *peoples, and multitudes, and nations, and tongues* (v. 15).

The Bishop of Rome, when he is crowned, is saluted as *Rector Orbis*, Ruler of the World (see above, on xiii. 5—7). His Coins declare his claims to Universal Supremacy. "*The nation and*

Kingdom which will not serve thee shall perish." "*All Kings shall serve him:*" such are the inscriptions upon them. (See Numismata Pontificum, pp. 50. 58, ed. Paris, 1679.) The reigning Pontiff, on the 10th Feb. 1848, used the following words in an address to the people of Rome, "*It is a great gift of heaven that our three millions of subjects have two hundred millions of brethren of every tongue and every nation.*" It is this which in other times, and in the midst of the confusion of the Roman world, has ensured the safety of Rome."

Thus in the claim of the Church of Rome to exercise sway over all Kings and Nations of the earth, and in that amplitude of dominion and plenitude of felicity, to which she has appealed for so many generations as an evidence that she is favoured by Heaven, we recognize another proof that the Babylon of the Apocalypse, the Woman which "*sitteth upon the many waters*," which are "*peoples, multitudes, nations, and tongues*," is the City of *Papal Rome*, the capital of the Papal Empire.

This interpretation is no new one. It dates from the time in which Papal Rome displayed herself to the world in those colours which characterize the *Harlot City* of this chapter. It may be traced in the writings of *Peter of Blois*, and in the expositions of *Joachim*, Abbot of Calabria, at the end of the twelfth century; of *Lubertinus di Casali*, *Peter Olivi*, and others in the thirteenth century (which may be seen in the Appendix to the Editor's Greek Text of the Apocalypse, ed. 1849, pp. 121—146); *Marsilius* of Padua, and those of the illustrious *Dante* and *Petrarch*. See the authorities in *Wolfii Lectiones Memorabiles*, ii. pp. 839—841; also in i. 376. 384. 408. 418. 429. 438. 443. 488. 597. 600. 610; and in *Gerhard*, Confessio Catholica, p. 583, sqq. ed. Francofurti, 1679; and in *Abp. Ussher*, de Christ. Eccl. Success. c. ii. p. 36; c. v. p. 109; c. vii. p. 196. *Illyric. Catal. Test.* p. 1558. *Grosstéte*, Bp. of Lincoln, ap. M. Paris, ad A.D. 1253. The Bishop's dying words on this subject are very striking. See also *Allix*, Hist. of the Churches of Piedmont, p. 207; and the numerous passages collected from *Dante* by Wolf, pp. 610—613; from *Petrarch*, *ibid.* pp. 677—684; and from *Dante* and *Petrarch* in *Rosetti's Spirito Antipapale*, Lond. 1832.

To omit the names of a multitude of English Divines, who have approved this interpretation, it may suffice to mention those of *Hooker*, Bp. *Andrewes*, Bp. *Sanderson*, *Dean Jackson* (on the Creed, i. ch. xxxii.), and Bp. *Wilson*, of Sodor and Man. A learned and pious writer of the present age, the Rev. *Isaac Williams*, in his Notes on the Apocalypse, says, "*That which has the horns of a Lamb* (see above, xiii. 13) *must be a false Christ; and a Harlot is a false Church*," p. 243; "*the Prophecy does in some awful manner hover as with boding raven wing over Rome*" (p. 337).

This opinion derives also additional force from the fact, that, although the capture of Rome by the Goths, in the fifth century, was a very striking event, yet they who lived then, did not suppose that these prophecies were accomplished in that capture, but looked forward to some *future* time for their accomplishment.

Some Christian writers, such as *Primasius*, *Bede*, and others, who lived *after* the capture of *Heathen Rome*, and *before* the manifestation of the *errors, usurpations, and corruptions* of *Papal Rome*, and to use *Hooker's* words "*her gross and grievous abominations*" (iii. 1. 10), do not, indeed, apply them to *Rome Christian*. For how could they *foresee* that such gross and grievous abominations would show themselves in a Christian Church? But they did not imagine that these prophecies had been fulfilled in the capture of *Heathen Rome* by the Goths. The opinion which connects these prophecies with that Fall, was first propounded by *Papal Theologians*, many centuries *after* that event.

The present seems to be a suitable place for resuming the consideration of *objections* that have been urged against the exposition now adopted. Compare above, on xiii. 8.

(1) Why, it has been asked, should so large a portion of the Apocalyptic prophecies be directed against *Romanism*? Are there not *other* forms of error equally noxious? especially *Scepticism* and *Infidelity*? To this it may be replied that the Apocalypse *does* speak in unequivocal terms against other errors in faith or practice. It declares that "*the fearful, and unbelievers, and sinners, and abominable, and murderers, and whoremongers, and sorcerers, and idolaters, and all liars* shall have their part in the lake that burneth with fire and brimstone, which is the second death" (xxi. 8. See also xxii. 15).

But it must be remembered, that certain errors are more insidious and subtle than others; and therefore need to be more

^{4 d} Καὶ ἡ γυνὴ ἣν περιβεβλημένη πορφυροῦν καὶ κόκκινον, καὶ κεχρυσωμένη χρυσίῳ καὶ λίθῳ τιμίῳ καὶ μαργαρίταις, ἔχουσα ποτήριον χρυσοῦν ἐν τῇ χειρὶ d ch. 18. 12, 16.
Dan. 11. 38.
Jer. 51. 7.

clearly pointed out, and more minutely described, that they may be shunned. Such are the errors of Rome. They present themselves in a specious form, with many alluring fascinations. They are therefore more dangerous.

In another respect, also, they are more injurious. They have been a main cause of the prevalence of schism and unbelief in the world. The Church of Rome has the three orders of the Christian Ministry, and the Sacrament of Holy Baptism, and yet is chargeable with many grievous errors and sins; and has thus brought discredit on the name and offices of the Christian Church, and even on Christianity itself; see above, on xvi. 9.

Looking, then, at the declarations of Scripture concerning Infidelity, and at the true ends of Christian Prophecy, and at the perils of the World from Heresy, Schism, and Infidelity, and at the countenance and advantage given to them by Popery; and looking, also, carefully at the language of these Apocalyptic prophecies, we see reason to believe *even on this account*, that the form of Antichristianism contemplated in these Prophecies is a *religious* one; and we recognize the wisdom of God in providing such clear cautions against the errors, frauds, usurpations, and corruptions of Papal Rome.

(2) Another objection is, also, sometimes urged.

If the Church of Rome is the Apocalyptic Babylon, then the Ministers of the Church of England, who derive their Holy Orders from Rome, are infected with the taint of Babylon: their ministerial commission, therefore, is liable to grave suspicions: the validity of their ministrations is questionable; in a word, by fixing a stigma on Rome, they brand themselves.

Such is the objection.

But, assuredly, the fear of it is as groundless, as the allegation of it is illogical.

The Ministers of the Church of England do *not* derive their Holy orders from Rome—but from CHRIST. He is the only source of all the grace which they dispense in their ministry. And suppose that we admit that this virtue flows from Him *through* some who were in communion with the Church of Rome, and that *no* charitable allowance is to be made for those who held some of her doctrines in a darker age—what then? The Channel is not the Source. The human Officer is not the Divine Office. The validity of the commission is not impaired by the unworthiness of those through whom it was conveyed. The Vessels of the Temple of God were holy even at Babylon: and, after they had been on Belshazzar's table, they were restored to God's altar (Ezra i. 7). The Scribes and Pharisees, against whom Christ denounces woe, were to be obeyed, because *they sat in Moses' seat* (Matt. xxiii. 2), and as far as they taught agreeably to his Law. The Word and ordinances of Christ, preached and administered even by a Judas, were efficacious to salvation. The Old Testament is not the less the Word of God because it has come to us by the hands of Jews, who rejected Him of whom *Moses and the Prophets did write* (John i. 45). And so, the sacred commission, which the ministers of the Church of England have received from Christ, is not in any way impaired by transmission through some who were infected with Romish corruptions; but rather, in this preservation of the sacred deposit even in their hands, and in its conveyance to us, and in its subsequent purification from corrupt admixtures, and in its restoration to its ancient use, we may recognize another proof of God's ever-watchful providence over His Church, and of His mercy to ourselves.

(3) We ought to be on our guard against two opposite errors. On the one hand, it is alleged by some, that *if* Rome be a *Church*, she cannot be *Babylon*. On the other hand, it is said by others, that *if* Rome be *Babylon*, she cannot be a *Church*. *Both these conclusions are false*. Rome may be a *Church* and yet *Babylon*: and she may be *Babylon*, and yet a *Church*. This will appear from considering the case of the Ancient Church of God.

The Israelites in the Wilderness were guilty of abominable idolatry. Yet they are called a *Church* in Holy Writ (Acts vii. 38. 41. 43). And why? Because they still retained the Law of God and the Priesthood (*Hooker*, iii. c. 1 and 2). So, also, Jerusalem—even when it had crucified Christ—is called in Scripture *the Holy City* (Matt. xxvii. 53). And why? By reason of the truths and graces which she had received from God, and which had not yet been wholly taken away from her.

A distinction, we see, is to be made between what is due to *God's goodness* on the one side, and to *man's depravity* on the other.

As far as the *divine mercy* was concerned, God's Ancient People were a *Church*: but by reason of *their own wickedness*, they were even a *Synagogue of Satan* (Rev. ii. 9; iii. 9), and, as such, they were finally destroyed.

Hence, their ancient Prophets, looking at *God's mercy* to Jerusalem, speak of her as *Sion, the beloved City* (Ps. lxxxvii. 2): but regarding *her iniquities*, they call her *Sodom, the bloody city* (Isa. i. 9, 10; iii. 9. Ezek. xxiv. 6).

In like manner, by reason of God's goodness to her, Rome received at the beginning His Word and Sacraments, and through His long-suffering they are not yet utterly taken away from her: and by virtue of the remnants of *divine truth and grace*, which are yet spared to her, she is still a *Church*. But she has miserably marred and corrupted the gifts of God. She has been favoured by Him like Jerusalem, and like Jerusalem she has rebelled against Him. *He would have healed her, but she is not healed* (Jer. li. 9). And, therefore, though on the one hand, by His love, she was, and has not yet wholly ceased to be, a Christian *Sion*—on the other hand, through her own sins, she is an Antichristian *Babylon*.

v. 1. The Harlot is described as sitting on *the many waters*: that is, as the Angel explains it below (v. 15), as having dominion over many *nations and languages*.

v. 2. *The Kings of the earth committed fornication with her, and they that are dwellers on the earth have been made drunk with the wine of her fornication.*

v. 4. *She holds in her hand a golden cup full of abominations and of the uncleanness of her fornication* (as to the accusative after γέμον cp. v. 3. Phil. i. 11. Col. i. 9. *Winer*, p. 205), and *has on her forehead a name written, "Mystery: Babylon the Great, the Mother of Harlots."*

Heathen Rome received the Gods of other Nations into her Pantheon. Even the deities of Syria and Egypt found a place there. She did not impose her forms of worship upon any. Therefore again we see that the Apocalyptic Babylon is *not* Heathen Rome.

But this prophecy is very descriptive of *Papal Rome*.

Almighty God has distinguished man from the rest of the creation by the endowments of Reason and of Conscience; which He commands them to *use*, and not to *give away*. But the Church of Rome requires men to sacrifice them to her own will. And then she pours into their minds a delirious draught of strange doctrines. She requires *all to drink of her cup*. "*This* (says she of her Trent Creed) is the *Catholic Faith, out of which there is no salvation*" (Oath in the Creed of Pope Pius IV.).

She has trafficked and tampered with all the Kings and Nations of the Earth.

In the words of *Hooker* (Serm. v. 15), "*she hath fawned upon Kings and Princes, and by spiritual cozenage hath made them sell their lawful authority for empty titles.*" She has caressed and cajoled them with amatory gifts of flowers, pictures, and trinkets, beads and relics, crucifixes and *Agnus Deis*, and consecrated plumes and banners. She has drenched and drugged their senses with love-potions of bewitching smiles and fascinating words; and has thus beguiled them of their faith, their courage, and their power. Like another Delilah she has made the Samsons of this world to sleep softly in her lap, and then she has shorn them of their strength. (Judges xvi. 19.) She has captivated, and still captivates, the affections of their Prelates and Clergy, by entangling them in the strong and subtle meshes of Oaths of vassalage to herself, and has thus stolen the hearts of subjects from their Sovereigns, and has made Kingdoms to hang upon her lips for the loyalty of their People; and so in her dream of universal dominion she had made the world a fief of Rome.

v. 3. St. John says that he is taken into a *wilderness*, and there sees the Woman enthroned. This is a remarkable characteristic. She is a *Great City*, and yet in a *wilderness*. These words may be understood either *literally* with some, or *figuratively* with other, Expositors. If *literally*, they are very descriptive of the desolate region in which Papal Rome is now situated. The Roman Campagna, which was formerly peopled with towns and cities, and alive with the busy stir of men, has now been reduced to a desolate wilderness by the inundations of the Pomptine marshes, and by the inveterate malaria of centuries; and from the fetid miasma brooding over its sulphureous springs and brooks, is now no longer habitable, and by its wild and lonely aspect presents a sad prognostic of its future destiny, and seems to forebode that the likeness will one day be more striking than it is now between Rome and Babylon. In many *spiritual* respects also Rome is not like a fruitful field of the Lord, but may be compared to a *wilderness*.

The Woman is described as sitting on a *scarlet-coloured Beast*. This is *her colour*, she is called the *great City* clothed in *scarlet* (see xviii. 12. 16).

e 2 Thess. 2. 7.
ch. 11. 8. & 14. 8.

αὐτῆς γέμον βδελυγμάτων, καὶ τὰ ἀκάθαρτα τῆς πορνείας αὐτῆς, ⁵ καὶ ἐπὶ τὸ μέτωπον αὐτῆς ὄνομα γεγραμμένον, ΜΤΣΤΗΡΙΟΝ ΒΑΒΥΛΩΝ Ἡ ΜΕΓΑΛΗ, Ἡ ΜΗΤΗΡ ΤΩΝ ΠΟΡΝΩΝ ΚΑΙ ΤΩΝ ΒΔΕΛΥΓΜΑΤΩΝ ΤΗΣ ΓΗΣ.

f ch. 18. 24.

⁶ Καὶ εἶδον τὴν γυναῖκα μεθύουσαν ἐκ τοῦ αἵματος τῶν ἁγίων, καὶ ἐκ τοῦ αἵματος τῶν μαρτύρων Ἰησοῦ· καὶ ἐθαύμασα ἰδὼν αὐτὴν θαῦμα μέγα.

This colour is reserved by *Papal Rome* for the use of her Prelates and Cardinals. She says in her "*Ceremoniale*" (iii. Sect. 5), that "it specially belongs to the Pope." And Pope Paul II. forbade any one to wear hats of *scarlet*, but Cardinals. See *Platina*, p. 312. *Vitringa*, p. 758. *Heidegger*, i. p. 432.

The "*Ceremoniale Romanum*," or order of Roman Ceremonies, was written 350 years ago, by a Papal Archbishop; and is dedicated to a Pope, Leo X., and was printed at Rome, A.D. 1516, and has often been reprinted as the official Directory of Papal Ceremonies; see above, on xiii. 14.

If we turn to that portion of this Volume which describes the first public appearance of the Pope, on his Election to the Pontificate, we find the following order of proceeding,—“The Pontiff elect is conducted to the Sacrament, and divested of his ordinary attire, and is clad in the *Papal robes*.” The colour of these is then minutely described: *five* different articles of dress, in which he is then arrayed, are *scarlet*. Another vest is specified, and this is covered with *pearls*. His mitre is then mentioned; and this is adorned with *gold* and *precious stones*.

Such, then, is the attire in which the Pope is arrayed, and in which he *first* appears to the World as *Pope*. Refer now to the Apocalypse. We there see that *scarlet*, *pearls*, *gold*, and *precious stones* are thrice specified by St. John, as characterizing the Mysterious Power portrayed by himself (Rev. xvii. 4; xviii. 12. 16).

The *Beast* also is of *scarlet colour*, that is, it wears the livery of the Woman, as her servant and subject; she sits upon it; it carries her (see v. 7); it is like a Throne on which she is placed.

The *Beast* is described as having *seven Heads* and *Ten Horns*.

This designation of *Ten Horns* marks the *Beast* as the same in substance as that already described in the xiii. chapter (xiii. 1). Its *duration* is the same (cp. xi. 9, and xiii. 5). In the xiii. chapter we have mention of the Mark of the *Beast* (v. 16, 17), and after the description of this *beast* in the xvi. chapter we see mention again made of the *Beast* and his Mark (xix. 20, and xx. 4). See *Bp. Andrewes*, contra *Bellarmin.* cap. x. ad init. pp. 232, 233; and p. 288, where he says, “eadem est Bestia in cap. xvii. et xiii.”

That *Beast*, as we have seen, represents the fourth great Monarchy passing through successive phases, first *Heathen*, and afterwards subject to the *Papacy*;

It has *first* been displayed as the *Pagan Empire* of Rome (xiii. 1).

Secondly. It was displayed as *killed*, as to its *Pagan Imperial* power; and as reviving and living again in more than its former energy under the *Papacy* (see xiii. 3—10. 12—17).

Thirdly. It is represented here (xvii. 3—7) wearing the *scarlet livery* of the *Harlot City*, and as carrying her on its back: that is, as subservient to *Papal Rome*.

Fourthly. The Prophecy foretells, that its *Ten Horns* will hereafter turn their power against the *Harlot City*. See on v. 16.

All that has been said before, in the xiii. to the xv. chapters inclusive, confirms the present proof that the Woman which is arrayed in *scarlet*, and sits on the *scarlet-coloured Beast*, is *Papal Rome*.

Here we may observe some striking contrasts which serve farther to strengthen this conclusion.

The colour of the *Harlot* and of the *Beast* is *scarlet*.

The colour of the *Bride* and of *Christ* is *white* (see above, vi. 2, and below, xix. 14).

This contrast seems to be marked even by the word chosen in the Apocalypse to designate the *Lamb*. As was observed before, that word is not *Ἀμνός*, as in the Gospel; but *Ἀρνίον*, which occurs twenty-nine times in the Apocalypse, where *Ἀμνός* never occurs. And thus we have a striking contrast, which is aided by an exact correspondence of syllables and accents. On one side are,

The Harlot and the Beast,
Ἡ ΠΟΡΝΗ ΚΑΙ ΤΟ ΘΗΡΙΟΝ.

On the other side are,
The Bride and the Lamb.
Ἡ ΝΥΜΦΗ ΚΑΙ ΤΟ ἈΡΝΙΟΝ.

See Rev. xxi. 2. 9; xxii. 17.

If any one can have any doubt of St. John's intention to identify the *Woman* on the *Beast* with a *faithless Church*, let him read the following description:—Καὶ ἦλθεν εἰς ἐκ τῶν ἐπτὰ

ἁγγέλων τῶν ἐχόντων τὰς ἐπτὰ φιάλας, καὶ ἔλαλσε μετ' ἐμοῦ λέγων, Δεῦρο, δείξω σοι τὸ κρῖμα τῆς πόρνῆς τῆς μεγάλης. . . . Καὶ ἀπήνεγκέ με εἰς ἔρημον ἐν πνεύματι καὶ εἶδον γυναῖκα καθημένην ἐπὶ θηρίον κόκκινον (Rev. xvii. 1. 3).

And then let him compare it with the words which describe the faithful Church in glory:—Καὶ ἦλθεν εἰς ἐκ τῶν ἐπτὰ ἁγγέλων τῶν ἐχόντων τὰς ἐπτὰ φιάλας. . . . καὶ ἔλαλσε μετ' ἐμοῦ, λέγων, Δεῦρο, δείξω σοι τὴν νύμφην τοῦ ἁγίου τὴν γυναῖκα. Καὶ ἀπήνεγκέ με ἐν πνεύματι ἐπ' ὄρος μέγα καὶ ὕψηλόν, καὶ ἔδειξέ μοι τὴν πόλιν τὴν ἁγίαν Ἱερουσαλήμ (Rev. xxi. 9, 10).

The *Lamb* (*Ἀρνίον*) is contrasted with the *Beast* (*θηρίον*); so is the *Bride* (*νύμφη*) of the *Lamb* contrasted with the *Harlot* (*πόρνη*) who sits upon the *Beast*.

Thus, on one side we see the faithful woman (xii. 1), clothed with the Sun, Which is Christ, and treading on the Moon, that is, surviving all the changes and chances of this world; and having her brows encircled with *Twelve stars*—the diadem of Apostolic faith. She is a *Mother*: and her child is caught up to Heaven.

On the other side we see a faithless woman, arrayed in worldly splendour, and having on her forehead the name *Mystery*; and called *Mother* of Abominations of the *Earth*.

Again; on the one side, we see the faithful woman persecuted, and driven into the wilderness.

On the other side, we see the faithless Woman in the wilderness, enthroned on *seven hills*, and on the *many waters* which are *peoples and nations*: sitting on the *Beast*, and persecuting.

The former Woman is the faithful Church, which is truly *Catholic* or *Universal*.

The latter Woman, who is contrasted with her, and is called the *Harlot*, is a *faithless Church*, which claims to be *Catholic*, but is not.

Let us pursue the contrast.

The faithful Woman appears again, after her pilgrimage in the Wilderness of this world is over. Her sufferings have ceased. Look upward. Her glory is revealed at the close of the Apocalypse. The Woman is the *Bride* in Heaven. She is Christ's Church glorified, His Spouse purified. She is arrayed in *fine linen, pure and white*. She is called the *Holy City*, the new *Jerusalem* (Rev. xix. 7, 8; xxi. 2. 9, 10).

Now look below at the faithless woman or *Harlot* sitting on the *Beast*. She is arrayed in *scarlet*, and *pearls*, and *jewels*, and *gold*. She is called *Babylon, the Great City* (Rev. xvii. 4, 5; xi. 8).

What is the conclusion from all this?

As the former Woman, the *Bride*, the *Holy City*, the new *Jerusalem*, represents the *faithful Church*, so the other Woman, the *Harlot*, the *great City*, the *City on Seven Hills*, which reigned in St. John's age, the mystical *Babylon*, represents a *faithless Church*, the Church on the *Seven Hills*, the Church of *Rome*.

3. *θηρίον—γέμον ὀνόματα*] B has τὰ ὀνόματα, and so Tisch., “full of the names of *blasphemy*.” Observe the article, and see above, xiii. 1—5.

5. *μυστήριον*] *Mystery*. See below, v. 7.

—*Βαβυλὼν*] “*Babylon the Great*.” See above, Preliminary Note on this chapter.

6. *εἶδον*] *I saw the Woman drunken with the blood of Saints. And when I saw her*, says St. John, *I wondered with great wonder*.

If the Woman had been *Heathen Rome, past or to come*, why should St. John wonder? It is not wonderful that a *heathen city* should persecute the *Saints of God*. St. John had seen the blood of Christians spilt by imperial Rome. She had beheaded St. Paul, and had crucified St. Peter. He himself had been a *Martyr in will*, and was now an exile by her cruelty. Therefore he could not have wondered with great admiration if the *Harlot* was *heathen Rome*.

But it was a fit subject for surprise, that a *Christian Church*—a Church calling herself the “*Mother of Christendom*,” “the spiritual *Sion*,” “the *Catholic Church*”—should be *drunken with the blood of the Saints*; and at such a spectacle as that St. John might well have wondered with great admiration.

The Church of *Rome* has stained herself with the blood of Christians. She has erected the prisons, and prepared the rack, and lighted the fires, of “the *Holy Office* of the *Inquisition*” in

⁷ Καὶ εἶπέ μοι ὁ ἄγγελος, Διατί ἐθαύμασας ; ἐγὼ σοι ἐρῶ τὸ μυστήριον τῆς γυναικὸς, καὶ τοῦ θηρίου τοῦ βαστάζοντος αὐτήν, τοῦ ἔχοντος τὰς ἑπτὰ κεφαλὰς καὶ τὰ δέκα κέρατα.

⁸ ^{g ch. 11. 7.} ^{& 13. 1, 3, 8, 10.} Τὸ θηρίον ὃ εἶδες ἦν, καὶ οὐκ ἔστι· καὶ μέλλει ἀναβαίνειν ἐκ τῆς ἀβύσσου, καὶ εἰς ἀπώλειαν ὑπάγει· καὶ θαυμάσονται οἱ κατοικοῦντες ἐπὶ τῆς γῆς, ὧν οὐ γέγραπται τὰ ὀνόματα ἐπὶ τὸ βιβλίον τῆς ζωῆς ἀπὸ καταβολῆς κόσμου, βλέπόντων τὸ θηρίον ὅτι ἦν, καὶ οὐκ ἔστι, καὶ πάρεσται.

⁹ ^{h ch. 13. 1, 18.} Ὡδε ὁ νοῦς ὁ ἔχων σοφίαν· αἱ ἑπτὰ κεφαλαὶ ὄρη εἰσὶν ἑπτὰ, ὅπου ἡ γυνὴ κάθεται ἐπ' αὐτῶν.

¹⁰ Καὶ βασιλεῖς ἑπτὰ εἰσιν· οἱ πέντε ἔπεσαν, ὁ εἷς ἐστὶν, ὁ ἄλλος οὐπω ἦλθε,

Italy, Spain, America, and India. At this day she lauds one of her Popes, whom she has canonized, Pius the Fifth, in her Breviary, for being an Inflexible Inquisitor (*Breviar. Roman.* v. Maii, ed. Ratisbon, 1840, and p. 662, ed. Paris, 1842). As has been already stated, she has engraven the massacre of St. Bartholomew's Day on her coins, and represents it there as a work done by an Angel from heaven (*Numismata Pontif.* p. 87, ed. Paris, 1679). Strange to say, Rome has recently recast this medal, viz. in the year 1839, 19th Dec., and again in 1840 (see *Irish Eccles. Journal*, No. 13). Thus she has proclaimed her desire to identify herself with that massacre. She has inserted an Oath in her Pontifical, which requires Bishops to "persecute and wage war against all" whom she calls "heretics" (*Pontificale Romanum*, p. 63, ed. Rom. 1818).

St. John might justly wonder with great admiration that such acts should be done by any who profess Christianity.

7. διατί ἐθαύμασας] *Why didst thou wonder? I will tell thee the Mystery of the Woman, and of the Beast that carrieth her.*

I will tell thee the *Mystery*; a *Mystery* is something secret and sacred. See above, 2 Thess. ii. 7, where St. Paul describes the "Mystery of Iniquity, or Lawlessness," and compare St. Paul's words, in that remarkable prophecy, with the words of this prophecy of St. John. The one is like an inspired comment on the other. See above, on Rev. xiii. 5.

St. John, when he calls us to see the Harlot City, the seven-hilled City, displays her name on her forehead—*Mystery*.

Her title is *Mystery*, a *secret* spell, bearing a semblance of *sanctity*: a solemn rite which promises bliss to those who are initiated in it: a prodigy inspiring wonder and awe into the mind of St. John: an intricate enigma requiring for its solution the aid of the Spirit of God.

Heathen Rome doing the work of heathenism, and persecuting the Church, was no *Mystery*. Infidelity, blaspheming Christ, is no *Mystery*; therefore the Woman is not *Heathen* Rome; and she is not an *Infidel* power.

But a *Christian Church*, calling herself the Mother of Christendom, and yet "drunken with the blood of saints"—this is a *Mystery*. A *Christian Church* boasting herself to be the Bride, and yet being "the Harlot;" styling herself Sion, and being "Babylon"—this is a *Mystery*. A *Mystery* indeed it is, that, when she says to all "Come unto me," the voice from heaven should cry, "Come out of her, My People" (xviii. 4). A *Mystery* indeed it is, that she who boasts herself the city of Saints, should become "an habitation of devils:" that she who claims to be Infallible, should be said to "corrupt the earth:" that a self-named "Mother of Churches," should be called by the Holy Spirit the "Mother of Abominations:" that she who boasts to be Indefectible, should in one day be destroyed, and that Apostles should rejoice at her fall. Rev. xviii. 20.

Nearly eighteen centuries have passed away, since the Holy Spirit prophesied by the mouth of St. John, that this *Mystery* would be revealed in that City which was then the *Queen of the Earth*, the *City on Seven Hills*,—the CITY OF ROME.

The *Mystery* was then dark, dark as midnight. Man's eye could not pierce the gloom. The fulfilment of the prophecy seemed improbable,—almost impossible. Age after age passed away. By degrees, the mist which hung over it became less thick. The clouds began to break. Some features of the dark *Mystery* began to appear, dimly at first, then more clearly, like Mountains at daybreak. Then the form of the *Mystery* became more and more distinct. The Seven Hills, and the Woman sitting upon them, became visible. Her voice was heard. Strange sounds of blasphemy were muttered by her. Then they became louder and louder. And the golden chalice in her hand, her scarlet attire, her pearls and jewels, glittered in the sun. Kings and Nations were seen prostrate at her feet, and drinking her

cup. Saints were slain by her sword. And now the Prophecy has become clear, clear as noon-day; and we tremble at the sight, while we read the inscription, emblazoned in large letters, "MYSTERY, BABYLON THE GREAT," written by the hand of St. John, guided by the Spirit of God, on the forehead of the CHURCH OF ROME.

8. τὸ θηρίον] *The Beast which thou sawest, was, and is not, and is about to ascend out of the bottomless pit, or abyss.* See xi. 7; and cp. ix. 1, 2. 11, concerning the meaning of the word abyss.

The *Beast* was, in its Imperial form, and exists no longer in that shape; having received a *deadly wound*, and being killed in that respect (see above on xiii. 3. 12, and below on vv. 10, 11), and is about to ascend out of the abyss; that is, in this new form in which it will be described; and it goeth to destruction or perdition (ἀπώλειαν). Here again are other points of resemblance to St. Paul's prophecy concerning the son of perdition (2 Thess. ii. 3, ὁ υἱὸς τῆς ἀπωλείας): and this parallel is further traceable in the words at the end of the verse, καὶ πάρεσται, and he will appear—(which is the true reading, and received by almost all recent editors, instead of that of Elz. καίπερ ἔστι)—he will appear, or, literally, he will be present, πάρεσται. This word is to be compared with St. Paul's word παρουσία, *Advent*, a word also applied by him there to describe the *Advent* of Christ (2 Thess. ii. 1. 8; cp. Matt. xxiv. 3. 37. 39. 1 Cor. xv. 23. 1 Thess. ii. 19; iii. 13; iv. 15), and used by the Apostle to describe the *Advent* or *Appearing* of the Man of Sin (see on 2 Thess. ii. 9), and the word παρουσία signifies that the *Coming* of the *Beast* here described will manifest itself with a display of might and magnificence, imitating that of Christ. See the prophetic parallel above, in the note on xiii. 5.

The dwellers on the earth will wonder—seeing the *Beast*, that it was, and is not, and will appear.

Some interpreters render ὅτι, *which*, as if it were the neuter of ὅστις; but though ὅστις, and ἥτις, and οἵτινες are used as relative pronouns by St. John and other writers of the New Testament, yet the neuter is not so used, except when followed by ἄν.

9. Ὡδε ὁ νοῦς] Here is the mind or understanding that hath wisdom (cp. xiii. 18); that is, the mind that hath wisdom shows itself in the following explanation of the *Mystery*, which the Angel proceeds to reveal.

— αἱ ἑπτὰ κεφαλαί] *The Seven Heads of the Beast are Seven Mountains where the Woman sitteth upon them; that is, they signify or represent those Seven Mountains; they are emblematic of them.* On this sense of εἰσὶν, see above, i. 20.

Hence it is clear that the *Seven Mountains* are *Seven real* Mountains; for they are typified by something else, i. e. by the *Seven Heads*: and whatever is typified by something else, is not typical, but real.

Therefore we cannot agree with those who imagine that the City on the Seven Hills is only an ideal representation of some abstract quality, such as *Worldliness* or *Superstition*, without any special local existence. It has its seat on seven hills: and it is "the great city which reigned in St. John's age." See v. 18.

There is a great difference between the "Seven Hills" on which the Woman sitteth, and the "Many Waters" on which she sitteth, and "the Beast" on which she sitteth. The Hills are real: but the *Beast* and the *Waters* are symbolical. This is evident from the fact that the Angel interprets the meaning of the "Many Waters" (see v. 15), and of "the Beast" (see vv. 8—15), on which the Woman sitteth. But "the seven Hills" are themselves the interpretation of the symbolic imagery of the seven Heads. These seven Mountains are the seven Mountains of Rome. See above, preliminary note on this chapter. In the words of Bp. Andrewes here (*Bellarmin.* p. 287), "Septem Montes sunt, quibus insidet urbs, orbi notissimi."

10, 11. καὶ βασιλεῖς] and they (that is, the seven Heads) are,

i ch. 1. 8.

καὶ ὅταν ἔλθῃ, ὀλίγον αὐτὸν δεῖ μέναι·¹¹ καὶ τὸ θηρίον, ὃ ἦν, καὶ οὐκ ἔστι, καὶ αὐτὸς ὄγδοός ἐστι, καὶ ἐκ τῶν ἑπτὰ ἐστι, καὶ εἰς ἀπώλειαν ὑπάγει.

i. e. they represent *seven kings*; the *five* are *fallen*; the *one* is, the *other* is *not yet come*: and when he is come, he must continue a little while, and the *Beast* who was, and is not, even he is an *Eighth* (King—not Head), and he is from out of the *seven*, and goeth unto perdition, or destruction (ἀπώλειαν).

The seven Heads are explained to represent *seven Kings*; these Kings are represented as *successive*, and not as *contemporaneous*, like the *Ten Horns*:

What, then, are these *Seven Kings*?

Some recent Expositors (e. g. *Ewald*, *Lücke*) suppose them to be the first Seven Roman Emperors, beginning with *Augustus*.

But this opinion is untenable.

(1) It was unknown to Christian Antiquity. Ancient Expositors must have known whether this Vision had been fulfilled in the Emperors who had then lived; but none of the early Interpreters give this interpretation of it.

(2) It is grounded on the supposition that *Augustus* was the first Roman Emperor, not *Julius*, and that the *Apocalypse* was written in the time of the sixth Roman Emperor from *Augustus* (viz.), *Galba*: whereas, as Christian Antiquity testifies, it was not written till the age of the last of the *Cæsars*, *Domitian*. See above, p. 156.

(3) It is also founded on a notion, imputed to *St. John*, that *Nero* was again to come to life, and persecute the Church.

This supposition contravenes the belief of the Christian Church, which receives the *Apocalypse* as a *divinely-inspired* writing,—“the Revelation of *Jesus Christ*” (i. 1).

St. John's prophecy is a sequel to that of *Daniel* (vii. 3—24), as is evident from the similarity of language, and particularly as to the *Ten horns* of the *Beast*: and it is to be interpreted from that Prophecy. The word βασιλεῖς, *Kings*, is used in the sense of *kingdoms* in this chapter (v. 12), and interchangeably with *kingdoms* in *Daniel* vii. 17. 23; cp. *Isa.* xxiii. 15.

The successive *kingdoms* typified by the *Seven Heads* seem to be the *Kingdoms* which were successively absorbed within the circle of the *Roman Empire*: in like manner as the *Seven Hills*, which are also here typified by the *Seven Heads*, were successively enclosed and embraced within the walls of the *Roman City*.

Six of these seven kingdoms are described by the Prophet *Daniel*, whose predictions are repeated and continued in the *Apocalypse*; they are, (1) the *Babylonian*, (2) the *Medo-Persian*, (3) the *Macedonian* or *Greek*, (4) the *Syrian*, (5) the *Egyptian*, (6) the *Roman Heathen Imperial*.

The *Roman City* was like a microcosmic epitome of the *Roman Empire*. The Royal Capital of the Mistress of the World was a Mirror of that Universal Empire, of which she was the Queen.

Hence we may recognize the propriety of the imagery of the seven Heads, as emblematic of the *Seven Mountains* received within the *Roman City*, and also of the *Seven Kingdoms* to be absorbed in her universal rule.

At first sight it might seem surprising, that the *seven Heads* should be made to serve a double purpose, and to typify two things which did not appear to have any connexion with each other (viz. the *seven Mountains* of *Rome*, and the *seven Kings*, or *Kingdoms* of *Rome*); but the strangeness of this twofold application is removed by the above consideration, and the imagery is seen to be as appropriate as it is beautiful. The drawing together of the seven Mountains into the circle of the *Roman City* is combined in like manner by *Roman Poets* with the drawing together of the world's Kingdoms into the domain of the *Roman Empire*. Thus the great national Poet, *Virgil*, unites the two acts of contraction and absorption, in consecutive lines;

“Scilicet et rerum facta est pulcherrima Roma,
Septemque una sibi muro circumdedit arces.”

(*Georg.* ii. 534.)

And again he says,

“En hujus, nate, auspiciis illa inclita Roma
Imperium terris, animos æquabit Olympo,
Septemque una sibi muro circumdabit arces.”

(*Æn.* vi. 782.)

This exposition, as to its main principle, is to be found in the ancient commentaries of *Andreas* and others, *Catena*, p. 434, and it is well illustrated in *Archdeacon Harrison's* Lectures, pp. 376. 449, and it seems preferable to that view which regards the heads as emblems of the successive forms of Government of *Rome* itself.

This process of absorption had been predicted by *Daniel* in

vii. 4—19, and xi. 5—30, and both these prophecies of *Daniel* extend also to a description of that other power which is the subject of *St. John's* prophecy in the thirteenth and fourteenth chapters; and thus *Daniel's* prophecies had prepared the way for the *Apocalypse*, and are continued and completed by it.

The Angel says to *St. John*, “The one (*King*) now is, or exists;” i. e. the *Roman Imperial Heathen Power*, which was the *Sixth*, is now in existence.

This Imperial Power might well be called “the one,” for it was the central principle of the whole. It was to the *Roman world*, what the *Capitoline Hill* was to the other hills of *Rome*.

The Angel adds, “The other” (i. e. the *Seventh King* or *Kingdom*) “is not yet come, and when he comes, he must continue (only) a little while.”

The *Seventh King* can hardly represent, as some have supposed, the kingdom of *Odoacer*, A.D. 476, for this was a kingdom of *Italy*, and in *Italy*; and added nothing to the Power of *Rome*. Nor can it be the Gothic kingdom of *Theodoric* in *Italy*, A.D. 493—526; nor the Eastern Christian Emperor, or his Deputy, the *Exarch*, at *Ravenna*, A.D. 566; for these were not augmentations of the *Roman sovereignty*, but were rather like a continuation of the *Roman Imperial Power* in another form.

The *Seventh King* represents some Power which was first extrinsic to *Rome*, and was afterwards added to *Rome*; so as to be absorbed within the precincts of her Empire, like another or *Seventh Mountain* enclosed within the circuit of her walls.

There was a Power which rose upon the ruins of the *Italian Kingdom* above mentioned, and which endured only for a short time. This was the *Imperial Power* of *Germany*.

The following historical summary (from *C. W. Koch's* *Revolutions of Europe*, Periods iii. iv. and v. pp. 29—37. 62, of the English Translation, Lond. 1839) illustrates this statement:

“In the eleventh century, *Germany* was the ruling Power of *Europe*. Its greatness gave rise to a system of polity which the *Popes* took care to support with all their credit and authority. According to this system, the whole of *Christendom* composed a single Republic, of which the *Pope* was the spiritual head, and the *Emperors of Germany* the secular. The *Emperors* had the election of the *Pope*. . . . But however vast their power seemed to be, it was far from being a solid and durable fabric . . . and in course of time a new powerful Monarchy arose on that of the *German Empire*; that of the *Roman Pontiffs*, which monopolized both spiritual and temporal dominion, and extended its influence over all the kingdoms of *Christendom*.”

Here is a striking commentary on *St. John's* description of the *Woman* “sitting on the *Many Waters*” (vv. 1. 15), and on the *Beast* with its *Ten Heads* or *Kingdoms*, into which the *Roman Empire* was to be split at its dissolution, according to the Prophecy of *Daniel*, vii. 7. 20. 24; cp. *Dan.* ii. 41, 42.

“This supremacy, whose mechanism is an object of astonishment to the most subtle politicians, was the work of *Gregory VII.* (*Hildebrand*, A.D. 1073—1085) . . . who had scarcely obtained the Imperial confirmation of his election, when he put in execution the project he had so long been concerting and preparing, viz. the creation of a spiritual despotism, extending to *Priests* as well as *Kings*, making the Supreme Pontiff the Arbiter in all affairs, both civil and ecclesiastical.”

“At that time, the *City of Rome*, and the whole ecclesiastical States, as well as the greater part of *Italy*, were subject to the *Kings of Germany*, who nominated or confirmed the *Popes* . . . the *Popes* had used to date their acts from the years of the *Emperor's* reign, and to stamp their coin with his name.”

The writer proceeds to show how the Imperial power was supplanted by the Papal. The *Popes* forbade sovereigns, under pain of *Excommunication*, to exercise the right of *Investiture*; and the Papal Power was aggrandized by the enforcement of *Celibacy* on the clergy, and by the forgery of the false *Decretals*, received into the *Canon Law*, and supplanting the *Civil Law* and the *Common Law*; and by imposing *Oaths* of allegiance on all *Ecclesiastics*; and by means of the *Pallium*, which all *Archbishops* were required to sue for and obtain from *Rome*.

“The custom of dating their acts from the years of the *Emperor's* reign, and coining their money with the name of the *Emperor*, disappeared after the time of *Pope Gregory VII.*”

“The *Empire* thus fell into gradual decay, while the *Pontifical Power*, rising on its ruins, gained new accessions of strength; particularly under *Pope Innocent III.* (A.D. 1198—1216), by the multiplication of religious orders for the aggrandizement of the *Papacy*” (cp. note above, xiii. 11. 13); and by the *Crusades*, which were turned eventually even against *Christians*, such as the *Greeks* and the *Waldenses*, on the plea that they were schismatics

¹² ^k Καὶ τὰ δέκα κέρατα ἃ εἶδες δέκα βασιλεῖς εἰσιν, οἵτινες βασιλείαν οὐπω ^k Dan. 7. 20, 21. ^{ch. 13. 1.} ἔλαβον, ἀλλὰ ἐξουσίαν ὡς βασιλεῖς μίαν ὥραν λαμβάνουσι μετὰ τοῦ θηρίου.

¹³ Οὗτοι μίαν γνώμην ἔχουσι, καὶ τὴν δύναμιν καὶ τὴν ἐξουσίαν αὐτῶν τῷ θηρίῳ ¹⁴ ¹ Οὗτοι μετὰ τοῦ Ἀρνίου πολεμήσουσι, καὶ τὸ Ἀρνίον νικήσει ¹ Tim. 6. 15. ^{ch. 16. 14.} αὐτοὺς, ὅτι Κύριος κυρίων ἐστὶ καὶ Βασιλεὺς βασιλέων, καὶ οἱ μετ' αὐτοῦ κλητοὶ ^{& 19 16.} καὶ ἐκλεκτοὶ καὶ πιστοί.

¹⁵ ^m Καὶ λέγει μοι, Τὰ ὕδατα ἃ εἶδες οὗ ἡ πόρνη κάθηται, λαοὶ καὶ ὄχλοι εἰσὶ ^m Isa. 8. 7. καὶ ἔθνη καὶ γλῶσσαι.

¹⁶ ⁿ Καὶ τὰ δέκα κέρατα ἃ εἶδες καὶ τὸ θηρίον, οὗτοι μισήσουσι τὴν πόρνην, ⁿ Jer. 50. 41, 42. ^{Ezek. 16. 38, 44.} καὶ ἡρμηωμένην ποιήσουσιν αὐτὴν καὶ γυμνὴν, καὶ τὰς σάρκας αὐτῆς φάγονται, ^{ch. 18. 8.}

and heretics (p. 43); and by the institution of the *Inquisition*; and by *Interdicts*. "God," said Pope Innocent, "made two great Lights, the Sun and the Moon (Gen. i. 16); that is, the Pontifical and the Royal Power; and the Pontifical is as much greater than the Royal, as the Sun is greater than the Moon; and as the Moon derives her power from the Sun, so does the Imperial Power from the Pope" (in Decret. Greg. I. Tit. 33, cap. 6).

"The efforts made by the Emperors Frederick I. and II. to establish the tottering Throne of the *Empire* ended in nothing; the House of Hohenstaufen was deprived of all its crowns, and persecuted to the scaffold."

At the end of the thirteenth century "the Pontifical Power was in its zenith, and the Popes assumed the title of *Masters of the World*. Boniface VIII. went even further than his predecessors had done, and declared that God had given *two swords*, spiritual and temporal, to the successors of St. Peter (see on Luke xxii. 32. 38), the former to be exercised by the Church alone, the other by the Secular Powers, in *submission to the Pope*; all temporal power was made to depend on the spiritual, which is *judged by no man* (1 Cor. ii. 15): and 'we affirm,' said Boniface VIII., 'that it is absolutely necessary to salvation to every human creature to be subject to the Pope of Rome.'" (*Pope Boniface VIII.*, A.D. 1294, Extrav. Com. lib. i. tit. 8, cap. 1.)

With these statements the reader may compare the masterly summary of Guicciardini (lib. iv.), expunged by the Roman Censors from many editions of his history, but reprinted in *Heidegger's Historia Papatūs*, p. 585, Amst. 1684.

See also *Gibbon*, chap. lxi., and *Hallam's Middle Ages*, chap. vii., and the valuable collection of original authorities in *Gieseler's Church History*, Third Period, Division Third, § 47 to § 66.

11. καὶ τὸ θηρίον] *And the Beast—even he is an Eighth (King); he is ὁγδοός, not ὁγδόη (κεφαλή).* It is not said that the Beast is an eighth *head*, as some have interpreted the words; but that he is an eighth, and that he is out of the seven, that is, he rises *after*, and from out of the seven.

This is descriptive of the Roman power as it rose to supremacy under the Papacy, and carried the Harlot as on a Throne. It was an eighth kingdom, it rose *after* the Seven and *from* them. It rose after the *Babylonian*, *Medo-Persian*, *Greek*, *Syrian*, *Egyptian*, *Roman Imperial*, *German Imperial*, and, as represented in this chapter, it was diffused through the whole body of the *θηρίον*, and animated the whole.

It was like the Little Horn which grew out of the Beast of Daniel, and absorbed the Power of the Beast, so that it *became* the Beast. See above on xiii. v. 4.

The Beast as here displayed to St. John is called an eighth King, or Kingdom; and in Holy Scripture the number eight is the number of Resurrection (see on Luke xxiv. 1). Rome is the Western Babylon; and the Western Babylonian Power is, as it were, the octave of the Eastern. The Eastern Babylonian Power is the first in the Prophecies of Daniel. The Western Babylonian Power is the eighth in those of St. John.

And, if we may venture to use the expression, it is, as it were, like a *Parody* of the Power of Christ.

Observe the antithesis between Christ's power and this Antichristian power. Christ has His *παρουσία* or *Advent*. This Power has its *Advent* also. See on v. 8, and on 2 Thess. ii. 8, compared with 2 Thess. ii. 9, where the two *παρουσῖαι*, or *Advents*, of the two adverse Powers are contrasted.

Christ died on the Sixth day; so the Beast was killed in its Sixth Head. See above, xiii. 3.

The Lamb (Ἀρνίον) received a deadly wound, and was slain (ἐσφαγμένον, see above, v. 6); the Beast (θηρίον) received a deadly wound, and was slain (ἐσφαγμένον, also xiii. 3).

The Lamb *was*, and *is not*, and *will appear* again. He was hidden for a "little while" on the seventh day, when He was in the grave; and then reappeared on the eighth Day, the day of

His Resurrection (see John xvi. 16—24). So the Antichristian Power *was*; and then he *was not* for a time; and then he *re-appeared*—in more than his former power and glory—in the Eighth Kingdom—that of the Papacy.

But now observe the end.

Christ has *two* Advents. He died, and rose again, and ascended into heaven to live for evermore. "I am He that liveth, and was dead, and lo! I am alive for evermore" (i. 18; ii. 8). And His second Advent will destroy him "whose *Advent* is with all power and signs and lying wonders" (2 Thess. ii. 9, 10).

The Lamb died, and liveth for evermore to give salvation unto all His faithful followers; but the Beast died and lives again, and goeth on to destruction (ἀπώλεια): cp. 2 Thess. ii. 3. 8. 10.

12. καὶ τὰ δέκα κέρατα] *and the Ten Horns which thou sawest are Ten Kings, which have not yet received a Kingdom; but receive authority as kings one hour with the Beast.*

They are Kings or Kingdoms growing out of the Roman Empire at its dismemberment. See *Irenæus*, v. 26. *S. Hippolytus* (pp. 14—18. 153, ed. Lagarde), and above on xiii. 1.

By saying that the Horns will receive power as kings, St. John intimates (says *Andreas*, Caten. p. 435; cp. *Irenæus*, p. 787, Stieren; p. 440, Grabe) the *precariousness* of their power, and by saying that they receive it *one hour*, he marks the shortness of its duration in a state of coalition and union with one another and with the Beast. Especially it marks the shortness of its duration, compared with the power of its contrast, the LAMB, which is *not* for an hour,—but *for ever*. On this use of ὥρα, cp. 1 Thess. ii. 17. 2 Cor. vii. 8. Gal. ii. 5. Philem. 15.

13. οὗτοι μίαν γνώμην ἔχουσι] *These have one mind, or purpose, and give their power and their authority to the Beast; these will make war with the Lamb, and the Lamb will conquer them (for He is Lord of lords and King of kings): and they with Him who are called and elect,—will conquer them.*

15. τὰ ὕδατα] *The Waters which thou sawest, where the Harlot sitteth, are Peoples, and Multitudes, and Nations, and Tongues.* An expressive picture of the vast spiritual dominion of Papal Rome. See above, preliminary note to this chapter; and here is another resemblance to Babylon. Cp. Jer. li. 13.

16. καὶ τὰ δέκα κέρατα ἃ εἶδες καὶ τὸ θηρίον] *and the ten Horns which thou sawest and the Beast, they (οὗτοι, masculine, i. e. the Kings, v. 12) will hate the harlot, and will make her desolate and naked, and will devour her flesh.* Elz. has ἐπὶ τὸ θηρίον, i. e. the ten horns which thou sawest upon the Beast. And so the majority of Cursive MSS., and some early MSS. of the Vulgate. But *καὶ, and*, is found in A, B, and in twelve Cursive MSS. cited by *Scrivener*, p. 553; and the best MSS. of the Vulgate, and in the Syriac Version, and Arabic and *Æthiopic*, and in *Hippolytus*, p. 18, ed. Lagarde; and *Irenæus* seems to have so read the passage (v. 26), and this reading is received by *Griesb.*, *Scholz*, *Bengel*, and *Winer*, p. 123, *Lach.*, *Tisch.*, *Tregelles*, and there seems little doubt that this is the true reading.

Here is another proof that the Harlot cannot be *Heathen Rome*; for it is certain that the Heathen City of Rome was not destroyed by any powers that grew out of the Empire of Rome.

The Harlot sitting on the Beast is the City of Rome. This is allowed by all. See the preliminary note to this chapter. The Beast has been represented by St. John, in the successive stages of his existence, first as the *heathen Roman Empire*; and next, as subordinate to the Papacy, and doing its pleasure, and, as it were, incorporated in it, and animated by it. And now this prophetic sentence reveals the wonderful result, that the Horns of the Beast, that is, some Powers that have grown out of the Roman Empire, will one day be alienated from the Papacy, and will *hate the Harlot and devour her flesh*. As *Tertullian* says (de Resur. carnis, § 25), "The Harlot City is to receive its deserved retribution from the Ten Kings, which will grow out of the dismemberment of the Roman Empire,—'abcessione Romani statūs.'" L L

o 2 Thess. 2. 11.
ch. 10. 7.

καὶ αὐτὴν κατακαύσουσιν ἐν πυρί· ¹⁷ ὁ γὰρ Θεὸς ἔδωκεν εἰς τὰς καρδίας αὐτῶν ποιῆσαι τὴν γνώμην αὐτοῦ, καὶ ποιῆσαι μίαν γνώμην, καὶ δοῦναι τὴν βασιλείαν αὐτῶν τῷ θηρίῳ, ἄχρι τελεσθήσονται οἱ λόγοι τοῦ Θεοῦ.

p ch. 16. 19.
& 12. 4.

¹⁸ Καὶ ἡ γυνὴ ἣν εἶδες ἔστιν ἡ πόλις ἡ μεγάλη ἡ ἔχουσα βασιλείαν ἐπὶ τῶν βασιλέων τῆς γῆς.

a Isa. 13. 21.
& 21. 9.
& 34. 11, 14.
Jer. 50. 39.
& 51. 8, 37.
ch. 14. 8.

b ch. 14. 8.
& 17. 2.
Jer. 51. 7.
Nah. 3. 4.

c Isa. 48. 20.
& 52. 11.
Jer. 50. 8.
& 51. 6, 45.
& 52. 11.
2 Cor. 6. 17.

XVIII. ¹ Μετὰ ταῦτα εἶδον ἄλλον ἄγγελον καταβαίνοντα ἐκ τοῦ οὐρανοῦ ἔχοντα ἐξουσίαν μεγάλην, καὶ ἡ γῆ ἐφωτίσθη ἐκ τῆς δόξης αὐτοῦ· ² καὶ ἔκραξεν ἐν ἰσχυρᾷ φωνῇ λέγων, Ἐπεσεν, ἔπεσε Βαβυλὼν ἡ μεγάλη, καὶ ἐγένετο κατοικητήριον δαιμόνων, καὶ φυλακὴ παντὸς πνεύματος ἀκαθάρτου, καὶ φυλακὴ παντὸς ὀρνέου ἀκαθάρτου καὶ μεμισημένου· ³ ὅτι ἐκ τοῦ οἴνου τοῦ θυμοῦ τῆς πορνείας αὐτῆς πέπωκαν πάντα τὰ ἔθνη· καὶ οἱ βασιλεῖς τῆς γῆς μετ' αὐτῆς ἐπόρνευσαν, καὶ οἱ ἔμποροι τῆς γῆς ἐκ τῆς δυνάμεως τοῦ στρήνους αὐτῆς ἐπλούτησαν.

⁴ Καὶ ἤκουσα ἄλλην φωνὴν ἐκ τοῦ οὐρανοῦ λέγουσαν, Ἐξέλθατε ἐξ αὐτῆς, ὁ λαός μου, ἵνα μὴ συγκοινωνήσητε ταῖς ἁμαρτίαις αὐτῆς,

They will devour her flesh (σάρκας). The flesh is the carnal element of her power, as distinguished from the spiritual. It represents the temporal power of the Papacy; that temporal power which has been acquired by carnal means, and for carnal ends. This Prophecy therefore reveals, that some Powers which have grown out of the Empire of Rome, and have been vassals of the Papacy, will rise against Rome, and spoil her of her temporal power. It predicts that this spoliation of the Papacy will proceed from Roman Catholic Nations,—children and subjects of Papal Rome; from such Nations as France and Italy herself, perhaps from the people of Rome; and that many of her Divines, her Clergy, and her Bishops will write and preach against her errors, her corruptions, and her usurpations.

Her former lovers will hate her, and strip her of her rich ornaments; and they whom she made to drink of the cup of her fornication will make her desolate.

It is here revealed, that the Horns and the Beast will do this under the sovereign control of the mysterious and inscrutable purpose of Almighty God, employing some former vassals of the Papacy to execute His Almighty will in punishing it for its sins; and that the ruin of Papal Rome will not be effected by Protestant Nations, but by Papal Princes and People rising against her; and that they will suppose that they are following *their own devices*, and working out their own purpose; but they will be executing the decree, and accomplishing the purpose, of God. And therefore, with a repetition of words, making this truth more striking and emphatic, it is said, "*God hath put it into their hearts to perform His mind, and perform one mind;*" though *differing* in other respects, they will be *united* in this; and "*give their kingdom to the Beast until the words of God shall have been fulfilled.*"

Here is another parallel to the history of the *literal* Babylon. She fell by the arms of some who had been lately subject to her. God gave a commission against her to *Elam* (Isa. xxi. 2), in which Susa was (Dan. viii. 2), and which was subject to Babylon; and He "raised up the spirit of the *Kings of the Medes*, for *His* device was against Babylon to destroy it" (Jer. li. 11); and thus He executed His purpose upon her. So will it one day be with the mystical Babylon—Rome.

See further below on xviii. 9, 10.

18. καὶ ἡ γυνή] *And the Woman which thou sawest is the great City which reigneth over the Kings of the earth.* See the preliminary note on this chapter.

CH. XVIII.] Fuller description of the future FALL of the MYSTICAL BABYLON.

It is to be carefully observed, that though *Babylon* falls, the *Beast* still remains. Therefore the fall of Papal Rome will not be the destruction of the Papacy. See below, xix. 19.

1. μετὰ ταῦτα εἶδον] *After this I saw.* The language of this chapter, concerning the Fall of Papal Rome, is derived from that of Hebrew Prophecy, describing the Fall of Babylon. It is here foretold, that Rome will become, what Babylon is, utterly reduced to a state of desolation.

Here then is another proof that these Apocalyptic prophecies do not concern *ancient heathen* Rome; and that they were not fulfilled when Rome was captured by the Goths. That event took place 1450 years ago; and even if Rome had then been made desolate, which was not the case, it could not be said that

her capture at that time was the fulfilment of these prophecies; for the desolation which these prophecies describe is *final* and *for ever* (see vv. 2. 8. 20—23; xix. 3). They therefore concern Rome as she is now, and their fulfilment is still future. See above, preliminary note to chap. xvii.

This chapter is quoted by *S. Hippolytus*, de Christo et Antichristo, § 40, p. 18, Lagarde.

2. ἔπεσεν, ἔπεσε] *Fell, fell Babylon the Great!* The aorist here used, and in xiv. 8, describes the suddenness of the fall of so great a city: the words which follow describe her *state after the fall*. See above, on xiv. 8.

— καὶ ἐγένετο] Compare Isa. xiii. 21, 22, concerning Babylon. — δαιμόνων] So *Elz.*, *Tisch.*, and all the Cursives.—A, B have δαιμόνων, and so *Lach.*

— φυλακή] not *cage* or *prison*, but place where they are *safe*; where these ill-omened birds resort or keep their vigils, and "lead unmolested lives and die of age;" cp. Isa. xxxiv. 11. Jer. l. 39; li. 37.

3. στρήνους] *riotous luxury*. The idea contained in this word *στρήνος* is further expressed in v. 7, by ἐστρηνίασε, and v. 10. The radical meaning of the word is seen in the words *στρήνης*, *streng* (Germ.), *strong*, *strenuus*, *strain*, *struggle*, conveying an idea of power showing itself in strong emotions, like the neighings of an untamed steed, exulting in its strength; or like the heavings of an Earthquake, or the burstings forth of a Volcano. Hence it is applied to describe insolence and voluptuousness breaking out into boastful vauntings of pride, and dissolute riot and revelry; like those of Babylon on the eve of her fall. Cp. *Lobeck*, ad Phrynich. p. 381, and the use of the word by the LXX in 2 Kings xix. 28, where God says of Sennacherib, τὸ στρήνός σου ἀνέβη ἐν τοῖς ὤσίν μου, "thy rage and thy tumult is come up into mine ears—therefore will I put My hook in thy nose, and My bridle in thy lips, and will turn thee back."

4. ἐξέλθατε ἐξ αὐτῆς, ὁ λαός μου] *Come forth out of her, My People:* as the Jews are called to come out of Babylon, Isa. xlviii. 20; lii. 11. Jer. l. 8; li. (xxviii. in the Septuagint) 6. 45. Cp. 2 Cor. vi. 17. *Elz.* has ἐξέλθετε here; A has ἐξέλθατε, and so *Tisch.*; *Lach.* has ἐξελε, which is in B, C.

This passage supplies an answer to the allegations of those who say, that the identification of the Apocalyptic Babylon with Papal Rome involves the supposition that the promise of Christ's presence with His Church had failed (Matt. xvi. 18; xxviii. 20), and that the Church of Christ had ceased to be visible, and had become utterly apostate. Such a supposition as that must, indeed, be disclaimed and reprobated; and the interpretation in question gives no countenance to it. The Babylon of the Apocalypse is Papal Rome; but the Church of Papal Rome never was the whole Catholic Church; there were Greek Churches, and African Churches, and Asiatic Churches, which never accepted the main errors and corruptions of Papal Rome, enforcing the doctrine of the Pope's Supremacy and Infallibility,—which are the essential characteristics of *Popery* as distinguished from, and opposed to, *Christianity*. Those Churches did not accept her dogma of the indispensable necessity of Obedience to his decrees, on pain of eternal condemnation; nor do they accept it to this day. Besides, many there were in the Communion of Rome, who did not drink all the ingredients of her cup. Nor did she *enforce* her novel doctrines on the faith of her Members, until the Council of Trent in the sixteenth century; and at that time, Churches in the

καὶ ἐκ τῶν πληγῶν αὐτῆς ἵνα μὴ λάβητε, ^{5 d} ὅτι ἐκολλήθησαν αὐτῆς αἱ ἁμαρτίαι ^{d Gen. 18. 20, 21.}
ἄχρι τοῦ οὐρανοῦ, καὶ ἐμνημόνευσεν ὁ Θεὸς τὰ ἀδικήματα αὐτῆς· ^{6 e} ἀπόδοτε ^{Jer. 51. 9.}
αὐτῇ ὡς καὶ αὐτὴ ἀπέδωκεν, καὶ διπλώσατε διπλὰ κατὰ τὰ ἔργα αὐτῆς, ἐν τῷ ^{ch. 16. 19.}
ποτηρίῳ ᾧ ἐκέρασε κεράσατε αὐτῇ διπλοῦν· ^{7 f} ὅσα ἐδόξασεν αὐτὴν καὶ ^{Isa. 47. 7, 8.}
ἐστρηνίασε, τοσοῦτον δότε αὐτῇ βασανισμὸν καὶ πένθος· ὅτι ἐν τῇ καρδίᾳ
αὐτῆς λέγει, Κάθημαι βασίλισσα καὶ χήρα οὐκ εἰμι, καὶ πένθος οὐ μὴ ἴδω·
^{8 g} διὰ τοῦτο ἐν μιᾷ ἡμέρᾳ ἥξουσιν αἱ πληγαὶ αὐτῆς, θάνατος καὶ πένθος καὶ ^{g 2 Thess. 2. 8.}
λιμὸς, καὶ ἐν πυρὶ κατακαυθήσεται, ὅτι ἰσχυρὸς Κύριος ὁ Θεὸς ὁ κρίνας αὐτήν. ^{ch. 17. 16.}
^{9 h} Καὶ κλαύσουσιν καὶ κόψονται ἐπ' αὐτήν οἱ βασιλεῖς τῆς γῆς οἱ μετ' αὐτῆς ^{h Ezek. 26. 16.}
πορνεύσαντες καὶ στρηνιάσαντες, ὅταν βλέπωσι τὸν καπνὸν τῆς πυρώσεως ^{ch. 17. 2. & 18. 3.}
αὐτῆς, ^{10 i} ἀπὸ μακρόθεν ἑστηκότες, διὰ τὸν φόβον τοῦ βασανισμοῦ αὐτῆς, ^{i Isa. 21. 9.}
λέγοντες, Οὐαὶ, οὐαὶ, ἡ πόλις ἡ μεγάλη, Βαβυλὼν ἡ πόλις ἡ ἰσχυρά, ὅτι μιᾷ ^{Jer. 51. 8.}
ᾠρᾷ ἦλθεν ἡ κρίσις σου. ^{ch. 14. 8.}
^{11 k} Καὶ οἱ ἔμποροι τῆς γῆς κλαίουσιν καὶ πενθοῦσιν ἐπ' αὐτῇ, ὅτι τὸν γόμον ^{k Ezek. 27. 36.}
αὐτῶν οὐδεὶς ἀγοράζει οὐκέτι, ¹² γόμον χρυσοῦ καὶ ἀργύρου, καὶ λίθου τιμίου
καὶ μαργαρίτου, καὶ βυσσίνου καὶ πορφύρας, καὶ σηρικῶ καὶ κοκκίνου, καὶ πᾶν
ξύλον θύϊνον, καὶ πᾶν σκεῦος ἐλεφάντινον, καὶ πᾶν σκεῦος ἐκ ξύλου τιμιωτάτου,

West, such as the Churches of England and Ireland, wearied with her usurpations, and illumined by God's Holy Word lighted up anew with fresh radiance by the gracious influences of the Holy Spirit, reformed themselves. And even now, at this present time,—as this prophecy reveals,—when the cup of false doctrine in the hand of the mystical Babylon seems to have received its final infusion, by the addition of that last new article to her creed, the doctrine of the Immaculate Conception, and when that infusion seems to be making the cup of her guilt to overflow (below, v. 6), and also to be making God's cup of indignation to overflow upon her (cp. Ps. lxxv. 8; and above, xvi. 19); yet still, even now, the Holy Spirit, who reads the heart, and who wrote the Apocalypse, sees *some People of God* in Rome. Now, on the eve of her fall, He cries aloud by the voice of this heavenly Angel, "Come out of her, My People!"

5. ὅτι ἐκολλήθησαν] *because her sins clave even to Heaven.* Observe this remarkable word *ἐκολλήθησαν*, *were glued*; a reading restored from A, B, C by recent Editors, instead of the weaker word *ἠκολούθησαν* in *Elz.* On the signification and usage of the word in the N. T., see Matt. xix. 5. Luke xv. 15. Acts v. 13; viii. 29. 1 Cor. vi. 16, 17. Cp. *Pindar*, *Olymp. v. 29*, where the metaphor is applied to describe a continued series of buildings, joined on to one another.

There seems to be a reference to the building up of the tower of Babel, with *slime* for mortar, that its top might reach to heaven. Gen. xi. 3, 4.

The sense is this: Rome was designed by God to be a holy Church, rearing up the spiritual fabric of sound doctrine and discipline; and building up her people into a living temple, holy and acceptable to the Lord. But instead of this, she has built up a spiritual Babel; she has built up a tower of pride. Her sins, like planks of wood, have been attached, and soldered, and stuck fast together to each other in succession, as it were by glue, or pitch, or some other tenacious cement, till at length they have reached to heaven. Cp. Jer. li. 9, concerning Babylon, *ἠγγικεν εἰς οὐρανὸν τὸ κρῖμα αὐτῆς, ἐξῆλθεν ἕως τῶν ἀστρῶν*, and the confession of Ezra, ix. 6, "our iniquities are increased over our heads, and our trespass is grown up unto the heavens," and Baruch i. 20, *ἐκολλήθη εἰς ἡμᾶς τὰ κακὰ*, and Ps. lxxiii. 8, *ἐκολλήθη ἡ ψυχὴ μου ὀπίσω σου*.

The Babel-tower of sin is a tower which man builds in pride, and when its top reaches to heaven, then it is suddenly thrown down (v. 19).

6. ἀπόδοτε] *Render ye.* Cp. Ps. cxxvii. 8. Jer. l. 15. 29.

7, 8. κάθημαι βασίλισσα] *I sit a Queen, and shall never see sorrow.* See Isa. xlvii. 7—9, concerning Babylon. It is remarkable, that the Church of Rome lays claim to those very qualities and attributes, which are assigned in the Apocalypse to the Harlot. This appears as follows:—

1. The Church of Rome arrogates *Indefectibility*.
And the Harlot says here, *that she is a Queen for ever.*
2. The Church of Rome boasts of *Universality*.
And the Harlot is seated on many waters, which are Nations, and Peoples, and Tongues, xvii. 15.
3. The Church of Rome vaunts *temporal felicity*, and claims supremacy over all.

And the Harlot has kings at her feet.

4. The Church of Rome points to the Unity of all her members in one creed, and to their subjection under one supreme visible Head.

And the Harlot requires all to drink of her cup, v. 3.

Hence it appears that Rome's "*notes of the Church*" are marks of the Harlot: her trophies of triumph are stigmas of shame; the claims which she makes to be *Sion*, confirm the proof that she is *Babylon*.

Therefore, let no one be confounded by the wide extent, the temporal prosperity, the alleged Unity and Universality, and the long impunity, of Rome. It was prophesied by St. John that the mystical Babylon would have a wide and enduring sway, that God, in His long-suffering to her, would give her time to repent, if haply she would repent; that he would heal her, if she would be healed; but that she would *not repent*, and that her sins would at length cleave to heaven, and that she would come in remembrance before God. And when that hour arrives, then, woe will betide the Preachers of the Gospel, if they have not taken up the warning of St. John, and sounded the trumpet of alarm, "Come out of her, My people, and be not partakers of her sins, lest ye receive also of her plagues" (v. 4). See Ezek. iii. 18—20.

9. οἱ βασιλεῖς τῆς γῆς] *The Kings of the earth who committed fornication with her, and lived delicately, will wail over her.* A marvellous Prophecy. Some of those very Powers, who were once vassals of Rome, will one day rise against her: they will be instruments in God's hands of His retributive justice upon her; and in a mysterious transport of indignation and wild ecstasy of revenge, they will *tear her flesh* (see above on xvii. 16, 17); and yet when they have done the deed, they will *weep over her*.

The reason of this seems to be that the Fall of Rome may perhaps be followed by a triumph of Anarchy and an outbreak of Infidelity. It will be followed by those disastrous consequences, unless the Rulers of the world, especially in States formerly subject to the Papacy, endeavour to restore and maintain true Religion, which is the only safeguard of Thrones. Unless they do this, her fall will be followed by theirs.

10. μιᾷ ᾠρᾷ] *in one hour*; that is, suddenly, in a very short time. See above, xvii. 12, and below, vv. 16, 19, the authorities in *Wetstein*, p. 827, and the parallel in Jer. li. 8, describing the suddenness of the capture of Babylon, *ἄφνω ἔπεσε Βαβυλὼν*.

11—14. καὶ οἱ ἔμποροι τῆς γῆς] *the Merchants of the Earth weep.* The mystical Babylon is here compared to her great Assyrian prototype, the Merchant City of the Chaldees. The Church of Rome, "the general Mart of Christendom," has endeavoured to extend her spiritual traffic into all parts of the World. She affirms that her own Communion is a spiritual harbour of peace, and a haven of salvation to all; and that no one can be saved, who does not ply his vessel in the waters of her mystical Euphrates, and have commerce with her, and bring his goodly merchandise to her spiritual emporium. See above on xiii. 16, 17, and the words of Hooker, quoted above, on xvii. 1.

12. ξύλον θύϊνον] *thyine-wood*, "arbor vitæ;" an aromatic wood, used for incense, and for building of temples. See *Theophrast. Hist. Plant. v. 5. Plin. N. H. xiii. 16. Wetstein*, p. 828. *Billerbeck*, *Flora*, p. 234. It is supposed by some to be the same

1 Ezek. 27. 13.

καὶ χαλκοῦ καὶ σιδήρου καὶ μαρμάρου, ¹³ ¹ καὶ κινάμωμον καὶ ἄμωμον καὶ θυμιάματα, καὶ μύρον καὶ λίβανον, καὶ οἶνον καὶ ἔλαιον, καὶ σεμίδαλιν καὶ σῖτον, καὶ κτήνη καὶ πρόβατα, καὶ ἵππων καὶ ῥεδῶν καὶ σωμάτων, καὶ ψυχὰς ἀνθρώπων.

¹⁴ Καὶ ἡ ὁπώρα σου τῆς ἐπιθυμίας τῆς ψυχῆς ἀπόλετο ἀπὸ σοῦ, καὶ πάντα τὰ λιπαρὰ καὶ τὰ λαμπρὰ ἀπόλετο ἀπὸ σοῦ· καὶ οὐκέτι αὐτὰ οὐ μὴ εὕρῃς.

m ch. 17. 4.

¹⁵ Οἱ ἔμποροι τούτων, οἱ πλουτήσαντες ἀπ' αὐτῆς, ἀπὸ μακρόθεν στήσονται διὰ τὸν φόβον τοῦ βασανισμοῦ αὐτῆς, κλαίοντες καὶ πενθοῦντες, ¹⁶ ^m λέγοντες, Οὐαὶ, οὐαὶ, ἡ πόλις ἡ μεγάλη, ἡ περιβεβλημένη βύσσινον καὶ πορφυροῦν καὶ κόκκινον, καὶ κεχρυσωμένη ἐν χρυσίῳ καὶ λίθῳ τιμίῳ καὶ μαργαρίταις· ὅτι μιᾷ ὥρᾳ ἡρημώθη ὁ τοσοῦτος πλοῦτος. ¹⁷ ⁿ Καὶ πᾶς κυβερνήτης καὶ πᾶς ὁ ἐπὶ τόπον πλέων, καὶ ναῦται, καὶ ὅσοι τὴν θάλασσαν ἐργάζονται, ἀπὸ μακρόθεν ἔστησαν, ¹⁸ ^o καὶ ἔκραζον βλέποντες τὸν καπνὸν τῆς πυρώσεως αὐτῆς, λέγοντες,

n Isa. 23. 14.
Ezek. 27. 29.

o ch. 5. 9. & 13. 4.

p Josh. 7. 6.
Job 2. 12.

Τίς ὁμοία τῇ πόλει τῇ μεγάλῃ; ¹⁹ ^p Καὶ ἔβαλον χοῦν ἐπὶ τὰς κεφαλὰς αὐτῶν, καὶ ἔκραζον κλαίοντες καὶ πενθοῦντες, λέγοντες, Οὐαὶ, οὐαὶ, ἡ πόλις ἡ μεγάλη, ἐν ᾗ ἐπλούτησαν πάντες οἱ ἔχοντες τὰ πλοῖα ἐν τῇ θαλάσῃ ἐκ τῆς τιμιότητος αὐτῆς, ὅτι μιᾷ ὥρᾳ ἡρημώθη.

q Isa. 44. 23.
& 49. 13.
Jer. 51. 48.
ch. 19. 2.
r Jer. 51. 64.

²⁰ ^q Εὐφραίνου ἐπ' αὐτῇ, οὐρανὲ, καὶ οἱ ἅγιοι, καὶ οἱ ἀπόστολοι, καὶ οἱ προφῆται, ὅτι ἔκρινεν ὁ Θεὸς τὸ κρίμα ὑμῶν ἐξ αὐτῆς.

s Isa. 24. 8.
Jer. 7. 34.
& 16. 9. & 25. 10.
Ezek. 26. 13.
t Isa. 23. 8.
Jer. 7. 34.
& 16. 9. & 25. 10.

²¹ ^r Καὶ ἤρην εἰς ἄγγελος ἰσχυρὸς λίθον ὡς μύλον μέγαν, καὶ ἔβαλεν εἰς τὴν θάλασσαν λέγων, Οὕτως ὁρμήματι βληθήσεται Βαβυλὼν ἡ μεγάλη πόλις, καὶ οὐ μὴ εὐρεθῇ ἔτι. ²² ^s Καὶ φωνὴ κιθαρῳδῶν καὶ μουσικῶν καὶ αὐλητῶν καὶ σαλπιστῶν οὐ μὴ ἀκουσθῇ ἐν σοὶ ἔτι· καὶ πᾶς τεχνίτης πάσης τέχνης οὐ μὴ εὐρεθῇ ἐν σοὶ ἔτι· καὶ φωνὴ μύλου οὐ μὴ ἀκουσθῇ ἐν σοὶ ἔτι. ²³ ^t καὶ φῶς

wood as was called *citrus* by the Romans, and to be the *white-cedar*. See *Winer*, R. W. B. ii. p. 612, art. "Thinenholz."

13. κινάμωμον καὶ ἄμωμον] *cinnamon and amomum*; both were used as unguents for the hair. *Lucan*. x. 166—168. *Martial*, viii. 77. *Wetstein*, p. 829. *Billerbeck*, pp. 2. 105. *Winer*, R. W. B. art. "Zimmt," ii. p. 734. *Elz.* omits καὶ ἄμωμον. On this figurative imagery, concerning the use of perfumes and unguents, as expressive of the lures and fascinations of spiritual harlotry, see *Isa.* lvii. 9. Compare also *Ezek.* xxiii.

— σεμίδαλιν] *fine flour*. *Gen.* xviii. 6. *Levit.* ii. 1, 2. *Plin.* xviii. 20.

— ῥεδῶν] *rhedarum*; a word of Gallic origin for a chariot of four wheels. *Quintil.* i. 5. *Isidor.* xx. 17. *Wetstein*.

— σωμάτων, καὶ ψυχὰς ἀνθρώπων] *of bodies, and souls of men*. The reservation of these words for the close of this long catalogue of articles of commerce, appears to be designed to remind the reader that it is a *spiritual* commerce which is here described: a commerce in bodies and souls of men; a *spiritual Slave Trade*. Such is the commerce of Rome.

The Apostles declare that we are bought with the blood of Christ, that we have been redeemed from bondage into freedom by that inestimable price (1 Cor. vi. 20. 1 Pet. i. 18, 19), and that we must stand fast in that liberty with which Christ has made us free, and not be entangled with the yoke of bondage (*Gal.* v. 1), and not become the servants of men (1 Cor. vii. 23), and know no other Master but Christ, and no other service but that of God, which is perfect freedom.

But the Church of Rome has encroached on this Christian liberty. As *Bp. Sanderson* says (iii. p. 282), "the usurpations of the Bishops of Rome upon the consciences of men, show them to be the true successors of the Scribes and Pharisees, in laying heavy burdens upon men's shoulders, which they ought not (*Matt.* xxiii. 4. *Mark* vii. 9), and in rejecting the Word of God to establish their own traditions, rather than to be the successors of St. Peter, who forbiddeth *dominatum in cleris*." See above on 1 Pet. v. 3.

17. πᾶς ὁ ἐπὶ τόπον πλέων] *every one who saileth to the place*. So A, C, and so *Griesb.*, *Scholz*, *Lach.*, *Tisch.*, *Tregelles*. B has τὸν τόπον. But the article is often omitted after prepositions, when the substantive itself sufficiently declares its own meaning without the aid of the article. See *Bp. Middleton* on the Article, part i. ch. vi., and cp. the examples in *Winer*, § 18. *Elz.* has πᾶς ἐπὶ τῶν πλοίων ὁ ὕμιλος.

19. καὶ ἔβαλον χοῦν ἐπὶ τὰς κεφαλὰς αὐτῶν] *and they cast dust on their heads*. Cp. *Josh.* vii. 6. *Job* ii. 12.

20. καὶ οἱ ἀπόστολοι] *and ye Apostles*. *Rejoice over her, O heaven, and ye Saints, and ye Apostles, and ye Prophets, for God judged your cause from out of her*; that is, He has taken your cause out of her hands into His own. See above, vi. 10, and below, xix. 2. Cp. *Ps.* ix. 4; *lxxiv.* 23; *cxl.* 12, and v. 24, and xix. 2. It has been alleged by some that this city cannot be Papal Rome, but is Heathen Rome, because Apostles have not been put to death by Papal Rome, but were martyred by Heathen Rome.

But it is *not* said here, that Apostles and Prophets were martyred by this Apocalyptic City,—though even this might be said in a certain sense; see xi. 7, 8,—but that they were wronged by her, and that God will avenge those wrongs. Papal Rome has done grievous wrong to Apostles and Prophets in many ways, especially by placing her own unwritten Traditions, and the Apocryphal Books, on a par with their divinely-inspired writings (see her own words in the IVth Session of the Council of Trent, April 8th, 1546), and by withholding the Holy Scriptures from the people (see above on xi. 9); thus doing much to hinder and frustrate their work, and to make "the Word of God of none effect." Cp. below, xix. 4.

21. καὶ ἤρην εἰς ἄγγελος] *And one Angel threw a huge stone like a millstone down into the sea, and said, So shall Babylon be cast down, and never more be found*. On this use of εἰς see above, viii. 13. They who say that the Apocalyptic Babylon fell, when Rome was taken by the Goths, contradict this voice of the Angel; and the stones of the Roman City, still standing in statey magnificence, cry out against that exposition. But those stones will one day be cast down for ever. Cp. *Jer.* li. 63, 64, where Jeremiah's roll, with a stone tied to it, is made to sink into the Euphrates, as an emblem of the fall of the literal Babylon. The fall of the mystical Babylon is here represented as equally complete.

22. φωνὴ μύλου] *the sound of the millstone*. Cp. *Jer.* xxv. 10, in the original Hebrew, which St. John here follows. Some MSS. of the LXX do not mention the sound of the millstone.

RETROSPECT OF THE FOREGOING CHAPTERS XI.—XVIII.

The awful words of the divine prophecy contained in this and the foregoing chapters, demand some practical application.

λύχνου οὐ μὴ φανῇ ἐν σοὶ ἔτι, καὶ φωνὴ νυμφίου καὶ νύμφης οὐ μὴ ἀκουσθῇ ἐν σοὶ ἔτι ὅτι οἱ ἔμποροὶ σου ἦσαν οἱ μεγιστάνες τῆς γῆς· ὅτι ἐν τῇ φαρμακείᾳ σου ἐπλανήθησαν πάντα τὰ ἔθνη· ²⁴ καὶ ἐν αὐτῇ αἵματα προφητῶν καὶ ἁγίων ^{u ch. 17. 6.} εὐρέθη, καὶ πάντων τῶν ἐσφαγμένων ἐπὶ τῆς γῆς.

The delivery of the LITTLE ROLL to St. John, by the Mighty Angel, Christ Himself, in the Tenth Chapter, was accompanied with a commission to prophesy "upon many Peoples, and Nations, and Languages, and Kings" (x. 11).

That commission has been executed in the foregoing chapters, from the eleventh to the seventeenth inclusive; and we have now seen the vision of the future downfall of the Great City, the capital seat of the Power which is the subject of these chapters.

The BOOK of REVELATION delivers a warning from Almighty God to the World. It proclaims the peril and unhappiness of those who are enthralled by Rome. And its prophetic and comminatory uses ought to be pointed out by Christian Ministers, and to be acknowledged by Christian Congregations. We may forfeit a great blessing and incur great danger, if we neglect these divinely-appointed uses of the Apocalypse, particularly in the present age, when the Church of Rome is busily employed in spreading her snares around us, to make us victims of her deceptions, prisoners of her power, slaves of her will, and partners of her doom.

Many excellent works have been composed by English Divines, in Vindication of the Church of England from the charge of Schism, preferred against her by Romish Controversialists, for her conduct at the Reformation in the sixteenth century; when she cleared herself from Romish errors, novelties, and corruptions.

It has been shown in those Vindications, that it is the duty of all Churches to shun schisms and strifes, and to *seek peace, and ensue it* (Ps. xxxiv. 14. 1 Pet. iii. 11). But it has also been shown, that Unity in error is not true Unity, but is rather to be called a Conspiracy against the God of Unity and Truth.

Doubtless there is Unity, when every thing in Nature is wrapped in the gloom of Night, and bound with the chains of Sleep. There is Unity, when the Earth is congealed by frost, and mantled in snow. There is Unity, when the human voice is still, the hand motionless, the breath suspended, and the frame locked in the grasp of Death. And doubtless there is Unity, when men surrender their Reason, and sacrifice their Liberty, and stifle their Conscience, and seal up Scripture, and deliver themselves captives to the Church of Rome. But this is not the Unity of vigilance and light; it is the Unity of sleep and darkness. It is not the Unity of warmth and life; it is the Unity of cold and death. It is not true Unity, for it is not UNITY in the TRUTH.

Therefore, since it has been proved by Appeals to Reason, Scripture, and Antiquity, that the Church of Rome has built *hay and stubble on the one foundation laid by Christ* (1 Cor. iii. 12): that she has added to the Catholic Faith many errors and corruptions which mar and vitiate it; and since, as the Holy Spirit teaches us in the Apocalypse, it is the duty of every Church, which has fallen into error, to *repent* (Rev. iii. 3); and since Jesus Christ Himself, our Great High Priest, *walks in the midst of the Golden Candlesticks* and says, that when a Church has *left her first love*, He will *remove her Candlestick out of its place, except she repent* (Rev. ii. 5), and *strengthen the things which remain, that are ready to die* (Rev. iii. 2); and since the corruptions of one Church afford no palliation or excuse for those of another, for, as the Prophet says, *though Israel play the Harlot, let not Judah sin* (Hos. iv. 15); and, as Christ Himself teaches, though the Church of Sardis be *dead* (Rev. iii. 1), and Laodicea be *neither hot nor cold* (Rev. iii. 15), yet their sister Ephesus must *remember whence she has fallen, and do her first works* (Rev. ii. 5), and Pergamos must *repent*, or He *will come quickly, and fight against her with the sword of his mouth* (Rev. ii. 16), therefore, it was justly concluded by the best English Divines, that no desire of Unity on our part, nor reluctance on the part of Rome to cast off her errors, could exempt England from the duty of Reformation; and if Rome, instead of *removing her corruptions*, refused to communicate with England, unless England consented to communicate with Rome in those corruptions, then no love of Unity could justify England in complying with this requisition of Rome; for Unity in error is not Christian Unity; but, by imposing the necessity of erring as a term of Union, Rome became guilty of a breach of Unity, and the sin of Schism lies at her door.

This has been clearly demonstrated by our best English Divines; especially by *Richard Hooker*, *Bishop Andrewes*, and *Archbishop Bramhall*; and a careful study of that proof is requisite for all those whose duty it is to teach others.

But there are many persons who have not the opportunity

of perusing their works; and they who have, will not forget that those works are the works of *men*.

Therefore, God be thanked that there is *another* work on this subject; a Work *not* dictated by *man*, but by the Holy Spirit of God; a Work, accessible to all,—the APOCALYPSE.

The Holy Spirit, Who foresees all things, and is the Ever-blessed Teacher, Guide, and COMFORTER of the Church, was graciously pleased to provide a heavenly antidote for dangerous, wide-spread, and long-enduring evils, by dictating the APOCALYPSE to St. John nearly 1800 years ago. He foresaw that the Church of Rome would fall away from the truth, and would adulterate it by many "gross and grievous abominations" (to use the words of *Hooker*), and that she would anathematize all who would not communicate with her, and denounce them as cut off from the body of Christ, and from hope of everlasting salvation. The Holy Spirit foresaw, that she would exercise a wide and dominant sway for many generations, by boldly iterated assertions of Unity, Antiquity, Sanctity, and Universality. He foresaw also, that these pretensions would be supported by the civil sword of many Governments, among which the Roman Empire would be divided at its dissolution; and that Rome would thus be enabled to display herself to the world in an august attitude of Imperial power, and with the dazzling splendour of temporal felicity. He foresaw also, that the Church of Rome would captivate the Imaginations of men by the fascinations of Art allied with Religion; and would ravish their senses, and rivet their admiration, by gaudy colours, and stately pomp, and prodigal magnificence. He foresaw, that she would beguile their credulity by Miracles and Mysteries, Apparitions and Dreams, Trances and Ecstasies, and would appeal to such evidence in support of her strange doctrines. He foresaw, likewise, that she would enslave men, and much more women, by practising on their affections, and by accommodating herself, with dexterous pliancy, to their weaknesses, relieving them from the burden of thought, and from the perplexity of doubt, by proffering to them the aid of Infallibility; soothing the sorrows of the mourner by dispensing pardon and promising peace to the departed; removing the load of guilt from the oppressed conscience by the ministries of the Confessional, and by nicely-poised compensations for sin; and that she would flourish for many centuries in proud and prosperous impunity, before her *sins would cleave to heaven, and come in remembrance before God* (Rev. xvi. 19; xviii. 5). He foresaw, that many generations of men would thus be tempted to fall from the faith, and become victims of error; and that they who clung to the truth would be exposed to cozening flatteries, and fierce assaults, and savage tortures from her.

He foresaw these things, and wrote the Apocalypse.

In this Divine Book, the Spirit of God has portrayed the Church of Rome, such as none but He could have foreseen she would become, and such as, alas! she *has* become. He has thus broken her magic spell; He has taken the wand of enchantment from her hand; He has lifted the mask from her face; and with His Divine Hand He has written her true character in large letters, and has planted her title on her forehead, to be seen and read by all,—"MYSTERY, BABYLON THE GREAT, THE MOTHER OF THE ABOMINATIONS OF THE EARTH." (Rev. xvii. 5.)

Thus the Almighty and All-wise God Himself has vouchsafed to be the Arbiter between Babylon and Sion, between the Harlot and the Bride, between Rome and the Church. And therefore, with the Apocalypse in our hands, we need not fear the anathemas which Rome hurls against us. The Thunders of the Roman Pontiff are not so powerful and dreadful as the Thunders of St. John, the Divine Boanerges of Patmos, which are winged by the Spirit of God.

We see also in the Apocalypse a strong appeal to Charity. Christian Love longs, above all things, for the salvation of souls. It prays and labours that they who are now enthralled by Babylon may escape God's judgments, and may be saved from the fearful woes which are denounced by God upon her (xiv. 10, 11; xix. 20). Greatly, therefore, is it to be desired, that these prophecies of the divine Apocalypse were duly pondered by all members of the Church of Rome. May God in His infinite mercy grant that the words of St. John, who was miraculously rescued from the fiery furnace at Rome (*Tertullian*, de Præscr. Hæret. c. 36), to behold and describe these Visions, may have power, by God's grace, to *pluck them as brands from the fire* (Zech. iii. 2).

a ch. 7. 10.
& 12. 10.

b Deut. 32. 43.
ch. 15. 3. & 16. 7.
& 18. 20.

c Isa. 34. 10.
ch. 14. 11.
& 18. 18.

d ch. 4. 4, 6.

e ch. 11. 15, 17.
& 12. 10.

f Matt. 22. 2.
& 25. 10.
Luke 14. 16.

g Ps. 45. 14, 15.
Ezek. 16. 10.

h Matt. 22. 2.
Luke 14. 16.
ch. 21. 5.

i Acts 10. 26.
& 14. 4.
I John 5. 10.
ch. 12. 17.
& 22. 8.

XIX. ¹ ^a Μετὰ ταῦτα ἤκουσα ὡς φωνὴν ὄχλου πολλοῦ μεγάλῃν ἐν τῷ οὐρανῷ λεγόντων, Ἀλληλούϊα, ἡ σωτηρία καὶ ἡ δόξα καὶ ἡ δύναμις τοῦ Θεοῦ ἡμῶν, ² ^b ὅτι ἀληθινὰ καὶ δίκαιαι αἱ κρίσεις αὐτοῦ, ὅτι ἔκρινε τὴν πόρνην τὴν μεγάλην, ἣτις ἔφθειρε τὴν γῆν ἐν τῇ πορνείᾳ αὐτῆς, καὶ ἐξεδίκησε τὸ αἷμα τῶν δούλων αὐτοῦ ἐκ χειρὸς αὐτῆς. ³ ^c καὶ δεύτερον εἶρηκαν, Ἀλληλούϊα· καὶ ὁ καπνὸς αὐτῆς ἀναβαίνει εἰς τοὺς αἰῶνας τῶν αἰώνων.

⁴ ^d Καὶ ἔπεσαν οἱ πρεσβύτεροι οἱ εἴκοσι τέσσαρες, καὶ τὰ τέσσαρα ζῶα, καὶ προσεκύνησαν τῷ Θεῷ τῷ καθημένῳ ἐπὶ τῷ θρόνῳ λέγοντες, Ἀμήν, Ἀλληλούϊα.

⁵ Καὶ φωνὴ ἀπὸ τοῦ θρόνου ἐξῆλθε λέγουσα, Αἰνεῖτε τῷ Θεῷ ἡμῶν, πάντες οἱ δούλοι αὐτοῦ, καὶ οἱ φοβούμενοι αὐτὸν, οἱ μικροὶ καὶ οἱ μεγάλοι.

⁶ ^e Καὶ ἤκουσα ὡς φωνὴν ὄχλου πολλοῦ, καὶ ὡς φωνὴν ὑδάτων πολλῶν, καὶ ὡς φωνὴν βροντῶν ἰσχυρῶν, λεγόντων, Ἀλληλούϊα, ὅτι ἐβασίλευσε Κύριος ὁ Θεὸς ἡμῶν ὁ παντοκράτωρ. ⁷ ^f χαίρωμεν καὶ ἀγαλλιώμεθα, καὶ δώμεν τὴν δόξαν αὐτῷ, ὅτι ἦλθεν ὁ γάμος τοῦ Ἀρνίου, καὶ ἡ γυνὴ αὐτοῦ ἡτοίμασεν ἑαυτήν.

⁸ ^g Καὶ ἐδόθη αὐτῇ ἵνα περιβάλῃται βύσσινον καθαρὸν καὶ λαμπρόν· τὸ γὰρ βύσσινον τὰ δικαιώματά ἐστι τῶν ἁγίων.

⁹ ^h Καὶ λέγει μοι, Γράψον· Μακάριοι οἱ εἰς τὸ δεῖπνον τοῦ γάμου τοῦ Ἀρνίου κεκλημένοι. Καὶ λέγει μοι, Οὗτοι οἱ λόγοι οἱ ἀληθινοὶ εἰσι τοῦ Θεοῦ. ¹⁰ ⁱ Καὶ ἔπεσα ἔμπροσθεν τῶν ποδῶν αὐτοῦ προσκυνῆσαι αὐτῷ· καὶ λέγει μοι, Ὅρα μὴ

Especially too, as years pass on, and as the judgments reserved for Rome draw nearer and nearer, and as, it may be, in the events of our own days we feel the tremblings of the earthquake which will engulf her, and behold the flashings forth of the fire which will consume her, Christian Love will put on Angels' wings, and hasten with a Seraph's step; and, like the heavenly Messengers despatched by God to Lot in Sodom, will lay hold on the hands of those who linger, and will urge them forth from the door, and will chide their delay, and will exclaim,—*Arise! what dost thou here? Take all that thou hast, lest thou be consumed in the iniquity of this city*" (Gen. xix. 12—16).

Some there are who formerly joined with us in the same prayers; knelt before the same altars, and walked with us side by side in the courts of our own Jerusalem; who have been carried away captive—alas! willingly captive—to Babylon.

What shall we say of them? It may be that we might have prevented their fall, if we had exhorted them to hear *what the Spirit saith* by the mouth of St. John. Therefore, let us implore them to listen—not to us, but—to our Everlasting Saviour, King, and Judge, speaking in the Apocalypse. Let us point to the cup of wrath in God's right hand, ready to be poured out upon Babylon. Let us say, in the words of the Prophet,—*Arise ye and depart, for this is not your rest; because it is polluted, it shall destroy you, even with a sore destruction*" (Micah ii. 10).

SONG OF VICTORY after the FALL of the Mystical BABYLON.

CH. XIX. 1. ἀλληλούϊα] πᾶσι (praise ye the Lord), one of the Hebrew words in the Apocalypse proving that whatever appertained to the devotion and glory of the Ancient People of God, is now become the privilege of the Christian Church. See above, Introduction, p. 149; vii. 4—13.

2. ἐξεδίκησε τὸ αἷμα τ. δ. α. ἐκ χειρὸς αὐτῆς] He avenged the blood of His servants out of her hand. On this use of ἐκ see vi. 10, and above, xviii. 20, and compare 2 Kings ix. 7, ἐκδικήσεις τὰ αἷματα τῶν δούλων μου ἐκ χειρὸς Ἰεσαβὲλ, and Ps. lxxviii. 11.

3. καὶ ὁ καπνὸς αὐτῆς] and her smoke ascendeth for ever and ever. Another proof that the destruction of the Mystical Babylon will be final, and that therefore Babylon cannot be Heathen Rome. See above, xviii. 21, and preliminary note to chapter xvii.

4. καὶ ἔπεσαν] and the Twenty-four Elders, and the Four Living Creatures fell down and worshipped God Who sitteth on the throne, saying Amen, Hallelujah. The voice of the Two Testaments (see above, iv. 4—8) will be lifted up in praise to God for the judgments executed by Him on the Harlot City, which has corrupted the Faith delivered to the Church in Holy Scripture, and has done wrong to Holy Scripture by placing her unwritten Traditions on a par with it, and by exalting the Apocrypha

to a level with the Canonical Books, and by withholding the Scriptures from the people, and by elevating her own Latin Version to a position of not less, even if not greater, authority, than the inspired Originals themselves. Cp. above, xviii. 20.

5. αἰνεῖτε τῷ Θεῷ] give ye praise to God. On the dative see Winer, § 31, pp. 187, 188.

6. ὅτι ἐβασίλευσε K. ὁ Θεός] because God the Omnipotent reigned, i. e. showed Himself to be King, by subduing His Enemies. See above, xi. 17.

6, 7.] The MARRIAGE FEAST of the LAMB and of the BRIDE. Ὁ Γάμος is the Marriage Feast. See John ii. 1—3.

The destruction of the faithless Harlot having been described, now follows the Vision of the bliss and glory of the faithful Woman, the Church, that had been persecuted by the Dragon, who gave his power to the Beast on which the Harlot sat (xii. 1—17; xiii. 2, 4; xvii. 3). The faithful Woman is now revealed as the BRIDE.

8. καὶ ἐδόθη αὐτῇ] And it was given to her. Justification is a free gift. Cp. Rom. v. 20, 21.

—τὸ γὰρ βύσσινον] for the fine linen is the righteousness of the Saints. The word δικαιώμα declares the state of men made righteous and declared righteous by God (see on Rom. v. 18); and this condition is due to their baptismal incorporation in Christ, Who is "Jehovah Justitia nostra," the Lord our Righteousness (see on 1 Cor. i. 30. Rom. iii. 24, 26; v. 21), and to the sanctifying influences of the Holy Ghost, received by those who abide as living and healthful members in His body, and as fruitful branches in Him Who is the true Vine (John xv. 1—4).

The plural δικαιώματα intimates the large freeness of the righteousness bestowed by the infinite merits of Christ's obedience and sufferings, for man's justification; and the copious abundance of the outpouring of the graces of the Holy Spirit procured thereby for men.

This use of the plural, the "pluralis excellentiæ et majestatis" adopted from the Hebrew (cp. Isa. lxiv. 6. Ezek. xxxiii. 13. Dan. ix. 18, and Schroeder, Inst. Hebr. Reg. 100), is frequent in the Apocalypse. Cp. σάρκας, xvii. 16; xix. 18, 21, αἰῶνες, i. 6, 18, and in nine other places. In xviii. 24 B has αἷματα.

9. καὶ λέγει μοι, Γράψον] and he saith to me, Write, blessed are they that have been called to the Marriage Feast of the Lamb. Compare the declaration above, xiv. 13, Blessed are the dead that die in the Lord. The state of blessedness here described is consequent on that other state of blessedness which had been announced there. That was the bliss of Paradise; this is the bliss of Heaven.

WARNING against CREATURE-WORSHIP.

10. ἔπεσα—προσκυνῆσαι] I fell down to worship him, but he saith to me, See thou do it not. See below, xxii. 8, 9, and above on Acts x. 25, 26. Matt. iv. 10.

Here is a strong contrast to the claim made by the Anti-

σύνδουλός σου εἰμὶ, καὶ τῶν ἀδελφῶν σου τῶν ἔχόντων τὴν μαρτυρίαν Ἰησοῦ·
τῷ Θεῷ προσκύνησον· ἡ γὰρ μαρτυρία Ἰησοῦ ἐστὶ τὸ πνεῦμα τῆς προφητείας.

¹¹ ^k Καὶ εἶδον τὸν οὐρανὸν ἀνεωγμένον, καὶ ἰδοὺ ἵππος λευκός, καὶ ὁ καθ- ^{k ch 3. 14.}
ήμενος ἐπ' αὐτὸν καλούμενος Πιστὸς καὶ Ἀληθινός, καὶ ἐν δικαιοσύνῃ κρίνει καὶ ^{& 6. 2.}
πολεμεῖ· ¹² ¹ οἱ δὲ ὀφθαλμοὶ αὐτοῦ ὡς φλόξ πυρός, καὶ ἐπὶ τὴν κεφαλὴν αὐτοῦ ^{1 ch. 1. 14.}
διαδήματα πολλά· ἔχων ὄνομα γεγραμμένον ὃ οὐδεὶς οἶδεν εἰ μὴ αὐτός· ¹³ ^m καὶ ^{& 2. 18.}
περιβεβλημένος ἱμάτιον βεβαμμένον αἵματι καὶ κέκληται τὸ ὄνομα ^{m Isa. 63. 2, 3.}
αὐτοῦ, Ὁ ΛΟΓΟΣ ΤΟΥ ΘΕΟΥ. ¹⁴ ⁿ Καὶ τὰ στρατεύματα τὰ ἐν τῷ οὐρανῷ ^{John 1. 1.}
ἠκολούθει αὐτῷ ἐφ' ἵπποις λευκοῖς, ἐνδεδυμένοι βύσσινον λευκὸν καθαρόν. ^{1 John 1. 1.}
¹⁵ ^o Καὶ ἐκ τοῦ στόματος αὐτοῦ ἐκπορεύεται ῥομφαία ὀξεῖα, ἵνα ἐν αὐτῇ πατάξῃ ^{n Matt. 28. 3.}
τὰ ἔθνη· καὶ αὐτὸς ποιμανεῖ αὐτοὺς ἐν ῥάβδῳ σιδηρᾷ· καὶ αὐτὸς πατεῖ ^{ch. 4. 4. & 7. 9.}
τὴν ληνὸν τοῦ οἴνου τοῦ θυμοῦ καὶ τῆς ὀργῆς τοῦ Θεοῦ τοῦ παντοκράτορος· ^{o Ps. 2. 9.}
^{& 76. 13.}
^{Isa. 11. 4. & 63. 3.}
^{2 Thess. 2. 8.}
^{ch. 2. 16, 27.}
^{& 12. 5.}
^{& 14. 19, 20.}
^{& ver. 21.}

christian Power above described, exacting adoration from all. See above on xiii. 4. 8. 12. 15.

The action of paying homage to superiors is *not* condemned here; but only such an action of homage as might be interpreted to be one of worship paid to them *independently* of God, or in *opposition* to God, under circumstances when worship ought to be directed to God.

It is said here, that he fell down before the feet of the Angel *in order to worship him*; and it is said, in xxii. 8, that he “fell down *in order to worship before the feet of the Angel*.” Observe the difference of those two acts; but *both* are condemned. We are not to imagine that the Apostle and Evangelist, St. John, designed to pay to the Angel *such honour* as he must have known to be due to God alone; but yet he is reproved by the Angel. “See thou do it not.” Therefore these two passages of Scripture, and that in Acts x. 25, 26, contain a warning, not only against all such acts of worship as are directed by the *worshipper himself* to any Being beside God, but also against such acts of adoration as might be *construed by others* into acts paid to some other Being besides Him.

Here is a refutation of those who seek to exculpate the *Image-worship* of the Church of Rome, on the plea that she does not teach that Images are to be worshipped with the same adoration as is due to God. What her *doctrine* may be on this matter, is of little consequence. Her *practice* leads away her people from the worship of God, the only true Object of adoration, to the worship of the creature.

This warning is aptly introduced here, inasmuch as Creature-worship is one of the sins which causes the Fall of Babylon just described.

— σύνδουλός σου] *I am a fellow-servant with thee and with those who hold fast* (see xii. 17) *the witness of Jesus*, the testimony which *He* witnessed, “Who is the True and Faithful Witness” (i. 5; iii. 14. See 1 Tim. vi. 13), and the testimony which *He* has delivered to be witnessed by all men concerning Himself. See i. 2. 9; xii. 17; xx. 4. 2 Tim. i. 8. 1 John v. 10.

— τῷ Θεῷ προσκύνησον] *Worship thou God, for the witness of Jesus is the spirit of Prophecy*. Do not worship me, for I am a fellow-servant with thee and with those who hold fast the witness of *Jesus*, the Son of God, Whom *all the Angels* worship (Heb. i. 6). *Worship thou God*. Let thy worship be paid to the Son Co-equal with the Father, and to the Father in Him, as the worship in heaven is paid, as thou hast seen (see above, v. 13); *for the witness of Jesus is the spirit of Prophecy*. This saying is to be understood both subjectively and objectively. The witness which God gives of *Jesus*, and the witness which Angels and men must give of Him, *is the spirit of Prophecy*; it animates the whole; to Him give all the Prophets witness (Acts x. 43); to Him the Holy Spirit bears witness, Who speaks in them (2 Pet. i. 21. 1 John v. 6). The Spirit also, Who speaks in the Prophets, is the Spirit of *Jesus Christ*: see on 1 Pet. i. 11. He is the Divine Logos, the Author of all Prophecy. The Apocalypse is from Him; see above, i. 1; and xxii. 16. This saying, it will be seen, aptly illustrates the next Vision.

The ARMY of CHRIST, riding, as KING of KINGS, on the White Horse.

11—16. καὶ εἶδον τὸν οὐρανὸν ἀνεωγμένον] *And I saw heaven opened, and behold a White Horse; and He that sitteth upon him called Faithful and True, and in righteousness He doth judge and make war*. His eyes as a flame of fire, and on His head many crowns: and He hath a name written, which no man knoweth but He Himself. And clothed with a vesture dipped in blood: and His name is called The WORD of GOD. And

the armies in heaven were following Him upon white horses, clothed in fine linen, white and clean. And out of His mouth goeth forth a sharp two-edged sword, that with it He should smite the Nations: and He shall rule them with a rod of iron: and He treadeth the winepress of the fierceness and wrath of God Omnipotent. And He hath on His vesture and on His thigh a Name written, KING OF KINGS, AND LORD OF LORDS.

Christ, the Rider on the *White Horse*, who had been revealed in the First Seal, at the beginning of the Christian era, *going forth conquering and to conquer* (see above, vi. 2, and Ps. xlv. 3—7), is now seen at the end. He is the Alpha and Omega of the Apocalypse (i. 8; xxi. 6; xxii. 13). *The witness of Jesus is the spirit of Prophecy*, v. 10.

This passage, vv. 11—16, is quoted by *S. Irenæus* (iv. 20. 11, p. 632, Stieren; p. 336, Grabe), who refers to this book, as written by “John, the Disciple of the Lord.” See above, *Introduction*, p. 159.

It is also cited in part (vv. 11—13) by the Scholar of *Irenæus*, *S. Hippolytus*, in Noët. § 15, p. 53, ed. Lagarde.

The old Latin Version of *Irenæus* (the original Greek is not preserved there) has on v. 13 *aspersum* for βεβαμμένον, and *S. Hippolytus* has ἐβραντισμένον, *sprinkled*, and he explains it as referring to Christ's own blood, by which the Incarnate Word cleansed the world.

12. διαδήματα πολλά] *many diadems; or, royal crowns*. In the First Seal Christ had been revealed as wearing a crown of *Victory* (στέφανος), for, He is ever *conquering*. Here He has *many diadems of royalty* (cp. xii. 3), for He is *King of Kings* (xvii. 14; xix. 16); and the *kingdom of the World* will become the *Kingdom of Christ* (xi. 15). Both the attributes of Christ, as the Everlasting Conqueror, and Universal King, are combined in the prophecy of David, Ps. xlv. 3—7, “The people shall be subdued unto Thee. Thy seat, O God, endureth for ever; the sceptre of Thy Kingdom is a right sceptre.”

— ὄνομα—ὃ οὐδεὶς οἶδεν] *a Name written which no one knoweth but Himself*; no man can comprehend its depth and height and breadth. Compare ii. 17, and Matt. xi. 27, and Judges xiii. 18.

13. ὁ Λόγος τοῦ Θεοῦ] *the WORD of GOD*. See on John i. 1, and on Tit. i. 3.

15. πατεῖ τὴν ληνόν] *He is treading the winepress of the wine of the fury of the wrath of God*. When He comes forth as the Rider on the *White Horse*, He is doing a work of God's retributive justice. When riding forth in His Majesty, and trampling His enemies beneath the feet of His War-horse and of those who follow Him, He is *treading the winepress of the wine of the fury of the wrath of God*. Hence we may explain the combination of the *two metaphors* in xiv. 19, 20, where it is said that the “*winepress* (of the wrath of God) was trodden without the city; and the blood of the *winepress* came up to the *bridles* of the *Horses*.” see note there. On the difference between θυμός and ὀργή, see Rom. ii. 8.

INVITATION to the fowls of heaven to come and feast on the carcasses of God's enemies, lying on the battle-field of His Victory.

17.] *And I saw an Angel standing in the sun; and he cried with a loud voice, saying to all the fowls that fly in mid-heaven, Come and gather yourselves together unto the great supper of God, that ye may eat the flesh of kings, and the flesh of captains, and the flesh of mighty men, and the flesh of horses, and of them that sit on them, and the flesh of all, both free and bond, both small and great.*

p 1 Tim. 6. 15.
ch. 17. 14.

q Jer. 12. 9.
Ezek. 39. 17.

r Deut. 13. 1.
Dan. 7. 11.
Matt. 24. 24.
ch. 13. 12, &c.
& 14. 10. & 16. 14.
& 20. 10.

a ch. 1. 18

¹⁶ p καὶ ἔχει ἐπὶ τὸ ἱμάτιον καὶ ἐπὶ τὸν μηρὸν αὐτοῦ ὄνομα γεγραμμένον, ΒΑΣΙΛΕΥΣ ΒΑΣΙΛΕΩΝ ΚΑΙ ΚΥΡΙΟΣ ΚΥΡΙΩΝ.

¹⁷ q Καὶ εἶδον ἓνα ἄγγελον ἐστῶτα ἐν τῷ ἡλίῳ· καὶ ἔκραξε φωνῇ μεγάλῃ λέγων πᾶσι τοῖς ὀρνέοις τοῖς πετομένοις ἐν μεσουρανήματι, Δεῦτε συνάχθητε εἰς τὸ δεῖπνον τὸ μέγα τοῦ Θεοῦ, ¹⁸ ἵνα φάγητε σάρκας βασιλέων, καὶ σάρκας χιλιάρχων, καὶ σάρκας ἰσχυρῶν, καὶ σάρκας ἵππων καὶ τῶν καθημένων ἐπ' αὐτῶν, καὶ σάρκας πάντων ἐλευθέρων τε καὶ δούλων, καὶ μικρῶν τε καὶ μεγάλων.

¹⁹ Καὶ εἶδον τὸ θηρίον, καὶ τοὺς βασιλεῖς τῆς γῆς, καὶ τὰ στρατεύματα αὐτῶν συνηγμένα ποιῆσαι τὸν πόλεμον μετὰ τοῦ καθημένου ἐπὶ τοῦ ἵππου καὶ μετὰ τοῦ στρατεύματος αὐτοῦ.

²⁰ r Καὶ ἐπιάσθη τὸ θηρίον, καὶ ὁ μετ' αὐτοῦ ψευδοπροφήτης, ὁ ποιήσας τὰ σημεῖα ἐνώπιον αὐτοῦ, ἐν οἷς ἐπλάνησε τοὺς λαβόντας τὸ χάραγμα τοῦ θηρίου, καὶ τοὺς προσκυνοῦντας τῇ εἰκόνι αὐτοῦ· ζῶντες ἐβλήθησαν οἱ δύο εἰς τὴν λίμνην τοῦ πυρὸς τὴν καιομένην ἐν θείῳ.

²¹ Καὶ οἱ λοιποὶ ἀπεκτάνθησαν ἐν τῇ ῥομφαίᾳ τοῦ καθημένου ἐπὶ τοῦ ἵππου, τῇ ἐξελθούσῃ ἐκ τοῦ στόματος αὐτοῦ· καὶ πάντα τὰ ὄρνεα ἐχορτάσθησαν ἐκ τῶν σαρκῶν αὐτῶν.

XX. ¹ a Καὶ εἶδον ἄγγελον καταβαίνοντα ἐκ τοῦ οὐρανοῦ ἔχοντα τὴν κλεῖν

17. εἰς τὸ δεῖπνον τὸ μέγα τοῦ Θεοῦ] *to the great supper of God.* So A, B.—Elz. has τοῦ μεγάλου for τὸ μέγα τοῦ. Christ is He Who is here designated as God. See Dr. Waterland, Moyer Lectures, vi. vol. ii. p. 129, who, adopting the reading, “of the great God,” says, “If it be considered that our blessed Saviour is styled *King of kings, and Lord of lords* (v. 16), a very little before the mention of the supper of the great God, and that the Apostle goes on speaking of Christ described as sitting on the Horse (v. 19; cp. 11), and as slaying those whose flesh was to be given to the fowls (v. 21), that is, as providing that very supper which is called (v. 17) *the supper of the great God*, because the great God provides or makes it: if we lay these things together, we shall be inclined to think that this Text of the Revelation is another evidence of the Son's being styled ‘the great God:’ and so helps to confirm our interpretation of the text in Titus ii. 13.”

The supper here described is that of a feast after a sacrifice. God is glorified in, and over, His enemies, who rebel against Him. See Rom. ix. 17. Religious Kings and Nations which offer themselves a willing sacrifice to God for His honour and service, are blessed, for they are called to the Marriage Supper of the Lamb (v. 9). But, if Kings and Nations do not honour Christ, if they do not obey Christ, but rebel against Him, then they will be like slain carcasses, on which the fowls of the air will feast, as in a battle-field. They will be slain as sacrifices to His wrath and indignation.

Every one must be a sacrifice, either willingly or unwillingly. Every one must offer himself in worship and service to God's glory, or he will be immolated, a victim to God's righteous retribution. Cp. on Mark ix. 49.

This imagery is derived from Hebrew Prophecy. See Isa. xxxiv. 6, “The Lord hath a sacrifice in Bozrah;” and Jer. xlv. 10, “The Lord hath a sacrifice in the north-country, by the river Euphrates;” and Ezek. xxxix. 17, 18, “Speak unto every feathered fowl . . . Gather yourselves unto My sacrifice . . . that ye may eat flesh and drink blood; ye shall eat the flesh of the mighty, and drink the blood of the Princes of the earth.” Zeph. i. 7, “The Lord hath prepared a sacrifice, He hath bidden His guests.” Cp. Rom. ix. 17, and 2 Cor. ii. 14–16.

18. σάρκας] *flesh.* Observe the word repeated five times and in the plural, to denote the completeness and universality of God's retribution, and the destruction of His foes. See above, v. 8.

CHRIST'S Victory over the BEAST and the FALSE PROPHET, and their Associates.

19–21. καὶ εἶδον τὸ θηρίον] *And I saw the Beast, and the Kings of the Earth, and their armies gathered together to make war against Him that sitteth on the Horse and against His army.*

And the Beast was seized, and his Ally the false Prophet (ὁ μετ' αὐτοῦ ψευδοπροφήτης, his False Prophet that was with

him; so B and other authorities, and Tisch.) that wrought miracles before him, with which he deceived them that had received the mark of the Beast, and them that worshipped his image. These both were cast alive into the lake of fire that burneth with brimstone. And the remnant were slain with the sword of him that sitteth upon the horse, which (sword) went forth out of his mouth: and all the fowls were filled with their flesh.

Here is an ampler description of the Battle pre-announced in the Sixth Vial (xvi. 13–16), when preparations were made for it. Cp. xvii. 13, 14. The Battle itself does not take place till now. Hence the article τὸν πόλεμον, the battle of ARMAGEDDON, there mentioned by anticipation. See xvi. 16.

Thus we are now brought again to the eve of the end.

Observe the sequence of events.

The Mystical Babylon is now fallen (xviii. 2; xix. 2).

After her fall, the Beast and False Prophet still survive, and they muster their forces against Christ, and rise up against Him in a great rebellion, called the conflict of ARMAGEDDON, or HARMAGEDON. See xvi. 16. They are there routed by Christ, and His army; and the Beast and False Prophet are seized and cast into the Lake of Fire (xix. 20).

And now there remains one great Enemy, the Dragon, the old Serpent, who is the Devil and Satan, who had formerly used the Beast as his agent (xiii. 2), but now, being deprived of his instrumentality, will break forth in a spirit of reckless desperation, and rage with open fury and bold blasphemy against Christ and the Church.

This will be the final struggle; which is now to be described.

But, before this description, the Prophecy re-ascends once more to the first age of Christianity, by a process of recapitulation characteristic of the Apocalypse, and indeed of all sacred Prophecy, especially of the prophecies of Daniel and Zechariah, which are the groundwork of those of the Apocalypse; and St. John now proceeds to give a summary view of what had been done by Christ for His people ever since the Incarnation.

Thus the gracious purposes of His FIRST ADVENT are harmoniously and beautifully connected and blended together with the glorious triumphs of His SECOND ADVENT, and with the everlasting joys of the Heavenly Jerusalem.

CH. XX.] Summary and Final RECAPITULATION.

Prophetic view of Christ's dealings with His faithful servants from His FIRST ADVENT, even to the last age of the World.

1–7. καὶ εἶδον] *And I saw an Angel coming down from heaven, having the key of the bottomless pit (or abyss) and a great chain upon his hand. And He laid hold on the Dragon, that old Serpent, which is the Devil, and Satan, and He bound him a thousand years, and He cast him into the bottomless pit (or abyss) and shut him up, and set a seal upon him, in order that*

τῆς ἀβύσσου, καὶ ἄλυσιν μεγάλην ἐπὶ τὴν χεῖρα αὐτοῦ· ^{2 b} καὶ ἐκράτησε τὸν ^{b 2 Pet. 2. 4.}
δράκοντα, τὸν ὄφιν τὸν ἀρχαῖον, ὅς ἐστι Διάβολος καὶ ὁ Σατανᾶς, καὶ ἔδησεν ^{ch. 12. 9.}

he might not deceive the nations any more, till the thousand years shall have been fulfilled; after that he must be loosed a little season.

And I saw thrones, and some sat upon them, and judgment was given unto them: and the souls of them that had been beheaded for the witness of Jesus, and for the Word of God, and of them who worshipped not the Beast, nor his image, nor received his mark upon their forehead, and upon their hand; and they lived and reigned with Christ a thousand years.

But the rest of the dead lived not until the thousand years should have been finished.

This is the First Resurrection.

Blessed and holy is he that hath part in the First Resurrection: over these the Second Death hath no power, but they shall be priests of God and of Christ, and they will reign with him a thousand years.

In order to understand the scope of this Vision, some previous considerations are requisite;

In the first Seal, St. John had seen a Vision of Christ coming forth at His First Advent, conquering, and in order that he might conquer (vi. 2).

But in the following Seals, it had been revealed that Christ would have many powerful enemies to encounter: and that the servants of Christ would have many severe sufferings to endure, even to the end of the World (vii. 14).

The Vision also of the Trumpets has displayed the working of many worldly Powers rebelling against Christ, and persecuting His servants (viii. 7; ix. 21).

Further, the Little Roll introduced a prophecy concerning a spiritual form of Antichristianism, corrupting the true Faith, and waging war with the saints of God, chaps. x.—xvii.

It might therefore be objected, that Christ had not conquered; that on the contrary He had been overcome by the Evil One, and had been unable to defend His Church.

In order to remove this objection, and to justify God's ways to man, St. John re-ascends in the present Vision to the first age of the Gospel. He reverts to the Incarnation and Passion of Christ, and reveals what He did at His First Advent, and would ever continue to do.

He beholds an Angel coming down from out of heaven, who holds the key of the bottomless pit, or abyss. This Angel is CHRIST. He, and He alone, holds the key of the abyss. That key may be sometimes given to others (see ix. 1), but Christ alone holds it as His own (see i. 18). The Angel binds Satan: Christ, and He only, can bind the strong man, and cast him into the abyss.

On such grounds as these, almost all the ancient Expositors of the Apocalypse were agreed, that this Vision is a Recapitulation, and is not a continuation of the Visions which had preceded in the nineteenth chapter.

The Angel here is Christ. This is generally allowed. But Christ in the preceding chapter was revealed as the Word of God, riding on the White Horse, at the head of the Armies of Heaven (xix. 11—21). The scene has been changed. Christ is here called an Angel. He comes as a Messenger from Heaven. He comes down on a gracious embassy. He is displayed in a new character, binding Satan. Therefore this Vision in the twentieth chapter is not a continuation of that in the nineteenth.

Christ bound Satan, at His First Advent from heaven. Christ was the Woman's promised Seed, who bruised the Serpent's head (Gen. iii. 15). He is the Stronger One, as He Himself says, who entered into the strong man's house and bound him (Matt. xii. 29). He overcame Satan by dying on the Cross, and by raising Himself, and took from him his armour wherein he trusted, and spoiled his goods (Luke xi. 22). He was manifested at His Incarnation for this purpose, "that He might destroy the works of the Devil" (1 John iii. 18). He gave authority over Devils to His Apostles and His Disciples (Matt. x. 7. Mark iii. 15). He said, "Behold, I give you power to tread on serpents and scorpions, and over all the power of the Enemy" (Luke x. 19).

Therefore the Apostles declare to all Christians, that He will "bruise Satan under their feet shortly" (Rom. xvi. 20), and that even the weakest among them is by Christ's power stronger than Satan, and can "quench all the fiery darts of the Evil One" (Eph. vi. 16). "Resist the Devil," they say, "and he will flee from you" (James iv. 7).

Such was Christ's act and deed at His First Advent.

Having such testimonies of Holy Scripture to that effect, we cannot admit, with some, that the Devil has not now been bound,
VOL. II.—PART IV.

although we see that many persons are taken captive by him. Cp. 2 Tim. ii. 26. 1 Pet. v. 8.

Holy Scripture represents Satan as vanquished and bound by Christ. Christ has done this work for the benefit of all Christians. Nothing can harm those who are followers of that which is good (1 Pet. iii. 13). The Evil One toucheth them not (1 John v. 18). No one can pluck them out of Christ's hand (John x. 28). Satan is vanquished and is bound, for all persons who do not recklessly loose him by their sins, and arm him against themselves.

The present prevalence of evil, and the exercise of Satan's power in this world, affords therefore no objection to this interpretation of this passage. This Interpretation was adopted by ancient Expositors, after careful examination of the meaning of this chapter; and it was received by the universal consent of the Christian Church, both Eastern and Western, from the fifth to the fifteenth century.

Therefore we may safely conclude, that the binding of Satan, here mentioned by St. John, has been already effected by Christ; that it was effected by Him at His First Advent, by His Death, Resurrection, Ascension, and sending of the Holy Ghost from heaven, and by the Preaching of the Gospel of His Kingdom, and of the gracious tidings of Salvation to the World.

The commencement of the Thousand Years here mentioned, —whatever that period may signify,—is, therefore, to be dated from the First Coming of Christ.

St. John himself authorizes this interpretation by another similar phrase in the Apocalypse. He has said in the first Seal, that Christ went forth at His first Advent, "conquering, and in order that He might conquer" (ἵνα νικήσῃ), vi. 2. And he says here, that Christ "bound Satan, in order that he might not any more deceive the Nations" (ἵνα μὴ πλανήσῃ). Both phrases are alike. Both declare Christ's will and deed: though, alas! in too many cases His gracious purposes are frustrated by man's sin. It cannot rightly be alleged, that Christ has not bound Satan, because some unloose him against themselves. It might as well be argued, that Christ has not gone forth on the White Horse, in order to conquer Satan, because some allow themselves to be conquered by him.

Man's sin is not to be alleged in contravention to Christ's power and love. Christ has done His part. St. Paul says, that God by His mercy "saved us" (Titus iii. 5; cp. Rom. viii. 24. 30); and yet many destroy themselves. God does His part to save us, but He does not take away our free-will. We may still choose evil, and reject good. We may choose death, and reject life. We may choose the shame and misery of being slaves to Satan, and reject the perfect freedom of serving God.

2. ἔδησεν αὐτόν] He bound him a thousand years.

How (it has been objected) can this act of binding be past? A thousand years have now elapsed from the first Advent of Christ, and Satan was not loosed at their expiration.

To this it may be replied, that the numbers in the Apocalypse are to be understood figuratively. See note above on chap. xi. at end.

There is no instance in the Apocalypse where the number a thousand is to be understood literally.

This number—the cube of ten—represents a quality. It has a prophetic value and spiritual significance. It is generally combined with expressions significant of completeness. Thus the total number of the sealed are 144 thousand; 12 thousand from each of the 12 tribes (see above, vii. 4—9). The men slain by the earthquake in the sixth Trumpet are 7 thousand (xi. 13). The breadth of the heavenly city is 12 thousand furlongs (xxi. 16).

What, then, is the meaning of the term a Thousand Years?

Among the Jews the term three years and a half was a chronological expression significant of a time of suffering (see above on chap. xi. at the end). And the term a Thousand Years was a chronological expression which designated the Day of the Messiah, or the time of the dispensation of Christ. See the Rabbinical authorities in Wetstein, ii. p. 836. "Dies Messiae Mille Anni." The former of these chronological symbols—three years and a half—has been adopted in the Apocalypse, so also has the latter.

To Christianize Jewish language and ideas was one of the main purposes of the Apocalypse (see above, Introduction); and this phrase, "a thousand years," may have been employed to teach the Jews that their long-expected Messiah, the Prince, was now come: that "the Day" had now dawned which their ancient Prophets and Kings had desired to see. Luke x. 24. John viii. 56.

S. Augustine has examined this question with great diligence in his treatise de Civitate Dei, xx. 7—9, and his opinion is of
M M

c ch. 16. 14, 16.
& ver. 8.

αὐτὸν χίλια ἔτη, ³ καὶ ἔβαλεν αὐτὸν εἰς τὴν ἄβυσσον, καὶ ἔκλεισεν, καὶ ἐσφρά-
γισεν ἐπάνω αὐτοῦ, ἵνα μὴ πλανήσῃ τὰ ἔθνη ἕτι ἄχρι τελεσθῇ τὰ χίλια ἔτη·
μετὰ ταῦτα δεῖ αὐτὸν λυθῆναι μικρὸν χρόνον.

d Dan. 7. 9, 22, 27.
Matt. 19. 28.
Luke 22. 30.
Rom. 8. 17.
1 Cor. 6. 2, 3.
2 Tim. 2. 12.
ch. 3. 16.
& 5. 10.
& 6. 9-11.
& 13. 12, &c.

⁴ καὶ εἶδον θρόνους, καὶ ἐκάθισαν ἐπ' αὐτοὺς, καὶ κρίμα ἐδόθη αὐτοῖς· καὶ
τὰς ψυχὰς τῶν πεπελεκισμένων διὰ τὴν μαρτυρίαν Ἰησοῦ καὶ διὰ τὸν λόγον τοῦ
Θεοῦ, καὶ οἵτινες οὐ προσεκύνησαν τὸ θηρίον, οὐδὲ τὴν εἰκόνα αὐτοῦ, καὶ οὐκ
ἔλαβον τὸ χάραγμα ἐπὶ τὸ μέτωπον καὶ ἐπὶ τὴν χεῖρα αὐτῶν· καὶ ἔζησαν καὶ
ἐβασίλευσαν μετὰ τοῦ Χριστοῦ χίλια ἔτη.

more value, because he himself had been once inclined to adopt millenarian opinions, but afterwards saw cause to reject them (xx. 7).

He, and all the ancient Expositors of the Apocalypse after his age, were unanimously of opinion, that the thousand years during which Satan is bound by Christ, represent the whole time of the Gospel Dispensation from the First Advent of Christ until the time of the last Persecution, when Satan will be loosed, and will rage with impious fury against God and His Saints.

This opinion, which assigns a figurative meaning to the thousand years, is more entitled to respect, because it was held by Expositors who lived before the expiration of a literal period of a thousand years from the first coming of Christ; and therefore it cannot be said that this exposition was devised in order to meet any supposed difficulties arising from their exposition, which assigns the binding of Satan by Christ to the time of His first Advent.

3. ἐβαλεν αὐτόν] He cast him into the abyss. The abyss is not the lake of fire, into which Satan will not be cast till the end of the world (see on Matt. viii. 29; xxv. 41; and below, v. 10); but it is the present abode of evil spirits. It is the place into which they were sent by Christ after His Incarnation and Passion. See note above on Luke viii. 31, and Eph. ii. 2; and above, ix. 1.

— ἐσφράγισεν] He set a seal upon him, in order that he might no more deceive the nations. Elz. has πλανήσῃ here, and this reading is retained in the text, it being authorized by A, and many Cursive MSS., and so Lachmann. But it is observable that B, and very many Cursive MSS. (see Scrivener, p. 557, and the present Editor's Collection of Collations of MSS. of the Apocalypse) have ἵνα μὴ πλανῇ, in order that he may not deceive; and this latter reading has been received by Tischendorf, Tregelles, and Bloomf., and it confirms the interpretation now given of this Text. The Angel, who is Christ, bound Satan in order that he may not deceive the Nations at this present time—even when the Apocalypse was written. Whichever reading is adopted, this verse refutes the theory of Millenarians, who suppose that St. John is here describing a personal reign of Christ and His Saints upon earth for a thousand years in perfect holiness and bliss.

It cannot be imagined, that after such a blessed state of things, there would be a multitude of godless Nations, such as are here described, suddenly rising up in rebellion against Christ, "in the four quarters of the earth, Gog and Magog, in countless multitudes, like the sand of the sea." See v. 8.

Observe the striking contrast. Christ has done to Satan, for the whole time of the Gospel, what Satan did to Christ for three days. Satan, by the hands of his own agents, arrested Jesus, bound Him, cast Him into "the lowest pit" (Ps. lxxxviii. 5), set a seal upon His sepulchre, and set a watch over Him, in order that "the deceiver," as they called Him (Matt. xxvii. 63), might no more trouble them.

But Christ by His Death "overcame him that had the power of death, even the Devil" (Heb. ii. 14). He entered "the house of the strong man" (Matt. xii. 29), and bound him, and cast him into the abyss, and set a seal upon him, in order that he might no more deceive the Nations; and when He had raised Himself from the dead, He gave command to His Disciples to go into all the world, and baptize all Nations. Matt. xxviii. 19.

Observe also the contrast which follows;

4. εἶδον θρόνους] I saw thrones, and some sat (literally, took their seats) upon them, and judgment was given to them, and I saw the souls of them who had been beheaded (observe this remarkable word beheaded, πεπελεκισμένων) for the witness of Jesus, and for the Word of God, and of those who did not worship the Beast . . . and they lived and reigned with Christ a thousand years.

"I saw the souls"—he does not say that he saw the bodies. Here also, therefore, is another refutation of the millenarian interpretation, which assumes that the first Resurrection is future, and will be a Resurrection of the bodies of the Saints only. See below, p. 268.

St. John is here speaking of the first age of Christianity. We are brought back to that first age of the Gospel by the remarkable word πεπελεκισμένων, those who had been beheaded with an axe. The πέλεκυς, securis, or axe,—the fasces,—was the badge of Roman power. See Virgil, Æn. vi. 820. This word takes the reader back to the time of those who suffered as Martyrs by the hands of the Beast in its imperial form in heathen Rome, who executed judicial punishment by the πέλεκυς, or securis, which, as Wetstein justly observes, was a "supplicium Romanum." And from that time the reader is carried forward to those other Martyrs who suffered under the power of the Beast in its Papal form.

The Pagan and Papal Persecutors of these Martyrs had been seated on thrones executing judgment, and condemned them to death.

But let no one be deceived by such a spectacle as that. The Martyrs, whom they condemned and beheaded, are now glorified.

I saw thrones (says St. John), and they took their seats upon them, and judgment was given to them; that is, judicial authority and dignity was bestowed upon them; and I saw the souls of them that had been beheaded for the witness of Jesus, and they lived and reigned with Christ a thousand years.

"In the sight of the unwise they had seemed to die: but their hope was full of immortality" (Wis. iii. 4). As to their bodies they did indeed die; but St. John says, "I saw their souls," I was enabled to see what man could not see—their souls; I saw the state of their souls after death. I, who had seen those souls under the altar (see vi. 9), on which their blood had been poured out as a sacrifice, saw them again now; I saw that they lived. The deathday of the Martyrs was their birthday. Life on earth was to them like death, compared to that life which they now live, and which alone deserves to be called Life. For their Lord had said, He that findeth his life (ψυχὴν) shall lose it, and he that loseth his life (ψυχὴν) for My sake shall find it (Matt. x. 39), he shall generate it alive, ζωογονήσει (Luke xvii. 33), he shall preserve it unto eternal life, ζώην (John xii. 25. See above, xii. 11).

Their Persecutors therefore, who sate on thrones and executed judgment in this world, and condemned the Martyrs to death, did, in fact, send them forth from death into life: and they sent them upward to sit on thrones with Christ, and to pronounce judgment on the World which condemned them; see note on 1 Cor. vi. 2, 3. And therefore it is said of the saints, "they shall judge the Nations, and have dominion over the people, and their Lord shall reign for ever" (Wis. iii. 8).

One of the noble army of Martyrs, a disciple of St. John, S. Ignatius, Bishop of Antioch, longing for the death to which he had been condemned, thus speaks to the Christians of Rome, where he was about to suffer martyrdom, "My birthday is now at hand; suffer me to live, do not desire me to die, permit me to be an imitator of the passion of my God. Suffer me to see the pure light of day:" Ignatius ad Rom. c. 6 (see above on John xvi. 21. Acts ii. 24). And St. Paul said, "I long to depart and to be with Christ, which is far better:" see on Phil. i. 23. And, S. Augustine says (Serm. 299), "Was not the mother of the Maccabees a true mother, when she persuaded her sons to die as Martyrs (2 Macc. vii.)?"—"Planè filiis meis vitam persuadeo, ad mortem cohortando," "I persuade them to live when I exhort them to die," for the Martyr's death is the gate of endless life.

This Vision therefore was designed to justify God's ways to man, and to afford a cheering assurance to Christians under all the persecutions which might rage against them, from the age of St. John to the end of time, that in every age of the Gospel Christ had kept, and would keep, Satan bound; that He had preserved, and would preserve, His own; that He had conquered, and would continue to conquer: and that He would enable all His faithful to be more than conquerors (Rom. viii. 37), even as He had conquered; and to live by dying, and to reign by suffering. To them all the promise is, "Be thou faithful unto death, and I will give thee the crown of life" (Rev. ii. 10).

⁵ Οἱ λοιποὶ τῶν νεκρῶν οὐκ ἔζησαν ἄχρι τελεσθῆ τὰ χίλια ἔτη.

Αὕτη ἡ ἀνάστασις ἡ πρώτη. ⁶ Μακάριος καὶ ἅγιος ὁ ἔχων μέρος ἐν τῇ ἀναστάσει τῇ πρώτῃ· ἐπὶ τούτων ὁ θάνατος ὁ δεύτερος οὐκ ἔχει ἐξουσίαν· ἀλλὰ

^e Isa. 61. 6.
¹ Pet. 2. 9.
ch. 1. 6. & 2. 11.
& 5. 10.

This Scripture reveals the happiness of the *disembodied soul* in the interval between Death and Resurrection. On this subject more has been said above, in the notes on the parable of Dives and Lazarus (Luke xvi. 22); and on Christ's promise to the penitent thief (Luke xxiii. 43), and on St. Paul's rapture into Paradise (2 Cor. xii. 4).

The lines of *Prudentius* (of the fourth century) afford an interesting commentary here:

Sed dum resolvable corpus
Revocas, Deus, atque reformas,
Quânam regione jubebis
Animam requiescere puram?
Gremio senis addita sancti (i. e. of Abraham)
Recubabit, ut est Eleazar (Lazarus),
Quem floribus undique septum (in Paradise)
Dives procul aspicit ardens;
Sequimur tua dicta, Redemptor,
Quibus atrâ morte triumphans
Tua per vestigia mandas
Socium crucis ire latronem (the penitent thief);
Patet ecce! fidelibus ampli
Via lucida jam Paradisi.—*Prudentius* (Cath. x. 153).

This true Scriptural and Catholic doctrine has been happily embodied by the Church of England in her Office for the Burial of the Dead. "Almighty God, with whom do *live* the *souls* of those that depart hence in the Lord, and with whom the *souls* of the righteous, after they are delivered from the burden of the flesh, are in *joy* and *felicity*," &c.

— ἔζησαν—χίλια ἔτη] *They lived and reigned with Christ a thousand years.* The *souls* of the Martyrs lived after their death, *before* the resurrection of their *bodies*. Indeed, they attained *new life* by *death*. The *souls* of holy men are not separated from communion with the Church, after their dissolution from the body. The faithful are members of Christ's mystical body after their death. They are born by *death*: therefore we read, "*Blessed* are the *dead* who die in the Lord, *even from that time*, saith the Spirit, that they may rest from their labours" (Rev. xiv. 13). Therefore even now they reign with Christ, and are "made to sit in heavenly places with Him," Eph. i. 20; ii. 6.

St. John here mentions the *souls* of the *Martyrs* only, because they especially *reign* when they *die*, in that they have fought for the truth even unto *death*. *S. Augustine* (de Civ. Dei, xx. 9). But, as the ancient Expositors observe, this Scripture is consolatory to all. "I am the Resurrection and the Life (saith Christ); he that *believeth* in Me, though he *die* (καὶ ἀποθάνῃ), yet shall he *live*; and he that *liveth* and *believeth* on Me shall *never die*" (John xi. 25, 26). "If a Man keep my saying he shall *never taste of death* (John viii. 51), he has passed from *death unto life*" (John v. 24. Cp. John iii. 16; vi. 40. 47); and every faithful Christian is a *Martyr*, or Witness, of Christ.

In the Sacrament of Baptism we, who before were dead in sin, became dead to sin (Eph. ii. 1. Rom. vi. 2); and we renounced the Devil, and began our Martyrdom to Christ by professing our belief in Him; and we died to the old Adam, and were born into Christ, and were made sons of God by adoption in Him. Therefore Baptism is called in Scripture a *Resurrection*. "Buried with Him in Baptism, wherein ye are *risen* with Him through faith in the operation of God" (Col. ii. 12. Rom. vi. 4). "Reckon ye yourselves to be dead unto sin, but *alive* unto God through Jesus Christ our Lord." Rom. vi. 11. Cp. Gal. ii. 19. 1 Thess. v. 10. See further below, v. 6. "This is the *first Resurrection*."

5. οἱ λοιποὶ νῶν νεκρῶν] *The rest of the dead lived not*—that is, they remained dead, they did not receive life, *till the thousand years should have been finished*. On this use of the word ζῆν, to receive life, see the parallel passage, John v. 25, οἱ ἀκούσαντες ζήσονται; and on the sense of τελεσθῆ, see *Winer*, § 41, p. 266.

Elz. has δὲ after οἱ here, but this is not in the best MSS. and Editions.

After the crisis of the last struggle, they will revive "to shame and contempt" (Dan. xii. 2) at the General Resurrection. See *Andreas* here, in *Catenâ*, p. 472. *Elz.* has ἀνέζησαν ἄχρι, and so *Griesb.*, *Scholz*; but A, B, and many *Cursives* and *Versions*, have ἔζησαν, and so *Lachm.*, *Tisch.*

The transition here from the Spiritual Resurrection of the *soul*, which is the *first Resurrection*, to that of the General Resur-

rection of the *body*, which is the *second Resurrection*, is precisely similar to that in our Blessed Lord's Discourse, John v. 24—29, which affords the best commentary on this text. See the note there.

— αὕτη ἡ ἀνάστασις ἡ πρώτη] *This is the first Resurrection.* He is speaking of the *soul* (see v. 4). Every soul which is united to Christ, Who is the *Resurrection* and the *Life*, rises from death and *lives*.

This *first Resurrection* is *begun* in Baptism, and it is *continued* through life, by the operation of the Holy Ghost, and by the daily exercise of Repentance, by which the soul rises more and more "from the death of sin unto the life of righteousness" (Office for the Burial of the Dead). Thus, while "the outer man perisheth, the inner man is renewed day by day" (2 Cor. iv. 16).

It is well called the *first Resurrection*, because it is prior and preparatory to the second Resurrection—that of the *body*, from the grave to glory. The *first Resurrection* is the Resurrection of the *soul* from death, into a life of grace on Earth, and of bliss in Paradise.

The *second Resurrection* is the Resurrection of the *Body*, and its reunion with the *Soul*, for a glorious immortality in Heaven.

6. μακάριος] *Blessed and holy is he that hath part in the first Resurrection.*

Observe the combination here of *Blessedness* with *Holiness*. *Blessed and holy* is he who *hath part* in holy Baptism—that is, who duly *estimates*, and rightly *uses*, the spiritual graces therein bestowed—he is *blessed*. *Blessed* is he, *because* he is *holy*. *Blessed* is he, because he has been made a member of Him Who is the Holy One of God. *Blessed* is he, because he *has risen* from the death of *sin*: he is risen with Christ, and seeks those things which are above (Col. iii. 1). "He that hath this hope in Christ, *purifieth* himself even as He is pure" (1 John iii. 3). For He says to all His Members, "Be ye *holy*, for I am *holy*" (1 Pet. i. 16). Therefore *blessed and holy* is he who hath part in the *first Resurrection*; but he who is unholy and accursed hath his part in the *second death*. Cp. v. 14.

Wisely therefore has the Church connected the *beatitudes* of the *Sermon on the Mount* (Matt. v. 1) as a Gospel, with a declaration of the felicity of the Saints in the Epistle (from Rev. vii. 2) on the festival of *All Saints*. None can attain to the glory of the one, without the graces of the other.

— ἐπὶ τούτων] *over these the second death hath no power.* See the remarks of *Bp. Andrewes* (on John xx. 23, Serm. iv. p. 83). "The Scripture maketh mention of a *first* and *second death*, and, from those, of a *first* and *second Resurrection*. Both expressly set down in one verse; '*Happy is he that hath his part in the first resurrection, for over such the second death hath no power*' (Rev. xx. 6). Christ truly is the Saviour of the whole man, both soul and body, from the first and second death; but beginning first with the first, that is with *sin*, the death of the *soul*, and the *rising from it*. So is the method of Divinity prescribed by Himself (Matt. xxiii. 26); first, to cleanse that which is within—the *soul*; then that which is without—the *body*. 'He that hath his part in the *first resurrection*' shall not fail of it 'in the *second*.'

"The '*first resurrection*' then from *sin* is it which our Saviour Christ goeth about (in John xx. 23), whereto there is no less power required than a Divine power. For look, what power is necessary to raise the dead body out of the dust, the very same every way is requisite to raise the *dead soul out of sin*. For which cause the Remission of sins is an article of faith, no less than the Resurrection of the body. For in very deed, a Resurrection it is, and so it is termed no less than that" (*Bp. Andrewes*).

"We are passed from death unto life," says St. John (1 John iii. 14), speaking of those who are born again; and this new birth is the same that he calls the *first Resurrection* (Rev. xx. 6. *Abp. Leighton* on 1 Pet. ii. 1, 2).

We here read, that *over these the second death hath no power*. It has power therefore on the others, concerning whom he had just said that they live not till the thousand years shall be finished: inasmuch as in all that interval of time, which is thus designated, whatsoever life any of these may have in the *body*, he never *lived* in the *soul*, being *dead in sin*: and so never had any part in the *first resurrection*, and therefore he will have a part in the *second death*. *S. Augustine* (de Civ. Dei, xx. 9).

ἔσονται ἱερεῖς τοῦ Θεοῦ καὶ τοῦ Χριστοῦ, καὶ βασιλεύσουσι μετ' αὐτοῦ χίλια ἔτη.

— ἔσονται ἱερεῖς] *They will be priests of God and Christ.* This is not said only of Bishops and Presbyters, who are properly called Priests in the Church (says *Augustine*), but as we are all called *Christians*, on account of the mystical unction (chrisma) that we have from Christ, the Anointed of God, so, in a certain sense, all are Priests, because we are all members of the One Great High Priest. Wherefore the Apostle says, "Ye are a holy people, a royal priesthood" (1 Pet. ii. 9). And thus St. John briefly intimates that *Christ is God*: for he says that they are priests of *God and of Christ*, that is, of the Father and of the Son. *S. Augustine* (de Civ. Dei, xx. 10).

A just observation certainly; for no one can be a priest to a man; and the Apostle would not have thus joined Christ with God, if Christ were not God.

— βασιλεύσουσιν] *they will reign with Christ a thousand years.* The Alexandrine MS. has the present tense here, βασιλεύουσιν, they are reigning: this is observable, and confirms the opinion that St. John is speaking of a period which had commenced when he was writing.

Dr. Lightfoot, Harmony on Rev. xx. and Sermons, vol. ii. p. 1055, and p. 117, and p. 1233, says (on Rev. xx.), "This Twentieth Chapter containeth a brief view of all the times from the rising of the Gospel to the end of the world."

On the doctrine of a MILLENNIUM.

The foregoing verses of this chapter have been understood by some to intimate, that Christ will come from heaven, at His next appearance, in order to raise the Saints from their graves, and in order to reign with them upon earth for a Thousand years.

This is commonly called the doctrine of a MILLENNIUM; and they who hold it are called *Chiliasts*, from the χίλια ἔτη here mentioned, or *Millenarians*.

But this doctrine of a personal appearance of Christ, for a reign with His Saints upon earth, for a period of a thousand years, is inconsistent with the language of the APOCALYPSE in particular, and with the general doctrine of HOLY SCRIPTURE, and with the teaching of the Catholic Church.

(1) The Millenarians suppose, that the Saints will be raised with their bodies to reign with Christ upon earth, and they ground that notion on this passage of the Apocalypse.

But the Resurrection, of which the *Apocalypse* here speaks, is not a Resurrection of bodies, but of souls (see v. 4, "I saw the souls").

(2) The Millenarians suppose that the Saints,—and only the Saints,—will be raised in a bodily Resurrection to live and reign with Christ on earth for a thousand years; and that Christ's kingdom will be established in a state of great glory and felicity upon earth for that time.

But the *Apocalypse* reveals a state of great impiety on earth, at the end of the millennial period; and it displays a general insurrection and open rebellion against Christ in the four quarters of the world at that time (v. 8). Such a state of things would be unaccountable, if Christ's dominion had been established upon earth for a thousand years; and if the Saints—and the Saints only—had been living and reigning upon earth for that time.

(3) The Millenarians suppose the absence of pain and sorrow during the millennial period; but the *Apocalypse* declares the continuance of pain and sorrow even to the end (see xxi. 4).

(4) The Millenarians suppose that Christ will come down from heaven to raise the bodies of His Saints, in order that He may reign here with them where they are; but the *Apocalypse* declares that the souls of His Saints are raised, that they may reign with Him where He is. The Millenarians bring down Christ to men: the *Apocalypse* raises men to Christ.

Their opinion is also at variance with the doctrine taught in other parts of HOLY SCRIPTURE.

(5) The Millenarians suppose that the bodies of Saints will be raised a thousand years before the Last Day.

But Christ Himself affirms in HOLY SCRIPTURE that they who believe in Him will be raised at the LAST DAY (John vi. 39).

(6) The Millenarians suppose that when Christ next appears, He will not come for the purpose of judging the world, but of reigning upon earth.

But Christ Himself has declared in Holy Scripture, that when He next comes, it will be in order to raise all men, and to judge them all; "and that the Saints will be caught up in the clouds into the air, to meet the Lord, and so be ever with the Lord." See John v. 28, 29. Matt. xvi. 27. Cp. 1 Thess. iv. 16, 17. 2 Thess. i. 7. 2 Tim. iv. 1. And the *Apocalypse* declares, that when Christ cometh with the clouds, "every eye shall see Him" (i. 7).

(7) The Millenarians suppose that a thousand years will pass away after Christ's next appearing; and that Satan will be loosed after those thousand years, and that after a general wicked rebellion against Christ, then the Wicked will rise from the grave, and the Universal Judgment will take place.

But, if the Righteous had been already raised visibly in their bodies, and had already reigned with Christ in person for a thousand years upon earth, the Day of Resurrection and of Judgment would be of little concern to them; their condition would have been already declared; and the future Resurrection and Judgment would have lost in great measure the character of Universality ascribed to it in Holy Writ. And if the Wicked are not to live till after the loosing of Satan, and the impious insurrection of godless multitudes against Christ (v. 8), we must suppose that many of the risen Saints of Christ, who have reigned with Him during the Millennium, will rise up in rebellion against Him!

(8) The Millenarians presume that the Day of Judgment cannot come till after a thousand years from the binding of Satan, which they suppose to be still future; and that it will come in a short time after the expiration of those thousand years. But Christ Himself declares in the *Apocalypse* that He comes quickly, as a thief (Rev. iii. 11; xvi. 15), and the whole tenour of Holy Scripture teaches that the Day of Judgment will be sudden and unexpected, and that it is our duty to be ever watching, for "we know not the day nor the hour when our Lord will come" (Matt. xxiv. 42. Cp. Acts i. 7).

(9) The Millenarians disparage the blessed work which Christ has already performed in His Death, Passion, Resurrection, and sending the Holy Ghost; and they depreciate the efficacy of Christ's Mission at His first Advent, by which He bound Satan, and has enabled every faithful Christian to overcome him; see above, on v. 1, p. 265.

(10) Lastly, the Millenarians suppose that Christ will leave His heavenly Throne of Glory, in order to come and reign for a thousand years with men upon this low and little Earth.

But, after the sublime Visions of the *Apocalypse*, where Christ is revealed as adored by Myriads of Angels in heaven, such a notion as this seems to be inconsistent with the revelations of this sublime book, and to be derogatory to the dignity of Christ, as displayed therein, and in other parts of Holy Scripture. Christ has ascended into heaven, and He there sitteth in glory till He makes all His foes His footstool (see Ps. cx. 1. Matt. xxii. 44. 1 Cor. xv. 25), and He has declared, that when He next appears, it will not be for the sake of reigning a thousand years upon earth, but for the sake of executing judgment on all His enemies, especially upon Satan, and of raising all men from their graves, and of rewarding His faithful servants with heavenly joys.

On such grounds as these we feel constrained to reject the doctrine of a Millennium, or of a personal reign of Christ upon earth with His Saints for a thousand years.

The interpretation given of these verses (1—6) in the foregoing notes is that which has been adopted by the best Expositors of the Western and Eastern Churches from the days of *S. Augustine* to those of *Bp. Andrewes*. See *S. Augustine*, de Civ. Dei xx. 7—9. *Andreas*, in Bibl. P. Max. v. p. 626. *Cassiodorus* in *Apocalyp.* p. 239. *Primasius*, B. P. M. x. 329. *Haymo*, ad loc. *Ambrosius Ansbertus*, B. P. M. p. 620. *Bede*, p. 429. *Bp. Andrewes* c. Bellarmine, c. 10, and Sermons; see vol. ii. pp. 199. 237. 402, and vol. iii. 48, on John xx. 17, and vol. v. 83, on John xx. 23, and vol. v. 298. *Bp. Hall*, on the Revelation, p. 921. *Abp. Leighton*, on 1 Pet. ii. 2.

It is observable that this Exposition was adopted after a careful scrutiny of the opinions of some who supposed that this chapter describes a personal reign of Christ on earth with the Saints for a thousand years before the general Resurrection.

That opinion undoubtedly was entertained by some pious and learned men in ancient times. It was held by *Papias* (see *Euseb.* iii. 39. *Hieron.* Scr. Eccl. c. 18), *Irenæus* (v. 33, 34), *Tertullian* (c. Marcion. iii. 24), *Justin Martyr* (c. Tryphon. c. 80), and some few more.

But it was afterwards sifted by others, especially by *Origen* (de Princip. ii. 11. 2, and 6, and Prolog. in Cantica), *Dionysius of Alexandria* (*Euseb.* vii. 24, 25), *S. Ephraim* (iii. p. 449), *S. Gregory Nazianzen* (Orat. li. and li.), *S. Jerome* (in *Esaiam*, xxx. and liv. lxv. and in *Ezek.* xxxviii. Epist. 150), and *S. Augustine* (de Civ. Dei xx. 7).

The language of *Andreas*, Bishop of Cappadocia, in the sixth century, stating the opinion of the Millenarians, and declaratory

7 Καὶ ὅταν τελεσθῇ τὰ χίλια ἔτη, λυθήσεται ὁ Σατανᾶς ἐκ τῆς φυλακῆς αὐτοῦ,
8 καὶ ἐξελεύσεται πλανῆσαι τὰ ἔθνη τὰ ἐν ταῖς τέσσαρσι γωνίαις τῆς γῆς, τὸν
τὸν Μαγὼν, συναγαγεῖν αὐτοὺς εἰς τὸν πόλεμον, ὧν ὁ ἀριθμὸς αὐτῶν
ὡς ἡ ἄμμος τῆς θαλάσσης.

of the doctrine of the Church, in this respect, is very clear and explicit. Bibl. Patrum Max. tom. v. p. 627. *Primam ex mortuis Resurrectionem solis sanctis propriam futuram dixerunt (Millenarii); quo nimirum in hac crassa et caliginosa terra, in qua illustra fortitudinis et patientiae specimina ediderant, Mille annis gloria et honore potiantur; post hoc autem tempus elapsam universalem omnium, hoc est non justorum tantum, verum etiam peccatorum, Resurrectionem fore. Sed ECCLESIA neutrum horum recipit: ὅτι οὐδὲν τούτων ἡ Ἐκκλησία δέδεκται, περιττόν ἐστι καὶ λέγειν.* says *Arethas*, p. 816. Cp. *Catena*, ed. Cramer, pp. 469—472. 566—569.

The result of the examination of the opinion of the *Millenarians* was, that after the fifth century hardly any writer of credit can be cited as holding the notion of a *personal reign of Christ on earth for a thousand years*, or as supposing that such an opinion could be deduced from the Apocalypse.

The opinion of the *Millenarians*, or *Chiliasts*, as they were called, was censured in ancient times as erroneous. See *S. Augustine* de *Hæres.* c. 8. *Philastr.* de *Hæres.* 59, who says, "*Hæresis est Chilionetitarum, id est Millenariorum, quæ docet ita, cum venerit Christus de coelo, mille anni erunt iterum nobis ad carnaliter vivendum,*" &c. It is condemned by the Church in the Athanasian Creed, where it is said, that at "Christ's Coming all men will rise with their bodies." The evidence on this subject may be seen in *Tillemont*, art. *Millénaires*, ii. p. 140. *Hist. Eccles.* liv. iii. c. 15. "*Ecclesiæ sensus*" (says *Cornelius à Lapide* ad *Apoc.* xx.) "*Millenariorum sententiam reprobatur; unde jam evanuisse videtur.*" Cf. *Baron.* *Annal.* ad An. 303, n. 127. "*Je ne scay point*" (says *Tillemont*, *Hist. Eccl.* art. *Papias*, ii. p. 140) "*qu'on trouve qu'il y ait eu des Millénaires depuis S. Jerome et S. Augustin, de sorte que si quelques uns en ont conservé les sentiments, cela n'a fait aucun éclat considérable.*" And *Dr. Isaac Barrow* (Sermon xxviii. vol. v. p. 27, ed. Oxf. 1818) classes the doctrine of the Millennium among "*notions not certain or not true, in which they who entertain them followed some conceits once passable among divers, but not built on any sure foundation, and which were anciently in great vogue, but are now discarded.*" See also *Dr. Hammond* ad *Rev.* xx. 7: "*Though some were otherwise minded, yet was this doctrine of the Chiliasts condemned by the Church, and since that time all were accounted hereticks who maintained it.*"

The opinion of the *Millenarians* was also condemned both by the Lutherans and Calvinists of the sixteenth century. See the *Augsburgh Confession* (A.D. 1530), pars i. art. xvii. p. 14, ed. Hase. Lips. 1837. The original words are, "*damnant alios, qui nunc spargunt Judaicas opiniones, quæ ante resurrectionem mortuorum pii regnum mundi occupaturi sint.*" *Melanchthon* (de *furoribus et deliriis Anabaptistarum*), tom. i. "*Anabaptistæ affirmant oportere ante novissimum diem in terris regnum Christi tale existere in quo pii dominantur.*"

The two most learned Lutherans, *Martin Chemnitzius* and *John Gerhard*, speak in similar terms of *Millenarianism*. See *Chemnitz*, de *Lect. Patrum*, Loc. Com. ed. 1690, p. 2, where he calls "*opinio Chiliastica*" an "*error in fundamento.*" The words of *Gerhard* may be seen in his *Loci Theolog.* ix. p. 322. *Chiliasm* was also confuted by *Osiander* contra *Puccium*, Tubing. 1593, and by *Cramer* de *Regno Christi*, p. ii. c. 4. *Calvin* (*Inst.* iii. xxv. 5, p. 177, ed. Tholuck, 1835) says, "*Chiliastarum commentum puerilium est, quàm ut refutatione vel indigeat vel dignum sit.* Nec illis suffragatur *Apocalypsis* (xx. 1), ex quâ erroris suo colorem induxisse certum est."

Millenarianism was also condemned in one of the Articles of the Church of England, A.D. 1552. See *Dr. Cardwell*, *Synod.* i. p. 17. The Church of England also rejects this opinion in the IVth of her XXXIX Articles, where she says that "*Christ ascended into heaven and there sitteth until He return,*" not, for a *personal reign* during a Millennium on earth, but in order "*to judge all men, at the Last Day.*" Similarly in her Collect for Advent she teaches her people to pray, "*that at the Last Day, when Christ shall come again in His glorious Majesty to judge the quick and dead, we may rise to the life immortal.*" And, in the Order for the Burial of the Dead, she prays that Christ would "*shortly accomplish the number of His elect, and hasten His kingdom; that we, with all those that are departed in the true faith of God's holy name, may have our perfect consummation and bliss in body and soul in His eternal and everlasting glory.*" The judgment of the Church of England in this matter is also further pronounced in the words of the Creed inserted in her Baptismal Office, as

follows: "He (Christ) ascended into heaven, and sitteth at the right hand of God the Father Almighty, and from thence shall come again, at the end of the world, to judge the quick and the dead."

These expressions are irreconcilable with the opinion of the *Millenarians*, that the purpose of Christ's next appearance from Heaven will not be to raise the dead from their graves, and to judge the quick and dead, but to reign in person upon earth with His Saints for a thousand years before the General Resurrection and the Day of Judgment.

The history of *Millenarian* opinions has been written by *Corodi*, *Geschichte des Chiliasmus*, Zurich, 1781, 3 vols. See also *Gieseler*, *Church History*, §§ 52. 63. 66, and the *Bampton Lectures* of the Rt. Rev. S. Waldegrave, D.D., Bishop of Carlisle. Lond. 1855.

7—10. καὶ ὅταν τελεσθῇ] And when the thousand years shall have been finished, Satan will be loosed out of his prison; and shall go forth to deceive the nations which are in the four quarters of the earth, Gog and Magog, to gather them together to the battle: the number of whom is as the sand of the sea.

And they went upon the breadth of the earth, and compassed the camp of the saints about, and the beloved city: and fire came down from God out of heaven, and devoured them. And the Devil that deceived them was cast into the lake of fire and brimstone, where both the Beast and the False Prophet are, and they will be tormented day and night for ever and ever.

This Vision pre-announces that before the close of the Christian dispensation, under which we now live, a great and final struggle between good and evil will ensue. Our Lord Himself had predicted this, by comparing the Days before His Coming to the Days of Noah (*Matt.* xxiv. 37), and of Lot (*Luke* xvii. 28), and to the Days before the destruction of Jerusalem (*Matt.* xxiv. 3—35); and by asking this question, "When the Son of Man cometh, shall He find the faith on earth?" (*Luke* xviii. 8.)

S. Augustine inquires whether it is to be supposed that the Saints will cease to reign when the Devil is loosed (*de Civ. Dei*, xx. 13). To which question he replies in the negative. It is indeed said that Satan will be bound for a thousand years, and it is added that he will afterwards be bound for a little while. And it is also said that the Saints will reign a thousand years, but it is not said that they will cease to reign, when the thousand years are past. The fact that they reign with Christ is a pledge of the endurance of their reign; for His "Kingdom is that which will never be destroyed" (*Dan.* ii. 44). Indeed, as Christ's promise to them that he would be with them until the end of the world (*Matt.* xxviii. 20), and that some who stood there would not taste of death until they saw the Son of Man coming in His Kingdom, did not imply that He would ever desert His Disciples, or that they who stood by Him would ever taste of death, but the reverse (see on *Matt.* xvi. 28); so the promise of a reign with Christ for a thousand years does not imply any cessation of that reign on the expiration of that period, but rather an increase of glory after it. And it is probable (as *Augustine* observes) that the final struggle will be as brief as it is fierce; and that it will suddenly be terminated by the appearance of Christ coming to Judgment. On those modes of expression, compare note above on *Matt.* i. 25.

v. 8. The words τέσσαρσι γωνίαις τῆς γῆς, literally, four corners of the earth, are rightly rendered "four quarters of the earth" in the English Authorized Version. This is the sense of the word γωνία in 1 Sam. xiv. 38; it signifies all within the four corners (cp. above, vii. 1), and corresponds to πλάτος, breadth, in v. 9. See *Hengstenberg* here. This phrase pre-announces a great gathering and general Insurrection against Christ, as indeed is declared by the additional assertion that their number will be as the sand of the sea.

The Nations called *Gog and Magog* are representatives of the enemies of God. *Magog* was the second son of *Japheth* (*Gen.* x. 2), the father of the *Gentiles*, as distinguished from the race of *Shem*; and *Gog* is called in *Ezekiel* the chief Prince of *Meshech* and *Tubal*, who are also of the race of *Japheth* (*Gen.* x. 2). In the prophecy of *Ezekiel* (xxxviii. xxxix.), which is continued and consummated in this Vision of the Apocalypse, other Nations are represented as allied with *Gog* against *Israel* (xxxviii. 5—23; xxxix. 1—5); and with *Magog* (xxxix. 6). The battle is then described, and the defeat and burial of *Gog* and his multitude (xxxix. 11—16), and the sacrifice of God's enemies (vv. 17, 18),

g Dan. 7. 11.
ch. 19. 20.
& 14. 10, 11.

⁹ Καὶ ἀνέβησαν ἐπὶ τὸ πλάτος τῆς γῆς, καὶ ἐκύκλευσαν τὴν παρεμβολὴν τῶν ἁγίων, καὶ τὴν πόλιν τὴν ἡγαπημένην· ⁸ καὶ κατέβη πῦρ ἐκ τοῦ οὐρανοῦ καὶ κατέφαγεν αὐτούς· ¹⁰ καὶ ὁ Διάβολος ὁ πλανῶν αὐτοὺς ἐβλήθη εἰς τὴν λίμνην τοῦ πυρὸς καὶ θείου, ὅπου καὶ τὸ θηρίον καὶ ὁ ψευδοπροφήτης, καὶ βασανισθίσονται ἡμέρας καὶ νυκτὸς εἰς τοὺς αἰῶνας τῶν αἰώνων.

h 2 Pet. 3. 10.

¹¹ ^h Καὶ εἶδον θρόνον μέγαν λευκὸν, καὶ τὸν καθήμενον ἐπ' αὐτοῦ· οὐ ἀπὸ τοῦ προσώπου ἔφυγεν ἡ γῆ καὶ ὁ οὐρανὸς, καὶ τόπος οὐχ εὐρέθη αὐτοῖς.

i Exod. 32. 32.
Ps. 62. 13.
& 69. 29.
Jer. 17. 10.
& 32. 19.
Dan. 7. 10.
Matt. 16. 27.
Rom. 2. 6.
& 14. 12.
1 Cor. 3. 8.
2 Cor. 5. 10.
Gal. 6. 5.
Phil. 4. 3.
ch. 2. 23.
& 3. 5. & 13. 8.
& 21. 27. & 22. 12.
k 1 Cor. 15. 26,
54, 55.

¹² ⁱ Καὶ εἶδον τοὺς νεκροὺς, τοὺς μεγάλους καὶ τοὺς μικροὺς, ἐστῶτας ἐνώπιον τοῦ θρόνου· καὶ βιβλία ἠνοιχθήσαν· καὶ ἄλλο βιβλίον ἠνοιχθή, ὃ ἐστι τῆς ζωῆς· καὶ ἐκρίθησαν οἱ νεκροὶ ἐκ τῶν γεγραμμένων ἐν τοῖς βιβλίοις, κατὰ τὰ ἔργα αὐτῶν.

¹³ Καὶ ἔδωκεν ἡ θάλασσα τοὺς νεκροὺς τοὺς ἐν αὐτῇ, καὶ ὁ Θάνατος καὶ ὁ Ἅιδης· ἔδωκαν τοὺς νεκροὺς τοὺς ἐν αὐτοῖς· καὶ ἐκρίθησαν ἕκαστος κατὰ τὰ ἔργα αὐτῶν. ¹⁴ ^k Καὶ ὁ Θάνατος καὶ ὁ Ἅιδης ἐβλήθησαν εἰς τὴν λίμνην τοῦ πυρὸς· οὗτος ὁ θάνατος ὁ δεύτερός ἐστι, ἡ λίμνη τοῦ πυρὸς. ¹⁵ Καὶ εἴ τις οὐχ εὐρέθη ἐν τῇ βίβλῳ τῆς ζωῆς γεγραμμένος, ἐβλήθη εἰς τὴν λίμνην τοῦ πυρὸς.

a Isa. 65. 17.
& 66. 22.
2 Pet. 3. 13.

XXI. ¹ ^a Καὶ εἶδον οὐρανὸν καινὸν καὶ γῆν καινὴν· ὁ γὰρ πρῶτος οὐρανὸς καὶ ἡ πρώτη γῆ ἀπῆλθον, καὶ ἡ θάλασσα οὐκ ἔστιν ἔτι.

and the full and final triumph of His cause, and the sanctification and glorification of His people.

It appears from that prophecy, that the names *Gog* and *Magog* are used here to signify generally the earthly powers leagued together under the banner of Satan, and opposed to God and the *Christian Israel*, and the heavenly *Jerusalem*. This is clear from the fact that they are described as existing in the four quarters of the earth, and as going over the breadth of the earth, and as being as the sand of the sea (vv. 8, 9).

The defeat and burial of Gog and his hosts in the Vision of Ezekiel, is explained by this Vision of the Apocalypse to be prophetic of the overthrow of Satan and all his Confederates, and of their condemnation to the *Lake of fire*.

Here then is a prophecy of the final Persecution, which will precede Christ's coming to Judgment. Then will be a general struggle between the City of God and the City of the Evil One.

10. ὁ Διάβολος] *The Devil who deceiveth them was cast into the Lake of fire.* Satan rises in rebellion against God, in order to fall to a lower depth, after each successive insurrection. He rose against God in heaven, and was cast down from heaven into earth (xii. 9). He rose against God in earth, and has been cast into the abyss (xx. 1—3). He will hereafter be loosed from the abyss (xx. 7; cp. Isa. li. 10), and will rise and excite many to a desperate rebellion against God. He will then be consigned to a lower gulf, even to the lake of fire, from which there will be no egress. The more fiercely Satan rages against Christ, the more fearful will be his ruin.

In reviewing the preceding portion of this chapter, we see a brief summary of what has been done by Christ for His Church, from His Incarnation to the End of Time. We see that Christ came from heaven to bind Satan; that He *did* bind him; and gave men power to overcome him; that He made them partners of His triumph and inheritors of His glory.

Here we see an answer to the objection that might otherwise have been raised, from a consideration of the afflictions of the Church, revealed in the Apocalypse. Her sufferings were her path to glory. The Death of the faithful was their gate to Life. Nothing can harm them; they are enthroned with Christ.

We here recognize also the important truth, that the punishment of the wicked is not due to any want of love in Christ, but to their own sins, which loose Satan against them.

This is the moral to be derived from the first part of this chapter. Having taught us this lesson, St. John takes a step which he has not taken before. He passes from Time into Eternity. He sees the Throne of JUDGMENT set, and the Books opened, and the Dead raised and judged. He reveals the Heavenly City. Thus he displays the immensity of God's love to man, and the greatness of His power; and the severity of His justice; and awakens the fears, and excites the courage, and stimulates the faith, and quickens the hope of Christians in every age.

THE GENERAL RESURRECTION AND LAST JUDGMENT.

11—15. καὶ εἶδον] *And I saw a great white throne, and Him that sat upon it, from whose face the earth and the heaven fled away; and no place was found for them.*

And I saw the dead, the great and the small, stand before the throne; and books were opened: and another book was opened, which is the book of life: and the Dead were judged out of those things which were written in the books, according to their works.

And the sea gave up the dead which were in it; and Death and Hades delivered up the dead which were in them: and they were judged every man according to their works.

And Death and Hades were cast into the lake of fire. This is the second death, the lake of fire.

And whosoever was not found written in the book of life was cast into the lake of fire.

In v. 12 the article τοὺς has been restored by the recent editors; and μεγάλους has been placed before μικροὺς. No one is so great or so small as to escape the Judgment to come.

Elz. has Θεοῦ, of God; but θρόνον has been rightly adopted by the most recent Editors from A, B, and most ancient Versions. The Son of Man is the Judge (John v. 22). It is before His Throne that all must appear (2 Cor. v. 10). In vv. 13 and 14 the English Version has *hell* for ἄδης. See above, i. 18; vi. 8; and compare 1 Cor. xv. 55.

"O Lord God most holy, O Lord most mighty, O holy and most merciful Saviour, deliver us not into the bitter pains of eternal death.

"Thou knowest, Lord, the secrets of our hearts; shut not Thy merciful ears to our prayer; but spare us, Lord most holy, O God most mighty, O holy and merciful Saviour, Thou most worthy Judge Eternal, suffer us not at our last hour for any pains of death to fall from Thee. Amen."

CH. XXI.] The heavenly bliss and GLORY of the RIGHTEOUS; The MISERY of the WICKED.

1—8. καὶ εἶδον] *And I saw a new heaven and a new earth: for the first heaven and the first earth passed away: and the sea is no more.*

And the holy city, new Jerusalem, I saw coming down out of heaven from God, prepared as a bride adorned for her husband.

And I heard a great voice out of heaven, saying, Behold, the tabernacle of God with men, and He will tabernacle with them, and they shall be His people, and God Himself shall be with them, their God. And God shall wipe away every tear from their eyes: and death shall be no more, neither sorrow, nor crying, nor pain: for the former things passed away.

And He that sitteth upon the throne said, Behold, I make all things new. And He saith, Write: for these sayings are faithful and true. And He said unto me, They are done. I am the Alpha and the Omega, the beginning and the end. I will give unto him that is athirst of the fountain of the water of life

^{2 b} Καὶ τὴν πόλιν τὴν ἁγίαν, Ἱερουσαλὴμ καὶ νῦν, εἶδον καταβαίνουσαν ἐκ τοῦ οὐρανοῦ ἀπὸ τοῦ Θεοῦ, ἡτοιμασμένην ὡς νύμφην κεκοσμημένην τῷ ἀνδρὶ αὐτῆς· ^{3 c} καὶ ἤκουσα φωνῆς μεγάλης ἐκ τοῦ οὐρανοῦ λεγούσης, Ἴδου, ἡ σκηνὴ τοῦ Θεοῦ μετὰ τῶν ἀνθρώπων, καὶ σκηνώσκει μετ' αὐτῶν· καὶ αὐτοὶ λαὸς αὐτοῦ ἔσονται, καὶ αὐτὸς ὁ Θεὸς μετ' αὐτῶν ἔσται αὐτῶν Θεός· ^{4 d} καὶ ἐξαλείψει πᾶν δάκρυον ἀπὸ τῶν ὀφθαλμῶν αὐτῶν· καὶ ὁ θάνατος οὐκ ἔσται ἔτι, οὔτε πένθος οὔτε κραυγὴ οὔτε πόνος οὐκ ἔσται ἔτι, ὅτι τὰ πρῶτα ἀπῆλθεν.

b 2 Cor. 11. 2.
Gal. 4. 26.
Heb. 11. 10.
& 12. 22.
& 13. 14.
ch. 3. 12.
& ver. 10.
c Ezek. 43. 7.

d Isa. 25. 8.
& 35. 10.
1 Cor. 15. 26, 54.
ch. 7. 17.

e Isa. 43. 19.
2 Cor. 5. 17.
ch. 4. 2. & 19. 9.
& 20. 11.

f Isa. 12. 3.
& 41. 4. & 44. 6.
& 55. 1.

John 4. 10, 14.
& 7. 37.

g Zech. 8. 8.
Heb. 8. 10.

h 1 Cor. 6. 9.
Gal. 5. 21.

Eph. 5. 5.
1 Tim. 1. 9.
Heb. 12. 14.
ch. 20. 14, 15.
& 22. 15.

^{5 e} Καὶ εἶπεν ὁ καθήμενος ἐπὶ τῷ θρόνῳ, Ἴδου, καὶ νῦν ποιῶ πάντα. Καὶ λέγει Γράψον, ὅτι οὗτοι οἱ λόγοι πιστοὶ καὶ ἀληθινοὶ εἰσι. ^{6 f} Καὶ εἶπέ μοι, Γέγοναν, ἐγὼ εἰμι τὸ Ἀλφά καὶ τὸ Ω, ἡ ἀρχὴ καὶ τὸ τέλος. Ἐγὼ τῷ διψῶντι δώσω αὐτῷ ἐκ τῆς πηγῆς τοῦ ὕδατος τῆς ζωῆς δωρεάν· ^{7 g} ὁ νικῶν κληρονομήσει ταῦτα, καὶ ἔσομαι αὐτῷ Θεός, καὶ αὐτὸς ἔσται μοι υἱός· ^{8 h} τοῖς δὲ δειλοῖς καὶ ἀπίστοις, καὶ ἁμαρτωλοῖς καὶ ἐβδελυγμένοις, καὶ φονεῦσι καὶ πόρνοις, καὶ φαρμακοῖς καὶ εἰδωλολάτραις, καὶ πᾶσι τοῖς ψευδέσι, τὸ μέρος αὐτῶν ἐν τῇ λίμνῃ τῇ καιομένῃ πυρὶ καὶ θείῳ, ὃ ἔστι ὁ θάνατος ὁ δεύτερος.

freely. He that overcometh shall inherit these things; and I will be his God, and he shall be My son.

But the fearful, and unbelieving, and sinners, and the abominable, and murderers, and whoremongers, and sorcerers, and idolaters, and all the liars, shall have their part in the lake which burneth with fire and brimstone: which is the second death. S. Irenæus (v. 35. 2) quotes these verses from v. 1 to v. 6. In v. 3 he has peoples in the plural, and so A, and some Cursives.

In v. 1 Elz. has παρῆλθε: but ἀπῆλθεν or ἀπῆλθαν, they passed away, is the reading of the best MSS.

Observe the aorist here (ἀπῆλθεν), and in v. 4; it describes the suddenness with which all the pomp and power, all the grandeur and glory, and all the pain and sorrow, of this lower world, will disappear and glide away, like a dream when one awaketh. (Ps. lxxiii. 19.) Cp. note on James i. 11.

See also the remarkable parallel in 2 Cor. v. 17, εἴ τις ἐν Χριστῷ, καὶ νῦν κτίσις, τὰ ἀρχαῖα παρῆλθεν (observe the aorist, as here), ἰδὼν γέγονε καὶ νῦν τὰ πάντα. Regeneration began in the first resurrection, which is Baptism (xx. 5), and will be consummated in the second Resurrection to heavenly and eternal glory, both in body and soul.

— ἡ θάλασσα] The sea exists no more; the restless, troubled element of worldly pride and tumultuous rebellion, and confusion, and anarchy, has no longer any being.

On this meaning of the word sea in the Apocalypse, see above, viii. 8, 9; xiii. 1; cp. Ps. lxxv. 7, "the noise of the waves, and the madness of the people;" and Isa. lvii. 20, "The wicked are like the troubled sea;" and Luke xxi. 25, "on the earth distress of nations, with perplexity; the sea and the waves roaring." "He designates by the name of sea," says Bede, "the troublous life of this world, which will then be over."

2. Ἱερουσαλὴμ καὶ νῦν] new Jerusalem. Observe the Hebrew form of the name Jerusalem, a form never used by St. John in the narrative of his Gospel, where he always uses the Greek form Ἱεροσόλυμα, indicating that the literal City had been, as it were, then made like a Gentile City by its sins, especially by its rejection of Christ and His Apostles.

In a similar spirit he uses the word οἱ Ἰουδαῖοι, "the Jews," in his Gospel, as opponents of Christ. See above, Introduction to the Gospel of St. John, p. 268.

But in his Apocalypse he never uses the Greek form Ἱεροσόλυμα, but always the Hebrew form Ἱερουσαλὴμ, and by it he describes the Church glorified. His design is to Christianize Hebrew names and ideas, and to show that they have their consummation in the Gospel and Church of Christ.

On the same principle, he never applies the word Jew, in the Apocalypse, to designate the literal Israel, but he employs it to characterize the true worshippers of Jesus Christ. See ii. 9; iii. 9.

Thus the figurative style of St. John's Apocalypse is exhibited in striking contrast to the historical diction of his Gospel.

Thus also he ministers comfort to the true Israelites, by declaring to them, that though the literal Jerusalem is now trodden under foot by the Gentiles, yet they themselves have a Heavenly city; and that more than all the glories of the ancient Sion are perpetuated in the new Jerusalem. See above, Introduction, pp. 144, 145.

The most learned among the ancient Jews had some presentiments of this Apocalyptic Vision. They were familiar with the name "heavenly Jerusalem," and believed it to be the archetype of what they saw in the literal Sion, its Temple, and its Ritual. They regarded them as the "shadow of heavenly things" (Heb. viii. 5). This opinion had been authorized by the Hebrew Scriptures. God said to Moses, "See thou make all things according to the pattern showed to thee in the Mount." The sayings of the Hebrew doctors on this subject may be seen in the treatise of Schoettgen, de Hierosolyma Cœlesti, pp. 1205—1248, of his Horæ Hebraicæ, 1733.

— καταβαίνουσαν] coming down. The new Jerusalem descends from out of heaven; all her graces are from above. She is described here as a Bride adorned for her own husband, and is thus contrasted with Babylon, the Harlot Church, adorned for another, not her husband, and which is seated on the Beast which rises out of the troubled element (v. 1), the sea. See xiii. 1.

3. ἰδὼν, ἡ σκηνή] Behold the Tabernacle of God is with men. The types of the itinerant Tabernacle in the Wilderness, the figurative ritual and festal joys of the Feast of Tabernacles, celebrated in the Literal Jerusalem, will be consummated in the heavenly Jerusalem. This realization began, when the Son of God came down from heaven and tabernacled (ἐσκήνωσεν) in our flesh (John i. 14). They will be consummated in the new Jerusalem, as had been pre-announced in the Sixth Seal: the language of which supplies the best exposition of the present Vision. See vii. 15—17, and the notes there.

4. τὰ πρῶτα ἀπῆλθεν] the former things passed away. They all vanished at once; suddenly, like a vapour, or "like a tale that is told." Ps. xc. 9. See above, v. 1.

6. γέγοναν] they are done. The divine promises and judgments are now accomplished. Cp. γέγονε, xvi. 17. Elz. has γέγονε here; but γέγοναν is in A and Irenæus; and so Lach., Tisch.

8. τοῖς δειλοῖς] the fearful and unbelieving; joined together, because he, who does not believe in God's promises, fears to encounter the battle for God, and therefore the fearful are contrasted with those who overcome.

— καὶ ἁμαρτωλοῖς] and sinners: not in Elz., but in B and in more than thirty Cursive MSS., and in the Syriac and Arabic Versions, and in Andreas and Catena. The word was not likely to be inserted by a Copyist; and it seems to have a special meaning, as intimating the important truth, that not only παράβασις, or transgression of written law, but ἁμαρτία also, or sin against any law—whether natural and unwritten law, or positive and written law—will be a subject for cognizance and condemnation at the Great Day. See Rom. ii. 14—16.

— ἐβδελυγμένοις] abominable. Those who give themselves up to the idolatrous βδελύγματα, abominations, mentioned in xvii. 4. Cp. below, v. 27.

— πόρνοις] fornicators. The deadliness of the sin of fornication among Christians may be inferred from its juxtaposition here with murder, sorcery, and idolatry; against which the sternest denunciations are uttered in the Apocalypse.

i ch. 15. 1, 6, 7.
& 19. 7.

⁹ Καὶ ἦλθεν εἰς τῶν ἑπτὰ ἀγγέλων τῶν ἐχόντων τὰς ἑπτὰ φιάλας γεμούσας τῶν ἑπτὰ πληγῶν τῶν ἐσχάτων, καὶ ἐλάλησε μετ' ἐμοῦ λέγων, Δεῦρο, δείξω σοὶ τὴν νύμφην, τὴν γυναῖκα τοῦ Ἀρνίου.

k Gal. 4. 26.
Heb. 12. 22.
ch. 1. 10.
& 3. 12. & 21. 2.

¹⁰ Καὶ ἀπήνεγκέ με ἐν πνεύματι ἐπὶ ὄρος μέγα καὶ ὑψηλὸν, καὶ ἔδειξέ μοι τὴν πόλιν τὴν ἁγίαν Ἱερουσαλὴμ, καταβαίνουσαν ἐκ τοῦ οὐρανοῦ ἀπὸ τοῦ Θεοῦ,

l Ezek. 48. 31.

¹¹ ἔχουσιν τὴν δόξαν τοῦ Θεοῦ· ὁ φωστήρ αὐτῆς ὁμοιος λίθῳ τιμιωτάτῳ, ὡς λίθῳ ἰάσπιδι κρυσταλλίζοντι· ¹² ἔχουσα τεῖχος μέγα καὶ ὑψηλὸν, ἔχουσιν πυλῶνας δώδεκα, καὶ ἐπὶ τοῖς πυλῶσιν ἀγγέλους δώδεκα, καὶ ὀνόματα ἐπιγεγραμμένα, ἃ ἔστι τῶν δώδεκα φυλῶν νιῶν Ἰσραὴλ· ¹³ ἀπὸ ἀνατολῶν πυλῶνες τρεῖς, καὶ ἀπὸ βορρᾶ πυλῶνες τρεῖς, καὶ ἀπὸ νότου πυλῶνες τρεῖς, καὶ ἀπὸ δυσμῶν πυλῶνες τρεῖς· ¹⁴ καὶ τὸ τεῖχος τῆς πόλεως ἔχον θεμελίους δώδεκα, καὶ ἐπ' αὐτῶν δώδεκα ὀνόματα τῶν δώδεκα ἀποστόλων τοῦ Ἀρνίου.

m Matt. 16. 18.
Eph. 2. 19, 20.

Further Description of the BRIDE, or the HOLY CITY, the New, Heavenly, JERUSALEM.

9—27.] And one of the seven angels which had the seven vials full of the seven last plagues came and talked with me, saying, Come hither, I will show thee the Bride, the Lamb's wife.

And he carried me away in the Spirit to a mountain great and high, and showed me the Holy City, Jerusalem, descending out of heaven from God, having the glory of God: and her light was like unto a stone most precious, like a jasper stone, clear as crystal; and having a wall great and high, and having twelve gates, and at the gates twelve Angels, and names written thereon, which are the names of the twelve Tribes of the children of Israel. On the east three gates; on the north three gates; on the south three gates; and on the west three gates. And the wall of the city hath twelve foundations, and in them the names of the Twelve Apostles of the Lamb.

And he that talked with me had a golden reed to measure the city, and the gates thereof, and the wall thereof. And the city lieth foursquare, and the length as large as the breadth; and he measured the city with the reed, to twelve thousand furlongs; the length and the breadth and the height of it are equal. And he measured the wall thereof, an hundred forty-four cubits, according to the measure of a man, that is, of an angel.

And the building of the wall of it is jasper: and the city pure gold, like unto clear glass.

And the foundations of the wall of the city are garnished with every precious stone. The first foundation, jasper; the second, sapphire; the third, chalcedony; the fourth, emerald; the fifth, sardonyx; the sixth, sardius; the seventh, chrysolite; the eighth, beryl; the ninth, topaz; the tenth, chrysoprasus; the eleventh, jacinth; the twelfth, amethyst.

And the twelve gates are twelve pearls; every several gate of one pearl: and the street of the city pure gold, as it were transparent glass.

And temple saw I none in her; for the Lord God Almighty is her temple, and the Lamb (is her temple). And the city hath no need of the sun, neither of the moon, to shine in it: for the glory of God did lighten her, and the Lamb is her lamp.

And the Gentiles shall walk through her light: and the kings of the earth bring their glory and honour unto her. And her gates shall not be shut at all by day: for there shall be no night there. And they shall bring the glory and honour of the Gentiles into her. And there shall in no wise enter into her any thing that defileth, and he that worketh abomination, or a lie; but they which are written in the Lamb's book of life.

9. καὶ ἦλθεν εἰς] And one of the Seven Angels came; observe the contrast of this Vision with that above, xvii. 1. In that Vision, the faithless Church is displayed; in this Vision, the faithful Church. Let the two Visions be placed side by side, and no doubt can be entertained of the writer's design to contrast the one with the other.

Καὶ ἦλθεν εἰς ἐκ τῶν ἑπτὰ ἀγγέλων τῶν ἐχόντων τὰς ἑπτὰ φιάλας, καὶ ἐλάλησε μετ' ἐμοῦ λέγων, Δεῦρο, δείξω σοὶ τὸ κρῖμα τῆς πόρνῃς τῆς μεγάλης. . . . Καὶ ἀπήνεγκέ με εἰς ἔρημον ἐν πνεύματι· καὶ εἶδον γυναῖκα καθήμενην ἐπὶ θηρίον κόκκινον. (Rev. xvii. 1. 3.)

Καὶ ἦλθεν εἰς ἐκ τῶν ἑπτὰ ἀγγέλων τῶν ἐχόντων τὰς ἑπτὰ φιάλας. . . . καὶ ἐλάλησε μετ' ἐμοῦ, λέγων, Δεῦρο, δείξω σοὶ τὴν νύμφην τοῦ ἀρνίου τὴν γυναῖκα. Καὶ ἀπήνεγκέ με ἐν πνεύματι ἐπ' ὄρος μέγα καὶ ὑψηλὸν, καὶ ἔδειξέ μοι τὴν πόλιν τὴν ἁγίαν Ἱερουσαλὴμ. (Rev. xxi. 9, 10.)

Here is the Νύμφη, or Bride, contrasted with the Πόρνη, or Harlot.

Here is the Holy City, contrasted with the Great City.

Here is Jerusalem, contrasted with Babylon.

Here is the great and lofty Mountain, on which the one sits in security for ever, contrasted with the dreary Wilderness and the tumultuous Waters (vv. 1 and 15), on which the other is enthroned.

Here is the Bride espoused to the Lamb, contrasted with the Harlot seated on the Beast.

The one is a Church; the other is a Church also. The one faithful to Christ her Lord; the other unfaithful to Him. The one is the true Catholic Church; the other is that Church which usurps the name.

Both these Visions are displayed by one of the Angels who had the Seven Vials, full of the seven last plagues. The Angels who had the Vials were executioners of divine Judgments on the empire of the faithless Church (see xvi. 1—19); but their work is completed in a Vision of divine Love, the Vision of the faithful Church in glory.

10. τὴν πόλιν τὴν ἁγίαν] the holy City: so the best MSS. and Editions. Elz. has μεγάλην, the great City; but that phrase is restricted in the Apocalypse to the mystical Babylon. See xi. 8; xviii. 10. 16.

11. φωστήρ] her light; like to a most precious stone, to a jasper like crystal; as God Himself was described above, iv. 3. This is the Light of which he here speaks, see v. 23, where the LAMB is called its λύχνος, or Lamp; and compare Isa. lx. 19, "The LORD will be to it for an eternal light;" and Ezek. xliii. 2—6. On the word φωστήρ, see above, Phil. ii. 15.

13. ἀπὸ ἀνατολῶν] On the east, three gates: the city has three gates on each of its four sides. The heavenly City turns an equal face to each of the four quarters of heaven, showing the equality of God's favour to all, and the Universality of the Church. Many will enter the Holy City from all the four quarters of the world. "Many will come from the East and the West, from the North and the South, and sit down with Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob, in the kingdom of God" (Luke xiii. 29).

There are three gates on each side, as in the vision of Ezekiel (xlviii. 30—34). These three gates may signify (as some ancient Interpreters suggest) that the Entrance into the Church is by Faith, publicly professed in Baptism into the Name of the Three Persons, the FATHER, the SON, and the HOLY GHOST (Matt. xxviii. 19).

The number Three bespeaks the number of Divine Persons in the Ever-Blessed Trinity; the number Four represents all space lying within the Four corners of the Earth (see note at end of chap. xi.); and the number Twelve, being the product of Three multiplied into Four, represents the Twelve Apostles and their lawful successors in an Apostolic Ministry, who were sent by Christ with a commission to "go and teach all Nations" in the four quarters of the Earth, baptizing them in the Name of the Triune God. "These are the labourers (says Aug. in Ps. lxix.) who were to be sent on a Mission to the four corners of the Earth, to bring them into the one Faith of the Ever-Blessed Trinity." See above, on Matt. x. 1.

Therefore the Twelve Apostles are mentioned as the Twelve foundations of the Universal Church glorified in heaven.

14. θεμελίους δώδεκα] twelve foundations; or foundation-stones (so that there would be three on each side of the City; cp. vv. 19, 20), and in them twelve names of the twelve Apostles of the Lamb. Compare the three standards of three of the Twelve Tribes on each of the Four sides of the Tabernacle. See above, on iv. 4. On the ellipse of λίθοι cp. Eph. ii. 29.

This is the foundation of the Church glorified, the City

¹⁵ ⁿ Καὶ ὁ λαλῶν μετ' ἐμοῦ εἶχε κάλαμον χρυσοῦν, ἵνα μετρήσῃ τὴν πόλιν, καὶ ⁿ Ezek. 40. 3. ^o Eph. 3. 18. τοὺς πυλῶνας αὐτῆς, καὶ τὸ τεῖχος αὐτῆς.

¹⁶ ^o Καὶ ἡ πόλις τετράγωνος κείται, καὶ τὸ μῆκος αὐτῆς ὅσον καὶ τὸ πλάτος· καὶ ἐμέτρησε τὴν πόλιν τῷ καλάμῳ ἐπὶ σταδίων δώδεκα χιλιάδων· τὸ μῆκος καὶ τὸ πλάτος καὶ τὸ ὕψος αὐτῆς ἴσά ἐστι.

¹⁷ Καὶ ἐμέτρησε τὸ τεῖχος αὐτῆς ἑκατὸν τεσσαρακοντατεσσάρων πηχῶν, μέτρον ἀνθρώπου, ὃ ἐστὶν ἀγγέλου.

¹⁸ Καὶ ἦν ἡ ἐνδόμησις τοῦ τεύχους αὐτῆς ἱασπιδ· καὶ ἡ πόλις χρυσίου καθαρόν ὁμοιον ὑάλῳ καθαρῷ.

¹⁹ Καὶ οἱ θεμέλιοι τοῦ τεύχους τῆς πόλεως παντὶ λίθῳ τιμῷ κεκοσμημένοι· ὁ θεμέλιος ὁ πρῶτος ἱασπιδ, ὁ δεύτερος σάπφειρος, ὁ τρίτος χαλκηδών, ὁ τέταρτος

which *hath the foundations*—that for which the Patriarchs looked—*whose Builder and Maker is God* (Heb. xi. 10).

Here is a proof that no *one* Apostle is the foundation-stone of the Church; much less can he be the *foundation* itself, which is CHRIST; see above, on 1 Cor. iii. 2. 12, and Eph. ii. 20, and on Matt. x. 2, and xvi. 18. See also above, the description of the Church, displayed as wearing a crown of *Twelve stars*, xii. 1.

The names of the *Twelve Apostles* of the *Lamb*, engraven on the foundations of the new *Jerusalem*, show that the *Twelve Apostles* are the Patriarchs of the Tribes of the true Israel, and that the glory of *Sion* has passed into the *Christian Church*.

This truth is also exhibited by the *quality* of these *Twelve Foundation-stones*. They are *Twelve precious stones*; and they are mainly the *same precious stones* as those which adorned the sacred Breastplate of the High Priest, and on which the names of the *Twelve Tribes of Israel* were engraved, Exod. xxviii. 15—21. The breastplate of the Hebrew High Priest, garnished with its oracular gems, was like a beautiful garment which might be *put off*; but these Apostolic precious stones of the *Twelve Tribes of the Israel of God* are immoveably set as the very *foundation-stones* of the heavenly *Jerusalem*, and are inscribed with the names of the Apostles, who are the progenitors and Fathers of the Spiritual Israel; because by preaching the Word, and by the life-giving Sacraments of the Gospel, they execute the ministry of Regeneration, by which Christ Himself is *formed* and *born* in all *Nations* of the world. See above, on xii. 5. Matt. xxviii. 19.

The Heavenly City is built on these *Twelve Foundation-stones*. Therefore whosoever is *not* built on the foundation of Apostolic Faith and Discipline is not a lively stone in the heavenly *Jerusalem*.

¹⁶ ἐπὶ σταδίων δώδεκα χιλιάδων] *unto stadia of twelve thousands*: that is, *extending to* (Winer, § 49, p. 363) stadia of 12,000, the genitive of the *quality* (Winer, § 34, p. 212). This amount expresses the dimensions of the City in every direction, height, breadth, and length. See *Andreas, Bengel, Hengstenberg*.

The number *twelve thousand* has already been used to signify the *Apostolic* company of those sealed from each of the twelve tribes (see vii. 5—8); and this solid cubical form of the *City* (as distinct from the *walls*) denotes the *perfection* of that number.

In those three dimensions some ancient Interpreters supposed a symbolical reference to the spiritual graces and qualities of the Christian Church. Here (say *Primasius, Bede, and Haymo*) the solidity of Truth is represented, on which the Church is firmly built, in the *length of Faith*, the *breadth of Charity*, and the *height of Hope*, so as not to be moved by any winds of doctrine; and where any one of these dimensions is lacking, the perfect stability of the Church does not exist. Cp. Eph. iii. 18.

¹⁷ ἐμέτρησε τὸ τεῖχος αὐτῆς] *He measured her wall*: he had just been speaking of the measuring of the *City*; that is, of the *whole* glorious assemblage of buildings and suburbs of the heavenly *Jerusalem*, like pure gold (v. 18), illuminated by the glory of God.

But, as the *literal Jerusalem* had an *inner wall* or fortification (τεύχος), the city of David, so has the *heavenly Sion*.

He had spoken (in vv. 12. 15) of the *Gates* and *Foundations* of this *wall*. He then proceeded to describe the dimensions of the *City*: and he now specifies the height of the *Wall*, which is 144,000 cubits.

—μέτρον ἀνθρώπου] *measure of a man, which is also measure of an Angel*. In the heavenly City men will be *equal to the Angels* (Luke xx. 36). They themselves will be like unto Angels in measure and stature, and in all the qualities and graces of soul and body; and they will reckon and measure all things, not,

as now, by any carnal and earthly calculations, but by a spiritual and divine Arithmetic, and by a heavenly and angelic Mensuration. They will measure all things with the Golden Reed of Divine Knowledge, like that in the hands of the Angel measuring the heavenly City.

¹⁸ ἡ ἐνδόμησις] The *superstructure* of the Wall is *jasper*. The word ἐνδόμησις occurs in *Josephus* (Ant. xv. 9. 6), who applies it to the *superstructure* of a mole of a harbour. It is that part of the walls which is *built* on the foundations. On the *jasper*, see iv. 3, and here v. 19.

¹⁹ οἱ θεμέλιοι] The *foundations* of the wall of the City are adorned with every precious stone; according to the typical adornment of the literal Temple of Jerusalem (1 Kings x. 2. 10, 11), and to the prophecy of Isaiah, liv. 11, 12. Cp. Tobit xiii. 16—18.

—ὁ θεμέλιος ὁ πρῶτος] The *first foundation-stone* of *jasper*, the *second sapphire*.

These *Twelve Foundations* appear to be the same as those mentioned above, as engraven with the names of the *Twelve Apostles of the Lamb*. See v. 14, and note.

St. John has already said, in v. 19, that the Foundation was garnished with every precious stone, and then he specified *twelve* precious stones, indicating that the *Twelve Apostolic Foundations* represent every spiritual grace bestowed by God upon His faithful servants, who are *His Jewels* (Mal. iii. 17). In the *variety* and *beauty* of the precious stones is symbolized the πολυποίκιλος σοφία of God (Eph. iii. 10), and His multiform love in supplying all the χαρίσματα, gifts and graces (Rom. xii. 6. 1 Cor. xii. 4—9. 28. 30), vouchsafed by Him to the several Apostles, and shining in brilliant lustre in their several places, like Jewels set in beautiful symmetry and harmony, for the adorning of the heavenly *Jerusalem*, and laid in strength and steadfastness for its solid construction, and everlasting endurance.

A description of these precious Stones is given by *S. Epiphanius*, de xii. gemmis Rationalis (τοῦ λογίου).

See also the xxxviii book of *Pliny's Natural History*; and the Treatise of *Faustino Corsi*, Pietre Antiche, Roma, 1828, p. 137 seqq., and the authorities quoted here by *Welstein*, N. T. ii. pp. 843—845.

The *Jasper* has been specified above in the description of the glorious appearance of God; and also the *Sardine Stone*, iv. 3.

The *Sapphire* (celestial blue, lapis-lazzuli, i. e. l'azzurro, or azure) is mentioned in the description of the pavement under the feet of God in Exod. xxiv. 10, and in the description of His Throne, Ezek. i. 26. *Plin.* xxxvii. 39, "in sapphiris aurum punctis collucet caruleis."

The *Emerald*, σμάραγδος, has been described above, iv. 3.

The *Sardonyx* is mentioned Exod. xxxix. 13. Ezek. xxviii. 13, of a flesh colour, tinged with hues of white. *Plin.* xxxvii. 23.

The *Sardius* has been described above, iv. 3.

The *Chrysolite* is mentioned in Ezek. xxviii. 20; it is described by *Pliny*, l. c. c. 42, as "brilliant, like the lustre of gold."

The *Beryl*: see Exod. xxviii. 20. Ezek. xxviii. 13; it is rendered by the LXX in Gen. ii. 12 by λίθος πράσινος, and is described by *Pliny* (l. c. c. 20) as like sea-green.

The *Topaz*, Exod. xxviii. 17. Ezek. xxviii. 13. Job xxviii. 19, described by *Strabo* and others in *Welst.* p. 845, as like gold; and by others as having a bright green tinge like glass.

The *Chrysoprasus* is compared by *Pliny* (xxxvii. 20) to the beryl, but more pale; and yet has a tint of the purple Amethyst. The *Jacinth* has been described above, ix. 17.

The *Amethyst*, Exod. xxviii. 19, of a purple or violet colour. As was already observed on v. 14, the *Twelve precious Stones* here specified, appear to be the same, or nearly so, as those on the Breastplate of the High Priest, Exod. xxviii. 17—20.

σμάραγδος, ²⁰ ὁ πέμπτος σαρδόνυξ, ὁ ἕκτος σάρδιον, ὁ ἑβδομος χρυσόλιθος, ὁ ὄγδοος βήρυλλος, ὁ ἔννατος τοπάζιον, ὁ δέκατος χρυσόπρασος, ὁ ἐνδέκατος ὑάκινθος, ὁ δωδέκατος ἀμέθυστος.

²¹ Καὶ οἱ δώδεκα πυλῶνες δώδεκα μαργαρίται, ἀνὰ εἷς ἕκαστος τῶν πυλώνων ἦν ἐξ ἑνὸς μαργαρίτου· καὶ ἡ πλατεία τῆς πόλεως χρυσίον καθαρὸν ὡς ὕαλος διαυγής.

p Isa. 60. 19.
Zech. 14. 7.
ch. 22. 5.

²² Καὶ ναὸν οὐκ εἶδον ἐν αὐτῇ· ὁ γὰρ Κύριος ὁ Θεὸς ὁ παντοκράτωρ ὁ ναὸς αὐτῆς ἐστὶ, καὶ τὸ Ἀρνίον. ²³ Καὶ ἡ πόλις οὐ χρεῖαν ἔχει τοῦ ἡλίου οὐδὲ τῆς σελήνης, ἵνα φαίνωσιν αὐτῇ· ἡ γὰρ δόξα τοῦ Θεοῦ ἐφώτισεν αὐτήν, καὶ ὁ λύχνος αὐτῆς τὸ Ἀρνίον.

q Isa. 60. 3.

r Isa. 60. 11, 20.
Zech. 14. 7.
ch. 3. 8. & 22. 5.
s Exod. 32. 32.
Ps. 69. 29.
Isa. 35. 8.
Joel 3. 17.
Phil. 4. 3.
ch. 3. 5.
& 13. 8. & 20. 12.
& 22. 14, 15.
a Ezek. 47. 1.
Zech. 14. 8.
b Gen. 2. 9.
Ezek. 47. 12.
ch. 2. 7.
& 21. 21.

²⁴ Καὶ περιπατήσουσι τὰ ἔθνη διὰ τοῦ φωτὸς αὐτῆς· καὶ οἱ βασιλεῖς τῆς γῆς φέρουσι τὴν δόξαν καὶ τιμὴν αὐτῶν εἰς αὐτήν· ²⁵ καὶ οἱ πυλῶνες αὐτῆς οὐ μὴ κλεισθῶσιν ἡμέρας, νύξ γὰρ οὐκ ἔσται ἐκεῖ· ²⁶ καὶ οἴσουσι τὴν δόξαν καὶ τὴν τιμὴν τῶν ἐθνῶν εἰς αὐτήν· ²⁷ καὶ οὐ μὴ εἰσέλθῃ εἰς αὐτήν πᾶν κοινὸν, καὶ ποιῶν βδέλυγμα καὶ ψεῦδος, εἰ μὴ οἱ γεγραμμένοι ἐν τῷ βιβλίῳ τῆς ζωῆς τοῦ Ἀρνίου.

XXII. ¹ Καὶ ἔδειξέ μοι ποταμὸν ὕδατος ζωῆς λαμπρὸν ὡς κρύσταλλον, ἐκπορευόμενον ἐκ τοῦ θρόνου τοῦ Θεοῦ καὶ τοῦ Ἀρνίου. ² Ἐν μέσῳ τῆς πλατείας αὐτῆς καὶ τοῦ ποταμοῦ, ἐντεῦθεν καὶ ἐκεῖθεν, ξύλον ζωῆς, ποιοῦν καρποὺς

Three are mentioned there, which seem to be designated here under other names, viz. the *ἀνθραξ* (carbunculus), *λιγύριον* (lygurius), and *ἀχάτης*. Many ancient Writers were of opinion that the *Chalcedony* mentioned here is a species of *Carbunculus*; and that the *Jacinth* of the Apocalypse is the same as the *λιγύριον*, and the *chrysoprasus* is similar to the *ἀχάτης*, on which see *Plin.* xxxvii. 54; and cp. the authorities in *Cornelius à Lapide* here.

Some other ancient Expositors have said, that the precious stones of the Aaronic Breastplate are *mainly* the same as those of the Heavenly Jerusalem; but that there are *some differences* between the two; and that thus the *substantial identity* of the Law and the Gospel is represented with some *circumstantial variety*. See *Andreas* here in *Catenâ*, p. 485.

All the glories of the Gospel shine, blended together in a heavenly splendour, on the Breastplate of our Great High Priest, Christ Jesus; all the Graces of Christians are like spangles and scintillations, effulgences and emanations, from His ineffable brightness; and their names are engraven upon His heart (Cant. viii. 6); and here they are set for ever in the foundations of the City of God.

Some ancient Expositors have proceeded to distinguish the symbolical meaning of these several jewels as follows: *jasper*, an emblem of the brightness of *faith*; *sapphire*, of *hope*; *chalcidony*, the flame of *love*.

Some have endeavoured to discover a symbolical representation of the special gifts of the several Apostles in those precious stones; but this seems to be an attempt of vain curiosity.

Their meaning may be more fully revealed hereafter in the Heavenly City itself. It is now enough to know that the City is adorned with *every precious stone*; that nothing is wanting in the Church for her growth in grace here, and for her everlasting glory hereafter.

^{22.} *ναὸν οὐκ εἶδον*] Temple saw I none in her, for God is all in all, 1 Cor. xv. 28. God Himself is her Temple, and the Lamb: a proof of Christ's Divinity.

^{24.} *καὶ περιπατήσουσι*] and the Gentiles shall walk through her light. "The people that walked in darkness have seen a great light, upon them hath the light shined" (Isa. ix. 2). The people who were covered with gross darkness, on them hath the light shined. "The Gentiles have come to Thy Light, and Kings to the brightness of Thy rising" (Isa. lx. 3); and they "shall walk through the light;" it shall be their element and atmosphere; they will be bathed in a pure ocean of cloudless light.

Some Versions render *διὰ*, by means of; but this seems too weak a translation; *διὰ* is used here as in 2 Cor. viii. 18, *διὰ πασῶν τῶν ἐκκλησιῶν*, Acts xiii. 49. Cp. *Winer*, § 47, p. 338; and *Andreas* here explains the words by *ἐν τῷ φωτί*.

The sense may be well explained from Isa. lx. 15. 19, "Whereas thou hast been forsaken, and hated, so that no man went through thee, I will make thee an eternal excellency,—the Lord shall be unto thee an everlasting light, and thy God thy glory."

The Prophecy, contained in the sixtieth chapter of Isaiah, which began to be fulfilled at the Epiphany of Christ, when the Gentiles walked by the light of the Star, and came by its leading to the Light of the World, and brought their gifts to Him, the first-fruits of the Gentiles, will have its perfect accomplishment in the heavenly Jerusalem; they will no longer walk by the light of some heavenly constellation external to themselves, and above their own path, but their *path itself* will be *light*. They will live and move in light. They will dwell in Him Who is the Light.

This Vision and that Prophecy afford mutually the best exposition, the one of the other. Compare here particularly Isa. lx. 6. 9. 11. 13. 17—21.

Elz. has *τῶν σωζομένων* after *ἔθνη*; but this is not in A, B, and in many Cursives and Versions, and is rejected by *Griesb.*, *Scholz*, *Lach.*, *Tisch.*, *Tregelles*.

—οἱ βασιλεῖς τῆς γῆς] and the Kings of the Earth bring their glory and honour into her. Here is a happy announcement; it declares that some "Kings of the Earth" will remain Christian unto the end, and that they will not join in the rebellion of the "Kings of the Earth" against Christ (xvi. 14; xviii. 9; xix. 19). Kings and Nations (xx. 8) are before mentioned as rising up against Christ, but here they are tributary to Him.

^{25.} *οἱ πυλῶνες αὐτῆς*] Her gates shall not be shut by day: for there shall be no night there. The γὰρ, for, explains the reason why he had not mentioned *night* as well as *day*. "Her gates shall not be shut by day;" and he does not add, "or by night,"—for, "night shall not be there."

The Church of Christ shall have no longer any enemies to fear; her people will be secure for ever from the assaults of Sin and Satan. Cp. Isa. lx. 11. Zech. xiv. 7. What the ancient Poets sang of, as a Vision of the Golden Age, with its "aperitis otia portis," will then be fully realized.

Observe that the Gates of the heavenly City are not called by the word usually employed to describe the gates of a City (*πύλαι*), which never occurs in the Apocalypse, but by *πυλῶνες*, which occurs *eleven times*, and which commonly, and always in the other books of the New Testament, signifies the gate of a house. See Matt. xxvi. 71. Luke xvi. 20. Acts x. 17; xii. 13, 14; xiv. 13. The City of the Heavenly Jerusalem, although it is described here as of immense size (see v. 17), is but *one House*. All will dwell together as brethren, as children of the same Heavenly Father, in one *Everlasting Home*. "In My Father's House are many Mansions," John xiv. 2.

^{26.}] Cp. Isa. lx. 6—13; lxvi. 12.

^{27.}] Cp. Isa. xxxv. 8; lii. 1.

The RIVER of LIFE. The TREE of LIFE. CH. XXII. 1, 2. καὶ ἔδειξέ μοι] And he showed me a river of water of life, clear as crystal, proceeding out of the throne of God and of the Lamb; and in the midst of the broadway thereof—the tree of life. Contrast this with the *πλατεία*, or broadway,

δώδεκα, κατὰ μῆνα ἕκαστον ἀποδιδούν τὸν καρπὸν αὐτοῦ, καὶ τὰ φύλλα τοῦ ξύλου εἰς θεραπείαν τῶν ἐθνῶν.

^{3 c} Καὶ πᾶν κατάθεμα οὐκ ἔσται ἔτι· καὶ ὁ θρόνος τοῦ Θεοῦ καὶ τοῦ Ἀρνίου ἐν αὐτῇ ἔσται· καὶ οἱ δοῦλοι αὐτοῦ λατρεύσουσιν αὐτῷ, ^{4 d} καὶ ὄψονται τὸ πρόσωπον αὐτοῦ, καὶ τὸ ὄνομα αὐτοῦ ἐπὶ τῶν μετώπων αὐτῶν· ^{5 e} καὶ νύξ οὐκ ἔσται ἔτι, καὶ οὐχ ἔξουσιν χρεῖαν λύχνου καὶ φωτὸς, ὅτι Κύριος ὁ Θεὸς φωτιεῖ ἐπ' αὐτοὺς, καὶ βασιλεύσουσιν εἰς τοὺς αἰῶνας τῶν αἰώνων.

^{6 f} Καὶ εἶπέ μοι, Οὗτοι οἱ λόγοι πιστοὶ καὶ ἀληθινοί· καὶ Κύριος ὁ Θεὸς τῶν πνευμάτων τῶν προφητῶν ἀπέστειλε τὸν ἄγγελον αὐτοῦ δείξαι τοῖς δούλοις αὐτοῦ ὅτι δεῖ γενέσθαι ἐν τάχει· ^{7 g} καὶ ἰδοὺ ἔρχομαι ταχύ· μακάριος ὁ τηρῶν τοὺς λόγους τῆς προφητείας τοῦ βιβλίου τούτου.

^{8 h} Καγὼ Ἰωάννης ὁ ἀκούων καὶ βλέπων ταῦτα· καὶ ὅτε ἤκουσα καὶ ἔβλεπον, ἔπεσα προσκυνῆσαι ἔμπροσθεν τῶν ποδῶν τοῦ ἀγγέλου τοῦ δεικνύοντός μοι

d Matt. 5. 8.

1 Cor. 13. 12.

1 John 3. 2.

ch. 3. 12.

e Ps. 36. 10.

Isa. 60. 19, 20.

Zech. 14. 6, 7.

ch. 21. 23.

f ch. 1. 1.

& 19. 9. & 21. 5.

g ch. 1. 3. & 3. 11.

h Acts 10. 26.

& 14. 14.

ch. 19. 10.

of the Great City, where the dead bodies of the Two Witnesses lay (xi. 8).

Here the types of Paradise, as depicted in the Old Testament (see Gen. ii. 9, 10; iii. 22), are fulfilled. Here is the *Tree of Life*, and the *River* flowing out of Eden. Here, therefore, is a testimony to the truth and divine origin of the History of Genesis.

Here also is an evidence of the harmonious symmetry and perfect unity of Holy Scripture, from the beginning of Genesis, the first book of the Old Testament, to the end of the Apocalypse, the last book of the New.

The Two Witnesses agree in their testimony.

The Book of Genesis reveals Almighty God, the Creator of all things very good; Adam, formed from the earth; Eve, taken from his side; the Serpent in Paradise; Man tempted, and a curse pronounced on him for disobedience in eating the fruit of the forbidden tree; and driven from Eden; and the way of the Tree of Life guarded by a flaming sword; and the promise made in mercy, that the seed of the Woman should bruise the Serpent's head.

Pass now from the first chapters of Genesis to the last of the Apocalypse. The same God is revealed, seated on His throne: Heaven and Earth adore Him: Man also is there; Adam is there in Christ, the Second Adam: Eve also is there, in the Bride of the Second Adam, the Church: Paradise also is there, not lost, but regained: and the Tree of Life, no longer fenced with a flaming brand, but open to all, for the healing of the nations. And there "is no more curse."

We have also seen the discomfiture of the *Old Serpent* (xx. 2).

According to the first prophecy of Scripture, Christ has bruised the Serpent's head, and has chained him, and has cast him into the lake of fire and brimstone, there to remain for ever (xx. 10).

Here is clear evidence of oneness in the design and texture of the Sacred Volume; and when we consider, that a period of more than five thousand years separates the events of the Book of Genesis from those of the Apocalypse, we may here recognize a proof, that the History and the Prophecy are from the same Divine Hand, and that the events which they describe are under the control of Him with Whom "a thousand Years are as one Day." (Ps. xc. 4. 2 Pet. iii. 8.)

The *River of Life* flows from the throne of God and the Lamb. All grace and glory given to men flows from the Father, through the Son. See above on 2 Cor. xiii. 13.

In the earthly Paradise there were four rivers issuing from one source, and flowing out of Eden.

There is but one River in the Heavenly City; and it does not flow out of the City. All drink there of the same joys as out of a river (Ps. xxxvi. 8); and no one who is outside the city can taste them; see v. 15.

The River of life flows through the Broadway of the City, and the *Tree of Life* stands on each side of the River, and bears perennial fruitage, in never-ending succession; expressed by "every month," and "twelve fruits;" and this supply is accessible to all, to satisfy the hunger and thirst of all for life everlasting. "Blessed are they that do hunger and thirst after righteousness, for they shall be filled." (Matt. v. 6.)

— τὰ φύλλα τοῦ ξύλου] the leaves of the Tree are for the healing of the Nations. The *Tree of Life* in the midst of the heavenly Jerusalem, is like a pattern of the Cross of Christ, on the Earthly Calvary, which was outside the literal Jerusalem. For the virtue

of the Cross is not limited to the Jews, but it extends to all Nations of the Earth, who are within the Christian Sion. Here is "gloria sanctæ crucis," says Bede, through the ministry of the Apostles. In the preaching of the Gospel, the Tree of the Cross is ever bearing leaves for the healing of the Nations. Cp. Aug.?

The Cross of Christ was outside the literal Jerusalem, because Christ died for all who, in the day of grace, would believe in Him. (1 Tim. iv. 10.)

But the Tree of Life is in the inside of the heavenly Jerusalem; for it is accessible only to those who, in the time of their earthly probation, have accepted God's offers in Christ.

The Tree of Life in the book of Genesis, and the Cross of Christ, are both described by the same word, ξύλον. Cp. Gen. ii. 9, LXX, and Gal. iii. 13, where see note. 1 Pet. ii. 24.

By eating of the fruit of the forbidden Tree, the first Adam was excluded from Paradise, and from access to the Tree of Life. But the Obedience of the Second Adam more than compensated for the Disobedience of the First Adam. Christ, by His Agony in the Garden of Gethsemane, and by hanging on the Tree in Calvary, and by His glorious Resurrection from the Grave in the Garden, has restored us to Paradise and raised us to Heaven. The Tree of His Death has become to us the Tree of Life. It grows on both sides of the river, because it is efficacious for the salvation of all men in every age and country. The Cross of Christ is like the Cities of Refuge on both sides of the River Jordan (Deut. xix. Josh. xx.). It bears fruits for Eternity; its leaves are for the healing of the Nations, who before were "without Christ, aliens from the commonwealth of Israel, strangers from the covenants of promise" (Eph. ii. 12), like the traveller on his journey from Jerusalem to Jericho, lying half dead by the wayside (see Luke x. 30); but now they are made nigh by the blood of Christ, and are no more strangers and foreigners, but fellow-citizens with the saints (Eph. ii. 13. 19), and have "come unto Mount Sion, unto the City of the living God, the heavenly Jerusalem, and to an innumerable company of Angels, to the general assembly and Church of the first-born, which are written in heaven" (Heb. xii. 22, 23); in the "Jerusalem which is above, which is the Mother of us all" (Gal. iv. 26).

3. καὶ πᾶν κατάθεμα οὐκ ἔσται ἔτι] And there shall no more be any curse. In Paradise, Almighty God pronounced a curse on the first Adam after the Fall. "Cursed is the ground for thy sake: in sorrow shalt thou eat of it all the days of thy life" (Gen. iii. 17). That curse was pronounced on him for his disobedience, in eating of the forbidden Tree. But the Second Adam, Who died on the Tree, has taken away, by His obedience, the curse pronounced on the first Adam and his race for disobedience. It was indeed said, "Cursed is he that continueth not in all that is written in the Law," and "Cursed is he that hangeth on a tree" (Deut. xxvii. 26; xxi. 23). But by "being made a curse for us," Christ has taken away the curse, that all may be blessed in Him, and live for evermore (see on Gal. iii. 13, 14).

4. καὶ ὄψονται τὸ πρόσωπον αὐτοῦ] and they shall see His face, the face of God; which the wicked will never see. Then faith will be swallowed up in sight; in the beatific Vision of God. And His Name shall be upon their foreheads—an eternal trophy of their Victory and glorious reward in heaven for their constancy and courage in boldly confessing Him before men. Cp. note above on xiii. 16.

7. ἰδοὺ ἔρχομαι ταχύ] Behold, I come quickly: and still He is not yet come. See above, i. 1, and 2 Pet. iii. 8.

ταῦτα. ⁹ Καὶ λέγει μοι, Ὁρα μὴ σύνδουλός σου εἶμι, καὶ τῶν ἀδελφῶν σου τῶν προφητῶν, καὶ τῶν τηρούντων τοὺς λόγους τοῦ βιβλίου τούτου τῷ Θεῷ προσκύνησον.

i Dan. 8. 26.
& 12. 4. ch. 1. 3.

k 2 Tim. 3. 23.

l Isa. 40. 10.
& 62. 11.
ch. 20. 12.
m Isa. 41. 4.
& 44. 6. & 48. 11.
ch. 1. 8, 11.
& 21. 6.
n 1 John 3. 23.

o 1 Cor. 6. 10.
Eph. 5. 5.
Phil. 3. 2.
Col. 3. 6.
ch. 21. 8.
p Num. 24. 17.
Isa. 11. 10.
Rom. 15. 12.
2 Pet. 1. 19.
ch. 1. 1. & 5. 5.

¹⁰ Καὶ λέγει μοι, Μὴ σφραγίσῃς τοὺς λόγους τῆς προφητείας τοῦ βιβλίου τούτου· ὁ καιρὸς γὰρ ἐγγύς ἐστιν. ¹¹ ὁ ἀδικῶν ἀδικησάτω ἔτι, καὶ ὁ ῥυπαρὸς ῥυπαρευθήτω ἔτι· καὶ ὁ δίκαιος δικαιοσύνην ποιησάτω ἔτι, καὶ ὁ ἅγιος ἁγιασθήτω ἔτι. ¹² Ἰδοὺ, ἔρχομαι ταχὺ, καὶ ὁ μισθός μου μετ' ἐμοῦ, ἀποδοῦναι ἐκάστῳ ὡς τὸ ἔργον αὐτοῦ ἔσται. ¹³ Ἐγὼ τὸ Ἀλφα καὶ τὸ Ω, ἀρχὴ καὶ τέλος, ὁ πρῶτος καὶ ὁ ἔσχατος.

¹⁴ Μακάριοι οἱ ποιοῦντες τὰς ἐντολὰς αὐτοῦ, ἵνα ἔσται ἡ ἐξουσία αὐτῶν ἐπὶ τὸ ξύλον τῆς ζωῆς, καὶ τοῖς πυλῶσιν εἰσέλθωσιν εἰς τὴν πόλιν. ¹⁵ Ἐξω οἱ κύνες καὶ οἱ φαρμακοὶ, καὶ οἱ πόρνοι καὶ οἱ φονεῖς, καὶ οἱ εἰδωολάτραι, καὶ πᾶς φιλῶν καὶ ποιῶν ψεῦδος.

¹⁶ Ἐγὼ Ἰησοῦς ἔπεμψα τὸν ἄγγελόν μου μαρτυρῆσαι ὑμῖν ταῦτα ταῖς ἐκκλησίαις· ἐγὼ εἶμι ἡ ῥίζα καὶ τὸ γένος Δαυὶδ, ὁ ἀστὴρ ὁ λαμπρὸς ὁ πρω-

9. Ὁρα μὴ] *see thou do it not.* See note above, on xix. 10.
— σύνδουλός σου εἶμι] *I am the fellow-servant of thee, and of thy brethren the Prophets.*

The Prophets were St. John's brethren, and this spiritual brotherhood is displayed in the Apocalypse. He and they were inspired by the same Spirit, and, as is here observed by an ancient Expositor, "how many words of Isaiah, how many words of Zechariah, do we read in this book of St. John!" See above, *Introduction*, pp. 150—152.

Here is one of the many uses of the Apocalypse, "the Revelation of JESUS CHRIST" (i. 1). In it Jesus Christ Himself, the Everlasting Word of God, avouches the Divine Inspiration of the Old Testament. Here the Incarnate Word sets His seal on the Written Word. By adopting the language of the ancient Hebrew Prophets in the Apocalypse, and by using it as His own, He proclaims it to be the language of God.

10. μὴ σφραγίσῃς τοὺς λόγους] *Seal not the words of the Prophecy of this Book.* For the reason of this prohibition see above, on x. 4.

11. ὁ ἀδικῶν ἀδικησάτω ἔτι] *he that is unjust, let him be unjust still, and he that is righteous, let him work righteousness still.* Elz. has δικαιωθήτω here; but A, B have δικαιοσύνην ποιησάτω, and so many other MSS. and several Versions, and Griesb., Scholz, Lach., Tisch.

Here is a remarkable testimony to the liberty of the human will; and this testimony is coupled with emphatic declarations of the abundance and freeness of divine grace (see v. 17).

These words supply a Divine reply to the objection made by some to the Christian Dispensation, on the plea of the prevalence of evil in countries professing Christianity, and using Christianity itself as a pretext for the commission of evil.

"The objections against all this (says Bishop Butler), from the perversion of Christianity, and from the supposition of its having had but little good influence, however innocently they may be proposed, yet cannot be insisted upon as conclusive, upon any principles but such as lead to downright Atheism, because the manifestation of the law of nature by reason, which upon all principles of Theism, must have been from God, has been perverted and rendered ineffectual in the same manner. It may, indeed, I think, truly be said, that the good effects of Christianity have not been small; nor its supposed ill effects, any effects at all of it, properly speaking. Perhaps too, the things themselves done have been exaggerated, and if not, Christianity hath been often only a pretence; and the same evils, in the main, would have been done upon some other pretence. However, great and shocking as the corruptions and abuses of it have really been, they cannot be insisted upon as arguments against it, upon principles of Theism. For one cannot proceed one step in reasoning upon Natural Religion, any more than upon Christianity, without laying it down as a first principle, that the Dispensations of Providence are not to be judged of by their perversions, but by their genuine tendencies; not by what they do actually seem to effect, but by what they would effect, if Mankind did their part: that part, which is justly put and left upon them. It is altogether as much the language of one as the other: 'he that is unjust, let him be unjust still, and he that is holy, let him be holy still' (Rev. xxii. 11). The Light of Reason does not, any more than that of Revelation, force men to submit to its authority: both admonish them of what they ought to do and avoid, together with

the consequences of each, and after this they leave them at full liberty to act just as they please, till the appointed time of Judgment. Every moment's experience shows, that this is God's general rule of Government" (Bishop Butler, *Analog.* part ii. ch. i.).

12. ὁ μισθός μου μετ' ἐμοῦ] *My reward is with Me.* See Isa. xl. 10; liii. 11, and Clemens Romanus, § 34.

14. μακάριοι] *Blessed are they that do His commandments, that their authority (ἡ ἐξουσία αὐτῶν) may be upon (ἐπὶ) the Tree of Life (i. e. may extend to it, and may be exercised upon it, so that they may take and eat of its fruit), and that they may enter by the gates into the City.*

The reading of this text is somewhat doubtful.

Elz. has οἱ ποιοῦντες τὰς ἐντολὰς αὐτοῦ, *they that do His commandments*; and this reading is authorized by B and many cursive MSS., and by the Coptic, Syriac, and Arabic Versions, and by Tertullian, Cyprian, and Andreas. It seems also to be confirmed by the consideration, that by breaking God's commandment, Man lost his access to the tree of life, and that he cannot hope to regain an approach to it except by keeping His commandments. As our Lord Himself says, "If thou wilt enter into life, keep the commandments" (Matt. xix. 17).

But the Alexandrine MS. and N have οἱ πλύνοντες τὰς στολὰς αὐτῶν, *they who wash their robes*; and so some few Cursives (one in Scrivener, p. 560, has πλύναντες), and the Vulgate, Armenian, and Æthiopic Versions: and this reading has been adopted by Lachmann, Tischendorf, and Tregelles.

The other reading seems to be preferable. It is not so likely that a copyist would have been perplexed by the latter reading, which is clearly explained by another passage in the Apocalypse (vii. 14), where there is no such variety in the MSS. But some transcribers might perhaps have been embarrassed by the other reading, as seeming, in their opinion, to give some countenance to Pelagian tenets; and might therefore have altered it to the reading in A and N.

The doctrine of the text, as compared with other passages of Holy Scripture, clearly is, that though it is by the Death of Christ alone, that men have access to the Tree of life; yet none can derive any benefit from that only access, unless they walk in the way of Obedience to God's Commandments. The Gate is opened to all; but it is open in vain to those who do not go along the Road which leads up to the Gate, and passes through it.

15. ἔξω οἱ κύνες] *without are dogs.* See Phil. iii. 2. Matt. vii. 6; xiii. 48. This is quoted by S. Hippolytus, de Christo, § 66, p. 35, ed. Lagarde. The words may perhaps be rendered *Away, ye dogs!* as ἐκὰς, ἐκὰς ἐστε, βέβηλοι, "Procul, o procul este profani." Cp. the comment above, ix. 14; xvi. 12; and Ps. vi. 8; cxix. 115, and the inscription on the doors of Belgian Churches, "Hunden uyt Godt's Tempel," and Dusterdieck here, "Hinaus die Hunde."

16. ἐγὼ εἶμι] *I am the root and the offspring of David*: being both God and Man. See above, v. 5, and our Lord's question, Matt. xxii. 41—45.

— ὁ ἀστὴρ] *the bright and Morning Star.* Which rose from the darkness of the Grave, and by that Resurrection on the Morning of the first Lord's Day brought Life and Immortality to Light. See above, ii. 28.

ἵνός. 17^a Καὶ τὸ Πνεῦμα καὶ ἡ νύμφη λέγουσιν, Ἔρχου καὶ ὁ ἀκούων εἰπάτω, Ἔρχου. Καὶ ὁ διψῶν ἐρχέσθω, ὁ θέλων λαβέτω ὕδωρ ζωῆς δωρεάν. q Isa. 55. 1.
John 7. 37.
ch. 21. 6.

18^a Μαρτυρῶ ἐγὼ παντὶ τῷ ἀκούοντι τοὺς λόγους τῆς προφητείας τοῦ βιβλίου τούτου· ἐάν τις ἐπιθῇ ἐπ' αὐτὰ, ἐπιθήσει ὁ Θεὸς ἐπ' αὐτὸν τὰς πληγὰς τὰς γεγραμμένας ἐν τῷ βιβλίῳ τούτῳ. 19^a Καὶ ἐάν τις ἀφέλῃ ἀπὸ τῶν λόγων τοῦ βιβλίου τῆς προφητείας ταύτης ἀφελεῖ ὁ Θεὸς τὸ μέρος αὐτοῦ ἀπὸ τοῦ ξύλου τῆς ζωῆς, καὶ ἐκ τῆς πόλεως τῆς ἁγίας τῶν γεγραμμένων ἐν τῷ βιβλίῳ τούτῳ. r Exod. 32. 33.
Deut. 4. 2.
& 12. 32.
Ps. 69. 29.
Prov. 30. 6.
ch. 3. 5. & 13. 8.
& 17. 8. & 20. 12.
& 21. 27.

20^a Λέγει ὁ μαρτυρῶν ταῦτα, Ναὶ ἔρχομαι ταχύ· Ἀμήν· ἔρχου, Κύριε Ἰησοῦ.

21^a Ἡ χάρις τοῦ Κυρίου Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ μετὰ πάντων τῶν ἁγίων. Ἀμήν.

17. καὶ τὸ Πνεῦμα] *And the Spirit and the Bride say, Come . . . Amen, Come, Lord Jesus!* (v. 20,) words appropriate to all who wait patiently and long earnestly for His coming, and specially suitable in the mouth of the beloved Disciple and Evangelist, *St. John*, whose life was prolonged, amid trials and sufferings, far beyond that of any other Apostle, and who had heard the Lord's saying concerning himself, "If I will that he tarry till I come, what is that to thee?" See above, on John xxi. 22, 23.

18. ἐάν τις ἐπιθῇ ἐπ' αὐτὰ] *if any one adds to them, God will add to him the plagues that are written in this book.* Here is a prophetic protest against the spurious Revelations forged by false Teachers in the name of Apostles; of which some account may be seen in *Fabricius*, *Codex Apocr. N. T.* pt. ii. p. 935. *Jones* on the Canon, i. pp. 26—33. *Lücke*, *Commentar*, pp. 45—50.

Here also is a Prophetic Protest against all *additions* to the words of HOLY SCRIPTURE; whether those additions be made by unwritten traditions, or by Apocryphal books, as of equal authority with Holy Scripture. See above, on 2 Pet. iii. 15, 16, p. 95.

19. ἀπὸ τοῦ ξύλου] *from the tree of life.* So A, N, B, and many Cursives and Versions, and so *Scholz*, *Lach.*, *Tregelles*, *Tisch.* *Elz.* has ἀπὸ βίβλου, and omits τῷ, which is in A, N, before βιβλίῳ.

— τῶν γεγραμμένων] *of those that are written in this book.* *Elz.* has καὶ before τῶν, but καὶ is not in A, B, and is rejected by *Griesb.*, *Scholz*, *Lach.*, *Tisch.* The reading of the text is important as declaring that the Holy City belongs to those who are written in this Book.

20.] After ταῦτα N inserts εἶναι, and omits ἀμήν.

— ἀμήν] *Elz.* adds ναὶ, which is not in A, B.

21. ἡ χάρις] *The Grace of the Lord Jesus Christ be with all the Saints.* Χριστοῦ is not in A or N; but it is in B. The words τῶν ἁγίων are not in A, and are omitted by *Lach.* and *Tisch.*; but they are in N, B, and in many Cursives, and in some MSS. of the *Vulgate*, and in the *Slavonic*, *Coptic*, *Syriac*, and *Armenian* Versions. The word Ἀμήν, which is omitted by A, and by *Lach.* and *Tisch.*, is found in N and B, and most Cursives and Versions.

The Grace of our Lord Jesus Christ. Here is the *Apostolic Benediction*, which concludes all the Epistles of *St. Paul*, and was the token of his Epistles, and therefore was not used by any other Apostle, as far as we know, in any Epistle written during *St. Paul's lifetime* (see above, on 1 Thess. v. 28), but was reserved for *St. Paul's* use, as the badge of his Epistles, to assure the Church of their genuineness.

That Benediction ends the Apocalypse, written long after *St. Paul's* death. It closes the Canon of Holy Scripture, and is, as it were, the Seal of the Bible. It is thus commended to the reverent use of the Church Universal, which, having received this Benediction from the Holy Ghost writing by *St. Paul* and *St. John*, has ever used it in her Liturgies. Thus she proclaims to all, that her strength is derived from the free *grace* of God in Christ; and she prays for an outpouring of that *grace* on all, and she ministers the appointed means of *grace* to all, in order that all, thankfully receiving God's *grace*, may attain to His everlasting *glory*, in the Holy City, the Heavenly Jerusalem; to which may He bring us all, who read this Book, in His infinite love and mercy, through JESUS CHRIST our LORD. AMEN.

Buyerische
Staatsbibliothek
München

ΤΩΙ ΘΕΩΙ ΔΟΞΑ.

AN INDEX

TO THE

INTRODUCTIONS AND NOTES

CONTAINED IN

DR. WORDSWORTH'S EDITION

OF

THE GREEK TESTAMENT.

NEW EDITION.

LONDON:

RIVINGTONS, WATERLOO PLACE.

1862.

AN INDEX

INTRODUCTION AND NOTES

BY HENRY WOODHOUSE

LONDON:
GILBERT AND RIVINGTON, PRINTERS,
ST. JOHN'S SQUARE.

THE GREEK TESTAMENT

NEW EDITION

LONDON:

RIVINGTON, WATERLOO PLACE

1861

NOTICE.

As some persons who possess Dr. Wordsworth's Edition of the Greek Testament, may be desirous of binding it in Two Volumes, the following Titles are inserted for that purpose.

The present Index was made by the Rev. John Twycross, of the Charter House, and by another friend of the Editor.

THE
NEW TESTAMENT

OF OUR LORD AND SAVIOUR

JESUS CHRIST

WITH A

INTRODUCTION AND NOTES

BY THE REV. J. W. H. W. H. W. H.

OF THE UNIVERSITY OF OXFORD

IN TWO VOLUMES

VOL. II.

ST. PAUL'S EPISTLES; THE GOSPEL OF ST. MARK;
THE BOOK OF REVELATION; AND INDEX.

NEW EDITION.

LONDON:

WILLIAMS AND WATKINS, 11, PATERNOSTER ROW.

1861.

THE
NEW TESTAMENT

OF OUR LORD AND SAVIOUR

JESUS CHRIST,

In the Original Greek:

WITH

INTRODUCTIONS AND NOTES,

BY

CHR. WORDSWORTH, D.D.

CANON OF WESTMINSTER;

AND VICAR OF STANFORD IN THE VALE, BERKS.

VOL. I.

THE FOUR GOSPELS, AND ACTS OF THE APOSTLES.

NEW EDITION.

LONDON:

RIVINGTONS, WATERLOO PLACE.

1862.

NEW TESTAMENT

OF THE GREEK AND LATIN TEXTS

AND THE ORIGINAL GREEK

AND THE ORIGINAL GREEK

INTRODUCTION AND NOTES

THE GREEK TEXTS

THE GREEK TEXTS

VOL. I

THE FOUR GOSPELS AND ACTS OF THE APOSTLES

NEW EDITION

LONDON

EDWARD BARNES

1851

INDEX I.

OF

WORDS, NAMES, AND PHRASES.

IN THE INDEXES THE FOLLOWING ABBREVIATIONS ARE EMPLOYED :

M. = Matthew.
Mk. = Mark.
L. = Luke.
J. = John (Gospel).
A. = Acts.
R. = Romans.

1 C. = 1 Corinthians.
2 C. = 2 Corinthians.
G. = Galatians.
E. = Ephesians.
P. = Philippians.
C. = Colossians.

1 Th. = 1 Thessalonians.
2 Th. = 2 Thessalonians.
1 Ti. = 1 Timothy.
2 Ti. = 2 Timothy.
Tit. = Titus.

Pn. = Philemon.
Heb. = Hebrews.
Jam. = James.
1 P. = 1 Peter.
2 P. = 2 Peter.

1 J. = 1 John.
2 J. = 2 John.
3 J. = 3 John.
Jud. = Jude.
Rev. = Revelation.

'Αββᾶ, Mk. xiv. 36.
'Αβιά, L. i. 5.
'Αβιάθαρ, Mk. ii. 26.
'Αβιούδ, M. i. 13.
'Αβραάμ, L. xvi. 22; J. viii. 37.
ἄβυσσος, L. viii. 31; Rev. ix. 1.
ἄγαθος, A. xi. 28; xxi. 10.
ἀγαθός, M. xix. 17; L. xviii. 19.
ἀγαθοργῶν, A. xiv. 17.
ἀγαλλιασθῆναι, J. v. 35; ἡγαλλιάσατο, J. viii. 56.
ἐν ἀγαλλιάσει, A. ii. 46.
ἀγαπάω, Mk. x. 21; J. xi. 5; xxi. 15—17.
ἀγάπη, 1 C. xiii. 1; ἀγάπαι, 1 C. xi. 20, 21; 2 P. ii. 13; ἀγάπη and φιλαδελφία, 2 P. i. 7; ἐν ἀγάπῃ, E. i. 4.
ἀγαπητός, M. xvii. 5.
τὸ ἄγαρ, G. iv. 25.
ἀγγαρεύω, M. v. 41; xxvii. 32; Mk. xv. 21.
ἀγγελία, 1 J. i. 5.
ἄγγελος, M. xviii. 10; xxviii. 2; A. v. 19; vii. 53; xii. 21—23; ἄγγελοι ἐκλεκτοί, 1 Ti. v. 21; ἄγ. Σατάν, 2 C. xii. 7.
ἄγε, with the plural noun or participle, Jam. iv. 13; v. 1.
ἀγει, L. xxiv. 21; and see also M. xiv. 6; A. xix. 38.
ἀγενεαλόγητος, Heb. vii. 3.
ἀγιαζώ, M. vi. 9; J. xvii. 17. 19; Heb. ii. 11.
ἀγιασμός, 1 C. i. 30; 1 P. i. 2; R. vi. 19.
ἄγιος, Mk. i. 24; L. iv. 34; J. xvii. 17; 1 Th. i. 1; 1 C. i. 2; R. i. 7.
ἄγκιστρον, M. xvii. 27.
ἄγκυρα, A. xxvii. 29, 30. 40.
ἀγνάφου βράκους, M. ix. 16.
ἀγνίζω, J. xi. 55; A. xx. 24. 26; xxiv. 18.
ἀγνοέω, A. xiii. 27; xv. 18; xvii. 23; xxiii. 25; R. ii. 4; 1 C. x. 1; 1 Ti. i. 13.
ἄγνοια, 1 P. i. 14.
ἀγορά, Mk. vii. 4; A. xvii. 17.
ἀγοράζω, 1 C. vi. 20.
ἀγοραιοὶ ἀγονται, A. xix. 38.
ἀγρός αἵματος, M. xxvii. 8.
ἄγω, M. xiv. 6.
ἀγωγή, 2 Ti. iii. 10.
ἀγωνίζω, L. xiii. 24.
ἀδελφὴν γυναῖκα, 1 C. ix. 5.
ἀδελφός, M. xii. 46; xiii. 55; Mk. vi. 3; ἀδελφοί, "cousins," J. ii. 12. οἱ ἀδελφοί Κυρίου, 1 C. ix. 5; xxii. 5; οἱ ἀδελφοί, "the laity," A. xv. 3. 23.
ἀδελφότης, 1 P. ii. 17.
ἀδελος, 1 C. xiv. 8.
ἀδελότης, 1 Ti. vi. 11.
ἀδιάκριτος, Ja. iii. 17; Rev. ix. 10.
ἀδιαλείπτως, 1 Th. v. 17.
ἀδικέω, L. x. 19; 1 C. vi. 7.
κριτὴς τῆς ἀδικίας, L. xviii. 6.
ἀδικος, L. xvi. 11.
ἀδόκιμος, 1 C. ix. 27; Tit. i. 16.
ἄδου πύλαι, M. xvi. 18; ἐν τῷ ἄδῃ, L. xvi. 23; εἰς ἄδην, A. ii. 27.

'Αδραμυττηνός, A. xxvii. 2.
'Αδρία, "the Mediterranean," A. xxvii. 27.
ἀετοί, M. xxiv. 28.
ἄζυμοι, 1 C. v. 7.
ἡμέραι τῶν Ἀζύμων, A. xii. 3.
ἄζωτον, A. viii. 40.
ἀήρ and αἰθήρ, A. xxii. 23; E. ii. 2; 1 Ti. i. 19; Rev. xvi. 17.
ἄθεος, E. ii. 12.
ἀθετῶ, G. ii. 21; iii. 15; 2 P. ii. 10.
αἰγιαλός, A. xxi. 5; xxvii. 39.
αἰδώς, 1 Ti. ii. 9; Heb. xii. 28; αἰδ. and σωφροσύνη, 1 Ti. ii. 9.
αἷμα ἀθῶν, M. xxvii. 4; αἵματα, J. i. 13; ἀπέχεσθαι ἀπὸ τοῦ αἵματος, A. xv. 20; ἐν τῷ αἵματί σου, Rev. v. 9.
αἱματεκχυσία, Heb. ix. 22.
αἰνιγμα, 1 C. xiii. 12.
αἶνος, M. xxi. 16.
αἰνούντων τὸν Θεόν, L. ii. 13.
Αἰνών, J. iii. 23.
αἶρειν, "auferre," L. xi. 52. αἶρε αὐτόν, A. ii. 36. ὁ αἶρων τὴν ἀμαρτίαν, J. i. 29; αἶρας, 1 C. vi. 15.
αἶρεσις, 1 C. xi. 19; 2 P. ii. 1; A. v. 17; xv. 5; xxiv. 5; ἡ οὐσα αἶρεσις, A. v. 17; αἰρέσεις ἀπωλείας, M. xxiv. 15; Jam. i. 25; 2 P. ii. 1.
αἰρετικός, Tit. iii. 10.
αἰσχροκερδῆ, 1 Th. ii. 5; 1 Ti. iii. 3. 8; Tit. i. 7.
αἰσχροτόης, E. v. 4.
αἰτεῖν and ἐρωτᾶν, J. xvi. 23; 1 J. v. 16.
αἰτία, M. xix. 10; κατὰ πᾶσαν αἰτίαν, xix. 3.
αἰτιώματα, A. xxv. 7.
αἰφνίδιος, 1 Th. v. 2; L. xxi. 34.
αἰχμαλωτίζομαι, L. xxi. 24.
αἰών, M. xxv. 46; εἰς τὸν αἰῶνα, xii. 32; εἰς τοὺς αἰῶνας, vi. 13; L. i. 33; οὐ μὴ εἰς τὸν αἰῶνα, J. viii. 51, 52; xi. 26; xiii. 8; ἀπ' αἰῶνος, A. iii. 21; ἐκ τοῦ ἐνεστῶτος αἰῶνος πονηροῦ, G. i. 4; ἀπὸ τῶν αἰώνων καὶ ἀπὸ τῶν γενεῶν, C. i. 26; τοὺς αἰῶνας, "the universe," Heb. i. 2; αἰὼν ὁ μέλλων, ἡβρ. עוֹלָם, Heb. ii. 5; vi. 5; 1 C. xv. 26; R. viii. 24; 2 P. iii. 13.
αἰώνιος, M. xxv. 46; 2 Th. i. 9; Mk. ix. 44—48; αἰωνίαν, this feminine form found only in 2 Th. ii. 16, and in Heb. ix. 12; Tit. i. 1.
ἀκαθαρσία, R. vi. 19; ἐξ ἀκαθ., 1 Th. ii. 3.
ἀκαιρέομαι, P. iv. 10.
ἀκαρπος, Jud. 12.
ἀκατακάλυπτος, 1 C. xi. 5.
ἀκατάπαυστος, 2 P. ii. 14.
ἀκατάσχετος, Jam. iii. 8.
'Ακελδαμά, A. i. 19.
ἀκμήν, M. xv. 16.
ἀκοή, M. iv. 24; R. x. 16; λόγος ἀκοῆς, 1 Th. ii. 13; Heb. iv. 2; ἀκ. πίστεως, G. iii. 12.
ἀκολουθέω, M. viii. 22; L. xviii. 28; J. x.

5; xxi. 19; ἠκολουθήσαμεν, L. xviii. 28; ἐκ πνευματικῆς ἀκολουθούσης πέτρας, 1 C. x. 4.
ἀκούω φωνῆν and ἀκ. φωνῆς, A. ix. 7; ἀκ. with an accusative, A. ix. 7; J. viii. 43; E. iii. 2; Rev. i. 2, 3; ἤκουε, "was listening," L. x. 39; 1 C. xiv. 2.
ἀκρασία, 1 C. vii. 5.
ἀκριβέστατος, A. xxvi. 5.
ἀκριβέστερον, A. xxiv. 22.
ἀκριβῶς περιπατεῖν, E. v. 15. ἀκρ. οἴδατε, 1 Th. v. 2.
ἀκρίδες, M. iii. 4.
ἀκροβυστία, 1 C. vii. 18; E. ii. 11; R. ii. 27; iii. 30; iv. 9.
ἀκρόβυστος, 1 C. vii. 18.
ἀκρογωνία, E. ii. 20.
ἀκροθίνια, Heb. vii. 4.
'Ακύλας, A. xviii. 2.
ἀκωλύτως, A. xxviii. 31.
ἀλάστρον, M. xxvi. 7; Mk. xiv. 3; L. vii. 37.
ἀλαζόνας, R. i. 30.
ἀλαζονεία, 1 J. ii. 16.
ἀλάλητος, R. viii. 26.
ἄλας, M. v. 13; Mk. ix. 49, 50; L. xiv. 34.
ἀλέκτωρ, M. xxvi. 34; L. xxii. 60.
ἀληθεια, J. xviii. 38; ἐπ' ἀληθείας, A. iv. 27; πρὸς τὴν ἀλήθειαν, G. ii. 14.
ἀληθεύων, "acting truly," G. iv. 16.
ἀληθής, 1 Th. i. 9; ἀ. and ἀληθινός, J. xvii. 3.
ἀληθινός, J. xvii. 3; 1 Th. i. 9; 1 J. ii. 8; v. 23, 21; 1 Ti. i. 9.
ἀληθῶς = ἀμύν, L. ix. 27.
ἀλιεῖς ἀνθρώπων, M. iv. 19; Mk. i. 17.
ἀλίζω, Mk. ix. 49.
ἀλίζομαι, Mk. ix. 49.
ἀλισθήματα τῶν εἰδώλων, A. xv. 20.
ἀλισθήσεται, Mk. ix. 49.
ἀλλά 1 C. vi. 11; "imo," J. xvi. 2; "except," M. xix. 11; xx. 23; ἀλλὰ καί, G. i. 8, 9; P. i. 18; "save only," G. i. 12; M. xx. 23; Rev. x. 6; ἀλλὰ τοῦναντίον, G. ii. 7; "yea," 1 C. iv. 3; "yea, verily," 1 C. iv. 3; 2 C. vii. 11; Heb. iii. 16; ἀ. μὲν οὖν καί, P. iii. 8; "nay, rather," 1 P. i. 15; emphatic repetition of ἀ., 1 C. vi. 11; 2 C. vii. 11.
ἀλλαγησόμεθα, 1 C. xv. 51.
ἀλληγορούμενα, G. iv. 24.
ἀλληλούϊα, Rev. xix. 9.
ἀλλογενής, L. xvii. 18.
ἄλλος and ἕτερος, G. i. 6, 7.
ἀλλοτριεπίσκοπος, 1 P. iv. 15.
ἀλλότριος, L. xvi. 12.
ἀλοάω, 1 C. ix. 9.
ἀλόη, J. xix. 39.
ἀλυκόν, Jam. iii. 12.
ἀλύσει δυσί, A. xxi. 33.
ἀμαράντινος, 1 P. v. 4.
ἀμαρτάνω, applied to unsound teaching, 1 Ti. v. 20; ἀμαρτήση εἰς, M. xviii. 15.

ἀμαρτήμα, Mk. iii. 29.
 ἀμαρτία, J. i. 29; ἀμ. and παράπτωμα, R. v. 20; ὁ αἵρων τὴν ἀμ., J. i. 29.
 ἀμαρτωλοί, M. xxvi. 45; L. vii. 37.
 ἀμέμπτος, 1 Th. ii. 10.
 ἀμεταμέλητον, R. xi. 29; 2 C. vii. 10.
 ἀμήν, M. v. 18; xii. 31; xvi. 28; Mk. iii. 28; ix. 1.
 ἀμήν, ἀμήν, J. i. 52; v. 19; x. 1.
 ἀμίαντος, Heb. xiii. 4; Jam. i. 27.
 ὁ ἀμνὸς τοῦ Θεοῦ, J. i. 29.
 ἡ ἀμπελος ἡ ἀληθινή, J. xv. 1.
 ἀμπελῶνα, M. xx. 1; xxi. 39.
 Ἀμφίπολις, A. xvii. 1.
 ἀμφοδοί, Mk. xi. 4.
 ἄμωμος, Heb. ix. 14; E. i. 4; 1 P. i. 19;
 ἄμωμον, Rev. xviii. 13.
 ἄν, L. xvii. 6; with an infinitive occurs only in 2 C. x. 9.
 ἀνά, "apiece," J. ii. 6.
 ἀναβαθμός, A. xxi. 40.
 ἀναβαίνω, M. xvii. 27; J. iii. 13; vi. 62; A. iii. 1.
 ἀνάγαιον, L. xxii. 12.
 ἀναγγέλλω, J. iv. 25; xvi. 13.
 ἀναγεννάω, 1 P. i. 23.
 ἀναγινώσκω, M. xxiv. 15; ἀνίστη ἀναγνῶναι, L. iv. 16; ἀναγινωσκόμενος, A. xv. 21.
 ἀναγκάζω, L. xiv. 23; A. xxviii. 19; G. ii. 14.
 ἀνάγκη, M. xviii. 7; L. xxi. 23; xxiii. 17.
 ἀνάγνωσις, A. xiii. 15; ἀν. τοῦ νόμου καὶ τῶν προφητῶν, ἰδ.; 1 Ti. iv. 13.
 ἀναδείκνυμι, A. i. 24; xiii. 2.
 ἀναζάω, L. xv. 32; R. vii. 8.
 ἀναζητέω, A. xi. 25.
 ἀναζώννυμι, 1 P. i. 13.
 ἀναζωπυρέω, 2 Ti. i. 6.
 ἀναθάλλω, P. iv. 10.
 ἀνάθεμα, G. i. 8, 9; A. ix. 3; xxiii. 14; 1 C. xii. 3; xvi. 22; R. ix. 3.
 ἀναθεματίζω, A. xxiii. 12.
 ἀνάθημα, L. xxi. 5; G. i. 8, 9.
 ἑαυτὸν ἀναιρεῖν, A. xvi. 27.
 ἀνακαινίζειν εἰς μετάνοιαν, Heb. vi. 6.
 ἀνακαινούμαι, C. iii. 10.
 ἀνακαινώσις, Tit. iii. 5.
 ἀνάκειμαι, M. xxvi. 20.
 ἀνακεφαλαιώσασθαι, E. i. 10.
 ἀνακρίνω, 1 C. ii. 15.
 ἀνάκρισις, A. xxv. 26.
 ἀνακύπτω, L. xxi. 28.
 ἀνάλαμβάνω, Mk. xvi. 19; A. vii. 43.
 ἀνάληψις, L. ix. 51.
 ἀναλίσκω, 2 Th. ii. 8.
 κατὰ τὴν ἀναλογίαν τῆς πίστεως, R. xii. 6.
 ἀναλογίζομαι, Heb. xii. 3.
 ἀνάλυσις, 2 Ti. iv. 6.
 ἀναμάρτητος, J. viii. 8.
 ἀναμένω, 1 Th. i. 10.
 ἀναμιμνήσκομαι, Mk. xiv. 72.
 ἀνάμνησις, L. xxii. 19; 1 C. xi. 24; Heb. x. 3.
 ἀνανεοῦμαι, E. iv. 23.
 ἀνάνηψις, 2 Ti. ii. 26.
 Ἀνανίας, A. ix. 10.
 ἀναξίως, 1 C. xi. 27.
 ἀναπαύω, 1 C. xvi. 18.
 ἀναπήρους, L. xiv. 21.
 ἀναπίπτω, L. xi. 37; J. xiii. 25.
 ἀναπληρώω, 1 C. xiv. 15.
 ἀναπολόγητος, R. i. 20; ii. 1.
 ἀναπτύσσω, L. iv. 17.
 ἀναστᾶσα, L. i. 39.
 ἀνάστασις, J. xi. 24, 25; A. xvii. 32.
 οἱ ἀναστατοῦντες, G. v. 12.
 ἀνασταυρόω, Heb. vi. 6.
 ἀναστροφή, Gen. i. 13; 1 P. ii. 12.
 ἀνατέλλω, Heb. vii. 14.
 ἀνατολή, M. ii. 1; L. i. 78.
 ἀνατρέπω, Tit. i. 11.
 ἀναφαίνω, A. xxi. 3.
 ἀναφέρω, 1 P. ii. 24.
 ἀνάχυσις, 1 P. iv. 4.
 ἀναχωρέω, M. ii. 22.
 ἀνδραποδιστής, 1 Ti. i. 9.
 ἀνεκτότερον, M. x. 15.
 ἀνέλεος, Jam. ii. 13.
 ἀνένδεκτόν ἐστι, L. xvii. 1.
 ἀνεξιχνίαστος, E. iii. 8.
 ἀνευρίσκω, A. xxi. 4.
 ἀνέχω, Heb. xiii. 22.
 ἀνεψιός, C. iv. 10; and Int. to St. Mark, note 3.
 ἀνεώχθη τὸ στόμα, L. i. 64.
 τὰ ἀνήκοντα, E. v. 4.

ἀνὴρ, J. i. 30; ἄνδρες ἀδελφοί, A. i. 16;
 ἄνδρα ἀπὸ τοῦ Θεοῦ, A. ii. 22; ἀνὴρ ἀγαθός, A. xi. 24; ἄνδρας ἡγουμένους, A. xv. 22.
 ἀνθρακία, J. xxi. 9.
 ἀνθραξ, Rev. xxi. 19.
 ἀνθρωπίνης ἡμέρας, 1 C. iv. 3; ἀνθρωπίνῃ κτίσει, 1 P. ii. 13.
 ἀνθρωποκτόνος, J. viii. 44.
 ἀνθρωπος, "homo," J. xvi. 21; κατὰ ἀνθρώπον, G. iii. 15.
 ἀνθυπατεύω, A. xviii. 12.
 ἀνθύπατος, A. xiii. 7; xix. 38.
 ἀνίστημι, L. xxiii. 1; J. xi. 23.
 ἀνόητοι, G. iii. 1.
 ἄνοια, 2 Ti. iii. 9.
 ἀνομία, M. xxiv. 12; 2 Th. ii. 7.
 ἀνομος, Mk. xv. 28; ὁ ἄν., 2 Th. ii. 8; R. ii. 12.
 ἀνοχή, R. iii. 26.
 ἀνταναπληρῶ, C. i. 24.
 ἀνταπόδομα, L. xiv. 12.
 ἀντεχόμενος, M. vi. 24; 1 Th. v. 14; 1 Ti. vi. 2; Tit. i. 9.
 ἀντί, 1 Ti. ii. 6.
 ἀντιδιατιθέμενος, 2 Ti. ii. 25.
 ἀντίδικος, M. v. 25; L. xii. 58.
 ἀντίθεσις, 1 Ti. vi. 20.
 ἀντικατέστητε, Heb. xii. 4.
 ἀντιλαμβάνομαι, L. i. 54; 1 Ti. vi. 2.
 ἀντίληψις, 1 C. xii. 28.
 ἀντιλογία, Heb. vi. 16.
 ἀντιλοιδόρῳ, 1 P. ii. 23.
 ἀντίλυτρον, J. vi. 52; x. 11; 1 C. vi. 20.
 ἀντιμισθία, 2 C. vi. 12.
 Ἀντιόχεια, A. xi. 19.
 ἀντίτυπος and τύπος, 1 P. iii. 21.
 ἀνύδρων τόπων, M. xii. 43; L. xi. 24.
 ἀνυπόκριτος, R. xii. 9; 1 Ti. i. 5; Jam. iii. 17.
 ἀνυπότακτος, Tit. i. 10.
 ἄνω, ἐκ τῶν ἄνω, J. viii. 23.
 ἀνώγειν, Mk. xiv. 15.
 ἄνωθεν = ἐκ τοῦ οὐρανοῦ, J. iii. 3.
 ἀξιόω, A. xv. 38; ἡξίου μὴ, ἰδ.
 ἀξίως τοῦ Θεοῦ, 3 J. 6.
 ὁράτος, C. i. 15.
 ἀπαγγέλλω, M. xi. 4; Mk. v. 19.
 ἀπάγομαι, A. xii. 19.
 ἀπαιτέω, L. xii. 20.
 ἀπαντάω, M. xxviii. 9.
 ἅπαντες, A. ii. 1.
 ἀπάντησις, M. xxv. 1; 1 Th. iv. 17.
 ἅπαξ, 1 P. iii. 18; Jud. 3. 5.
 ἀπαράβατος, Heb. vii. 24.
 ἀπαρχή, J. i. 18; ἀπ. and ρίζα, R. xi. 16.
 ἀπάτη, C. ii. 8.
 ἀπαύγασμα, Heb. i. 3.
 ἀπειθεία, Heb. iv. 6; οἱ υἱοὶ τῆς ἀπειθ., E. ii. 2.
 ἀπειθεῖς, L. i. 17.
 ἀπειλῇ ἀπειλησώμεθα, A. iv. 17.
 ἀπειπάμεθα, 2 C. iv. 2.
 ἀπειραστος, Jam. i. 13.
 ἀπεκδέχομαι, 1 P. iii. 20.
 ἀπεκδυσάμενος τὰς ἀρχάς, C. ii. 15.
 ἀπελεγμός, A. xix. 27.
 ἀπελεύθερος, 1 C. vii. 22.
 ἀπεράντοις, 1 Ti. i. 4.
 ἀπερισπάστως, 1 C. vii. 35.
 ἀπέρχομαι, M. ii. 22; ἀπῆλθον and ἀνῆλθον, G. i. 17.
 ἀπείχω, M. vi. 5; ἀπέχει, Mk. xiv. 41; ἀπέχεσθε and κατέχετε, 1 Th. v. 22; Rn. 15; ἀπέχεσθαι, 1 P. ii. 11.
 ἀπήγχατο, M. xxvii. 5.
 ἀπιστία, Mk. ix. 24; 1 Ti. i. 13.
 ἀπιστος γενεά, M. xvii. 17.
 ἀπλότης, R. xii. 8; 2 C. i. 12; viii. 2; ix. 13; xi. 3; E. vi. 5; 2 C. viii. 2; ix. 13.
 ἀπλούς ὀφθαλμός, M. vi. 22.
 ἀπλῶς, Jam. i. 5.
 ἀπό = ὦν, M. xviii. 7. After a part. pass., L. vi. 18; ἀπὸ τοῦ Θεοῦ, A. ii. 22; ἀπό μιᾶς, L. xiv. 18; ἀπὸ Βηθανίας, J. xi. 1; ἀπὸ σταδίων, J. xi. 18; xxi. 8; Rev. xiv. 20; ἀπό and διὰ, G. i. 1; used paraphrastically, A. xii. 1; xv. 5; G. ii. 6. 12; Heb. vii. 13; 1 J. ii. 28; ἀφ' ὑμῶν, "on your part," "by you," L. iv. 18; Jam. i. 13; v. 4; 1 J. ii. 28; iii. 17; Rev. xv. 2; on the use of, in measures of time and place, A. xxviii. 23; ἀπό and ἐκ, 1 C. x. 4.
 ἀποβάλλω, Mk. x. 50; 1 Ti. iv. 4.
 ἀπογραφὴ, L. ii. 2; ἡ ἀπογρ. πρώτη ἐγένετο, ἰδ.

ἀποδεκατοῦν, M. xxiii. 23; L. xi. 42.
 ἀποδημέω, M. xxv. 14.
 ἀποδίδωμι, M. xxii. 21; A. iv. 33.
 ἀποδιορίζοντες, Jud. 19.
 ἀπόθεσις ρύπον, 1 P. iii. 21.
 ἀποθήκας, L. xii. 18.
 ἀποθησαυρίζω, 1 Ti. vi. 19.
 ἀποκαθίστημι, M. xvii. 11; Mk. ix. 12; A. i. 6.
 ἀποκαλύπτω, L. ii. 35; G. i. 16.
 ἀποκάλυψις, L. ii. 32; 1 C. i. 7; R. viii. 19; E. iii. 3; Rev. i. 1.
 ἀποκαταλλάξω, E. ii. 16; C. i. 20, 21.
 ἀποκατασταθῶ, Heb. xiii. 19.
 ἀποκατάστασις, A. iii. 21.
 ἀπόκειται, 2 Ti. iv. 8.
 ἀποκοπή, G. v. 12.
 ἀποκόπτω, G. v. 12.
 ἀποκριθεῖς, M. iii. 15; L. xiv. 3.
 ἀπόκριμα and ἀπόκρισις, 2 C. i. 9.
 ἀπόκρυφος, C. ii. 3.
 ἀποκνέω, J. i. 15. 18.
 ἀποκυλίνδω, M. xxviii. 2.
 ἀπολαμβάνω, G. iv. 5.
 ἀπολείπω, 2 Ti. iv. 13.
 ἀπολείναι, L. xiii. 12.
 τοῖς ἀπολλυμένοις, 2 Th. ii. 10; 1 C. i. 18; 2 C. ii. 15.
 Ἀπολλύων, Rev. ix. 11.
 ἀπολογία, A. xxii. 1; P. i. 7; 2 Ti. iv. 16.
 ἀπολούω, 1 C. vi. 11.
 ἀπολύτρωσις, 1 C. i. 30; E. i. 7, 14; iv. 30; C. i. 14; R. iii. 24.
 ἀπολύω, M. v. 32; Mk. x. 11, 12; L. xvi. 18; 1 C. vii. 12.
 ἀπομασσωμένη ὕμιν, L. x. 11.
 ἀποπέμπω, 1 C. vii. 2.
 ἀποπλύνω, L. v. 2.
 ἀπορέω, J. xiii. 22.
 ἀπορία, L. xxi. 25.
 ἀπορφανίζω, 1 Th. ii. 17.
 ἀποστασία, 2 Th. ii. 3; 1 Ti. iv. 1.
 ἀποστάσιον, M. v. 31.
 ἀποστεγάζω, Mk. ii. 4.
 ἀποστέλλω, L. xx. 20; J. v. 33; xviii. 24.
 ἀποστερέω, 1 C. vi. 7.
 ἀπόστολος, M. x. 2; L. vi. 13; A. xx. 28; E. iv. 11; ἀπ. and προφήται, 1 C. xii. 28.
 ἀποσυναγώγους ποιήσουσι, J. xvi. 2.
 ἀποτολμάω, R. x. 20.
 ἀποτάξασθαι, L. ix. 61.
 ἄπτομαι, Mk. v. 30; L. viii. 45; 1 C. vii. 1; "to grasp," "to cling to," J. xx. 17; C. ii. 20; 1 J. v. 18.
 ἀποφέρω, L. xvi. 22.
 ἀποφθέγγεσθαι, A. ii. 4. 14.
 ἀποφορτίζω, A. xxi. 3.
 ἀπρόσκοπος, 1 C. x. 32; P. i. 10.
 ἀπώλεια, M. xxvi. 8; ὁ υἱὸς τῆς ἀπ., J. xvii. 12.
 ἀπωσάμενος, 1 Ti. i. 19.
 ἄρα καί, "then even," 1 C. xv. 18; ἄ. οὖν, R. v. 18.
 ἀργός, M. xii. 26.
 ἀργύριον, M. xxvi. 15; L. ix. 3; τὰ τριάκοντα ἀργύρια, M. xxvii. 9; ἀργυρίου μυριάδας πέντε, A. xix. 19.
 ἀργυροκόπος, A. xix. 24.
 ἐπὶ τὸν Ἀρειον-πάγον, A. xvii. 19.
 ἀρίσκειν, C. i. 10.
 ἀρεστόν, A. vi. 2; xii. 3.
 ἀρετή, 1 P. ii. 9; 2 P. i. 3.
 Ἀριμαθαίας, M. xxvii. 57; Mk. xv. 43.
 ἀριστάω, J. xxi. 12. 15.
 ἄριστον, J. xxi. 12.
 ἀρκούμενος, Heb. xiii. 5.
 ἀρμόζομαι, 2 C. xi. 2.
 ἀρνέομαι, J. xviii. 25. 27.
 ἀρνίον, J. i. 29; Rev. v. 6.
 ἄροτρον, L. ix. 62.
 ἀρπαγμός, P. ii. 6.
 ἀρπάζω, A. viii. 39.
 ἀρράβων, 2 C. i. 22; v. 5; E. i. 14.
 ἄρσεν καὶ θῆλυ, M. xix. 4.
 Ἄρτεμις, A. xix. 24—35.
 ἀρτέμων, A. xxvii. 40.
 ἄρτι, J. i. 52; ἀπ' ἄρτι, M. xxiii. 39; J. i. 52; xiii. 19.
 ἀρτιγέννητος, 1 P. ii. 2.
 ἄρτιος, 2 Ti. iii. 17.
 ἄρτος, M. vi. 11; L. xxii. 19; xxiv. 30. 35; ἄρτους τῆς προθέσεως, M. xii. 4; ἄρτον ἐσθίειν, xv. 2; τὸν ἄρτον, xxvi. 26; λαβὼν τὸν ἄρτον—καὶ κλάσας, L. xxiv. 30; ὁ ἄρτος τῆς ζωῆς, J. vi. 35.

τοῖς ἀρχαίοις, M. v. 21; ἀρχαίω μαθητῇ, A. xxi. 16; τὰ ἀρχαία, 2 C. v. 7.
 ἀρχή, J. viii. 25; ἐν ἀρχῇ, J. i. 1; ἀρχαί, "ends of ropes, or cords," A. x. 11; xi. 5.
 ἀρχιερεὺς, M. ii. 4; Mk. ii. 26; A. xix. 14.
 ἀρχισυνάγωγος, Mk. v. 22; A. xviii. 8.
 ἀρχιτέκτων, 1 C. iii. 10.
 ἀρχιτρίκλινος, J. ii. 8, 9.
 ἀρχομαι, L. iii. 8; A. i. 1. 22; ἀρχόμενος, L. iii. 23.
 ἀρχων, J. iii. 1; vii. 48.
 ἀσέλγεια, 2 P. ii. 2; R. xiii. 13; 2 C. xii. 21; G. v. 19; E. iv. 19; 1 P. iv. 3.
 ἄσημος, A. xxi. 39.
 ἀσθένεια, 1 C. ii. 3; Heb. v. 3.
 ἀσθενέω, J. xi. 1, 2, 3, 6; R. xiv. 1; P. ii. 26.
 ἀσθενής, G. iv. 9.
 Ἀσία, A. vi. 9.
 Ἀσιαρχαί, A. xix. 31.
 ἀσιτία, A. xxvii. 21.
 ἀσκοί, M. ix. 17.
 ἀσπάζομαι, A. xxv. 13; 1 Th. v. 26; ἀσπασθε ἀλλήλους, 1 C. xvi. 20.
 ἀσπασμός, 1 C. xvi. 21.
 ἀσπίλος, Jam. i. 27.
 ἄσπος, A. xx. 13, 14.
 ἀστείος, Heb. xi. 23.
 ἀστήρ, M. ii. 2.
 ἀστοργος, R. i. 31.
 ἀστοχέω, 1 Ti. i. 6.
 ἀσύνθετος, R. i. 31.
 ἀσφάλεια, L. i. 4.
 ἀσφαλίζω, M. xxvii. 66.
 ἀσωτία, E. v. 18; 1 P. iv. 4.
 ἀσώτως, L. xv. 13.
 ἀτενίζω, A. i. 10; iii. 12; xiii. 9; 2 C. iii. 13.
 ἄτερ and χωρίς, Heb. ix. 28.
 ἀτιμάζω, Jam. iii. 6.
 ἀτιμία, R. i. 26; κατὰ ἀτιμίαν λέγω, 2 C. xi. 21.
 ἀτμίς καπνοῦ, Jam. iv. 14.
 Ἀττάλεια, A. xiv. 25.
 αὐλή, M. xxvi. 58; L. xi. 21; J. xviii. 15.
 αὐλητάς, M. ix. 23.
 αὐλιζομαι, L. xxi. 37.
 αὐξάνω, J. iii. 20.
 αὐτάρκεια, 1 Ti. vi. 6.
 αὐτός, emphatic, M. i. 21; iii. 12; viii. 17; L. i. 17; iii. 23; 1 J. i. 7; ii. 2. 6; and see M. xxvi. 71; Mk. ii. 8; αὐτό τοῦτο, 2 P. i. 5.
 αὐχμηρός, 2 P. i. 19.
 οὐκ ἀφαιρεθήσεται, L. x. 42.
 ἄφαντος ἐγένετο, L. xxiv. 31.
 ἀφελότης, A. ii. 46.
 ἄφεις ἄρτι, M. iii. 15.
 ἄφεςις, L. iii. 3; E. i. 7; C. i. 14; ἄφ. and πάρεσις, R. iii. 25.
 ἀφθαρσία, 1 C. xv. 50; E. vi. 24.
 ἀφθορία, Tit. ii. 7.
 ἀφίημι, M. vi. 12; xii. 31; Mk. i. 34; L. xiii. 35; 1 C. vii. 11, 12.
 ἀφιλάργυρος, Heb. xiii. 5.
 ἀφιζις, A. xx. 29.
 ἀφίστημι, L. ii. 37.
 ἀφοράω, Heb. xii. 2.
 ἀφορίζω, L. vi. 22; A. xiii. 2; G. i. 15; R. i. 1.
 ἀφορμή, 2 C. xi. 12; R. vii. 11.
 ἀφρων, L. xii. 20; ἀφρον, 1 C. xv. 36.
 ἄφρωνος, 1 C. xii. 2.
 ἀφωρισμένος εἰς εὐαγγέλιον, R. i. 1.
 ἀχάτης, Rev. xxi. 19.
 ἀχρεῖος, L. xvii. 10.
 ἀχρηστος, Pn. 11.
 ἄχρις, A. xx. 6; ἄχρις ἡμερῶν πέντε, ἰδ.; ἄχρις οὐ, "so long as," 1 C. xi. 26; Heb. iii. 13.
 ἄχυρον, M. iii. 12.
 ἄψινθος, Rev. viii. 11.

Βαβυλῶνος, on the use of this genitive, M. i. 11.
 βαθμὸς καλός, 1 Ti. iii. 13.
 βαῖα τῶν φοινίκων, J. xii. 14.
 βαλλάντιον, L. xxii. 35, 36.
 βάλλω, Rev. ii. 21; ἐβέβλητο, L. xvi. 20.
 βαπτίζω, M. iii. 11; L. xi. 38; J. i. 25; iv. 1, 2; βαπτίζόμενοι ὑπὲρ τῶν νεκρῶν, 1 C. xv. 29; βαπτίσει πυρί, M. iii. 11; εἰς τὸν Μωϋσῆν ἐβαπτίσαντο, 1 C. x. 2.

βάπτισμα, M. xx. 22, 23.
 ὁ βαπτιστής, M. iii. 1.
 Βάρ 'Ιωνᾶ, M. xvi. 17.
 Βαραββᾶν, M. xxvii. 16.
 βάρβαρος, A. xxviii. 2; C. xiv. 11.
 ἐν βάρει, 1 Th. ii. 6; G. vi. 2.
 Βαρθολομαῖος, M. x. 3.
 Βαρνάβας, A. iv. 36; xv. 39.
 βαροῦμαι, M. xxvi. 43.
 βαρύς, 1 Th. ii. 6; 2 C. x. 10.
 βασανίζομαι, Mk. v. 7.
 βασανιστής, M. xviii. 34.
 βασανος, M. iv. 24; L. xvi. 23, 28.
 βασιλεία, L. xxii. 3; βασ. τῶν οὐρανῶν, M. iii. 2; iv. 17; βασ. τοῦ Θεοῦ, Mk. x. 23; ἡ βασ., A. xx. 25.
 βασιλεύω, M. ii. 22; 1 C. xv. 25.
 βασιλικός, J. iv. 46, 49.
 βάσις, A. iii. 7.
 βασκαίνω, G. iii. 1.
 βαστάζω, M. viii. 17; L. x. 4; J. xix. 17; xx. 15; A. iii. 2; ix. 12; G. vi. 2. 5; Rev. ii. 3.
 βάτος, Mk. xii. 26; L. xvi. 6.
 βαττολογέω, M. vi. 7.
 βδέλυγμα τῆς ἐρημώσεως, M. xxiv. 15; Mk. xiii. 14; L. xvi. 15.
 βδελυκτός, Tit. i. 16.
 βέβαιος, Heb. ii. 2; 2 P. i. 19.
 βεβαιοῦσθαι τὴν καρδίαν, Heb. xiii. 9.
 βέβηλος, 1 Ti. iv. 17; Heb. xii. 16.
 βεβηλώω, M. xii. 5.
 Βεελζεβούλ, M. x. 25; L. xi. 15.
 Βελίαρ, 2 C. vi. 12.
 Βηθανία, M. xxvi. 6; L. xxiv. 50; J. i. 28.
 Βηθλεέμ, M. ii. 1; L. ii. 4. 15.
 Βηθσαϊδάν, M. xi. 21; Mk. vi. 45; viii. 22; L. ix. 10.
 Βηθφαγή, M. xxi. 1.
 βῆμα, M. xxvii. 19; J. xix. 13; βῆμα ποδός, A. vii. 5; xxv. 10.
 βιάζομαι, M. xi. 12; L. xvi. 16.
 βιβλιαρίδιον, Rev. x. 2.
 βιβλίον, "a roll," Rev. v. 1.
 βίβλος γενέσεως, M. i. 1; ἐν βίβλῳ τῶν προφητῶν, A. vii. 42; τὰς βίβλους, A. xix. 19.
 βίος and ζωή, 1 J. iii. 17.
 βιωτικά, 1 C. vi. 3.
 βλασφημέω, M. xxvi. 65; J. x. 33.
 βλασφημία, M. xii. 31; Mk. xiv. 3; βλ. Πνεύματος, M. xii. 31; xxvi. 65.
 βλέπω, A. xxvii. 12; βλέπετε, Mk. iv. 12. 24; βλέποντα κατὰ Δίβα καὶ κατὰ Χωρον, A. xxvii. 12; βλέπετε and ὁράτε, 1 C. i. 26; β. and ὁρῶ, 1 C. i. 26; 2 C. iv. 18; vii. 8; H. ii. 8, 9.
 Βοανεργές, Mk. iii. 17; viii. 29.
 βοήθεια, A. xxvii. 17.
 βοηθέω, Mk. ix. 22. 24.
 βόθυνος, M. xii. 11; xv. 14.
 λίθου βολήν, L. xxii. 41.
 βόρβορος, 2 P. ii. 22.
 βορρά, L. xiii. 29.
 βόσκω, J. xxi. 15. 17; and ποιμαίνω, ἰδ. and Introd. 1 P., p. 38.
 βούλευμα and θέλημα, 2 C. i. 15. 17.
 πᾶσαν τὴν βουλὴν τοῦ Θεοῦ, A. xx. 27.
 βούλημα and θέλημα, R. ix. 19.
 βούλομαι, M. i. 19; A. xxv. 22; β. and θέλω, 1 Th. ii. 18; 2 C. i. 15. 17; Pn. 13; 1 P. iv. 3.
 βραβεῖον, 1 C. ix. 24; P. iii. 12.
 βραβεύω, C. ii. 18; iii. 15.
 βραδυνπλοῖω, A. xxvii. 7.
 βρέφος and παῖς, L. i. 41; ii. 12. 16; xviii. 15; A. viii. 19; 1 P. ii. 2; 2 Ti. iii. 15.
 βρέχω, for ὕω, M. v. 45; vii. 25. 27; L. xvii. 29; Jam. v. 17.
 βροντή, J. xii. 29.
 βροχή for ὑετός, M. v. 45; vii. 25.
 βρώμα, 1 C. vi. 13; βρώματα, Mk. vii. 19; 1 C. iii. 2; vi. 13; viii. 18.
 βρώσις and βρώμα, R. xiv. 17; C. ii. 16.
 βυρσεύς, A. ix. 43; x. 6. 32.
 βύσσινον, Rev. xix. 8.
 βύσσος, L. xvi.

Γαβριήλ, L. i. 19. 26.
 γάγγραινα, 2 Ti. ii. 17.
 Γαδαρηῶν, Mk. v. 1.
 Γάζα, A. viii. 26.
 γάζα, A. viii. 27.

γαζοφυλάκιον, Mk. xii. 41; L. xxi. 1; J. viii. 20.
 γάλα, 1 C. iii. 2.
 γαλήνη, Mk. iv. 39.
 Γαλιλαία, M. ii. 22; xxviii. 7.
 γάμος, M. xxii. 2; J. ii. 1, 2; Rev. xix. 7; ἐνδυμα γάμου, M. xxii. 11.
 γάρ, L. xviii. 14; J. iv. 43, 44; οὐ γάρ, A. xvi. 37; 2 P. i. 9; Heb. iii. 16; 2 C. xii. 1.
 Γέννα τοῦ πυρός, M. v. 22; γένναν, ἰδ.; xxiii. 15; L. xii. 5.
 Γεθσημανεῖ, M. xxvi. 36.
 γενεά, ἡ γενεά αὕτη, M. xxiv. 34; L. xvi. 8; A. viii. 33; εἰς γενεὰς γενεῶν, L. i. 50; πᾶσαι αἱ γενεαὶ and αἰὼν τῶν αἰώνων, E. iii. 21.
 γενεαλογία, 1 Ti. i. 4; Tit. iii. 9.
 τροχὸς τῆς γενέσεως, Jam. iii. 6.
 γενέσια, M. xiv. 6.
 γένεσις, "origin," M. i. 18; βίβλος γενέσεως, M. i. 1.
 γεννάω, M. i. 1. 12; ii. 4; L. i. 34; A. xxii. 28.
 γέννημα, L. xxii. 18; γεννήματα ἐχιδνῶν, M. iii. 7; L. iii. 7.
 γεννητοὶ γυναικῶν, L. vii. 28; M. xi. 11.
 τὸ γεννώμενον, L. i. 35.
 γένος, 1 C. xii. 10.
 χώρα τῶν Γεργεσηνῶν, M. viii. 28.
 γερούσια, A. v. 21.
 γεύομαι, A. x. 10.
 γεωργεῖται, Heb. vi. 7.
 γεωργός, J. xv. 1.
 καρδία τῆς γῆς, M. xii. 40; περάτων τῆς γῆς, 42.
 γῆ 'Ιούδα, M. ii. 5; τὴν γῆν, v. 5; ἐπὶ τῆς γῆς, L. xviii. 8.
 γηράσκω, J. xxi. 18.
 γίνομαι, M. v. 45; καὶ ἐγένετο, M. vii. 28; L. i. 8; ἐγενήθη, 1 Th. i. 4, 5; γεγονώς νόμος, G. iii. 17; γενόμενος ἐκ γυναικός, G. iv. 4; γενέσθαι πρὸς, J. x. 35; A. xxi. 17; xxv. 15; 1 C. xvi. 10; μὴ γένοιτο, L. xx. 16; G. ii. 17; iii. 21; 1 C. vi. 15; R. iii. 4. 6. 31; vi. 2. 15; vii. 7. 13; ix. 14; xi. 1. 11.
 γινώσκω, L. xviii. 34; J. xvii. 3; γιν. and ἐπίσταμαι, A. xix. 15; G. iii. 7; 1 J. ii. 3—5. 13, 14. 18; iii. 16. 19, 20; iv. 2. 6—8; v. 2. 20; ἐγνωσται ὑπ' αὐτοῦ, 1 C. viii. 3.
 γλεῦκος, A. ii. 13.
 γλώσσα, L. xvi. 24; 1 C. xii. 10; xiv. 1. 14; γλώσσαις ἐτέραις, A. ii. 4; γλώσση λαλεῖν, 1 C. xiv. 18; γένη γλωσσῶν, xii. 10.
 γλωσσόκομον, J. xii. 6; xiii. 29.
 γυνάω, P. ii. 20.
 γνωρίζω, G. i. 11; = γινώσκω, P. i. 22.
 γυνῶσις, L. xi. 52; 2 P. i. 5; ὑπερβάλλουσιν τῆς γνώσεως ἀγάπην, E. iii. 18; 1 C. viii. 7; 1 P. iii. 7.
 γνωστός, A. xv. 18.
 γογγύζω, M. xx. 11; J. vi. 41; 1 C. x. 10.
 γογγυσμός, A. vi. 1.
 γογγυστής, Jud. 14.
 γόητες, 2 Ti. iii. 13.
 Γολγοθα, M. xxvii. 33; Mk. xv. 22; J. xix. 17.
 γονεῖς, applied to Joseph and Mary, L. ii. 27. 40.
 γράμμα, L. xvi. 6; J. vii. 15; 2 C. iii. 6; τὰ πολλὰ γράμματα, A. xxvi. 24; πηλικοῖς γράμμασι, G. vi. 11; τὰ ἱερά γράμματα, 2 Ti. iii. 15.
 γραμματεὺς, M. ii. 4; xxii. 35; xxvi. 57; A. xix. 35.
 γραφή, J. v. 39; 2 P. iii. 16; 2 Ti. iii. 15.
 γράφω, L. i. 3; γέγραπται, M. ii. 5; iv. 6; L. iv. 4; ἔγραψα, I write, the epistolary aorist, R. xvi. 1; E. vi. 21; C. iv. 7; 1 P. v. 12; γέγραπται and εἶρηκε, 1 C. i. 19.
 γραῶδης, 1 Ti. iv. 7.
 γρηγορέω, M. xxiv. 42.
 γύμναζε σεαυτὸν πρὸς εὐσίβειαν, 1 Ti. iv. 7.
 γυμνασία σωματικῆς, 1 Ti. iv. 8.
 γυμνητεύω, 1 C. iv. 11.
 γυμνός, Mk. xiv. 51, 52; J. xxi. 7; γυμνὰ καὶ τετραχηλισμένα, Heb. iv. 13; 1 C. xv. 37.
 γυναικάριον, 2 Ti. iii. 6.
 γυνή, L. vii. 37; γύναι, J. ii. 4; xix. 26.
 γωνία, Rev. xx. 8; εἰς κεφαλὴν γωνίας, M. xxi. 42.

- δαίμονίζομαι, M. iv. 24.
 δακρύω, J. xi. 35.
 δακτύλιον, L. xv. 22.
 ἐν δακτύλῳ, L. xi. 20; τῷ δ. ἔγραφε, J. viii. 6.
 Δαλμανουθά, Mk. viii. 10.
 δαμάζομαι, Jam. iii. 7, 8.
 δανείσασθαι, M. v. 42; δανείζετε, L. vi. 34, 35.
 δαπανᾶω, A. xxi. 24.
 Δαυὶδ, M. i. 1.
 δέ, 2 P. i. 5; 2 C. ii. 12; "yea," R. iii. 22; emphatic, L. xvi. 17; διὰ δέ, G. ii. 4; ad-
 versative, 1 J. i. 3.
 δεδεμένος, J. xviii. 24; δ. τῷ πνεύματι, A. xx. 22.
 δέησις and ἱκετηρία, Heb. v. 7; δέησις, προσ-
 ευχή, and ἔντευξις, 1 Ti. ii. 1; iv. 5.
 δεῖ, L. xiii. 33; δεῖ με καὶ Ῥώμην ἰδεῖν, A. xxv. 10; οὐ με δεῖ κρίνεσθαι, ib.
 δειγματίζω, C. ii. 15.
 δεῖπνον, J. xii. 2; δεῖπνον γενομένου, J. xiii. 2.
 δεισιδαιμονέστερος, A. xvii. 22.
 δεισιδαιμονία, A. xxv. 19.
 δεκατόω, Heb. vii. 6.
 δεκτός, L. iv. 24; A. x. 35.
 δελεάζομαι, Jam. i. 14.
 δεξιολάβοι, A. xxiii. 23.
 ἐκ δεξιῶν, M. xx. 21; τῇ δεξιᾷ τοῦ Θεοῦ ὑψωθείς, A. ii. 33.
 δέομαι, G. iv. 12.
 δεσμά, A. xx. 23.
 δέσμιος, A. xxiii. 18; xxv. 14, 27; xxviii. 17; Heb. x. 34; E. iv. 1; δέσμιος Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ, P. i. 9; E. iii. 1; 2 Ti. i. 8.
 Δεσπότης, A. iv. 24; "Christ," Jud. 4; 2 P. ii. 1.
 τὸ δεύτερον, Jud. 5.
 σαββάτῳ δευτεροπρώτῳ, M. xii. 1; L. vi. 1.
 δέχομαι, "suscipio," A. iii. 21; δέχ. and παραλαμβάνω, 1 Th. ii. 13.
 δέω and λύω, M. xvi. 19.
 δῆ = "agedum," L. ii. 15; "now," A. xiii. 2.
 δῆλον, 1 Ti. vi. 7.
 δηλώω, 1 C. i. 11.
 δημόσιος, A. v. 18.
 δῆπου, Heb. ii. 16; οὐ γὰρ δῆπου, ib.
 διὰ, 1 Th. iv. 14; "for," Rev. iv. 11; διὰ τοῦ προφήτου, a frequent formula with St. Matthew, i. 22; διάγε, "at certe," L. xviii. 5; διὰ, ἀπό, and ἐκ, G. i. 1; R. vii. 8; "by reason of," G. iv. 13; "by," E. i. 1; "by means of," Rev. xxi. 4; in composition, 1 Ti. vi. 5; δι' ἑαυτοῦ, "through himself," Heb. i. 3; R. ii. 27; iv. 11; δι' οὗ, Heb. ii. 10; δι' ὁλίγων and διὰ βραχείων, Heb. xiii. 22; 1 P. v. 12; δι' ἡμᾶς, "for the sake of us," 1 C. ix. 10; διὰ τοὺς ἀγγέλους, 1 C. xi. 10.
 διαβάλλομαι, L. xvi. 1.
 διαβεβαιουῖσθαι, Tit. iii. 8.
 Διάβολος, 1 P. v. 8; and see Mk. i. 13.
 διαγγέλλω, A. xxi. 26.
 διαγογγύζω, L. xv. 2.
 διάγω βίον, 1 Ti. ii. 2.
 διαδίδωμι, J. vi. 11.
 διαθήκη, M. xxvi. 28; G. iii. 15; Heb. vii. 22; ix. 16, 17; καινὴ Διαθ., 2 C. iii. 6.
 διακονέω, M. viii. 15; R. xv. 25; Heb. vi. 11.
 διακονία, R. xv. 25.
 διάκονος, A. vi. 2—6; xx. 28; R. xvi. 1.
 διακούομαι, A. xxiii. 35.
 διακρίνω, A. xi. 2; Jam. i. 6; ii. 4; Jud. 22; 1 C. iv. 7; xi. 29; xiv. 29.
 διάκρισις, Heb. v. 14; R. xiv. 1; διακρίσεις πνευμάτων, 1 C. xii. 10.
 διαλέγομαι, A. xxiv. 25.
 διάλεκτος, A. ii. 6.
 διαλογισμός, R. xiv. 1; "doubting," 1 Ti. ii. 8; Jam. i. 6.
 διαμαρτύρομαι, 1 Th. iv. 6; 1 Ti. v. 21; 2 Ti. iv. 1.
 διαμένω, L. i. 22; xxii. 28.
 διαμερίζομαι, A. ii. 3.
 διανεύω, L. i. 22.
 διάνοια καρδίας, 1 P. i. 3.
 διαπαντός, L. ii. 37; xxiv. 53; A. x. 2.
 διαπαρτριβαί, 1 Ti. vi. 5.
 διαπρίομαι, A. v. 33; vii. 54.
 διαρρήγνυμι, M. xxvi. 65; L. v. 6.
 διασκορπίζω, M. xxv. 24, 26; L. xvi. 1.
 διασπείρω, A. viii. 1, 4.
 διασπορά, J. vii. 35; A. ii. 8.
 διαστελλόμενον, Heb. xii. 20.
 διαστρέφω, P. ii. 15.
 διαταγή, A. vii. 53.
 διατάσσω, A. xx. 13; Tit. i. 5; διαταγείς δι' ἀγγέλων, G. iii. 19.
 διατίθεμαι, L. xxii. 29.
 διαφέρομαι, A. xxvii. 27.
 τὰ διαφέροντα, P. i. 10; R. ii. 18.
 διαφθορὰν ἰδεῖν, A. xiii. 35.
 διαφωρότερος, Heb. i. 4.
 διαχειρίζομαι, A. v. 30.
 διαχλευάζοντες, A. ii. 13.
 διδακτός, J. vi. 45.
 διδασκαλίας δαιμονίων, 1 Ti. iv. 1.
 διδάσκαλος, J. iii. 10; 1 C. xii. 28.
 ἐδίδασκε, J. vii. 14.
 διδαχή, Mk. i. 27; iv. 2; xii. 38; A. ii. 42; xiii. 12.
 τὰ δίδραγμα, M. xvii. 24.
 Δίδυμος, J. xi. 16; xx. 24; xxi. 2.
 δίδωμι = ἔδω, "to give," "to show," M. xxiv. 24; δῶν for δοῖν, E. i. 16; iii. 16; δ. and λαμβάνω, P. iv. 15; δότε τόπον, L. xiv. 9; R. xii. 19; E. iv. 27; δοῦναι, depend-
 ing upon λέγων, A. xxi. 21; C. iv. 6; Rev. x. 9.
 διερμηνεύω, 1 C. xiv. 5.
 διέρχομαι, L. xix. 1.
 διετής, M. ii. 16.
 διήγησις, L. i. 1.
 εἰς τὸ διηγεῖσθαι, Heb. vii. 3; x. 1, 12, 14.
 δίκαιος, M. i. 19; ix. 13; x. 41; L. i. 75; 2 Th. i. 5; 2 Ti. iv. 8; 1 P. ii. 23; 1 T. i. 9; δίκ. καὶ εὐλαβής, ii. 25; τὸ δίκαιον, xii. 57; δίκαιος ἦν, xxiii. 47; δίκαιος and ἀγαθός, R. v. 6.
 δικαιοσύνη, M. vi. 1; J. xvi. 10; 1 C. i. 30; δίκ. Θεοῦ, R. i. 17.
 δικαιοῶ, L. vii. 29; xviii. 14; G. v. 4; R. iii. 26; v. 16; δικαιούμενοι and δικαιωθέντες, 1 C. vi. 11; δικαιωθέντες ἐκ πίστεως, R. iii. 24; v. 1; ἐδικαίωσαν τὸν Θεόν, ib.; δικαιούν = ῥῆσι, L. vii. 29.
 δικαίωμα, L. i. 6; R. i. 32; δικαίωμα, δικαίωσις, and δικαιοσύνη, R. v. 16, 18; viii. 4; Rev. xix. 8.
 διό, R. xiv. 22; Heb. vi. 1.
 διπλός, 1 Ti. v. 17.
 διστάζω, M. xxviii. 17.
 διυλίζω, M. xxiii. 24.
 διχοτομέω, M. xxiv. 51.
 οὐ μὴ διψήσῃ, J. iv. 14.
 δίψυχος, Jam. i. 8; iv. 8.
 διώκτης, 1 Ti. i. 13.
 διώκω, P. iii. 12; 1 C. xiv. 1; ταύτην τὴν ὁδὸν ἐδίωξα, A. xxii. 4; ἐδίωκε, G. iv. 29.
 δόγμα, E. ii. 15; C. ii. 14.
 δογματίζω, C. ii. 20.
 δοκεῖ, L. xxii. 24; 1 C. xi. 16.
 δοκιμάζω, 1 Th. v. 21; 1 C. xi. 28; xvi. 3; R. xii. 2; E. v. 10.
 δοκιμή, R. v. 4; 2 C. ii. 9; viii. 1; ix. 13; xiii. 3; R. v. 4.
 δοκίμιον, Jam. i. 3; 1 P. i. 7.
 δόκιμος, 1 C. xi. 19; Jam. i. 12.
 δοκῶ, M. iii. 9; 1 C. iv. 9; vii. 12, 40; xi. 16; μὴ δόξητε, ib.; M. iii. 19; οἱ δοκοῦντες ἄρχειν, Mk. x. 42; ὑμεῖς δοκεῖτε, J. v. 39; τοῖς δοκοῦσι, G. ii. 2, 6.
 δολιόω, R. iii. 13.
 δόλος, 1 Th. i. 3; ἐν δόλῳ, 1 Th. ii. 3.
 δόξα, J. i. 14; ii. 11; 2 P. i. 3; ii. 10; δόξ. ὅσαν τῷ Θεῷ, J. ix. 24 = ἡ δόξα, L. ii. 9; ix. 31; A. vii. 55; Heb. i. 3; 1 C. xi. 7; 2 C. iii. 7; ἐν δόξῃ and διὰ δόξης, 2 C. iii. 11.
 δοξάζω, J. xvii. 1, 4; xxi. 19.
 δόσις and δώρημα, Jam. i. 16; δ. and λήψις, P. iv. 15.
 δουλαγωγέω, 1 C. ix. 27.
 δουλείας ζυγός, G. v. 1.
 δουλεύω, G. iv. 9.
 δούλος, E. vi. 5.
 δραχμήν, L. xv. 8.
 Δρούσιλλα, A. xxiv. 24.
 δύναμαι, Mk. vi. 5; 1 J. iii. 9; τοῦ δύνασθαι, —the use of the infinitive after τοῦ, M. iii. 13; xiii. 3; xxiv. 45; L. ii. 27; v. 7; xxi. 22; xxii. 31; A. iii. 2; 1 C. x. 13; οὐ δύνασθε, 1 C. x. 21.
 δυνάμεις—οὐ τὰς τυχούσας, A. xix. 11; δυνάμεις, 1 C. xii. 28; δυνάμις, L. x. 18.
 δυνατοί, A. xxv. 5; δυν. and ἀδύνατοι, R. xv. 1.
 δυνατός ἐν λόγοις, A. vii. 22.
 δυσερμήνευτος, Heb. v. 11.
 δωρεάν, 2 C. xi. 7.
 δωρέομαι, 2 P. i. 3.
 δώρημα, Jam. i. 26.
 ἔα, Mk. i. 24.
 ἐάν μή, J. vi. 53; 1 C. xiv. 6; ἐάν τις and εἴ τις, J. iii. 3, 5; vi. 50, 51; 1 C. iii. 14, 15, 17, 18; viii. 3; 2 Ti. ii. 21; "when," 1 J. iii. 2.
 ἐν ἑαυτοῖς, "ipsi secum," Mk. ii. 8; ἐν ἑαυτῷ, L. xviii. 4; πρὸς ἑαυτόν, L. xviii. 11; ἀφ' ἑαυτοῦ, J. xviii. 34; R. xiii. 9; G. v. 14.
 Ἑβραϊδὶ διαλέκτῳ, A. xxi. 40; xxii. 2; xxvi. 14.
 Ἑβραῖοι, A. vi. 1.
 Ἑβραϊστί, J. i. 39; v. 2; xix. 13, 17, 20; xx. 16; R. ix. 11; xvi. 16.
 ἐγγίζω, L. xxii. 1.
 ἐγγυος, Heb. vii. 22.
 ἐγείρω, M. xxii. 52; xxviii. 6, 7; J. xiv. 31.
 ἐγέννησε, a word of wide signification, M. i. 2.
 ἐγκάθετος, L. xx. 20.
 τὰ ἐγκαίνια, J. x. 22.
 ἐγκαινίζω, Heb. x. 20.
 ἐγκακέω, G. vi. 9; E. iii. 13; 2 C. iv. 1.
 ἐγκαλέομαι, A. xxvi. 7.
 ἐγκαταλείπομαι, 2 Ti. iv. 10.
 ἐγκαταλείπω, A. ii. 27.
 ἐγκομβόομαι, 1 P. v. 5.
 ἐγκόπτω, 1 Th. ii. 18; R. xv. 22; G. v. 7.
 ἐγκρίναι, 2 C. x. 12.
 οὐση ἐγκύω, L. ii. 5.
 ἐγώ, τὸ κατ' ἐμέ, 1 C. iii. 3; xv. 32; R. i. 15; vii. 22; viii. 1; E. i. 15.
 ἐγώ εἰμι, J. vi. 20; viii. 58.
 ἐδαφίζω, L. xix. 44.
 ἐδόθη, Rev. xvi. 8.
 ἐδραῖος, 1 C. vii. 35; C. i. 23.
 ἐδραῖωμα, 1 Ti. iii. 15.
 ἐθελοθησκεία, C. ii. 23.
 ἐθνάρχης, 2 C. xi. 32.
 ἔθνη, M. xii. 17; τὰ ἔθνη, G. iii. 8.
 ἐθνικός, M. xviii. 17.
 ἐθνικῶς, G. ii. 14.
 εἰ, = εἰ, Mk. viii. 12; Heb. iii. 11; not for ὅτι, A. xxvi. 23; "whether," ib.; εἰ μή, M. xii. 4; L. iv. 26; 2 C. iii. 1; G. i. 7; Rev. ix. 4; εἰ μέντοι, Jam. ii. 8; εἰ μὲν οὖν, Heb. viii. 4; εἰ μήν, and ἡ μήν, Heb. vi. 14; εἰ μήτι, 2 C. iii. 1; xiii. 5; εἰ καί, "if even," P. ii. 17; εἰ γάρ, R. v. 15, 17; εἴ τις = "whoever," "whatever," P. iv. 8; Jam. i. 5; εἰ and ἡ confused in MSS., 2 C. iii. 1.
 εἴγε, E. iv. 21.
 εἴπερ, 2 Th. i. 6; "if indeed," 1 P. ii. 3; cp. H. iii. 6.
 εἴπως, R. i. 10.
 εἰδέναι, 1 Th. v. 12; εἰδ. and γινώσκειν, 1 J. ii. 3, 29; οὐκ ἦδεν, A. xxiii. 5.
 εἶδος ἕτερον, L. ix. 29; εἶδος πονηροῦ, 1 Th. v. 22.
 εἰδότες, "who know," Jud. 5.
 εἰδωλόθυτα, 1 C. viii. 1.
 εἰδωλον, 1 C. viii. 4.
 εἰλη, G. iii. 4; R. xiii. 3.
 εἰκών, M. xxii. 20; 1 C. xi. 7; 2 C. iv. 4; C. i. 15; iii. 10; εἰκ. καὶ σκιά, Heb. x. 1.
 εἰλικρινής, P. i. 10.
 εἶναι τί, G. ii. 6; εἶναι τι μηδὲν ὦν, G. vi. 3; ἦτω for ἔστω, 1 C. xvi. 22; Jam. v. 12; ὁ ὦν, J. i. 18; Rev. i. 4; ἐγώ εἰμι, J. vi. 20; viii. 58; ἐστί, "represents," G. iv. 25; Rev. i. 20; xvii. 18; ὦν and γινόμενος, Heb. i. 3, 4.
 εἴξαμεν, G. ii. 5.
 σὺ εἴπας, M. xxvi. 25.
 εἰρηνεύω, 1 Th. v. 13.
 εἰρήνη, J. xiv. 27; εἰς εἰρήνην, Mk. v. 34; εἰρήνην ἀφίημι, J. xiv. 27; χάρις καὶ εἰρήνη, 1 Th. i. 1; R. i. 7; εἰρ.—εἰλεος, G. vi. 16; 1 Ti. i. 2; 2 Ti. i. 2; Tit. i. 2; 2 J. 3; Jud. 2; E. ii. 17.
 εἶς καθ' εἷς, J. viii. 9; ἕνα ἕκαστον, L. xvi. 5; ἐφ' ἕνα ἕκαστον, A. ii. 3; εἶς τὸν ἕνα, 1 Th. v. 11; emphatic use of, Rev. viii. 13.
 εἷς—πίστις εἷς, and πίστις εἷς, M. xviii. 6; and see πιστεύω, and cp. Mk. i. 39; συνηγμένοι εἷς, M. xviii. 20; εἷς συ-
 αγωγὰς, Mk. xiii. 9; εἷς ἑαυτούς, L. vii. 30; εἷς τὴν κοίτην, L. xi. 7; εἷς τὸ ὄρος, xxi. 37; εἷς τὸν κόλπον, J. i. 18; εἷς and πρὸς compared, J. vi. 35; εἷς, "with

reference to," A. ii. 25; *eis* and *ἐπί*, Rev. xvi. 3; *eis* διατάγας, A. vii. 53; *eis* χολήν, A. viii. 23; *eis* Πρώμην, A. xxiii. 11; *eis* ὅ, 2 Th. i. 10; *eis* Χριστόν, G. iii. 17; *eis* Χρ. ἐβαπτίσθητε, 27; 1 Ti. i. 5; 2 C. viii. 6; C. i. 25; Heb. ii. 3; 1 P. i. 25; *eis* τό, R. i. 11.
εἰσαγω, Heb. i. 6.
εἰσακούομαι, Heb. v. 7.
εἰσέρχομαι, *διέρχομαι*, and *παρεισέρχομαι*, R. v. 12.
εἰσὶ, "represent," Rev. xvii. 9.
ἐκ, "out of," L. xvi. 9; = *ὑπὸ*, J. iv. 14; xx. 1; *ἐκ* and *ἐν*, 1 Ti. i. 3; 1 J. ii. 19; Rev. ii. 21; xv. 2; xvi. 10; *ἐκ* τοῦ ἔχειν, 2 C. viii. 11.
ἐκατοντάρχη, L. vii. 2; A. x. 1.
ἐκβάλλω, M. ix. 38; Mk. i. 12; v. 40; L. xi. 14; J. ii. 15; ix. 34; 1 C. vii. 22.
ἐκβολὴν ποιεῖν, A. xxvii. 18.
ἐκγόνα, 1 Ti. v. 4.
ἐκδέχομαι, Heb. xi. 10; 1 C. xi. 33.
ἐκδικεῖν, L. xviii. 3. 5; Rev. vi. 10.
ἐκδίκης, L. xviii. 7, 8; A. vii. 24; Rev. xix. 2.
ἐκδιώκω, 1 Th. ii. 15.
ἐκδόμησις, Rev. xxi. 18.
ὅπου—ἐκεῖ, Mk. vi. 55.
ἐκεῖνος, C. iii. 4; emphatic, 1 J. ii. 6; iii. 2.
ἐκθαμβέομαι, Mk. ix. 15.
ἐκκακέω, L. xviii. 1.
ἐκκευτέω, J. xix. 37.
ἐκκλησία, M. xvi. 18; xviii. 17; A. ii. 47; v. 11; vii. 38; *κατ' ἐκκλησίαν*, A. xiv. 23; ἢ *κατ' οἶκον αὐτῶν ἐκκλησία*, R. xvi. 5.
ἐκκόπτειν ἀφορμὴν, 2 C. xi. 12.
ἐκκρέμαμαι, L. xix. 48.
ἐκλέγομαι, J. vi. 70; xiii. 18.
ἐκλείπειν, L. xvi. 9.
ἐκλεκτοί, M. xxiv. 22; 1 Th. i. 4; R. viii. 33; xvi. 16; E. i. 4.
ἐκλογή, A. ix. 15; *σκεῦος ἐκλογῆς*, *id.*; *εἰδότες τὴν ἐκλογὴν ὑμῶν*, 1 Th. i. 4; R. xi. 7.
ἐκμυκτηρίζω, L. xvi. 14; xxiii. 35.
ἐκνέω, *ἐκνεύω*, J. v. 13.
ἐκολλήθησαν, Rev. xviii. 5.
ἔσονται—ἐκπίπτοντες, Mk. xiii. 25.
ἐκπλήρωσις, A. xxi. 26.
ἐκπλησσομένους ἐπὶ τῇ διδαχῇ τοῦ Κυρίου, Mk. i. 22.
ἔκστασις, A. x. 10; xxii. 17.
ἐκστρέφω, Tit. iii. 11.
ἐκτείνω, A. xxvii. 30.
ἐκτενής, 1 P. iv. 8.
ἐκτενῶς, 1 P. i. 22.
ἐκτρωμα, 1 C. xv. 8.
ἐκχέω, A. ii. 17, 18; xxii. 20.
ἐκχύω, Jud. 11.
ἐκών, 1 C. ix. 17.
ἐλαιον καὶ οἶνον, L. x. 34.
ἑλαιών, L. xxi. 37.
ἐλαφρία, 2 C. i. 17.
ἐλαχιστότερος, E. iii. 8.
ἐν ἐλαχίστω, L. xvi. 10.
ἐλεγχος, Heb. xi. 1.
ἐλέγχω, J. xvi. 8; 1 Ti. v. 20.
ἐλεέω, 1 P. ii. 10.
ἐλεημοσύνη, A. xxiv. 17.
ἔλεος, M. ix. 13; L. i. 50; *ἔλεον θέλω*, M. ix. 13; xii. 7; *ποιεῖν ἔλεος μετὰ τινος*, L. i. 72; x. 37; J. ii. 13.
ἐλευθερία, G. v. 13.
ἐλεύθερος, J. viii. 33. 36.
ἑλισάβετ, L. i. 5. 41.
ἑλκος, Rev. xvi. 2.
ἐλκύω, J. vi. 44; xii. 32; xxi. 6. 11.
ἑλκω, Jam. i. 14.
ἑλλάς, A. xx. 2.
ἑλληνας, J. vii. 35; xii. 20; A. xiv. 1; xvi. 1. 3; xviii. 4.
ἑλληνίς, Mk. vii. 26.
ἑλληνισταί, A. vi. 1; ix. 29; xi. 20.
ἑλληνιστὶ γινώσκεις, A. xxi. 37.
ἐλλογέω, Pn. 18.
ἐλπὶς τῆς ἐργασίας, A. xvi. 19; 1 Th. ii. 19; *παρ' ἐλπίδα*, R. iv. 18.
ἑλύμας, A. xiii. 8.
ἑλωί, Mk. xv. 34.
ἐμβαίνω, Mk. v. 18.
ἐμβριμάομαι, M. ix. 30; Mk. i. 43; xiv. 5; J. xi. 33. 38.
ἑμμαούς, L. xxiv. 13.
ἐμπαιγμονή, 2 P. iii. 3.
ἐμπλοκή τριχῶν, 1 P. iii. 3.
ἐμπνέω, A. ix. 1; *ἐμπνέων ἀπειλῆς*, A. ix. 1.

ἐμπροσθεν τοῦ Θεοῦ, 1 Th. i. 3.
ἐμφανίζω, M. xxvii. 53.
ἐμφυσάω, J. xx. 22.
λόγος ἐμφυτος, Jam. i. 21.
ἐν, = *ὑπὸ*, "by," "with," M. iii. 11; iv. 4; vii. 2; xii. 27; *ἐν πνεύματι ἀκαθάρτῳ*, Mk. i. 23; "to," or "for," L. i. 17; *ἐν αὐτῷ*, xvi. 3; *ἐν χειρὶ*, G. iii. 19; 1 Th. i. 5; *ἐν ᾧ*, "in which respect," Heb. vi. 17; 1 J. v. 19; *ἐν* I. X., E. i. 1; "in," 2 P. i. 5; *ἐν αὐτοῖς*, 2 C. viii. 1; x. 12; used for the instrument, Rev. i. 5; vi. 8; "in the matter of," 2 C. viii. 19; "coram," C. i. 23; "by," after verbs of swearing, Rev. x. 6.
ἐνδειγμα, 2 Th. i. 5.
ἐνδείκνυμι, 2 Ti. iv. 14; E. ii. 6.
ἐνδεξιὴν, R. iii. 25.
ἐνδυμα, M. iii. 4; *τοῦ ἐνδ.* vi. 25; L. xii. 23.
ἐνεδρον, A. xxiii. 16.
ἐνεός, A. ix. 7.
ἐνέργεια πλάνης, 2 Th. ii. 11.
ἐνεργέω, 1 Th. ii. 13; 2 Th. ii. 7; G. ii. 8; v. 6; Jam. v. 16; P. ii. 13; 1 C. xi. 1.
ἐνέργημα and *ἔργον*, 1 C. xii. 6.
ἐνέχω, G. v. 1.
ἐνθύμησις, M. ix. 4; xii. 25; A. xvii. 29; Heb. iv. 12.
ἐνιαντός, L. iv. 19.
ἐνίστημι, 2 Th. ii. 2.
τὰ ἐνόντα, L. xi. 41.
ἐνότις, E. iv. 3.
ἐνοχος εἰς, M. v. 22; 1 C. xi. 27.
ἐνοχος κρίσεως, Mk. iii. 29.
ἐντάλματα ἀνθρώπων, C. ii. 22.
ἐνταφιάζω, M. xxvi. 12.
ἐνταφιασμός, J. xii. 7.
ἐντέλλομαι, M. xix. 7; A. i. 2.
ἐντολή, M. xxii. 36; Mk. xii. 28; L. i. 6; xv. 29; *ἐντολὴν καινὴν*, J. xiii. 34.
ἐντρεφόμενος τοῖς λόγοις τῆς πίστεως, 1 Ti. iv. 6.
ἐντυγχάνω, R. xi. 2.
ἐνυπνιάζομαι, Jud. 8.
ἐνώπιον, L. i. 6; *ἐν τοῦ Θεοῦ*, G. i. 20.
ἐξ οὗ,—*δι' οὗ*, 1 C. viii. 6; *ἐξ, διὰ, and εἰς*, R. xi. 36.
ἐξαγοράζω, G. iii. 13; E. v. 16; C. iv. 5.
ἐξαιρέομαι, A. xxvi. 17.
ἐξαιτέομαι, L. xxii. 31.
ἐξακολουθεῖω, 2 P. i. 16.
ἐξαλείφω, C. ii. 14.
ἐξάλλομαι, A. iii. 8.
ἐξανάστασις τῶν νεκρῶν, P. iii. 11.
ἐξαποστέλλω, G. iv. 6.
ἐξαυτῆς, Mk. vi. 25.
ἐξεγείρω, R. ix. 17.
ἐξέρχομαι, Mk. vi. 34; J. xviii. 1.
πάντα μοι ἔξεστι, 1 C. vi. 12.
ἐξηχέομαι, 1 Th. i. 8.
ἐξίστημι, Mk. iii. 21; A. viii. 9. 13; *διὰ τὸ ἔξεστακεῖν*, A. viii. 11.
ἔξοδος, Part I. xlv. note; L. ix. 31; 2 P. i. 15.
ἐξολοθρεύομαι, A. iii. 23.
ἐξομολογέω, M. xi. 25; A. xix. 18; Ja. v. 16; P. ii. 11.
ἐξορκίζω, M. xxvi. 63.
ἐξουθενέω, L. xxiii. 11; 1 Th. v. 20; 1 C. vi. 4.
ἐξουσία, J. xvii. 2; 1 C. vi. 12; vii. 3; ix. 4; Rev. ix. 10; *ὑπὸ ἐξουσίαν*, M. viii. 9; *ἐξουσία πνευμάτων*, x. 1; *ἐξ. σαρκός*, J. xvii. 2; A. xxvi. 10; *ἐξ. and δύναμις differ*, R. ix. 21; xiii. 1. 3; 1 C. xi. 10; *ἐξουσίαν ἔχειν*, 1 C. xi. 10; Rev. ii. 26.
ἐξυπνίζω, J. xi. 11.
οἱ ἔξω, 1 C. v. 12, 13; vi. 4; C. iv. 5; 1 Th. iv. 12; R. iii. 30; 1 Ti. iii. 7; *οἱ ἔξωθεν*, 1 Ti. iii. 7.
ἐπαγγελία, A. i. 4; E. i. 13; *κατ' ἐπαγγελίαν*, 2 Ti. i. 1.
ἐπαγγέλλομαι, G. iii. 19.
ἐπαγωνίζεσθαι τῇ πίστει, Jud. 3.
ἐπαίρω, A. i. 9; 1 Ti. ii. 8.
οὐκ ἐπαισχύνομαι, R. i. 16.
ἐπαιτεῖν, L. xvi. 3.
ἐπακροάομαι, A. xvi. 25.
ἐπανάγω, L. v. 3, 4.
ἐπάνω, L. x. 18.
ἐπαρχία and *ἐπιτροπή*, A. xxiii. 34; xxv. 1.
ἐπαυλις, A. i. 20.
ἐπαύριον, J. xii. 12; A. x. 23.
ἐπείπερ, R. iii. 30.
ἐπειτα, L. xvi. 7.
ἐπενδύσασθαι, 2 C. v. 2.

ἐπενδύτης, J. xxi. 7.
ἐπερωτάω, L. ii. 46.
ἐπερώτημα, 1 P. iii. 21.
ἐπέχω, A. iii. 5; *ἐπέσχευ* *εἰς*, A. xix. 22.
ἐπήνεσε, L. xvi. 8.
ἐπί, M. i. 11; ii. 22; *ἐπὶ τῆς θαλάσσης* and *ἐπὶ τὴν θάλασσαν*, xiv. 25; *ἐπὶ Ἀβιάθαρ*, Mk. ii. 26; *ἐπὶ τόπου πεδινού*, L. vi. 17; *ἐπί* with a dative, and with an accusative, L. xii. 23; *ἐπ' αὐτούς*, xviii. 7; *ἐπ' αὐτόν*, J. i. 32; *ἐπὶ Στεφάνῳ*, A. xi. 19; *ἐπὶ Κλαυδίου*, A. xi. 28; *ὡς ἐπὶ*, A. xvii. 14; "with regard to," Heb. vii. 12; *ἐπ' ἐσχάτου*, Heb. i. 1; in composition, 2 Ti. iv. 3; *ἐφ' ᾧ* = *ἐπὶ τούτῳ ὅτι*, 2 C. v. 4; R. v. 12; P. iii. 12; "upon," "concerning," Rev. x. 11; *ἐφ' ὅσον μὲν οὖν*, xi. 13.
ἐπιβάλλω, Mk. xiv. 46. 72; L. xv. 12.
ἐπιβαρέω, 1 Th. ii. 9; 2 Th. iii. 8.
ἐπιβλέπω, L. i. 48.
ἐπιβουλή, A. xx. 3.
τὰ ἐπίγεια, J. iii. 12.
ἐπιγινώσκω, Mk. v. 30; L. i. 4; 1 C. xvi. 18; *ἐπιγινώσκειν* and *γινώσκειν*, L. i. 4; 1 C. xiii. 12; *κάλλιον ἐπιγινώσκεις*, A. xxiv. 22; xxv. 10.
ἐπίγνωσις, 2 P. i. 2, 3. 8; ii. 20; C. i. 10; *ἐπίγνωσις ἀληθείας*, 1 Ti. ii. 4; *ἐπίγνωσις*, 1 Ti. i. 4; vi. 20; 2 Ti. iii. 7. 15; Tit. i. 16.
ἐπιγραφή, L. xxiii. 38.
ἐπιδείκνυμι, L. xvii. 14.
ἐπιδημοῦντες, A. ii. 10.
ἐπιδιατάσσομαι, G. iii. 15.
ἐπιδίδωμι, L. iv. 7.
ἐπιδιορθόομαι, Tit. i. 5.
ἐπιδόντες ἐφερόμεθα, A. xxvii. 15.
ἐπεικές, 1 Ti. iii. 3; Tit. iii. 2; P. iv. 5.
ἐπιζητέω, Mk. viii. 12.
ἐπίθεσις χειρῶν, Heb. vi. 2.
ἐπιθυμέω, M. v. 28; L. xvii. 22; *ἐπιθυμία* *ἐπεθύμησα*, L. xxii. 15.
ἐπιθυμία, R. vii. 7; P. i. 23.
ἐπικαλεῖσθαι τὸ ὄνομα Κυρίου, A. ii. 21.
ἐπικαλέομαι, A. vii. 59; xxi. 14; 1 P. i. 17.
ἐπικατάρατος, J. vii. 49; G. iii. 10.
Ἐπικούρειοι, A. xvii. 18.
ἐπικουρία, A. xxvi. 22.
ἐπιλαμβάνομαι, A. xvii. 19; Heb. ii. 16.
ἐπίλυσις, 2 P. i. 20.
ἐπιλύω, Mk. iv. 34.
ἐπιμένω, G. i. 18.
ἐπιούσιος, M. vi. 11.
ἐπιπίπτω, A. xx. 10.
ἐπιποθεῖν, 1 Th. iii. 6; 2 C. v. 2; ix. 14; P. i. 8; ii. 26; R. i. 11; xv. 23. 32.
ἐπιποθία, R. xv. 23.
ἐπίσημος, R. xvi. 7.
ἐπισκευασάμενοι, A. xxi. 15.
ἐπισκιάζω, L. i. 35.
ἐπισκοπέω, 1 P. v. 2.
ἐπισκοπή, A. i. 20; 1 Ti. iii. 1.
ἐπίσκοπος, A. xx. 28; *ἐπίσκοποι* and *πρεσβύτεροι*, Tit. i. 5; P. i. 1; 1 Ti. iii., Introductory Note, v. 1, 2; iv. 6; v. 1.
ἐπισπάομαι, 1 C. vii. 18.
ἐπίσταμαι and *γινώσκω*, A. xix. 15; xx. 18.
ἐπίστασις, 2 C. xi. 28.
ἐπιστάτης, L. v. 5.
ἐπιστήμη and *σοφία*, Jam. iii. 13.
ἐπιστήμων, Jam. iii. 13.
ἐπιστομίζω, Tit. i. 11.
ἐπιστρέφω, L. i. 17.
ἐπιστώθης, "wert assured of," 2 Ti. iii. 14.
ἐπισυνάγω, L. xii. 1.
ἐπισυναγωγή, A. xx. 7; 2 Th. ii. 1; M. xxiv. 28; L. xvii. 37; Heb. vii. 19; x. 25.
ἐπισωρεύω, 2 Ti. iv. 3.
ἐπιταγή, Tit. ii. 15; *ἐπ. Κυρίου*, 1 C. vii. 25.
ἐπιτρέπω, M. viii. 31; xix. 8; G. iii. 9; 1 Ti. ii. 12; 1 C. xiv. 34.
ἐπιτροπή, A. xxvi. 12.
ἐπιφαίνομαι, Tit. ii. 11; iii. 4.
ἐπιφάνεια, 2 Th. ii. 8; 1 Ti. iv. 14; 2 Ti. i. 10; iv. 1. 8; Tit. ii. 13.
ἐπιφανής, A. ii. 20.
ἐπιφωνεῖν τινι, A. xxi. 34.
ἐπιφώσκω, M. xxviii. 1.
ἐπιχειρέω, L. i. 1.
ἐπιχορηγέω, G. iii. 5; 2 P. i. 5.
ἐπιχρίω, J. ix. 8.
ἐποπτεύω, 1 P. ii. 12.
ἐπόπτης and *αὐτόπτης*, 2 P. i. 16.
ὡς ἔπος εἰπεῖν, Heb. vii. 9.
ἐπρίσθησαν, Heb. xi. 37.
ἐπτά, L. viii. 2; xi. 26.

ἐπωρώθησαν, R. xi. 7.
 ἔραστος, A. xix. 22.
 ἐργάζομαι, J. v. 17; vi. 27; ix. 4; 1 Th. ii. 9; iv. 11.
 ἐργασία, A. xvi. 16. 19; xix. 24.
 ἔργον, A. xiii. 2; τὸ ἔργον τῆς πίστεως, 1 Th. i. 3.
 ἐρευνάω, J. v. 39; 1 P. i. 11.
 ἔρημος, L. xv. 4; αὕτη ἐστὶν ἔρ., A. viii. 26; ἔρημος τῆς Ἰουδαίας, M. iii. 1; iv. 1.
 ἐρήμωσις, M. xxiv. 15; βδέλυγμα τῆς ἐρημώσεως, ib.; Mk. xiii. 14.
 ἐριθεία, G. v. 20; R. ii. 8; P. i. 16; ii. 3.
 ἐρίφια, M. xxv. 33.
 ἐριφος, L. xv. 29.
 ἐρόνιζωμένοι, E. iii. 18.
 ἐρχομαι, Mk. iv. 21; ἐρχεσθαι εἰς ἐαυτόν, L. xv. 17; ἐρχεσθε καὶ ἴδετε, J. i. 40; ἕως ἐρχομαι, L. xix. 13; J. xxi. 22; 1 Ti. iv. 13; ὁ ἐρχόμενος, M. iii. 11; xi. 3; xxiii. 39; L. vii. 19; J. i. 9; x. 8; 1 J. v. 6.
 ἐρωτᾶν and αἰτεῖν, 1 J. v. 16.
 ἔσονται, 1 C. xiii. 12.
 ἐστί, "represents," G. iv. 25; Rev. i. 20; xvii. 18; 1 C. x. 4.
 ἐταῖρος, M. xxvi. 50.
 ἐτεροδιδασκαλέω, 1 Ti. vi. 3.
 ἐτεροζυγέω, 2 C. vi. 14.
 ἕτερος τόπος, A. xii. 17; ἕτερος and ἄλλος, G. i. 6, 7; ὁ ἕτερος, R. ii. 1; 1 C. vi. 1; x. 24; L. x. 20. 39; τὸν ἕτερον, "his neighbour," R. xiii. 8.
 ἔτι, G. i. 10.
 ἐτοιμασία, E. vi. 15.
 κατ' ἔτος, L. ii. 44.
 εὐαγγελίζομαι, L. i. 19; A. viii. 25.
 εὐαγγέλιον, M. i. 1; xxiv. 14; Mk. i. 1; x. 29; xvi. 15; πιστευθῆναι τὸ εὐαγγέλιον, 1 Th. ii. 4; A. xxii. 3; G. ii. 7; 1 Ti. i. 11.
 εὐδοκίω, C. i. 19.
 εὐδοκία, L. ii. 14; 2 Th. i. 11; R. x. 1.
 εὐεργέτης, L. xxii. 25.
 εὐθετος, Heb. vi. 7.
 εὐθέως, M. xxiv. 29; Mk. vi. 45.
 εὐκαιρέω, A. xvii. 21.
 εὐλάβεια, A. viii. 2; Heb. v. 7.
 εὐλαβέομαι, Heb. ix. 7.
 εὐλάβης, L. ii. 25; A. viii. 2.
 εὐλογέω, E. i. 3.
 ὁ Εὐλογητός, Mk. xiv. 62; L. i. 68; E. i. 3; 1 P. i. 3; εὐλ. and μακάριος, R. i. 25.
 εὐλογία, 1 P. iii. 8; Rev. v. 12; = בְּרָכָה, 2 C. ix. 5.
 εὐνοῦχος, M. xix. 12; A. viii. 27.
 εὐοδοῦμαι, 3 J. 2; εὐοδοῦν τινα, R. i. 10.
 εὐπάρεδρον, 1 C. vii. 35.
 εὐπερίστατος, Heb. xii. 1.
 εὐπρόσδεκτος, R. xv. 31.
 εὐρίσκω, M. x. 39; J. v. 14; ix. 35; xii. 14; εὐρίθη = ἐφάνη, M. i. 18; εὐρον καί, A. xvii. 23; Heb. ix. 12.
 εὐσέβεια, 1 Ti. ii. 2; 2 P. i. 3.
 εὐσεβέω, A. xvii. 23.
 εὐσεβής, A. x. 2.
 εὐσχημόνως, 1 Th. iv. 12.
 εὐσχήμων, A. xiii. 50.
 εὐτραπελία, E. v. 4.
 εὐφημα, P. iv. 8.
 εὐχαριστήσας, J. vi. 11. 23.
 εὐχαριστία, 1 C. xiv. 16.
 εὐχαριστῶ, A. xxvii. 35; εὐχαριστοῦμεν, 1 Th. i. 2.
 εἶχεν εὐχὴν, A. xviii. 18; xxi. 23.
 εὐχρηστος, Pn. 11.
 εὐωδία, 2 C. ii. 15.
 ἐφάπαξ, Heb. vii. 27; ix. 12.
 ἐφημερία, L. i. 5.
 ἐφθαθά, Mk. vii. 34.
 ἐχόμενος = ἐγγός, Mk. i. 38; A. xiii. 44.
 ἔχω, Rev. viii. 9; ἔχε με παρητημένον, L. xiv. 18; ἴσθι ἔχων, L. xix. 17; εἶχεν εὐχὴν, A. xviii. 18; xxi. 23; ἔχεσθαι, "to cleave to," Heb. vi. 9; ἔσχηκεν for ἔσχευ, 2 C. vii. 5; ἐσχέκαμεν and ἔσχομεν, 2 C. i. 9.
 ἕως οὗ, M. i. 25; xiv. 22; xviii. 34; xxvi. 36; "while," ἕως ἄν, v. 26; xvi. 28; xxvii. 8; xxviii. 20; ἕως ἄνω, J. ii. 7; ἕως ἄρτι, v. 17.

Ζακχαῖος, L. xix. 2.

Ζαχαρίας, M. xxiii. 35; L. i. 5.

ζευκτηρία, A. xxvii. 40.

ζηλόω, with an accusative, G. iv. 17; ἵνα ζηλοῦτε, ib.; τὸ ζηλοῦσθαι ἐν καλῷ, 18.
 ζηλωτής, L. vi. 15.
 ζηλωτὴς νόμου, G. i. 14; iv. 17, 18; 1 C. xiv. 12; A. xxii. 3; ζηλωταί, 1 P. iii. 13.
 ἵνα Θεῷ ζήσω, G. ii. 19.
 ζητέω, J. vi. 26.
 ζιζάνια, M. xiii. 25.
 Ζοροβάβελ, M. i. 12.
 ζυγόν, ζυγός, M. xi. 30; A. vii. 10; ζυγός δουλείας, G. v. 1.
 ζυμή, M. xiii. 33; xvi. 6. 12; L. xii. 1; G. v. 9.
 ζυμώω, G. v. 9.
 ζωή, J. i. 4; vi. 48; ὁ ἄρτος τῆς ζωῆς, ib.; πνεῦμα καὶ ζωή, 63.
 ζώνη, Mk. vi. 8.
 οἱ ζῶντες, 1 Th. iv. 17.
 ζωογονέω, L. xvii. 33; Rev. viii. 9.
 ζωοποιέω, J. vi. 63.

"H, "or even," E. v. 4.

ἡγεμών, M. ii. 6; 1 P. ii. 14; Mk. xv. 1.

ἡγέομαι, A. xxvi. 2.

ἤδη, "already," M. v. 28; J. iii. 18; iv. 35; xxi. 14; 1 C. v. 3; vi. 5; 2 Ti. iv. 6; 2 P. iii. 1.

ἤδη ποτέ, R. i. 10.

ἡλάττωσας, Heb. ii. 7.

ἡλεημένοι, 1 P. ii. 10.

Ἡλίας, J. i. 21.

ἡλικία, M. vi. 27; J. ix. 21. 23; Heb. xi. 11.

ἡλίκος, Jam. iii. 5.

ἡλκωμένος, L. xvi. 20.

ἡμεθα for ἡμεν, M. xxiii. 30.

ἡμέρα, L. xvii. 26; Rev. iv. 8; vii. 15; xii. 10; ἡμέρα ἐκείνη, M. xxiv. 29; καθ' ἡμέραν, Heb. vii. 27; ἡμέρα καὶ ἡμέρα, 2 C. iv. 16; ἡμέραι ὀκτώ, L. ix. 28; ἡ ἡμ. ἡ μεγάλη, J. vii. 37; ἡμέραι ἱκαναί, A. ix. 23; ἀφ' ἡμερῶν ἀρχαίων, A. xv. 7; τὸ καθ' ἡμέραν, L. xi. 3; xix. 47; A. xvii. 11; αἱ ἐπτά ἡμέραι, A. xxi. 27; τούτων τῶν ἡμερῶν, A. i. 5; xxi. 38.
 τί ἡμῖν καὶ σοί, M. viii. 29.

Ἡρώδης, L. xiii. 31; Ἡρ. ὁ βασιλεὺς, A. xii. 1.

αὐτῆς τῆς Ἡρωδιάδος, Mk. vi. 22.

Ἡρωδιανοί, M. xxii. 15, 16.

φιλοτιμεῖσθαι ἡσυχάζειν, 1 Th. iv. 11.

ἡττήθητε ὑπέρ, 2 C. xii. 13.

ἡττημα, R. xi. 12; 1 C. vi. 5.

ἡψατο, M. ix. 20.

Θαδδαῖος, M. x. 3.

θάλασσα, L. xxi. 25.

θάλπω, 1 Th. ii. 7.

θαμβέομαι, Mk. x. 32.

θάνατος, M. xxvi. 66; οὐδὲν ἄξιον θανάτου, L. xx. 15; θάνατον οὐ μὴ θεωρήσῃ, J. viii. 51.

θαρσέω, A. xxiii. 11.

θαυμάζω, Mk. vi. 6; ἐθαύμαζον, J. vii. 14.

θεάομαι, 1 J. i. 1.

θεατρίζομαι, 1 C. iv. 9; Heb. x. 33.

θέατρον, A. xix. 31.

θειότης and θεότης, C. ii. 9; R. i. 20.

θέλημα and βούλημα, R. ix. 19; 1 Ti. v. 14; 2 C. i. 15. 17.

θέλησις, Heb. ii. 4.

θέλω, M. viii. 3; xx. 3; Mk. vi. 48; ix. 35; xii. 38; J. vi. 21; xii. 21; τί θέλω, εἰ ἥδη ἀνῆφθῃ; L. xii. 49; θ. and βούλομαι, 1 Th. ii. 18; Pn. 13; θέλοντες, "willing," G. i. 7; Pn. 14; G. iv. 9; 2 P. iii. 5; 1 Ti. v. 14; 1 C. vii. 7; θέλω—ἦ, 1 C. xiv. 19.

θεμέλιος, Rev. xxi. 19.

θεμελιώω, 1 P. v. 10; E. iii. 18.

θεοδιδάκτος, J. vi. 45; 1 Th. iv. 9.

θεόπνευστος, 2 Ti. iii. 15.

Θεὸς ἀληθινός, J. xvii. 3; 1 Th. i. 9; Θ. τῆς δόξης, A. vii. 2; ἐνώπιον τοῦ Θ., G. i. 20; κατὰ Θεόν, 2 C. vii. 9.

θεοστυγής, R. i. 30.

θεοφάνια, M. ii. 1.

Θεόφιλος, L. i. 3; A. i. 1.

θεράπων, Heb. iii. 5.

θερισμός, M. ix. 37; L. x. 2.

Θεσσαλονίκη, A. xvii. 1.

Θευδᾶς, A. v. 36.

θεωρίω, Mk. xv. 47; L. x. 18; xxi. 6; J. vi. 19. 40; viii. 51; x. 12; xvi. 10; "contem-plate," xvii. 22; A. x. 11; xvii. 22; xx. 38; θεωρῶ, ὅτι—μέλλειν, A. xxvii. 10.

θηριομαχέω, 1 C. xv. 32.

θηρίον, Mk. i. 13; applied to a person, Tit. i. 12; Rev. vi. 8.

θησαυρίζω, R. ii. 5.

θίγω, C. ii. 20; μηδὲ θίγῃς, ib.

θλίβομαι, 1 C. vii. 5.

θλίψις, M. xxiv. 21; A. xx. 23; R. ii. 9.

θησκεία, Jam. i. 27.

θησκος, Jam. i. 26.

θριαμβεύω, 2 C. ii. 14; C. ii. 15.

θρόμβοι αἵματος, L. xxii. 44.

θρόνος, L. xxii. 30; ἐν θρόνῳ and ἐπὶ θρόνου, Rev. iii. 21.

θροοῦμαι, 2 Th. ii. 2.

ξύλον θύϊνον, Rev. xviii. 12.

θυμιάζω, L. i. 9.

θυμίαμα, L. i. 11.

θυμιατήριον, Heb. ix. 4.

θυμομαχέω, A. xii. 20.

θυμός and ὀργή, Rev. xix. 15.

θύρα, J. x. 7; θύρα ὥραία, A. iii. 2; θ. τοῦ πυλῶνος, A. xii. 13; ἤνοιξε θύραν, A. xiv. 27.

θυρεός, E. vi. 16.

θυρωρός, J. x. 3.

θυσία and προσφορά, Heb. x. 10.

θυσιαστήριον, M. v. 23; Jam. ii. 21.

θύω, L. xxii. 7; θύσον καὶ φάγε, A. x. 13.

Θωμᾶς, M. x. 3; J. xi. 16.

θώρακα πίστεως, 1 Th. v. 8.

Ἰάειρος, Mk. v. 22.

ἱασίς, A. iv. 30.

ἰαταί σε ὁ Ἰησοῦς, A. iv. 30; ix. 34.

ἴδε, G. v. 2; ἴδετε, "mark ye," G. vi. 11.

τά ἴδια, J. i. 11; εἰς τὸν τόπον τὸν ἴδιον, A. i. 25; suis, 1 P. iii. 1. 5; 2 P. i. 3. 20; ii. 16. 22; iii. 3. 16, 17.

ιδιώτης, A. iv. 13; 1 C. xiv. 23; 2 C. xi. 6.

ιδού, M. i. 20; xiii. 3; Mk. iv. 3.

ιδρώς, L. xxii. 44.

ιεράτευμα ἁγίων, 1 P. ii. 5.

ὁ ἱερεὺς, J. i. 19; and see Mk. ii. 26.

ἱερικῶς, L. xviii. 35.

ἱερόν, M. xxi. 12.

ἱεροπρεπής, Tit. i. 3.

ἱεροσόλυμα, M. ii. 1. 3; Mk. xi. 1; A. i. 4.

ἱερόσυλος, A. xix. 37.

ἱεουργεῖν τὸ εὐαγγέλιον, R. xv. 16.

ἱερουσαλήμ, L. ii. 25; xix. 42; the form always used in the Apocalypse, Rev. iii. 12.

Ἰησοῦς, M. i. 1. 21; L. i. 31; Ναζωραῖος, A. ii. 22; ἰαταί σε ὁ Ἰησοῦς, A. iv. 30; ix. 34.

τὸ ἱκανόν, A. xvii. 9.

ικανώω, C. i. 12; 2 C. iii. 6.

ἱκόνιον, A. xiii. 51.

ἰλάσθητί μοι, L. xviii. 13.

ἰλάσκομαι, Heb. ii. 17.

ἰλασμός, R. iii. 25; E. i. 7; Heb. ii. 17; 1 J. ii. 2; iv. 10.

ἰλαστήριον, M. xx. 28; R. iii. 25.

ἱλεώς σοι, M. xvi. 22.

ἱμάς, L. iii. 16; J. i. 27.

ἱμάτιον, M. v. 40; xxi. 7; xxiv. 18; xxvi. 65; J. xiii. 4.

ἱματισμός, A. xx. 33.

ἵνα, M. i. 22; J. xx. 31; "in order that," M. iv. 3; vii. 12; Mk. vi. 25; ix. 30; P. i. 9; J. ix. 39; xii. 38; 1 C. xi. 19; marks the subject and object, 1 P. iv. 6; 2 C. i. 9; iv. 7; ἵνα βλέποντες, Mk. iv. 12; ὅτι—ἵνα, v. 18, 19; ἵνα, denoting effect, J. xii. 40; with the future, G. ii. 4; 1 C. xi. 19; xiv. 13; E. vi. 3; 1 P. iii. 1; 1 J. ii. 19; 3 J. 4; Rev. xxii. 14; "I command that," or "let her see that," E. v. 23; J. xiii. 29.

Ἰόππη, A. x. 5.

Ἰορδάνης, M. iii. 5.

Ἰούδα, L. i. 39.

ἡ Ἰουδαία γῆ, J. iii. 22.

Ἰουδαϊσμός, G. i. 13.

Ἰσκαριώτης, M. x. 4.

ἴσος, Mk. xiv. 56; τὸ εἶναι ἴσα, P. ii. 6.

ἰσόψυχος, P. ii. 20.

Ἰσραήλ, L. i. 54.

ἰστώω, ἴστημι, M. xxvi. 15; ἰστώ for ἴστημι, Mk. ix. 12; A. i. 23; ἰστώτα, vii. 56; μὴ στήσης ἀμαρτίαν, A. vii. 60; σταθεῖς, L. xviii. 11; A. xvii. 22; xxvii. 21.

ἰστορεῖν τινα, G. i. 18.

ὁ ἰσχυρότερος, Mk. i. 7; ἰσχυρότερός μου, M. iii. 11.

ισχύω, A. xv. 10.
σπείρης Ἰταλικῆς, A. x. 1.
Ἰωάννης, L. i. 13; J. i. 6. 15.
ἰῶτα, M. v. 18.

καθαιρέω, L. xii. 18.
καθαίρω, J. xv. 2.
καθαρίζω, Mk. vii. 9.
καθαρισμός, J. ii. 6; iii. 25; Heb. i. 3.
καθαρός, J. xv. 2; καθαρὰ συνείδησις, A. xxiii. 1; Heb. xiii. 18; 2 Ti. i. 3.
καθεξῆς, L. i. 3.
καθεύδω, M. xxvi. 45; Mk. iv. 38.
καθηγητής, M. xxiii. 10.
καθῆμαι, M. xxiii. 2; L. xxi. 35.
καθίστημι, M. xiii. 48; Jam. iii. 6; iv. 4.
κάθου, for κάθησο, Jam. ii. 3.
καθώς, J. xv. 9. 12; xx. 21; "according as," E. i. 4.
καί, adversative, M. xi. 19; "imo," L. v. 35; "also," xiii. 7; = γ, L. xxiv. 18; J. vii. 4; "even," M. xxi. 5; G. v. 12; P. i. 22; καί—δέ, 1 J. i. 3; 2 P. i. 5; introducing a parenthesis, J. i. 14; 1 J. i. 2; καί γάρ, 1 C. xi. 9; with the aorist, Rev. x. 7.
Καϊνάν, L. iii. 36.
καινὸν μνημεῖον, M. xxvii. 60.
καινός, M. xxvi. 29; καινός and νέος, Mk. ii. 22; E. iv. 23; Heb. ix. 15; 2 P. iii. 13; 1 J. ii. 8.
καίπερ, Heb. v. 8; P. iii. 3.
καιρός, L. xxi. 24; J. v. 4; 1 C. vii. 29; Rev. i. 2, 3; πρὸ καιροῦ, M. viii. 29; καιρός σύκων, Mk. xi. 13; κ. καρπῶν, J. vii. 6; καιρός καὶ χρόνος, A. i. 7; iii. 21; πρὸς καιρὸν ὥρας, 1 Th. ii. 17; καιροῖς ἰδίοις, Tit. i. 3; κ. and χρόνος, 1 P. iv. 17; καιρῷ δεκτῷ, 2 C. vi. 2.
Καيسάρεια, A. x. 1.
Καيسαρίας τῆς Φιλίππου, M. xvi. 13.
κακία, M. vii. 34.
κακοήθεια, R. i. 29.
κακοποιός, J. xviii. 30.
κακοῦργος, 2 Ti. ii. 9.
κακός, 1 P. iii. 13; ἐκάκωσε τοῦ ποιεῖν, A. vii. 19.
κάλαμος, M. xii. 20; xxvii. 48; Rev. xi. 1.
καλεῖν τὸ ὄνομα, M. i. 21. 23; ii. 23; v. 9.
καλεῖται, ἔρχομαι, Heb. iii. 13; κληθήσεται, M. ii. 23.
καλόν—ἡ, M. xviii. 8.
καλώς, Mk. vii. 9.
καμμύω, M. xiii. 15.
κᾶν, "at least," A. v. 15.
ἐν Κανᾷ τῆς Γαλαλαίας, J. i. 52.
Κανανίτης, M. x. 4.
κανὼν, G. vi. 16; 2 C. x. 13; Rev. xi. 1.
καπηλεύω, 2 P. ii. 3; 2 C. ii. 17.
καρδία τῆς γῆς, M. xii. 40.
καρπός, M. vii. 16; xxi. 34.
κάρφος, M. vii. 3.
καθ' ὅσον, "inasmuch as," Heb. ix. 27; κατὰ τὸν αἰῶνα, E. ii. 2; in composition, 1 C. vii. 31; "according to," 1 C. iii. 3; xv. 32; 2 C. vii. 9; 1 P. iv. 6; κατὰ καιρὸν, R. v. 6; καθ' εἰς, "severally," M. xiv. 19; R. xii. 5.
καταβαίνω, M. xxvii. 42; J. ii. 12; iv. 47; v. 4; vi. 33; 1 Th. iv. 16.
καταβολή σπέρματος, Heb. xi. 11.
καταβραβεύω, C. ii. 18.
καταγγέλλω, 1 C. xi. 26.
καταγινώσκειν, κατηγορεῖν, and κατακρίνειν, 1 J. iii. 20.
περισσότερον κατάδηλον, Heb. vii. 15.
καταδικάζω, Jam. v. 6.
καταδουλώω, G. ii. 4.
καταισχύνω, 1 C. xi. 5.
κατακλάζω, Mk. vi. 41.
κατάκριμα, R. viii. 1.
κατακρίνω, J. viii. 11; R. viii. 3.
καταλαλέω, Jam. iv. 11.
κατάλειμμα and ὑπόλειμμα, R. ix. 27.
καταλείπω, J. viii. 9; 1 Th. iii. 2.
καταλλαγή, R. v. 11; 2 C. v. 18.
κατάλυμα, L. ii. 7.
καταλύω, M. xxvi. 61; L. xix. 7; G. ii. 17.
καταναλίσκω, Heb. xii. 29.
καταναρκάω, 2 C. xi. 9; xii. 13.
καταντάω, 1 C. x. 11.
κατανύξω πνεῦμα, R. xi. 8.
κατανύω, L. v. 7.

κατάπαυσις, Heb. iii. 11; iv. 5.
καταπέτασμα, M. xxvii. 51; Heb. vi. 18; ix. 3.
καταργέω, G. v. 4; 1 C. vi. 13; xv. 24, 25, 26; xiii. 8; Rev. xi. 15.
καταρτίζω, 1 Th. iii. 10; Heb. x. 5; 1 P. v. 10; κατηρτισμένος, L. vi. 40.
κατασκευάζω, Heb. iii. 4.
κατάστημα, Tit. i. 3.
καταστήσης, Tit. i. 5.
καταστολή, 1 Ti. ii. 9.
καταστρηνιάω, 1 Ti. v. 11.
κατασφραγίζω, Rev. v. 1.
κατατομή, P. iii. 2.
καταφάγω, R. x. 9.
καταφέρειν ψῆφον, A. xxvi. 10.
καταφιλέω, M. xxvi. 49; A. xx. 37.
καταφρονέω, 2 P. ii. 10; 1 Ti. iv. 12; 1 C. xi. 22.
καταφρονητός, A. xiii. 41.
καταχράομαι, 1 C. vii. 31.
κατεγνωσμένος, G. ii. 10.
κατείδωλος, A. xvii. 16.
κατεργάζομαι, 1 P. iv. 3; P. ii. 12; R. vii. 15.
κατέρχομαι, M. xvii. 14; L. ix. 37; A. xviii. 5.
κατεσθίω, Mk. xii. 40.
κατέχω, 2 Th. ii. 6; 2 C. vi. 10; κατέχετε and ἀπέχεσθε, 1 Th. v. 22.
κατήφεια, Jam. iv. 9.
κατηχέω, L. i. 4; A. xviii. 25; xxi. 24; G. vi. 6; R. ii. 18; 1 C. xiv. 19.
κατοικεῖν, A. ii. 5; xvii. 24; C. i. 19.
κατοικητήριον, E. ii. 22.
κατοπτρίζομαι, 2 C. iii. 18.
κατόρθωμα, A. xxiv. 2.
τὰ κατώτερα μέρη τῆς γῆς, E. iv. 9.
καῦμα, Rev. xvi. 8.
καύσων, Jam. i. 11.
καυχάομαι, 2 Th. i. 4.
καύχημα, Heb. iii. 6; P. i. 26; 1 C. ix. 16.
καύχησις, στέφανος καυχήσεως, 1 Th. ii. 19; καύχ. and καύχημα, 2 C. i. 12. 14.
Καφαρναούμ, M. iv. 13; xi. 23; J. vi. 59.
Κεγχρεαῖς, R. xvi. 1.
Κέδρων, J. xviii. 1.
κειράμενος τὴν κεφαλὴν, A. xviii. 18.
κείρεσθαι, A. xviii. 18; κείρειν and ξυρεῖν or ξυρᾶν, 1 C. xi. 6.
κειρίαι, J. xi. 44.
κεῖται, M. xvi. 18.
κέλευσμα, 1 Th. iv. 16.
κενέ, Jam. ii. 20.
κενοφωνία, 1 Ti. vi. 20; 2 Ti. ii. 16.
κέντρον, A. xxvi. 14.
κεντυρίων, Mk. xv. 39.
κενώς, Jam. iv. 5.
κεράμιον ὕδατος, Mk. xiv. 13; L. xxii. 10.
διὰ τῶν κεράμων, L. v. 19.
κέρας σωτηρίας, L. i. 69.
κεράτιον, L. xv. 16.
κερδαίνειν ὕβριν καὶ ζημίαν, A. xxvii. 21.
κέρδος, P. i. 21.
κεφάλαιον, A. xxii. 28; Heb. viii. 1.
κεφαλαιώω, Mk. xii. 4.
κεφαλὴν γωνίας, M. xxi. 42. 44; A. iv. 11; 1 P. ii. 7; E. ii. 20.
κεφαλῆς, Heb. x. 7.
κῆνσος, M. xxii. 17; νόμισμα τοῦ κ. ἰθ.
κῆπος, J. xix. 41.
κῆρυγμα, 1 C. i. 21; Tit. i. 3.
κηρύσσω, 1 P. iii. 19.
Κηφᾶς, J. i. 43.
κινάμωμον, Rev. xviii. 13.
κλαίω and δακρύω, Rev. v. 4; M. xxvi. 75; Mk. xiv. 72; L. xix. 41.
κλᾶν ἄρτον, L. xxiv. 30; A. ii. 42. 46.
κλάσις ἄρτου, L. xxiv. 30.
Κλαύδα, A. xxvii. 16.
κλέος, 1 P. iv. 19.
κλέπτῃς—ληστής, J. x. 1. 8.
κλήμα, J. xv. 2.
Κλεόπας, L. xxiv. 18.
κληρονομία, 1 P. i. 4.
κληρονόμος, G. iv. 1.
κληῖρος, A. i. 17. 26; E. i. 11; 1 P. v. 3.
κληρώω, E. i. 11.
κλητός, R. i. 1. 6.
κλίβανον, M. vi. 30.
κλινή, L. xvii. 34.
κλινίδιον, Mk. ii. 4.
κλώμενον, 1 C. xi. 24.
Κλωπᾶς, J. xix. 25.
κνηθόμενος τὴν ἀκοήν, 2 Ti. iv. 3.
κοδράντης, Mk. xii. 42.

κοιλία, J. vii. 38; 1 C. vi. 13.
κοιμάομαι, M. xxvii. 52; J. xi. 11; A. vii. 60; 1 C. xi. 30; xv. 6; 1 Th. iv. 13; κοιμώμενοι and κεκοιμημένοι, 1 Th. iv. 13; οἱ κοιμηθέντες, 14.
κοινός, M. xv. 11; Mk. vii. 2; A. x. 15; εἶχον ἅπαντα κοινά, ii. 44; R. xiv. 14.
κοινός, M. xv. 11.
κοινωνέω, "to contribute," G. vi. 6; R. xii. 13.
κοινωνία, M. xxvi. 26; A. ii. 42; G. vi. 6; 2 C. viii. 4; R. x. 26; P. iv. 15; Heb. xiii. 16; Pn. 6; κοιν. and μετοχή τοῦ αἵματος, 1 C. x. 16.
κοινωνός, 2 P. i. 4.
κοίτη, Heb. xiii. 4.
κοκκίνη, M. xxvii. 28.
κόκκος σινάπεως, L. xiii. 19; xv. 15.
κολακεία, 1 Th. ii. 5.
κολαφίζω, M. xxvi. 67; 1 P. ii. 20. 24.
κολλάομαι, M. xix. 5; L. xv. 15; A. v. 13; ix. 26; x. 28; Rev. xviii. 5.
κολλούριον, Rev. iii. 17.
κολλυβιστής, M. xxi. 12; Mk. xi. 15.
κολοβόω, M. xxiv. 22.
κόλπος, L. vi. 38; κόλπος Ἀβραάμ, xvi. 22; ὁ ὢν εἰς τὸν κ. J. i. 18.
κολυμβήθρα, J. v. 2.
κολωνία, A. xvi. 12.
κομίζομαι, E. vi. 8.
κομψότερον, J. iv. 52.
κοινάω, M. xxiii. 27.
κοπετός, A. viii. 2.
κοπιάω, J. iv. 5. 38; 1 Th. v. 12.
κόπος, G. vi. 17; κόπος καὶ μόχθος, 1 Th. ii. 9; 2 Th. iii. 8; 2 C. xi. 27.
κόπτομαι, L. viii. 52; xxiii. 27; plango, M. xi. 17; xxiv. 30; Rev. i. 7; xviii. 9.
κόρακας, L. xii. 24.
κορβανᾶν, M. xxvii. 6; κορβᾶν, M. xv. 5; Mk. ii. 3; vii. 11.
κορός, L. xvi. 7.
κοσμοκράτωρ, E. vi. 12.
κόσμος, J. i. 10.
κόφινος, M. xiv. 20; xvi. 9, 10; J. vi. 13.
κράβατος, Mk. ii. 4; J. v. 8.
κράζω, M. xxvii. 23; Mk. ix. 26; J. i. 15; vii. 28; xii. 44.
κρανίον, L. xxiii. 33.
κράσπεδον, M. ix. 20; xiv. 36; xxiii. 5.
κρατέω, M. xxvi. 57; Mk. iii. 21; L. xxiv. 16; κρ. τῆς χειρός, L. viii. 54; Rev. ii. 1.
κράτιστος, L. i. 3.
κράτος τῆς ἰσχύος and ἐνέργειας, E. i. 19.
κρείττων, Heb. vi. 7.
κρέμαμαι, M. xxii. 40.
κρίθινους ἄρτους, J. vi. 9.
κρίμα, J. ix. 39; 1 C. xi. 29; Jam. iii. 1; "punishment," Jud. 4; εἶχονσαι κρίμα, 1 Ti. v. 12.
κρίματα and ὁδοί, R. xi. 33.
κρίνω, M. xix. 28; L. xii. 57; J. v. 22; κρίνετε—κρίνατε, vii. 24; viii. 15; A. xv. 19; κρίνεσθαι, 1 C. vi. 1.
κρίσιν ποιῆσαι, J. v. 27.
κρίσις, M. v. 22; J. iii. 19; v. 22; κρ. and κρίμα, Heb. vi. 2; Jam. ii. 13; ἐνοχος κρίσεως, Mk. iii. 29.
κριτηρίων ἐλαχίστων, 1 C. vi. 2.
κριτικός καρδίας, Heb. iv. 13.
ἐν τῷ κρυπτῷ, M. vi. 4.
κτάομαι, M. xxiii. 23; L. xviii. 12; 1 Th. iv. 4; κτᾶσθαι τὸ ἑαυτοῦ σκεῦος, 1 Th. iv. 4.
κτῆνος, L. x. 34.
κτίζω, E. ii. 10.
κτίσις, Mk. xvi. 15; R. viii. 22.
κυβερνήτης, A. xxvii. 11.
κυνάριον, M. xv. 26.
κύνες, M. vii. 6; L. xvi. 21.
Κυρηναῖον, M. xxvii. 32.
Κυρήνιος, L. ii. 2.
Κυριακὸν δεῖπνον, 1 C. xi. 20, 21.
Κύριος, M. iii. 3; xxviii. 6; L. ii. 9; J. i. 4; ii. 10; A. ii. 47; Χριστὸς Κύριος, ἰθ.; ὁ Κύριος, L. vii. 13; x. 1; equivalent to Jehovah, A. i. 6. 21; ὁ Κύριος Ἰησοῦς, A. i. 21.
κυριότης, 2 P. ii. 10.
κωλύω, Mk. ix. 38; κωλύσαι τὸν Θεόν, A. xi. 17.
κώμη, M. ix. 35; A. viii. 25.
κωφός, L. i. 22.

- λαγχάνω, L. i. 9; ἔλαχε τὸν κλῆρον, A. i. 17.
 Λάζαρος, L. xvi. 20; J. xi. 14.
 λάθρα, J. xi. 28.
 λαΐλαψ, L. viii. 23.
 ἐλάκησε μένος, A. i. 18.
 λακτίζω, A. xxvi. 14.
 λαλέω, Mk. xvi. 19; L. xxiv. 14; J. xii. 49; ἐλάλουν γλώσσαις, A. xix. 6.
 λαλιά, M. xxvi. 73; J. iv. 42.
 λαμὰ σαβαχθανί, M. xxvii. 46.
 λαμβάνειν, M. viii. 17; "to receive wages," 2 C. xi. 20; 3 J. 7.
 λαμβάνω πρόσωπον, L. xx. 21.
 λαμπάς, M. xxv. 3; J. xviii. 3; A. xx. 8.
 λανθάνω, A. xxvi. 26; ἔλαθον—ξενίσαντες, Heb. xiii. 2.
 λαός, "the people," = the ancient Church of God in Israel, 2 P. ii. 1.
 λατρεία, R. ix. 4; λογικὴν λατρείαν, R. xii. 1; λατρεῖαν προσφέρειν, J. xvi. 2.
 λατρεύω, M. iv. 10; Heb. xiii. 10; 2 Ti. i. 3.
 λάχανον, R. xiv. 2.
 Λεγεών, Mk. v. 9.
 λέγω, M. viii. 22; σὺ λέγεις, M. xxvi. 25. 64; xxvii. 11; J. xviii. 37; σοὶ λέγω, L. vii. 14; ἔλεγον, 2 Th. ii. 5; λέγων, absolute use of the nominative, Rev. xi. 1.
 τὰ λείποντα, Tit. i. 5.
 λειτουργέω, A. xiii. 2.
 λειτουργικά πνεύματα, Heb. i. 13.
 λειτουργός, A. xiii. 2; Heb. viii. 2; R. xiii. 6.
 λέντιον, J. xiii. 4.
 λεπίδες, A. ix. 18.
 λεπτόν, L. xii. 59; xxi. 2.
 Λευί, Mk. ii. 14.
 λευκός, Rev. vi. 2.
 λήθην λαβών and ὑπόμνησιν λαβών, 2 Ti. i. 5; 2 P. i. 9.
 ληνός, Rev. xiv. 19.
 ληστής, M. xxi. 13; xxvii. 38; J. x. 1. 8.
 λίαν, M. ii. 10; xxvii. 14; L. xxiii. 8; 2 J. 4; 3 J. 3.
 λίβανος, M. ii. 11.
 ἡ συναγωγή τῶν Διβερτίνων, A. vi. 9.
 λιθοβολέω, A. vii. 59.
 λίθος μυλικός, Mk. ix. 42; λίθου βολήν, L. xxii. 41; λίθον ζῶντα, 1 P. ii. 4.
 Λιθόστρωτον, J. xix. 13.
 λιμός, A. xi. 28.
 λιμοὶ καὶ λοιμοί, L. xxi. 11.
 λίτρα, J. xix. 39.
 λίψ, A. xxvii. 12.
 λόγια Θεοῦ, *The Holy Scriptures*, 1 P. iv. 11; τὰ λόγια τοῦ Θεοῦ, R. iii. 2.
 λογίζομαι, P. iv. 8; 1 C. xiii. 4; 2 C. x. 2; R. iii. 28; viii. 18.
 λογικόν, R. xii. 1; 1 P. ii. 2.
 λογισμός, R. ii. 15.
 ὁ Λόγος, J. i. 1; λόγος = *Logos*, M. v. 32; = Χριστός, L. i. 2; H. iv. 12; Tit. i. 3 (see below, *Logos*); λόγος παρακλήσεως, A. xiii. 15; λόγος σοφίας, 1 C. ii. 4; λ. ἀληθείας, 2 C. vi. 7; ἐν λόγῳ κολακείας, 1 Th. ii. 5; λ. ἀκοῆς, 13; A. xx. 32; ἐν λόγῳ Κυρίου, 1 Th. iv. 15; 1 Ti. iv. 5; Jam. i. 18; Heb. iv. 12; Tit. i. 3; 1 P. i. 23; 1 J. i. 1; λόγον συντελῶν καὶ συντέμνων, R. ix. 28; δυνατός ἐν λόγοις, A. vii. 22; ὁ λόγος τῆς χάριτος, A. xx. 32; "prophecy and tongues," 1 C. i. 4, 5.
 λοιδορούμενος, 1 P. ii. 23.
 τὸ λοιπόν, 1 Th. iv. 1; 2 Th. iii. 1; 1 C. vii. 29; 2 C. xiii. 11; E. vi. 10; P. iii. 1; iv. 8; οἱ λοιποί, L. xviii. 9; A. v. 13; 1 Th. iv. 13.
 Λούω, J. xiii. 10; A. xvi. 33.
 Λυκαονιστί, A. xiv. 11.
 λυμαίνομαι, A. viii. 3.
 λυπέομαι, 1 Th. iv. 13.
 λύπη, P. ii. 27; λ. and ὁδύνη, R. ix. 2.
 λυσitteλεί, L. xvii. 2.
 λύτρον, M. xx. 28; J. x. 11; 1 C. vi. 20; 1 P. i. 18; 1 J. v. 6; Rev. i. 5.
 λυτρώω, 1 P. i. 18.
 λύχνος τοῦ σώματος, L. xi. 34; λύχνος καίόμενος, J. v. 35; contrasted with φῶς, M. xi. 2.
 λύω, J. i. 27; λύσατε, "destroy," J. ii. 19; λύειν, applied to the destruction of what is evil, 1 J. iii. 8; τούτων λυομένων, 2 P. iii. 11.
 Μαγδαλά, M. xv. 39.
 μάγοι, M. ii. 1; A. xiii. 6.
 μαθητεύω, M. xxviii. 19.
 μαθητής, J. xviii. 16; ἀρχαῖος μαθητής, A. xxi. 16.
 μαίνομαι, A. xxvi. 11. 24, 25.
 μακαρίζω, L. i. 48; G. iv. 15.
 μακάριος, M. v. 3—11; L. vi. 20—22.
 μακαρισμός, G. iv. 15; R. iv. 9.
 Μακεδονία, A. xvi. 9, 10, 12.
 ἐν μακέλλῳ, 1 C. x. 25.
 μακρόθεν, Mk. xi. 13.
 μακροθυμέω, L. xviii. 7; Jam. v. 7.
 μακροθυμία, L. xviii. 7; 1 P. iii. 20.
 μαλακός, 1 C. vi. 9.
 μάλλον, "rather," M. xviii. 13, and cp. L. xviii. 14; G. iv. 27; μ. κρείσσον, P. i. 23.
 μάμμα, 2 Ti. i. 5.
 μαμωνᾶ, M. vi. 24; ἐκ τοῦ μαμωνᾶ, L. xvi. 9; μαμωνᾶ τῆς ἀδικίας, 8.
 Μανᾶν, A. xiii. 1.
 μανθάνω, 1 Ti. v. 13.
 τὸ μάμμα, J. vi. 31.
 μαραίνομαι, Jam. i. 11.
 Μαρὰν ἀθά, 1 C. xvi. 22.
 Μαρία ἡ ἄλλη, M. xxviii. 1; Μαριάμ, L. i. 27; Μαρία—Κλωπᾶ, J. xix. 25.
 μάρτυρ τῆς ἀναστάσεως, A. i. 22.
 μαρτυρέω, J. v. 36, 37; A. xv. 8; xxiii. 11; μ. μαρτυρίαν, 1 J. v. 10; Rev. i. 2.
 μαρτυρία, J. iii. 32; v. 34.
 μαρτύριον, 1 Ti. ii. 6; Rev. xv. 5.
 μαρτύρομαι and μαρτυρέομαι, 1 Th. ii. 11; G. v. 3; μαρτυρόμενος, A. xxvi. 22.
 μαστιγώω, J. xix. 1.
 ματαιότης, R. viii. 20.
 Ματθαῖον, M. ix. 9; L. vi. 15.
 Ματθάν, M. i. 15.
 μάχαιρα, L. xxii. 36, 38; A. xii. 2; R. xiii. 4; Rev. vi. 4; στόμα μαχαίρας, L. xxi. 24.
 μεγαλεῖα, L. i. 46.
 μεγαλοπρεπὴς δόξα, 2 P. i. 17; ii. 10.
 μεγαλύνω, M. xxiii. 5; L. i. 46.
 μέγεθος, E. i. 19.
 μεθοδεία, E. vi. 11.
 μεθόριον, Mk. vii. 24; A. xvi. 12.
 μεῖζοτέρων, 3 J. 4.
 μεῖζων, M. xviii. 1.
 οὐδὲν—ἔμελεν, A. xviii. 17.
 μέλη Χριστοῦ, 1 C. vi. 15.
 Μελίτη, A. xxviii. 1.
 μεμψίμοιρος, Jud. 14.
 μὲν οὖν, A. v. 41; μὲν καὶ, P. i. 15.
 μενούργε, L. xi. 28; "nay, but," R. ix. 20; "nay, verily," x. 16.
 μένειν, "to wait with patience," J. xxi. 22, 23; 1 J. ii. 6, 18.
 μέντοι, 2 Ti. ii. 19.
 μερίζω, R. xii. 3; 1 C. vii. 34.
 μεριμνάω, M. vi. 25; L. x. 40; xii. 22; 1 C. vii. 35.
 μερίς, A. xvi. 12; C. i. 12; πρώτη τῆς μερίδος, A. xvi. 12.
 μερισμός, 1 C. vii. 17; xii. 11; 2 C. x. 13; R. xii. 3; Heb. ii. 4.
 μέρος, A. xvi. 12; τὰ ἀνωτερικά μέρη, A. xix. 1; τοῦτο τὸ μέρος, A. xix. 27; μέρος τι, 1 C. xi. 18; ἀπὸ μέρους, R. xi. 25; xv. 24; 2 C. i. 14; ii. 5; ἐκ μέρους, 1 C. xiii. 9; ἐν μέρει, "in respect of," C. ii. 16; ἐν τούτῳ τῷ μέρει, 2 C. iii. 10.
 μεσιτεύειν ὄρκῳ, Heb. vi. 17.
 μεσίτης, G. iii. 19; 1 Ti. ii. 5; Heb. viii. 6.
 τὸ μεσότοιχον τοῦ φραγμοῦ, E. ii. 14.
 μεσουράνημα, Rev. viii. 13.
 Μεσσία, J. i. 42.
 ἐν μέσῳ, M. xviii. 20; διὰ μέσου, L. xvii. 11; σταθεῖς ἐν μέσῳ, A. xxvii. 21.
 μεταβαίνω, J. v. 24; xiii. 1.
 μεταδιδόναι τί τι, E. iv. 28.
 μεταδίδωμι, R. xii. 8.
 μεταλαμβάνω, A. ii. 46.
 μεταμεληθεῖς, M. xxvii. 3.
 μεταμορφοῦμαι, M. xvii. 2; L. ix. 29; R. xii. 2.
 μετανοέω, L. xv. 7, 10; A. viii. 22.
 μετάνοια and μεταμέλεια, 2 C. vii. 10.
 μεταξύ, A. xv. 9; M. xviii. 15; R. ii. 15.
 μετασχηματίζω, P. iii. 21.
 μετατίθεμαι, G. i. 6.
 μετέχειν and κοινωνεῖν, 1 C. x. 17.
 μετεωρίζω, L. xii. 29.
 μετοικεσία, M. i. 11.
 μετοικίζω, A. vii. 4.
 μέτοχοι, L. v. 7; Heb. i. 9; μέτοχος and ἐνοχος, Heb. ii. 15; iii. 14.
 μετρητής, J. ii. 6.
 μετριοπαθεῖω, Heb. v. 1.
 μέτρον, 2 C. x. 13; ἐν ᾧ μέτρῳ, Mk. iv. 24.
 μή, M. xii. 30; 1 C. ix. 9; x. 22; xi. 22; xii. 29, 30; 1 J. iv. 3; with indicative, L. xi. 35; "num?" R. iii. 5; μὴ γένοιτο, L. xx. 16; μὴ βλέπων, A. ix. 9; μὴ εἰδόσι—μὴ ὑπακούουσι, 2 Th. i. 8; μὴ γάρ, J. i. 7; 1 P. iv. 15; ἵνα μή, P. i. 19.
 μηδέ, E. iv. 27.
 μηλωτή, Heb. xi. 37.
 μήποτε, M. iv. 6; v. 25; xxv. 9; Mk. iv. 12; Heb. iii. 12; iv. 1; 2 Ti. ii. 25; "never," Heb. ix. 17.
 μήτι γε, 1 C. vi. 3.
 μιαίνω, J. xviii. 28.
 μικρός, M. x. 42; xviii. 6; ἔτι μικρόν, J. xiv. 19; μικρόν τι ἀφροσύνης, 2 C. xi. 1.
 μικρότερος, L. ix. 48.
 μιμηταί, 1 Th. i. 5.
 μισέω, L. xiv. 26; J. xii. 25.
 μισθωτός, J. x. 13.
 μνῆμα, A. ii. 29; Rev. xi. 9.
 μνημεῖον, J. v. 28; ἔθηκαν εἰς μνημεῖον, A. xiii. 29.
 μνηστεύομαι, M. i. 18; L. i. 27.
 μοιχαλῖς, M. xii. 39; Jam. iv. 4; 2 P. 14.
 μοιχάομαι, M. xix. 9.
 μόλις, A. xxvii. 16.
 ἡ σκηνὴ τοῦ Μολόχ, A. vii.
 μολύνεται, 1 C. viii. 7.
 μοναὶ πολλαί, J. xiv. 2.
 ὁ μονογενής, J. i. 14.
 μονόομαι, 1 Ti. v. 5.
 μορφή, Mk. xvi. 12.
 μορφωθῇ Χρ. ἐν ὑμ., G. iv. 19.
 μόρφωσις, R. ii. 20; μ. and μορφή, 2 Ti. iii. 5.
 τὸν μόσχον τὸν σιτευτόν, L. xv. 23.
 μου, emphatic, M. viii. 8, and see "Emphasis."
 μόχθον καὶ κόπον, 1 Th. ii. 9.
 μῦθος, 1 Ti. i. 4; iv. 7; 2 Ti. iv. 4; Tit. i. 14.
 μυκάται, Rev. x. 3.
 μυκτηρίζω, G. vi. 7.
 μύλος ὀνικός, M. xviii. 6; L. xvii. 2.
 Μύρα, A. xxvii. 5.
 μύρον, L. vii. 37.
 μυστήριον, M. xiii. 11; 2 Th. ii. 7; E. i. 9; iii. 3, 4, 9; v. 32; vi. 19; 1 Ti. iii. 9, 16; Rev. xvii. 5, 7.
 μυωπάζω, 2 P. i. 9.
 μώλωψ, 1 P. ii. 24.
 μῶμοι, 2 P. ii. 13.
 μωρολογία, E. v. 4.
 μωρός, M. v. 22.
 Ναζαρέθ, M. ii. 23; L. i. 26; ii. 39.
 Ναζαρηνός, Mk. xvi. 6.
 Ναζωραῖος, M. ii. 23; J. xix. 19; A. ii. 22.
 Ναθαναήλ, J. i. 46.
 Ναῖν, L. vii. 11.
 ὁ ναός, M. xxiv. 15; distinction between it and ἱερόν, M. xxi. 12; xxvii. 5; Rev. xi. 1; xv. 5; ναοὶ ἀργυροί, A. xix. 24.
 νάρδον πιστικῆς, J. xii. 3.
 ναύκληρος, A. xxvii. 11.
 ναῦς, A. xxvii. 41.
 νεανίας, A. vii. 58.
 νεανίσκος, Mk. xiv. 51; A. v. 6, 10.
 νεκρός, J. v. 25; οἱ νεκροὶ ἐν Χριστῷ, 1 Th. iv. 16; "dead in sin," 1 Pet. iv. 6.
 νέκρωσις, 2 C. iv. 10.
 νέος and καινός, E. iv. 23, 24; C. iii. 10. See καινός.
 νεφέλη φωτεινὴ, M. xvii. 5; τὴν νεφέλην, L. xii. 54; A. i. 9.
 νεωκόρος, A. xix. 35.
 νέωτεροι, A. v. 6.
 νήπιος, M. xi. 25; G. iv. 1; 1 C. iii. 1; E. iv. 14; Heb. v. 13.
 νηστεία, A. xxvii. 9.
 νηστεύω, M. vi. 16; μὴ δύνανται—νηστεύειν, Mk. ii. 19.
 Νικόδημος, J. iii. 1.
 νιπτήρ, J. xiii. 5.

νίπτω, J. ix. 7; xiii. 5—7; νίψαι εἰς, J. ix. 7.
νόημα, 2 C. iii. 14.
νομή, 2 Ti. ii. 17.
νομίζομαι, L. iii. 23.
νομικός, M. xxii. 35; Tit. iii. 13.
νόμισμα τοῦ κήνσου, M. xxii. 19.
νόμος, L. xvi. 16; xxiv. 44; J. i. 17; ποιεῖ τὸν νόμον, J. vii. 19; διὰ νόμον, G. ii. 19; νόμῳ ἀπέθανον, *ib.*; νόμος—κεῖται, 1 Ti. i. 8; νόμος βασιλικός, Jam. ii. 8; Holy Scripture, L. xxiv. 44; J. viii. 17; R. iii. 19.
νόσημα, J. v. 4.
νοσφίζομαι, A. v. 2.
νότος, A. xxvii. 13.
νοῦς and συνειδήσις, Tit. i. 15.
νυκτός καὶ ἡμέρας, Mk. iv. 27; v. 5; L. ii. 37; xviii. 7; A. ix. 24; xx. 31; xxvi. 7; 1 Th. ii. 9; iii. 10; 2 Th. iii. 8; 1 Ti. v. 5; 2 Ti. i. 3; Rev. iv. 8.
νύμφη, J. iii. 29.
νυμφίος, M. xxv. 6; J. iii. 29.
νυμφών, M. ix. 15.
νῦν, L. xi. 39; J. xviii. 36.
νύσσω, J. xix. 34.
νυστάζω, 2 P. ii. 3.
νυχθήμερον, 2 C. xi. 25.
νωθρός, Heb. v. 11; vi. 12.

Ξενία, Pn. 22.
ξενίζω, A. xxi. 16; 1 P. iv. 4.
ξένος, E. ii. 19.
ξέσται, Mk. vii. 4.
ξύλον, L. xxiii. 31; = γρ, A. v. 30; = τδ, xvi. 24.
ξυρᾶσθαι, A. xviii. 18.

ō and ō confused in MSS., 1 C. xv. 49.
οἱ πολλοὶ and πολλοί, difference of, 2 C. ii. 17; R. v. 15.
ὅ τι = διότι, "why," Mk. ix. 11.
ὁδοιπορέω, A. x. 2.
ὡδός, A. ix. 2; ὁδ. θαλάσσης, M. iv. 15; ὁδ. ἐθνῶν, x. 5; ἐν ὁδῷ δικαιοσύνης, xxi. 32; ὁδὸν ποιεῖν, Mk. ii. 23; κατὰ τὴν ὁδ. L. x. 4; ἡ ὁδ. = "saving doctrine and practice," A. ix. 2; xix. 9. 23; ταύτην τὴν ὁδὸν, A. xxii. 4.
ὀθόνη, A. x. 11, 12.
ὀθόνη, J. xix. 40.
οἶδαμιν, J. xxi. 24; 1 J. v. 15. 20, 21; οἶδα, 1 J. ii. 20, 21; iii. 2. 5. 14, and *passim*; οὐκ οἶδατε, 1 C. vi. 2; οἶδα and ἐπίσταμαι, A. xix. 15; Heb. xi. 8; Jam. iv. 14; 1 J. ii. 3; Jud. 10.
οἰκέται, 1 P. ii. 18.
οἰκῆμα, A. xii. 7.
οἰκία, M. ii. 11; Mk. x. 10; A. ii. 2.
οικοδεσποτέω, 1 Ti. v. 14.
οικοδομέω, 1 P. ii. 5.
οικοδομή, M. xxiv. 1; οἰκ. τῆς χρείας, E. iv. 29.
οἰκονομία, L. xvi. 9; E. i. 10; 1 Ti. i. 4; οἰκ. Θεοῦ, *ib.*
οικονόμος, L. xvi. 1; R. xvi. 23; τὸν οἰκονόμον τῆς ἀδικίας, L. xvi. 8.
οἶκος, "family," L. ii. 4; εἰς οἶκον, "domi," Mk. ii. 1; οἶκος ἐπὶ οἶκον, L. xi. 17; κατ' οἶκον, A. v. 42; οἶκος and οἰκία, A. ii. 2; οἰκ. πνευματικός, 1 P. ii. 5.
πᾶσα ἡ οἰκούμενη, L. ii. 1; iv. 5; xxi. 26.
οἰκουρός, Tit. i. 5.
οἰκτιρμός, 2 C. i. 3.
οἶμαι, J. xxi. 24, 25.
οἰνοφλυγία, 1 P. iv. 3.
ὀκνηρός, M. xxv. 26; P. iii. 1; R. xii. 11.
ἐν ὀλίγῳ, A. xxvi. 28, 29; E. iii. 3.
ὀλόκληρος, Jam. i. 4.
ὄλον = ἔλ, L. xi. 26; J. vii. 23.
ὀμειρόμενοι, 1 Th. ii. 7.
ὀμιλῶ, A. xxiv. 26.
ὀμιλέω, L. xxiv. 14.
ὀμίχλη, 2 P. ii. 17.
ὀμοθυμαδόν, A. i. 14; ii. 1; iv. 24.
ὅμοιος, Jud. 7.
ὁμοιωθῆναι, Heb. ii. 17.
ὁμοίως μέντοι, Jud. 8.
ὁμοιώσω αὐτόν, M. vii. 24, and see xxii. 2.
ὁμολογέω, J. i. 20; R. x. 10.

ὁμολογία, Heb. iii. 1; 1 Ti. vi. 12; μαρτυρεῖν ὁμολογίαν, 1 Ti. vi. 12.
ὁμολογουμένως, 1 Ti. iii. 16.
ὅμως, "even," G. iii. 15; ὅμως ἐάν, 1 C. xiv. 7.
ὄναρ, M. i. 20.
ὄναριον, J. xii. 14.
ὄνειδίζω, Jam. i. 5.
ὄνειδισμός, 1 Ti. iii. 7.
μύλος ὀνικός, M. xviii. 6.
ὄνομα, *נָשָׂא*, M. vi. 9; καλεῖν τὸ ὄν. M. i. 21. 23; εἰς τὸ ὄνομα, and ἐν τῷ ὀνόματι, M. x. 41; xii. 17; xviii. 20; xxviii. 19; Mk. ix. 41; ἐπὶ τῷ ὀνόματι, M. xxiv. 5; ὀνόματα, Hebraism for "persons," A. i. 15; ὃς ἂν ἐπικαλέσῃται τὸ ὄνομα, A. ii. 21; ὑπὲρ τοῦ ὀνόματος, A. v. 41; 3 J. 7.
ὄνος, M. xxi. 5.
ὄξος μετὰ χολῆς, M. xxvii. 34.
ὀπαί τῆς γῆς, Jam. iii. 11.
ὀπλίζω, 1 P. iv. 1.
ὀπότε, L. vi. 3.
ὅπου, "whereas," 2 P. ii. 10.
ὀπτανόμενος, A. i. 3; as distinguished from θεωρούμενος, *ib.*
ὀπτομαι, M. xxvi. 64; J. xvi. 10. 16; 1 J. iii. 2; Rev. i. 7; ὀπτ. and θεωρέω, *ib.*
ὅπως, Heb. ii. 9; ὅπως ἂν, "in order that," A. iii. 19; R. iii. 4; 2 P. iii. 12; ὅπως—μή, L. xvi. 28; ὅπως, "in order that," Pn. 6.
ὄραμα, A. ix. 12; xvi. 9.
ὀράω and βλέπω, 2 C. vii. 8.
ὀργή, J. iii. 36; 1 Th. ii. 16.
ὀργίζομαι, E. iv. 26.
ὀρεγόμενος, 1 Ti. vi. 10.
ὀρθοποδέω, G. ii. 14.
ὀρθοτομέω, 2 Ti. ii. 15.
ὀρθρίζω, L. xxi. 38.
τὰ ὄρια, Mk. x. 1.
ὀρίζω, Heb. iv. 7; κατὰ τὸ ὠρισμένον, L. xxii. 22; ὠρισμένη βουλή, A. ii. 23.
ὄρος τῶν ἐλαιῶν, M. xxi. 1.
τὸ ὄρος, M. v. 1, and see xvii. 1.
ὀρφανός, J. xiv. 18; 1 Th. ii. 17.
ὀρῶμεν, and βλέπομεν, A. iii. 4; 1 C. i. 26; iii. 10; viii. 9; Heb. ii. 8; x. 25.
ὃς γε, "who even," R. viii. 32.
ὃς μὲν—ὃς δέ, 1 C. xi. 21.
ὄσιος, L. i. 75; A. ii. 27; Rev. xv. 4; τὰ ὄσια Δαυὶδ, A. xiii. 34.
ὀσιότητι καὶ δικαιοσύνῃ, L. i. 75.
ὀσίως καὶ δικαίως, 1 Th. ii. 10.
ὁσμὴ τῆς γνώσεως, 2 C. ii. 16, 17; ὁσμὴ εὐωδίας, J. xii. 3; E. v. 2; P. iv. 18.
ὄσος, J. xxi. 25; A. ii. 39; ὄσα, "quæ et quanta," Jud. 10; Rev. i. 2; ὄσον, ὄσον, "how little, how little!" Heb. x. 37; ὄσα, J. xxi. 25; Rev. i. 2, 3.
ὄστις, ὄστινες, "quippe qui," R. i. 25. 32; ii. 15; vi. 2; ix. 4; 1 Ti. i. 4; vi. 9; 1 P. ii. 11; ὄστινες and ὄζ, R. vi. 2.
ἐν ὀστρακίνοις σκεύεσιν, 2 C. iv. 7; 2 Ti. ii. 20.
ὅταν ἔλθῃ, 2 Th. i. 10; ὅταν, with conj. aor. = "cum," Heb. i. 6.
ὅτι—ἵνα, Mk. v. 23; εἰς ἐκεῖνο ὅτι—ὑπὲρ ὧν ὅτι, J. ix. 17; ὅτι = "in regard to that," J. xi. 47; τί ὅτι, A. v. 4; ὅτι οὐ ψεύδομαι, G. i. 20; 1 J. iii. 20.
οὐαὶ ὑμῖν, M. xxiii. 13. 29; L. xi. 46.
οὐδέ, 1 Th. ii. 3 ("nor yet"); and οὐτε, 1 Th. ii. 3; "not yet," Heb. ix. 12.
οὐδέπω, J. xx. 9.
οὐκ—ἄρτι = οὐπω, J. vii. 8; οὐ μὴ εἰς τὸν αἰῶνα, J. xi. 26; οὐ γὰρ, A. xvi. 37; peculiar use of, derived from the Hebrew, 1 C. xv. 10.
οὖν, M. vii. 12; 1 C. x. 31; εἶπον οὖν, J. xviii. 25; μὲν οὖν, A. v. 41.
οὐρανός, ii. 9; βασιλεία τῶν οὐρανῶν, M. iii. 2; iv. 17.
οὐτε—οὐτε—οὐτε, 1 Th. ii. 3.
οὗτος = "this," used to designate the speaker himself, M. xvi. 18; iii. 3; xxi. 44; J. ii. 19; vi. 51.
οὕτως, J. iv. 6.
οὐχ οἶον, R. ix. 6; οὐχ ὅτι, 2 C. iii. 5.
ὀφειλέτης, R. i. 14.
ὀφειλήν, 1 C. vii. 3.
ὀφελον, Rev. iii. 15.
ὀφελος, G. v. 12; Jam. ii. 14.
ὀφθαλμοδουλεία, E. vi. 6.
ὀφθαλμός ἀπλούς, M. iv. 22; ὀφθ. πονηρός, M. xx. 15.

ὄφρις, L. x. 19.
ὄφρυς, L. iv. 29.
ἄτερ ὄχλου, L. xxii. 6.
ὀψάριον, J. vi. 9. 11; xxi. 9, 10. 13.
ὀψέ, M. xxviii. 1.
ὀψὲ σαββάτων, M. xxviii. 1.
ὀψία, M. viii. 16; J. vi. 16.
ὀψιμος, Jam. v. 7.
ὀψώνια, L. iii. 14; R. vi. 23.

παγίς, L. xxi. 35; 1 Ti. iii. 7.
πάθημα, C. i. 24; R. vii. 5.
παθητός, A. xxvi. 23.
παιδαγωγός, G. iii. 24.
παιδάριον, J. vi. 9.
παιδεία, E. vi. 4.
παιδεύω, L. xxiii. 16.
παιδίον, M. xviii. 2; Mk. x. 13; L. i. 76.
παιδίσκη, M. xxvi. 69; A. xii. 13.
παίζω, 1 C. x. 7.
παῖς, "servant," and "son," M. xii. 17; xiv. 2; A. iv. 27.
παῖς Θεοῦ, A. iii. 13.
πάλαι, Jud. 4.
παλαιός, Heb. viii. 13.
παλή, E. vi. 12.
παλιγγενεσία, M. xix. 28; xxiv. 8; Tit. iii. 5.
πάλιν, Heb. i. 6; iv. 7; 2 C. ii. 1; its use by St. Mark, viii. 1.
παμπόλλου, Mk. viii. 1.
πανδοχείον, L. x. 34.
πανοπλία, E. vi. 13.
εἰς τὸ παντελές, Heb. vii. 25.
πάντοτε, L. ii. 37; xxiv. 23; J. xviii. 20.
οὐ πάντως, R. iii. 9.
παρά, *præter*, G. i. 8, 9; 2 P. ii. 1; παρ' ὃ, G. i. 8; in composition, Jud. 4; παρά μίαν, 2 C. xi. 24.
παράβασις, Heb. ii. 2; 1 Ti. ii. 14.
παραβιάζομαι, A. xvi. 15.
παραβολή, M. xiii. 3; xv. 15; Heb. xi. 19.
παραβουλεύεσθαι, P. ii. 30.
παραγγέλλω, A. v. 28; xvi. 17, 18; παραγγέλλε, L. viii. 29; παραγγέλλομεν, 2 Th. iii. 4. 6. 10. 12; 1 Th. iv. 11; 1 Ti. vi. 13; 1 C. vii. 10; xi. 17.
παραγγελία, A. v. 28; 1 Ti. i. 5.
παράγω, 1 J. ii. 8; παράγει τὸ σχῆμα, 1 C. vii. 31.
παραδειγματίζω, Heb. vi. 4.
παράδεισος, L. xxiii. 42, 43; 2 C. xii. 4.
παραδέχομαι, Heb. xii. 6.
παραδίδωμι, Mk. iv. 29; L. i. 2; xxii. 22; 1 C. xi. 23.
ὁ παραδώσω, J. vi. 64.
παράδοσις, M. xv. 3.
παραδούς for προδούς, M. x. 4.
παραζηλώω, R. xi. 11.
παραθήκη, 1 Ti. vi. 20.
παραιτέομαι, L. xiv. 18; A. xxv. 11; 1 Ti. iv. 7; v. 11.
παράκλητος, J. xiv. 16. 26; Heb. vii. 25; 1 J. ii. 1.
παρακοή, Heb. ii. 2.
παρακολουθέω, L. i. 3.
παρακύπτω, Jam. i. 25; 1 P. i. 12.
παραλαμβάνω, M. xx. 17; Mk. x. 32—34; L. xviii. 31; π. and δέχομαι, 1 Th. ii. 13.
παραλέγομαι, A. xxvii. 8.
παραλύομαι, A. viii. 7.
παραλυτικός, A. viii. 7.
παραμυθέομαι, 1 Th. ii. 11.
παραπικρασμός, Heb. iii. 8. 15.
παραπίπτομαι, Heb. vi. 6.
παραπλησίως, Heb. ii. 14.
παραπορεύομαι, Mk. ii. 23.
παραπτώμα, E. i. 7; R. v. 15. 20; Jam. v. 16; παράπτ. and ἀμαρτία, E. ii. 1; παράπτ. and πνεῦμα, R. xi. 11.
παραρρύω, Heb. ii. 1.
παρασκευή, M. xxvii. 62; Mk. xv. 42; J. xix. 14.
παρασκευάζω, A. x. 10.
παρατηρέω, L. xvii. 20; xx. 20; G. iv. 10.
παρατήρησις, L. xvii. 20.
παρατίθημι, A. xvii. 3; 1 P. iv. 19.
παραφέρω, Heb. xiii. 8.
παρεδρεύω, 1 C. ix. 13.
πάρειμι, G. iv. 20.
παρεισάγω, G. ii. 4; 2 P. ii. 1.

παρεισακτός, G. ii. 4.
 παρεισδύω, Jud. 4.
 παρεισφέρω, 2 P. i. 5.
 παρεμβολή, A. xxi. 34; xxii. 24; Heb. xi. 34; xiii. 11. 13; Rev. xx. 9.
 παρεπίδημος, 1 P. i. 1.
 παρέρχομαι, Mk. vi. 48.
 πάρεσις, R. iii. 25; differs from ἄφεσις, ἰδ.
 παρητημένος, L. xiv. 18.
 παρθένος, M. i. 23.
 παρίστημι, A. i. 10; 1 C. viii. 8.
 παροικέω, L. xxiv. 18; Heb. xi. 9.
 πάροικος, E. ii. 19.
 παροιμία, 2 P. ii. 22.
 πάροινος, 1 Ti. iii. 3; Tit. i. 7.
 παροίχομαι, A. xiv. 16; παρωχημένος, ἰδ.
 παροξυσμός, A. xv. 39.
 παροργισμός, E. iv. 26.
 παρουσία, M. xxiv. 3. 37. 39; 1 Th. ii. 19; iii. 13; iv. 15; v. 23; 2 Th. ii. 1. 8; 1 C. xv. 23.
 παρόρησία, 1 J. iii. 21; v. 14.
 παρόρησιάζομαι, A. ix. 27; xviii. 26.
 παρόρησιάζομενος, A. ix. 29.
 πᾶς, without the article following it, E. ii. 21; πᾶσαν χαράν, "merum gaudium," Jam. i. 2; πᾶς and ἅπας, A. ii. 1; 1 Ti. i. 16; πᾶσα, "major vel magna pars," M. iii. 5; πᾶσαν, "every kind of," M. iv. 23; οὐκ—πᾶν, "nothing," M. xxiv. 22; L. i. 37; A. x. 14; πᾶν—μή, = ἥ, M. xxiv. 22; J. vi. 39; περὶ πάντων, A. i. 1; 3 J. 2; πᾶς—οὐ, J. iii. 16; E. v. 5; 1 J. ii. 23.
 πάσχα, M. xxvi. 2, and note 1; J. vi. 4; xiii. 1; ποιῶ τὸ π. M. xxvi. 18; φαγεῖν τὸ π. L. xxii. 11; J. xviii. 28.
 πάσχω, A. ix. 16; παθεῖν τὸν Χριστόν, L. xxiv. 46.
 πατάσσω, A. xii. 21—23.
 πατέω, L. xxi. 24.
 πατήρ, applied to Joseph, L. ii. 48.
 πατραλῶς, 1 Ti. i. 9.
 πατριά = φυλή, L. ii. 4.
 πατριά = ἡγεμονία, A. iii. 25; E. iii. 15.
 πατροπαράδοτος, 1 P. i. 18.
 Παῦλος, A. xiii. 9; οἱ περὶ Π. A. xiii. 13.
 πεδινὸς τόπος, M. v. 1; L. vi. 17.
 πεζῇ, M. xiv. 13; Mk. vi. 33; A. xx. 13.
 πειθὼ ἀνθρώπων, M. xxviii. 14; A. xii. 20; G. i. 10; 1 J. iii. 19.
 πεινάω, Mk. xi. 12.
 πειράζω, M. iv. 1; xix. 3; ὁ πειράζων, M. iv. 3; 1 Th. iii. 5; πειρ. τὸν Θεόν, A. xv. 12.
 πειρασμοὶ ποικίλοι, Jam. i. 2; 1 P. i. 6.
 πεισμονή, G. v. 8.
 πελεκίζω, Rev. xx. 4.
 πέμπω, ἐπεμψα, "I send," 2 C. ix. 3.
 Πεντηκοστή, A. ii. 1.
 πέραν, M. iv. 15; J. iii. 26; διὰ τοῦ πέραν, Mk. x. 1.
 Πέργη, A. xiii. 13.
 περί, 1 J. i. 1; "for," "on account of," G. i. 4; R. viii. 3; 1 J. ii. 2; iv. 10.
 περί and ὑπέρ, 2 Th. ii. 1; G. i. 4.
 τὰς περὶ Μάρθαν καὶ Μαρίαν, J. xi. 19.
 περιαιρέω, A. xxvii. 40; 2 C. iii. 16.
 περιβάλλω, A. xii. 8.
 περιεργάζομαι, 2 Th. iii. 11.
 περιέργος, A. xix. 19.
 περιέρχομαι, A. xxviii. 13.
 περιέχω, 1 P. ii. 6.
 περιζώννυμι, L. xii. 35. 37; xvii. 8; E. vi. 14.
 περίστημι, Tit. iii. 9; 2 Ti. ii. 16.
 περικυκλόω, L. xix. 43, 44.
 περικρατεῖς γενέσθαι, A. xxvii. 16.
 περίλυπος, M. xxvi. 38; Mk. vi. 26.
 περιούσιος, Tit. ii. 4.
 περιοχή, A. viii. 32.
 περιπατέω, M. iv. 18; Mk. vii. 5; viii. 24; 1 Th. ii. 11; περιπεπατήκει, A. xiv. 8.
 περιπείρω, 1 Ti. vi. 10.
 περιπίπτω, A. xxvii. 41.
 περιποίησις, 1 Th. v. 8; εἰς περιποίησιν, 2 Th. ii. 14; E. i. 14.
 περισπάω, L. x. 40.
 περισσεύω, E. i. 8.
 περισσόν, M. v. 37. 47; R. iii. 1. 9.
 περισσότερον, M. xxiii. 13; περισσότερον κατάδηλον, Heb. vii. 15.
 περισσοτέρως, 1 Th. ii. 17.
 περιτίθημι, 1 C. xii. 23.
 περιτομή, G. iv. 16; R. iv. 3. 10.
 περιφρονεῖν, Tit. ii. 15.
 περπερεύομαι, 1 C. xiii. 4.

ἀπὸ πέρυσσι, 2 C. viii. 10; ix. 2.
 πέτρα, M. v. 1; xvi. 18; ἐπὶ τὴν πέτραν, M. vii. 25; L. viii. 6; ἐν τῇ πέτρᾳ, M. xxvii. 60; 1 C. x. 4.
 Πέτρος, M. xvi. 18; Mk. iii. 16; L. xxii. 34.
 τὰ πετρώδη, L. viii. 6.
 πηγαὶ ἄνδρῶν, 2 P. ii. 16.
 πηδάλιον, A. xxvii. 40.
 πηλίκος, Heb. vii. 4; πηλικοῖς γράμμασι, G. vi. 11.
 πηλός, J. ix. 6.
 πιάζω, J. xxi. 3.
 πικρία, E. iv. 31.
 ρίζα πικρίας, Heb. xii. 15.
 πινακίδιον, L. i. 63.
 πιπράσκω, A. ii. 45.
 πιστεύω, J. ii. 11; ἐπίστευον, J. vii. 5; A. viii. 13; "to make a public profession," A. xiii. 48; xv. 7; xix. 2; xxi. 20; πιστεύω εἰς, J. xvi. 1; π. ἐν, Mk. i. 15; cp. M. xviii. 6. 20; πιστευθῆναι τὸ εὐαγγέλιον, 1 Th. ii. 4; ἐπιστεύθη τὸ μαρτύριον, 2 Th. i. 10; πεπίστευμαι, G. ii. 7; 1 Ti. i. 13; π. with an accusative, 1 C. ix. 17; ὁ ἐπιστεύθη, G. ii. 7; Tit. i. 3; ἐπιστεύθησαν, 1 Th. ii. 4; R. iii. 2.
 πιστικός, Mk. xiv. 3; J. xii. 3.
 πίστις, L. xvii. 19; A. xvii. 31; R. iii. 3; 1 Ti. v. 12; τὸ ἔργον τῆς πίστεως, 1 Th. i. 3; "the whole body of Christian doctrine," R. xii. 6; Jud. 3; "persuasion," R. xiv. 23; ἐκ πίστεως εἰς πίστιν, R. i. 17; διὰ πίστεως, 2 C. v. 7; πίστις Θεοῦ, Mk. xi. 22; πίστις τοῦ ὀνόματος αὐτοῦ, A. iii. 16; ἡ πίστις ἡ δι' αὐτοῦ, A. iii. 16; ἀκοή πίστεως, G. iii. 2; οἱ ἐκ πίστεως, G. iii. 7.
 πιστός, 1 Ti. i. 12; πιστὸς ὁ λόγος, 1 Ti. i. 15; iii. 1; iv. 9; 2 Ti. ii. 11; Tit. iii. 8; πιστὸν ποιεῖν, 3 J. 5.
 πλανᾶω, 1 C. vi. 9.
 πλάνη, M. xxvii. 64; ἐκ πλάνης, 1 Th. ii. 3.
 πλάνος, 1 Th. ii. 3.
 πλατεῖα, L. xiv. 21; Rev. xi. 8; xxii. 2.
 πλάτος, E. iii. 18.
 πλατύνειν φυλακτήρια, M. xxiii. 5.
 πλέγματα, 1 Ti. ii. 9.
 πλεῖν τόπους, A. xxvii. 2.
 τὸ πλεῖον, L. vii. 43.
 τοὺς πλείονας, 1 C. ix. 19.
 πλεονεξία, 1 Th. ii. 5; iv. 6; 2 C. ix. 5; E. iv. 19; 2 P. ii. 3; πλ. and φιλαργυρία, 1 Ti. vi. 10.
 πλεον contrasted with μᾶλλον, M. xviii. 13.
 πληγή, R. ix. 18.
 πληθός, J. v. 3; A. xxi. 22.
 πληθύνω, 1 P. i. 2.
 πληκτής, 1 Ti. iii. 3; Tit. i. 7.
 πλήν, L. vi. 35; xiii. 33; xviii. 8; xxii. 21; E. v. 33; "but, moreover," P. iii. 16.
 πλήρης λέπρας, L. v. 12.
 πληροφορέω, L. i. 1; R. iv. 21; xiv. 5.
 πληροφορία, L. i. 1; 1 Th. i. 5; R. iv. 21; xiv. 5; C. ii. 2.
 πληρώω, M. v. 17; ἵνα πληρωθῇ, M. i. 22; ii. 15; iv. 14; πληρῶσαι, xxvi. 56; xxvii. 35; J. xiii. 18; xvii. 12; ὅπως πληρωθῇ, M. viii. 17; xii. 17; xiii. 35; τότε ἐπληρώθη, M. xxvii. 9; ἐπλήρωσεν εἰς, L. vii. 1; πληρῶσαι δικαιοσύνην, M. iii. 15; E. i. 23; πληρωθῆτε εἰς, E. iii. 19.
 πλήρωμα, J. i. 16; R. xi. 35; E. i. 10. 23; C. i. 19; ii. 9; τὸ πλ. τοῦ Θεοῦ, E. iii. 19.
 πλησθεὶς Πνεύματος ἁγίου, A. iv. 8.
 μου πλησίον, L. x. 29; πλησίον γεγονέναι, L. x. 36.
 πλοῖάριον, Mk. iv. 36; J. vi. 22.
 πλοῦς, A. xxvii. 9.
 πλοῦτος, Jam. v. 2.
 πνεῦμα, J. iii. 8; 1 C. xiv. 12; πνεύματος βλασφημία, M. xii. 31; Πνεῦμα ἅγιον, L. i. 35; ἐν πνεύματι καὶ ἀληθείᾳ, J. iv. 24; πνεῦμα καὶ ζωή, J. vi. 63; τὸ Πνεῦμα τῆς ἀληθείας, J. xv. 26; λάβετε Πνεῦμα ἅγιον, J. xx. 22; A. viii. 15; ἐν Πνεύματι ἁγίῳ, 1 Th. i. 5; πνεῦμα and σὰρξ, 1 P. iii. 19; ἐν φυλακῇ πνεύμασι, ἰδ.; πνεῦμα Πύθωνος, A. xvi. 16.
 πνευματικός, 1 C. x. 3.
 τὸ πνικτόν, A. xv. 20.
 πνοή, A. ii. 2.
 ποίاس, L. v. 19.
 ποιέω, M. xii. 33; J. v. 16. 29; Vol. II. xii; 1 C. xv. 29; ποιῶ τὸ πάσχα, M. xxvi. 18. = ποιῶ, Mk. iii. 14; ποιήσατε ἐαυτοῖς

φίλους, L. xvi. 9; ποιῆσαι τοῦ, A. iii. 12; καλῶς ἐποίησας, A. x. 33; 2 C. v. 21; 1 J. i. 10; v. 10; ὁ ποιῶν τὴν δικαιοσύνην, ὁ π. τὴν ἀμαρτίαν, 1 J. iii. 7; π. and πράσσω, R. i. 32; ποιεῖν, "to constitute," Heb. iii. 2.
 ποίημα, E. ii. 10.
 ποιμαίνω, and βόσκω, J. xxi. 16; see βόσκω, ὁ ποιμὴν, J. x. 11. 16.
 ποίμνη, J. x. 16.
 τὴν ἁγίαν πόλιν, M. iv. 4; xxvii. 53; = μητρόπολις, A. viii. 5.
 πολιτάρχης, A. xvii. 6.
 πολιτεύμα, P. iii. 20.
 πολιτεύομαι, A. xxiii. 1; P. i. 27.
 πολίτης, Heb. viii. 9.
 πολλοὶ for πάντες, M. xx. 28; xxvi. 28; Mk. xiv. 24; ἐν πολλῷ, A. xxvi. 29; οἱ πολλοί, "all," R. v. 15; xii. 3.
 πολυμέρως καὶ πολυτρόπως, Heb. i. 1.
 πολυποικίλος, M. xi. 19; E. iii. 10.
 πονηρός, always to be distinguished from κακός, M. vi. 13; J. xvii. 15; εἶδος πονηροῦ, 1 Th. v. 22; ὁ πονηρός, 2 Th. ii. 9; iii. 3; E. vi. 16; 1 Th. ii. 18; iii. 5.
 πόνος, C. iv. 13.
 πορεία, Jam. i. 11.
 πορεύεσθαι, L. xiii. 33; J. xiv. 2, 3; xvi. 7; A. ix. 31; πορεύου, J. iv. 50.
 πορισμός, 1 Ti. vi. 5; 2 P. ii. 3.
 πορνεία, Mk. vii. 21; A. xv. 20; R. i. 29; G. v. 19.
 πόρνη, Jam. ii. 25; Rev. xvii. 1.
 πόρρωθεν, L. xvii. 12.
 πορφύρα, L. xvi. 19.
 ποσάκις, M. xxiii. 37.
 πόσις, C. ii. 16.
 ποταπός, M. viii. 27; L. i. 29; 2 P. iii. 11; 1 J. iii. 1.
 ποτήριον, M. xx. 22, 23.
 ποτήριον τῆς εὐλογίας, 1 C. x. 16.
 ποτίζω, Rev. xiv. 8.
 Ποτιόλους, A. xxviii. 13.
 ποῦς, —οἱ πόδες, L. ix. 53; A. v. 9; παρά τοὺς πόδας, A. xxii. 3.
 πράγμα, —ἐν τῷ πράγματι, 1 Th. iv. 6; 2 C. vii. 11.
 πραιτώριον, M. xxvii. 27; J. xviii. 28; A. xxii. 35; P. i. 13.
 πράξις, A. Introd. 5, 6.
 πρασιαί, Mk. vi. 40.
 πράσσω, J. v. 29; Vol. II. xii; πράσσειν τὰ ἴδια, 1 Th. iv. 11; and ποιῶ, R. i. 32; τί πράσσω, E. vi. 21.
 πρᾶνπάθεια, 1 Ti. vi. 11.
 πρᾶνς, M. xxi. 5.
 πρέπει, Heb. ii. 10.
 πρεσβεία, L. xix. 14.
 πρεσβυτέριον, 1 Th. iv. 14.
 πρεσβύτερος, A. xi. 30; xv. 2; xx. 28; 1 Ti. v. 17; 1 P. v. 1.
 πρεσβύτης, Tit. ii. 2.
 πρεσβύτης, 1 Ti. v. 2; Tit. ii. 3.
 πρηνὴς γενόμενος, A. i. 18.
 Πρίσκιλλα, A. xviii. 18.
 προάγω, M. xxi. 31; xxvi. 32; Mk. x. 32; 2 J. 9.
 προακούω, C. i. 4.
 προβάλλω, L. xxi. 30.
 προβατικός, J. v. 2.
 πρόβατον, J. xxi. 16, 17.
 ἀπὸ προγόνων, 2 Ti. i. 3.
 προγράφω, E. iii. 3; Jud. 4.
 προέγνων — προώρισε, R. viii. 30.
 προσέθετο, R. iii. 25.
 προειρήκαμεν, G. i. 9.
 προελπίζω, E. i. 12.
 προέχω, R. iii. 9.
 προήρηται, 2 C. ix. 7.
 προητιασάμεθα, R. iii. 9.
 προθεσμία, G. iv. 2.
 τὸ πρόθυμον, R. i. 15.
 προϊσταμαι, 1 Th. v. 12; Tit. iii. 8.
 προκείμε, Heb. vi. 18.
 προκοπή, P. i. 12.
 προκόπτω, L. ii. 52; 2 Ti. iii. 9.
 πρόκριμα, 1 Ti. v. 21.
 προλαμβάνω, G. vi. 1.
 προμεριμνᾶτε, Mk. xiii. 11.
 προμυθία, 2 C. viii. 19.
 προνοοῦμενοι, 1 Th. v. 22; 2 C. viii. 21; R. xii. 19.
 προοράομαι, A. ii. 25.
 προορίζω, E. i. 11; προώρισε συμμόρφους, R. viii. 28.
 προπέμπω, Tit. iii. 13; 3 J. 6.

προπετής, 2 Ti. iii. 4.
 προς = ὑπὲρ, M. xix. 8; L. xiv. 28. 32; = ὑπὲρ, J. i. 1; πρὸς—εἰς, J. vi. 35; πρὸς τὴν ἀλήθειαν, G. ii. 14; L. xii. 47; R. v. 1; 1 J. iii. 21; πρὸς Ἰάκωβον, A. xxi. 18; "in regard to," ὑπὲρ or ὑπὲρ, L. xx. 19; A. xii. 21; R. x. 21; Heb. i. 7; apud, 1 J. i. 2; πρὸς τό, "in order that," 2 C. iii. 13.
 προσαγορευθεῖς, Heb. v. 10.
 προσάγω, A. xxvii. 27.
 προσαγωγή, E. ii. 18; R. v. 2.
 προσαίτης, J. ix. 8.
 προσανατίθεται, G. i. 16.
 προσάπειλέω, A. iv. 21.
 προσδέχομαι, A. xxiii. 21; xxiv. 15.
 προσδοκῶμεν, A. xi. 3.
 προσευχή, L. v. 16; vi. 12; xxii. 45; ταῖς προσευχαῖς, A. ii. 42; "proseuchae," A. xvi. 13.
 προσεύχομαι, L. iv. 16; ix. 28; xi. 2; xviii. 10; A. ix. 11.
 προσευχόμενος, L. iii. 21; v. 16.
 προσηλώσας, C. ii. 14.
 προσκαλέω, Mk. viii. 34.
 προσκαρτερέω, A. i. 14; ii. 42; R. xiii. 6.
 τὸ προσκεφάλαιον, Mk. iv. 38.
 κατὰ πρόσκλισιν, 1 Ti. v. 21.
 πρόσκομμα, R. xiv. 13.
 προσκυνέω, M. ii. 2. 11; J. iv. 22; A. x. 25.
 προσλαμβάνω, R. xiv. 1. 3; xv. 7.
 προσμένω, M. xv. 32; 1 Ti. v. 5.
 προσοφείλω, Pn. 19.
 προσοχθίζω, Heb. iii. 10.
 προσποιέομαι, L. xxiv. 28.
 προστίθηναι, L. xix. 11; xx. 11; προσέθετο συλλαβεῖν, A. xii. 3.
 προσφάγιον, J. xxi. 5.
 προσφάτως, Heb. x. 20.
 προσφέρω, L. xii. 11; xviii. 15.
 προσφορά, A. xxiv. 17; προσφ. and θυσία, E. v. 2.
 προσωποληψία, E. vi. 9; Jam. ii. 1.
 πρόσωπον ἐστήριξε, L. ix. 51; πρ. πορευόμενον, ib.; πρ. λαμβάνειν, L. xx. 21; ἐπὶ πρ. πάσης τῆς γῆς, L. xxi. 35; ἀπὸ πρόσωπου, A. iii. 19; κατὰ πρόσωπον, G. ii. 11; 2 C. x. 1.
 προτείνω, A. xxii. 25.
 τὸ πρότερον, G. iv. 13.
 ἐν προφάσει πλεονεξίας, 1 Th. ii. 5.
 προφητεία, 1 Th. v. 20; 1 Ti. iv. 14; R. xii. 6.
 προφητεύω, M. vii. 22; 1 C. xi. 4, 5; xiv. 1.
 προφήτης, L. vii. 28; xxiv. 44; A. xi. 27; xiii. 1; προφῆταις, A. xiii. 40; E. iv. 11; vates, Tit. i. 12.
 προχειροτονέω, A. x. 41; xiv. 23.
 πρύμνη, A. xxvii. 29.
 πρῶτῃ, Mk. i. 35; xv. 1.
 πρῶτος, Jam. v. 7.
 πρωτεύω, C. i. 18.
 τὸ πρῶτον, J. x. 40; πρ. for πρότερον, A. i. 1.
 πρῶτος, L. ii. 2; πρ. ἀντὶ τοῦ αἰεὶ, J. i. 30.
 πρωτοτόκια, Heb. xii. 16.
 πρωτότοκος, L. ii. 7; C. i. 18.
 πταίω, Jam. iii. 2.
 πτερύγιον, M. iv. 5.
 πτόησις, 1 P. iii. 6.
 Πτολεμαῖς, A. xxi. 7.
 πτύον, M. iii. 12; L. iii. 17.
 πτύρομαι, P. i. 28.
 πτώμα, M. xxiv. 28; Rev. xi. 8.
 κατὰ βάθους πτωχεία, 2 C. viii. 2.
 πτωχοί, L. iv. 18; xiv. 21; Jam. ii. 6; πτωχοὶ and πένητες, 2 C. vi. 10; viii. 9.
 πυγμῇ, Mk. vii. 3.
 Πύθων, A. xvi. 16.
 πύλαι ἁδου, M. xvi. 18.
 πυλών, A. xii. 13; xiv. 13.
 πῦρ, L. ix. 54; βαπτίσει πυρί, M. iii. 11; πυρὶ ἀλισθήσεται, Mk. ix. 49.
 πυρά, A. xxviii. 2.
 πύργος, L. xiii. 4.
 πυρετός, J. iv. 52.
 πυροῦμαι, E. vi. 16; 2 C. xi. 29.
 πυρρός, Rev. vi. 4.
 πωλέω, L. xii. 33.
 πῶλος, Mk. xi. 4.
 παρώς, Mk. iii. 5; vi. 52.
 πῶρσις, E. iv. 18.
 πῶς, L. i. 34; J. iii. 4; for ὅπως, Mk. ix. 12.

ῥαββί, M. xxiii. 7.
 ῥαββουνί, Mk. x. 51.
 ῥαβδίζω, A. xvi. 22.
 ῥάβδους, M. x. 10.
 ῥάκους ἀγνάφου, M. ix. 16.
 ῥαντίζω, Heb. ix. 19.
 ῥαντισμός αἵματος, 1 P. i. 2.
 ῥαπίζω, M. v. 39.
 ῥάπισμα, J. xix. 3.
 ῥέδων, Rev. xviii. 13.
 ῥῆμα, M. xviii. 16; ἐν παντὶ ῥήματι, iv. 4; xviii. 16; ῥῆμα ἀργόν, xii. 36; οὐκ—πάν ῥῆμα, L. i. 37; ῥήματα, "things," 65; "works," J. x. 21; ῥῆμα τῆς δυνάμεως αὐτοῦ, Heb. i. 3.
 ῥήτωρ, A. xxiv. 1.
 ῥιπίζομαι, Jam. i. 6.
 ῥιπτούντων τὰ ἱμάτια, A. xxii. 23.
 ῥομφαία, L. ii. 35.
 ῥύμη, L. xiv. 21; A. ix. 11.
 ῥύομαι, R. xi. 26.
 σαββατίζω, L. xxiii. 56.
 σαββατισμός, Heb. iv. 9.
 σάββατον δευτερόπρωτον, M. xii. 1; L. vi. 1; δις τοῦ σαββάτου, L. xviii. 12; J. v. 9; τὸ μεταξὺ σ., A. xiii. 42; τὰ σάββατα, M. xxviii. 1; μία σαββάτων, ib.
 Σαδδουκαίων, M. iii. 7.
 σάινουμαι, 1 Th. iii. 3.
 Σαλείμ, J. iii. 23.
 σαλεύω, 2 Th. ii. 2.
 Σαλμώνη, A. xxvii. 7.
 σάλπιγξ, 1 Th. iv. 16.
 σαλπίζω, M. vi. 2.
 Σαλώμη, Mk. xv. 40.
 Σαμαρείτης, M. x. 5; L. x. 33.
 σανδάλια, M. x. 10; Mk. vi. 9; A. xii. 8.
 Σαούλ [Σαῦλος], A. ix. 4.
 σαρκικός and σάρκινος, R. vii. 14; Heb. vii. 16.
 σάρξ = ῥῆς, for "homo," M. xxiv. 22; σάρξ καὶ αἷμα, M. xvi. 17; G. i. 16; 1 C. xv. 50; εἰς σάρκα μίαν, M. xix. 5; Mk. x. 8; 1 C. vi. 16; ὁ Λόγος σὰρξ ἐγένετο, J. i. 14; ἡ σὰρξ μου βρώσις, J. vi. 55; κατὰ σάρκα, and κατὰ τὴν σάρκα, 2 C. xi. 18; R. iv. 1; σκόλοψ τῇ σαρκί, 2 C. xii. 7; κατὰ σάρκα καὶ κατὰ πνεῦμα, 2 C. v. 16; x. 2; σὰρξ, ψυχὴ, and πνεῦμα, 1 Ti. iii. 16.
 Σάρωνα, A. ix. 35.
 Σατανᾶ, M. iv. 10; xvi. 23; Mk. i. 13; iv. 15; viii. 33; ὁ Σατανᾶς, L. xxii. 3; 1 Th. ii. 18.
 σάτον, M. xiii. 33.
 Σαῦλος, A. xiii. 9.
 σβέννυμι, M. xxv. 8; 1 Th. v. 19.
 σέβασμα, A. xvii. 23; 2 Th. ii. 4.
 Σεβαστός, A. xxv. 21.
 σεβόμενοι, A. xvii. 4.
 σεβόμενος τὸν Θεόν, A. xiii. 50; xvi. 14.
 Σελεύκεια, A. xiii. 4.
 σεμίδαλις, Rev. xviii. 13.
 σεμνός, Tit. iii. 2; 1 Ti. iii. 8.
 σεμνότης, 1 Ti. ii. 2.
 σημεῖον, M. xii. 38; xvi. 1; Mk. viii. 11; σημ. ἐκ τοῦ οὐρανοῦ, ib.; σημεία, Mk. xvi. 16; L. xxi. 25; τέρατα καὶ σημεία, A. ii. 19. 43.
 σήμερον αὐριον καὶ τῇ τρίτῃ, L. xiii. 32.
 σικάριον, A. xx. 38.
 σίκερα, L. i. 15.
 σίκλοι, M. xxvii. 3.
 Σίλας, A. xv. 22.
 Σιλῶν, L. xiii. 4; J. ix. 7.
 σιμικίνθιον, A. xix. 12.
 Σίμων, Mk. i. 16.
 σίναπι, M. xiii. 31.
 σινδών, M. xxvii. 59.
 σινιάζω, L. xxii. 31.
 σιτευτόν, L. xv. 23.
 σίτος, A. xxvii. 38.
 σκανδαλίζω, M. xviii. 6. 8; Mk. ix. 42; J. xvi. 1.
 σκάνδαλον, M. xiii. 41; xvi. 23.
 σκάπτειν, L. xvi. 3.
 σκευή, A. xxvii. 19.
 σκεῦος, A. ix. 15; x. 11, 12; xxvii. 17; 1

Th. iv. 4; M. xii. 29; Mk. iii. 27; xi. 16; J. xix. 29; 2 C. iv. 7; R. vi. 21; 2 Ti. ii. 20; Rev. ii. 27; xviii. 12.
 σκηνή, M. xvii. 4; J. i. 14; Vol. i. p. 238, 239; A. xv. 16; Heb. iv. 2; xiii. 10; εἰς τὰς αἰωνίους σκηνάς, L. xvi. 9.
 σκηνοπηγία, J. i. 14; vii. 2; Vol. i. pp. 238, 239.
 σκηνοποιός, A. xviii. 3.
 σκῆνος, 2 C. v. 1.
 σκηνώ, J. i. 14; Vol. i. 238; R. vii. 13.
 σκιά θανάτου, L. i. 79.
 σκιρτάω, L. i. 41.
 σκληροκαρδία, M. xix. 8.
 σκληρός, J. vi. 60; A. xxvi. 14.
 σκληρύω, R. ix. 18.
 σκολιός, P. ii. 15.
 σκοπός, P. iii. 12.
 σκορπίζω, J. xvi. 32; 2 C. ix. 9; and see M. xxv. 24.
 ὄφειον καὶ σκορπίων, L. x. 19.
 σκότος, M. xxvii. 45.
 σκύβαλον, P. iii. 8.
 σκωληκόβρωτος, A. xii. 23.
 σκώληξ, Mk. ix. 44.
 σμάραγδος, Rev. xxi. 19.
 σμύρνη, M. ii. 11; J. xix. 39.
 Σολομώντος στοά, J. x. 23; A. iii. 11; v. 12.
 σουδάριον, L. xix. 20; J. xi. 44; A. xix. 12.
 ἡ σοφία τοῦ Θεοῦ, L. xi. 49; σ. and γνώσις, C. ii. 3; 1 C. xii. 8; σ. and φρόνησις, E. i. 8.
 σοφίζω, 2 Ti. iii. 15.
 σεσοφισμένοι μύθοι, 2 P. i. 16.
 σπαράσσω, Mk. ix. 26.
 σπαργανώ, L. ii. 7.
 σπαταλώ, 1 Ti. v. 6; Jam. v. 5.
 σπείρα, M. xxvii. 27; J. xviii. 3; A. x. 1; xxi. 31.
 ὁ σπείρων, L. viii. 5.
 σπεκουλάτωρ, Mk. vi. 27.
 σπένδομαι, P. ii. 17; 2 Ti. iv. 8.
 σπερμολόγος, A. xvii. 18.
 σπεύδω, 2 P. iii. 12.
 σπήλαιον ληστῶν, M. xxi. 13.
 σπιλάδες, Jud. 12.
 σπῖλος, 2 P. ii. 13.
 σπλάγχνα, M. ix. 36; σπλάγχνα οἰκτιρμοῦ, L. i. 78; 2 C. vi. 12; P. i. 8; ii. 1; C. iii. 12; Pn. 7; 1 J. iii. 17.
 σπλαγχνίζομαι, M. ix. 36.
 σπουδάζω, G. ii. 10; E. iv. 3.
 σπουδή, R. xii. 11.
 σπυρίς, M. xv. 37; xvi. 10; Mk. viii. 8; A. ix. 25.
 στάδιον, 1 C. ix. 24.
 σταθεῖς, L. xviii. 11; A. ii. 14.
 στατήρ, M. xvii. 24. 27.
 σταυρώ, M. xx. 19; xxvii. 35; xxviii. 5; Mk. xvi. 6; L. xxiii. 33; A. ii. 36; G. v. 24.
 στέγω, 1 Th. iii. 1; 1 C. ix. 9. 12; xiii. 7.
 στέλλομαι ἀπὸ, 2 Th. iii. 6; A. xx. 20; 2 C. viii. 20.
 στέμματα, A. xiv. 13.
 στενὴ πύλη, M. vii. 14.
 στενοχωρέω, 2 C. vi. 12.
 στενοχωρία, R. ii. 9.
 στερέωμα, C. ii. 4.
 στέφανος ἐξ ἀκανθῶν, J. xix. 2; στέφ. καυχήσεως, 1 Th. ii. 19.
 στηρίζω, L. ix. 51; and see πρόσωπον.
 στίγματα, G. vi. 17.
 στιγμή χρόνου, L. iv. 5.
 στοά, J. v. 31; στοά τοῦ Σολομώντος, x. 23; A. iii. 11; v. 12.
 στοιβάς, Mk. xi. 8.
 στοιχέω, P. iii. 16.
 στοιχεῖα, Heb. v. 12; 2 P. iii. 10; C. ii. 8; στ. τοῦ κόσμου, G. iv. 3.
 στολή, M. xii. 38; L. xv. 22.
 στόμα, —ἐπὶ στόματος, M. xviii. 16; στόμα μαχαίρας, L. xxi. 24.
 στρατεύμα, A. xxiii. 27.
 στρατεύω, L. iii. 14; 1 P. ii. 11.
 στρατηγοί, L. xxii. 4; στρ. τοῦ ἱεροῦ, 52; A. iv. 1; xvi. 20.
 στρατιῶται, M. xxvii. 27.
 στρατοπεδάρχης, A. xxviii. 16.
 στρήνους, Rev. xviii. 3.
 στρουθία, M. x. 29; L. xii. 6.
 στρώννυμι, Mk. xvi. 15.
 στυγνάζω, Mk. x. 22.
 στῦλος, 1 Ti. iii. 15.
 Στωϊκοί, A. xvii. 18.

συγγενής, L. i. 36.
κατὰ συγγνώμην, 1 C. vii. 6.
συγκαθίζω, E. ii. 6.
συγκαλέω, L. ix. 1.
συγκεράννυμι, Heb. iv. 2; 1 C. xii. 24.
συγκλείω, G. iii. 22.
συγκοινωνοί, P. i. 7.
συγκρίναι, 1 C. ii. 13; 2 C. x. 12.
συγκυρία, L. x. 31.
συγχαίρει, 1 C. xiii. 6.
συγχαράσμαι, J. iv. 9.
συγχύομαι, A. ii. 6; xxi. 31.
συζητέω, A. ix. 29.
σῦκα, L. xiii. 6; σύκων καιρός, Mk. xi. 13.
συνκάμινος, L. xvii. 6.
συκομορέα, L. xix. 4.
συκοφαντέω, L. iii. 14; xix. 8.
συλλαμβάνω, L. i. 31; xxii. 54.
συμβάλλω, A. xviii. 27.
συμβιβάζω, A. ix. 22; xvi. 10.
συμβούλιον, A. xxv. 12.
Συμεών, L. ii. 25; A. xv. 14; 2 P. i. 1.
συμμέτοχος, E. v. 7.
συμμιμηταί, P. iii. 17.
συμμορφίζομαι, P. iii. 10.
συμπαραλαμβάνω, G. ii. 13.
συμπληροῦμαι, A. ii. 1.
συμπρεσβύτερος, 1 P. v. 1.
συμφέρω, 1 C. vi. 12; πρὸς τὸ συμφέρον, 1 C. xii. 7.
συμφυλέτης, 1 Th. ii. 14.
σύμφυτος, R. vi. 5.
συμφωνέω, M. xviii. 19.
συμφωνία, L. xv. 25.
συνάγω, L. xi. 23; J. xi. 52; A. xx. 7.
συναγωγή, Jam. ii. 2.
συναγωνίσασθαι, R. xv. 30.
συναιχμάλωτος, R. xvi. 7; C. iv. 10.
συναλίζομαι, A. i. 4.
σύναξις, A. xx. 7.
συναπάγομαι, R. xii. 16.
συναποθανεῖν, 2 C. vii. 3.
συναυξάνεσθαι, M. xiii. 30.
συνεγείρω, E. ii. 6.
συνέδριον, A. v. 21.
συνείδησις, A. xxiii. 1; καθαρὰ συν., A. xxiii. 1; Heb. xiii. 18; 2 Ti. i. 3; διὰ τὴν συνείδησιν, 1 C. x. 25; συν. ἀγαθή, 1 P. iii. 16.
συνέκδημος, A. xix. 29.
συνεκλεκτή, 1 P. v. 13.
συνελαύνω, A. vii. 26.
συνεπέμψαμεν, 2 C. viii. 18.
συνεργέω, Jam. ii. 22.
συνεσταύρωμαι, G. ii. 20.
συνεστῶσα, 2 P. iii. 5.
συνευδοκέω, A. viii. 1.
συνευδοκῶν τῇ ἀναιρέσει, A. xxii. 20.
συνέχω, L. viii. 45; xii. 50; συνείχετο τῷ λόγῳ, A. xviii. 5.
συνέχομαι, P. i. 23.
συνηγέρθητε, C. iii. 1.
συνήδομαι, R. vii. 22.
συνηθραϊσμένους, L. xxiv. 33.
συνήθειν, G. ii. 12.
συνίων, R. iii. 11.
συνίστημι, "manifesto," G. ii. 18; 2 C. vii. 11; R. iii. 5; v. 8; xvi. 15.
συνοικέω, 1 P. iii. 7.
συνομιλέω, A. x. 27.
συνοχή, L. xxi. 25.
συντελέω, Heb. viii. 8.
συντηρέω, Mk. vi. 20.
συντρέχω, 1 P. iv. 4.
συντρίβω, Mk. xiv. 3; J. xix. 36.
σύντριμμα, R. iii. 16.
συνυποκρίνομαι, G. ii. 13.
γυνή Συροφονικίσσα, Mk. vii. 26.
Σύρτις, A. xxvii. 17.
συστέλλω, 1 C. vii. 29.
συστρατιώτης, Pn. 2.
συσχηματίζομαι, R. xii. 2; 1 P. i. 14.
Συχάρ, J. iv. 5.
σφόδρα, M. ii. 10.
σφραγίζω, J. iii. 33; ἐσφραγίσθητε, E. i. 13; iv. 30; Rev. vii. 1; x. 4; σφραγισάμενος, R. xv. 27.
σφραγίς, L. xv. 22; 2 Ti. ii. 19; R. iv. 11.
σφυρόν, A. iii. 7.
σχίζουαι, M. xxvii. 51.
σχολάζων, M. xii. 44.
οἱ σωζόμενοι, L. xiii. 23; A. ii. 47; 2 Th. ii. 10; 2 C. ii. 15.
σῶμα, M. xxiv. 28; L. xvii. 37.
σωματικῶς, C. ii. 9.
Σωτήρ, L. i. 47.

σωτήριον, L. ii. 30.
σωφρονίζω, Tit. i. 4.

Ταβιθά, A. ix. 40.
ταλαίπωρος, Rev. iii. 17.
ταλιθά κουμι, Mk. v. 41.
ταμιεῖον, M. vi. 6; L. xii. 3.
ταπεινός, 2 C. x. 1; R. xii. 16.
ταπεινόφρονες, 1 P. iii. 8.
ταπεινοφροσύνη, E. iv. 2; C. ii. 18.
ταπεινώσις, L. i. 48; A. viii. 32.
ταράσσω, M. ii. 3; J. xii. 33; xii. 27; ἐταράχθη τῷ πνεύματι, J. xiii. 21; οἱ ταρασσόντες, G. i. 7.
ταρταρώσας, 2 P. ii. 4.
τάσσομαι, —τεταγμένοι εἰς ζωὴν αἰώνιον, A. xiii. 48.
ταχινός, 2 P. i. 14.
τάχιον, J. xiii. 27; 1 Ti. iii. 14; ἐν τάχει, L. xviii. 8.
ταχέως, L. xvi. 6; G. i. 6.
διὰ τοῦ τείχους, A. ix. 25.
τεκμήριον, A. i. 3; τεκμ. as distinguished from σημειον, ib.
τεκνία, G. iv. 19; τ. and παιδία, 1 J. ii. 12. 28; iii. 7. 18; iv. 4; v. 21; J. xiii. 33.
τέκνα ὑπακοῆς, 1 P. i. 14.
τεκνογονεῖν, 1 Ti. v. 14.
τέκνον, M. ix. 2.
τεκνοτροφέω, 1 Ti. v. 10.
τέκτων, Mk. vi. 3.
τέλειος, M. v. 48; xix. 21; Jam. iii. 2; P. iii. 15.
τελειότης, Heb. vi. 1.
τελειώω, L. xiii. 32; Heb. viii. 28.
τελέω, Rev. x. 7.
τέλος, M. xvii. 25; 1 Ti. i. 5; εἰς τέλος, L. xviii. 5; J. xiii. 1.
τελώνης, applied by St. Matthew to himself, x. 3; Part I. p. 111.
τέρατα καὶ σημεία, A. ii. 19. 43.
τεσσαρακονταετής, A. vii. 23.
τέσσαρσι τετραδίοις, A. xii. 4.
τεταρταῖος, J. xi. 39.
τετράμηνος, J. iv. 35.
τετραπλοῦν, L. xix. 8.
τετραρχῶν, L. iii. 1.
τηρέω, M. xxvii. 36.
τήρησις, Mk. vi. 20.
Τιβεριάδος, J. vi. 1.
τίθημι, L. xxi. 14; τίθεται, Mk. xv. 47; θέσθε εἰς τὰς καρδίας, L. xxi. 14; θεῖς τὰ γόνατα, A. xx. 36.
τίλλω, Mk. ii. 23.
τιμάω, M. xv. 4; J. v. 23; 1 Ti. v. 3; 1 P. ii. 17.
τιμή, 1 Ti. v. 3; 1 P. ii. 7; διπλῆς τιμῆς, 1 Ti. v. 17; τιμὴ καὶ δόξα, 2 P. i. 17; ἐν τιμῇ, 1 Th. iv. 4.
τίμιος, C. ii. 23.
τις, —τίς, A. v. 4; λέγων εἶναί τινα ἑαυτόν, A. v. 36; viii. 9; τί ἐμοὶ καὶ σοί; J. ii. 4; τί ἂν θεῖλοι, A. xvii. 18; τινές, emphatic, "somebodies," G. i. 7; τις, "some person of dignity," Heb. ii. 6.
τό, —τό τί, Mk. ix. 23; L. i. 62; τὸ καθ' ἡμέραν, L. xi. 3; prefixed to the infinitive, 1 Th. iii. 3; τό, citatory use of, E. iv. 9; Mk. ix. 3; A. iv. 21; xxii. 37; R. viii. 26; xiii. 9; 1 Th. iv. 1; generalizing use of τό, Jam. iv. 14; 1 J. iv. 3.
τοῖς κεκοιμημένοις, A. xxiii. 3.
τόκος, M. xxv. 27.
τολμάω, Mk. xv. 43.
τολμηρότερον, R. xv. 15.
τομώτερος, Heb. iv. 12.
τόπος πεδινός, M. v. 1; τ. ἄγιος, M. xxiv. 15; τ. ἔρημος, Mk. vi. 32; εἰς τὸν τ. τὸν ἴδιον, A. i. 25.
καὶ τοῦτο, 3 J. 5.
τράπεζα, L. xix. 23; A. vi. 2; 1 C. x. 21.
τραπεζῖται, M. xxv. 27.
τραχηλίζω, Heb. iv. 13.
τρέχω εἰς κενόν, G. ii. 2.
τριετία, A. xx. 31.
τρίστεγος, A. xx. 9.
τρόπος, Heb. xiii. 5.
τροφός, 1 Th. ii. 7.
τροφοφορέω, A. xiii. 18.
τρυβλίον, M. xxvi. 23.
τρυφή, 2 P. ii. 13.

Τρωάς, A. xvi. 8; xx. 5.
τρώγων, J. vi. 54; xiii. 18.
τυπικῶς, 1 C. x. 11.
τύπος, A. xxii. 25; 1 Th. i. 7; 1 C. x. 6; τ. and ἀντίτυπος, 1 P. iii. 21; 1 Ti. iv. 12; 2 Ti. iii. 9; Tit. ii. 7.
τυφῶμαι, 1 Ti. iii. 6; 2 Ti. iii. 14.
εἰ τύχοι, 1 C. xiv. 10.
οὐχ ὁ τυχών, A. xix. 11; xxviii. 2.

ὑάκινθος, Rev. ix. 19.
θάλασσα ὑαλίνη, Rev. xv. 2.
ὑβρίζω, 1 Th. ii. 2.
ὑβρις, A. xxvii. 10.
ὑβριστής, 1 Ti. i. 13; R. i. 30.
ὑγιαίνω, 1 Ti. i. 10.
ὑδρία, J. iv. 28.
ὑδατα πολλά, J. iii. 23.
ὑδροπότει, 1 Ti. v. 23.
ὑδωρ ζῶν, J. iv. 10; τὸ ὑδωρ, A. x. 47.
ὑετός, A. xiv. 17.
ὑιοθεσία, G. iv. 5; E. i. 5.
ὁ Υἱός μου ὁ ἀγαπητός, M. iii. 17.
ὑμνος, E. v. 19.
ὑμνέω, M. xxvi. 30; A. xvi. 25.
ὑπάγω, Mk. viii. 33; L. xii. 58; J. vii. 3.
ὑπακοή, 1 P. i. 2.
ὑπακούω, L. xvii. 6; A. xii. 13.
ὑπάρχω, P. iii. 20.
τὰ ὑπάρχοντα, L. xii. 33; ὑπάρχων, A. vii. 55; xxii. 3; G. i. 14; ὑπάρχων and ὢν, 1 C. xi. 7; ὑπάρχειν and εἶναι, 2 P. iii. 11.
ὑπέρ, 1 Th. iii. 2; 2 C. xii. 19; 2 Th. ii. 1; ὑπέρ and περί, 2 Th. ii. 1; G. i. 4; ὑπέρ in composition in St. Paul's writings, 4; ὑπέρ τοῦ ὀνόματος αὐτοῦ, R. i. 5; ὑπέρ, "concerning," = super, ἥ, 2 Th. ii. 1; 2 C. i. 6. 8; viii. 23; xii. 8; "in the stead of," 2 C. v. 15; ὑπέρ τῶν ἁμαρτιῶν, 1 C. xv. 3; ὑπέρ τῆς εὐδοκίας, P. ii. 13.
ὑπεραιρόμενος, 2 Th. ii. 4.
ὑπερανξάνω, 2 Th. i. 3.
ὑπερβολή, 1 C. xii. 31; καθ' ὑπερβολήν, G. i. 13; καθ' ὑπ', εἰς ὑπερβολήν, 2 C. i. 8; iv. 17.
ὑπερίδω, A. xvii. 30.
ὑπερευτυχάνω, R. viii. 26.
ὑπερέχω, P. iv. 7; 1 P. ii. 13.
ὑπερήφανος, R. i. 30.
ὑπέρογκα, Jud. 14.
ὑπερπλεονάζω, 1 Ti. i. 14.
ὑπερψύω, P. ii. 9.
ὑπερφρονέω, R. xii. 3.
ὑπερφων, A. i. 13; ix. 37.
ὑπηρέτω, A. xiii. 36.
ὑπό, 2 P. i. 17; R. xiii. 1; ὑπὸ τὴν σукην, J. i. 49.
ὑπογραμμός, 2 Th. iii. 9; 1 P. ii. 21.
ὑπόδειγμα, Heb. iv. 11; ix. 23.
ὑποδησάμενοι, E. vi. 15.
ὑποδήματα, M. x. 10; L. xv. 22; ὑποδήματα βαστάσαι, M. iii. 11.
ὑπόδικος, R. iii. 19.
ὑποδρέμω, A. xxvii. 16.
ὑποζώννυτες τὸ πλοῖον, A. xxvii. 17.
ὑπόκρισις, G. ii. 13; 1 Ti. iv. 2.
ὑποκριτής, M. vi. 2; xxiii. 13.
ὑπολαμβάνω, 3 J. 7.
ὑπολιμπάνων, 1 P. ii. 21.
ὑπομένω, M. xxiv. 13.
ὑπομιμνήσκω, J. xiv. 26.
ὑπομονή, L. xxi. 19; R. v. 4; Jam. i. 4.
ὑπουόω, A. xxv. 18.
ὑποπλέω, A. xxvii. 4.
ὑποπνέω, A. xxvii. 13.
ὑπόστασις, 2 C. ix. 4; Heb. i. 3; iii. 14; xi. 1.
ὑποστέλλομαι, A. xx. 20; Heb. x. 38.
ὑποστέλλω, G. ii. 12.
ὑποστρέφω, Mk. xiv. 40; L. x. 17; xvii. 15; A. viii. 25.
ὑποταγή, G. ii. 5.
ὑποτίθεμαι, R. xvi. 3.
ὑποτύπωσις, 1 Ti. i. 16.
ὑπωπιάζω, L. xviii. 5.
ὑσώπῳ περιθέντες, J. xix. 29.
ὑστερέω, J. ii. 3; 2 C. xi. 9; Heb. iv. 1.
ὑστέρημα, C. i. 24.
ὑψώω, J. iii. 14; viii. 28.

φαγεῖν ἄρτον, J. vi. 53, 54; φ. τὸ πᾶσχα, xviii. 28.
 φαίνεσθε, P. ii. 15.
 ἵνα φανερωθῇ, J. i. 31.
 φανερώω, J. xxi. 1; E. v. 13.
 φανός, J. xviii. 3.
 Φανούηλ, L. ii. 36.
 Φαρισαίων, M. iii. 7.
 φαρμακεία, Rev. ix. 21.
 φάτνη, L. ii. 7.
 φελόνη, or φαιλόνη, 2 Ti. iv. 12.
 φέρομαι,—ἐπιδόντες ἐφερόμεθα, A. xxvii. 15.
 φέρεσθαι, Heb. ix. 16; φερόμενος, 1 P. i. 13; 2 P. i. 21.
 φεύγετε, M. x. 23; φεύγ. ἀπό, and φεύγ. with an accusative, 1 C. x. 4.
 Φηλιξ, A. xxiii. 26.
 φησί, "inquit," 2 C. x. 10.
 φθάνω, M. xii. 28; 1 Th. ii. 16; P. iii. 16.
 φθινοπωρινός, Jud. 12.
 φθόγγος, R. x. 10.
 φθορά, C. ii. 22.
 φιάλη, Rev. v. 8; xvi. 1.
 φιλαργυρία, 1 Ti. vi. 10.
 φιλάργυρος, L. xvi. 14.
 φίλαυτος, 2 Ti. iii. 2.
 φιλέω, L. xxii. 47; J. xi. 3; xxi. 15—17; 1 C. xvi. 22; φιλω and ἀγαπῶ, ib. and Rev. iii. 20.
 φιλήδονος, 2 Ti. iii. 4.
 φίλημα ἁγίου, 1 Th. v. 26; 1 C. xvi. 20; 2 C. xiii. 12; R. xvi. 16; 1 P. v. 14; φίλ. ἀγάπης, ib.
 φιλονεικία, M. xxii. 25; Mk. x. 42; L. xxii. 24.
 φιλοπρωτεύω, 3 J. 9.
 φιλοτιμούμαι, 1 Th. iv. 11; R. xv. 20.
 φιμόω, Mk. i. 25; iv. 39; L. iv. 35.
 φλογίζω, Jam. iii. 6.
 φλόξ, L. xvi. 24; ἐν φλογὶ πυρός, 2 Th. i. 8.
 φλύαρος, 1 Ti. v. 13.
 φοβέω, L. xxiii. 40; G. iv. 11.
 φοβούμενος τὸν Θεόν, A. x. 2; xiii. 16.
 φορτίον, A. xxvii. 10; φορτίον βαστάζειν, G. vi. 5; φορτία and βάρη, ib.
 φραγελλόω, M. xxvii. 26; L. xxiii. 16.
 φραγέσεται, 2 C. xi. 10.
 φραγμός, E. ii. 14.
 φρέαρ τῆς ἀβύσσου, Rev. ix. 1.
 φρονέω, R. xiv. 6; τὸ αὐτὸ φρονεῖν, P. iii. 16.
 φρόνησις, L. i. 17.
 φρόνιμος, L. xii. 42.
 φρονίμως, L. xvi. 8.
 φρουρέομαι, G. iii. 23.
 φρουρούμενος, 1 P. i. 5.
 φρυάσσω, A. iv. 25.
 φυλακή, Rev. xviii. 2.
 φυλακτήριον, M. xxiii. 5.
 φυλάσσω, A. xxi. 24.
 φύραμα, R. xi. 16.
 φύσις, 1 C. xi. 11; E. ii. 3; Jam. iii. 7.
 φωνέω, L. xiv. 12.

φωνῇ μεγάλῃ, M. xxvii. 50; μεγάλη τῇ φωνῇ, A. xxvi. 24.
 φῶς, M. v. 14; contrasted with λύχνος, M. xi. 2; J. i. 5. 9; viii. 12.
 φωστήρ, Rev. xxi. 11.
 φωτίζω, J. i. 9.

χαίρειν, A. xv. 23.
 χαίρετε, M. xxviii. 9.
 χαλάω, A. xxvii. 17.
 χαλιναγωγῶν, Jam. i. 26.
 χαλκεύς, A. xix. 33.
 χαλκίον, Mk. vii. 4.
 χαλκολίβανος, Rev. i. 15.
 χαλκός, Mk. vi. 8; xii. 41.
 γυνὴ Χανααία, M. xv. 22.
 χαρά, L. i. 14.
 χάραγμα, A. xvii. 29.
 χαρακτήρ, Heb. i. 3.
 χάραξ, L. xix. 43.
 χαρίζομαι, L. i. 14; οὐδεὶς μὲ δύναται αὐτοῖς χαρίσασθαι, A. ii. 38; xxii. 16; xxv. 11; E. iv. 32; 2 C. ii. 10.
 χάρις, L. i. 14; E. ii. 7; 1 P. ii. 18; οὐ χάριν, vii. 47; μὴ χάριν ἔχει, L. xvii. 9; χάριτος καὶ ἀληθείας, J. i. 14; χάριν ἀντὶ χάριτος, 16; χάριτα and χάριν καταθέσθαι, A. xxiv. 27; xxv. 9; χάρις καὶ εἰρήνη, 1 Th. i. 1; ἡ χ. τοῦ Κυρίου ἡμῶν, 1 Th. v. 29; χάριν ἔχω, 1 Ti. i. 12.
 χάρισμα, R. i. 11; v. 15; vi. 23; 1 C. i. 7; 1 P. iv. 10.
 χαριτώω, L. i. 28; E. i. 6.
 Χαρράν, A. vii. 2.
 χάρτου, 2 J. 12.
 χάσμα, L. xvi. 26.
 χειμών, J. x. 22.
 χεῖρ,—ἵνα τὰς χεῖρας ἐπιθῇ, M. xix. 13; ἐν χερσὶ, G. iii. 19.
 ἐπέθηκαν—χεῖρας, A. vi. 6.
 χειραγωγέω, A. ix. 8.
 χειραγωγός, A. xiii. 11.
 χειροποίητος, Heb. ix. 11. 24.
 χειροτονέω, A. xiv. 23.
 χθές, J. iv. 52.
 χιλιάρχος, A. xxi. 31.
 χιτῶν and ἱμάτιον, M. v. 40; x. 10; xiv. 3; J. xix. 23, 24.
 χλαμύς, M. xxvii. 28.
 χλωρός, Rev. vi. 8.
 χοϊκός, 1 C. xv. 47.
 χορηγέω, 2 C. ix. 10.
 Χοραζίν, M. xi. 21.
 χορτάζομαι, M. xiv. 20.
 χόρτος, M. vi. 30; J. vi. 10.
 χρεῖαν ἔχω, M. iii. 14.
 χρεωφειλέται, L. vii. 41.
 χρῆμα, A. xxiv. 26.
 χρηματίζω, A. x. 22; xi. 26; M. ii. 12, 22; L. ii. 26; R. vii. 3; Heb. viii. 5.
 χρηματισμός, R. xi. 4.

χρηστός, R. i. 15; ii. 4.
 χρηστότης, E. ii. 7; Tit. iii. 4.
 χρίσμα, 1 J. ii. 20.
 Χριστιανοί, A. xi. 26; 1 P. iv. 16.
 Χριστός, M. i. 1; xxiii. 10; εἰς Χριστόν, G. iii. 17.
 χρίω, L. iv. 18.
 χρονίζω, M. xxiv. 48.
 χρόνος καὶ καιρός, A. i. 7; iii. 21; 1 Th. v. 1; πρὸ χρόνων αἰώνων, Tit. i. 1; χρόνος, "delay," Rev. x. 6.
 χρυσοδακτύλιος, Jam. ii. 2.
 χρώμενοι, 1 C. vii. 31.
 χωρέω, M. xix. 11; Mk. ii. 2; J. xxi. 25; 2 P. iii. 9.
 χωρίζομαι, A. i. 4; 1 C. vii. 12, 15.
 χωρίς and ἄτερ, Heb. ix. 28; Jam. ii. 18, 20; χ. Χριστοῦ, E. ii. 12; χ. νόμου, R. iii. 21.
 ὡς, A. xxvii. 12.

ψαλμός, E. v. 19.
 ψεύδομαι,—ψεύσασθαι σε τὸ Πνεῦμα, A. v. 3.
 ψευδοπροφήτης, M. vii. 15; xxiv. 11.
 ψηλαφάω, L. xxiv. 39; Heb. xii. 18; 1 J. i. 1.
 ψιθυριστής, R. i. 30.
 ψυχή,—τιθέναι τὴν ψυχὴν, J. x. 17, 18; ψυχὴν αἰρεῖν, 24; ψυχή and πνεῦμα, Heb. iv. 12; τὰ ἔχοντα ψυχὰς, Rev. viii. 9; ἐκ ψυχῆς, E. vi. 6; ζῶν and ψυχή, Rev. viii. 9; xvi. 3.
 ψυχικός and πνευματικός, Jud. 19; Rev. viii. 9.
 ψωμίζω, 1 C. xiii. 3.
 ψωμίον, J. xiii. 26.

ὥδῃ, E. v. 19.
 ὥδιν, M. xxiv. 8; J. xvi. 21; λύσας τὰς ὥδιντας τοῦ θανάτου, A. ii. 24; 1 Th. v. 3.
 ὥδινω, G. iv. 19.
 ἐπὶ τοὺς ὥμους, L. xv. 5.
 ὥρα πολλή, M. xiv. 15; Mk. vi. 35; οὐπω ἤκει ἡ ὥρα μου, J. ii. 4; πρὸς καιρὸν ὥρας, 1 Th. ii. 17; πρὸς ὥραν, 2 C. vii. 8; G. i. 5; Pn. 15; Rev. iii. 10; xvii. 12.
 ὠρνόμενος, 1 P. v. 8.
 ὥς ἂν, 1 Th. ii. 7; ὥς ὅτι, 2 Th. ii. 2; ὥς μονογενοῦς παρὰ Πατρός, J. i. 14; ὥς ἐπὶ, A. xvii. 14; ὥς, "seeing that," "forasmuch as," 2 P. i. 3; "so that," Heb. iii. 11.
 Ὡσαννά, M. xxi. 9; Mk. xi. 9; J. xii. 13.
 ὡσαύτως, L. xxii. 20.
 ὥστε, "itaque," 1 Th. iv. 18; P. ii. 12; iv. 1; Jam. i. 19.
 ὠφελείας χάριν, Jud. 16.
 ὠφέλιμος, 2 Ti. iii. 15.
 ὠφελοῦμαι, 1 C. xiii. 3.

INDEX II.

OF

MATTERS.

ABADDON, import of the word, Rev. ix. 1; "the angel of the abyss," and king of the spiritual locusts, *ib.*

"Abba, Father," explained, Mk. xiv. 36; R. viii. 15; G. iv. 6; Rev. ix. 1.

Abel, import of the name, R. viii. 20; his blood required of the Jews who were our Lord's contemporaries, M. xxiii. 35, 36; his blood and that of Christ contrasted, L. xxii. 44; the children of God symbolized by him, and those of the Evil One by Cain, R. viii. 20.

Abia, the course of, L. i. 5.

Abiathar, the high priest, notices concerning him, Mk. ii. 26; St. Mark cleared from the charge of anachronism, with reference to this case, *ib.*; Note 1, vol. i. p. 97.

Abolition of Slavery, see *Slavery*.

"Abomination," meaning of the term in Scripture, M. xxiv. 15.

"Abomination of desolation," explained, M. xxiv. 15; Mk. xiii. 14.

Abortion, 1 Tim. v. 14; Rev. ix. 20.

Abraham, God calls Himself "the God of," M. xxii. 32; "A son of Abraham," L. xix. 9; Abraham still living, J. viii. 52; "Rejoiced to see my day," J. viii. 56; probably purchased a burial-place at Sichem, A. vii. 16; built an altar there, *ib.*; believed in Christ, G. iii. 6; the true ground of his justification in the sight of God, R. iv. 1; not circumcised till thirteen years after he had been so justified, 2; how "justified by works," Jam. ii. 21—24; an earthly representative of the Almighty Father of all, E. iii. 15; receives back Isaac in a *parable*, explained, Heb. xi. 19.

"Abraham's bosom," meaning of the expression, L. xvi. 22; see *Soul and Paradise*, and L. xxiii. 43.

Absolution, on the minister's authority to pronounce it, M. xvi. 19; xviii. 18; public declaration of, provided by Christ for the penitent believer, L. vii. 47, 48; the Apostles invested with the power of, J. xx. 23; cp. Introduction to the Gospel of St. John, p. 265.

Abstinence, total, from wine, &c., vows of, R. xiv. 20; from meats, 1 Ti. iv. 3, 4.

Abyss, meaning of the word, Rev. xvii. 7.

Accentuation of proper names, A. xx. 4; remarkable exception to the rule in the case of *Christus*, *ib.*

"According to the flesh," meaning of the expression, R. iv. 1.

Aceldama, M. xxvi. 36, *note* 1, p. 82; xxvii. 8; A. i. 19.

Achaia, the Roman province of, its boundaries in St. Paul's time, A. xv. 10.

Acts of the Apostles, design of the book, Pt. ii. 1; aim of modern theories to invalidate its authority, *ib.*; irrefragable testimony borne to its authenticity, genuineness, and inspiration, by the early writers of the Church, *ib.*; argument, from internal evidence, on the subject of the authorship, *ib.*, *note* 5; plan, 2—8; title, 5, 6; previous Providential arrangements for the furtherance of Christianity, 8; final cause of it, *ib.*; case of Cornelius, and of Sergius Paulus, 9; diffusion of the Hebrew Scriptures, and the decomposition of Paganism, *ib.*; the conquests of the Third Empire—Greece; the Septuagint; the Fourth, or Roman monarchy, 9, 10; St. Paul in Rome, 10; internal affairs of the Church, 11; moral and physical evils

overruled for the good of the Church, 12; this book an Epitome of Church History, a Code of Divine Legislation, and a Divine Prophecy, 13; instruction in Church regimen and polity, *ib.*; the book describes the operations of Christ, acting by his Apostles, *ib.*; advantages to be derived from a heedful study of this book, *ib.*; the Acts the Gospel History of Christ now reigning in glory, *ib.*; design of the book not clearly understood by some, *ib.*; hindrances overruled by Christ for the furtherance of the Gospel, 14; the teaching of the Apostles, in their writings, is the teaching of Christ, 15; teaching by *action*, *ib.*; choice of Matthias, *ib.*; mission of the Comforter, *ib.*; Creed of the Apostles, 15, 16; *interpretation* of the Old Testament, 16; profane attempts in recent times to pervert the sense of the declarations in the Prophets and in the Psalms respecting Christ, *ib.*; we receive the Gospel from the hand of Christ in heaven, 17; the rite of *Confirmation*, *ib.*; right mode of settling *Controversies* in the Church, 18; Sanctification of the First Day of the week, *ib.*; blessing of Unity, 19; Sectaries self-disqualified for commenting on the Acts of the Apostles, 20; caution against Rationalistic expositions, *ib.*; numerous discrepancies in the MSS. of this Book, 21; Chronological Synopsis, 22; Chronological Table, 26; Table of Contemporary Chronology, 28; inferences deducible from the above Tables, 29; MSS. of the Acts of the Apostles in Uncial Letters, 30; principal Critical Editions of the New Testament, 31; force of the expression *τὸν πρῶτον λόγον*, ch. i. 1; probable date of the writing, *ib.*; *τεκμήρια*, as distinguished from *σημεῖα*, 3; why it is principally occupied in narrating the actions and sufferings of St. Peter and St. Paul, vii. 58. Chapters viii.—x. display the fulfilment of the prediction, Ps. cviii. 7, respecting the evangelical conquests of Christ, viii. 27. Chap. xii. and Isa. xxxvii. illustrate each other, xii. 3; frequent recurrence of the term "angel," xii. 15; references to synagogues, xiii. 5; source from which the two persecutions from heathenism mentioned in the book arose, xvi. 19; Titus never mentioned in the Acts, xviii. 7; the true rendering of ch. xxi. 16; concludes about five years before St. Paul's martyrdom, 2 C. xi. 25; plan of that history, *ib.*

Adam, a type of Christ, and Eve a type of Christ's Church, J. xix. 34; 1 C. xv. 22. 45; 2 C. xi. 3; E. v. 30; his naming the creatures, an earthly reflection of God's paternal attributes and sovereign prerogatives, E. iii. 14; "Adam was not deceived," explained, 1 Ti. ii. 14; Adam and Christ the Heads and Representatives respectively of the *Old* and *New Creation*, 1 C. xv. 22; and see M. xxvi. 47; L. xxii. 44; J. ix. 6; xviii. 1. 3; xix. 14.

Adramyttium, its situation, A. xxvii. 2.

Adria, the sea so called, A. xxvii. 27.

Advent, the second, the time of it concealed, M. xxiv. 36; 1 Th. iii. 13; iv. 15; 2 Th. ii. 3; Introduction to the Second Epistle to the Thessalonians; and see *Coming*.

Advents, the two, Rev. xx. 1—12.

Ænon, its situation, J. iii. 23; derivation and import of the name, *ib.*

Agapæ, *love-feasts*, 1 C. xi. 20, 21; 2 P. ii. 13.

Agar and Sina, G. iv. 25, explained.

Agrippa I., A. xii. 4. 21—23.

Agrippa II., notice of his family, parentage, and early life, A.

- xxv. 13; Paul pleads before him, xxvi. 1; his zeal for the $\epsilon\theta\eta$ of the Jews, 3; his character presents an example of knowledge, without courage to act upon it, 28; "almost thou persuadest me to be a Christian," *ib.*; Paul's rejoinder to this, 29; date of his death, xxv. 13.
- Ahithophel compared to Judas, M. xxvii. 5.
- Alabaster, M. xxvi. 7; the form and use described, Mk. xiv. 3; L. vii. 37.
- Alaric, marvellously restrained from injuring the Christian Church when he captured Rome, Rev. viii. 9; his previous assault upon Ostia, *ib.*
- Alexander and Rufus, Mk. xv. 21.
- Alexander of Ephesus, conjectures respecting him, A. xix. 33; his apostasy, *ib.*
- Alexander the Great, the monarchy of, provides a common language for the Gospel, Introduction to the Acts; A. xxviii. 15.
- Alexandria, described, A. xviii. 24; the Jews of, vi. 9.
- Alexandria, the Church of, St. Mark its first bishop (see Introduction to his Gospel, p. 112), the most learned in Christendom, Introduction to the Epistle to the Hebrews.
- Alexandrine forms of Greek language, M. vii. 13; and see xxiii. 23. 30; cp. J. xv. 22; xvii. 7.
- Alexandrine ship, sailing to Italy, how it came to be at Myra, in Lycia, A. xxvii. 6.
- "All," often used in Scripture for "many," Mk. i. 5.
- Allegiance, civil, R. xiii. 1—4; and see *Kings*.
- Allegorical interpretation, Waterland's remark on, G. iv. 24.
- Alliteration, M. xxiii. 2.
- Almsgiving, on the duty and privilege of Christian, L. xi. 41; xii. 35; xvi. 9; J. xii. 3; 1 C. xvi. 1. Cp. Mk. xii. 41. 2 C. viii. 1—4; ix. 5—9; P. iv. 18; Christ the pattern of, 2 C. viii. 9.
- Aloes, used at our Lord's entombment, J. xix. 39; not the aloes of commerce, *ib.*
- Alpheus, probably the same as Clopas, Cleopas, or Cleophas, M. x. 3; Mk. ii. 14; L. xxiv. 18; J. xix. 25; Introduction to the Epistle of St. James; his wife, Mary, the sister of Mary the mother of Jesus, *ib.*
- Altar, the Christian, Heb. xiii. 10.
- Altars in the Temple. See *Temple*.
- Amen, origin and import of the term, M. v. 18; its frequent occurrence in the Gospel of St. John, J. i. 52; doubled by him, v. 19; why, *ib.*; the use of it in the early Church, 1 C. xiv. 6; and cp. L. ix. 27.
- Ammonian Sections, and the Eusebian Canons, Vol. i. xxv.
- Amphipolis, account of, A. xvii. 1.
- Anabaptists, see *Baptism*. Their civil principles, see *Authority*, *Antinomianism*, *Kings*, *Rulers*.
- "Analogy of Faith," R. xii. 6.
- Ananias, the high priest, A. xxiii. 2; St. Paul rebukes him, 3; account of him, *ib.*
- Ananias, and Sapphira, their case untruly stated by Romish divines, L. ix. 55; their sin and punishment, A. v. 1—6; why their burial is mentioned, 6.
- Ananias, of Damascus, derivation of the name, A. ix. 10.
- Ancient interpreters of Scripture, their advantages and characteristics, Vol. i. xiv. xv.
- Angel, of the Church, the chief pastor, or Bishop, Rev. i. 20.
- Angelo-phany, L. i. 19.
- Angels, good, on the ministration of, M. xviii. 10; Mk. xvi. 7; L. xvi. 22, 25; xxii. 43; xxiv. 6; J. i. 52; A. v. 19; xii. 15; 1 C. xi. 10; the time of the second advent unknown to them, M. xxiv. 36; our Lord ministered to by them, M. iv. 11; xxviii. 2; their existence particularly brought out in St. Luke's Gospel, Introduction, p. 158; L. i. 11; their subjection to Christ, Heb. i. 4—13; their good will, L. i. 26; historic reality of their appearances in the Gospel Dispensation, L. ii. 13; J. v. 4; A. xii. 15. 21—23; present at the giving of the Law, A. vii. 53; G. iii. 19; often mentioned in the Acts of the Apostles, and why, A. xii. 5. 21; present in Christian Churches, 1 C. xi. 10; derive knowledge from the Gospel, E. iii. 10; 1 Pet. i. 12; worship of, J. v. 4; Introduction to the Epistle to the Colossians; and ii. 8.
- Angels, evil, the judgment of, explained, 1 C. vi. 2, 3; their present operation, and condition, and their future doom, M. viii. 29; L. viii. 31; E. ii. 2; 2 P. ii. 4; Jud. 6. See *Satan*.
- Anger, its use and abuse, E. iv. 26.
- "A night and a day in the deep," 2 C. xi. 25.
- Anna, the prophetess, derivation and import of the name, L. ii. 36; her testimony to the infant Jesus, *ib.*
- Annas, the high priest, L. iii. 2; xxii. 54; forcibly removed by the Roman power, which substituted Caiaphas, L. iii. 2; xxii. 54; why placed before Caiaphas, A. iv. 6. 19.
- Annius, of Viterbo, first broaches the notion that Mary's genealogy is traced by St. Luke, cap. iii., M. i. 1.
- Anno Domini, four years too late, M. ii. 20.
- Anointing the Sick with oil, why the Church of England has not retained the practice, Jam. v. 13, 14; design of it, *ib.*; practice of the Church of Rome, *ib.*; and of the Greek Church, *ib.*; rule in the first Prayer Book of King Edward VI., *ib.*
- Antichrist, the term, used by St. John alone, and never by him in the Apocalypse, 1 J. ii. 18; import of the term, *ib.*; different from "the Man of Sin," *ib.*; the coming of, a sign of "the last time," 1 J. ii. 18; and see M. xxiv. 3. 29. 37; also the Introduction to the First Epistle of St. John.
- Anticipation, the practice of, common in Scripture, M. xx. 29; examples of, L. iii. 19; xix. 45; Mk. x. 46; J. i. 29; ii. 21; iii. 4; vi. 53, 54; xi. 2; xii. 16. 32; Rev. vi. 7, 8.
- Antinomianism, caution against perverting the language of St. Paul into pleas for it, Pt. ii. 19; 2 C. iii. 6—15; C. ii. 14; P. iii. 18, 19 (see *Law*, *Works*, *Authority*); against the notion that all Christians are *Kings*, Rev. i. 6.
- Antioch, Council of, declaration respecting the Incarnation of Christ, C. ii. 9; its exposition of C. i. 15; and of P. ii. 6.
- Antioch, in Pisidia, the first place in which St. Paul preached after his ordination to the Apostleship, and where his sufferings for the truth's sake began, 2 Ti. iii. 11; A. xiii. 14. 44. 50; xiv. 8. 21; xvi. 1, 2.
- Antioch, the metropolis of Syria, account of, Vol. i. p. 157; A. xi. 19; the mother city of Gentile Christianity, Vol. i. p. 157; G. ii. 10; St. Paul's connexion with, *ib.*; ordained there to the Apostleship, see Review of G. ii.; the foundation of the see of, A. ix. 3.
- Antipas, martyred at Pergamum, Rev. ii. 13.
- Antipatris, its situation, A. xxiii. 31; described, *ib.*
- Antistrophical character of St. John's Epistles, Introduction to the First Epistle.
- Antonia, the fortress of, description of, A. xxi. 34.
- Aorist, sense of in the New Test., M. iii. 17; xxiii. 2; xxvi. 26; xxvii. 8; Mk. vi. 41; L. i. 47; v. 2; vii. 44. 47; J. xvii. 12; 1 J. iv. 8; Rev. xiv. 8; xxi. 1; how it differs from the Perfect, 2 C. v. 17.
- Apocryphal Gospels, the Canonical Scriptures confirmed by them, L. ii. 22. 28.
- Apollinarian heresy, its nature, P. ii. 6; confutation of, L. ii. 52; J. i. 14; viii. 23; P. ii. 6; danger of, J. iii. 13.
- Apollos, account of him, A. xviii. 24; instructed by Aquila and Priscilla, 25.
- Apollyon [Abaddon].
- "Aposiopesis," instances of, M. xv. 5; L. xiii. 9; xix. 41.
- Apostates from the Reformed Faith, Rev., Retrospect of Chapp. xi.—xvii.
- Apostles, the twelve, observations on the lists of, M. x. 2; Mk. iii. 16; L. vi. 14; A. i. 13; and note 1, p. 151; import of the term "Apostle," M. x. 2; the types of the Apostolic body irreconcilable with the notion of a *supremacy* in any one of the number, M. x. 2; xvi. 18; their missionary labours, M. x. 16; motives to their performance of them, *ib.*; no supremacy assigned to one over the rest, M. x. 2; xvi. 18; sent forth in pairs, Mk. vi. 7; succeeded in the Church by bishops, L. x. 1; "declare the whole counsel of God," J. xvi. 12; are supposed to have remained at Jerusalem for twelve years after the Ascension of our Lord, A. i. 4; their baptism, A. i. 5; what they *taught* is as authoritative as what they *did*, ii. xxiv.; *wrote* and *spoke* by the same inspiration, xxvii.; qualified for their work by the effusion of the Holy Ghost, *ib.*; return to Jerusalem, after witnessing the Ascension, by "a Sabbath-day's journey," A. i. 12; order in which their names are placed in the lists given by the Evangelists, i. 13; their endowment with the gift of tongues, ii. 3, 4; evidence of their use of this gift, ii. 4; $\lambda\alpha\lambda\epsilon\iota\nu\ \epsilon\tau\epsilon\rho\alpha\iota\varsigma\ \gamma\lambda\omega\sigma\sigma\alpha\iota\varsigma$ explained, use of this gift in directing their course, ii. 8; their ability to speak foreign languages maintained, xiv. 11; are enabled by the Holy Ghost to interpret the words of the Prophets, ii. 27; the Church constituted by them in accordance with their divine instructions, ii. 42; resorted to the Temple constantly; thus avoiding and condemning schism, ii. 46; do not appear, from the Acts, to have been persecuted by the Romans, iv. 1; reason of the bitter hostility of the Sadducees, *ib.*; had a common place of resort in Jerusalem for worship, iv. 24; the miracles wrought by them had no tendency to draw off the minds of men from Him in whose name they were performed, v. 15; their continuance at Jerusalem after the Ascension, viii. 14—18; why they did not themselves ordinarily administer the rite of Baptism, x. 48; *call* and *mission* to the Apostleship distinguished, xiii. 2; the agency by which, and the purposes for which, the *Ordination of Apostles* was effected, *ib.*; equality of the twelve in all Apostolic functions, *ib.*; Barnabas and Saul equal in dignity to the original twelve, *ib.*; provision made for the *continuance* and *extension* of the Apostolic Office, *ib.*; successors of the Apostles, *ib.*; testimony for episcopacy, *ib.*; why they enjoined abstinence from eating of things strangled and of blood, xv. 20;

- their personal history designedly left in obscurity, 1 C. vii. 8; no *one* Apostle is *the* foundation stone of the Church, Rev. xxi. 14.
- Appearance, external, of our Lord, how majestic, Mk. x. 32; J. xviii. 6.
- Appii Forum, A. xxviii. 15; its distance from Rome, *ib.*
- Applause; see *Praise*.
- Aquila and Priscilla, or Prisca, A. xviii. 2; happy consequences of their banishment from Rome, *ib.*; Aquila = Onkelos, *ib.*; they instruct Apollos, A. xviii. 26; brief notice of them, R. xvi. 3.
- Arabia, the wilderness of, probable scene of our Lord's temptation, Mk. i. 13; St. Paul's abode there, A. ix. 23.
- Archelaus, banished by Augustus to Vienne, in Gaul, M. ii. 22.
- Archippus, brief notice of him, C. iv. 17; Introduction to the Epistle to Philemon; Pn. 2.
- Areopagus, the, described, A. xvii. 22.
- Aretas, A. ix. 2.
- Arians, futility of their reasoning against the Godhead of the Second Person, grounded on their misinterpretation of M. xxiv. 36; and on that of Mk. xiii. 32; and on that of J. i. 1, *note* 1, p. 208; refutation of their heresy, L. iv. 8; J. x. 1. 30; Heb. i. 14; texts perverted by them to prove an inferiority in Christ, E. iii. 9; P. ii. 6; C. i. 15; Rev. iii. 14; represented by the Third Seal, vi. 5; introduced Islamism, ix. 1; their inconsistency in asserting Christ to be a creature, and yet professing to worship Him, R. i. 25.
- Arimathea, its probable situation, M. xxvii. 57.
- Aristarchus, account of him, A. xix. 29; C. iv. 10.
- Arius, his character, Rev. vi. 5.
- Ark of the Covenant, its form and design, E. iii. 10.
- Armageddon, or Harmagedon, the final conflict there, Rev. xvi. 16; xix. 19—21.
- Arminianism, caution against, R. ix. 13.
- Arms, on the lawfulness of the profession of, L. iii. 14.
- Artemas (Artemidorus), derivation of the name, Tit. iii. 13.
- Article, Greek, its use in New Test., M. v. 1 (and see *Definite Article*).
- as and es, termination of Greek substantives in, how Latinized, R. xvi. 10.
- Ascension, period at which it took place, Mk. xvi. 19; place of, A. i. 12; specially noticed by St. Luke, Introduction to his Gospel, pp. 163, 164; our Lord's eye fixed on it, L. ix. 51; prefigured, J. vi. 15; spiritual, J. xii. 26; xvii. 24; cp. xx. 17; miracles of the Apostles after the, due to Christ, J. xiv. 11, 12; coming of the Holy Spirit a consequence of it, J. xvi. 7; xx. 17; a pledge of *our* Ascension, E. ii. 6.
- Asceticism, Introduction to the Epistle to the Colossians, p. 311, and C. ii. 8. 18. 23.
- Aser, the tribe of, not restored, L. ii. 36; the mention of this tribe attests the care with which the Jews preserved their genealogies, *ib.*
- Asia, of the New Testament, its limits defined, A. ii. 9; vi. 9; Asia, of the Apocalypse, Rev. i. 4.
- Asiatics, St. John wrote especially for them, Introduction to the Gospel of St. John, p. 258; cp. iv. 6; xiii. 18.
- Asiarchs, their functions, A. xix. 31; endeavour to save St. Paul from the fury of the populace at Ephesus, *ib.*
- Ass, riding on an, emblematical of peace, M. xxi. 5; our Lord's riding into Jerusalem on the foal of an ass, Mk. x. 46; J. xii. 14, 15; significance of this act, 14; no discrepancy in the Evangelic account, Part I., p. xlviii.
- Assassins, or bandits, at Jerusalem, their extreme fanaticism and ferocity, A. xxi. 38; Jam. iv. 2; and see *Zealots*.
- Asses, used to turn mills, M. xviii. 6.
- Assos, its situation, A. xx. 13; remarkable error with regard to it, *ib.*
- Assurance, personal, not the essence of Faith, 1 C. ix. 27; R. ix. 22; P. iii. 11, 12; Rev. iii. 17.
- Astarte, the goddess, worshipped under the name of Baal, R. xi. 4.
- Atheist's Creed, L. xviii. 4.
- Athens, its devotion to idolatry, A. xvii. 16; St. Paul's reception and ministrations there, *ib.*; the populace not intolerant persecutors, 19.
- Atonement, Vicarious, for sin, asserted, M. xx. 28; J. i. 28; an objection to the doctrine answered, M. xvii. 5; voluntary, M. xxvii. 50; Mk. xiv. 22; remarkable witness from heathen tradition in behalf of the doctrine of, 1 C. iv. 13; the doctrine of, is accordant with the highest Reason and Divine Love, R. iii. 21—26; viii. 3; 2 C. v. 15. 18; G. i. 4; E. ii. 13; Heb. ii. 17; 1 J. iv. 10; how typified, 1 Ti. ii. 16; Heb. ix. 11. 23, 24.
- Attalia, its situation, A. xiv. 25.
- Attic Philology, the rules of, not to be rigidly applied to the Text of the New Testament, E. ii. 21.
- Augustan cohort, reflections suggested by the mention of it, at A. xxvii. 1.
- Augustus the Emperor, L. ii. 1.
- Authority, the source of, is God, R. xiii. 1—3; Jam. iv. 12.
- Authorized English Version of the Bible, its character and uses, considerations on a revision of it, Introduction to the Acts, 13; R. xii. 19.
- Avarice, warning against it, L. xii. 29. 33.
- "Avenge me," explained, L. xviii. 3.
- Azotus, its situation, A. viii. 40.
- Baal, in the Septuagint, has sometimes the masculine and sometimes the feminine article, R. xi. 4.
- Babel, the confusion of, calmed by the miracle of Pentecost, A. ii. 6.
- Babylon, the number of priests who returned from, A. vi. 7; planting of the Christian Church there, Introduction to the First Epistle of St. Peter; large number of Jews there when St. Peter wrote his Epistle, 1 P. v. 13; the name not confined to the *city*, *ib.*; special reasons why St. Peter's Epistle should be written from, *ib.*; the Church there, Introduction to the Second Epistle of St. John; Babylon, the mystical, Rev. xiv. 8; xvi. 12; Rome in many respects a second Babylon, Preliminary note on the xviiith chap.
- Balaam, his prophecy concerning the star, M. ii. 2; his character, 2 P. ii. 15; objection of modern rationalists to his history, 16; his counsel to Balak, Rev. ii. 14; resemblance of the Gnostic teachers to him.
- Baptism in the name of Christ, A. ii. 38.
- Baptism, nature and import of the rite, M. iii. 1; Mk. xvi. 16; Introduction to the Gospel of St. John, p. 260; "He shall baptize you with the Holy Ghost and with fire," M. iii. 11; ix. 49; baptism of infants, see *Infants*; baptism typified by the wedding garment, M. xxii. 12; the effect of baptism, M. xxviii. 19; the true Circumcision, C. ii. 11; the different baptisms mentioned in Scripture, Mk. i. 4; baptism with fire, Mk. ix. 49; baptismal grace, J. i. 12; Mk. xiv. 13; typified by the pitcher of water, *ib.*; argument for it, L. ii. 21; our Lord's baptism, L. iii. 21; why not administered by Christ personally, J. iv. 2; nor by St. Paul, 1 C. i. 14—17; cp. A. x. 42; the Red Sea a type of baptism, J. iii. 5; and see *Red Sea*, also *The Flood*; 1 P. iii. 20; represents the Christian profession, J. v. 25; "baptism into death," *ib.*; baptism of the Apostles, A. i. 5; baptism of John the Baptist not the same with that of Christ, *ib.*; baptism not Scripturally limited to *immersion*, A. ii. 41; necessity of it, Introduction to the Acts, p. 17; A. ix. 36; x. 47; J. iii. 4; "the putting on of Christ," G. iii. 27; efficacy of, independent of the hands by which it is administered, 1 C. i. 14—17; why St. Paul baptized Crispus, Stephanas, and Gaius, *ib.*; Death unto sin, R. vi. 2—8; first Resurrection from, J. v. 25; Justification first consigned to us in the rite, R. iv. 25; 1 C. vi. 11; 2 C. v. 15; represents Christ's Death and Resurrection, 1 C. xv. 29; called *ῥωτισμός* by the Fathers, E. v. 8; whence the water derives its efficacy, 26; cp. J. xv. 3; sin after it, M. xxvi. 75; E. v. 26; daily renewal by the Holy Ghost, C. ii. 10; regeneration in, 1 C. xv. 29; Tit. iii. 5. 8; typified by the Flood, 1 P. iii. 18—22; "saves us," 21; typified by the water and the blood, 1 J. v. 6; Original sin washed away in it, 1 J. i. 7; Baptismal privileges and duties, 1 J. ii. 8; Introduction to the Epistle to the Ephesians; 1 J. i. 7; Baptism, interrogatories in, 1 P. iii. 21; and see *Regeneration*; remission of sins, 1 J. ii. 12; children receive an unction from the Holy One, 20; "put on Christ," G. iii. 27; Rev. iii. 4.
- Baptismal names, A. iv. 36.
- Baptisms, on the different kinds of, Heb. vi. 2.
- "Baptized into Christ," what? R. vi. 3.
- "Baptism for the dead," 1 C. xv. 29.
- Barabbas, derivation and import of the name, M. xxvii. 16.
- "Barbarians," the designation of all who did not speak Greek, A. xxviii. 12; R. i. 14.
- Barcochba, M. ii. 2.
- Barley loaves, miraculously multiplied, St. John alone specifies them, J. vi. 9.
- Barnabas, St., the Apostle, import of the name, A. iv. 36; brief notice of him, *ib.*; his liberality, 36, 37; remarkable commendation of him, xi. 24; his temper contrasted with St. Paul's, xv. 39; first occasion of the difference between St. Paul and him, G. ii. 13.
- Barnabas, St., on the Lord's day, L. xxiv. 1; passage in his Epistle on the day of Christ's resurrection, 50; on the duration of the world for six thousand years, and the coming of the End in the

- seventh millennium, 2 P. iii. 8; on ver. 10; "The Way of Light," and "the Way of Darkness," E. vi. 4; on the Separatists, Jud. 19.
- Bartholomew, derivation and import of the name, M. x. 3.
- Bartimæus, Mk. x. 46; no discrepancy in the Evangelical account of this miracle, *ib.*; signification of it, *ib.*; and see Pt. i. p. xlviii.
- Beatitudes, the eight, scene of the promulgation of, M. v. 1; design and meaning of them, *ib.*; followed by eight woes, M. xxiii. 13.
- Beelzebub, meaning of the term, M. x. 25.
- "Beginning, in the," explained, J. i. 1.
- Belial, import of the name, 2 C. vi. 15.
- "Belly," *κοιλία*, employed, by a Hebrew figure, for *heart*, J. vii. 38.
- Benedictions, on the use of, in the Church, M. x. 13; L. x. 6; in the name of the Blessed Trinity, 2 C. xiii. 13; the Pauline, 1 Th. v. 28.
- Benefactors, L. xxii. 25.
- Benjamin, Jacob's prophecy respecting, applied to St. Paul, A. ix. 1.
- Bernice, eldest daughter of Herod Agrippa I., A. xxv. 13; account of her from Josephus, Suetonius, and Tacitus, *ib.*; she and her sister Drusilla jealous of each other, xxvi. 30.
- Beræa, A. xvii. 11.
- Beræans, their noble behaviour commended, A. xvii. 11.
- Bethany, import of the name, M. xxvi. 6; J. x. 40; its connexion with our Lord's history, M. xxvi. 36; Mk. xi. 1; L. xxiv. 50; the place where the Evangelists meet, L. x., Preliminary note; its situation, L. xxiv. 50; J. i. 28; xi. 1; A. i. 12.
- Bethesda, Introduction to the Gospel of St. John, 161; derivation and import of the name, J. v. 2; miraculous cure there, 5—13; whence derived, ix. 6, 7.
- Bethlehem, import of the name, M. ii. 1; L. ii. 4; its condition in the time of Micah, and at the Nativity, M. ii. 5; general remarks upon it, as connected with our Lord's history, M. xxvi. 36.
- Bethphage, its situation, M. xxi. 1; Mk. xi. 1; derivation and import of the name, M. xxi. 1; its connexion with our Lord's history, M. xxvi. 36; Mk. xi. 1; Rabbinical acceptance of the term, A. i. 12.
- Bethsaida, its situation, M. xi. 21; derivation and meaning of the name, *ib.*; two towns so called, M. xiv. 13; Mk. vi. 45; viii. 22; L. ix. 10; general remarks on the Bethsaida which is more closely connected with our Lord's history, M. xxvi. 36.
- Bethsai, or Bethsaron, said by Jerome to be the place where Philip baptized the eunuch, A. viii. 36.
- Biblical Criticism, remarkable characteristics of, in the present day, Vol. i. v. vi.; its progress arrested, vi.; tendency to retrogression, vii.; instance of this, *ib.*; date and origin of the decline of Sacred Interpretation, viii.; J. xi. 1; A. vii. 1—43.
- Binding and loosing, significance of the actions, M. xvi. 19.
- Birth, Baptism, and Resurrection, analogies between them, 1 P. i. 3; Rev. xx. 5; cp. L. xxiii. 53.
- Birth of Christ, when and where, M. ii. 1. 20; J. i. 14. 49; see *Incarnation*; compared with his Burial, see *Tomb*.
- Birthright, privileges originally annexed to it, Heb. xii. 16.
- Bishops, the order of Divine appointment, Introduction to the Acts, 17; A. xiii. 1; importance of its extension, 18; A. xiii. 1; bishops to do nothing without their presbyters, xv. 6; distinguished from presbyters by their functions, xx. 28; restriction of the term *ἐπίσκοπος* to the highest order of the Christian ministry, *ib.*; succeeded, not the Scripture *ἐπίσκοποι*, but the Scripture *Ἀπόστολοι*, *ib.*; the proper successors of the Apostles, Tit. i. 5. 7; universal consent of the Church in the acknowledgment of their office, *ib.*; Introductory note to 1 Ti. iii.; cp. Ph. i. 1; their office, 1 P. v. 2; recognized in Scripture, Rev. ii. 1; their authority and responsibility, *ib.*; their spiritual authority from Christ alone, *ib.*; their territorial titles from the civil power, *ib.*; their responsibilities, *ib.*; Coadjutor Bishops, L. v. 7.
- Blasphemy, peculiar use of the term, M. xxvi. 65.
- Blasphemy against the Holy Ghost, its nature, M. xii. 31.
- "Blessed" (= *μακάριος*, *εὐλογητός*), applied to God only, E. i. 3.
- "Blessed among women," explained, L. i. 28.
- Blind, man born, miraculous cure of, J. ix. 1—6; one of the signs of the Messiah, 6.
- Blindness, Spiritual, its causes, 2 C. iv. 4.
- Blood, baptism of, Mk. i. 4; abstaining from eating of, A. xv. 20.
- Blood of Christ, its cleansing efficacy, 1 J. i. 7; Rev. i. 5; see *Atonement*, *Redemption*, *Cross*.
- Boanerges, James and John why so called, Mk. iii. 17.
- Bodily infirmities the effects of sin, J. v. 14.
- Body, its state after Resurrection, M. xiv. 26—29, see *Resurrection*; reverence and honour due to it, as a member of Christ, and temple of the Holy Ghost, 1 C. vi. 15. 19; iii. 16, 17; Introduction to the Epistle to the Colossians, p. 312, and Col. ii. 23; 1 Th. iv. 4; 1 Pet. ii. 7; see *Burial*.
- Body of our Lord, how to be received, M. xxvii. 60; and see *Supper*; typified by the Temple, J. ii. 19.
- Body and Soul, after death, their respective conditions widely different, L. xii. 4; the reverence of the body, as well as the devotion of the soul, required in the worship of God, xviii. 13.
- "Body, soul, and spirit," 1 Th. v. 23.
- "Born of women," import of the expression, M. xi. 11.
- Branch; see *Nazareth*.
- Bread, the breaking of, in the Sacrament of the Holy Communion, L. xxii. 19; significance of the act, *ib.* 35; A. ii. 42. 46; xx. 7; 1 C. x. 16; xi. 24; wanting in the Church of Rome, Heb. xiii. 10; and see *Supper*.
- "Brethren of our Lord," import of the expression, M. i. 25, note 9; xii. 46; xiii. 55; J. ii. 12; Introduction to the Epistle of St. James.
- Bridegroom, Christ so called, M. xxv. 1—12; see *Marriage*.
- Britain, probably visited by St. Paul in his last Missionary Tour, R. xv. 21—4; Introduction to the Epistles to Timothy and Titus.
- Brothers, three sets of, among the Apostles, M. iv. 18; x. 2.
- Burial, ancient manner of, among the Jews and Orientals, J. xix. 39; Christian duty of burying the dead, M. viii. 22; takes place immediately after death, J. xi. 17; see *Tomb*; A. v. 6; viii. 1—4; ix. 37.
- Buyers and sellers in the Temple, on their expulsion, M. xxi. 12; Mk. xi. 17; L. xix. 45; J. ii. 14—16.
- Cabala, M. xv. 1.
- Cæcilia, S., false representation recently published of her demeanour at her martyrdom, 1 P. iii. 15.
- Cærimoniale Romanum, its remarkable description of the Pope's Enthronization, and of his Coronation, Rev. xiii. 14; xvii. 3; 2 Th. ii. 1—12.
- Cæsar, on the duty of rendering tribute to, M. xxii. 21.
- "Cæsar, I appeal to," A. xxv. 10.
- "Cæsar's friend," J. xix. 12.
- Cæsarea, [Sebaste,] formerly Turris Stratonis, M. xvi. 13; the residence of the Roman procurator, xxvii. 2; brief account of, A. x. 1; the door first opened here to the Gentile world, in the calling of Cornelius, *ib.*; striking circumstance connected with St. Paul's preaching here before Agrippa II., xxv. 23, 24.
- Cæsarea Philippi, account of, M. xvi. 13; Christian Church there, Pt. ii. ix.
- Caiaphas, why it was necessary to record his name, M. xxvi. 3; significance of his act in rending his garments, 65; high priest *de facto*, supplants Annas, high priest *de jure*, L. iii. 2; never mentioned by name by St. Luke in his account of Christ's arraignment, L. xxii. 54; "high priest *that year*," J. xi. 49; his history, *ib.*; cp. xviii. 13; the Jewish nation prophesies in him, its official representative, J. xix. 22; why placed after Annas, A. iv. 6; why so much prominence is given to his name up to the time of the crucifixion, *ib.*; Caiaphas and Cephas probably the same name, or derived from the same root, 8.
- Cainan, in St. Luke's genealogy of our Lord, the occurrence of the name accounted for, L. iii. 36.
- Caius, four persons of this name mentioned in the New Testament, A. xix. 29; the Caius mentioned by St. Paul believed by some to have been the first Bishop of Thessalonica, R. xvi. 23.
- Caligula, attempts to set up his statue in the Temple of Jerusalem, A. ix. 31.
- "Call on the name of the Lord," import of the expression, A. ii. 21.
- "Calling," import of the word, R. iv. 17.
- Calvary, why so called, according to Jerome, M. xxvii. 33.
- Calvin, admits that Confirmation was instituted by the Apostles, A. viii. 14—18; his scheme of Predestination, Summary of, Introduction to the Epistle to the Romans, note, and see R. ix. 1. 18—21. 23; favoured less by the Eastern than by the Western Fathers, A. xiii. 48.
- Calvinistic interpretation of R. ix., see Introduction to that Epistle, 199; its doctrines held in ancient times by the Valentinian heretics, 21—23; see also *Universal Redemption*, *Justification*, *Baptism*, and *Supper*, the Lord's.
- Camels, emblematic of the rich, M. xix. 24.
- Canan of Galilee, its situation, J. ii. 1; iv. 43, 44; marriage feast there, ii. 1—11; cp. Introduction, p. 259.
- Canaan, origin and import of the term, M. xv. 22.

Canaan, woman of, M. xv. 28; similarity between her case and that of the blind man, M. xx. 31.

Cananite, or Zelotes, L. v. 15.

Candace, the common title of queens of Meroë, A. viii. 27.

Canon Muratorianus, mentions St. Paul's journey to Spain, R. xv. 24.

Canon of Scripture,—“the Law, the Prophets, and the Psalms,” L. xxiv. 44; derivation of the word, 2 C. x. 13; Rev. xi. 1, 2; St. John specially appointed to complete the Canon of Holy Scripture, and to assure the Church of its integrity and inspiration, *ib.*; important testimony concerning it, R. iii. 2.

Canonical Scriptures, meaning of the expression, note on J. vii. 53—viii. 1—11; 1 C. v. 9; proof of their genuineness and inspiration, *ib.*; Mk. xvi. 9—20; J. vii. 52—viii. 1—11.

Capernaum, derivation and import of the name, M. iv. 13; J. vi. 59; situation of the town, and its condition at the time of our Lord's ministry, M. iv. 13, note 3; J. iv. 52; woes denounced against it by him, M. xi. 23.

Capital Punishments, refutation of the arguments by which it is sought to abolish them, R. xiii. 4.

Capitation tax, every Roman subject liable to, L. ii. 2.

Captain of the Temple, A. iv. 1.

Caste, how to be abolished, Introduction to the Epistle to Philemon.

Castor and Pollux, the supposed patrons of sailors, A. xxviii. 11.

“Catchwords” in Scripture, especially in prophecy, their uses, Introduction to the Book of Revelation.

Catechizing, its early practice, and lasting importance, L. ii. 42. 46.

Catholic Epistles, special character of each, Preface to; and Introduction to the First Epistle of St. John.

Celibacy, 1 C. vii. 28; see *Marriage*.

Cenchreæ, the port of Corinth, R. xvi. 1.

Centurion, at Capernaum, a figure and precursor of the Gentiles coming to Christ, M. viii. 5. 10.

Cephas, in what sense this name is applied by the Holy Ghost to Peter, M. xvi. 18; J. i. 43; futility of the argument built upon the word by the Romanists, Mk. viii. 29, and see *Peter*.

Ceremonial Law; see *Law*.

Cerinthians, their heresy, C. ii. 8; Introduction to 2 P. chap. ii., and 2 P. ii. 10, and to the First Epistle of St. John.

Chaldee Paraphrases, the Hebrew Christians made acquainted, through them, and the writings of the Alexandrine School of Theology, with the expression “Word of God,” H. iv. 12.

Chief Priests, M. ii. 4.

“Child of hell,” import of the expression, M. xxiii. 15.

“Child of the Law,” or “of the Precept,” L. ii. 46.

Childhood of our Lord, L. ii. 51; J. i. 31.

Children, blessed by our Lord, M. xix. 13; his example to them, L. ii. 48; their duties, Eph. vi. 1; praises of the Messiah sung by them, M. xxi. 16.

Chlamys, the Roman, described, M. xxvii. 28.

Chloe, the members of her household, 1 C. i. 11; brief notice of her, *ib.*

Chorazin, its precise situation unknown, M. xi. 31.

Christ, often addressed as Son of David, M. i. 1; date of his Incarnation, M. ii. 20; and of his death, *ib.*; and L. ii. 2; time of year in which he was born, M. ii. 20, note 10; chooses four places of special spiritual retirement, v. 17; his mode of working miracles contrasted with that of the Apostles, viii. 2, note 2; his teaching contrasted with that of the Scribes, vii. 29; marries our nature by his Incarnation, ix. 15; examples of dead persons raised to life by him, 25; occasion on which the name was first used by our Lord in speaking of himself, xxiii. 10; signs of his second advent, xxiv. 26; his bodily presence declared by himself to be but for a time, xxvi. 11; practical inference from this, *ib.*; opinions respecting the day on which he ate the last passover, xxvi. 17, and note 1; his forbearance with Judas, 21; remarks on the names of the principal places of our Lord's history, 36; his sorrows during the hours of his passion, 38; proof of two wills in him, 39; the passion of Christ is the pleroma of prophecy, 56; answers the high priest, when adjured by him, 63; his treatment by the Roman Procurator and soldiery, xxvii. 26—28; why he refused to drink the vinegar mingled with myrrh, 34; on his last words, 46; on the miraculous events that immediately followed his death, 51—53; on the rending of the veil of the Temple, 51; on our Lord's entombment, 59—66; he is ministered to by angels, xxviii. 2; is acknowledged to be one with Jehovah, 6; assumes his mediatorial kingdom, 18; and universal sovereignty, 19; St. Matthew begins his Gospel with his Human Generation; St. John, with his Divine, Mk. i. 1; forbids the evil spirit to speak, or to give testimony to him, 25; on his motive for forbidding the divulging of his miraculous cures, 45; his conduct to his mother, iii. 32; asleep in the storm,—the incident spiritualized, 38; “knowing in

himself that virtue had gone out of him,” v. 30; the manner of his miracles exemplary to all, 40; incidental proof of his manhood, vi. 3; why he cured the blind man by degrees, viii. 24; rebukes Peter, 33; “he loved him,” x. 21; his external appearance and deportment, 32; curses the fruitless leafy fig-tree, xi. 13, 14; breaks the bread at the last Supper, xiv. 22; uncertainty respecting the year, and time of year, of his Birth, and the duration of his Ministry, L. ii. 8; called Lord, i. e. Jehovah, 9; testimonies borne to him at his birth, 25—36; is catechized in the temple, 46; “increased in wisdom and stature,” 52; the true High Priest, iii. 2; why he was baptized, 21; begins his ministry in his thirtieth year, 23; his temptation in the wilderness, iv. 1; his discourse in the synagogue at Nazareth, 16; evangelizes men by means of their worldly occupations, v. 2; cleanses a leper, 12; his prayers and exhortations to prayer specially noticed by St. Luke, and why, 16; chooses his twelve Apostles, vi. 13; the two narratives of the Sermon on the Mount compared, 17; his peculiar and authoritative manner of raising dead persons to life, vii. 14; his answer to John the Baptist's messengers, 21; the women who anointed his feet, their probable number, 36—50; perhaps often anointed, *ib.*; solemn warning to all who use light and profane familiarity with him, viii. 45; adapts his manner of working miracles to the circumstances of the occasion, 54; combines preaching with miracles, ix. 11; is transfigured, 28; his death the culminating point to which all the Law and the Prophets tended and aspired as their end, 31; the Samaritans refuse to receive him, 53; reserves his miracles on the element of Fire for the last, 54; the rich man declines his call to discipleship, 59; Christ to be followed immediately, cheerfully, fully, and constantly, *ib.*; mission of the Seventy, x. 1; beheld Satan falling from heaven, 18; why he is called “the Eagle,” and “the great Eagle,” 19; his mode of answering captious questions, 29; the Holy Spirit teaches us to consider every accident of our lives as an occasion for applying to ourselves the words of Christ, xii. 13; warns against over-carefulness about worldly things, 29; the Parable of the Fig-tree, xiii. 6; rebukes Herod, 32; example of our Lord's teaching growing out of a particular incident, and then illustrated by the Evangelist by means of other previous discourses of Christ, xv. 1; the efficacy of his death reaches backward to those who lived before his advent in the flesh, and who lived up to the Natural Law which was given them, xvi. 23; his testimony to the integrity and genuineness of the Hebrew Scriptures in his time, 29; weeps for Jerusalem, xix. 41; eats the last passover on a different day from—the day before—that on which it was eaten by the Jews and their rulers, who ate it on the day after that on which it ought to have been eaten, xxii. 7; “I will not henceforth eat of it,” &c., 16. 18; his prayer for Peter vainly imagined by the Romanists to extend to the security of the faith of the Pope, 23; his bloody sweat, 44; his blood contrasted with that of Abel, *ib.*; his tomb—a new one—paralleled by the ancient writers of the Church with the Virgin's womb, xxiii. 53; Christ the true Sabbath, 56; the Second Adam dies on the same day of the week on which the first Adam was born, *ib.*; “he made as though he would have gone further,” this rendering emended, xxiv. 28; Christ in the beginning of Genesis, as well as in the beginning of St. John's Gospel, J. i. 1; the Creator of all, J. i. 1—3; C. i. 15, 16; why called “the Word,” J. i. 1; alone came without sin, 29; why he was baptized by John, 31; the design of the miracle in Cana of Galilee, ii. 4. 6; continued agency in Nature as well as in Grace, 8; his expulsion of the money-changers from the Temple, 15; examples of his prophetic language combined with didactic instruction, 21; the Divine and human nature united in Him, iii. 13; his sayings often explained by immediately subsequent acts, 22; his Baptism contrasted with, and illustrated by, that of John, *ib.*; why it is said that he baptized, though he did not baptize in person, *ib.*; his conversation with the woman of Samaria, iv. 6; reveals himself more plainly to her than to the Jews; why, 26; out of a multitude of sick and impotent folk at the porch of Bethesda he cures but one, v. 13; chooses the Sabbath day as the fittest for divine works of mercy, 9; prefers the testimony of his own works to that of the prophets, and of John the Baptist, 36; authorizes the Canon of the Old Testament, 39; to believe him, and to believe in him, distinguished, vi. 29; xvi. 8; many of his sayings and actions prophetic, *Review of the Contents of Chap. vi.*, at the end of the notes on the Chapter; his peculiar manner of teaching, *ib.*; both prophetic and probationary, *ib.*; exemplified in the case of the institution of both sacraments, *ib.*; was accustomed, on fit occasions, to flee, as man, that he might manifest himself as God, vii. 1; aims at gaining glory by Humility, 6; his healing on the Sabbath not a violation of the Law, 22; “dwelt among us,” J. i. 14, explained; *Review of the Contents of Chap. vii.*; went up to the Feast of Tabernacles “not openly,

but as it were in secret; significance of this, *ib.*; manner of the miraculous curing of the man born blind, ix. 6; the worship of Christ the vision of the soul, 35; Christ the door of the sheep-fold, x. 3; suffered willingly, 11; names given by him to the Jewish Scriptures, 34; the raising of Lazarus, xi. 1—44; ἐνεβρίμῃσατο τῷ πνεύματι, 33; ἐτάραξεν ἑαυτὸν, *ib.*; ἐδάκρυσε, 35; "for their sakes I sanctify myself," 55; xvi. 19; his triumphant entry into Jerusalem, xii. 12; much of his teaching *anticipatory* and *prophetical*, and designed to be interpreted by the light of what he afterwards did and said, 16; proof of his humanity in the earnestness with which, as a man, he clung to life, 27; the reasons why he chose to die by *crucifixion*, 33; he "cried aloud," 44; the true Passover, xiii. 1; washes his disciples' feet, 4—11; his prophetic teaching concerning the Holy Eucharist, 18; his sympathy with human nature, 21; had a purse, and kept there what was requisite for his own needs and for the poor, 29; "Now is the Son of man glorified," 31; "In my Father's house are many mansions," xiv. 2; "He who hath seen me hath seen the Father," 9; "greater works than these shall he do," 12; "My Father is greater than I," 28; "I am the Vine," xv. 1; proof of the two natures in Christ, 4; by three degrees a *receiver*: proof of this, xvii. 2; "My Kingdom is not of this world," xviii. 36; parallel between Christ and Isaac, xix. 17; proclaimed to be the Christ by God, by the Jews, and by the Romans, 20—22; his outer and inner garments emblematical, 23, 24; his entombment, 38; buried in a garden, 41; his descent into hell, apparently typified by Jonah, see E. iv. 9; 1 P. iii. 18; arose from the tomb, while the stone was yet on its mouth, J. xx. 1; "Touch me not," 17; his presence in the Holy Sacrament of the Lord's Supper, 20; why he enters the chamber, "the doors being shut," 19, 20; "as the Father hath sent me, even so send I you," 21; "he breathed on them," 22; his "forty days" on earth between his resurrection and ascension, A. i. 3; choice of his Apostles, 2; his baptism contrasted with that of John the Baptist, 5; "wilt thou at this time restore the kingdom," &c., 6, 7; Christ in glory, the origin of all that is taught or done in the Church by the ministry of man, viii.; "Receive ye the Holy Ghost," ix.; "Greater works than these shall he do, because I go unto my Father," x.; true import of the term *Κύριος* as applied to Christ, *ib.*; still continues to *teach* from his throne in heaven, xxiv.; the great and only lawgiver of his Church, xxxi.; our Lord's personal appearance after his resurrection, 12; typical character of his triumphal progress from Bethphage to the Temple, *ib.*; his deliverance from the birth-pangs of death, ii. 24; his session in heaven, inconsistent with the Romish doctrine of transubstantiation, iii. 21; Christ not contrary to the Law and the Prophets, 22; "like unto Moses," *ib.*; spiritual fulfilment of the prophecy, "Give ye them to eat," iv. 4; his choice of the twelve Apostles, xiii. 2; and of one to fill the place from which Judas had fallen, *ib.*; inferences from this, *ib.*; prophecy in Ps. xci. 13, of his victory over the *Great Python*, or "old Serpent," the Devil, xvi. 16; visible exhibition of his operation by the agency of Paul, 16—18; works greater things in his Church since his Ascension than he did before, xix. 12; heresies respecting his human nature, xx. 28; sayings of his, not recorded in the Gospels, 35; "Why persecutest thou me?" xxvi. 14; did not disdain to use a proverb familiar in the heathen world, *ib.*; his use of proverbs generally, *ib.*; "Christ must suffer," 23; doctrine of the Atonement made by Him, 1 J. iv. 10; 2 C. v. 15—18; R. iii. 21—26, and see *Atonement*, and *Death of our Lord*; his second Advent, 1 Th. iii. 13; his death has made the death of believers to be *not death*, but *sleep*, iv. 14; supposed by the Fathers to have revealed himself before his Incarnation by angels to the Patriarchs, and to have administered the affairs of the Old Dispensation, 1 C. ix. 9; his action in the institution of the Lord's Supper both eucharistic and eulogistic, x. 16; his mediatorial Kingdom, xv. 24, 25; his afflictions endured by his members, 2 C. i. 5; transitory glory of the Mosaic Dispensation, iii. 11; Christ the true light of the soul, iv. 4; died for all, v. 15, 16; called "Jehovah our Righteousness," 21 (cp. R. iii. 21—26; viii. 3); his vicarious sufferings, and feelings under them, *ib.*; his voluntary submission to poverty, 2 C. viii. 9; raised for our justification, R. iv. 25; "baptized into Christ"—"baptized into his death," what? vi. 3; his birth from the womb, and from the tomb, both effected by the operation of the same Spirit, viii. 11; called *Lord*, as that name is an interpretation of Jehovah, x. 9; expiatory virtue of his blood, i. 7; the corner stone, iii. 21; dignity *acquired* by his Humanity, C. i. 18 (see *Mediatorial Kingdom*); reconciles all things, 20; the God-head dwells in Him bodily, ii. 9; "the body of his flesh,"—the effect of divesting himself of it for a time, 15; his equality with God, P. ii. 6; gave a proof at His Transfiguration of the future glorious transformation of the risen Body, iii. 21; necessity of his Humanity, Introduction to the Epistle to the Hebrews (cp.

E. v. 30); died for all men, Heb. ii. 9 (see *Redemption Universal*); called "an Apostle," iii. 1; how he "learnt obedience by sufferings," v. 8; our example, 1 P. ii. 21, 23, 24; on sanctifying the name of the Lord, iii. 15; Christ's death, the agency of his disembodied Spirit, and the glory of his risen body, to which the spirit was reunited, 18—22; his two journeys, *ib.*; his human spirit quickened by death, *ib.*; the blessedness of suffering for Him, iv. 12, 13; His Transfiguration an earnest of His future coming in glory, 2 P. i. 18; His Cross and sufferings the instruments and means of His glory, C. ii. 13—15; his Blood cleanses from all sin, 1 J. i. 7; heresies that sprang up, in the Apostolic age, among the Jewish Christians respecting His Person and Nature, Introduction to the First Epistle of St. John; receives honour at his Transfiguration, 2 P. i. 16; his Divinity declared, R. ix. 5; E. v. 5; T. ii. 13; C. i. 15. 19; ii. 2; P. ii. 6; Heb. i. 8, 9—14; x. 4; 1 Ti. iii. 16; 1 P. iii. 15; 2 P. i. 1; 1 J. v. 20; Rev. i. 1. 8; Christ a Warrior and a Conqueror, Rev. vi. 6; his royal supremacy, Rev. xix. 11—16; evidence of His Godhead afforded by the same text which speaks of His sufferings, Rev. i. 7; the eternity of His Kingdom, xi. 18; typified by the eagle, xii. 13, 14; the Lamb, xiii. 11—18; coming to judge the world, xiv. 14—16; riding on the white horse, xix. 11—16; victorious over the Beast and the false Prophet, 19—21. See also the words *Incarnation*, *Atonement*, *Cross*, *Redemption*, *Justification*, *Scripture*, *Sacraments*, *Church*.

Christ, how He is conceived in the heart, and born in the life, Jam. i. 22.

Christian antiquity, reverence due to the Scripture expositions of, Vol. i. xiv. xv.

Christian Dominion over the creatures, 1 C. iii. 22, 23.

Christian era; see *Anno Domini*.

Christianity,—that preached by Christ and his Apostles,—all addition to, false and antichristian, Mk. xii. 6; not to be propagated by violence, L. ix. 55; corruptions of it in the present day, A. xvi. 19; confounded with Judaism, 20; its early struggles with the Roman power, 22.

Christianizing every occasion of life, duty of, J. iv. 38.

Christians are not called on to be Stoics, J. xiii. 21.

"Christians," where, when, and why first so named, A. xi. 26; xxvi. 28.

Chronicles, the Book of, the conclusion of the historical canon of the Old Testament, M. xxiii. 35.

Chronology of our Lord's ministry, see *Ministry*; of St. Paul's Epistles, see Preface to.

Church, import of the term, M. xvi. 18; xviii. 17; 1 C. xi. 20, 21; the Church Universal, E. i. 23.

Church, the Visible, but one, from the beginning, R. iv. 12; compared to a threshing-floor, M. iii. 12; its mixed and imperfect condition in this world, xiii. 30; xxii. 2. 10. 12. 14; 1 C. i. 2; Rev. ii. 4; evil men in it, J. xii. 14; historical records of it in the Old Testament, not only true histories, but prophetic parables in action, M. xiii. 35; Church Militant represented in a succession of parables, the Sower, Tares, Mustard Seed, Leaven, Hidden Treasure, Pearl and Draw-net, M. xiii.; typified by a vineyard, xx. 1; Marriage Feast, xxii. 2—10; by the Woman, L. xv. 8, 9; by Eve, 2 C. xi. 2; cp. Pt. iii. p. 276; E. v. 30; and see *Woman*; by Woman in the Wilderness, Rev. xii. 9—17; symbolized by Candlesticks, Rev. i. 11, 12; xi. 4. 14; by the moon, see *Moon*; compared to an inn, L. x. 31; a widow, xviii. 7. See also *Presence*. Church glorified, typified by the Net, J. xxi. 11; the Bride of Christ, J. iii. 29; Rev. xxi. 2—9; see *Marriage*; on the permanence of the Church of Christ, M. xxiv. 34; its manuductory office, J. iv. 42; universality and unity of it, xix. 23, 24; E. iv. 4. 6; the net of the Church, J. xxi. 11; typified by the sheet let down from heaven, A. x. 11. 15; the primitive Church, its form and character, A. ii. 42; its original institution, v. 11; its designation,—ἐκκλησία, *ib.*; names previously given to the assembled believers, *ib.*; derives strength from opposition, vi. 7; primitive organization of the Church for settling controversies, xv. 2. 7; the first Council of the Christian Church, 6; compared by the Christian Fathers to a Ship, xxvii. 40; never ceases to be visible, R. xi. 2; Church principles, the teaching of them is a *practical* thing, Introduction to the Epistle to the Ephesians, p. 277.

Church Catholic, the divinely-appointed guardian and interpreter of Scripture, R. xii. 6; 1 Ti. iii. 15.

Church Fund, the primitive form of, J. xiii. 29; cp. Jam. ii. 2. 5.

Church of England, her reverence for the Scriptures, and her care for the primitive interpretation of them, Vol. i. xi., and note 4; principles which regulate her proceedings in her Convocations, A. xv. 23; her Scriptural tenets and discipline, 2 C. vi. 17, 18; separation from her communion indefensible, *ib.*; her reverence for the Bible, and the *whole* of it, R. xii. 6; whence her Clergy derive their commission, Rev. xvii. 1; not

- guilty of schism at her Reformation, retrospect of Rev. xviii.; see Rev. ii. 21.
- Church History, traced prophetically in the Apocalypse, Rev. vi. 1—17; and see *Introduction* to Revelation.
- "Church in thy house," Philemon 2.
- Church Polity, pattern and true principles of, *Introduction* to Acts; A. vi. 2—6.
- Church Rates, practical bearing of, M. xvii. 27; upon the guilt involved in refusing to pay them, A. v. 2.
- Church Rites and Ceremonies, ought to be complied with, R. xiv. 1. 13; reverence due to the building, M. xxi. 12; 1 C. xi. 10. 22.
- Church Unity, the principles, duty, and privileges of, *Introduction* to the First Epistle to the Corinthians; 1 C. i. 2.
- Church upon Earth, a *Visible* Society, distinguished by certain sensible tokens, M. xxvii. 53; E. iv. 4.
- "Churches, all the," if there were one Visible Head of them among the Apostles, it was not St. Peter, but St. Paul, 2 C. xi. 28.
- Churches, particular, the true doctrine respecting them, M. xxvii. 53; any one of them may fail, and be rejected, though the Visible Church Universal can never fail, *ib.*; Rev. i. 11, 12; ii. 5.
- Churcing of Women; see *Purification*.
- Cilicia, barbarous dialect of, A. xxiv. 1; origin of *solæcisms*, *ib.*
- Circumcision, why it was appointed to take place on the eighth day, L. ii. 21; xxiv. 1; J. vii. 22; a type of Christian baptism, L. xxiv. 1; J. vii. 22; administered on the Sabbath as well as on the other days of the week, J. vii. 22; "Circumcision" and "Uncircumcision," on the use of the words to designate "Jews" and "Gentiles," R. iii. 28.
- Citations from the Old Testament in the New, M. xxvii. 9.
- Cities, great, selected by St. Paul for the scene of his labours, *Preface* to Part iii., and 1 Th. i. 8.
- Civil Government, its end and purpose, 1 Ti. iii. 2; ordained of God, and to be obeyed and honoured for his sake, 1 P. ii. 13; and see *Kings*.
- Civil and Ecclesiastical powers, whence hope is to be derived at a time of dissension between them, L. iii. 2.
- Clauda, the island of, A. xxvii. 16; suggested emendation of the reading, *ib.*; now Gozzo, *ib.*
- Claudius, the emperor, his edict for the expulsion of the Jews from Rome, *Introductory* note to St. John's Gospel; did not persecute the Christians, *ib.*
- Claudius Lysias, his artful letter to Felix the Roman procurator, A. xxiii. 25—27; analysis of it, 27.
- Clay, anointing with, lesson which this act is designed to teach, J. ix. 6.
- Clean and unclean, truth taught by the distinction between, M. xv. 11; Levitical distinction between them, A. x. 14.
- Clementine Homilies, cite 2 P. i. 17.
- Cleopas, the name, and person who bore it, L. xxiv. 18; not to be confounded with Clopas, J. xix. 25.
- Clergy; see *Ministers Christian, Pastors, Presbyters*.
- Clerus, the term as applied to the Clergy, A. i. 26.
- Clopas, derivation and import of the name, J. xix. 25; the same with Alphæus, *ib.*; see *Alphæus*.
- Clothes; see *Garments*.
- Clouds, attendant on our Lord's manifestation in glory, M. xvii. 5.
- Cock, and Cock-crowing, M. xxvii. 34; L. xxii. 60.
- Coincidences, evidences of truth in Scripture, Mk. vi. 7; and see *Evangelists*.
- Colossæ, in Phrygia, not a very important place in the time of the Apostles, *Introduction* to the Epistle to the Colossians; description of the city by Herodotus, C. i. 2; the residence of Philemon, *ib.*; had probably been visited by St. Paul, *Introduction* to the Epistle; Pn. 19.
- Colossians, Epistle to the, date of it, *Introduction* to the Epistle to the Ephesians; written probably at Rome, *ib.*; and about the same time, and sent by the same messenger, *Introduction* to the Epistle to the Colossians; builds up the Church in the former Epistle, warning against error in the latter, *ib.*; similarity of thought and language in the two Epistles, *ib.*; various forms of religious error here disclosed and refuted, *ib.*; invocation of *angels* as mediators, *ib.*; perversion of the mystery of the Incarnation, *ib.*; assertion of the Godhead of Christ by the Apostle, *ib.*; and of the Atonement, *ib.*; safeguard provided here against the devices of the Papal system, *ib.*; assertion of the dignity and destiny of the Human Body, *ib.*; reply to the question, Had St. Paul ever been at Colossæ before he wrote this Epistle? *ib.*; special uses of the Ephesian Epistle to the Colossian Church, E. iii. 10; C. iv. 16.
- "Come, he that should," explained, M. xi. 3; and see xxiii. 39.
- Comforter, the Holy Spirit is so called, J. xiv. 16; xv. 26; proceeds from the Father and the Son, J. xv. 26; xvi. 13.
- "Comings," a succession of, previous to the great and final coming of Christ, M. x. 23; first coming of Christ, looked forward to by the Patriarchs, J. viii. 40; x. 4; second coming of Christ foretold, M. xvi. 28; xxiv. 29, 30; xxv. 6; L. xviii. 8; cp. J. v. 28; errors about it corrected, M. xxiv. 1—3. 26; temper in which it should be contemplated, 48; time of, why concealed, see *Advent*.
- "Commandment, this is the great," explained, M. xxii. 38.
- Commandments and ordinances, distinction between them, L. i. 6; are all of perpetual obligation? J. xiii. 14.
- Common Prayer Book, danger that would ensue from altering it, *Introduction* to Acts, 14.
- Common, profane, unclean, A. x. 14, 15.
- Communion of Saints, observations on the, 1 Th. iv. 16.
- Communion, Holy; see *Supper*.
- Community of goods in the primitive Church, A. iv. 32; limitation of it, A. ii. 44.
- Conception; see *Immaculate*.
- "Concision, the," import of the expression, P. iii. 3.
- Confession of sin, its true nature, L. vii. 47.
- Confession, private, to a Priest, never enforced in the earliest ages of the Church, Jam. v. 16; — to a Priest or to a Lay Elder, unscripturally exacted by Papists and Puritans, 1 C. xi. 28.
- Confirmation, use and necessity of the rite, *Introduction* to Acts, 17, 18; A. viii. 14—18; nature of it, *ib.*; could not have been instituted before the effusion of the Holy Spirit, *ib.*; tends to maintain Church Unity, *ib.*; and requires an extension of the Episcopate, *ib.*; Heb. vi. 2.
- Conscience, rules for its government, R. xiv. 14; 1 J. iii. 20; an enlightened, can alone be a safe guide, A. xxiii. 1; its office and dignity, 1 C. ii. 11; R. ii. 14—16; vii. 17; every man is bound to obey it, but he must also take heed that it be rightly informed and regulated by God's Law, R. xiii. 5; xiv. 5. 14. 23; 1 P. iii. 16; 1 J. iii. 19, 20; guilt of assuming a dominion over it, Jam. iv. 2; no precise term for it in the Hebrew language, 1 J. iii. 19; a doubting, R. xiv. 23; Jam. iv. 17.
- Constantine, his labarum, Rev. i. 6; xiii. 17.
- Contingencies, as well as actual events, foreseen by our Lord, M. xi. 21. 23; xx. 7.
- Contradictions (so called) in Scripture, often evidences of truth, M. viii. 28; ix. 14; see *Discrepancies*.
- Controversies in the Church, the right mode of determining them, Vol. ii. 29; duty of shunning them, 1 Ti. vi. 20.
- Convalescence unknown after our Lord's miracles, M. viii. 15; Mk. iv. 39; J. v. 3.
- Corban, derivation and import of the term, M. v. 23; xv. 5; xxvii. 6; Mk. vii. 11; xii. 41.
- Corinth, account of, A. xviii. 1; its present condition, *ib.*; Paul's arrival there, *ib.*; Aquila and Priscilla arrive there, exiled from Rome, *ib.*
- Corinthians, First Epistle to the, the design, contents, and results of the two Epistles, *Introduction* to First Epistle; "Is Christ divided?" explained, 1 C. i. 13; St. Paul frequently cites the Old Testament in both his Epistles to the Corinthians, and chiefly follows the LXX, with the introductory formula, γέγραπται, 1 C. i. 19. 31; ii. 9; iii. 19; ix. 9; x. 7; xv. 45; 2 C. viii. 15; explanation of Isa. xxxiii. 18, 1 C. i. 20; the "foolishness of preaching," 21; "comparing spiritual things with spiritual," ii. 13; "as by fire," explained, iii. 12—15; the Apostle rebukes the Corinthians for their abuse of Christian Liberty, 22, 23; iv. 8 explained; proofs of the execration in which the heathen held the incestuous connexion spoken of in v. 1; "delivery to Satan" the punishment for extreme contumacy, 5; reasons for reprehending the practice of Christians going to law before heathen tribunals, vi. 1; "the saints shall judge the world," 2; "we shall judge the angels," 3; St. Paul's doctrine concerning Single Life and Marriage, vii. 1; vii. 34 explained; exposition of viii. 13; the Baptism in the Red Sea, x. 2; abuses in the eating of the Lord's Supper reproved, xi. 19.
- Corinthians, Second Epistle to the, design, date, time, and place of, *Introduction*; Timothy associated with St. Paul in writing the Epistle, 2 C. i. 1; the Apostle did not visit them in the interval between the writing of his two Epistles, ii. 1; οὐ γράμματός . . . τοῦ καταργουμένου, caution against the perversion of these verses into a depreciation of the Old Testament, 6—13; actual perversion of them by the Marcionites, Manichæans, Antinomians, and Anabaptists, *ib.*; "The brother, of whom the praise is in the Gospel," conjecture respecting the person here alluded to, viii. 18.
- Cornelius, his conversion a prophetic intimation of the submission of the Great Fourth Monarchy to the yoke of the Gospel, A. x. 1; a Gentile, not a proselyte, 2.
- Council of Jerusalem, the model of all succeeding ones, A. xv. 2. 6.

Councils, general, how they ought to be constituted and regulated, and what force their decrees have when duly framed, A. xv. 7.

Courses of the priests, arranged by David, particulars respecting them, L. i. 5; only four returned from the Babylonish exile, *ib.*

Courtesy, a perfect code of, in the New Testament, A. xx. 5; cp. L. x. 4.

Courts of law among the Jews, M. v. 22.

Covenant, precise import of the Hebrew word (ברית) so rendered, M. xxvi. 28; why our Lord calls his blood the blood of the New Covenant, *ib.*; why the Old Covenant is called a "Testament," Heb. ix. 16, 17.

Covenant of Works and of Grace, set forth in the parable of the Denarius, M. xx. 1—16.

Covetousness, warning against, L. xii. 13. 29. 33; xv. 9. 14; a characteristic of the false teachers of the Apostolic age, 2 P. ii. 3.

Creator, Christ is, as well as Redeemer and Intercessor, J. ii. 11.

Creature worship, warning against it, Rev. xix. 10.

Creatures, dominion over them, and use of, restored to man by Christ's Incarnation, and their consecration thereby, 1 C. iii. 22, 23; vi. 12; R. viii. 20; 1 Ti. iv. 5; Jam. i. 18.

"Cried aloud," thrice said of our Lord, J. vii. 28; cp. xii. 44.

Criticism and interpretation of the New Testament, characteristics of during the present century, Vol. i. p. v.

Cross, criminals compelled to bear their own to the place of execution, M. xxvii. 32; J. xix. 17; the inscription on our Saviour's cross, 37; the order in which the languages are specified by the Evangelists, L. xxiii. 38; and see *Inscription*; Christ's cross, his tribunal, J. xix. 17.

Cross, the throne and triumphal chariot of Christ, C. ii. 13—15; Rev. v. 5; acknowledged by the angels, M. xxviii. 5; Mk. xvi. 6.

Cross, the, a stumbling-block to the Jews, 1 C. i. 23, 24; viewed by the *Ancient Church* as expressing the *Universality* of God's love in Christ, E. iii. 18.

Cross, the duty and spiritual advantage of bearing it daily, L. ix. 23; and see M. xvi. 24; rebuke for being ashamed of, Mk. viii. 33.

Crucifixion, and the slaying of the paschal lamb, parallel between them, M. xxvi. 66; description of the mode of putting to death by, xxvii. 22; the precise site of Golgotha providentially concealed, L. i. 39; crucifixion supposed to have been typified by Mk. iv. 38; foretold, J. viii. 28; the reasons why our Lord chose death by it, J. xii. 33; xix. 17; its adaptation to the purpose of giving evidence to the fact of our Lord's resurrection, and to the identity of his risen body, xx. 27.

Cup, the, in the Holy Communion, not necessarily absent when the "bread" alone is mentioned, L. xxiv. 30; the paschal and sacramental cup, M. xxvi. 28.

Cup, the, of suffering, M. xx. 22.

Cutting asunder, the nature of the punishment, M. xxiv. 51.

Cyrenius; see *Taxing*.

"Daily bread," opinion of the Fathers respecting this expression, M. vi. 11.

Dalmanutha, situation of, Mk. viii. 10.

Damascus, position and description of, A. ix. 2; garrisoned by Aretas at the time of Saul's visit, *ib.*; its distance from Jerusalem, 3.

Dan, why its tribe is omitted from the list in the Apocalypse, Rev. vii. 1.

Daniel, his prophecy of the Messiah, M. ii. 1, note 4; and of the siege and destruction of Jerusalem, xxiv. 15; circumstances referred to in his prophecy, *ib.*; import of the title "the prophet," given to him by our Lord, *ib.*; the genuineness of the Book of Daniel proved, *ib.*, note 3; quoted by our Lord, M. xxv. 46; Mk. xiii. 14; his prophecies prepared the way for the Apocalypse, Rev. xvii. 9.

Darkness, the supernatural, at the Crucifixion, M. xxvii. 45.

Dative, signifying "in the eye of," Jam. ii. 5; Dative of agent, Jam. iii. 18; peculiar use of, M. xxi. 2; A. ii. 33.

David, emphatically called *ὁ βασιλεὺς*, M. i. 6; the letters of his name form the number 14, M. i. 17; his slaying of the Philistine typical, iv. 4; and see xxvii. 5; and J. xviii. 1; weeps on the same Mountain on which Christ afterward wept for the approaching overthrow of Jerusalem, L. xix. 41.

Day of Judgment; see *Judgment*.

Day of Pentecost, prophecy then fulfilled, R. x. 18.

Day of the Nativity, uncertainty respecting it, L. ii. 8; and see *Birth*.

Day, the eighth, significance of, L. ix. 28; xxiv. 1.

Day, division of the Roman, M. xx. 3; the Jewish reckoning commenced from the evening, xxvi. 17; and see *Time*.

Day and night, St. John's usage in speaking of, different from the Hebrew use of St. Paul, J. iv. 6.

Dayspring from on high, import of this phrase, L. i. 78; see *Light*.

Deaconesses in the primitive Church, A. xviii. 18; their office, *ib.*; 1 C. i. 11; R. xvi. 1; and qualifications, 1 Ti. iii. 11; v. 12.

Deacons, their peculiar duties, M. xxi. 12; institution of their order, Introduction to Acts, 11. 21; A. vi. 3—6; necessity of it, *ib.*; have a *lay* element blended with the ecclesiastical, in their office, 1 Ti. iii. 11.

Dead Sea, or Sea of Salt, an emblem of Gehenna, Mk. ix. 49; L. xvii. 29; 2 P. ii. 6; Jud. 7.

Dead, unbelievers are said to be, J. v. 25; the dead raised by Christ under various circumstances, inner meaning of this, M. ix. 25.

Dead and the Quick, both represented at the Transfiguration, M. xvii. 3.

Death is *birth* to the faithful, A. ii. 24; Rev. xx. 4; does not always give the best evidence of men's spiritual state—the best preparation for a happy death is a holy life, A. xi. 2.

Death of our Lord, voluntary, M. xxvii. 50; cp. J. v. 13; vi. 51; vii. 30; x. 17; xix. 30; and see *Atonement*; the culminating point of the Law and the Prophets, L. ix. 31; against the will of his enemies, xiii. 32; its universal efficacy, xvi. 23; typified by brazen serpent, J. iii. 14.

Death, destroyed only by Christ's giving himself a ransom for all, J. vi. 52; called *sleep* in Scripture, xi. 11; M. xxv. 5; xxvii. 52; Christians, like Christ, may be troubled with a prospect of it, J. xiii. 21; M. xxvi. 38; but cp. J. xxi. 18; its universal prevalence a proof of the universality of sin, R. v. 13, 14; "see death," and "taste of death," M. xvi. 28; J. viii. 51.

Dedication, the feast of, its origin and design, J. x. 22.

"Deep, the," meaning of the original term so rendered, L. viii. 31.

Definite Article, a peculiar use of it, M. xiii. 3; xviii. 17; its force, Mk. i. 24; ii. 26; xi. 30; L. iv. 34; xv. 23; J. i. 21; iii. 10; use with vocative, Mk. xii. 40.

Degrees, different, of happiness in heaven, M. v. 19; x. 15; L. xix. 17; J. xiv. 2; 1 C. iii. 12—15; 2 C. ix. 6, 7; of punishment, M. xxiii. 15; L. xii. 47; and see *Future*.

Deluge, the, a warning of the General Judgment, L. x. 1, note 1; 2 P. iii. 5.

Demas and Mark, striking contrast between them, Pn. 23, 24; cp. C. iv. 14; 2 Ti. iv. 11; 1 P. v. 13; defection of Demas from the truth, 2 Ti. iv. 6.

Demetrius, 3 J. 12.

Demetrius, his bitter hostility to the Gospel, A. xix. 24.

Demoniacs, M. iv. 24; not mentioned by St. John, *ib.*; reason of this, *ib.*; nature of demoniacal possession, Mk. v. 7; ix. 20; Introduction to the Gospel of St. Luke, p. 159.

Deserts, why chosen by our Lord for some of His miracles, M. xiv. 15; and see *Mountains*.

"Desolation, the, abomination of," explained, M. xxiv. 15.

Despair, lesson against, M. xxvii. 46.

Development, nature of the doctrine of, J. xvi. 12; its groundlessness and impiety, *ib.*; 2 C. v. 16; strong passage against it, A. xx. 27; and see *Faith*.

Devil, the father of falsehood, J. viii. 44; the overthrow of his Kingdom, xii. 30, 31; the prince, not of creation, but of sinners, xiv. 30; and see *Satan*.

Devils, on their testimony to the truth, Mk. i. 25; declined by our Lord, *ib.*; 34; they make three requests to him, L. viii. 31; their two successive places of punishment, *ib.*; M. viii. 29; present state, Introduction to the Gospel of St. Luke, p. 159; their ejection, and fearful return, L. xi. 24.

Diabolical agency, different degrees of, M. xvii. 21.

Diaconate, institution of the, Introduction to the Acts, and A. vi. 3—6; why instituted, R. xii. 6.

Didrachma, its value, M. xvii. 24; the tribute money, *ib.*, note 1.

Difficulties in Scripture, moral purposes which they are designed to serve, M. xxvii. 9; Mk. ii. 26.

Diocesan Episcopacy, one of the first examples of it probably exhibited at Philippi, P. i. 3; designed for all countries in all ages, Introduction to the Epistles to Timothy and Titus; Rev. ii. 1.

Diocesan and Parochial System of the Christian Church, spiritual and prophetic representation of it, Mk. vi. 40.

Dioceses, Divine direction as to their size, Rev. ii. 1.

Dionysius Exiguus, the Dionysian era erroneously fixed by him, M. ii. 20.

Dionysius, the Areopagite, his conversion, how effected, L. xxi.

- 13; A. xvii. 34; first Bishop of Athens, *ib.*; Church dedicated to him on the Areopagus, *ib.*
- Diotrephes, his character and conduct, 3 J. 9, 10.
- "Disciple" [make disciples of], import of the Greek word, M. xxviii. 16.
- Discipline, on the mode and measure of exercising, M. xviii. 17, note 2.
- Discrepancies, no real ones in Scripture, M. xx. 29; xxvi. 71; xxvii. 9; xxviii. 2; Mk. x. 46; xvi. 19; L. iv. 5; xvii. 11; xxii. 54; Introduction to the Gospel of St. John, p. 268; J. vi. 21; xii. 7; xviii. 13. 25; and see *Contradictions and Difficulties*.
- Disease, sin the cause of, M. ix. 4.
- Disembodied spirit, state of, after death, Introduction to the Gospel of St. Luke, p. 159; L. xii. 4; xvi. 23; 2 C. xii. 2; P. i. 23; quickened by death, 1 P. iii. 18—22; Rev. vi. 9—11; and see *Paradise, Hades, and Soul*.
- Disobedience, the origin of spiritual blindness, 2 C. iv. 3; shows itself in two ways, *ib.*
- Dispersions, the Jewish, J. vii. 35; meanings of the order in which they are placed, A. ii. 9—11; reference to Isa. xi. 11, *ib.*; see also Introduction to the First Epistle of St. Peter.
- Distrust in Providence, warning against, L. xii. 29.
- "Divide et impera," on the maxim of, A. xxiii. 6.
- Divinity of our Lord, asserted, M. xxiii. 10; xxviii. 6; Mk. x. 18; L. ii. 9; iv. 8; xiii. 32; xviii. 10. 19; J. i. 1; ii. 4; iii. 12; cp. iv. 46; v. 19; viii. 17. 25. 58, 59; ix. 35; xiv. 9; xx. 28; xxi. 9; and see *Arians*; always manifested when He is about to suffer as man, M. xxi. 19; often brought out by His relation to Mary, L. ii. 49; distinction between His two natures, M. xxviii. 18; and see *Human Nature*.
- Divorce, the Mosaic and Christian view of, M. v. 31; Mk. x. 11, 12; Romish notion of, M. v. 32; our Lord's commandment respecting, M. xix. 4—6; Mk. x. 11, 12; the Pharisees' notion of, L. xvi. 18; disastrous results of making it easy by law, A. xxvi. 30; the Scriptural doctrine of, M. v. 31; xix. 4; 1 C. vii. 11, 12. 15. 39; on recent enactments for facilitating, E. v. 32. See *Marriage*.
- "Do all things to the Glory of God," dangerous perversion of this text, 1 C. x. 31.
- Docetæ, 2 P. ii., *preliminary note*; Introduction to the Gospel of St. John; and 1 J. i. 1. 7.
- Doctrines of the Gospel, method in which they are taught in the New Testament, Vol. i. 257.
- Dogmata*, import of the term, C. ii. 14.
- Dogs, symbolical signification of, M. vii. 6.
- Door, Christ is the only, J. x. 1. 7.
- Dove, the, a symbol of the Holy Spirit, M. iii. 15; xxi. 12; J. i. 32.
- Doves, sale of, in the Temple, M. xxi. 12.
- Doxology, at the close of the Lord's Prayer, its genuineness discussed, M. vi. 13, and note 5.
- Draw-net, parable of the, M. xiii. 3.
- Dreams, only three instances of communication by, mentioned in the New Testament, M. i. 20.
- Drink-offering, never offered alone, P. ii. 17; of what composed, *ib.*
- Drusilla, account of her, A. xxiv. 25; mutual jealousy between her and her sister Bernice, xxvi. 30.
- Dual number, never found in the New Testament, M. iv. 13.
- Duty, a high standard of, an incentive to humility, L. xvii. 10.
- "Dwelt among us," explained, J. i. 14.
- Eagle, a symbol of Christ, L. x. 19; Introduction to the Gospel of St. John, p. 265; Rev. viii. 13; xii. 14; and see *Living Creatures*.
- Eagles, Christians compared to, M. xxiv. 28; L. xvii. 37; "there will the eagles be gathered together," *ib.*; and see J. vi. 54.
- Earth, and the inhabitants of the, contrasted with the Kingdom of Heaven, M. xxiv. 33; L. xxi. 35; Rev. i. 7; viii. 13; xi. 10; xiii. 8.
- Earth, the, created out of the water, 2 P. iii. 5.
- Earth, the, symbolical meaning of the word, M. v. 5; xxiv. 31; L. xviii. 8; xxi. 25; its future destruction by fire, premonitory symptoms of, 2 P. iii. 5.
- Earthen vessels, meaning of expression, Mk. xiv. 13; cp. L. xi. 41.
- East; see *Sun and Light*.
- Eastern customs, L. x. 4.
- Eating, signifies incorporation, A. x. 3.
- Ebed Melech, and the Eunuch of Ethiopia, compared, A. viii. 27.
- Ebionites, 2 P. ii. Int. Note; 2 P. ii. 10; and Introduction to the First Epistle of St. John; St. Paul was a special object of hatred to them, 2 P. i. 17.
- Ecclesiastical and Civil powers, whence hope is to be derived at a time of dissension between them, L. iii. 2.
- Egypt, on our Lord's flight into, and call out of, M. ii. 13; the Exodus of the Israelites typical of Christ, M. xxvi. 2; L. ix. 31; J. vii.; the Greek language had become common there at the beginning of the Christian era, A. xxi. 33.
- "Egyptian, art not thou that?" A. xxi. 38; account of the false prophet, *ib.*
- Eight, the symbol of glory, L. xxiv. 1; Rev. i. 8; the number of Resurrection, M. xxvii. 52; Rev. xvii. 10, 11.
- Eighth day, significance of, L. i. 59; ii. 21; ix. 28; xxiv. 1; eight, the Dominical number, as contradistinguished from seven,—the Sabbatical number, in Holy Scripture, *ib.*; and M. v. 2; xxiii. 13; *eight*, expressive of Resurrection to a new life in Christ, xxiv. 1; circumcision on the eighth day, *ib.*; "eight days" = a week, J. xii. 1.
- Ejaculatory Prayer, exhortation to, J. iv. 38.
- Elam, situation and extent of the province, A. ii. 9.
- Elders, their appointment, Vol. ii. xxviii.; the first mention of, A. xi. 30.
- Elect, the, God avenges their cause, L. xviii. 7, 8; the term not applied by St. Paul to those only who will certainly be saved, R. viii. 30; xiv. 13; all the members of the Visible Church are elect in the eyes of *man*, 1 Th. i. 4; 1 P. i. 1; all those of the Invisible Church are elect in the eyes of God, and they only, *ib.*
- Election of grace, M. xx. 16; J. xv. 16; can only be inferred from *vocation*, 2 P. i. 10; men may fall from it, L. x. 20; J. vi. 70; election of individuals known to God only, E. i. 4, 5.
- Elias, notions of the Jews respecting his coming, M. xi. 14; xvii. 10; Mk. ix. 12; appearance of, with Moses, at the Transfiguration, why, M. xvii. 10; "Elias must first come," explained, Mk. ix. 12; and see *John Baptist*.
- Elijah and Elisha, types of Christ, L. iv. 26, 27.
- Elizabeth, derivation and import of the name, L. i. 5. 72, 73.
- Elymas the sorcerer, account of him, A. xiii. 8; smitten with blindness, 11.
- Emerald, its colour, value, and use, Rev. iv. 3; ill use made of it by Nero and Domitian, *ib.*
- Emmanuel, import of the term, M. i. 23; Jesus and Emmanuel, names of the same Person, L. i. 31.
- Emmaus, its situation, and distance from Jerusalem, L. xxiv. 13.
- Emphasis, transposition of words for the sake of, M. xv. 28; xvi. 13. 18; where a list is given of places where the personal pronoun is put *before* the substantive, and see xxv. 38; Mk. i. 37; also M. xxviii. 5, and *Language*.
- Empire of Germany, Rev. xvii. 10, 11.
- Empires, the Four Great, Rev. xvii. 10, 11.
- English Empire, Language, Bible, and Liturgy, Pt. ii. 13.
- English Expositors, their sound and Scriptural principles, Vol. i. 16, 17; ii. 20.
- Enoch, the seventh from Adam, Jud. 14.
- Enoch, the Book, account of it, Jud. 14.
- Envy, L. ix. 50.
- Epaphras, brief notice of him, Introduction to the Epistle to the Colossians, C. i. 7; iv. 12, 13; Pn. 23.
- Epaphroditus, probably the bearer of the Epistle to the Philippians, P. ii. 25; and probably constituted by St. Paul pastor of the church there at the time when he was writing that Epistle, P. i. 1; his dangerous sickness, *ib.*; why not cured by St. Paul, *ib.*; force of *παρὰβολευσάμενος*, *ib.*
- Ephesians, Epistle to the, date of it, Introduction to the Epistle; written probably at Rome, *ib.*; the persons addressed in it, *ib.*; said by Origen and Basil not to have been addressed to the *Ephesians*, *ib.*; Marcion, says Tertullian, wished to alter its address to "to the Laodiceans," *ib.*; *ἐν Ἐφέσῳ*, ver. 1, inserted in the Vat. MS. by a later hand, and erased from a cursive (67), *ib.*; cited, as addressed to the Ephesians, by Ignatius and Irenæus, *ib.*; contains no personal notices, nor salutations, *ib.*; design and contents of the Epistle, *ib.*; importance of the city of Ephesus in various points of view, *ib.*; majestic diction of the Apostle in this Letter, *ib.*; plan of it, *ib.*; the Apostle appoints Timothy to be bishop of Ephesus; an office afterwards held by St. John, *ib.*; sense in which the ancient Church understood the words *election* and *predestination* used by St. Paul, i. 4, 5; "the dispensation of the fulness of the seasons," 10; in what "the summing up of all things" consists, and how it was effected, *ib.*; "for the redemption of the purchase," 14; "brought nigh by the blood of Christ," ii. 13; exposition of 15; why the Apostle, who rarely cites the Old Testament in his Epistles to other Gentile Churches, frequently cites it in *this* Epistle, 17; "built on the foundation

of the apostles and prophets," ii. 20; on the citation from Ps. lxxiii., iv. 8; "the mystery is great," v. 32.

Ephesus, ancient history and geography of, E. i. 1; special miracles wrought there by Paul, reason for, A. xix. 12; famous for the arts of magic and astrology, 12. 19; the worship of Diana, and her silver shrines, 24; that goddess (Artemis) unlike the Diana of Greece and Rome, *ib.*; the magnitude and magnificence of her temple, *ib.*; the theatre, 31; many presbyters in the Church there, xx. 17; why placed first in order of the seven Apocalyptic Churches, Rev. i. 11; the capital of the "Asia" of the New Testament, Introduction to the First Epistle to the Corinthians; cp. Introduction to the Gospel of St. John, p. 258.

Ephraim, the tribe of, omitted in the Apocalyptic list, Rev. vii. 1; that tribe guilty of the sin of Schism, *ib.*

Epicureans, their tenets, A. xvii. 18; Paul's encounter with them at Athens, *ib.*; their system opposed to that of Scripture, iv. 26.

Episcopacy; see *Bishops*.

Erastus, brief notice of him, R. xvi. 23; 2 Ti. iv. 20; probably of Corinth, R. xvi. 23; his fitness to be employed by St. Paul in the collection of alms, A. xix. 22.

Errors, supposed, in Scripture, explained, L. iii. 2; and see *Contradictions and Discrepancies*.

Esau, rejected, why? R. ix. 13; his profaneness, Heb. xii. 16.

Essenes, uncertainty respecting their having worshipped angels, C. ii. 8.

Eternal life, never represented in Scripture as wages due for work, M. xx. 15; xxv. 41.

Eternity of Rewards and Punishments, M. xxv. 41—46; and see *Future State*; of Future Punishment, Jud. 7.

Etesian wind, its prevalence in the summer months in the eastern part of the Archipelago, A. xxvii. 7.

Ethnarch, his peculiar office, 2 C. xi. 32.

Eucharist, Holy; see *Supper of the Lord*.

Eunuch of Ethiopia, converted by Philip, A. viii. 27; his station and character, *ib.*; compared with Ebed Melech, *ib.*

Eunuchs, M. xix. 12; prophecy of Isaiah (lvi. 3—8) respecting them fulfilled, A. viii. 27.

Euodius, Bishop of Antioch, is said to have given to the disciples the designation of "Christians," A. xi. 26.

Euphrates, the mystical, Rev. xvi. 12; and see *Babylon*.

Euroclydon, conjectures respecting the true reading, and meaning of this word, A. xxvii. 14.

Eusebian Canons of the Four Gospels, Vol. i. xxv.—xxxiii.

Eutychian heresy, its nature and the necessity of avoiding it, L. i. 35; refutation of it, L. ii. 52; J. vi. 52.

Evangelic Symbols; see *Living Creatures*.

Evangelists, indirect argument for their inspiration, M. i. 1; viii. 25; Mk. viii. 29, note 1; xiii. 11; xvi. 9; L. xi. 14; J. xii. 16; xiv. 26; and see *Inspiration and Errors*; apparent discrepancies removed by comparing their narratives, M. ix. 14; incidental proofs of their veracity and honesty, M. xv. 33; xvii. 16; xx. 19. 24; Mk. iii. 21; L. iv. 30; J. xii. 16. 29; see *Coincidences*; why there are varieties in their language and accounts of the same event, M. xxvi. 28; L. xxiii. 38; see *St. Mark and St. Luke*; see also Introduction to the Gospel of St. Mark; i. 1. 7; iv. 15; v. 2. 22; viii. 10; x. 10. 17. 23. 29. 46; xii. 19; xv. 1. 26; xvi. 19; L. iii. 7; v. 1; vi. 17. 35; ix. 30; xi. 14; xx. 20. 22; xxi. 8; xxii. 47. 51; xxiii. 33; J. iv. 43; vi. 6; xii. 3; interpret and confirm one another, Mk. xiii. 20; xiv. 39. 51; L. ix. 7; and see Introduction to the Gospel of St. John, pp. 257, 258; J. vi. 1. 67; and Review at end of ch. vi.; J. xi. 1; xv. 1; xviii. 13. 31; xx. 1, 2; repeat one another, see *Repetition*; modifying principles which guided them in the composition of their respective Gospels, L. xxiii. 33; no argument can be drawn from the silence of any single Evangelist as to his knowledge of events, xxiv. 2. 50; and see *Silence*.

Evangelists, larger use of the term, 1 C. xii. 28.

Eve, origin and import of the name, J. xix. 24; a type of the Church, *ib.*; her sin and its consequences, M. xxviii. 9. See *Church*, and *Woman*, and *Adam*.

Evenings, the Hebrews' two, M. viii. 16; xxvi. 17; Mk. xiv. 12.

"Every creature," equivalent to "all men," Mk. xvi. 15.

Evidences of Religion, on the duty of examining them, and of being able to render a reason of the hope that is in us, 1 Th. v. 21; 1 C. x. 15; 1 P. iii. 15; of Christianity, J. v. 31.

"Evil, cometh of," explained, M. v. 37.

"Evil eye," explained, M. xx. 15; L. xi. 34.

Evil Spirits; see *Devils*.

Example of our Lord, may be followed by us in the manner of working, though not always in the nature of the work itself, Mk. v. 40; suited to every age, L. ii. 46; and see *Obedience and Humility*.

Examples of holy men, danger of following them in all cases, L. ix. 54; A. xxiii. 12; G. ii. 13.

Excommunication, the form and effect of, L. vi. 22; forms of, among the Jews, 1 J. v. 16; J. ix. 22; a causeless one, 34, 35; pronouncing sentence of, 1 C. v. 3; its aim and end, 5; one of the means of grace, *ib.*; 1 J. v. 16; 1 Ti. i. 20.

Exodus = Death of Christ, the culminating point to which all the Law and the Prophets tended as their end, L. ix. 31; reference to the Exodus from Egypt, *ib.*

Expediency, system of, miserable fruits of it, J. xix. 15.

Extreme unction, Mk. vi. 13; and see Jam. v. 14.

"Eye, a single," explained, M. vi. 22.

"Face, he set his," observations on the phrase, L. ix. 51.

Facts, the priority of, to names, in the history of the Church, A. xi. 26.

Fair havens, situation of the, A. xxvii. 8.

Faith, its nature and operation, M. i. 1; Mk. v. 30; L. vii. 50; viii. 45; xvii. 5; J. xiv. 11, 12; xvi. 7. 10; xx. 17; *oneness* of, E. ii. 20; iv. 4—6; on its salutary exercise and discipline, M. xxvii. 9; 1 P. i. 7; absolutely necessary to Christ's followers, M. xvii. 17; Mk. iv. 39; L. xxi. 28; inculcated by the withering of the fig-tree, M. xxi. 21; Mk. xi. 22; striking proof of its power, Mk. vi. 5; J. ix. 6; the gift of God, L. xvii. 5. 7; the foundation of prayer, *ib.*; not to be found on the earth at the coming of the Son of man, xviii. 8; faith established by prayer, *ib.*; degrees in it, J. ii. 11; iii. 2; iv. 42. 53; xi. 21; a fruit of Divine grace, xii. 34; its province distinct from that of Reason, vi. 25; xx. 17. 20; produces good works, M. xxv. 1; J. vi. 29; R. iii. 21; 1 Th. i. 3; Heb. xi. 33; 2 P. i. 5; 2 J. 10, 11; Jam. ii. 20; see *Works*; a good work in itself, J. xiv. 12; Justification by, Introduction to the Epistle to the Romans, pp. 201—206; see *Justification*.

Faith, "once delivered to the Saints," no further additions to it, Jud. 3; Mk. xii. 6; cp. J. x. 4; xvi. 12; "proportion of," R. xii. 6; deposit of, 2 Ti. ii. 2.

Faith = firm persuasion, "whatsoever is not of, is sin," R. xiv. 23; cp. Jam. iv. 17; faith, such as that of the Devils, see *πιστεύω*.

"Faithful is the saying," πιστὸς ὁ λόγος, 1 Ti. i. 15.

Fall of Man, effect of it upon the whole Creation, R. viii. 20.

False Christs and False Prophets, M. ii. 2; xxiv. 11.

False Doctrine, the moral guilt of, 1 Ti. v. 20.

False teachers, have generally flattered the weaker sex, 1 C. xi. 5; and see *Heresy*.

Famines, sometimes spoken of figuratively, M. xxiv. 8; several in the reign of Claudius, A. xi. 28; give occasion to the exercise of Christian charity and patience, *ib.*

Fasting, private, our Lord's precept respecting, M. vi. 16; "I fast twice in the week," L. xviii. 12.

Fasts, among the Jews, Mk. ii. 18; cp. L. ii. 42.

Father, the, in what sense said to be "the only God," J. xvii. 3; different sense in which He is said to be our Lord's Father and ours, J. xx. 17.

"Fatted calf, the," emblematical of Christ, L. xv. 23.

Fear and Love contrasted, 1 J. iv. 18.

Fear, servile, exemplified by Gadarenes, M. viii. 34.

Feasts, see *Festivals*; usages at, J. xiii. 26.

Feeding of the people in the wilderness, Rationalistic objection to, answered, M. xv. 33.

Feet, washing the, a servile act, J. xiii. 4; in Christ, symbolical, *ib.*; its figurative significance, 14; discontinuance of the custom, Jam. v. 13.

Felix, the Roman procurator, account of, A. xxiv. 3. 22; succeeded Cumanus, A.D. 52, or 53, 10; Paul is brought before him, 24.

Festivals, Jewish, L. ii. 41; their use as preparatory to the Gospel, Introduction to the Acts, 8; and see *Passover*, *Pentecost*, and *Tabernacles*; and Holy days, the lawfulness of appointing them, J. x. 22.

Festus, succeeds Felix, A. xxiv. 27; seeks to ingratiate himself with the Jews in the case of Paul, *ib.*

Fig-tree, the barren, on the miraculous withering of, M. xxi. 12. 18, 19; Mk. xi. 13; parable of, M. xxiv. 32; design of the miracle, *ib.*; L. xiii. 6—13; Nathanael under the fig-tree, J. i. 49.

Finishing off a subject, the practice common in Scripture, xx. 29; especially in St. Luke, L. x. 17; xix. 45; xxiv. 50.

Fire, baptism with, and the Holy Ghost, M. iii. 11.

"Fire, salted with," explained, Mk. ix. 49.

Fire, trial by, 1 P. iv. 12.

Fire, our Lord wrought miracles on all the elements, but *that*, L. ix. 54; the reservation of the world for, 2 P. iii. 7.

"First-born," import of the term in Scripture, M. i. 25; "from the dead," M. xxvii. 52.

First day of the week, its appointment as the Lord's day, M. xxviii. 1; L. xxiv. 1; J. xx. 1; prophetic intimations of its sanctification, Mk. i. 35; important events that occurred upon it, A. ii. 1; see *Lord's Day*.

Fishermen, why chosen by our Lord to be the first preachers of the Gospel, M. iv. 19.

Fishes, Christians early compared to, M. iv. 19.

Flight from persecution, whether under any circumstances allowable, M. x. 23.

Flood, the circumstances of those who perished in it, 1 P. iii. 18-22.

Foal, our Lord rode on one, not on an ass, M. xxi. 5; Mk. x. 46; xi. 1-4; J. xii. 20; signification of the action, M. xxi. 5; Mk. x. 46; xi. 1-4; J. xii. 20.

Foreknowledge of Christ, how minute, Mk. xi. 4.

Foreknowledge of God that an event will take place, does not control man's free-will, J. xvii. 12; A. iv. 28; Introduction to the Epistle to the Romans, pp. 195. 197; R. viii. 29, 30. See *Free-will and Anticipation*.

Forgiveness of sins, a power especially committed to our Lord in His human nature, and by Him to His ministers, M. ix. 6; see *Absolution and Repentance*; what is properly implied by the expression, E. i. 7; 1 Ti. ii. 6.

Forms of Prayer; see *Prayer*.

Fornication, the law of Christ respecting it, M. xix. 3-5; forbidden at the council of Jerusalem, A. xv. 20; and see *Marriage and Divorce*; used in a spiritual sense, M. xii. 39; J. viii. 41.

Fornication and adultery, prevalence of, among the Gentiles in the time of the Apostles, A. xv. 20; 1 Th. iv. 3.

Forty days, M. iv. 2; frequent recurrence of the period in Scripture, *ib.*; and especially in the history of Christ, *note* 9; and M. xxvii. 60; Mk. i. 13; xvi. 19; L. iv. 2; xxi. 24; xxiv. 50; A. i. 3; and see *Resurrection*.

Forty-two, the number, often signifies in Scripture a time of *trial* leading to rest, M. i. 17, *note* 2; L. iv. 25; Forty-two months (1260 days) a chronological period of suffering, Jam. v. 17.

"Forty years," a time of probation, Introduction to the Acts, p. 29.

Four, an arithmetical symbol of what is *created*, M. x. 2, *note* 1; represents *all space*, Rev. xi. 19; xxi. 13.

Freedom, badges of, L. xv. 22; see *Liberty*.

Free-will, Human, J. viii. 36; xii. 34; xvii. 12; A. iv. 28; Introduction to the Epistle to the Romans, 197; and Preliminary Note to ch. ix.; ii. 5; xiv. 14; P. ii. 2; 2 Ti. ii. 19. 21; 1 J. ii. 19; Rev. ii. 21; xxii. 11; the exercise of, exemplified in the case of Esau, R. ix. 13; a necessary consequence of the doctrine of Future Rewards and Punishments, 18; a gift from God, xii. 6; on the consistency between free-will and the accomplishment of prophecy, M. i. 22; denied by the Manichees, J. vi. 44; asserted by the Fathers, *ib.*; principles to be maintained in all discussions respecting it, A. iv. 28.

"Friend," a compellation used in remonstrances, M. xx. 13; xxii. 12; xxvi. 50; L. xxii. 48; cp. J. xix. 12.

"Fulfilled, that it might be," import of the expression, M. i. 22, and *notes* 1, 2; ii. 17; xii. 17.

Full assurance, the Greek term, metaphorical, 1 Th. i. 5.

Funeral rites, importance of, A. viii. 2.

Future punishments, eternal, 2 Th. i. 9; different degrees of, M. xxiii. 15; 2 C. ix. 6, 7; and see *Degrees*.

Future state, mutual recognition in, M. xvii. 3.

Future tense, for instances of its contraction in the New Testament, see M. xiii. 49.

Gabbatha, derivation and import of the word, J. xix. 13.

Gabriel, derivation and import of the name, L. i. 19; A. i. 9; his mission to Zachariah and to the Virgin Mary, L. i. 26.

Gadara, its situation, M. viii. 28.

Gadarene demoniac, the cure of the, typifies the love of Christ to the heathen, Mk. v. 9.

Gain, the love of, the Gospel has always had to contend with it, A. xix. 24.

Gaius, or Caius, his character, 3 J. 1; one of that name appointed bishop of Pergamum by St. John, *ib.*

Galatia, Gaulish origin of its population, A. xvi. 6.

Galatians, Epistle to the, in what it resembles St. Luke's Gospel, Introduction to the Gospel of St. Luke, p. 161; date of it, Introduction; subject of it, *ib.*; the Doctrine of Justification,

ib.; its style similar to that of the Epistles to the Corinthians and to the Romans, *ib.*; wholly written with St. Paul's own hand, and in his own name, *ib.*; written before his second visit to Galatia, *ib.*; design of it, *ib.*; in what respect the subject of it differs from that of the Epistle to the Romans, *ib.*; remarkable introductory words, i. 1; Christ's death the true ground of our Justification, the argument of the Epistle, *ib.*; account of the people and province of Galatia, i. 2; fickleness of their character, 6; apologetic character of the Epistle, 10; why the Apostle does not refer to the decree of the council of Jerusalem on the non-obligation of the Gentiles to receive circumcision, ii. 1; why he communicates with those "in repute" among the Apostles, and why *privately*, 2; St. Paul's rebuke of St. Peter, 19, 20; Porphyry's scornful reference to this passage, see Review of G. ii.; supreme importance of the Apostle's intrepid defence of the great principle of the saving efficacy of Christ's death, apart from the deeds of the Levitical Law, *ib.*; the sufferings of the Apostle a temptation to the Galatians, iv. 13; "how large a letter I have written," &c., explained, vi. 11; Justification by Faith in Christ, the one doctrine which is the subject of this Epistle, *ib.*

Galileans, avoided the country of the Samaritans, L. ix. 53; were remarkable for their restless and turbulent spirit, L. xiii. 1.

Galilee, Sea of, J. ii. 12.

Galilee, its condition at the time of our Lord's ministry, M. iv. 12; xxviii. 7; "out of Galilee ariseth no prophet," J. vii. 52.

Galli, or priests of Cybele, their self-mutilation referred to, G. v. 12.

Gallio, the proconsul of Achaia, his conduct contrasted with that of Sergius Paulus, A. xiii. 7.

Gamaliel, three persons of this name mentioned in the Talmud, A. v. 34; the master of St. Paul, *ib.*

Gamarah, M. xv. 1.

Garden of Gethsemane, our Lord's agony there a part of his passion, M. xxvi. 17; its situation, 36; and see *Adam*.

Garments, white, why used in Baptism, M. xxii. 12; L. xv. 22; different kinds of, described, M. xxvii. 28; cp. Mk. xii. 38; xiv. 52; J. xxi. 7.

"Gate, the beautiful," A. iii. 2.

"The Gates of Hell shall not prevail against it," M. xvi. 18.

Gaza, origin and import of the name, A. viii. 26; description of the town, *ib.*; history of it, *ib.*; the sending of the Gospel in that direction, and the fulfilment of prophecy respecting the region around, *ib.*

Gazith, the hall, the place in which the Sanhedrim usually met, A. xxii. 30.

Gehenna, derivation and import of the term, M. v. 22; "child of Gehenna," M. xxiii. 15; xxv. 46; typified by Dead Sea, Mk. ix. 49.

"Genealogies, interminable," 1 Ti. i. 4; contrasted with the Genealogies of Holy Scripture, *ib.*

Genealogies of our Lord in the Gospels, M. i. 1; Introduction to the Gospel of St. Luke, p. 159; L. iii. 23; J. i. 1; and see *Joseph*; how carefully preserved by the Jews, L. ii. 36.

General Epistles, their design, Preface to Part IV., and Introduction to the First Epistle of St. John.

Generation, this, M. xxiii. 36.

Genesaret, Lake of, description of, M. iv. 13, *note* 3.

Genitive, the *characterizing*, examples of, M. xxii. 11; Jam. ii. 4; Genitive of apposition, Jam. iii. 18; how formed after words ending in *ās*, M. xii. 41; peculiar use of, Mk. xi. 22; L. vi. 12.

Gentile world, Mk. v. 2; prepared by the New Testament for the profitable study of the Old Testament, 1 Th. iv. 15; typified by the two Centurions, M. viii. 5; and see A. x. 1; the Labourers in the Vineyard, M. xx. 1-16; the foal of the ass upon which our Lord rode in triumph into Jerusalem, M. xxi. 7; Mk. x. 46; xi. 4; and by the city of Jericho; its reception connected by our Lord, in Parables, with the rejection of the Jews, M. xxi. 28; and by the cure of the demoniac, Mk. v. 2. 9; and by the ἀπογραφή of Quirinus, L. ii. 1; and by the woman who sinned much, and had much forgiven, vii. 47; and by the Prodigal son, in the Parable, xv. 11, 12. 28; and by Simon the Cyrenian, L. xxiii. 26; and by the Woman, J. iv. 18; and see M. xxviii. 7; Mk. iii. 8; xi. 17.

Gentiles, not to despise the Jews, L. vii. 2; have a Law by which they will be judged, R. ii. 14; received more light when they used well what they had, A. x. 5; arguments used at the Council of Jerusalem for the reception of the Gentiles, A. xv. 13; and see *Romans, Hellenists, St. Mark, St. Luke, and Universality*; "the dispersed among the," J. vii. 35; the various dispersions, A. ii. 9.

Gergesa, its situation, M. viii. 28, and *note* 1.

"Gergesenes," the true reading at M. viii. 28.

Germany, the ruling power of Europe in the eleventh century, Rev. xvii. 7; policy of Papal Rome at that time, *ib.*

Gethsemane, one of the four places of special spiritual retirement chosen by our Lord, M. v. 1; xxvi. 36; derivation and import of the name, M. xxvi. 36; situation of the place, *ib.*; its connexion with our Lord's history, *ib.*

"Gift," the, distinguished from the fruit, P. iv. 17.

Gifts of God to those who use the light they have, A. x. 5.

Glory, different degrees of, in a future state, M. v. 19; x. 15; true way of obtaining it, M. ix. 31; Mk. i. 45; J. vii. 6; xiii. 31; and see *God's Glory and Praise*.

Gnostics, their pernicious errors, the fruit of a corrupt Judaism, 1 Ti. vi. 20; Jud. 9; their impure doctrines, Jud. 5. 7; 2 P. i. 20; see also Preliminary Note to 2 P. ii.; their dissolute practices led to the persecution of the Christians, ii. 2; their covetousness, 3; despised and annulled "lordship," 10; revelled in the *day*, 13; held that the Universe was made by angels, iii. 5; adopted the Magian theory of Dualism, 1 J. i. 5; their resemblance to Balaam, Jude 11; professed to regard Korah with admiration, *ib.*; their superficial knowledge exposed, Jam. i. 3; their presumptuous pretences to superior knowledge, 2 P. ii. 1—3; Jud. 5; called their mysteries "the depths of God," Rev. ii. 24.

"Go in peace," full force of the expression, Mk. v. 34.

Goats and sheep contrasted as to their symbolical significance, M. xxv. 33.

God the Author of all good, Jam. i. 1; Unity of God, 1 C. viii. 6; and see *Unity*: God's glory, should be our chief object, L. xi. 36; J. iii. 30; x. 1; see *Glory*.

God effects the greatest works by the meanest implements, J. ix. 6.

"God forbid," *μή γένοιτο*, observations on this formula, G. ii. 17; R. iii. 4.

God, in what sense the Father is said to be "the only true," J. xvii. 3; the Triune, see *Trinity*.

Gog and Magog, Rev. xx. 8.

Golgotha, M. xxvi. 36; its situation, xxvii. 33; derivation and import of the name, *ib.*; tradition respecting the burial of the bones of Adam there, *ib.*; reference to Josh. v. 9, *ib.*

Good Samaritan, parable of the, time and place of its delivery, L. x. 31; its higher spiritual meaning, *ib.*

"Good, why callest thou me?" explained, M. xix. 17.

Gospel, the great use of it, in confirming the Old Testament, M. xii. 40; not contrary to the Law, xiii. 52; L. i. 8; A. i. 4; the great purpose of our Lord's coming into the world, M. xxiv. 8. 14; opposed, but triumphant, *ib.*; its universal promulgation foretold, xxvi. 13; Mk. xiv. 9; L. xiii. 18; and commanded, Mk. xvi. 15; L. v. 6; xiv. 23; cp. J. xvi. 12; how it ought to be propagated, Introduction to the Gospel of St. John, p. 260; J. xxi. 9, 10; made an occasion of strife, L. xii. 49; import of the original term, Mk. x. 29; its struggle with the Roman power, A. xvi. 20; catholicity of it, when contrasted with Judaism, 1 C. xi. 20, 21; not to be set aside by the Law, R. iv. 14; but superior to it, L. vii. 28; and see *Law*.

Gospels, the Four, Inspiration, Vol. i. xvii.—xx.; verbal coincidences, xlv.; various readings, *ib.*; unity of plan and agreement with the Epistles, *ib.*; order and design, xl.; their use in confirming the Old Testament, M. xii. 39; connexion in them rather one of *substance*, than of *time* or *place*, L. x. 13; all the Four Gospels are one Gospel, xxiv. 50; rule for directing our reasonings concerning the parallels in them, J. xix. 19; the reading of them a part of the Ritual of the Primitive Church, 1 Th. v. 2; God's providence over them, L. i. 4; the fourfold Gospel is the throne of God, E. iii. 10; their symbols, see *Living Creatures*. See *Law and Evangelists*.

Goths, their history, Rev. viii. 9; their assaults upon Rome, xvii. 1.

Government, Civil, its original not derived from the people by means of a *social contract*, R. xiii. 4; see *Kings*.

"Grace for grace," explained, J. i. 16.

Grace, the world of, not more constantly the field of Christ's operation, than the world of nature is, J. ii. 11.

Grace, indispensable, J. xv. 4; the measure of, proportioned to that of faith, Mk. iv. 24; its invisible and gradual operation, 26; v. 30; freely offered, R. ix. 21. 23; and see *Free-will*, *Redemption*, *Means of Grace*, *Works*, *Sacraments*; why so called, M. x. 8; J. ii. 16; not irresistible, A. xxvi. 19.

"Grace and Peace," 1 Th. i. 1; Jam. i. 1.

"Grace," the sign manual of St. Paul, 1 Th. v. 21.

Grace before meat, 1 Ti. iv. 3—5.

Grammar, see *Solecisms*; peculiarities in, M. xiii. 19; L. ii. 13; peculiar use of accusative, xii. 21. 53; J. viii. 25; and see *Alexandrine*, *Aorist*, *Article*, *Dative*, *Genitive*, *Hebraisms*, *Language*, *Participle*, *Perfect*, *Pronoun*.

Graves, whitewashed in the month Adar, M. xxiii. 27; our Lord's rest in the grave; see *Three Days*, *Tomb*, *Sepulture*.

Greek language, how it modified Hebrew names to give them a meaning of its own, J. xviii. 1; provided, providentially, for the propagation of the Gospel, A. xxviii. 15.

Greek, modern, its usefulness to a student of the New Testament, Introductory Note to St. Luke's Gospel; words used in the New Testament, still employed by the modern Greeks, *ib.*: M. v. 45; Mk. xv. 42; cp. L. xxiv. 14; J. vi. 9; viii. 56.

Greek mythology, how treated by St. Luke, Introduction, pp. 158, 159; L. ix. 29; xi. 2; xvi. 22.

Greeks; see *Gentiles* and *Hellenistic Proselytes*.

Hades, import of the word, L. xvi. 23; Rev. i. 18; ought not to be rendered *Hell*, *ib.*

Hagiographa, the, of what they consisted, L. xxiv. 44.

Hair cut short, a mark of slavery, A. xviii. 18.

Hallel, the Psalms comprised in it, M. xxvi. 30; sung at the Paschal feast, *ib.*; two divisions of it on that occasion, *ib.*

Hamor, or Emmor, the hereditary title of the princes of Shechem, A. vii. 16.

Happiness, eternal, designed for man; eternal misery incurred by his own acts, M. xxv. 41; different degrees of, in heaven, L. xix. 17; see *Degrees*.

Harlot, the title of a corrupt Church, Rev. xvii. 1; and see *Fornication*.

"Have faith in God," Mk. xi. 17.

"Have salt in yourselves," explained, Mk. ix. 50.

"He that is least in the Kingdom of heaven," M. xi. 11.

"He that hath ears to hear," &c., M. xiii. 9.

"Head of the corner," import of the expression, M. xxi. 42.

Head, polling of, A. xviii. 18; covering of, 1 C. xi. 3. 10.

"Hear, O Israel," &c., recited twice a day by every Israelite, Mk. xii. 29.

"Hearing of Faith," G. iii. 2.

Heart, how "hardened," R. ix. 18.

Heathen; see *Gentiles*.

Heathen literature, argument for its consecration to the service of Christianity, A. vii. 22.

Heathen names appropriated and consecrated by Christianity, R. xvi. 14; groundless scruples of some, on this subject, *ib.*

Heathen proverbs and poetry, used by Christianity; see *Proverbs*; and A. xvii. 28; Tit. i. 12; cp. Rev. ii. 17.

Heathenism, silently leavened by the diffusion of the Hebrew Scriptures, Vol. ii. 13; a spiritual sickness, L. xiv. 21.

Heaven; see *Future-State*.

Heavens, on the opening of the, at our Lord's baptism, M. iii. 16.

Hebraisms in the New Testament, M. vii. 28; viii. 12; ix. 13. 15. 38; x. 41, 42; xi. 3; xii. 4. 32; xv. 2. 4; xvii. 25; xviii. 7, 8. 15, 16; xix. 5; xxi. 42; xxii. 11; xxiii. 15; xxiv. 15. 22. 24; xxvi. 18. 65; Mk. v. 25. 34; vi. 7. 40. 55; vii. 5. 25; viii. 12; xiii. 25; L. i. 37. 46. 68; vi. 38; x. 6; xviii. 5; xx. 11. 21. 36; xxi. 24. 35; xxii. 15; J. ii. 4; vi. 39; vii. 38; viii. 9; xi. 26; xvii. 12; for use of *kal* = *vau*, L. xxiv. 18.

Hebrew Church, the divinely-appointed guardian of the Old Testament, R. iii. 2.

Hebrew names; see *Names*.

Hebrew text of the Old Testament, argument for its integrity, M. xxiii. 2.

Hebrew words interpreted by St. John, i. 1.

Hebrew writers, speak of one who acts by another's instrumentality, as the *doer*, M. viii. 5.

Hebrews,—the Jews of Palestine, who spoke the Syro-Chaldee, A. vi. 1.

Hebrews, the Epistle to the, its authorship, Introduction to the Epistle; attributed to St. Paul by the Churches of Jerusalem, Palestine, Syria, Asia, and Alexandria, *ib.*; and by all the Greek ecclesiastical writers, *ib.*; ascribed by Tertullian to Barnabas, *ib.*; not quoted by S. Hippolytus, nor by S. Cyprian, *ib.*; the doubts of the Western Church cleared up in the fourth century, and not revived till the sixteenth; and then only by one or two persons, *ib.*; design of the Epistle, *ib.*; why the writer concealed his name, *ib.*; difference in style from that of the undisputed Epistles of St. Paul accounted for, *ib.*; objection grounded on the use of the Septuagint Version in quotations from the Old Testament, *ib.*; special reasons for using that Version, Heb. i. 6; and Introduction, p. 374; the completion of an Epistolary *Trilogy*, Introduction, pp. 375. 377; true import of the term *Hebrews*, Heb. i. 6; the Speech of St. Stephen a prelude to the Epistle to the Hebrews, *ib.*; the Greek form not a translation, *ib.*; date of the Epistle, *ib.*; design of it, *ib.*; condition of the Jewish converts at this time, *ib.*; proves the necessity of Christ's Humanity, *ib.*; import of

the word "propitiation," Heb. ii. 17; "forty years," emphasis on the expression in iii. 9; apparent exception to the Pauline origin of the Epistle, iv. 4; "there remaineth a Sabbatism," 9; importance of vi. 6; the inner veil, 19; the inferiority of the Levitical priesthood to that of Melchizedek, vii. 4. 15; is speaking, not of the Temple, but of the Tabernacle, ix. 1; singular disarray of names from the Old Testament, xi. 32; remarkable similarity in diction between the close of this Epistle and of that to the Romans, xiii. 5; this Epistle may have been written in Spain, 24; the writer probably had St. James in his mind, xiii. 7.

Hell, prepared for, but not yet occupied by, the devils, M. xxv. 46; L. viii. 31; see *Gehenna* and *Hades*.

Hellas, Southern Greece, A. xx. 2; afterwards merged in the Roman province of Achaia, *ib.*; the name occurs in the New Testament only at A. xx. 2.

Hellenes, attendants on the Jewish synagogue worship, A. xviii. 4.

Hellenistic proselytes, St. Luke wrote especially for them, L. i. 3; ii. 4. 32; iv. 31; vi. 17; vii. 31. 36; ix. 3; xii. 38; xv. 1; xviii. 15; xx. 42; xxi. 37; xxii. 40; formed the bond of union between Jews and Gentiles, Vol. i. p. 157; cp. J. xii. 20.

Hellenists, not Gentiles, but Jews of the various *διασποραι*, A. vi. 1; generally ignorant of Hebrew, *ib.*; the bitter enemies of St. Stephen and of St. Paul, A. ix. 29; xi. 20; regarded with contempt by the Hebrews, J. vii. 35; A. vi. 1.

Hem of Garment; see *Skirts*.

Hen, M. xiii. 37; see *Wing*.

Heresies, none really new, Introduction to the First Epistle of St. John; providentially permitted to arise in the Apostolic times, whereby they received authoritative refutation, *ib.*; licentiousness and profligacy engendered by them, 1 J. iv. 10; summary of the principal heresies in the Apostolic age, 2 P. ii., Preliminary Note; and see 2 P. ii. 1, 2, and 10; and Introduction to the First Epistle of St. John; and 1 J. iv. 1.

Heresy, its characteristic, R. xii. 6; a work of the Evil One, Rev. vi. 5; its nature defined, Tit. iii. 10; meaning of the term, 1 C. xi. 19; 2 P. ii. 1; Heresy and Schism, *ib.*; various heresies refuted by one text, P. ii. 6; advantages gained by Orthodoxy by the opposition of, Vol. i. xvi.; and Introduction to the Epistle to the Colossians, p. 311; and 1 J. ii. 19; 1 C. xi. 19; traced to heathen philosophy, Rev. vi. 5.

Heretics compared to tares, M. xiii. 26.

Hermas, the author of The Shepherd, not the same with the Hermas mentioned R. xvi. 14; refers to 1 P. i. 7; and to Jam. i. 7, 8.

Herod Agrippa, date of his death, Pt. ii. 22; account of him, A. xii. 1; his death described by St. Luke, and by Josephus, 2i-23.

Herod Antipas, the tetrarch, account of him, M. xiv. 1; his treatment of John the Baptist, Mk. vi. 20; his character, L. xiii. 31, 32; mocks Christ, xxiii. 11; reconciled to Pilate, 12; both at once acquit Christ, and condemn Him to death, 15.

Herod the Great, his history and character, M. ii. 1; troubled at the birth of Christ, 3; his death, 20.

Herodians, their tenets and character, M. xxii. 15, 16.

Herodias; see *Herod* and *John Baptist*.

Herods, brief account of, A. xii. 23.

High Priest, wide signification of the term in the Gospels, Mk. ii. 26; A. iv. 23.

High Priesthood, perplexing condition of the question respecting it, at the time of our Lord's birth, L. iii. 2; case of Caiaphas, J. xi. 49.

Hillel, great, psalms of which it was composed, M. xxi. 9.

Hirelings, in the Church, we must not separate from the Church because of them, J. x. 13; and see *Judas*.

Holiness and righteousness, how distinguished, L. i. 75.

Holy City, Jerusalem so called, even after our Lord had been crucified there, xxvii. 53; see *Jerusalem*.

Holy Communion; see *Supper of the Lord*.

Holy days and Festivals, the lawfulness of appointing them, J. x. 22; and see *Festivals*.

Holy Ghost, baptism with the, M. iii. 11; proofs of his personality and Divinity, iv. 1; J. xvi. 13; A. x. 19; xii. 2; xiii. 2. 4; xx. 28; 1 C. ii. 10; 2 C. iii. 18; his office in Christ's Birth and Resurrection, R. i. 4; viii. 11; at the Incarnation, L. i. 35; invisible agency, J. iii. 8; compared to Living Water, iv. 14; vii. 38; why he manifested himself at Christ's baptism as a Dove, M. iii. 16; J. i. 32; sin against the, see *Sin*; the effusion of the, J. vii. 39; his office as a Remembrancer, as well as an Inspirer, to the Evangelists, xii. 16; called "the Comforter," xiv. 16; his office, 26; xv. 26; proceeds from the Father and the Son, xv. 26; xvi. 13; xx. 22; "Receive ye the Holy Ghost," Vol. ii. ix.; the descent of the Holy Ghost on the day of Pentecost, xxv.; qualifies the Apostles for their office of *writers* as well as of *preachers*, xxvii.; the day on which the

Holy Ghost was given, A. ii. 1; How were people filled with the Holy Ghost before the Day of Pentecost? J. vii. 39; the need of him shown, xxi. 3; why the Holy Ghost was given at the Feast of Pentecost, A. ii. 1; and why at *that* particular Feast of Pentecost, *ib.*; the tongues of fire, 3; upon whom did the Holy Ghost come? *ib.*; *interprets* the Prophets by the lips of the Apostles, 27; receiving of the Holy Ghost, x. 47; the effusion of the Holy Ghost upon Cornelius and his company, x. 44-46; proof that *mission* to the Apostleship is his special office, xiii. 2; "It seemed good to the Holy Ghost and to us," xv. 28; two instances of his *restraining* power, xvi. 6; his preventive operations in the case of Paul in Asia, and at Philippi, 22; joy shed by him into the heart of the Christian, 25; does not gratify the curiosity of the reader of Scripture by graphic sketches of those holy men whom he employed to preach the Gospel, Introduction to the Acts, p. 6; A. xxiii. 16; reason of this, *ib.*; has vouchsafed to mention the names of the *heathen* deities that formed the *insigne* of the vessel in which Paul sailed to Italy; why? xxviii. 11; "Quench not the Spirit," 1 Th. v. 17; Christians are his Temples, 1 C. vi. 13; he is called "the Spirit of the Lord," 2 C. iii. 17; his nature and office, 18; 1 Cor. ii. 10; xii. 4-7; 3 J. 12; ascribes to Christ the titles of Jehovah and Elohim, R. ix. 5; expounds Deut. xxx. 11. 14; x. 6-9; all the gifts in the Church flow to us by Him, through the Son, from the Father, E. iv. 11; his operation in the work of *ἀνακαίνωσις*, 23; proof of his personality, 30; his "seal," *ib.*; "it is the Spirit that beareth witness," 1 J. v. 6; why called "the Holy Spirit of promise," E. i. 13; "sevenfold," Rev. i. 4; and see *Inspiration* and *Prophecy*.

Holy Kiss, precepts respecting it, 1 Th. v. 26; testimony respecting it by Justin Martyr and Cyril of Jerusalem, *ib.*; whether still obligatory,—the question discussed by Hooker, *ib.*; see 1 C. xvi. 20; 2 C. xiii. 12; R. xvi. 16; discontinuance of, Jam. v. 13, 14.

"Holy Mount," the Mount of Transfiguration so called, 2 P. i. 18.

Holy Places, pilgrimages to, L. i. 39; the precise sites of them providentially concealed, M. v. 1; L. i. 39; ii. 8.

Holy Sepulchre, Church of the, M. xxvii. 60.

Holy Week, on the events of, M. xxi. 1; Mk. xi. 1.

Homoïsm Patris, the doctrine of, why so termed, J. x. 30.

Honour, secondary meaning of the word, M. xv. 4.

Hope, anciently symbolized by an Anchor, Heb. vi. 18, 19.

Horns, emblems of power, and of eminent persons, L. i. 69.

Horse, riding on a, emblematical of war, M. xxi. 5; Rev. vi. 2; ix. 16, 17, and *passim*.

Horses, rare in Palestine, 2 P. ii. 16.

Hosanna, its derivation and import, M. xxi. 9; J. xii. 13.

Hosea, xi. 1, spoken of the people of Israel, but applied by the Holy Ghost to Christ, M. xiii. 35, note 3.

Hours, how reckoned in the New Testament, M. xx. 3; by St. John, see *John*.

Housetop, figurative sense, M. xxiv. 15.

Human Examples, insufficiency of, to serve as a Rule of Conscience and Conduct, G. ii. 13.

Human feelings ascribed to God, M. xviii. 13; L. xv. 7; cp. J. iv. 24.

Human instrumentality not superseded by Divine miracles, Mk. v. 43; L. viii. 3; God is pleased to work by it, 2 C. iv. 7.

Human Laws, how far they bind the consciences of subjects, R. xiii. 5; and see *Kings*.

Human nature of Christ, indications of it in the Gospels, M. viii. 10; L. ii. 40; J. xiii. 21; xvi. 2; xix. 26; at the Agony, M. xxvi. 39; L. xxii. 43; and see M. xxvii. 46; xxviii. 2; and Mk. vi. 3; J. x. 17; xi. 33; xii. 27; always brought forward before a miracle, M. viii. 24; xxi. 18; Mk. xi. 12; J. xi. 35; that in which He will judge, J. v. 27.

Human nature, typified by the woman with the issue, Mk. v. 26; see L. xv. 4. 8. 11; dignified by the Incarnation, J. ii. 11; see *Incarnation*; and see *Divinity* and *Nature*.

Humility, commended and exemplified, M. viii. 4; and xx. 27; L. ii. 7. 22; ix. 48; xvii. 10; xxiv. 50; J. iv. 50; vi. 37, 38; xiii. 3, 4; xviii. 15; P. ii. 7; our true strength, J. xiii. 36; needed for the right understanding of Scripture, Mk. ii. 26.

Hundred and forty-four, its symbolical meaning, Rev. vii. 1-9; xi. 19; xiv. 1-9; and see *Twelve*.

Hungary, exemplification there of an ancient practice of Gentile superstition, A. xix. 35.

Huns, God's providence displayed in raising them up to punish Rome, Rev. viii. 9.

Husbands, duty of, E. v. 23; see *Marriage*.

"Husks," exact meaning of the word so rendered, L. xv. 15.

Hymenæus and Philetus, their heresy, J. v. 28; its refutation, *ib.*

Hyperbole, a figure frequent in the New Testament, M. xviii. 13; xxiii. 9; J. xxi. 25.

Hypocrisy, M. vi. 2; xxiii. 13; self-deceit of, 1 Ti. iv. 2.
Hypocrite, M. vi. 2; xxiii. 13.
Hyslop, M. xxvii. 48; J. xix. 29.

"I am;" see *Jehovah*.

Iconium, its situation, A. xiii. 51.

Identity of the raised body, 2 C. v. 10; see *Resurrection*.

Idleness, its prevalence among the Gentiles in the time of the Apostles, 1 Th. iv. 11; "busy-idleness" censured, R. xii. 11.

Idolatry, its origin, M. iv. 9; R. i. 20. 25; a work of Satan, Rev. ii. 13; the first point of contact of Christians with it in the Holy Scripture, A. xiv. 14; disqualifies for admission into the number of God's saints in glory, Rev. vii. 1; the worship of devils, ix. 20; tendency of to propagate falsehood, Tit. i. 12; its nature described, xix. 10; love of money so called, L. xvi. 15.

Ignatius, S., a follower of St. Paul, 2 Ti. iv. 13.

Ignorance, sins of, 1 Ti. i. 12; Jam. iv. 17.

Immaculate Conception, the doctrine of, now made an article of faith in the Church of Rome, L. i. 27; condemned by Leo M. and by Gregory M., both bishops of Rome, *ib.*; Scriptural testimony against it, R. viii. 3; cp. Mk. xii. 6; R. xvi. 20; the dogma imputes falsehood to God, 1 J. i. 10; how the doctrine is framed and promulgated, Rev. xiii. 15; its probable results, xviii. 4.

Impossible, things said to be so, in Scripture, when they cannot be done *rightly*, Mk. ii. 19.

Incarnation of Christ, the blessings brought by it, L. ii. 14; J. iii. 13; vi. 51. 63; ix. 6; xiv. 28; typified by miracle at Cana, J. ii. 11; foreshadowed by the Feast of Tabernacles, see *Tabernacles*; L. xxiv. 1; J. i. 14; vii. 2. 37; the mystery of, 1 Ti. iii. 16; cp. Introduction to the Gospel of St. John, p. 259; its moral and social importance, Introduction to the Epistle to the Ephesians; cp. J. viii. 11; its benefits applied to us in the Sacraments, C. ii. 10; how the preaching of it may conduce to the abolition of slavery and caste, Introduction to Philemon; and see *Holy Ghost*, *Human Nature*, *Mary*.

Incense, in the Temple service, typical of the prayers to be offered in heaven by Christ, H. ix. 4.

India, bestirring itself for the transmission and reception of the Gospel, A. xxviii. 15; prospect of its triumph there, *ib.*

Indifferent things, principles which ought to regulate human conduct in the use of them, Introduction to the First Epistle to the Corinthians.

Infallibility, dangerousness of the system of religion that is based upon an imaginary claim to it, L. i. 27; A. xv. 7; *a priori* infallibility distinguished from *a posteriori* inerrancy, *ib.*

Infanticide, 1 Ti. v. 12; Rev. ix. 20.

Infants, baptism of, arguments for, M. xviii. 11; Mk. x. 13, and *note* 1; L. xviii. 15; J. iii. 4; viii. 21; xv. 3; A. xvi. 15; 1 P. ii. 3.

Infants, the death of, a proof of their having sinned and fallen in Adam, R. v. 13, 14.

Ingratitude; see *Unthankfulness*.

"Inn," the original word wrongly so rendered, L. ii. 7; probably the upper story of the Caravansarai at Bethlehem, *ib.*

Inner relationship of matters recorded in the Gospels specially traced by St. Luke, L. xi. 14; examples of this, *ib.*; see *Luke*.

Inscription upon the Cross, L. xxiii. 38; erroneously assumed discrepancies in the Evangelical account of it, J. xix. 19; the inscription given entire, *ib.*; the three languages, 20.

Inspiration of Holy Scripture, objectionable mode in which the subject is commonly treated, Vol. i. xvi., xviii.; J. xix. 19; whether any *degrees* of inspiration, xvii.; Inspiration a mental and spiritual Transfiguration, *ib.*; verbal inspiration, xx.; J. xvi. 13; various reports of the same facts characteristic of the Inspiration of the sacred penman as to words, xxi., xxii.; and see Introduction to the Gospel of St. Mark; and J. ix. 19; and L. vi. 17; J. xix. 19; various readings, xxi.; arguments for the inspiration of the writers of the New Testament, M. x. 20; Mk. viii. 29, and *note* 1; xiii. 11; xvi. 9; L. xi. 14; J. xii. 16; xiv. 26; A. xv. 39; xvi. 6, 7; xxiv. 27; silent *note* of Mk. vi. 48; why do we believe in it? Mk. xvi. 9; solid foundation on which the proof of the Genuineness and Inspiration of the Canon of Scripture rests, J. viii. 1—11; Mk. xvi. 9—20; 1 C. v. 9; 3 J. 9; the Holy Spirit not only inspired the sacred writers when and what to write, but what to pass over in *silence*, J. xi. 1; and see *Silence*; exemplified in the miracle of the raising of Lazarus, related only by St. John, *ib.*; futile objections against the inspiration of the Evangelists, L. ii. 52; xxii. 54, *note* 1; Introductory Note to St. John's Gospel; J. vi. 21; xi. 1, *note* 1; xii. 17. 29; xix. 19; xxi. 25; inspiration of the *silence* of Scripture, Heb. vii. 3; our Lord's testi-

mony to the Inspiration of the Old Testament; see *Old Testament*; Inspiration of Prophecies, Mk. i. 2; of Psalms, xii. 36; and see *Psalms* and *Prophecy*; the Apostles lay claim to inspiration, while they disclaim Omniscience, 1 C. i. 16; ii. 11; their writings which have been received as *Scripture* are exempt from error, though as *men* they were liable to err, see *Note* at the end of G. ii.; and see *Evangelists*; how confirmed by public reading of Scripture, 1 Th. v. 27; see *Scripture*.

"Inspired of God," every portion of Scripture is, 2 Ti. iii. 16; force of this expression, *ib.*

Intention, good, no sufficient security in the consciousness of, A. xxiii. 1; purity of, how important, L. xi. 33.

Intercessory prayer, duty of, 1 Tim. ii. 1—12; see *Prayer*.

Intermediate State; see *Soul* and *Disembodied Spirit*.

Interpretation of the Bible, Introduction to the Acts of the Apostles, p. 16; see *Scripture*.

Intolerance, religious, condemned, Mk. ix. 40.

Iota, M. v. 18.

Irvingites, heretical notions held by them, Heb. ix. 28.

Isaac, derivation and import of the name, J. viii. 56; parallel between Christ and him, xix. 17; Heb. xi. 19; persecuted by Ishmael, G. iv. 29.

Isaiah, exposition of the prophecy in ch. vii. 14, M. i. 23.

Iscaiot, derivation and import of the name, M. x. 1.

Ishmael persecutes Isaac, G. iv. 29.

Islamism, introduced by the Arians, Rev. ix. 1.

Israel, the people of, a type of Christ, M. xiii. 35, *note* 3.

Israelites, their pilgrimage, its figurative character, Mk. i. 12; 1 C. x. 6.

Israelites, the true, Rev. vii. 1—9; predictions concerning them, M. xxiv. 34; and see *Jews*, *Jerusalem*, &c.

Italian band, levied in Italy, A. x. 1.

Jacinth, its colour, Rev. ix. 1; a *sacred* one in the Levitical Dispensation, *ib.*

Jacob, builds an altar at Sichem, A. vii. 14—16; recovers the land that Abraham had acquired there, *ib.*

Jacob's election, the cause of it, R. ix. 13.

Jacob's staff, Heb. xi. 21.

Jacob's Well, description of, J. iv. 6; A. vii. 16.

Jairus, nature of his office, Mk. v. 22.

James and John, why called Boanerges, Mk. iii. 17; associated with St. Peter at the Transfiguration, M. xvii. 1; their ambition rebuked, Mk. x. 35; their hearts and temper changed by the Lord, L. ix. 54; martyrdom of James, A. xii. 2; and see M. xx. 22.

James, St., the son of Alphæus, the Lord's brother, A. i. 13; xii. 17; whether he was one of the twelve, *ib.*, and Introduction to the Epistle of St. James.

James, St., bishop of Jerusalem, Mk. iii. 18; president, as such, of the Council there, A. xv. 13; receives St. Paul on his arrival from Cæsarea, xxi. 18; was, according to Hegesippus, a Nazarite, 24; recommends Paul to take the Nazarite's vow, *ib.*; adopts our Lord's Prayer, L. xxiii. 34; cp. J. xii. 19; the Less, the epithet added by St. Mark, Mk. xv. 40; why, *ib.*; his Epistle, its design, Introduction; agreement of it with the writings and teachings of St. Paul, *ib.*; St. Augustine's statement, *ib.*; author of this Epistle, *ib.*; whether the writer is the same with James "the son of Alphæus," one of the Twelve, *ib.*; meaning of his appellation—"The Lord's brother," *ib.*; canonical authority and Divine Inspiration of the Epistle, *ib.*; date of it, *ib.*; the writer does not call himself an *Apostle*, Jam. i. 1; remained at Jerusalem until his death there, *ib.*; addresses unconverted as well as converted Jews, *ib.*; this Epistle distinguished from all others in the New Testament, by containing no announcement of *Grace*, *Mercy*, and *Peace*, *ib.*; resembles the Gospel of St. Matthew in many points, *ib.*; how the Epistle could have reached the twelve dispersed tribes, *ib.*; inculcates the duty of patience, and of endurance, 2; called *Oblias*, 9; v. 6; cautions against future heresies, i. 13; traces the progress of temptation, 15; *δόσις* and *δάρημα*, 16; protest against the Jewish errors, 18; "by the Word of truth," explained, *ib.*; the innate Word, 21; examples of *asyndeta*, 27; "synagogue" used for a Christian place of assembly, ii. 2; peculiar pertinency for Jewish Christians of, 10; "can his faith save him?" 14; Abraham and Rahab, how justified by works, 21—25; this Epistle illustrated and confirmed by the Epistle to the Hebrews, 25; the unbridled tongue, iii. 5; the author revered by the Jews, iv. 2; account of his death by Hegesippus, v. 6; incident recorded by him, illustrative of "Behold, the Judge standeth before the door," 9; S. Polycarp's acquaint-

- ance with this Epistle, 13, 14; no salutations nor benedictions at the close of it, i. 1; v. 20; the Apostle's teaching on the Doctrine of Justification compared with that of St. Paul, Introduction to the Epistle to the Romans; his mission of "weak brethren" to Antioch, G. ii. 12; observes the ceremonies of the Levitical law, *ib.*; succeeded, as bishop of Jerusalem, by Symeon, or Simon, or Simon Zelotes, son of Clopas, and brother of St. Jude, Introduction to the Epistle of St. Jude.
- Jasper, Rev. iv. 3.
- Jehovah, derivation and import of the name, J. i. 4. 18; Pt. ii. x.
- Jeremiah, connexion between him and Zechariah, M. xxvii. 9.
- Jericho, its situation, M. xx. 29; L. xviii. 35; miraculous healing of two blind men there, *ib.*; Mk. x. 46; the city, a Scriptural figure of this world, Mk. x. 46; description of the modern city, L. xviii. 35; anciently the next city in importance to Jerusalem, *ib.*
- Jerusalem, our Lord's lament over it, M. xxiii. 39; and xxiv. 1. 15; his sentence on it, L. xiii. 33; Daniel's prophecy of the siege and destruction of, M. xxiv. 15; Josephus's description of the horrors of the siege, 19; cp. Mk. xiii.; its state after the siege, J. v. 2; last days of, Introduction to the Epistle of St. James, and Jam. iv. 2; v. 1—6; derivation and import of the name, L. ii. 25; xix. 42; written by St. Luke in a different form from that of the other Evangelists, why, *ib.*; why St. John in the Apocalypse uses a different form from that which he employs in his Gospel, Introduction to the Revelation, p. 149; significance of its modern name, M. iv. 5; Christ weeps for its approaching overthrow, L. xix. 49; his coming thither foreshadowed in its name, 42; singular circumstances attending its capture by Titus, 43, 44; two signs given by our Lord of its destruction, xxi. 20; why the Apostles were commanded to remain there till the effusion of the Holy Ghost, A. i. 4; number of synagogues there at the time of our Lord's ministry, vi. 9.
- Jerusalem, Heavenly, M. xix. 28; Rev. iii. 12; see also vii. 1—8; and xxi. 2. See *Holy City* and *Israel*.
- JESUS, singular MS. reading which prefixes this name to Barabbas, M. xxvii. 17; import of the name, i. 1. 21; L. i. 31; xxiv. 1; the day of our Lord's birth, M. ii. 1; parallel between Jesus and Joshua, x. 2, note 2; parallel between Jesus and Jonas, xii. 39; the "brethren of Jesus," 46; xiii. 55; xxvii. 56; J. xix. 25; *Jesus* and *Emmanuel* names of the same Person, L. i. 31; the word = 888, xxiv. 1; "Jesus of Nazareth," explained, J. xix. 19; "the name of Jesus" = "the name of Jehovah," A. v. 41.
- Jew, derivation of the word, according to Jerome, M. xxvii. 37; Rev. ii. 9.
- Jewish nation, typified by the man out of whom the devil had been cast, M. xii. 43; and by the labourers, xx. 1—16; the fig-tree, xxi. 18. 20; Mk. xi. 12; by Judas, M. xxvii. 5; perhaps in Mk. xi. 4, in L. vii. 47; by the Priest and Levite, x. 31; the Fig-tree, xiii. 6; by the elder brother, xv. 11. 28; by Cain, xxii. 44; by the pool of Bethesda, J. v. 2; their rejection of Christ foretold, xvi. 2.
- Jewish-Alexandrine School, Platonism in it, C. ii. 8.
- Jews, prevalence of Angel-worship among them, C. ii. 8.
- Jews, their conceits of themselves, and envy of the Gentiles, see Introduction to the Epistle to the Romans, pp. 187—189; and see also *ib.*, p. 194; R. x. 3; xi. 11; their privileges, iii. 1, 2; ix. 4; xi. 1; their rejection connected by our Lord, in parables, with the reception of the Gentiles, M. xxi. 28; L. xv. 11. 28; their persecution of the Prophets, M. xxi. 34; appropriateness of their punishment, xxiv. 11; their notions of divorce, M. v. 31; Mk. x. 11, 12; typified by Simon the Pharisee, L. vii. 47; and by the elder son in the Parable, L. xv. 11. 28; the Gospel first preached to them, xvii. 11; their miserable fate at the siege and capture of Jerusalem, xxi. 21; their neglect of warning, *ib.*; anticipated by the Gentiles in coming to Christ, and taking up his Cross, xxiii. 26; singular manner in which they are spoken of by St. John, Introductory Note to St. John's Gospel, p. 268; J. i. 19; ii. 6. 13. 20; iii. 25; v. 1. 10. 15, 16; esteemed John the Baptist more highly than Christ, i. 10; the intercourse between them and the Samaritans, iv. 9; testimony of the Rabbins on this point, *ib.*; notion of the Sabbath, v. 17; after rejecting the true Messiah, they have received sixty false ones, each coming in his own name, 43; neglected to keep the Feast of Tabernacles for many centuries, vii. 59; the miracle of the raising of Lazarus a moral test to them, xi. 1; fearful consequences of their policy in compassing our Lord's death, xix. 11; they prophesy in Caiaphas—their official representative, 22; their dispersion at the time of our Lord's Ascension, Introduction to the Acts; A. ii. 9—11; Introduction to the First Epistle of St. Peter; probable estimate of the numbers that attended the Feasts of the Passover and Pentecost at the time of our Lord's ministry, A. ii. 1; order in which the various dispersions are placed, ii. 9—11; "his blood be on us," &c., 19; cp. viii. 59; Peter's address to them still applicable, iii. 19; the true ground of appeal to them in their unconverted state, *ib.*; the authors of Christ's death, though not the immediate agents, 67; the Christians confounded with them by the Roman power, civil and military, xvi. 20; obloquy with which the Jews were regarded by the Romans, *ib.*; not allowed to make proselytes among the Romans, though Judaism was among that people a *religio licita* for the Jews, *ib.*; more hostile to the Christians than the Romans were, xviii. 12. 17; why they beat Sosthenes the chief of their synagogue at Corinth, 17; from their perversion of the case of Phineas, it became a rule among them, that a *private person* might kill one who had forsaken the law of Moses, xxiii. 12; proof of this in the Talmud, *ib.*; assassination legalized and consecrated among them at the commencement of the Christian era, *ib.*; remarkable testimony to their belief in a Resurrection, xxiv. 15; miserable end of their city and polity, xxv. 23, 24; their condemnation by God and man for their impiety, xxvi. 31; corrupt state of the nation at the advent of Christ, xxviii. 19; their sins and miseries before the destruction of Jerusalem, Jam. iv. 2; v. 1—6; M. xxiv. 15; and see *Jerusalem*; prominent part taken by them in public tumults under the Roman Government, R. xiii. 1; their treatment of the early Christians, 1 Th. ii. 13; contrasted with that of the Romans, *ib.*; grounds of their bitter enmity against St. Paul, E. iii. 1; and against St. James, Jam. v. 9; their tradition respecting the contest between Sammael and Michael, Jud. 9; their belief in the coming of Elias, see *Elias* and *John the Baptist*.
- John the Baptist, never called Baptist by St. John the Evangelist, J. iii. 25; field of his ministry, M. iii. 1—12; Mk. i. 4—48; L. iii. 2—14; derivation and import of his name, L. i. 13. 72, 73; J. i. 16; his baptism contrasted with that of Christ, M. iii. 1. 11. 13, 14; Mk. i. 4; xi. 30; announces the second advent of Christ, i. 10—12; his noble extraction, L. i. 5; why did Jesus come to be baptized of John? M. iii. 13; his disciples question our Lord concerning fasting, ix. 14; his mission of disciples to Christ, xi. 2—6; L. vii. 18, 19; particular points in which he excelled all other prophets, M. xi. 11; L. vii. 28; proof of his courage and constancy, Mk. vi. 20; adapts his lessons to his hearers, L. iii. 11; resembles Elias in his conduct towards Herodias, M. xiv. 2; and cp. Mk. ix. 12, 13; the angel Gabriel applies to him the prophecy of Mal. iv. 5, L. i. 17; the stress laid on his witness by St. John the Evangelist, J. i. 15; "and I knew him not," explained, 33; exercised his ministry in three places, iii. 23; reason of the permission of his early death, 24; his imprisonment mentioned only here, *ib.*; none of his disciples administered the rite of baptism, 25; his baptism died with him, *ib.*; scene of his ministry at the commencement of the preaching of the Gospel, x. 40; favourable testimony to his memory, *ib.*
- John, St., peculiar characteristics of his Gospel, Pt. i. p. xlii.; peculiar circumstances under which his Gospel was written, 256; publicly sanctions the other Gospels, pp. xl. xlii. 267; twofold vantage-ground upon which the Evangelist stood, 256; inspiration in the silence of the three earlier Evangelists, which left room for his eloquence, 257; and Mk. xvi. 19; advantages that have accrued to the Church of Christ from his prolonged life, Pt. i. 258; prophetic sayings of our Lord related by St. John, *ib.*; his Gospel the Gospel of the Resurrection, 265; on his personal history, and on the style and date of his Gospel, 266; cp. Review of ch. vii. p. 309; his singular mode of speaking of the Jews accounted for, Pt. i. 268; sense in which his Gospel is said to be *supplementary* to the other three, *ib.*; evidences of the lateness of his Gospel, M. xxvi. 51; J. iii. 24; cp. v. 2; xii. 4; xviii. 10; the demoniacs not mentioned by him, and why, M. iv. 24; nor any of our Lord's predictions of the siege and destruction of Jerusalem, xxiv. 22; does not mention the Ascension, why, xxviii. 20; begins his Gospel with our Lord's Divine, as St. Matthew does his, with His Human Generation, Mk. i. 1; regarded as *σύμβολον θεαπίας*, Mk. i. 16; connects his Gospel with Genesis, J. i. 1; ii. 1; why, with James, called Boanerges, Mk. iii. 17; our Lord's reply to their mother, M. xx. 22; ancient commentaries on his Gospel, Introd. p. 269; is careful to interpret eastern words, and to specify original Hebrew names, J. i. 39; Introduction, p. 267; *γεγραμμένον ἐστὶ*, a mode of citation peculiar to St. John, ii. 17; John's Gospel not only an inspired *History*, but also an inspired *Comment* on that history, 24; Introduction, p. 268; his mode of reckoning time, i. 40; xix. 14; the Asiatic mode, iv. 6; alone mentions that the loaves with which Christ fed the five thousand were of "barley," vi. 9; his Gospel eminently a *πνευματικὸν εὐαγγέλιον*, vii. 52; speeches of our Lord recorded by St. John, which can only be understood by reference to His Divine Nature, viii. 25; expository character of his Gospel, 27; every thing in it

significant, x. 22; the great miracle of the raising of Lazarus related by St. John alone, xi. 1; this accounted for, *ib.*; relates more lofty things of Christ than the other Evangelists do, and records the more lowly things also, 35; does not often quote the Hebrew Scriptures; gives the substance rather than the letter, xii. 14. 38—40; instance of his modesty, 16; cp. xviii. 15; needed the aid of the Holy Spirit both as a remembrancer and an inspirer, xii. 16; example of his veracity, 29; his mode of quoting the Old Testament contrasted with that of Matthew, xiii. 18; does not describe the institution of the Holy Communion, *ib.*; cp. L. xxi. 8; loved especially by Christ, xiii. 23; the victory of Christ over the world, and his followers through its means, themes specially appropriated to St. John, xvi. 33; our dying Lord commits his mother to his care, xix. 26; silent confirmation of the narrative of the other Evangelists, xii. 7; xiii. 18; xviii. 25; xx. 2; and Introduction, p. 268; characteristic instance of his manner of refuting calumnies, without mentioning the authors of them, xx. 2; does not describe the ascension of our Lord, xxi. 25; his connexion with St. Peter, see *Peter*.

John, St., The First Epistle of, special character of it, Introduction; his Gospel the best help to the study of his Epistles, *ib.*; 1 J. v. 1—4; his life providentially prolonged, *ib.*; design of his Epistles, *ib.*; date of his First Epistle, *ib.*; harmony between it and his Gospel, 1 J. i. 1; proemium, *ib.*; the Gnostic theory of *Dualism*, derived from the Magians, 5; "we have an Advocate with the Father," said in opposition to the Cerinthians, ii. 1; instance of St. John's meekness, 2; Christian *praxis* the test of Christian *gnosis*, 3; the duty of patient abiding, *ib.*; the Law of Love delivered in the Gospel is also in the Law of Moses and of Nature, 7; how "a new commandment," 8; God the Father, 13; the writer alone uses the term *Antichrist*, but never in the Apocalypse, 18; import of the term, *ib.*; different from "the man of sin" = Popery, *ib.*; the many *Antichrists* here described are Heresiarchs of the Apostle's time, 18, 19; anecdote respecting St. John and Cerinthus, 19; special benefit resulting from the departure of heretics, *ib.*; believers true Gnostics, 20; Antichrists deny the Father and the Son, *ib.*; "Every one who is born of God sinneth not," explained, iii. 9; the duty of Christian martyrdom, maintained against the Cerinthians, Simonians, and Nicolaitans, 16; "Try the spirits," iv. 1; that which God loved in us was our nature, not our sin, 10; the doctrine of the Atonement defended against the objection of Socinians, *ib.*; "He who came by water and blood," v. 6; examination of the interpolated words in 7; remarkable admonition in 21.

John, St., Second Epistle of, to whom addressed, Introduction; the writer establishes the Truth in his Gospel; in his Epistles he rebukes and corrects Heresy, *ib.*; this Epistle written to a Church, *ib.*; what Church?—that of Babylon, *ib.*; fraternal affection between St. John and St. Peter, *ib.*; this Epistle said in early times to have been addressed to the *Parthians*, *ib.*; special use of it, *ib.*

John, St., Third Epistle of, character and design of it, Introduction; the character of Gaius contrasted with that of Diotrephes, *ib.*; "they went forth on behalf of the Name," 3 J. 7; good testimony given to Demetrius, 12.

John, St., Revelation of; see *Revelation*.

Jonah, a type of Christ, M. xii. 39; his deliverance from the whale's belly well known to the Ninevites, L. xi. 30; his history and that of Balaam both scoffed at by sceptics, and emphatically dwelt on in Scripture, 2 P. ii. 15.

Joppa, account of, A. x. 5.

Jordan, import of the name, M. iii. 5; places where it might be crossed, L. xvii. 10; cp. v. 29.

Joseph of Arimathea, his altered deportment after the resurrection of our Lord, Mk. xv. 43; analogy between him and the husband of Mary, M. i. 25; xxvii. 57.

Joseph, the husband of Mary, his (not her) genealogy, given by Matthew and Luke, M. i. 1; L. iii. 23; 2 Ti. i. 6; Joseph and Mary of the same lineage, *ib.*, note 2; 2 Ti. i. 6; Joseph's descent from David traced, M. i. 15; in what sense said to be "a just man," 19; why he desired on his return from Egypt to settle at Bethlehem, ii. 22.

Joseph, the patriarch, buried at Shechem, Sychem, or Sichem, A. vii. 16; a type of Christ, M. xxvi. 15; 1 P. iii. 18—22; cp. 1 C. xv. 8.

Joses, account of him, M. xiii. 55; xxvii. 56.

Joshua, a type of Jesus, M. i. 10, 11. 21; iii. 9; x. 2, note 2; connexion with the name Jesus, M. xxi. 9.

Jubilee, L. iv. 19; A. ii. 1.

Judæa, becomes an appanage to Syria, M. ii. 22; when made a Roman province, L. ii. 2.

Judah, the sceptre departs from, L. ii. 1.

Judaizers, moved to enforce the Levitical Law on the Gentile converts chiefly by envy, G. iii. 1; indignantly rebuked by St.

Paul, v. 12; arguments against their errors, Heb. i. 14; ii. 5; 1 Ti. vi. 20; Rev. iii. 7.

Judas Iscariot, his place in the Apostolic catalogue, M. x. 2; his murmuring against Mary, xxvi. 6. 8; objection of rationalistic interpreters and its refutation, 15; whether at the last supper Judas was a communicant? 20; a type of the Jews in his sin and in its end, xxvii. 5; A. i. 20; his rebuke of Mary for her expenditure of the ointment, Mk. xiv. 5; his conduct and Mary's contrasted, J. xii. 6; not made cleaner by our Lord's washing his feet, xiii. 18; how he "was given to the Son by the Father," xvii. 12; see *Ahithophel*; manner of his death, A. i. 18; lesson to be learnt from the choice of Judas with regard to unworthy Christian ministers, M. xvi. 6; x. 4. 41.

Judas of Galilee, no inconsistency between St. Luke's account of him and that given by Josephus, A. v. 37.

Jude, the Epistle of St., special character of it, Introduction to the First Epistle of St. John; its resemblance to the Second Epistle of St. Peter, Introduction; and is of a later date, *ib.*; date of it, *ib.*; its authorship, *ib.*; probably the same person who is called Thaddæus and Lebbaeus, M. x. 3; identity of Jude the Apostle, and Jude the Lord's brother, *ib.*; St. James, St. Jude, and St. Simon, probably brothers, *ib.*; called an Apostle by Tertullian, Jud. 1; controversial character of the Epistle, 3; Casaubon's description of it, *ib.*; announces the fulfilment of the prophecy in St. Peter's Second Epistle, 4; the false teachers, 4, 5. 7; the writer shows his knowledge of St. Peter's Second Epistle, 12; "Enoch the seventh from Adam," 14.

Judgment, committed to the Son, Mk. xiii. 32.

Judgment-day, anticipated at the Crucifixion, M. xxvii. 38; foreshadowed at the Transfiguration, xvii. 1; foretold, xxiv. 29; why concealed, xxv. 13; described, 46; L. iii. 17; a discloser of secrets, L. xii. 3; xvi. 4; typified by the Flood and Sodom, xvii. 28.

Judicial blindness, J. xii. 39.

Julian, the Emperor, objects to the account of St. Matthew's call to the Apostolate, M. ix. 9; anecdote of him, xiii. 55.

Julius, the centurion of the Augustan cohort, A. xxvii. 1.

Jupiter, often associated with Mercury, A. xiv. 11.

Justification, the Scriptural doctrine of it, L. x. 23—37; R. i. 17; iii. 26; bestowed in the Sacrament of Baptism, G. iii. 27; 1 C. vi. 11; 2 C. v. 15; Justification by Faith, G. v. 11; R. iii. 26—28; v. 1; Introduction to the Epistle to the Romans, and the Epistle of St. James; causes of our justification, R. iii. 21—28; v. 21; viii. 1. 3; Abraham's justification, iv. 2; the doctrine of, as taught by St. Paul, compared with that of St. James, Introduction to the Epistle to the Romans; and see *Absolution* and *Excommunication*.

Justified, meaning of the term, L. xviii. 14; R. iii. 20—28; G. ii. 15.

Justifying Faith, in what it consists, 1 C. ix. 27; R. iii. 26—28; definition of, 28; danger of making personal assurance the essence of it, 1 C. ix. 27.

Keys, on the power of the, M. xvi. 19, and note 1; symbolical significance of, *ib.*; xviii. 18; and see *Absolution* and *Excommunication*.

"Kick against the pricks, it is hard for thee to," a proverb familiar in the heathen world, A. xxvi. 14; our Lord does not disdain to use it, *ib.*; see *Proverbs*.

Kingdom, Mediatorial, of our Lord, M. xxviii. 18, 19; and see *World*.

"Kingdom of God," M. iii. 2; iv. 17; Mk. x. 23; A. i. 3.

"Kingdom of heaven," or "of the heavens," import of the expression, M. iii. 2; iv. 17; Mk. x. 23; promised, M. v. 3; represented in parables, xiii.

Kings, only amenable to Christ, whence their authority comes, L. xiii. 32; J. xix. 11; and see *Subjects*; how all Christians are kings, 1 P. ii. 9; Rev. i. 6; kings of the East, Rev. xvi. 2.

Kiss, a mark of approbation, Mk. x. 21.

Kneeling in prayer, Scriptural instances of it, E. iii. 14; cp. L. xviii. 13.

"Know," Scripture sense of the word, J. vii. 28; xvii. 3; = "consider," A. xxiii. 5.

Knowledge, our Lord's; see *Arians*.

Korah, on the gainsaying of, Dr. Mill's Sermon, Jud. 11; the sin of, may be committed in Christian times, *ib.*

Labarum; see *Constantine*.

Labour, all men born to, 2 Ti. iii. 8.

Labourers in the vineyard, parable of, explained, M. xx. 15.

- Laity, have their place, *τόπος*, to fill in Church-assemblies, as well as the Minister, 1 C. xiv. 16; their duties, M. xxiv. 45.
- Lamps, the ancient, apt representatives of men, M. xxv. 3.
- Language, anomalies of, in the New Testament, M. xii. 36; peculiarities of, and their use in giving an emphasis, M. xviii. 1. 20. 35; xxii. 21; L. v. 10; J. xxi. 22; use of *μᾶλλον περισσώτερον*, Mk. vii. 36; combination of masculine participle with neuter noun, Mk. ix. 20. 26; transition from neuter to masculine, L. xi. 14; cp. J. i. 11; xvi. 13; xix. 11; use of *αὐτός* when it signifies our Lord, L. i. 17; cp. J. xix. 6; use of *ἄν*, L. xvii. 6; *ἐκλαίει*, Mk. xiv. 72; different words for weeping, L. xix. 41; seeing, J. xvi. 16; contrast between *ἦν* and *ἐγένετο*, J. i. 6; use of *πρώγω*, vi. 54; contrast between the language of Martha and Mary, xi. 32; ellipses, L. xii. 47; and see *Grammar, Hyperbole, Alliteration, Negative, Emphasis, Metaphors, Aposiopesis*.
- Laodicea, its situation and importance, Rev. i. 11.
- Laodicea, one of the most important cities of Asia Minor in the time of the Apostles, Introduction to the Epistle to the Colossians; famous for its Literature and Arts, C. ii. 1; its situation, and political eminence, *ib.*; the Church there, iv. 13. 16; great medical school, 14; Epistle to, p. 282; C. iv. 16.
- Laodicene Council condemn the invocation of Angels, C. ii. 8.
- "Last time, the," the period between the first Advent of Christ and the second, so called in Scripture, M. xxiv. 29.
- Latin language, vain fancy of the Romanists with respect to its universality, with reference to Holy Scripture and to the Church, L. xxiii. 38; never holds the first place in the inscriptions on the Cross, *ib.*; and see M. xxvii. 46.
- Latin words in the New Testament, M. xxii. 15-17; and Introduction to the Gospel of St. Mark, p. 112; and Mk. ii. 4; v. 9; vi. 8; vii. 4; xii. 42.
- Laud, Archbishop, advised by Grotius to escape, M. x. 23, *note* 1; on "keeping the Unity of the Spirit," E. iv. 3.
- "Law and the prophets," equivalent to the whole Scripture of the Old Testament, M. xxii. 40; both represented at the Transfiguration, xvii. 3.
- Law, Mosaic, its promulgation on a mountain, M. v. 1; and the Gospel Beatitudes likewise delivered on a mount, *ib.*; in what sense the Law was fulfilled by our Lord, v. 17; He sends the proud to it, and the humble to the Gospel, xix. 18; its harmony with the Gospel, L. i. 11; xvi. 16; A. i. 4; 2 C. iii. 6. 11. 13; to which it gives place, L. ii. 23; R. viii. 3; the death of Christ the point to which it, with all the Prophets, tended as its end, L. ix. 31; 2 C. iii. 11-16; public reading of it at the Feast of Tabernacles in every seventh year, J. vii. 19; its *parenthetical* character, Introduction to the Epistle to the Romans, pp. 191-194; R. v. 12. 21; its need and use, 1 Ti. i. 8, 9; see *Gospel*.
- Law of Moses, its nature and use, G. ii. 19; iii. 19. 21; considered as a Rule, and as a Covenant, ii. 19; worketh wrath, and cannot set aside Faith and the Promise, R. iv. 14.
- Law, the Moral, at no period has mankind been exempt from it, R. v. 12. 20; vii. 6; existed before the Decalogue was given, 2 P. ii. 5; R. ii. 14, 15.
- "Law," how far we are subject to it, R. vii. 6.
- Law, the Ceremonial, subordinate to Moral, M. xxiii. 7; our Lord's treatment of it, viii. 3; ix. 20; xxvi. 20; L. vii. 14; x. 29; xi. 39; typical, M. xxviii. 1; preparatory to Gospel, Introduction to the Gospel of St. Luke, p. 158; L. i. 5; symbolized by Zacharias, 22; and by Symeon, ii. 28; its true origin, nature, and use, see Review of G. ii.; true view, by Augustine, of the Legal Ceremonies in their different stages, *ib.*; R. xiv. 6; St. Paul's conduct with respect to the Ritual and Ceremonial Law, Review of G. ii.; and A. xvi. 1; xviii. 18; xxi. 24; 1 C. ix. 20; design of the Law, Heb. x. 1.
- "Law, the," sometimes the Old Testament, J. viii. 17.
- Lawyer, spirit in which his question is put, M. xxii. 36.
- Laying on of hands, A. vi. 6; a rite reserved to the episcopate, viii. 14-18; Heb. vi. 2.
- Laymen in Church Synods, A. xv. 23; and see *Laity*.
- Lazarus, the beggar, derivation and import of the name, L. xvi. 20; the parable expounded, 22-31; parallel between this parable and the raising of Lazarus at Bethany, J. xi. 1.
- Lazarus, the brother of Martha and Mary, J. xi. 6; the raising of, mode in which some modern criticism has treated this miracle, Part i. p. vii.; related by St. John alone, J. xi. 1; this accounted for, *ib.*; objections of Spinoza, *ib.*; parallel between this miracle and the parable of the Rich Man and Lazarus, *ib.*; the miracle a moral test to the Jews, *ib.*; modern cavils against it, xii. 17.
- Least in the Kingdom of Heaven, M. xi. 11.
- Leaven, parable of the, M. xiii. 3; its nature and operation, 33.
- Legion, a Roman, Mk. v. 9.
- Leprosy, infectious and hereditary, M. viii. 2; a type of sin, *ib.*; L. xvii. 19.
- Levi, St. Matthew so called by the other Evangelists, M. ix. 9.
- Levites, J. i. 19.
- Levitical Covenant, just view of its nature and design, Heb. ix. 16, 17; and see *Law*.
- Levitical Ordinances, their typical sense, Heb. ix. 7; and see *Veil*.
- Levitical Sacrifices, the doctrine of, prepared the way for Evangelical Sacraments, Part ii. xvii.
- "Lex Talionis," the Christian, M. v. 44.
- Libertines, the synagogue of the, A. vi. 9.
- Liberty, the law of, Jam. i. 25.
- Liberty, Christian, the cause of it pleaded, its limits defined, and its perversion guarded against by St. Paul, G. v. 1-13; 1 C. iii. 22, 23; vi. 12; Rom. xiv. 13; 1 Ti. vi. 1. 12; and by St. Peter, 1 P. ii. 16; precepts respecting it, Introduction to the First Epistle of St. Peter; danger of a licentious abuse of it, 1 C. xi. 10; see *Freedom*.
- Life, the ordinary incidents of it to be spiritualized, J. iv. 38.
- "Lifted up," double sense of this expression in Scripture, J. iii. 14.
- Light, made especially prominent in the Feast of Tabernacles, J. viii. 12.
- "Light, the true," explained, J. i. 9.
- Linen, connected in Scripture with what is sacred, holy, and pure, A. x. 11, 12; see *Garments*.
- Linus, brief notice of him, 2 Ti. iv. 21.
- Literature, heathen, argument for its consecration to the service of Christianity, A. vii. 22.
- Living creatures, symbolical of the four Gospels, Part i. p. xli.; Introduction to the Gospel of St. Luke, p. 163; L. xv. 23; Introduction to the Gospel of St. John, pp. 265. 269; cp. J. xix. 26; Rev. iv. 6.
- Loaves and fishes, observable distinction between the way in which our Lord gave the former and the latter to the multitude, Mark vi. 41; Part i. p. 105.
- Locomotion, improved means of, in recent times, bearing of them upon the facilitating of Missionary labours, Part ii. p. 14.
- Locusts, a common food in the East, M. iii. 4; *spiritual* locusts, in the Apocalypse, what they represented, Rev. ix. 1.
- Logos, the, eternal subsistence of, E. i. 22; the term applied to Christ by other sacred writers, as well as by St. John, Heb. iv. 12; Jam. i. 18; 1 Pet. i. 2, 3; 2 P. iii. 5; Tit. i. 3.
- Loosing and binding, significance of the acts, M. xvi. 19.
- LORD, i. e. Jehovah, L. ii. 9; see *Jehovah*.
- Lord's Day, its earliest observance, M. xxi. 9; its first institution, xxvii. 62; xxviii. 1; L. xxiv. 1; J. xx. 1; A. xx. 7; Rev. i. 10; its primitive observance, *ib.*; J. xx. 1. 26; Introduction to the Acts of the Apostles, p. 18; A. xx. 7; prophetic intimations of its sanctification, Mk. i. 35; a day of *Rest*, typical of *future rest*, Heb. iv. 9; and see *Sabbath*.
- Lord's Prayer, brief exposition of, M. vi. 9-13; clauses in it adopted from the Jewish Liturgy, vi. 9, *note* 1; vii. 34; its perpetual use, J. xv. 7.
- Lord's Supper; see *Supper*.
- Lot, the judgment of his time, upon Sodom and Gomorrah, a type of the universal judgment by fire, M. xxiv. 37; L. xvii. 26-28.
- Lot, Matthias chosen by, A. i. 26.
- Love, our Lord's law of, supplants the Jewish law of Retaliation, M. v. 39; made by Christ a characteristic of his disciples, xxiv. 45; J. xiii. 34, 35; the companion of faith, and of a sense of forgiven sin, L. vii. 4; how "a new commandment," J. xiii. 3; love the root of all acceptable obedience, xv. 9.
- Love to Christ, how superior to all other, L. xiv. 26.
- Love, the Mother of true knowledge, 1 C. viii. 3.
- Love-feasts, abused, Jud. 12.
- Lucius, probably Luke, R. xvi. 21.
- Luke, St., probably a native of Antioch, the capital of Syria, Part i. p. 157; a companion of St. Paul in his missionary labours, *ib.*; the Evangelist of the heathen world, *ib.*; peculiar characteristics of his Gospel, Part i. p. xli.; L. viii. 54; his genealogy of Christ peculiarly fitted for the Hellenist Gentiles, 158; and see *Hellenistic Proselytes*; his declarations respecting the origin of evil adapted to the instruction of the Greeks, 159; distinguishes between ordinary diseases and demoniacal possession, *ib.*; state of the disembodied soul, *ib.*; on Prayer, 160; and Thanksgiving, *ib.*; the Gospel, a message of grace to *all nations*, 161; the parable of the Good Samaritan, its adaptation to the case of the Gentiles, 161, 162; and also the parable of the Prodigal Son, 162, 163; St. Luke's full account of the *Ascension*, which is not mentioned by St. Matthew, and only slightly noticed by St. Mark, 163; extracts from an Academic Lecture by the Editor, in which the Evangelist's motive for writing his Gospel is discussed, 164; testimony of Ambrose, *ib.*; date of it, 168; and L. vii. 13; on the genuineness of his Preface, and of his earlier chapters, L. i. 1; why he was in-

spired to write his Gospel in addition to those of St. Matthew and St. Mark, 3; his connexion with St. Paul, *ib.*, and i. 4; why he does not refer Theophilus to the two Gospels already extant, of St. Matthew and St. Mark, *ib.*; paraphrase of the proemium, 4; adopts the Septuagint Version of the Old Testament as familiar to the Gentile converts, and thus connects the Gospel with its history, 7; his Gospel epitomized and mutilated by Marcion, ii. 23; and confirmed by the Apocryphal Gospels, 28; his design in inserting the genealogy of our Lord, iii. 23; his order of the temptations differs from St. Matthew's, iv. 5; never employs the term Παῖς, used by the other Evangelists, v. 1; our Lord's prayers and exhortations to prayer, specially noticed by him, and why, 16; his peculiar mode of describing Christ by the term Κύριος, ii. 9; vii. 13; remarkable avowal from him, considered as a Physician, viii. 43; very seldom uses Hebrew terms or phrases, 54; declines the use of the term μετεμορφώθη (used by Matthew and Mark in their account of the Transfiguration), why, ix. 29; declines using the word εὐαγγέλιον, Mk. x. 29; opinions of German critics respecting the source from which he compiled his x.—xvii. chapters, L. x. 1; exemplification of the manner in which, under Divine guidance, he usually groups things according to their spiritual connexion, viii. 1; ix. 16; x. preliminary note; xi. 14. 37; xii. 4; xiv. 7; xv. 1; xvii. 19; xix. 45; xxiv. 50; Luke specially dwells upon the merciful sayings and acts of our Lord to Samaritans, to despised Jews, as publicans, and to penitent sinners generally, xv. 1; inserts portions of our Lord's teaching corrective of the erroneous notions of the heathen respecting the intermediate state of the soul, xvi. 22; mark of the later composition of his Gospel, xix. 33; mentions the entrance of Satan into Judas,—a fact not stated by Matthew and Mark, xxii. 3; reason of this, *ib.*; shows how the primeval prophecy, or *protangelium*, was fulfilled by Christ, in the bruising of the serpent's head, *ib.*; Hebrew phrase cited, why, 15; never uses the word "Gethsemane," 40; dwells frequently on the visible ministrations of good angels to the Son of man, 43; alone mentions our Lord's prayer for his murderers, xxiii. 34; order in which he specifies the languages in which the inscription on the cross was written, 38; knew that our Lord was forty days on earth after his resurrection; his authorship of the Acts of the Apostles established by internal evidence, Vol. ii. p. v., note 5; design of his Gospel, vii.; and of the Acts, *ib.*; in his reports of speeches he is wont to begin with describing the attitude and gesture of the speaker, A. ii. 14; and studiously preserves his very words, iv. 17; is careful to mention the extension of the privileges of the Gospel to women, v. 14; groundlessly charged with historical inaccuracy by several modern German critics, 36; ix. 7; why he does not dilate on the martyrdom of James, xii. 2; his minute acquaintance with facts, 14; his account of the death of Herod Agrippa, compared with Josephus' description of it, 21—23; his training in physical science fitted him for the task of recording supernatural operations, *ib.*; does not mention the names of those whose hands were laid upon Barnabas and Saul when they were set apart for the Apostleship to the Gentiles; why, xiii. 2; instance of his historical accuracy with reference to the proconsul of Cyprus, Sergius Paulus, 7; instance of his fidelity in recounting the frailties of the Apostles, xv. 39; reflection on his silence concerning an important part of Paul's Missionary labours, xvi. 6; dwells on Paul's acts at Philippi, as a specimen of his preaching in Greece and Italy, 12; why he uses the expression πνεῦμα Πύθωνος instead of δαίμωνιον, or πνεῦμα ἀκάθαρτον, 16; instance of his exactness in the case of Philippi, xvii. 6; of Thessalonica, *ib.*; and of Achaia, xviii. 12; why he mentions the beating of Sosthenes, 17; evidence of his veracity, noticed by Paley, xix. 31; instance of his accuracy in speaking of the ἀνθύπατοι at Ephesus, 38; his modesty, xx. 5; seems to have joined St. Paul first at Troas, *ib.*; xvi. 8. 11; and to have remained with him till the end of the time comprised in the Acts, *ib.*; appears to have been left by the Apostle at Philippi, xvi. 20; xx. 5; and was there entrusted with the care of the Church, xx. 5; instances of modesty, xx. 5; xxi. 12; exemplification of the accuracy of his style, 24; signal instance of lenity, charity, and truth, and of Divine Inspiration, xxiv. 27; his design in his narrative of St. Paul's voyage and shipwreck, xxvii. 40; minuteness of the incidents, *ib.*; writes as a Hellenist to Hellenists, xxviii. 1; silent contrast between the kindness of the inhabitants of Melita and the conduct of those who despised the rest of the world as barbarous, and yet had barbarously treated St. Paul, *ib.*; his account of the Apostle's treatment at Rome illustrated by Josephus' narrative of the detention there of Agrippa, xxviii. 16; the arrival of St. Paul at Rome the culminating point of St. Luke's history, 30; beautiful close of his narrative of the Apostle's ministrations, 31; why probably left at Philippi by St. Paul, 1 Th. i. 9;

his Gospel designed for the use of the Church of Macedonia and Achaia, *ib.*; v. 2; he and St. Paul the only sacred writers who recite the commemorative sentence, "Do this in remembrance of me;" the latter recites it twice, 1 C. xi. 24; inference from this, as marking their personal intercommunion, *ib.*; employs the word ἐπάρχων in common only with St. Paul, 6; probable allusion to him in 2 C. viii. 18; probable reason why he is so little noticed by name in St. Paul's Epistles, *ib.*; and why he never mentions Titus in the Acts of the Apostles, *ib.*; his Gospel, the Gospel of St. Paul,—the Gospel of the Gentile world, L. xv. 31; R. xi. 15; probably the same with Lucius, xvi. 21; accompanied St. Paul to Rome, and was with him when he wrote his Epistle to the Church in that city, *ib.*; probably known to the Colossians as a physician, C. iv. 14; allusion to his profession in the Collect for St. Luke's Day, *ib.*; the medical school of Laodicea, *ib.*; known to the Gentile Churches by his Gospel, *ib.*; seems to have been specially conversant with the Philippians, P. iv. 3; his Gospel probably quoted by St. Paul in 1 Ti. v. 18; alone present with the Apostle in his last imprisonment at Rome, 2 Ti. iv. 11; why he did not continue his narrative in the Acts of the Apostles to the end of St. Paul's career, A. xxviii. 30, 31; 2 Ti. iv. 11.

Lying, comes from Satan, J. viii. 44.

Lysanias, L. iii. 1.

Lystra and Derbe, A. xiv. 6.

Macedonia, in St. Paul's time, A. xvi. 10.

Macedonian heretics, dispute the reading of R. viii. 11.

Macedonian monarchy, breaks down the local reverence for national duties, Vol. ii. 9; prepares the way for the Gospel by sea, 10.

Magdala, situation of, M. xv. 39.

Magdalene; see *Mary*.

Magi, import of the term, M. ii. 1; on the time of their visit, *ib.*; their country and gifts, 11; L. ii. 22; perhaps typified by the Queen of Sheba; and types of the kings of the East, in Rev. xvi. 12; objections of modern Rationalists to the History of their Visit, M. ii. 1, note 2; on the date of their visit, M. ii. 9; symbolic meaning of their gifts, 11.

Magians; see *Origin of Evil*, and *Gnostics*; cp. J. vi. 11.

Magistrates [στρατηγοί], their office and functions, A. xvi. 20. 22.

Mahomet, parodies the descent of the Dove, M. iii. 16; "Camel and Needle" found in the Koran, xix. 24; and see *Mohammedanism*.

Maintenance, Ministerial; see *Ministers*.

Mammon, derivation and import of the name, M. vi. 24; L. xvi. 9.

Man, as distinguished from God and angels, called "flesh and blood," M. xvi. 17; J. i. 13; G. i. 16.

Manaen, Herod's foster-brother, A. xiii. 1.

"Manger," the original word wrongly so rendered, L. ii. 7.

Manichæans, their heresy, and its refutation, J. iii. 14; vi. 11. 44; viii. 23. 44; x. 8; see *Marcionites*.

"Manifold wisdom of God," exemplification of it, E. iii. 10.

Manna, meaning of the term, J. vi. 32; Christ the true manna, *ib.*; Rev. ii. 17.

Manuscripts of the New Testament, recent assiduous collation of, Vol. i. p. v.; Table of Ancient Greek MSS. of the New Testament in Uncial Letters, xxxiv.; Uncial, not always to be relied on, P. ii. 1.

"Many," often used in Scripture for "all," M. xx. 16. 28; xxvi. 28; R. v. 15. 18, 19; viii. 29. 32; 1 Ti. ii. 6.

Maranatha, a solemn warning against the neglect or abuse of the Lord's Supper, 1 C. xi. 26; xvi. 22.

Marcionite and Manichæan controversy, lesson taught by the history of, M. xiii. 52.

Marcionites, their abuse of 2 C. iii. 6—15 refuted, E. ii. 20; their doctrine of *dualism*, 1 P. iii. 18—22.

Mariani, the inhabitants of Hungary so called, A. xix. 35; the epithet fitly applied to many others, *ib.*

Mark, St., brief notice of him, C. iv. 10; Introductory Note to his Gospel; 1 P. v. 13; C. iv. 10; 2 Ti. iv. 11; supposed to be the young man in Mk. xiv. 51; the son of Mary, to whose house, in Jerusalem, St. Peter went when he was delivered from prison by the Angel, Part i. p. 111; associated, soon after, with St. Barnabas, his kinsman, and travelled with him and St. Paul, *ib.*; quitted them in Pamphylia, and returned to Jerusalem, *ib.*; his subsequent history, *ib.*; his intimate connexion with St. Peter, 112; on the style, order, and design of his Gospel; characteristics of it, Part i. p. xli.; 113; date of his

- Gospel, M. xxiv. 22; Mk. xiv. 37; dictated by St. Peter, Part i. p. 113; confirms St. Matthew's history, Mk. i. 16; and repeats parts of it, 16. 20; see *Evangelists*; personal history, 16; the same as John Mark of the Acts of the Apostles, and the Mark of St. Peter's Epistle and St. Paul's, *ib.*; his Hebrew name John, Part i. p. 112; why he took the Roman name Marcus, *ib.*; instances of minute and graphical notices, Mk. i. 43; ii. 2; iii. 5; iv. 38; vi. 39; vii. 32-37; viii. 22-24; ix. 17; x. 32. 46; xi. 32; xiii. 3; xiv. 39. 51; xv. 19; his veracity, viii. 33; the genuineness of the last ten verses of his Gospel discussed, xvi. 9; testimony of S. Irenæus, *ib.*; and of Eusebius, Jerome, Victor of Antioch, and S. Cyril of Jerusalem, *ib.*; testimony of Bede and Theophylact, *ib.*; apparent *internal* evidence against the authenticity of those verses, *ib.*; often uses the present tense, see *Present Tense*; wrote his Gospel chiefly for the use of the Church of Rome, Introductory Note to the Gospel of St. Luke; and see *Romans*, second paragraph; knew that our Lord was forty days on earth after His Resurrection, L. xxiv. 50; notices of him in the Acts, A. xii. 12. 25; xiii. 5. 13; xv. 37; St. Paul's final commendation of, 2 Ti. iv. 11; known to the Asiatic Jewish Christians, Introduction to the First Epistle of St. Peter; visits Rome, *ib.*; becomes Bishop of Alexandria, *ib.*; contrast between him and Demas, Pn. 23, 24.
- Marriage, its end, indissolubility, M. xix. 3-11; Mk. x. 11, 12; L. xvi. 18; A. xxvi. 30; E. v. 33; forbidden by heretics, 1 Ti. iv. 3; is "honourable in all," Heb. xiii. 4; the duties of parents and children with reference to the entrance into the Holy Estate of, 1 C. vii. 36; see *Divorce*.
- Marriage, its holiness, Introduction to the Epistle to the Ephesians, p. 277; a type of Christ's union with the Church, E. v. 28. 32; J. i. 30; iii. 28; 2 C. xi. 2; Rev. xvii. 1.
- Marriage ceremonies, M. xxv. 1.
- Marriage feasts among the Jews, J. ii. 1; parable of, M. xxii. 2; xxv. 1-12.
- Marriage of clergy, 1 Ti. iii. 2.
- Martyrdom, Christian, the duty of, 1 J. iii. 16; two kinds of, described by our Lord, M. xx. 23; called "baptism of blood," Mk. i. 4; cp. L. xii. 49; J. x. 11; the death-day of martyrs called their birth-day, "Natalis," A. ii. 24; vii. 60.
- Martyrs in the Old Testament, typical of, and acknowledged by, Christ, M. xxiii. 35.
- Martyrs, to whom do they owe their power of suffering? J. xxi. 19; their blood, the seed of the Church, A. viii. 1-4; emblems of, 1 P. i. 7.
- Mary, the same as Miriam, L. i. 5.
- Mary, the blessed Virgin, the genealogies in Matthew and Luke not hers, but Joseph's, M. i. 1; reason why our Lord was conceived of a Virgin *espoused*, 18; L. i. 27; the prophecy in Isaiah in reference to the Virgin Mary, M. i. 23; L. i. 27; seems to have had no other children, M. i. 25; contrasted with Eve, L. i. 38; was not exempt from original sin, M. iii. 13, *note* 4; xii. 48; L. i. 27. 47; supposed to be imitating the conduct of the Shunammite, Mk. iii. 21; never called Mary by St. John, ii. 3; the angelic salutation, L. i. 28; her song of thanksgiving, 46-55; Hebraisms in it, 46; her enrolment and consequent journey to Bethlehem, ii. 5; her liability to the capitation tax, 5; her offering at her purification, 22; probably before the visit of the Magi, *ib.*; probable date of her decease, Introductory Note to St. John's Gospel; called Θεοτόκος, J. i. 14; our Lord addresses her with the designation of "Woman," ii. 4; cp. xix. 26; Mary is committed to the care of St. John by our dying Saviour, *ib.*; her worshippers fitly called *Mariani*, A. xix. 35; the month of May called in honour of her, "Mois de Marie," *ib.*; as well as Joseph, of the house and lineage of David, R. i. 4; perversion of the prophecy (Gen. iii. 15) in the Papal Decree on the Immaculate Conception, xvi. 20.
- Mary, the mother of James and Joses, M. xxviii. 1; Mk. xiv. 47.
- Mary anoints our Lord's head with spikenard, Mk. xiv. 3; contrasted with Judas, M. xxvi. 6.
- Mary and Martha, their courage and constancy, J. xi. 18; their language and deportment contrasted, 32.
- Mary Magdalene, our Lord's special appearance to her after His resurrection, M. xxviii. 9; her case and that of Thomas contrasted, J. xx. 17. 29; her history, supplementary to that of the faithful woman, Mk. v. 30; erroneously identified by some with the woman who anointed our Lord's feet in the house of Simon the Pharisee, L. vii. 36-50.
- Marys, the Four, in the Gospel, account of, from Papias, M. xii. 46, *note* 1.
- Masoretic critics, their exact and unwearied diligence, Part i. p. v.; failed to preserve the *spirit*, though they guarded the *letter*, of the Sacred Volume, vi.; parallel between them and some modern Biblical Critics, *ib.*; the Cabala, *ib.*
- Masters and Slaves, their respective duties, 1 Ti. vi. 2.
- Matthew, St., derivation and import of his name, M. ix. 9; called Levi by the other Evangelists, *ib.*; Mk. ii. 14; reason why he took the name of Matthew, *ib.*; on his personal characteristics and on the style, order, and design of his Gospel, Vol. i. pp. xli.-xlviii.; date of it, xlix.; designed especially for Jews, *ib.*; often quoted by St. Mark and St. Luke, lii.; discrepancies of ancient testimony with regard to its date, xlix.; tradition respecting a Hebrew original, and the testimony of Clemens Alexandrinus, l.; and xxvii. 9; the alleged opinion respecting the testimony of Irenæus on the point examined, li.; proofs of the genuineness of his Gospel, lii.; his genealogy of our Lord, M. i. 1; objection alleged against it by the Manichees, and by Celsus and Julian, *ib.*; the views of Christian Antiquity with respect to it, *ib.*; his manner of quoting prophecy, ii. 5; objection of Porphyry and Julian to the account of St. Matthew's ready obedience to our Lord's call, ix. 9; instance of his humility, x. 3; Mk. ii. 15; and of his veracity, M. xv. 33; xvii. 16; xx. 24; does not mention the Ascension, why, xxviii. 20; begins his Gospel with Christ's Human Generation, Mk. i. 1; his Greek Divinely inspired, viii. 29, and *note* 1; characteristics by which his Gospel is distinguished from that of St. Luke, Introductory Note to St. Luke's Gospel; knew of Joseph's and Mary's earlier connexion with Nazareth, L. i. 26.
- Matthias, St., his appointment by Divine ordination to the Apostolic Office, A. i. 26.
- May, the month of, called "Mois de Marie," A. xix. 35.
- Means of Grace, not to be despised because simple in themselves, J. vi. 9; ix. 6; nor limited by the infirmities of those who administer them, M. x. 4. 41; xvi. 4; J. iv. 1, 2; vi. 27; x. 13; xiii. 20; typified by the Wedding-garment, M. xxii. 12; oil and wine, L. x. 31; they are unprofitable to schismatics, Mk. ix. 40; cannot be superseded by those of man's devising, L. xiv. 18; typified, xix. 4; in what their efficacy lies, Introduction to the Gospel of St. John, pp. 261, 262; J. xv. 3; manner of their operation not to be curiously inquired into, J. iii. 4; and see *Supper* and *Sacraments*.
- Measures among the ancients, L. xvi. 16.
- Meats, abstinence from, enjoined by the Manichæans, 1 Ti. iv. 3.
- Mediatorial kingdom, the, 1 C. xv. 25; E. i. 22; see *World*.
- Medical profession, true view of its dignity, J. v. 4; C. iv. 14; not in high repute among the polite nations of antiquity, *ib.*
- Melchizedek, his bringing forth of bread and wine a prefiguration of the Sacrament of the Lord's Supper, M. xxvi. 26; a type of Christ, Heb. iv. 6; vi. 20; vii. 1; who? *ib.*
- Melita, the island so called, A. xxviii. 1.
- Mental reservation, L. xxiv. 28.
- Mercurius, St. Paul compared to, A. xiv. 12.
- Mercy, description of, Jam. ii. 13.
- Mercy-seat, Heb. iv. 16.
- Messiah, expected by the Samaritans, J. iv. 25; general expectation of one at the time of Christ's birth, M. ii. 2; false notions entertained by the Jews respecting him, M. xvi. 14; xxiv. 11; his meekness and humility, xxi. 5; Jewish tradition respecting the hour of his coming, xxv. 6; notions of the Apostles respecting him, L. ix. 45; import of the name, L. iv. 18; ix. 20; J. i. 42.
- Metaphors, in the New Testament, from ships, L. i. 1, 2; xii. 29; common in St. Paul, A. xx. 20; for others used by him, see Heb. vii. 19; 1 Ti. vi. 10. 19; 2 Ti. i. 6; iv. 6; 1 C. ix. 24; 2 C. iv. 7; Heb. xii. 12; from birds, M. iii. 16; xxiii. 37; xxiv. 28; L. i. 35; xvii. 36; J. vi. 54; from animals, L. xiii. 32; from the art of war, ii. 52; iii. 4; xiv. 28; xviii. 1; from a pastoral life, xv. 4; from law and commerce, and secular concerns, iii. 14; xii. 58; J. x. 11; from fire, L. xii. 49; and water, *ib.*; xviii. 2; Rev. ii. 17; from agriculture, &c., L. iii. 17; x. 2; xvii. 31; from trees, xxiii. 31; concerning the Christian ministry, ix. 62.
- Methodists, warning to, 1 J. iii. 7.
- Metrical forms of sentences in the New Testament; see *Proverbs*.
- Micah, v. 2; exposition of this prophecy, M. ii. 6, and *note* 5.
- Michael, import of the name, Jud. 9; contends with the Devil, *ib.*
- Millennium, the doctrine of, examined, J. v. 28; Rev. xx. 6; 1 P. i. 4.
- "Mind," and "Conscience," difference between them in a Scriptural view, Tit. i. 15.
- Ministers, Christian, their duties and Scriptural appellations, M. xxiv. 45; L. ix. 62; x. 1; their appointment, Introduction to the Acts, p. 17; necessity of their office, and its due organization, *ib.*, and ix. 6; duty of the laity to maintain them, L. viii. 3; G. vi. 6; 1 C. ix. 6. 14. 17; Introduction to the First Epistle to the Corinthians; their duties, J. x. 1; xxi. 15-17; a warning to them, xii. 6; made holy by their office, xi. 51; see *Means of Grace*, and *Ordination*; three

- orders of, Introductory Note to 1 Ti. iii.; of the Church of England, whence they derive their commission, Rev. xvii. 1; and see *Mission*.
- Ministry of our Lord, its chronology and duration, M. ii. 20; xxiv. 15; L. ii. 8; iv. 19; xiii. 6; when begun, iii. 1. 21. 23; and see J. ii. 13; v. 1; vii. 8; and Review, p. 309.
- Miracles, their use as evidences, M. iv. 23; xi. 2; J. v. 31. 36; xviii. 30; contrast between our Lord's mode of working and that of the Prophets or Apostles, M. viii. 3; L. vii. 14; J. xi. 43; of Apostles after Ascension, see *Ascension*; adaptation to circumstances, L. viii. 54; those of our Lord were also prophecies or prophetic parables in action, M. xiv. 21; Mk. vi. 41; viii. 24; x. 46; L. v. 6; and full of dogmatic teaching, M. viii. 2; L. viii. 11, 12; J. vi. 4; xi. 44; and in the manner of working, exemplary to all, Mk. v. 40; J. ix. 6; the presence of miracles considered as a note of the Church, not so potent as might be supposed, A. v. 24; how long continued? Mk. xvi. 17; never wrought on Fire, L. ix. 54; evidences of their reality, J. ii. 6; vi. 13; xi. 39; xii. 17; how many in our daily life, J. vi. 11, note 3, and 14; vii. 21; difference between those before and after the Resurrection, xxi. 10; not wrought by the Apostles in their own behalf, or in behalf of their nearest friends, 2 C. xii. 8; 1 Th. v. 23; will be wrought by False Teachers, M. xxiv. 24; 2 Th. ii. 9; Rev. xiii. 13, 14.
- Mishna, M. xv. 1.
- Mission due, its necessity to Preachers, Jam. iii. 1; A. xix. 15; R. x. 15; Heb. v. 5.
- Missionaries, have a holy Manual for their guidance in the Acts of the Apostles, Introduction to the Acts; ought to *water* as well as *plant*, A. xx. 6; momentous truth of which they need always to be reminded, A. xvi. 6; J. xvii. 21; Paul's speech at Athens, a model to them in their addresses to the heathen, A. xvii. 22, 23; Introduction to the First Epistle to the Thessalonians.
- Missionary progress, four stages of, specified by Christ in his Commission to his Apostles, Introduction to the Epistle of St. Peter; missionary progress and settlement of the early Church, 1 C. ix. 6.
- Missions, neglect of an important primitive precedent in modern ones, L. x. 1.
- Mnason, of Cyprus, St. Paul's host at Jerusalem, on his going up thither from Cæsarea, A. xxi. 16.
- Modesty of Apostolic language, 1 Th. iv. 6.
- Mohammedanism, its origin and success, Rev. ix. 1—9; and see *Mahomet*.
- Moloch, description of his character and idolatrous rites, M. v. 22, and note 3; worship of, A. vii. 43.
- Monarchies, the Four; see *Empires*.
- Monarchy, the Third, provides a common language (Greek) for the Gospel, Introduction to the Acts, pp. 9, 10; xxviii. 15.
- Monarchy, the Fourth (Roman), provides roads, which in God's good purposes became highways for the Gospel, Introduction to the Acts, p. 10; A. xxviii. 15.
- Monday and Thursday, fast days with the Pharisees, L. xviii. 12.
- Money, different kinds of, in use among the Jews, M. xxvii. 3; and see L. ix. 3; the true use of, L. xvi. 9; J. xiii. 29.
- Money-changers in the Temple, their occupation, M. xxi. 12; J. ii. 14; their expulsion, J. ii. 15.
- Monophysite heresy, refutation of, L. ii. 52.
- Monothelites, their heresy and its refutation, M. xxvi. 39.
- Montanism, Heb. vi. 6.
- Moon, typical of Church, M. xxvii. 45.
- Moral probation in this world, in what it consists, Vol. ii. p. xxx.
- Mosaic Dispensation, its transitory glory, contrasted with the abiding glory of the Gospel, 2 C. iii. 6—13.
- Moses and Elias, the representatives of the Law and the Prophets, 2 P. i. 19.
- Moses, his punishment for smiting the rock twice, and for his words respecting it, affords a double warning to the ministers of Christ, 1 C. x. 4.
- Moses, on the difference between the miracles wrought by our Lord and by him, M. xiv. 20; appearance of Moses and Elias at the Transfiguration, xvii. 3; a type of Christ, A. iii. 22; ἀστέρος τῷ Θεῷ, vii. 20; his learning, 22; see *Law* and *Pentateuch*.
- Moses puts a veil upon his face, when and why? 2 C. iii. 6—15; removes it, when and why? *ib.*; Michael contends with the Devil respecting his body, Jud. 9.
- "Moses' seat, they that sit in," how far they are to be obeyed, M. xxiii. 2; J. ix. 35.
- Moth, reference to, in warnings to the rich and worldly, M. vi. 19; J. v. 2; A. xx. 33.
- Mother and brethren of Christ, L. viii. 21.
- Mount, the Sermon on the, M. v. 1; L. vi. 12.
- Mountains, used for the delivery of both Law and Gospel, M. v. 1; for prayer, and other spiritual purposes, xiv. 23; Mk. iii. 13; cp. J. xviii. 1; M. xvii. 1; see *Olives*.
- Mourning for the Dead, M. ix. 23; L. viii. 52; J. xi. 19; Christian views respecting it contrasted with those of the Gentiles, 1 Ti. iv. 13.
- Mustard-seed, parable of the grain of, M. xiii. 3; L. xiii. 18; its nature described, 31, and note 2.
- Mutual recognition; see *Future State*.
- Myrrh, the nature of, J. xix. 39; observations on the quality and quantity of that used at our Lord's entombment, *ib.*; and M. xxvii. 54.
- Mystery, meaning of the term in Scripture, M. xiii. 11; E. i. 9; v. 32; C. ii. 2; Rev. xvii. 7; J. xii. 44.
- Naim, L. vii. 11.
- Name, change of, A. xiii. 8; sometimes in contempt, J. iv. 5.
- Name, comprehensiveness of the term in Hebrew, M. vi. 9; x. 41; "In My Name," M. xviii. 20; see xxiv. 5; xxviii. 19; Mk. ix. 38. 41.
- "Name, *the*," the NAME of Christ, J. xvii. 11; A. v. 41; Jam. ii. 7; P. ii. 9; 3 J. 7.
- Name, the imposing of a, the special prerogative of fatherhood, E. iii. 15.
- Names, Greek, how abbreviated in the New Testament, Introduction to the Gospel of St. Luke, p. 157, note; heathen, Christianized, R. xvi. 14.
- Names, in Scripture, the mention of them, not without Divine guidance, 1 Ti. i. 18.
- Names, in the New Testament, their appropriateness and prophetic significance, M. xxvi. 36; xxiii. 35; L. i. 5. 13. 19. 72, 73; ii. 25. 36. 51; xvi. 20; xix. 42; J. i. 43. 46; v. 2; ix. 6.
- Names of the Apostles, their derivation, M. x. 3. 5; Mk. ii. 14.
- Names of those healed by Christ, not often mentioned, Mk. x. 46; J. xi. 1.
- Names, often double among the Jews, M. xxiii. 35; Mk. iii. 16; see *Roman Influence*.
- Nathanael, J. vii. 41; xxi. 2.
- Natural Religion, R. i. 20; iv. 3; cp. L. xii. 57.
- "Nature," its sympathy with the events recorded in Scripture, J. x. 22; Human Nature, R. ii. 14; viii. 8; import of the term, E. ii. 3; and see *Human Nature*.
- "Nazarene, he shall be called a," M. ii. 23; cp. Mk. xvi. 6; J. xix. 19.
- Nazareth, import of the name, L. ii. 51; iv. 16. 29.
- Nazarite Vow, L. i. 15; A. xviii. 18; xxi. 24.
- Neapolis, a name given to Sichem, J. iv. 5.
- Negative, its use in Hebrew, M. ix. 13; peculiar form of, Mk. viii. 12.
- Nestorians, irrefragable Scriptural arguments against them, L. v. 16; R. ix. 5.
- New, frequency of this word, M. xxvi. 29.
- New Birth; see *Baptism* and *Regeneration*.
- New Man, E. iv. 23.
- New Testament, marvellous harmony between all its parts, 1 P. i. 6; came before the Old Testament to the *Gentile* world, 1 Ti. iv. 15; all its books end happily, Mk. xvi. 9; see *Gospels*.
- Nicodemus, a Greek name, but common among the Jews, J. iii. 1; his character, *ib.*; contrasted with the woman of Samaria, J. iv. 29.
- Nicolaitans, their heresy, A. vi. 5; 1 P. iii. 18—22; 2 P. ii. 2; the term "Nicolaitan," in the Apocalypse, *ib.*; Rev. ii. 6.
- Nicolas, his appointment to the diaconate, A. vi. 5; charged with heresy by the earlier Fathers, *ib.*
- Nicopolis, described, Tit. iii. 12; St. Paul's visit to, *ib.*
- Night, the, placed before the Day, by St. Luke frequently, by St. Mark and St. Paul always, by St. John, never, 1 Th. ii. 9; the time of the Agony and Transfiguration, M. xxvi. 37; L. ix. 32.
- Nilus, St., on the benefits of persecution, A. viii. 1—4.
- Noah, the time of the second Advent compared to his days, M. xxiv. 37; L. xvii. 26, 27; the first who is called "righteous" in the Old Testament, Heb. xi. 7; Christ preached to those who lived in his time, 1 P. iii. 19.
- Nobility, true, its characteristics, A. xvii. 11.
- Noetian heresy, M. ix. 6; refuted, *ib.*; J. xx. 17.
- Nominative, peculiar use in the New Testament, M. xi. 27.
- Nonconformists, some of their main arguments confuted, R. xiv. 13.
- Novatians, their heresy confuted, M. xxvi. 75; exposition of C. i. 15; perversion of Heb. vi. 6; and of xii. 17.
- Numbers, the symbolical meaning of, in Scripture, M. x. 2; see also i. 17; Rev. xi. 19; xx. 2; round numbers, L. x. 1; see F

- Three, Three-and-a-half, Four, Six, Seven, Twelve, Hundred and forty-four, Thousand.*
- Nursing children, the duty of, incumbent upon Christian mothers, 1 T. ii. 7; great evils of neglecting it, *ib.*
- Oaths, rash, M. xiv. 9; when may oaths be taken? v. 34; nature and obligation of, Heb. vi. 16; the lawfulness of, for certain purposes, and on certain occasions, under the Gospel, xxvi. 63. 72; Rev. x. 5, 6; teaching of Scripture concerning them, Jam. v. 12, 13.
- Obedience, exemplified by Christ, L. ii. 48. 51; to God's Law not to be partial, Jam. ii. 10.
- Obedience and Submission distinguished, R. xiii. 1. 5.
- Obedience to God's will the root of Divine Knowledge, J. vii. 17; Love the root of obedience, xvi. 9.
- Obh* [Heb. *אֵבֶן*], its probable connexion with the Greek *ὄφης*, ii. 80.
- Offences; see *Scandal*.
- Offerings to the Temple, L. xxi. 5; see *Alms*.
- Offertory, the weekly, 1 C. xvi. 2; a sweet sacrifice at God's altar, P. iv. 18; Heb. xiii. 15, 16.
- Offices, not persons, to be regarded, M. x. 41.
- Oil, its spiritual meaning, M. xxv. 3; Mk. vi. 13; L. x. 31; on the primitive practice of anointing the sick with, Jam. v. 14.
- Ointment; see *Spikenard*.
- Old Age, its blessings, L. ii. 38.
- Old Testament, on the citations from, in the New, M. xxii. 24; xxvii. 9; only twice quoted by St. Mark, i. 2; imitated by St. John, J. i. 1; why sometimes quoted as *spoken*, sometimes as *written*, Heb. iv. 4; the threefold division of, L. xxiv. 44; cp. J. x. 34; importance of Luke xxiv. 44 in reference to the integrity and inspiration of the canonical books of the Old Testament; see also M. xxiii. 2; not contrary to the New, L. ii. 23; J. iii. 14; iv. 37; x. 8; the Canon of the Old Testament in the hands of the Jews authorized by our Lord, J. v. 39; its inspiration attested by the New Testament, Pt. ii. p. xxvi.; the Gentiles prepared by the New Testament for its profitable study, 1 Th. iv. 15; disparaged by the Marcionite and Manichæan heretics in comparison with the New, R. xv. 4; symbolized by the Four-and-twenty Elders, Rev. iv. 4; Old Testament History, its typical sense, M. xiii. 35; see *Types*; Christ's testimony to its inspiration, Introduction to the Acts, p. 16; L. xvi. 29; xxiv. 27. 44; when dying, M. xxvii. 46; Mk. xv. 34; cp. L. xvi. 29; confirmed by the Gospels, M. xii. 39; Old Testament, perhaps divided into sections, named from their subjects, Mk. xii. 26; prophets, figured by the Apostles, J. xxi. 3; and see *Prophecy*.
- Old things made use of to teach new, M. xiii. 52.
- Olive-press, a Scriptural emblem of trial, distress, and agony, M. xxvi. 36.
- Olives, Mount of, its situation, M. xxi. 1; the siege of Jerusalem began there, xxiv. 3; general remarks on, as connected with our Lord's history, xxvi. 36; xxvii. 33; J. xviii. 1; the spot there whence the Ascension took place, A. i. 12; its fitness for so august a transaction, *ib.*; prophetic reference to some future manifestation of Christ's glory there, *ib.*; typical character of our Lord's triumphal progress from the Mount to the city of Jerusalem, *ib.*; see *Bethany* and *Bethphage*.
- Omnipotence and Omnipresence of Christ, L. viii. 1.
- "Opened his mouth," import of the phrase, M. v. 2.
- Oratio obliqua, change of to *recta*, A. i. 4; xvii. 3; xxiii. 22; L. v. 14; Mk. vi. 9; 1 C. iv. 6.
- Orders, care to be taken in conferring them, 1 Ti. v. 22; the three, of the Christian ministry, Introduction to the First Epistle to Timothy; and see *Ministers*.
- Ordination, L. x. 1; by laying on of hands, A. vi. 6; the Apostolic mode of, xiv. 23; the seal imprinted by it indelible, 1 Ti. iii. 1; Introductory Note; necessary, J. x. 8; cp. xx. 21, 22.
- Origin of Evil, M. xviii. 7; L. xiii. 16; the subject fitly adverted to by St. Luke, Pt. i. p. 159; inquiry respecting it engenders the Magian philosophy, and the Gnostic theories of æons, Introduction to the First Epistle of St. John; cp. J. i. 1.
- Origin of the Soul, debates respecting it, between the advocates of Creationism and Traducianism, Heb. xii. 9.
- Original Sin, universal prevalence of, L. x. 23; R. v. 13, 14. 21; the doctrine of, ought always to be coupled with that of Universal Redemption, 14; taught by St. Paul, E. ii. 3; and cp. Mk. x. 14; washed away in Baptism, 1 J. i. 7.
- Orthodoxy, gains by the antagonism of heresy, Vol. i. Preface, p. xvi.
- Outward forms of devotion, appointed by competent authority, acceptable to God, L. xviii. 13.
- Over-carefulness about worldly things, warning against, L. xii. 29.
- Oxymoron, examples of the figure, 1 Th. iv. 11; 2 Th. iii. 11; 2 C. xii. 13; R. xii. 11; 1 Ti. v. 13; Rev. ii. 27; xiv. 10.
- Pagan, and Paganism, practical warning implied in these terms, Mk. i. 38; decomposition of Paganism at the time of our Lord's advent, Pt. ii. p. xvii.
- Pagan villages, and savage tribes, not to be neglected by missionaries, A. xvi. 6.
- Pallium, Rev. xvi. 17.
- Palm, the, an emblem of the victory of the saints, Rev. vii. 13.
- Palm branches, used at our Lord's triumphal entry into Jerusalem, M. xxvi. 6; emblematical of His future *victory* over the world, Mk. xi. 8; and over death and the devil, J. xii. 13.
- Pantheism; see *Greek Mythology*.
- Papacy; see *Rome*.
- Parable, its nature and design, M. xiii. 3; xxiv. 32; why our Lord spake in parables, M. xiii. 11; Mk. iv. 12; mode of teaching by, M. xiii. 35; on the proper mode of interpreting, xx. 3, note 1; the Parable of the Pounds compared with that of the Talents, xxv. 14; our Lord's parables are also prophecies, M. xxi. 20; L. xv. 11; our Lord's later ones seem to have been the clearest, Mk. xii. 12. 38; which are peculiar to St. Luke, Introduction to his Gospel, p. 162; Parable of Dives and Lazarus, J. xi. 1; and see *Church, Virgins, Sower*.
- Paraclete, or Comforter, various meanings of the word so rendered, J. xiv. 16; xv. 26.
- Paradise, the abode of the disembodied spirits of the righteous, origin and import of the name, L. xxiii. 42, 43; J. xix. 41; cp. viii. 52; 2 C. xii. 2—4; its figurative meaning, *ib.*; see *Disembodied Spirit, Abraham's Bosom, Soul*.
- Paradoxical sayings of our Lord, M. x. 34.
- Parallelisms in the Gospels, rule for directing our reasonings concerning them, J. xix. 19.
- Paralysis, a type of spiritual inaction and incapacity, M. ix. 6.
- Paronyms, their office amongst the Jews, J. iii. 29.
- Pardon, the public declaration of, provided by Christ for the penitent believer, L. vii. 48.
- Parents' duties, E. vi. 4; see *Children*.
- Paronomasia, examples of, M. xxvi. 2; L. i. 14; xxi. 11; A. iv. 30; viii. 30; ix. 34; Julian's celebrated one retorted, *ib.*; 2 Ti. iii. 11. 16; 1 C. i. 23, 24; vii. 31; 2 C. iv. 8; v. 4; R. i. 20; iii. 23; v. 19; xii. 13; P. iii. 2; Pn. 10. 20; 2 Ti. iii. 4; E. v. 23; Introduction to the Epistle to the Hebrews; Heb. ii. 15; v. 8; xiii. 2; 1 P. iv. 3; 2 P. ii. 13; Rev. xi. 17.
- Parricide, the crime of, not denounced by Solon, lest the Athenians should be incited to commit it, R. vii. 13.
- Parthians, the place occupied by them, in the list of the tribes present on the Day of Pentecost, A. ii. 9—11.
- Parthians, in the time of the Apostles, second only to the Romans among the nations of the world, Introduction to the Second Epistle of St. John; Babylon, the capital, inhabited by great numbers of Jews, *ib.*; the writer modestly styles himself "the elder," 2 J. 1; peculiar significance of this appellation, *ib.*; contemplates a journey to Babylon; the Parthians placed first in the catalogue of the Jews who heard St. Peter preach at Jerusalem, *ib.*; A. ii. 9.
- Participle, used for noun, M. iv. 3; viii. 33; Mk. vi. 14; denotes celerity, L. i. 39.
- Paschal lamb, a type of our Lord, M. xxi. 1; xxvi. 2. 17. 20; J. xix. 37; its slaying between "the two evenings," how fulfilled, M. xxvi. 17; parallel between the slaying of it and the crucifixion; time of slaying, xxvii. 45; Mk. xiv. 12; distinction between *slaying* and *eating*, M. xxvi. 17; cp. J. i. 29.
- Passive Obedience, the expression implies a contradiction in terms, R. xiii. 5; J. i. 14.
- Passover, meaning of the word, J. xiii. 1; its institution and significance, M. xxvi. 2; the Jews accustomed to have public executions at that season, 5; opinions respecting the day on which our Lord ate the last passover, 17, and note 1; L. xxii. 7; J. xviii. 28; the slaying of the paschal lamb "between the two evenings," how fulfilled, M. xxvi. 17; the Levitical sacrifice prefiguring our Lord's death transformed into an Evangelical sacrament representing that death, xxvi. 26; contrast between the type and the Antitype, xxvii. 45; marvellous parallelism between the typical Passover and the great Antitype, L. xxi. 24; cp. ix. 31; superseded by the Sacrament of the Holy Communion, xxii. 16; passovers attended by our Lord during his ministry, J. v. 1; cp. ii. 13.

Pastor, his needs designed to be trial of the people's love, L. viii. 3; a steward, xvi. 9; see *Ministers*.

Patience inculcated, J. v. 13; see *Faith*.

Patmos, the isle of, its situation, and the use anciently made of it, Rev. i. 9.

Patriarchs, the twelve, types of the Apostles, M. x. 2; looked forward to Christ, see *Coming*; buried at Sychem, or Sichem, A. vii. 16; force of this fact as stated by St. Stephen, in his defence, *ib.*

Paul, St., his views respecting marriage and divorce, M. xix. 9; and respecting the Lord's Supper, xxvi. 26; taking up the cross daily, L. ix. 23; his treatment of Elymas untruly stated by Romish Divines, 55; incident of the viper at Malta, a literal fulfilment of our Lord's prophecy, x. 19; brief view of his ministerial labours, Vol. ii. p. ix.; his character and apostolic labours compared with those of Peter, xii.; his course to Rome, xviii.; his conversion, xx.; his preaching at Rome, *ib.*; applies the Psalms to Christ, xxvi.; his visits to Jerusalem after his conversion, xxxv.; his escape from Damascus, *ib.*; summary of his travels, xxxvi., xxxvii.; endowed with the gift of tongues, A. ii. 4; his extensive use of the gift, *ib.*; why the Acts of the Apostles is principally occupied in narrating his actions and sufferings, with those of St. Peter, vii. 58; his conduct at St. Stephen's martyrdom, *ib.*; resemblance between his Epistles and St. Stephen's speech, *ib.*; parallel between him and Benjamin, ix. 1; his commission and journey to Damascus, 2; divinely arrested there in the very act of springing upon his victims, 3; Ananias is sent to him, 6; his blindness, and its removal, 8; compared with the dumbness of Zacharias, *ib.*; his abode in "the street that is called Straight," 11; connexion, by way of resemblance and contrast, between Saul the first king of Israel and Saul the last of the Apostles, 21; his abode in Arabia, 23; not mentioned by Luke, *ib.*; is introduced by Barnabas to the Apostles (Peter and James) at Jerusalem, 27; goes from Cæsarea to Tarsus, 39; persecuted by the Hellenists, xi. 20; Barnabas on their conversion goes to Tarsus to seek Saul, that he may be reconciled to them, at Antioch, 26; date of his trance and rapture, xiii. 2; suggested allusion to his office of "prophet" in 1 Sam. x. 12; xix. 24, *ib.*; the first appointment of Paul and Barnabas to the *Apostleship* to the Gentiles, distinction between Paul's *call* and *mission* to the *Apostleship*, *ib.*; he always preaches first to the Jews, 5; his name changed from Saul to Paul, occasion and reason of this, 9; smites Elymas with blindness, 11; in what language did he preach in Pisidia? 15; in his first sermon in a Jewish synagogue we find the germ of his Epistles to the Romans and Galatians, 36; formed on the model of St. Stephen's apology, *ib.*; whether he understood the language of Lycaonia? xiv. 11; reason why he did not prevent the priest from going to fetch the victims and garlands, *ib.*; his full qualifications to preach the Gospel to foreign nations, *ib.*; compared to Mercury, 12; Meyer's just observation on this, *ib.*; his address to the populace at Lystra a model of all succeeding ones in the writings of the Christian Apologists, 14; stoned, 19; ordains not only deacons, but priests, 23; reply of the other Apostles to the charges of the Judaizers against him, 25, 26; some of the circumstances that probably led to the difference between him and Barnabas, 39; their characters contrasted, *ib.*; why he circumcised Timothy, *ib.*; but not Titus, xvi. 3; why he is forbidden by the Holy Ghost to preach the word in Asia, and to go into Bithynia, 6; called to Greece by a man of Macedonia, 9; his acts at Philippi a specimen of his ministerial labours in Greece and Italy, *ib.*; singular fulfilment of Ps. xci. 13. 16; does not plead at Philippi his rights of Roman citizenship, 22; beneficial consequences of this, *ib.*; objections of De Wette, Baur, and Zeller, *ib.*; Paul and Silas sing in prison at Philippi, 25; Paul was of an opulent family, 37; was accustomed when he was quitting a city, to leave behind him some to continue the work of preaching which he had begun, 40; xx. 5; his travels along the *Via Egnatia*, xvii. 1; instance of his being well treated by his own people, 11; his reception and ministrations at Athens, 16, 17; his encounter with the Epicureans, 18; and Stoics, *ib.*; he is brought before the Areopagus, 19; his speech a model to all Christian missionaries in their addresses to the heathen world, 22, 23; his different mode of proceeding with Jews and heathens, 23; his slender success at Athens, 33; the imperial power of Rome employed by Providence as an instrument for Paul's protection against the Jews, xviii. 12; "having shorn his head at Cenchrea," 18; why he did not this at Corinth, *ib.*; could not shave his head till he had arrived at Jerusalem, *ib.*; charity the great principle of his Apostolic life, *ib.*; falls in with Apollos, 24; cures effected by handkerchiefs and aprons brought from his body, xix. 12; groundless censure of these acts, *ib.*; special reason for his miracles at Ephesus, *ib.*; in contending against idolatry there, he was contending against the religious superstition of the Gentile world, 24; the Asiarchs endeavour to save

him from the fury of the populace at Ephesus, 31; it was his practice, after he had *planted* the Gospel in any place, to leave some one behind him to *water* it, xx. 5; also to *revisit* those whom he had evangelized, *ib.*; his journey from Troas to Miletus, *ib.*; did not feel *obliged* to attend the great festivals of the Jewish Ritual at Jerusalem, though he sometimes was present at them, 6; minute specification of his journey from Philippi to Jerusalem, *ib.*; restores Eutychus to life, 10; his address to the elders of Ephesus at Miletus an Apostolic pattern of an Episcopal Charge to the Clergy at Visitations, or Diocesan Synods, 17—36; metaphor in his expression *οὐδὲν ὑπεστειλάμην*, 20; *δεδεμένος τῷ πνεύματι*, 22; xxi. 4; objection founded on xx. 25; interview with the elders and bishops of Ephesus at Miletus, 17; visits Tyre, xxi. 3; his third visit to Cæsarea, 8; Agabus binds his own hands and feet with Paul's girdle, and predicts the Apostle's apprehension by the Jews, and his deliverance by them into the hands of the Romans, 11; Paul's courage and constancy, 15; takes, at the recommendation of St. James, Bishop of Jerusalem, a Nazarite's vow, 24; special reason why he should engage in the vow, *ib.*; his compliance with the law, though it appears to have satisfied the Jews of Jerusalem, did not satisfy those of Asia, 27; addresses the Jews at Jerusalem in the Syro-Chaldaic, 40; his use of the term "martyr" carries his thoughts to Stephen, xxi. 20; "in all good conscience," xxiii. 1; rebukes the high priest Ananias, 3; his apology for doing so, 5; gives no sanction to the maxim "divide, et impera," 6; was Christ's great *μάρτυς* in the two great capitals of the world,—Jerusalem and Rome, 11; finds that zeal "not according to knowledge," recoils against those whom it leads to do evil that good may come, 12; he is carried to Cæsarea, xxiv. 1; where the Gospel, in his person, has to contend with Jewish prejudices allied with Roman rhetoric, *ib.*; whether he spoke before Felix in Latin? *ib.*; "there are yet but twelve days," &c., 11; he is brought before Felix, 24; his discourse before him a lesson to preachers in five particulars, 25; advantages incidentally but providentially arising to the Church from his imprisonment at Cæsarea and Rome, 27; appeals to Cæsar, xxv. 10; reason why he does so, *ib.*; his arrest in the Temple of Jerusalem providentially made the occasion of his preaching Christ to many illustrious auditories in different places, 23, 24; striking circumstance attending his preaching at Cæsarea, *ib.*; his courage and presence of mind in public assemblies, xxvi. 1; had been before his conversion a member of the Sanhedrim, 10; why he was scourged in the synagogue, but not put out of the synagogue, 11; date of his ordination, 17; his modesty, 23; recollection of Stephen's prayer, 28; Paul is carried to Rome, xxvii. 1; importance of every incident in the narrative of the voyage and journey thither, *ib.*; the storm and shipwreck, 14—44; the ship compared to the Church, 21; St. Paul's Bay, 41, *note* 1; had thrice before suffered shipwreck, *ib.*; providentially consigned to the custody of the chief of the Imperial Guard, xxviii. 16; probably communicated through Burrhus (*ὁ στρατοπεδάρχης*) with Seneca, *ib.*; "I was constrained to appeal to Cæsar," 19; his Epistles, ought to be read *chronologically*, Preface to Part iii.; what the chronological order is, *ib.* pp. xvi.—xviii.; were passed on and circulated from one Church to another, 1 Th. v. 27; his fondness for nautical metaphors, 2 Th. iii. 6; A. xx. 20; 2 C. viii. 20; G. ii. 12; his manual labours, 8; employment of the figure *paronomasia*, 1 C. vii. 31; 2 C. iv. 8; v. 4; R. i. 20; v. 19; P. iii. 2; Pn. 20; 2 Ti. iii. 4; 2 Th. iii. 11; his "salutation,"—the Benediction at the close of his Epistles, 2 Th. iii. 17; his zeal and earnestness in ministering to the wants of the afflicted Hebrew converts, G. ii. 10; his connexion with Antioch, *ib.*; his rebuke of Peter, and refutation of the objections of ancient infidels, *ib.*; first occasion of the difference between him and Barnabas, 13; detail of the circumstances under which he rebuked Peter, see Review of Gal. ii.; proof afforded by this transaction of the truth of Christianity, *ib.*; St. Paul ordained to the *Apostleship* at Antioch, *ib.*; his conduct with respect to the Ritual and Ceremonial Law, *ib.*; complied on some occasions with the Levitical Ceremonies, *ib.*; wisdom of this procedure, *ib.*; teaches us the cruelty of spurious charity in surrendering unpopular truths, *ib.*; importance of attending to the order of his words, iii. 1; instructs us how to allegorize aright, iv. 24; his sufferings a temptation to the Galatians, 13; "the infirmity in his flesh," *ib.*; his *stigmata*, vi. 17; why he baptized Crispus, Gaius, and others, 1 C. i. 14—17; his mode of citing the Old Testament, with special adaptation to the character and circumstances of those whom he is addressing, i. 19; instance of paraphrastic citation from the Old Testament, ii. 9; two distinct claims to Inspiration on the part of the Apostle, 13; observations of Hooker illustrative of St. Paul's personal history and public ministry, *note* at the end of ch. ii.; claims the title of "a wise master-builder," iii. 10; the Foundation and Superstructure of the Church, 12—15; St. Paul sometimes substi-

tutes for the LXX a translation nearer to the Original, 19; a consummate master of spiritual logic and rhetoric, 22, 23; makes himself a representative of Christian ministers and Teachers generally, iv. 4—6; his doctrine concerning Single Life and Marriage, vii. 1; doubtful whether he was ever married, though some of the Fathers affirm it, 7; "Not I, but the Lord," 10; "I, not the Lord," 12; probable reason for not annexing the title *Apostle* to his own name in the Epistles to the Thessalonians, 1 Th. i. 1; observations upon his practice of associating *others* with himself in writing his Epistles, *ib.*; probable reason for not addressing the Thessalonian converts as "the Church in Thessalonica," while he addresses those of Corinth, as the Church in Corinth, *ib.*; summary of the introductory characteristics of all his Epistles, i. 2; was not certain, at least till the close of his course, of his own salvation, i. 4; infers the election of his converts from their good fruits, *ib.*; in his missionary course always selected great centres of population as the fields of his apostolic labours, i. 8; *never* quotes directly from the Old Testament in his Epistle to the Thessalonians and Philippians, i. 9; ii. 18; both very probably supplied with a *written Gospel*, i. 9; perhaps with St. Luke's, *ib.*; his connexion with St. Luke; see *Luke*; why he did not plead his Roman citizenship at Philippi, as he had done at Jerusalem, ii. 2; compares himself to a nursing mother, ii. 8; works partly in the night that he might preach in the day, 2; principles upon which he acted with respect to maintenance, *ib.*; on his assaying to go into Bithynia, ii. 18; his insight into the working of the powers of Good and Evil in the affairs of the Church, *ib.*; is rejoined at Corinth by Silas and Timothy, iii. 1; does not profess to know all things, 5; 1 C. i. 16; instances of apostolic gravity and decency of diction, iv. 6; does not impose celibacy, vii. 28; peculiar difficulties with which he had to contend in his Missionary labour, and in the settlement of the Church, ix. 6; his teaching and practice have been the means of the establishment of the Tithe system, *ib.*; waives his claims to ministerial maintenance, 15; his subjection of the body, 27; why he places the *Cup* before the *Bread*, x. 16; example of his practice of adopting as *his own* the objections of an adversary, and then refuting them, 29, 30; grounds on which he inculcates the duty of his converts to imitate him, xi. 1; did not visit the Corinthians in the interval between the writing of his two Epistles to them, 2 C. ii. 1; blends into one several passages from the Old Testament (as was common with Hebrew teachers), vi. 17, 18; self-praise in self-vindication, xi. 17; "I glory in my infirmities;" meaning of the Apostle here, xi. 31; his rapture to the third heaven, and to Paradise, xii. 2—4; why to *both*, *ib.*; "a thorn in the flesh," 7; *τρίτον τοῦτο ἔρχομαι*, explained, xiii. 1; force of the Benediction, 13; tripartite distribution of the Apostle's argument with the Jews, Introduction to the Epistle to the Romans, *note* 8; proof that he possessed the gift of tongues, R. i. 14; his manner of putting objections and answering them, R. iii. 7; 1 C. vi. 12; R. vii. 7; caution against the perversion of the doctrine of Free Grace, vi. 1; the Apostle's modesty, vii. 7; his missionary tours, R. xv. 19; probably embraced Spain, and Britain, *ib.*; does not use the term *elect* to designate those who will certainly be saved, xvi. 13; on his habit of writing his Epistles by the hands of *secretaries*, 22; says nothing of St. Peter, *singly*, in his description of the *foundation* of the Church, E. ii. 20; his special, but not exclusive mission to the Gentiles, iii. 1; occasion of his arrest by the Jews at Jerusalem, *ib.*; his first and second visits to Phrygia, Introduction to the Epistle to the Colossians; often makes very striking transitions by means of *καὶ*, C. i. 18; ii. 9; example of his prudence in government, iv. 17; calls himself *δέσμιος* only in the Epistle to Philemon, Pn. 1; appropriateness of this, *ib.*; probably had preached at Colossæ, 19; refutes, at one blow, various heresies, P. ii. 6; alludes to the *fact* and *manner* of his martyrdom, 17; importance of reading his Epistles in chronological order, *ib.*; why he did not restore his sick friends to health, 26; final assurance of his salvation, iii. 11, 12; his Apostolic career began not from his Conversion, but from his Ordination at Antioch, A. xiii. 3, 4; P. iv. 15; his *Epistolary Trilogy* (Epistles to the Galatians, Romans, and Hebrews), Introduction to the Epistle to the Hebrews, pp. 375—377; derives metaphors from maritime affairs, Heb. vi. 18 (see *Metaphors*); instances of his "going off at a word," 1 C. xv. 27; 2 C. ii. 14; E. iv. 8—11; v. 12—15; Heb. vi. 20; his treatment during his first imprisonment at Rome contrasted with his second imprisonment there, Introduction to the Epistles to *Timothy* and *Titus*; his travels, second imprisonment, and martyrdom, *ib.*; his wisdom in administering rebuke, Tit. i. 12; confidence in his divine mission, *ib.*; precept respecting Christian Liberty, Introduction to the First Epistle of St. Peter; fraternal feelings between these two Apostles, *ib.*; the *δυσνόητα* in St. Paul's Epistles, 2 P. iii. 15, 16; describes

in 2 Th. the same power that is set forth by St. John in the Apocalypse, 1 J. ii. 18.
Paulus, his school of rationalizing exposition succeeded and supplanted by that of Strauss, L. i. 19.
"Pavement, the," description of, J. xix. 13.
Pearl, parable of the, M. xiii. 3.
Pelagian heresy, R. ii. 5; v. 12; advantages indirectly flowing from it, R. v. 12; text perverted by, M. v. 48; short history of the controversy, *ib.*; perversion of, Rev. iii. 20; apostolical refutation of it, P. ii. 12; the Preamble of the Office for Baptism of Infants the strongest practical protest against it, R. v. 13, 14; arguments against it, A. xxiii. 5.
Pelagius, his notion respecting the salvability of rich men, M. xix. 21; held that Death is not from Sin, but from Nature, R. v. 13, 14.
Pella, in Peræa, the timely retreat of the Christians thither before the siege of Jerusalem, M. xxiv. 16; L. xxi. 21.
Pentateuch only, received by the Sadducees, M. xxii. 32; typified by David's five stones, M. iv. 4.
Pentecost, never mentioned by name in any of the Gospels, J. v. 1; probable reason of this, *ib.*; the effusion of the Holy Ghost, A. ii. 1; its effects, J. xv. 27; the *day* ascertained, A. ii. 1; why the Holy Ghost was given at *that* particular Feast of Pentecost, *ib.*; lasted but one day, xxi. 27; cp. J. iv. 35.
Peræa, our Lord's circuit in it, Mk. x. 1; L. x. 1.
Perfect tense, its import in the New Testament, M. ii. 5; Mk. iv. 39; v. 29; L. xiii. 12; 1 C. xv. 4; 2 C. i. 19; v. 17; 1 J. iii. 9; see *Aorist*.
Perfection, the Gospel precept with respect to, M. xix. 21.
Perga, its situation, A. xiii. 13.
Pergamum, its situation, Rev. i. 11; ii. 13.
Persecution, flight from, whether under any circumstances allowable, M. x. 23; comfort in, Mk. x. 29; religious persecution condemned, L. ix. 55; the persecution of the first Christians promotes the preaching of the Gospel, Introduction to the Acts of the Apostles; A. xxiv. 24; 1 Ti. ii. 13; source of the two persecutions from heathenism mentioned in the Acts of the Apostles, xvi. 19.
Persecutions of Christians at Rome and elsewhere under Nero, Introduction to the Epistles to Timothy and to the First Epistle of Peter; and see 1 P. v. 8, 9; Rev. vi. 3.
Perseverance, final, 1 J. ii. 19; bearing on the doctrine of, in Heb. vi. 6; the Fathers cite against it Rev. iii. 11; see *Calvinism*.
Personal Assurance, danger of making it the essence of a Justifying Faith, 1 C. ix. 27; see *Assurance*.
Persons, of the Father and the Son, distinction between them, 1 C. viii. 6; see *Trinity*.
Peter, St., his place in the catalogues of the Apostles, M. x. 2; Mk. iii. 16; no primacy, M. xvi. 18; xix. 28; Mk. viii. 29; his confession, M. xvi. 18; Mk. i. 1; cp. L. ix. 35; in what sense he is called Cephas, M. xvi. 18; Mk. viii. 29; Rationalistic objections to the miracle of the catching of the fish by him, M. xvii. 27; denies with an oath that which Christ, when put on his oath, confesses, M. xxvi. 72; his call to the Apostleship, Mk. i. 16; the Fathers regard him as the *σύμβολον πρακτικῆς*, *ib.*; "and Simon he surnamed Peter," iii. 16; is rebuked by our Lord, viii. 33; his denial, xiv. 37. 66; his repentance, xiv. 72; his modesty, *ib.*; his pardon, xvi. 7; his forward zeal in confessing the Christ, L. ix. 20; his treatment of Ananias and Sapphira, untruly stated by Romish Divines, 55; our Lord prays specially for Peter, because he was in special peril, xxii. 32; vain fancy of the Romanists respecting the infallibility of the Bishops of Rome, in consequence of their assumed connexion, by succession, with St. Peter, *ib.*; xxii. 34—the only place in the Gospel where our Lord is said to have addressed Simon by his name Πέτρος; Peter's temptation and fall, 56—60; Christ washes his feet, J. xiii. 6; how he *followed* Christ, 36; "I will lay down my life for thy sake," 37; his confession, J. xxi. 15; change in his deportment in public after the day of Pentecost, xv. 27; A. ii. 14; iv. 8; provides instruction for all the dispersions mentioned Acts ii. 9—11; his *speeches* in the Acts to be compared with his *writings*, ii. 23; the "three thousand" not converted by Peter alone, 41; his close connexion with St. John during the early stage of their ministry, J. xviii. 5; A. iii. 1; his address to the Jews still applicable to them, 19; his conduct in the case of Ananias and Sapphira, v. 1—11; took care that the people should refer all miraculous agency to Christ, 15; his signal refutation of the Sadducees, 16; why the Acts of the Apostles is principally occupied in narrating the actions and sufferings of Peter and Paul, vii. 58; Peter's descent, with John, to Samaria, after the preaching of Philip, viii. 17; rebukes Simon Magus, 20; the foundation of the See of Antioch assigned to him by Baronius and Corn. à Lapide, ix. 32; forbids Cornelius to worship him, x. 25; his deliverance from prison, xii. 6—10; proceeds thence to the dwelling of the mother of Mark the Evangelist, 12; "he went

- to another place," 17; reason of his leaving Jerusalem, *ib.*; his behaviour at the Council of Jerusalem, and the summary of the Council itself, present a strong argument against his supremacy, and still more against the supremacy of the Bishops of Rome, xv. 7; James calls him Simeon, 14; the last mention of him in the Acts of the Apostles, *ib.*; inference from the specification of his name in St. Paul's narrative of the controversy at Antioch, G. ii. 7; interchange of the names Cephas and Peter, 10; 1 C. i. 12; why his vacillation is called *ἀποκρίσις* by St. Paul, 13; real ground of St. Paul's rebuke of him, 14; detail of the circumstances under which the rebuke was delivered, see Review of G. ii.; how St. Peter received the rebuke, *ib.*; proof afforded by this transaction of the truth of Christianity, *ib.*; St. Peter errs in a matter of faith and practice, *ib.*; imposes unwarrantable terms of Church Communion, *ib.*; the non-occurrence of his name in the Epistle to the Romans conclusive against the assertion of the Papists that it is necessary to be united to those who pretend to be his successors, R. xvi. 9; Christ's repeated charge to him, Introduction to his First Epistle; order prescribed in it, *ib.*; the Church in Babylon visited by him, *ib.*; his Epistles written there, *ib.*; said to have encountered Simon Magus at Rome, note 6; the Epistle sometimes called *Epistola ad Ponticos*, why? *ib.*; "Marcus my son," *ib.*; supposed to have dictated St. Mark's Gospel, Introduction to the Gospel of St. Mark, p. 112; Mk. v. 41; cp. viii. 29. 33; xiii. 3; xiv. 13; xvi. 7; his pastoral care exemplary, *ib.*; Introduction to his First Epistle; visits Rome, and there ends his course, *ib.*; manner of his death, *ib.*; characteristics of the First Epistle, *ib.*; connexion with St. John, *ib.*; and with St. Paul, *ib.*; becomes Bishop of Antioch, *ib.*; his vacillation there, and rebuke by St. Paul, *ib.*; precept concerning Christian Liberty, *ib.*; his choice of Silvanus, or Silas, as bearer of the Epistle, *ib.*; cautions against the heresies of Simon Magus, and of Cerinthus, 1 P. iii. 18; refutes the Manichæan and Marcionite heresies, 18—22; "love covers a multitude of sins," iv. 8; caution against the errors of the Gnostics, 12, 13; force of the term *καὶ ἡροί*, v. 3; the name *Symeon* Peter, a proof that the writer is addressing Jewish converts, 2 P. i. 1; pre-announces his own death, 13; describes it by a double figure, *ib.*; "some things hard to be understood," iii. 15, 16; testimony borne by this passage to the wisdom of St. Paul, and to the Divine inspiration of his Epistles, *ib.*
- Peter, St., the First Epistle of, to whom addressed, Introduction; called sometimes *Epistola ad Ponticos*, *ib.*; design of it, 1 P. i. 1; preamble of it bears a remarkable resemblance to that of St. Paul in his Epistle to the Ephesians, 2; unity of teaching between these two Apostles, *ib.*; analogies between Birth, Baptism, and Resurrection, *ib.*; connexion between this Epistle and that of St. James, 6; allusions to St. Paul's Epistles, *ib.*; S. Polycarp's familiarity with this Epistle, 13; written in Babylon, in Assyria, v. 13; and on the eve of persecution, iv. 17; date of it, 2 P. iii. 1, 2.
- Peter, St., the Second Epistle of, date and design of it, Introduction; objections to the assigned date stated, and answered, *ib.*; correspondence between the two Epistles of St. Peter, and the Epistles of St. Paul to the Ephesians and Colossians, *ib.*; difference in style between the First Epistle and the second chapter of the Second Epistle, accounted for, *ib.*; this Epistle at first not universally received as genuine, *ib.*; accounted for, *ib.*; great similarity to the Epistle of St. Jude, *ib.*; referred to by Melito, Bishop of Sardis, in the second century, and by Firmilian, Bishop of Cappadocia, and S. Hippolytus, Bishop of Portus, near Rome, in the third century, *ib.*; and commented upon by Clement of Alexandria and by Origen his scholar, in the second century, *ib.*; summary of the contents, *ib.*; addressed to Jewish converts, i. 1; proof of the Godhead of Christ, *ib.*; the Epistle to the Colossians the best comment on this, 2; pertinence of the reference to the Transfiguration, 18; "a more sure word of prophecy," 19; ii. 11 explained; this Epistle written shortly before the writer's martyrdom, iii. 15, 16; his testimony to the wisdom of St. Paul, and to the Divine Inspiration of his Epistles, *ib.*; futile claims of the bishops of Rome founded on his supposed infallibility, *ib.*; his generosity, wisdom, and charity, *ib.*
- Pharaoh, the representative of Satan, R. ix. 17; his abuse of power wholly from himself, *ib.*; said, by Hammond, to be the only example in Scripture of total spiritual dereliction before death, *ib.*
- Pharisees, their tenets, M. iii. 7; did not submit to John's baptism, *ib.*; their corruptions of the Decalogue exposed by our Lord, v. 21; their fast days, vi. 16; their erroneous notion of the nature of mercy, ix. 13; their league with the Herodians, xxii. 21; their official character recognized by our Lord, xxiii. 2; but their ambition condemned, 9, 10; warned by him, L. xi. 37; their love of money, M. xxiii. 14; L. xvi. 14; their notions of wedlock and divorce, 18; their laxity of life, J. viii. 7. 11; their zeal to make proselytes, G. iv. 17.
- Philadelphia, its situation, Rev. i. 11.
- Philemon, Epistle to, date of it, Introduction to the Epistle to the Ephesians; written probably at Rome, *ib.*; Philemon resided at Colossæ, C. i. 2; the Epistle to him puts to flight the great social evil of Slavery, Introduction to the Epistle; the Church in his house, Pn. 6.
- Philip, St., the deacon, his appointment to the diaconate, A. vi. 5; his labours as an evangelist in the city of Samaria, viii. 5; takes the road towards Gaza, and preaches to the Ethiopian nobleman, 26; paraphrase of the address of the angel to him, *ib.*; his visit to Joppa and Cæsarea, 40; his residence at the latter city, xxi. 8; St. Paul lodges with him, *ib.*
- Philippi, brief history and description of the city, P. i. 1; contrasted, in character, with Thessalonica, 1 Th. i. 1; why St. Paul did not plead his Roman citizenship there, as he had done at Jerusalem, ii. 2; his second visit to, P. i. 1.
- Philippi, "the chief city of that part of Macedonia," explanation of these words, A. xvi. 12; the Jews had no synagogue there, 13; the possessed damsel a representative of the Pythia who sat on the tripod at Delphi, 16; Roman character of the city, 20; St. Paul does not plead his rights of Roman citizenship there, 22; beneficial consequences arising from this, *ib.*; the political condition of the city very different from that of the neighbouring one of Thessalonica, xvii. 6; St. Luke probably left at Philippi by St. Paul, to water the Church which the Apostle had planted, xx. 5; minute specification of days in St. Paul's journey from Philippi to Jerusalem, 6.
- Philippians, Epistle to the, date, design, and place where it was written, Introduction to the Epistle; St. Paul's circumstances at the time, *ib.*; probably written after the hearing of the Apostle's cause, and before the public declaration of the sentence by which he was set at liberty, *ib.*; resemblance between this Epistle and the Second Epistle to Timothy, *ib.*; may be regarded as St. Paul's farewell Epistle to the Gentile Churches, *ib.*; the writer does not add the title of *Apostle*, why, P. i. 1; probably now constitutes Epaphroditus to be the chief pastor of the Philippian Church, *ib.*; Polycarp's Epistle to it, *ib.*; three orders of Christian Ministers in it, *ib.*; one of the first Churches founded by St. Paul, 3; in it one of the first examples of Diocesan Episcopacy was probably exhibited to the world, *ib.*; exposition of ii. 6; this text refutes various heresies, *ib.*; custom alluded to in 15; "the resurrection from the dead," explained, iii. 11.
- Philo, unacquainted with Hebrew, A. vi. 1; his account of the Libertines, 9; his notions respecting Angels, C. ii. 8.
- Phoenicians; see *Tyre*.
- Phoenix, its situation, A. xxvii. 12, 13; now called *Lutro*, 12; but this is doubtful, *ib.*
- Photinian heresy, refutation of it, J. x. 1.
- Phylacteries, description, origin, and design of them, G. iii. 1; on the use of, by the Pharisees, M. xxiii. 5; Mk. xii. 29; L. x. 26.
- Physical evils are from Satan, who assails holy men, in order to weaken their faith, L. xiii. 16; 2 C. xii. 7.
- Physicians, an example for, L. viii. 43.
- Physics, the study of, unhappily divorced in these days from that of Religion, J. ii. 11; cp. v. 4.
- Piety and Zeal, even ministers of religion tempted by the Evil Spirit to sin on pretence of, A. xxiii. 12. 14.
- Pilate [Pontius Pilate].
- Place of Transfiguration, &c., left uncertain, and why? M. iv. 1.
- Places of our Lord's ministry, remarks on the names of the principal ones, M. xxvi. 36.
- Pliny, description of the sycamore-tree, L. xix. 4.
- Plural, sometimes used for the singular, M. xxvii. 44; out of delicacy, ii. 20; and cp. L. xxii. 31.
- Pluralis excellentiæ, Rev. xix. 8.
- Poisoning, G. v. 20; 1 Ti. v. 14; Rev. ix. 20.
- Polycarp, St., refers to 1 Ti. vi. 10; and to Jam. v. 13, 14; his familiarity with the Epistle of St. James, *ib.*; cites E. ii. 8, 9; his martyrdom, 1 P. i. 7; prayer at his martyrdom, A. iv. 24; cites viii. 13; his familiarity with St. Peter's First Epistle, and with St. Paul's Epistle to the Ephesians, *ib.*; cites ii. 12. 17; refers to 21; and to iv. 16; on 2 P. iii. 4. 15, 16; on the design of St. John's First Epistle, Introduction; alone of the Apostolic Fathers uses the term *Antichrist*, 1 J. ii. 18; cites ver. 20; refers to iv. 2, 3; his death hastened by the Jews, Rev. ii. 9; circumstances attending it, 10; regards the Epistles to Thessalonica as addressed to all the Macedonian Churches, 2 Th. i. 4; refers to 1 C. vi. 2, 3; to xv. 31; and to 2 C. iii. 2; on the resurrection, iv. 13; on v. 10; viii. 20; his Epistle to the Church at Philippi, P. i. 1; refers to iii. 18, 19; passage in his Epistle to the Philippians illustrated by iv. 15; refers to Jud. 3.

- Polygamy, first introduced, in the family of Cain, by Lamech, M. xix. 4.
- Pontius Pilate, brief account of his person and office, M. xxvii. 2; cp. Mk. xv. 1; his wife's dream and message, M. xxvii. 19; his cruelty, L. xiii. 1; his general character, *ib.*; reconciled to Herod, xxiii. 12; orders the inscription upon the Cross, 38; not a persecutor of the Church after the Crucifixion, A. iv. 6.
- Pools of Bethesda and of Siloam, miracles wrought through their waters by Christ, Part i. p. 261.
- Poor, the duty and reward of bounty to the, M. xxv. 34, 35.
- Poor, duty of preaching to, Mk. i. 38.
- Pope; see *Rome*, bishop of—Popery; see *Roman Catholic Church*.
- Porphyry, his objection to the account of Matthew's call to the Apostleship, M. ix. 9; and to the punishment of Ananias, A. v. 5.
- Positive commands of a ceremonial kind not immutable if not in order to a permanent end, M. xxvi. 20.
- Pounds, the Parable of the, compared with that of the Talents, M. xxv. 14; L. xix. 11—28.
- Poverty, a load, as well as wealth, G. iv. 5.
- Prætorium, of the Roman Procurator, described, M. xxvii. 27; at Rome, meaning of the word Prætorium, P. i. 13; A. xxviii. 16.
- Praise of self, 2 C. xi. 17; of the world, not sought by Christ, Mk. i. 39; J. vi. 3; its true use, xvi. 14. See *Glory*.
- "Pray always," meaning of the words, 1 Th. v. 17.
- Prayer, the duty of, Heb. xiii. 5; Jam. i. 5, 6; forms of, authorized by our Lord, M. vi. 9; L. xi. 2; cp. J. xiii. 18; the use of prayer taught by his example, Mk. xiv. 39; L. iii. 21; J. xi. 41; cp. xvii. 1; see *Mountains*; intercessory, blessed to those who offer it, M. x. 13; perseverance in prayer, L. ii. 37; xi. 14; xviii. 1; xxiv. 53; the evil spirit a hindrance to prayer, xviii. 1; animated by faith, 8; exhortations to ejaculatory prayer, J. iv. 38.
- Prayer of the good always heard, though sometimes not granted in mercy, J. xiv. 14; xv. 16; 2 C. xii. 9.
- Prayer for the dead unavailing, M. v. 26; and see xxv. 9.
- Prayer, repetitions in, see *Repetition*; conditions to make it acceptable, J. xvi. 23; see *Lord's Prayer*.
- Prayer, united, the common refuge of the Church in time of persecution, A. iv. 24; xii. 6, 7; Rev. viii. 4, 5; various kinds of, 1 Ti. ii. 1; the first duty of the public Assemblies of the Faithful, *ib.*; when it is specially blessed, M. xviii. 19.
- Preachers, St. Paul's example to them, A. xvii. 22, 23; xxiv. 25.
- "Preaching," and "Hearing," importance of both, Heb. iv. 2.
- Predestination, our own, St. Paul bids us to judge of it from the practical evidence of our lives shown by works of love to God, R. viii. 28; secret to us, 1 C. ix. 27; the doctrine of, as taught in the Epistle to the Romans, best elucidated by the preamble of that to the Ephesians,—Introduction to the Epistle to the Romans, pp. 194. 199; the Calvinistic scheme, *ib.*, and note 1; R. viii. 29, 30; ix. 21—23; and see *Foreknowledge*.
- Preparation (for the Sabbath), Friday so called in the Eastern Church, M. xxvii. 62; Mk. xv. 42; J. xix. 14; reason and mode of observing it, *ib.*; meaning of the term, J. xix. 14.
- Presbyters, see Introductory Note to 1 Ti. iii.; discipline to be exercised towards them, 1 Ti. v. 17. 20; succeed the seventy, L. x. 1; benediction by them divinely authorized, 5; appointment and ordination of, A. xiv. 23; had liberty to sit and deliberate with Bishops in Provincial Councils, xv. 23; distinguished from Bishops, 28.
- Presence of our Lord, promised, M. xxviii. 20; cp. Mk. v. 13, 19; J. xvi. 28.
- Presence, carnal, in the Eucharist; see *Supper, the Lord's*.
- Present tense, often used by St. Mark, Introduction to the Gospel of St. Mark, p. 112; Mk. x. 16; cp. L. ii. 40; xiii. 23; xix. 13; xxii. 19; J. xiii. 4.
- "Preserve his life, shall," force of this expression in the original, L. xviii. 33.
- Pride, the root of all our spiritual diseases, J. vi. 38; Christ came to subdue it, *ib.*
- Priesthood of our Lord, set forth by St. Luke, Introduction to his Gospel, p. 163; L. i. 5; iii. 2; and see xvii. 19.
- Priesthood, the Christian, Heb. xiii. 10; see *Sacrifice*.
- Priests, divided into twenty-four courses, L. i. 5; their ministry settled by lot, 9; see *Presbyters*.
- Primacy, none assigned to Peter in the Catalogues of the Apostles, M. x. 2.
- Priscilla, why she is sometimes named before her husband, Aquila, A. xviii. 18; supposed to have been a deaconess, *ib.*
- Probabilities, resting on a Scriptural basis, the trial of our attention to, a part of our moral probation in this world, Pt. ii. xxx.
- Procrastination, L. xiii. 4.
- Procurator, the Roman, in Judea, M. xxvii. 2.
- Prodigal son, Parable of the, expounded, L. xv. 11—32.
- Pronouns, personal, placed before their substantives, examples of, M. xvi. 18; "I," and "we," St. Paul's use of, 1 Th. iv. 17; 1 C. vi. 12; x. 29, 30; see *Emphasis*.
- Proper Names in the New Testament, on the double forms of, R. xvi. 21; A. xv. 22; see *Names*.
- Prophecy, its gradual and complete fulfilment, M. ii. 15. 17; xvi. 28; xxiv. 3; J. ii. 21; unfulfilled, borne witness to by that which is fulfilled, M. xxiii. 37; cp. J. xxi. 23; its full accomplishment in Christ, M. ii. 17; double sense of many prophecies, viii. 17; xxiv. 3. 26. 29. 34; L. xiii. 35; xvii. 31; xxi. 25; xxiii. 30; J. xvi. 20; how interpreted by the Holy Spirit, M. ii. 23; xii. 17; cp. J. xiii. 18; two or more prophecies often combined in the New Testament, from different books of the Old, under one Prophet's name, M. xxi. 4; Mk. i. 2; xi. 5; J. vii. 38; sometimes modified in quotation, and why, M. xiii. 14; xv. 7—9; xxvii. 9; mode of citation, cp. Heb. iv. 4; obscure when first delivered, but explained by the event, J. ii. 21; Introduction to the Gospel of St. John, p. 259; the expiration of Jewish prophecy, J. xi. 49; test of prophecy, 51; cannot interpret itself, 2 P. i. 20; its probationary office, *ib.*; Introduction to the Apocalypse; rule for interpretation, *ib.*
- Prophecy, to be carefully distinguished from history, M. xxiv. 22; appealed to at the beginning of St. Mark's Gospel, Mk. i. 1; consummated in the Passion of Christ, M. xxvi. 56; xxvii. 43, 44; sometimes uttered by bad men, vii. 22; J. xi. 51; xix. 22; see also *Parable, Anticipation*.
- "Prophecy, we have a more sure word of," explained, 2 P. i. 19.
- "Prophecysings," the duty of not "despising" them, 1 Th. v. 20; import of the term, R. xii. 6.
- Prophets and Teachers, in the Christian Church, their office, A. xiii. 1.
- Prophets, their persecution by the Jews, M. xxi. 34; mode of citing the prophets of the Old Testament in the New, xxvii. 9; the death of Christ the point to which they all tended as their end, L. ix. 31; sent and acknowledged by our Lord, xi. 49; had grace from the Holy Ghost, but could not give it to others, as it was given by the Apostles, J. vii. 39; did not fully understand their own prophecies, 1 P. i. 10; 2 P. i. 19. 21; and Introduction to the Apocalypse; see *Daniel, Zechariah*.
- "Propitiation," import of the term, Heb. ii. 17.
- Proselytes, different kinds of, M. xxiii. 15; Proselytes of the Gate the seminary of the Gentile Church, Introduction to the Acts of the Apostles, p. 9; facilitate, by Divine appointment, the progress of the Gospel, Part ii. p. xviii.; A. vi. 5; and see *Hellenistic Proselytes*.
- Protestant expositors, disingenuously confounded with Rationalist ones by Roman Catholic Divines of recent times, M. xxvi. 15.
- Proverbs, on our Lord's use of, M. vi. 34; vii. 3; xi. 16. 26; xix. 24; xxv. 21; L. v. 39; xxii. 36; J. iv. 43; A. xxvi. 14.
- Providence, God's, interferes in critical emergencies, A. ix. 3.
- Psalms, divine Commentary on them in the Acts of the Apostles, Part ii. p. xxvi.; A. viii. 27; Ps. cviii. 7, fulfilled, *ib.*; also Ps. lxviii. 7—31, *ib.*
- Psalms, the Messianic ones, their application to Christ determined by Divine authority, R. xv. 3; this recently impugned, *ib.*
- Psalms, perverted by the Devil, M. iv. 6; their inspiration, Mk. xii. 36; Ps. lxxviii. quoted, M. xiii. 35; Ps. cxviii. quoted, M. xxi. 9. 42; Ps. cx. quoted, M. xxii. 44; Ps. xxii., M. xxvii. 43. 46; Ps. lxix., J. ii. 17, and see *Hallel*.
- Psalms and Hymns, E. v. 19.
- Ptolemais, its situation, A. xxi. 7; *Accho* (Judges i. 31), now *Acre*, *ib.*
- Public Worship; see *Synagogues and Church*.
- Publicans, their occupation and character, M. v. 46; L. xix. 2; deportment of the Publican in the Parable, L. xviii. 9—14.
- Pudens and Claudia, conjecture of Archdeacon Williams respecting them, 2 Ti. iv. 21.
- Punishment, its suitableness to the offence, L. xvi. 24; different kinds of, described, M. xxvii. 26; different degrees of, in a future state, x. 15; xxiii. 15; eternity of, xxv. 41—46; Mk. ix. 44; see *Eternity*.
- Purgatory, the doctrine of, 1 C. iii. 12—15; and see *Soul*.
- Purification, Jewish mode of, J. xi. 55.
- Purification of women after childbirth, a Divine assertion of man's Original Sin, L. ii. 22.
- "Purse, take no," nor *scrip*, explained, M. x. 9, and note 5.
- Puteoli, its situation, A. xxviii. 13; interesting fact in connexion with the martyrdom of S. Ignatius, *ib.*; route from, to Rome, 14.
- Python, a spirit of, A. xvi. 16; and see also Mk. i. 34; why this expression is used by St. Luke, A. xvi. 16; the Python, or Serpent, gives his name to the prophetic deity of the Gentile world, *ib.*; probable connexion of the term *Python* with *pn̄*, "a Serpent," Ps. lviii. 4; xci. 13; Isa. xi. 8.

- Quakers, and others, their opinions on the Sacraments considered, M. xxii. 12; their scruples to names, R. xvi. 14.
- Questions, with what view often put by our Lord, Mk. v. 30.
- Quirinus, Præses of Syria after Varus, L. ii. 2; no error in L. ii. 2; objections of Meyer, *ib.*, note 1; his authority in the East under Augustus, and his favour with that emperor, *ib.*; testimony of Justin Martyr to the fact that Quirinus was governor of Syria at the time of the Nativity, as well as ten years after that event, *ib.*
- Quoting from the Scriptures, method of, in use among the Jews, and practised by our Lord and his Apostles, M. xxii. 24.
- Rabbi, derivation and import of the term, M. xxiii. 7; Rabbis kissed their scholars as a mark of approval, Mk. x. 21.
- Rabboni, Mk. x. 51.
- Rahab, in the genealogy of our Lord, the Rahab of Jericho, M. i. 3, note 9; her scarlet thread typical of Christ's blood, Heb. xi. 31; her conversion a type of the recovery of the Church from heathenism, and of its espousal to Christ, *ib.*
- Railways, their missionary use to the Gospel, Introduction to the Acts of the Apostles, p. 14; A. xxviii. 15.
- Rain, prayed for at the Feast of Tabernacles, J. vii. 37.
- Rainbow, the, a Record of the Deluge, Rev. iv. 3; a memento of the Judgment by fire, an emblem of Hope, and of the Divine presence in Christ, *ib.*; x. 11.
- Ransom, of Christ's blood, M. xx. 28; nature of a ransom, *ib.*; 1 Ti. ii. 6; see *Redemption*.
- Rationalism, its origin, mode of action, and recent change of tactics, Part i. Preface, p. viii.; the best ally of Rome, viii. ix.; specimens of futile objections, L. ii. 52; xxii. 54, note 1; Introductory Note to St. John's Gospel; J. vi. 21; xi. 1, note 1; xix. 19; refutation of, xii. 29; xix. 19; A. ix. 7; xiii. 20; xiv. 11.
- Rationalists, objections of, stated and refuted M. xxvi. 15; L. i. 19; Introductory Note to St. John's Gospel; this class of Interpreters confounded by Romish expositors with Protestants, M. xxvi. 15; rapid succession of schools, L. ii. 2, note 1; iii. 2; xxii. 54, note 1.
- Reading, public, of Holy Scripture, its uses, 1 Th. v. 27; reading of Scripture is "Preaching," A. xv. 21.
- Reason and Faith, their offices distinct, but harmonious, M. i. 1; xiii. 52; J. vi. 25; xx. 17. 19, 20; 1 C. ii. 16; see *Faith*.
- Reason and Learning, Scriptural declarations perverted to their disparagement, note at the end of 1 C. ii.; x. 15; Reason, rightly used, leads to the Doctrine of the Atonement, 1 J. iv. 10.
- Rebellion, the sin of, R. xiii. 1-4.
- Recapitulation, the practice of, common in Scripture, M. xx. 29; instance of it, xxvi. 6; common in Prophecy, Rev. xx. 1-7; and Introduction to the Apocalypse; see *Repetition* and *Evangelists*.
- Reclining at the Paschal feast, a posture different from that which was originally enjoined, M. xxvi. 20; the practice conformed to by our Lord, *ib.*
- Reconciliation, ours with God, 2 C. v. 18; work of, by Christ, C. i. 20; the Ministry of, 2 C. v. 18.
- Red Sea, the, a type of Baptism, M. xx. 22; L. xii. 50; J. iii. 5; vi. 33; 1 C. x. 2; see *Baptism*, *Manna*, *Paschal*.
- "Redeeming the time," explained, C. iv. 5.
- Redemption, by Christ, G. iii. 13; 1 C. i. 30; vi. 20; 2 C. v. 15; 1 Ti. ii. 6; "Universal," see Introduction to the Epistle to the Romans; observations of S. Augustine on, Mk. x. 13; Barrow's Sermon on, A. x. 5; Scriptural import of the term, E. i. 7. 14; deduced from universal Sinfulness, R. iii. 9. 21-28; v. 13. 14; viii. 39; ix. 1; xiv. 15; proofs of it, 1 Ti. ii. 6; iv. 2; 2 P. ii. 2; 1 J. ii. 1, 2; 1 C. vi. 11; viii. 11; Rev. v. 9; the doctrine of, preached by St. Paul, E. iii. 1; Heb. ii. 9; see *Universal Redemption*.
- Reed, the, used at our Lord's crucifixion, its probable nature, M. xxvii. 48.
- Reformation, the English, its principles, conservative and restorative, Part ii. p. xxxiii.; Introduction to the First Epistle to the Corinthians.
- Regeneration and filial Adoption in Christ, the source of all Christian Duty, R. vi. 6; Introduction to the First Epistle of St. Peter; our Regeneration derived from the Generation of the Son of God, 1 J. v. 1; regeneration in Baptism, J. iii. 3-12; Tit. iii. 5. 9; Introduction to the Epistle of St. John; Part i. p. 259.
- Relationship, natural, the groundwork of Christian affection, Rev. vii. 1; see *Brothers*.
- "Remembrance of me," L. xxii. 19.
- Remphan, or Rephan, probably Saturn, A. vii. 43; S. Cyril's note on, *ib.*; adopted by St. Stephen from the LXX instead of *Chiun*, *ib.*
- Rending of garments, observations on the practice of, M. xxvi. 65; significance of the act in the case of Caiaphas, *ib.*
- Repentance, defined, 2 C. vii. 9; on the difference between true and false repentance, M. xxvii. 3; Mk. vi. 26; L. xv. 21; 2 C. vii. 8; Heb. xii. 16-18; Novatian error as to, Heb. vi. 6; see *Absolution*.
- Repetition, one of the principles of action of the Holy Spirit, in his dealings with men, Part i. pp. xxiii. xlviii.; instances, M. xxvi. 60; A. xi. 4-12; see also Introduction to the Apocalypse.
- Repetitions, vain, in prayer, M. vi. 7; but cp. xiv. 39; common in Prophecy, Introduction to the Revelation; frequent in Scripture, Part i. p. xlv.; characteristic of Inspiration, Introduction to the Gospel of St. Mark, p. 113; St. Mark often repeats St. Matthew, Mk. i. 16. 20; vi. 17; see also L. i. 3; St. John often repeats the other Evangelists, Introduction to the Gospel of St. John, p. 268; repetition, to give solemnity, M. xxvi. 60; of a name, denotes love, xxiii. 37; cp. L. x. 41.
- Reprobation, presupposes foreseen sin, R. ix. 13; 1 P. ii. 8; and see *Calvinism* and *Universal Redemption*.
- Reproof, on the mode of administering, public and private, M. xviii. 16, 17, note 2.
- Reptiles, venomous, purpose for which they are probably designed by Providence, L. x. 19.
- Rest, procured for us by our Lord's sufferings, M. xxvi. 43.
- Restitution, L. xix. 8.
- Restoration, future, described, 2 P. iii. 13; cp. Jam. i. 18; R. viii. 19-22.
- Rests, three, specially mentioned in Scripture, Heb. iii. 11; see *Sabbath*.
- Resurrection of our Lord, its occurrence, "after three days," explained, M. xii. 39; see *Three Days*.
- Resurrection, eight instances of, recorded in Scripture, M. xxvii. 52; and see L. vii. 11; the First and Second Resurrection, J. xx. 23; Rev. xx. 5.
- Resurrection, Scriptural description of the General Resurrection, 1 Ti. iv. 16; doctrine of the Resurrection of the Body, J. v. 28; 1 C. xv. 6. 29. 39-41; 2 C. iv. 10; v. 2. 3. 10; P. iii. 21; and see M. xvii. 2, 3; xxii. 32.
- Resurrection, our Lord's, typified by wave sheaf, M. xxviii. 1; by the wheat, L. xiii. 19; cp. J. xii. 24; evidences of, in St. John's Gospel, Introduction, p. 265.
- Resurrection, period after our Lord's, spiritual meaning of all then done by Him, L. xxiv. 28; He had then a real Human body, J. xx. 19. 27.
- Resurrection, connected with the Holy Communion, Mk. xiv. 13; glorified bodies of saints, 26; L. vii. 22; xxiv. 31; folly of denying it, xii. 20. 27.
- Resurrection, the first (by Baptism), see *Baptism*; J. v. 25; E. iv. 23; Rev. xx. 5, 6.
- Retaliation, the Jewish law of, supplanted by our Lord's law of Love, M. v. 39.
- Retirement, religious, advantages of, J. v. 14; our Lord's, M. v. 1; xiv. 23; and see *Mountains*.
- Reuben, parallel between his place in the Catalogue of the patriarchs and Peter's in that of the Apostles, M. x. 2.
- Revelation, seven modes and degrees of, A. x. 10.
- Revelation and Reason, their provinces distinct, but consistent, M. i. 1; xiii. 52.
- Revelation, no other to be expected; see *Faith*.
- Revelation, the Book of, on its design and structure, Introduction; circumstances of the author when it was written, *ib.*; contents, a manual of consolation for the Church in her earthly pilgrimage, *ib.*; condition of Jerusalem, *ib.*; identifies the Catholic Church of Christ, with God's ancient people in Egypt, *ib.*; Christianizes the period of the Captivity of Babylon, *ib.*; comforts the Ten Tribes, *ib.*; adopts a Hebraistic diction, *ib.*; repeats the language, without mentioning the names, of the Hebrew prophets, *ib.*; method in which its prophecies are delivered, *ib.*; vision of the Sixth Seal refers to the circumstances of the last age of the world, *ib.*; advantages possessed in the present age for the elucidation of the Apocalypse, *ib.*; Time the best interpreter of prophecy, *ib.*; our authorized Version of the Apocalypse capable of many improvements, *ib.*, note 2; recent collation of previously unexplored MSS., *ib.*; the Apocalypse the only prophetic book of the New Testament, *ib.*; the *Præterist* class of interpreters, *ib.*; the Jewish doctors fulfil the Prophecies by denying their fulfilment, *ib.*; date of it, *ib.*; error of Epiphanius, *ib.*; Authorship of the Apocalypse, *ib.*; testimonies of Papias, Justin Martyr, Melito, Irenæus, *ib.*; situation of Patmos, *ib.*; fitness of St. John at Patmos for writing the Apocalypse, *ib.*; text, *ib.*; ancient Commentators, *ib.*; John the writer of the Apocalypse, but the Author is Christ, Rev. i. 1; Divinity of Christ declared, *ib.*; Asia of the Apocalypse, 4; the ordinary rules of Grammar set aside here, *ib.*; citations

from the Hebrew Prophets, especially Daniel and Zechariah, 7; gentleness of the writer, 9; why *seven* Churches are addressed, 11; why Ephesus is placed first in order of the seven Churches, *ib.*; the remarkable precision and accuracy with which the Apocalypse is written, ii. 1; vi. 7, 8; adaptation of each Epistle to a special attribute of Christ, ii. 1; scale of ascent in the blessedness promised to those who overcome, 7; reference to the Jews in the Epistle to Smyrna, 9; the second death, 11; "thy wife Jezebel," 20; "I will cast her into a bed,"—a bed of sickness, 22; spiritual faithlessness, *ib.*; xvii. 1—3; New Jerusalem, the Christian Sion, iii. 12; the form *ἱεροσόλυμα* never used in the Apocalypse, *ib.*; "the Beginning of the Creation," erroneously understood by the Arians, 14; the Rainbow, iv. 3; the twenty-four elders and the four living creatures, 4—6; expositions of this passage by Victorinus, Jerome, Primasius, Ambrosius Ansbertus, Bede, and Haymo, *ib.*; the Holy Gospel signified by the four living creatures, *ib.*; parallel vision of Ezekiel, *ib.*; typified also by the arrangements of the Tabernacle of the Israelites, *ib.*; practical use of the Interpretation, *ib.*; the sea of glass, 6; Christ represented as a Lamb, v. 1; opening of the second Seal, vi. 3, 4; and of the third Seal, 5; interpreted, *ib.*; Satan alters his mode of assault, and turns from persecution to heresy, *ib.*; the characteristic of heresy, *ib.*; the balance a symbol of traffic, *ib.*; the sixth Seal, vi. 10, 11; the number *six* in the Apocalypse introduces a time of *trial*, *ib.*; harmony between the seven Seals and the seven days of the Passion Week of Christ, *ib.*; correspondence between the last age of the Church and the day of Christ's Passion, *ib.*; the sixth Seal brings the prophecy down to the *last age* of the Church and the world, 12, 17; the Apocalypse a sequel to the Book of Daniel, *ib.*; these Visions teach us how History ought to be written, 16; the sealing of the servants of God, vii. 1; the *sea* the Apocalyptic emblem of Nations in a restless state, *ib.*; *trees* an emblem of the rich and powerful, *ib.*; the Cross in Baptism, *ib.*; what do the "one hundred and forty-four thousand" represent? 4; believers in Christ the true Israel of God, *ib.*; Jerusalem the Apocalyptic emblem of the Christian Church, *ib.*; the number *Twelve* represents in this Book what is *Apostolical*, *ib.*; the arrangement and designation of the tribes of the Christian Israel, vii. 2—4; why Dan is excluded from the list of the twelve tribes, *ib.*; the Seventh, or Last Seal—the end of the world, viii. 1; "silence for half an hour," *ib.*; design of the Seven Trumpets, *ib.*; power of united Prayer, 4, 5; the Third Trumpet, 10, 11; a Star denotes a luminary of the Church, *ib.*; ix. 1—11; wormwood, false doctrine, viii. 10, 11; the Fourth Trumpet, 12; the flying eagle probably denotes Christ, 13; the *moral* of this Vision, *ib.*; the Fifth Trumpet, ix. 1—11; announces the woes inflicted by Mohammedanism, *ib.*; inferences, doctrinal, moral, and practical, from the Vision, *ib.*; the Sixth Trumpet, called "the second woe," 13; the Seventh Trumpet announces the Universal judgment, *ib.*; the design of the Trumpets specially to represent the *punishment* of the wicked, 19; *four*, in the Apocalypse, indicates *Universality*, *ib.*; *colours*, inferences from them, *ib.*; *jacinth*, a *sacred* colour in the Levitical Dispensation, *ib.*; the circumstances of the Exodus often recur in the Apocalypse, *ib.*; Babylon always used in this Book in a figurative sense, *ib.*; the Four Angels represent the Divine Word, *ib.*; the Vision represents the diffusion of the fourfold Gospel to the four quarters of the earth, *ib.*; in what sense the Word was *bound*, *ib.*; the Vision shows that the present diffusion of the Holy Scripture will be a terrible woe to those who oppose it, *ib.*; the little book, or roll, x. 1; the seven thunders represent the Consummation of God's judgments, *ib.*; *seven* the symbol of *completion*, *ib.*; the *little roll*, why so called, 2; this roll describes God's judgments on those in His Church who disobey His Word, *ib.*; the phrase "Son of Man" applied in the New Testament to Christ alone, *ib.*; remarkable parallelism between Ezekiel and St. John, *ib.*; the punitive power of God's Word revealed by "the Sixth Trumpet," or "the Trumpet of the Second Woe," *ib.*; *measuring*, the act of, what it means, xi. 1, 2; difference between St. John's Vision and the two parallel ones in Ezekiel and Zechariah, *ib.*; the Holy Scripture represented by "a reed like unto a rod," *ib.*; St. John specially appointed to complete the Canon of Holy Scripture, and to assure the Church of its integrity and inspiration, *ib.*; "Gentiles" signify the enemies of Christ,—*"Jews"* are true believers, *ib.*; a corrupt state of Christendom represented in this Vision, *ib.*; the Two Witnesses, *ib.*; and the "Two Olive Trees" represent the Two Testaments, 3, 4; woes denounced against all who despise the Scriptures, 5; analogy between the two Witnesses and Christ, 9; a corrupt Church identifies itself with the literal Jerusalem, *ib.*; called also *Sodom*, *ib.*; meaning of the numbers *four*, *six*, *seven*, and *twelve*, xi. 19; 42 months, 1260 days, $3\frac{1}{2}$ years, use of these numbers in the Apocalypse, *ib.*; the Woman a type of the Christian Church, xii. 1, 2; not,

as some Romish Theologians assert, the Virgin Mary, *ib.*; the Dragon, Satan, *ib.*; the Eagle, Christ, 13, 14; the Four Beasts, xiii. 1—10; the second Beast, the Roman Papal Power, 5, 13, 14; the *Image* of the Beast, 14; the Number of the Beast, 17, 18; the Lamb, xiv. 1, 2; Vision of the Last Judgment, 14—18; the Seven Vials, xvi. 1—10; Fall of the mystical Babylon,—the Papacy, 12; Armageddon, 16; xix. 19—21; two discordant schools of Romish Theologians, Preliminary Note on ch. xvii.; the harlotry of the Romish Church, *ib.*; its present compared with its former condition, 1—4; contrast between the Bride and the Harlot, *ib.*; xxi. 9—27; "Mystery," 7; the fall of Papal Rome will not be the destruction of the Papacy, xviii. 1; Rome's "notes of the Church" are *marks of the Harlot*, 7, 8; her fall may be followed by Anarchy and Infidelity, 9; Marriage Feast of the Lamb, xix. 6, 7; warning against Creature Worship, 10; to Christianize Jewish language and ideas was one of the main purposes of the Apocalypse, xx. 1—7; the first and second Resurrection, 5, 6; erroneous views of the Millennium, *ib.*; Gog and Magog, 8; the Devil cast into the lake of fire, 10; the glory of the righteous, and the misery of the wicked, xxi. 1—8; the River of Life, and the Tree of Life, xxii. 1, 2; testimony to the truth and inspiration of the History of Genesis, *ib.*; in the Apocalypse Jesus Christ avouches the Inspiration of the Old Testament, 9.

Revelations, Divine, various modes of, A. x. 10.

Revenge, expressly interdicted under all circumstances, L. xviii. 7.

Reverence inculcated, L. viii. 45.

Rewards and punishments, future, 2 C. v. 10; see *Eternity*.

Rich toward God, explained, L. xii. 33.

Riches need not disqualify for heaven, L. xvi. 25.

"Right hand of God," never specified in the New Testament as the instrument by which He works, A. ii. 33.

Righteousness of God, 2 C. v. 21; Christ is our Righteousness, R. iii. 28; v. 21; viii. 3; 1 C. i. 30.

Righteousness, distinguished from Holiness, L. i. 75; see *Holiness*.

Risen body, arguments for its *identity*, P. iii. 21; see *Resurrection*.

Ritual of the Primitive Church, the reading of the Gospels formed a part of it, 1 Th. v. 2.

Roads, Roman, providential provision in them for the propagation of Christianity, A. xvii. 1; xxviii. 15.

Robes, long ones, signet rings, and shoes, the badges of freemen, L. xv. 22; see *Garments*.

Rock, Christ typified by the, M. vii. 25; the title reserved in the Old Testament to the ALMIGHTY, M. xvi. 18; "On this Rock will I build my Church," *ib.*; and 1 C. ii. 2; iii. 11; typified by the smitten rock in the wilderness, 1 C. x. 4; error of the Church of Rome, *ib.*

Roman army, at the siege of Jerusalem, circumstances to which it owed its success, L. xxi. 20; used to punish the Jews, J. xi. 48.

Roman Catholic Church, its view of marriage and divorce, M. v. 32; futility of its pretensions to infallibility, L. i. 27; true character of the unity to which it lays claim, Rev. xviii., *Retrospect*; its intolerant and persecuting spirit, ix. 55; the cases of Ananias and Sapphira, and of Elymas, sophistically cited in defence of its employment of pains and penalties, *ib.*; treatment of conscience, xix. 20; notion respecting the prayer of our Lord for St. Peter, xxii. 32; the "two swords," 38; groundless preference of the Latin language, xxiii. 38; erroneous inference from the act of our Lord in breaking bread with the two disciples, xxiv. 30; radical error of her theological system in dealing with Holy Scripture, J. v. 1—11; the sin of separation lies at her door, ix. 35; perversion of Acts iii. 21, A. iii. 21; the practice of that Church in celebrating Divine Service in a tongue not understood by the people, opposed to the express ordinance of God, and prophetically protested against by the words of St. Paul, 1 C. xiv. throughout; unscriptural tenet respecting the meritoriousness of the sufferings of the Saints, 2 C. i. 5; the Papal supremacy confuted, E. iv. 11; safeguard provided by the Holy Ghost, against the devices of this corrupt Church, in the Epistle of St. Paul to the Colossians, see Introduction to that Epistle; erroneous view of the nature of the sufferings of the Saints, C. i. 24; perversion of 2 P. iii. 15, 16; not only holds heretical doctrines, but enforces them, Rev. ii. 21; her affected reverence for S. Jerome compared with her practice with respect to the Apocrypha, iv. 4—6; her erroneous view of the Holy Eucharist, 5, 6; her unfaithfulness, in placing the Apocrypha and Traditions on a par with the Word of God, xi. 1, 2; her arrogant pretensions with respect to the Church of God and the Holy Scriptures, 3, 4; her conduct, grounded on the plea of the obscurity of the Bible, 9; her persecuting spirit, xiii. 3; xvii. 6; how a *Church*, and yet Babylon, xiii. 3, 10; Preliminary Note to Rev. xvii.; her imprecations, xiii. 13; xvii. 6, 16; enforces celibacy, xvi. 1—

- 10; temporal splendour, 8; infidelity an offshoot from Popery, *ib.*; Rome in many respects a second Babylon, Preliminary Note to chap. xvii.; testimony of Bellarmine, Baronius, and Bossuet, *ib.*; the ruin of Papal Rome will not be effected by Protestant Kings or Nations, but by Papal Princes and people rising against her, xvii. 16.
- Roman Catholic Divines, futility of the argument built by them upon the term *Cepha* as applied by our Lord to Peter, Mk. viii. 29; perversion of Acts v. 5, A. v. 5; and of A. xxiii. 6; practice of, with regard to the Apostolic precept respecting the reading of Holy Scripture in public worship, 1 Th. v. 27; impose unwarrantable terms of Church Communion, see Review of G. ii.; statement of the claims of the Bishops of Rome, *ib.*, note 3.
- Roman Church, primitive, its foundation, and the ministry of St. Paul there, Vol. ii. p. ix.
- Roman civil power, the Apostles and Christian Church generally unmolested by it for some time after the Crucifixion, A. iv. 6; ix. 31; miseries that fell on it in the fourth century, Rev. viii. 7.
- Roman influence, very prevalent in Judæa, proved by the imposition of Latin names on persons and places; see *Antonia, Casarea, Herod Agrippa, Italian band, Josephus, Neapolis, Prætorium, Sebaste, Tiberias*, and Introduction to the Gospel of St. Mark.
- Roman Monarchy, foretold by Daniel, L. ii. 2; broke down the local reverence for national deities, Introduction to the Acts; prepares the way for the Gospel, and accelerates its course, *ib.*
- Roman prisoners, mode of securing them, Mk. i. 23.
- Roman rhetoricians, practice of hiring them, A. xxiv. 1.
- Roman words used by St. Mark, Mk. ii. 4; and see *Latin*.
- Romans, Epistle to the, in what it resembles St. Luke's Gospel, Introduction to the Gospel of St. Luke, p. 161; the germ of the argument unfolded in it contained in the Discourse delivered by the Apostle in his first Missionary Tour, in the Synagogue at Antioch in Pisidia, Introduction; importance of studying St. Paul's Epistles in chronological order, with the aid of the Acts of the Apostles, *ib.*, note 1; similarity between this Epistle and that to the Galatians, *ib.*; in what respect these Epistles differ, Introduction to the Epistle to the Galatians; the Roman Church mainly consisted of Jewish Christians, *ib.*; difficulty of St. Paul's task in this Epistle, Introduction; date of it, *ib.*; called, and *holy*,—the terms explained, R. i. 6, 7; "the righteousness of God," what, 17; "From faith to faith," *ib.*; man's accountability, 18; "from the creation of the world," explained, 20; true notion of Justification, iii. 26; classes against whom the doctrine is to be maintained, *ib.*; true interpretation of iv. 2; of vii. 12, 13; and of viii. 11; "the whole creation," import of the expression, 23; explanation of, 26; Calvinistic interpretations of chap. ix.; explanation of ix. 3; scope of the argument in 11; "whom he will he hardeneth," 18; "the analogy of faith," xii. 6; "not idle in business," 11; "give place unto wrath," 19; "weak in faith," explained, xiv. 1; "strong in faith," *ib.*; "not to doubtful disputations," *ib.*; "all things are clean," 20; "whatsoever is not of faith is sin," mistakes respecting the import of the word *faith* here, *ib.*; "having sealed this fruit," xv. 28; numerous greetings at the close of the Epistle, xvi. 3; remarks on the non-occurrence of St. Peter's name in this Epistle, 9; how is the Church of Rome changed since St. Paul wrote this Letter to it, 20; genuineness of the Doxology established, 25—27; the pith of the doctrine of the whole Epistle contained in this concluding sentence, *ib.*; the names and order of the earliest bishops of Rome, P. iv. 3.
- Romans, St. Mark's Gospel intended for them, Introduction to the Gospel of St. Mark, and i. 5; iii. 6; vii. 3, 4; x. 23; xii. 19; xiv. 30; xv. 21; see *Latin*.
- Rome, Ancient Bishops of, P. iv. 3.
- Rome, called Babylon figuratively, Rev. xiii. 17, 18; see Preliminary Note to Rev. xvii.
- Rome, Church of; see *Roman Catholic Church*, and *Rome, Bishop of*.
- Rome, great fire there 19th July, A.D. 64, Introduction to the Epistles to Timothy and Titus; attributed by Nero to the Christian converts in that city, *ib.*; this was the first persecution, *ib.*; the city a microcosmic epitome of the Roman Empire, Rev. xvii. 9.
- Rome, Papal, probable causes of her future fall, Rev. xvi. 12; xvii. 16; her fall will not be the destruction of the Papacy, xiv. 8, 9; xviii. 1; xix. 19.
- Rome, Paul's course thither, Pt. ii. p. 10; his preaching there, 20.
- Rome, the bishop of, no true successor to St. Peter, M. x. 2; the prophecy of our Lord in Matt. xxiv. 15 fulfilled in the Christian Church by him, M. xxiv. 15; a Roman bishop refutes the notion that miracles are always a sign of the true Church, Mk. xvi. 17; two Roman bishops deny the doctrine of the Immaculate Conception, L. i. 27; the bishop of Rome vainly imagined to be concerned in our Lord's prayer for St. Peter's faith, L. xxii. 32; his imposition of false doctrines renders communion with him impossible, J. ix. 35; extent to which he has carried his heterodox teaching, *ib.*; impiously permits himself to be worshipped, A. x. 25; supremacy, xv. 7; the power of the, 2 Th. ii. 3—12; exalts himself exceedingly against civil rulers, *ib.*; first public official act which is performed by every Pope on his elevation to the pontificate, *ib.*; bearing of this act upon the apostolic prediction contained in this passage, *ib.*; guilty of imposing unwarrantable terms of Church Communion, see Review of G. ii., p. 55; statement of his claims, *ib.*, note 3; arrogance of his claim to universal supremacy, against the due rights of temporal rulers, R. xiii. 1; the non-occurrence of St. Peter's name in the Epistle to the Romans strong against the assertion that it is necessary to be united to those who call themselves his successors, xvi. 9; his duty at least is to imitate him, and to listen to his precepts, 1 P. ii. 13; derogates from the dignity of what he calls "the oracles of God," iv. 11; intrudes into other men's dioceses, 15; "lords over God's heritage," v. 3; futility of his claim to infallibility grounded on the supposed infallibility of St. Peter, 2 P. iii. 15, 16; see *Roman Catholic Church*.
- Roofs, how constructed, Mk. ii. 4.
- "Root of all evil, the love of money is the," 1 Ti. vi. 10; illustration of this passage from the prickly pear, *ib.*
- "Ruler of the feast," his office, J. ii. 8.
- Rulers; see *Kings*.
- Sabbath, none in the Temple, according to a maxim of the Jews, M. xii. 5; the Sabbath made for man, 7; J. v. 17; vii. 22; ix. 4; "pray that your flight be not on the Sabbath," M. xxiv. 20; gives way to "the Lord's Day," xxvii. 62; Christ the true Sabbath, Pt. i. p. 261; L. xxiii. 56; J. xii. 1, 2; xix. 14; God works still on the Sabbath, J. v. 9, 17; ix. 4; Sabbath broken by the chief priests, xviii. 28; obligation of the Christian Sabbath, M. xxviii. 1; L. vi. 1; xxiii. 56; xxiv. 1; J. xx. 26; A. xx. 7; Heb. iv. 9; seventh-day Sabbath, typical of the grave, J. xii. 2; relation of it to the Lord's Day, vii. 23; see *Preparation*.
- Sabbath-day's journey, mentioned only in the New Testament, A. i. 12; probable inner meaning of the expression, *ib.*; cp. M. xxiv. 20.
- Sabellian heresy, J. vii. 16; refutation of it, *ib.*; viii. 17; x. 1. 30; xiv. 9; xvii. 3; xx. 17.
- Sacraments, analogy between the two, J., Review of the Contents of ch. vi.; channels, not sources, of grace, Vol. i. p. 261; their efficacy not impaired by the infirmities of those who administer them, M. x. 4. 41; why binding, xxvi. 20; what constitutes a Sacrament? J. xiii. 14; why simple elements are used, 2 C. iv. 7; their moral uses, Introduction to the Epistle to the Ephesians.
- Sacraments, the benefits of the Incarnation and Death of the Son of God are communicated and applied to us instrumentally in them, C. ii. 10; 1 J. i. 7; v. 6; see *Baptism, Supper, Means of Grace*, and *Church*.
- Sacrifice, every one must be, either willingly or unwillingly, Mk. ix. 49; Jam. v. 5; Rev. xix. 17.
- Sacrifice, the Christian, 1 C. v. 6; x. 3; Heb. vii. 27; viii. 4; ix. 4; x. 12; xiii. 10—16; Rev. v. 6.
- Sacrifice, the duty of offering, regarded as paramount by the Jews, M. xxii. 36; daily, taken away, xxiv. 15.
- Sacrilege, the sin of, A. v. 2.
- Sadducees, their tenets, M. iii. 7; A. xxiii. 8; how made instrumental to the declaration of truth, Introduction to the Acts, p. 10; A. v. 16; their bitter hostility to our Lord, M. xvi. 1; confuted, xxii. 32; reason of their implacable enmity to the Apostles after the Resurrection, A. iv. 1; their cruelty in judicial causes, *ib.*; their attachment to Annas, *ib.*; v. 17.
- Saints, the term applied to Christians generally, E. i. 1; R. i. 7; 1 C. i. 2; the proper notion of, 1 C. i. 2; R. i. 6, 7.
- Saints, how they judge the world, 1 C. vi. 2, 3.
- Saints' Days, on the right observance of, A. viii. 60, note 1.
- Salathiel, assigned by St. Matthew as a successor to Jeconiah, M. i. 12; proved by St. Luke to be of David's line, through his son Nathan, M. i. 12; L. iii. 27.
- Salem, its situation, J. iii. 23; Heb. vii. 1.
- Salmone, its situation, A. xxvii. 7.
- Salome, brief notice of her, Mk. xv. 40.
- Salt, its symbolical significance, M. v. 13, 14; Mk. ix. 49, 50.
- "Salted with fire," explained, Mk. ix. 49.
- Salutations, in St. Paul's Epistles, Pt. iii. p. 281.

- Salvation of all desired by God, M. xviii. 14; J. v. 40; 1 Ti. ii. 4; not to be obtained on our own terms, L. xiv. 14.
- Salvation, human, spoken of as already *accomplished*, R. viii. 24. 28, 29; Introduction, p. 193; Tit. iii. 5.
- Samaria, "through the midst of," L. xvii. 11; avoided by the Jews, ix. 53; Philip the deacon preaches the Gospel in a city of, A. viii. 5; and see *Sichem*.
- Samaria, the woman of, J. iv. 7—42.
- Samaritan, the name referred by the Fathers to Christ, L. x. 31; cp. J. viii. 48.
- Samaritan leper, cleansed, L. xvii. 11—19; his thankfulness, 14, 15; his example, *ib.*
- Samaritan, the Good, L. x. 30—35.
- Samaritans, their refusal to receive our Lord, L. ix. 54; held a middle place between the Jews and the Gentile world, Vol. ii. p. 260; cp. Introduction to the Gospel of St. John, p. 260; contrasted favourably with the Jews, J. iii. 25; intercourse between them, iv. 9; cp. L. xvii. 14; their heathen origin and idolatrous worship, 22; expected a Messiah, 25; Dositheus, *ib.*; receive Christ, and are thus contrasted with the Jews, 40; the twelve patriarchs buried in their city of Sichem, A. vii. 16; receive the Gospel at the hands of Philip the deacon, viii. 5.
- Samothrace, A. xvi. 11.
- Sanctification, Christ the origin of our, 1 C. i. 30.
- "Sanctified by the word of God," 1 Ti. iv. 5.
- "Sanctify," import of the word, J. xvii. 19; Heb. ii. 11; R. i. 7.
- Sandals and shoes distinguished, M. x. 10; loosing of sandals, a menial office, L. iii. 16.
- Sanhedrim, its composition, M. xxvi. 57; A. v. 21. 34; vi. 12; whether it had the power of life and death in matters of religion, vii. 59.
- Sapphire, described, Rev. xxi. 19.
- Saracens, their rapid and extensive conquests, Rev. ix. 1; employed by Divine Providence as an instrument for the punishment of Heresy, *ib.*
- Sarah's laughter, symbolical significance of, R. iv. 3; her example as a wife proposed to Christian wives, 1 P. iii. 6; her words explained and justified by St. Paul, G. iv. 29.
- Sardine stone, its colour, Rev. iv. 3; symbolical significance of, *ib.*
- Sardis, its situation, Rev. i. 11; the see of Melito, *ib.*
- Saron, account of its situation and productions, A. ix. 35.
- "Satan, delivery to," the punishment of extreme contumacy, 1 C. v. 5; mention of the name "Satan" to a *Gentile* Church in the First Epistle to the Thessalonians accounted for, 1 Th. ii. 18.
- Satan, derivation and import of the name, M. iv. 10; contrasted with παράκλητος, J. xiv. 16; other appellations given in Scripture to the Evil Spirit, M. viii. 29; falls from heaven, L. x. 18; his personal identity studiously marked by the sacred writers throughout, xxii. 3; J. xiv. 30; his first temptation to be resisted, J. xiii. 27; xx. 27; overthrow of his kingdom, J. xii. 30, 31; Introduction to the Acts; his unseen working against Christ and His Church, 1 Th. ii. 18; Rev. vi. 3, 4; his influence over the human body, 2 C. xii. 7; his power in the world, E. ii. 2; M. viii. 29; see *Devil*, and *Angels, evil*, and *Python*.
- Saturninus, Sentius, his jurisdiction in Judæa, L. ii. 2; probably held office at the same time with Quirinus, *ib.*
- Saul, the persecutor, A. vii. 58; present at the stoning of St. Stephen, *ib.*; his conversion one of the fruits of the martyr's prayer, 60; see *Paul*.
- Saul's reign, its duration not stated in the Old Testament, A. xiii. 21.
- "Saved, are there few that be?" L. xiii. 23.
- Saviour; see *Jesus*, and *Christ*.
- "Savour of death unto death," explained, 2 C. ii. 14—16.
- Sayings and actions of our Lord, many of them prophetic, J., Review of the Contents of ch. vi.
- Scandals, observations on their nature and tendency, M. xiii. 41; xviii. 7, 8.
- Scenopægia, or Feast of Tabernacles, remarkable parallel between it and our Lord's Incarnation, Pt. i. 238, 239; the cycle of the Jewish calendar of Lessons of the Law to be read in the Synagogues commenced with that Feast, 238; and see *Tabernacles*.
- Schism, its nature, J. ix. 34, 35; danger and guilt of, *ib.*; A. ii. 42, 46; xxiii. 6; sin of, Introduction to the First Epistle to the Corinthians and to the Epistle to the Ephesians; cp. 1 C. iii. 12; cautions against it, 2 C. vi. 17, 18; Rev. ii. 21; on preaching in Schism, P. i. 18; difference between Schism and Heresy, 2 P. ii. 1; they who enforce unscriptural terms of Communion are guilty of the sin of schism, Rev. ii. 21; Church of England, not guilty of it, *ib.*; and see Rev. xviii., *Retro-spect of*.
- Scourging in the Synagogue, M. xxiii. 34; A. xxii. 19; xxvi. 11; 2 C. xi. 24.
- Scourging of slaves before crucifixion, M. xxvii. 26; of our Lord, L. xxiii. 16; J. xix. 1.
- Scribes, "a scribe instructed," &c., M. xiii. 52; the same with the great Sanhedrim, xxvi. 57; contrast between their teaching and our Lord's, M. vii. 29; their use in preserving the text of Scripture, xxiii. 2.
- Scripture, the integrity of the Text guarded by a superintending Providence, Pt. i. Preface, p. xiii.; and see *Old Testament*; and J. viii., *Introductory Note*, p. 310; Holy Scripture best interprets itself, Pt. i. Preface, p. xiv.; its plenary inspiration, xvii.—xxi.; 1 C. v. 9; 2 Ti. iii. 16; language of Scripture, Pt. i. Preface, p. xxi.; arguments alleged against the theory of a verbal inspiration answered, *ib.*; different reports of the same facts characteristic of the inspiration of the sacred writers as to words, *ib.*; Various Readings, *ib.*; the diction and style of Scripture, xxvi.; its fulness and pregnancy, *ib.*; varieties in the Gospels, xlvii.; mutual intertexture of the various books of, xlviii.; 1 P. i. 6; the Rule of Faith, Rev. xi. 1, 2; sin and danger of reading it in a carping spirit, L. viii. 45; the duty of constantly reading it so as to bring its precepts to bear on the events of life, xii. 13; cp. Mk. xii. 24; J. v. 39; grounds on which our belief in the inspiration of the Scripture rests, 1 C. v. 9; exalted view of its dignity, E. iii. 10; sufficiency of, 1 C. ii. 16, pp. 86—88; 2 Ti. iii. 15; the weapon used by our Lord against Satan, M. iv. 4. 6. 10; L. iv. 4; may be perverted, J. xi. 53; precepts respecting the reading of it in public worship, 1 Th. v. 27; 2 P. iii. 15, 16; cp. L. xi. 52; practice of the Church of Rome opposed to the Apostolic rule, *ib.*; the later portions of Scripture often found to reflect light upon the earlier ones, G. iv. 29; its meaning not to be confined to one sense, 1 P. i. 23. 25; 1 Tim. iv. 5; Jam. i. 18; its true sense, how to be ascertained, R. xii. 6; its twofold office, Rev. v. 8; a woe to those who oppose it, ix. 19; its punitive power represented in the Sixth Trumpet, or the Trumpet of the second woe, ix. 13—19; x. 2; xi. 6. 11; symbolized by a Reed like a Rod, xi. 1; prophetic view of the Holy Scripture relatively to Rome, xi. 1, 2. See *Old Testament*, *New Testament*, *Gospel*, *Evangelists*, *Inspiration*.
- "Sea and earth," explained, L. xxi. 25—27.
- Sea of Salt; see *Dead Sea*.
- Sea, the, an emblem of trouble and confusion, Rev. xxi. 1.
- Seal ring, L. xvi. 22; cp. J. iii. 34.
- Sebaste, name given by Herod to Samaria, A. viii. 5.
- Sechem, Joseph buried there, A. vii. 16; God there first appears to Abraham after his arrival in Canaan, vii. 16; viii. 17; see *Sichem*.
- "Second Sabbath after the first," L. vi. 1.
- Sectarianism condemned, Mk. ix. 40.
- Secular spirit, rebuked, Mk. vii. 11.
- "See Me," force of the expression, M. xxiii. 39.
- Seed, parable of the, M. xiii. 3; Mk. iv. 4.
- Seleucia, the harbour of Antioch in Syria, A. xiii. 4.
- Self-deceit, L. xviii. 11.
- Self-love, the source of the evils of the last days, J. xxi. 17.
- Self-murder, emphatically condemned in Scripture, A. xvi. 27.
- Self-praise, its origin and tendency, 2 C. xi. 17.
- Self-righteousness, M. xx. 3.
- Self-will, the root of unbelief, J. vii. 17.
- Senses, Holy Scripture may have several, see *Scripture*.
- Separatists, condemned by our Lord, Mk. ix. 40; caution to those who separate from the Church on the plea of imperfections, G. i. 2; 1 C. i. 2; their principles and conduct censured, 2 C. vi. 17, 18; Rev. ii. 21; abuse of this passage by them, *ib.*; xi. 4, 5.
- Septuagint, the assiduous study of it recommended, Vol. i. p. xiv. and *note* 2; use of it by the Apostles, Vol. ii. p. 14; its language often adopted in the New Testament, M. ix. 36; xix. 5; xxi. 16; L. i. 7; ii. 35; ix. 51; how used by St. John, *Introductory Note*, p. 267; peculiar reading, J. xix. 37; said to have led to a misapprehension concerning the coming of Elias, M. xvii. 10; its use of κρατέω, Mk. iii. 21; not always cited by our Lord and his Apostles, why, M. xii. 17; xiii. 14; a felicitous circumstance attending the formation of that version, xii. 17; its use of ἀνελήφθῃ, 2 Kings ii. 9—11, prepares the term ἀνάληψις for the sense of *Ascension*, which it bears L. ix. 51; observation of Valckenaer on the use of the particle ἄν in the Psalms and Prophets, xvii. 6; suggestion as to date of LXX, *ib.*; Hebrew phrase which it renders by λαμβάνειν πρόσωπον, xx. 21; rarely cited by St. John, *Introductory Note* to St. John's Gospel; use the expression ὁ λόγος, Ezek. i. 21, for Shaddai, J. i. 1; explain μονογενὴς by ἀγαπητός, Gen. xxi. 2. 12. 14; use Κύριος for *Jehovah*, Pt. ii. x.; A. i. 6; words and phrases providentially prepared for the Gospel, ii. 27; adopted by St. James and St. Luke, xv. 16; its early use among the Jews, and great importance to us, Heb. x. 5; why employed by the author of the Epistle to the Hebrews, *Introductory Note*, p. 373; the "Viaduct" between the Old and New Testaments, Pt. i. p. xiv.; one of the best commentaries on the New Testament, 2 C. iii. 7—18.

Sepulture, effect which Christianity had upon the national usages of, A. viii. 2; importance of the rites of, *ib.*; ix. 37; and see *Graves*.

Sergius Paulus, his conversion, L. xxi. 13; account of him, A. xiii. 7; his conduct contrasted with Gallio's, *ib.*

Sermon on the Mount, place of its delivery, M. v. 1.

Serpent, the brazen, in what respects exemplary to us, M. x. 16; a type of Christ, J. iii. 14.

Serpent, the Python, observations on, A. xvi. 16.

Serpents and Scorpions, A. xxviii. 4; L. x. 19.

Servants, our Lord took the form of one, J. xiii. 4; in what sense Christians are so called, xv. 15; latitude of the term in Hebrew, M. xii. 17, 18; xiv. 2; two cases of unprofitable servants contrasted, L. xix. 20; see *Slaves*.

"Seven days, the," of the Nazarite's vow, A. xxi. 24. 26.

Seven, the number of *completion* and *rest*, 2 P. ii. 5; consecrated by the Holy Ghost in Scripture, Jud. 14; Rev. i. 4; viii. 1; on the symbolical significance of the number, and of its multiple by ten, in Scripture, Pt. i. p. 56; M. xviii. 22; J. ii. 1; expressive of *rest* in Christ (see *Eight*), Introduction to the A. 29; ii. 1; Rev. i. 11; x. 1; xi. 19; cp. M. xvii. 1; xxvii. 62; J. vii. 2.

Seventh Day, God rested on the, J. v. 9. 17.

Seventh Day in the Paschal week, how observed, M. xxvii. 62; J. xix. 14.

Seventy Disciples, their ordination and mission, L. x. 1—9.

Severus, on the intimation which his particular gift of tongues gave to each of the Apostles as to the nation to which his ministrations were to be directed, A. ii. 8; on x. 41; "It seemed good to the Holy Ghost and to us," xv. 28.

Sheaf, waving of; see *Resurrection*.

Shechinah, observations on the, M. xvii. 4, 5; Heb. iv. 16; derivation of the term, M. xvii. 4; cp. J. i. 14.

Sheep and goats, contrasted as to their symbolical significance, M. xx. 33.

Shekel, its value, M. xxvii. 3.

Shewbread, account of it, M. xii. 4.

Shiloh; see *Siloam*.

Ship, the, in which the disciples were tempest-tost, an emblem of the Church, J. vi. 19; cp. M. viii. 23.

Ships, ancient, on the rate of sailing of, A. xxviii. 13.

Ships, metaphors from; see *Metaphors*.

Shoes and sandals distinguished, M. x. 10; loosing the shoe, L. ii. 16.

Shunammite, apparent allusion to, Mk. iii. 21.

Sicarii, M. xxi. 13.

Sichem, its situation and history, Heb. vii. 1; J. iv. 5. 40; A. viii. 5; the twelve patriarchs buried there, vii. 16; force of this fact as stated by St. Stephen, *ib.*; Abraham probably purchased a plot of ground there for a burial-place, *ib.*; anciently called Moreh, *ib.*; Jacob erects an altar there, *ib.*; it was the national Sanctuary of Israel, *ib.*; recovered by Jacob, and was the paternal allotment of Joseph, *ib.*

Sick, the, duty of visiting them, on the part of the Christian priest, Jam. v. 14; duties prescribed by the Church of England in this case, *ib.*

Sickness and infirmities the effect of sin, J. v. 14; ix. 2.

"Sign from heaven," full import of the expression, M. xvi. 1.

"Sign of the Son of man," M. xxiv. 30.

"Signs," distinguished from "wonders," A. ii. 19.

Silas; see *Silvanus*.

Silence of St. John; see *John*.

Silence of St. Luke, concerning the infirmities of the Apostles, Introduction to his Gospel, p. 165; L. ix. 21; as to the name of the woman in vii. 35.

Silence of our Lord, instructive, Mk. xiv. 32; cp. J. xix. 9.

Silence of Scripture, its inspiration, M. xvii. 27; cp. Mk. xiv. 10; J. iv. 27; Introduction to the Acts, p. 6; A. ix. 23; xii. 2; xvi. 3; concerning day of our Lord's birth, &c., L. i. 39; no argument can be drawn from the silence of the Evangelists as to their ignorance of any events, M. xxviii. 20; cp. Mk. viii. 29; L. i. 3. 26; ii. 5; ix. 7; xxiv. 50; J. xi. 1.

Siloam, water of, Introduction to the Gospel of St. John, p. 261; ceremony observed with respect to it at the Feast of Tabernacles, J. vii. 37. 52; significance of the rite, *ib.*; derivation and import of the name, *ib.*; ix. 7; derived, according to Lightfoot, from the same spring that supplied the Pool of Bethesda, 4.

Silvanus, or Silas, reference to him, A. xv. 22; xvii. 10; always so called by St. Paul and St. Peter, but always called *Silas* by St. Luke, 1 Th. i. 1; associated with Timotheus by St. Paul in writing his two Epistles to the Thessalonians, *ib.*; why, *ib.*; probably left at Berea by St. Paul to watch over the converts there, iii. 6; cp. A. xvii. 10; his name does not occur in the Acts of the Apostles, P. i. 1; what became of him? *ib.*; bearer of St. Peter's First Epistle, 1 P. v. 12; brief account of his

services and labours, P. i. 1; 1 Ti. i. 1; 1 P. v. 12; called Silas in the Acts; called Silvanus by St. Paul in his Epistles, see Introduction to the First Epistle of St. Peter.

Simeon, derivation and import of the name, L. ii. 25; his song in the Temple, 32.

Simon Magus, the first heretic, A. viii. 9; offers to purchase the gift of the Holy Spirit with money, 18. 20. 22; the Father of the Gnostics, 2 P. i. 16; his impious fables, *ib.*; his tenets respecting angels, C. ii. 8; 2 P. ii. 10; encountered at Rome by St. Peter, Introductions to the First and Second Epistles of St. Peter, and to the First Epistle of St. John.

Simon Peter; see *Peter*.

Simon the Cyrenian, compelled to bear our Lord's cross, M. xxvii. 32; a type of the converted Gentiles, L. xxiii. 26.

Simon the leper, account of him, M. xxvi. 6.

Simon the Pharisee, his character, L. vii. 47.

Simon Zelotes, M. x. 4; A. i. 12.

Simony, perpetual warning against the sin of, J. ii. 16; Vol. ii. p. 12; A. viii. 18. 20. 22; and M. xxi. 12.

Sin against the Holy Ghost, its nature, M. xii. 31; and Mk. iii. 29.

Sin, its heinousness shown by the suffering it caused our Lord, M. xxvi. 38; typified by leprosy, L. xvii. 19; its nature, not only as a *debt*, Heb. ix. 12; but as something *more*, 1 J. iv. 10; and see *Universal Redemption*, and *Absolution*.

Sin, the punishment of the sinner, M. xiii. 14; Sin after baptism remissible, xxvi. 75; Heb. vi. 6; the cause of physical evils, J. ix. 2.

"Sin unto death," and "Sin not unto death," 1 J. v. 16.

"Single eye," M. vi. 22.

Singular and plural, sometimes interchanged, M. xxvii. 44.

Sinners, St. Luke wrote specially for them, L. xv. 1; xxiii. 34.

Sin-offerings, their nature, 1 P. iii. 18.

Sins, forgiveness of; see *Forgiveness*.

Sins of ignorance and negligence, how differing from sins of presumption, 1 Ti. i. 12; A. iii. 17; xxiii. 5.

Sit, force of the word, M. xxiii. 2.

Sites of the Holy Places, the precise ones providentially concealed, M. v. 1; L. i. 39; ii. 8.

Six, the number, in the Apocalypse, represents a crisis of suffering, or a falling short of the truth, Rev. xi. 19; xiii. 18; and see *Seven*.

Skirts of our Lord's clothing, used to convey miraculous strength, M. xiv. 36; Mk. v. 30.

Slavery, 1 C. vii. 21; 1 Ti. i. 10; vi. 1, 2; and see the Introductions to the Epistle to Philemon, and to the Epistle to the Ephesians, p. 277; and C. iv. 9; 1 P. ii. 18; see *Liberty*.

Slaying the paschal lamb, and eating it, the acts distinguished by the Evangelists, Mk. xiv. 12.

Sleep, frequently put for death, in Scripture, M. xxv. 5; xxvii. 52; a divine protest against the notion of the *sleep* of the soul after death, L. xii. 4; see *Soul*.

Sleep of Christ in the storm, its spiritual meaning, Mk. iv. 38.

Smyrna, its position, Rev. i. 11; the See of S. Polycarp, *ib.*

Socinians, their heretical notions refuted, L. iv. 8; J. i. 29; viii. 59; x. 30; xvii. 3. 21; resemble the Jews in their false allegation, that the doctrine of the Atonement is irreconcilable with Divine Love, G. i. 4; an objection of theirs obviated by anticipation in C. i. 13. 30; arguments against their view of the doctrine of the Atonement, E. i. 6; 1 J. iv. 10; perversion of 1 P. ii. 23, 24; weakness of their exception to 2 C. v. 18; see *Atonement* and *Redemption*.

Sodom and Gomorrah, the destruction of, fearful events that accompanied it, L. xvii. 29; Jud. 7.

Solecisms, so called, in the New Testament, true view of them, M. iii. 15; xii. 36; in the Apocalypse, Rev. i. 4, 5; and see *Grammar*.

Solomon, termination of his line in Jeconiah, M. i. 12, and *notes* 3, 4.

Solomon's porch, frequented by our Lord and by his Apostles, J. x. 23; A. iii. 11.

Son of David, M. i. 1.

"Son of God," M. xvi. 13. 16.

"Son of man," none but Jesus called so in the Gospel, M. xii. 8; xvi. 16. 27, 28; xxiv. 30; Mk. xiv. 62.

Sons of God, how we are, 1 P. i. 3.

Sop, the giving of it to Judas, J. xiii. 26.

Sosthenes, chief of the synagogue at Corinth, A. xviii. 17; why he was beaten by the Jews, *ib.*; brief notice of him, 1 C. i. 1.

Soul, the, its condition after death, L. xii. 4; xvi. 22; xxiii. 43; J. v. 28; A. i. 25; Rev. vi. 9; happiness of the disembodied soul of the righteous, R. xx. 4; see *Disembodied Spirit*, *Paradise*, *Abraham's Bosom*.

Sower, parable of the, M. xiii. 3; Mk. iv. 4.

"Soweth, one, and another reapeth," J. iv. 37.

- Spain, probably visited by St. Paul in his missionary tour, R. xv. 24; Introduction to the Epistles to Timothy and Titus.
- Speech, its right use and high prerogatives, Jam. iii. 2. 6.
- Speedily avenge them, explained, L. xviii. 8.
- Spices, used at funerals; see *Burial*.
- Spikenard, unguent made from it, Mk. xiv. 3.
- Spinoza, his objections to the narrative of the raising of Lazarus, J. xi. 1.
- Spirit and Flesh, contrasted, E. iv. 23; 1 P. iii. 18.
- Spirit, the evil, his ejection from the heart, and his fearful return to it, L. xi. 24; see *Devil*, and *Satan*.
- Spirit, the human, how distinguished from the Soul, 1 Th. v. 23; the human, of Christ, 1 Ti. iii. 16; 1 P. iii. 18.
- Spirits, evil, the present condition of, M. viii. 29; see *Devils*, *Angels*, and *Python*.
- "Spirits in prison," Christ went to them in spirit, and preached to them, explained, 1 P. iii. 18—22; cp. L. xxiii. 56.
- Spiritual authority, its independence in the exercise of Ecclesiastical Discipline, 1 C. v. 3.
- Spiritual gifts received on admission to Baptism, 1 Th. v. 20; admonition respecting them, *ib.*
- Spiritual Pastors, how far they are to be obeyed, J. ix. 35; xii. 4. 6.
- Spiritual pride, resisted by Christ, M. iv. 3. 6.
- Star, the, in the East, M. ii. 2, and *note* 7.
- Stars, luminaries of Churches, Rev. viii. 10.
- Stephen, St., his defence and martyrdom, Pt. ii. p. xix.; his mode of interpreting the Old Testament, xxvi.; our Lord's words, J. xii. 25, remarkably fulfilled in him, J. xii. 25; his apology, A. vii. 1—60; general observations upon it, 1, 2; paraphrase, *ib.*; language in which it was delivered, *ib.*; animadversions upon certain modern objections to various statements in the speech, 3. 16; objections stated, and answered, *ib.*; does not mention Jesus of Nazareth, but Jesus (Joshua) the son of Nun; reason of this, 45; prays for his murderers, 69; position of his day in the Calendar, *ib.*, *note* 1; probably martyred at the Passover, *ib.*; and by Hellenists, xi. 20.
- Stewards, Christians so called, M. xxiv. 45.
- Stoics, countenanced suicide, A. xvi. 27; their tenets, xvii. 18; St. Paul's encounter with them at Athens, *ib.*; their system opposed to that of Scripture, E. iv. 26.
- Stone, our Lord compares Himself to a, M. xxi. 42. 44.
- Stoning, the punishment for blasphemy, A. vii. 59; cp. M. xxvi. 66; J. viii. 57. 59.
- "Strait is the gate," M. vii. 14; and see xxii. 14.
- Strangled things, and blood, the eating of, forbidden at the Council of Jerusalem, A. xv. 20.
- Stumbling at Christ, danger of this, M. xxi. 44; see *Scandals*.
- Style, of inspired Authors, Mk. xvi. 9; of St. Luke, Introduction to his Gospel, p. 165; L. i. 4; of St. John, see *John*; see *Inspiration*.
- Subjects, their duty to Rulers, R. xiii. 1—4; 1 P. ii. 13; Introduction to the First Epistle to Timothy, p. 434; 2 P. ii. 10; see *Kings*.
- Submission and Obedience distinguished, R. xiii. 1. 5.
- Sufferings of Christ, dwelt on by Him and the Apostles, M. xvi. 21; see *Sin*, and *Atonement*.
- Sufferings of the saints in this world a proof of a future state of reward for them, 2 Ti. i. 5; sufferings of St. Paul, a temptation to the Galatians, G. iv. 13; sufferings of the saints, true view of them, in opposition to that of the Church of Rome, C. i. 24; spiritual benefits arising from affliction, 2 C. viii. 2.
- Sufficiency of Scripture; see *Scripture*.
- Suicide, approved by the Stoics, A. xvi. 27; emphatically condemned in Scripture, *ib.*; solemn protest against it, P. i. 22.
- Sun, moon, and stars, allusions explained, L. xxi. 25—27.
- "Sun of Righteousness," M. xxvii. 33.
- "Sun, the, shall be darkened," M. xxiv. 29.
- Sunday, our Lord enters Jerusalem in triumph on a, M. xxi. 9; its appointment as the Lord's Day, xxviii. 1; L. xxiv. 1; prophetic intimation of it, Mk. i. 35; its sanctification intimated in the Acts of the Apostles, Pt. ii. p. xxix.; see *Lord's Day*.
- Supererogation, works of, the notion of considered, L. xvii. 10.
- Superscription on the Cross, J. xix. 19.
- Superstition, propagated by love of lucre, A. xvi. 19.
- Supper, the holy Sacrament of the Lord's, its institution, M. xxvi. 17; its design, *ib.*; its prefiguration in Melchizedek's offering, 26; in the miracle, Mk. vi. 41; J. vi. 9. 23, and Review of ch. vi.; why the words of the institution are variously reported, M. xxvi. 28; typified, L. xv. 23; J. xix. 34; analogy between its institution and that of Baptism, Review of the Contents of J. vi.; the Sacrament, and the virtue of it distinguished, 50; rebuke of those who seek a carnal presence in it, xvi. 7; xx. 17; xxvi. 11; Mk. v. 30; Introduction to the Gospel of St. John, p. 262; the mode of Christ's presence not to be irreverently scrutinized, J. vi. 25; xx. 20; duty of receiving Him, as the disciples did, with gladness, *ib.*; and with purity of heart, M. xxvii. 59; cp. J. xiii. 18; posture in receiving, time of celebration, why at different time of day from that at which Christ first celebrated it, J. xiii. 25; M. xxvi. 20; administered daily in the Apostolic Church, A. vi. 2; and at the common meal, *ib.*; time of receiving it, xx. 7; effect on the body, 1 C. x. 16; its true nature, Heb. x. 12; 1 C. v. 7, 8; x. 16; a strong motive to love and unity, xii. 13; and holiness, xvi. 22; Rev. xvi. 16; why obligatory on all? J. xiii. 14; connected with doctrine of the Resurrection, see *Resurrection*; and Mk. xiv. 13; cp. L. xxiv. 30; see *Cup*, *Passover*, *Bread*, *breaking of*, *Sacraments*, *Sacrifice*, *Means of Grace*; the teaching of St. Paul concerning it, Heb. x. 12; opinions of the Greek and Latin Fathers, *ib.*; and of eminent Anglican Divines, *ib.*; importance of the word *κλῶμενον* as a warning against the error which feigns a carnal presence, 1 C. xi. 24; the declaratory nature of the rite, 26; what the wicked receive? 27; cp. J. vi. 50.
- Supremacy, none assigned to any one of the Apostles over the rest, M. x. 2; xvi. 18; Rev. xxi. 14.
- Supremacy of God's will affirmed, R. ix. 11.
- Sycamine-tree, the mulberry-tree, L. xvii. 6.
- Sycamore-tree, description of, L. xix. 4; the case of Zacchæus spiritualized, *ib.*
- Sychar and Sichem, importance in the history of Old and New Testaments, J. iv. 1, 2. 5. 40; Review of ch. iii.; iv. 1, 2; A. vii. 16; viii. 5; see *Sechem* and *Sichem*.
- Synagogue, rulers of the, Mk. v. 22; putting out of the, J. xvi. 2; "Ye shall be scourged in the synagogues," exact force of this expression, Mk. xiii. 9; the Synagogue the vestibule of the Church, Vol. ii. p. xvii.; A. xiii. 5; number of synagogues in Jerusalem at the time of our Lord's ministry, vi. 9; providential appointment of them, xiii. 5; and preparatory to Christianity; weekly Calendar of Lessons read in them, 15.
- Synods, apostolically constituted ones, the appointed means of determining controversies in the Church, Introduction to the Acts.
- Syria, governed by Varus, L. ii. 2; and by Quirinus, *ib.*
- Syro-Chaldee, use of, by our Lord, M. xvi. 18; xxvii. 46; Mk. viii. 29.
- Syro-Chaldee, frequently used by St. Mark, Introduction to his Gospel, pp. 112, 113; Mk. ii. 3; x. 51.
- Syrophenician woman, why so called, Mk. vii. 26.
- Swearing, voluntary, condemned, M. v. 34, and *notes* 6 and 7; teaching of Scripture concerning, Heb. vi. 16; Jam. v. 12, 13; see *Oaths*.
- Sword, a mark of authority, M. xxvi. 42.
- "Swords, here are two," perversion of these words by the Romanists, L. xxii. 32. 38.
- Tabernacle in the wilderness, a type of the Christian Church, 2 C. v. 16.
- Tabernacles, the Feast of, its rites and meaning, M. xxi. 8, 9; J. vii. 2. 37, and Review at end; xii. 13; Rev. vii. 13; a type of our Lord's Incarnation, L. xxiv. 1; J. i. 14; vii. 2. 37; xii. 13; Review of the Contents of chap. vii.; cp. Rev. vii. 13.
- Tabitha, derivation and import of the name, A. ix. 36.
- Talents, the parable of the, compared with that of the Pounds, M. xxiv. 45; xxv. 14.
- Talmud, M. xv. 1.
- Tares and the Wheat, parable of the, M. xiii. 25; tares not to be rooted up when discovered, 24—30; degenerate wheat so called by the writers of the Talmud, 25.
- Tarsus, its importance, A. ix. 11; xxi. 39; coins of, *ib.*
- Taxation, the true principle of, R. xiii. 5; our Lord's submission to, M. xxii. 21.
- "Taxing" of the Roman Empire, this was only an enrolment, or registration, or census, L. ii. 1.
- Teacher, his necessities designed to be the trial of the people's love, L. viii. 3; his errors, how harmful, xiv. 34.
- Teaching of Christ, prophetic; see *Anticipation*.
- "Tell no man," our Lord's design in this inhibition, M. viii. 4; xvi. 20.
- Temperance and Holiness, arguments for, from the consideration of the Resurrection, 1 C. vi. 14.
- Temperance pledges, considered, R. xiv. 20.
- Temple at Jerusalem, on the expulsion of the buyers and sellers from the, M. xxi. 12; Mk. xi. 15; J. ii. 13; called the "house of prayer for all nations," Mk. xi. 17; supported by rates, M. xvii. 24; its destruction foretold, xxiv.; adorned with "gifts," explained, L. xxi. 5; its profanation by the Jewish army, gives power to the Roman army without the walls, 20; the building of the Second Temple, J. ii. 20; cp. x. 22; a type of Christ's

- body, Review of the Contents of ch. vii.; its Veil and Altars, see Heb. ix. 1—6; x. 20; its demolition the building up of the Church, see the Introduction to the Acts.
- Temple-keeper (Acts xix. 35, *margin*), import of this term, A. xix. 35; Captain of the Temple, L. xxii. 4.
- "Temptation, lead us not into," explained, M. vi. 13.
- Temptation of our Lord, the scene of it designedly left undetermined, M. iv. 1; conjectures of Michaelis and Webster respecting it, *ib.*; and Mk. i. 13; see *Satan*.
- "Ten days" = a few days, Rev. ii. 10.
- Terms, unscriptural, of Communion, sin of enforcing them, Rev. ii. 20.
- Tertullus, his speech before Felix against Paul, in *Latin*, A. xxiv. 3; its servile sycophancy, *ib.*
- Testament, the Old; see *Old Testament*.
- Testament, the New; see *New* and *Scripture*.
- Testaments, the Two, symbolized by the two Witnesses, Rev. xi. 3, 4.
- "Testimony, a, to them," explained, L. xxi. 13.
- Thaddæus, probably the same as Judas, M. x. 3; Mk. iii. 18; derivation and import of the name, M. x. 3, and *note* 3.
- Thamar, Rahab, and Ruth, observations on the occurrence of their names in the genealogy of our Lord, M. i. 3, *note* 11.
- Thanksgiving, the duty of, enforced, Introduction to the Gospel of St. Luke, p. 160; L. xvii. 15; J. xvi. 2.
- Theatre, in Greek cities, a common place for ἐκκλησίαι, A. xix. 31.
- Theft, prevalence of, among the Heathens in the time of the Apostles, 1 Th. iv. 11.
- Theophilus, Bishop of Antioch, cites C. i. 15.
- Theophilus, who is designated by this name by St. Luke? L. i. 3.
- Thessalonians, First Epistle to the, circumstances under which it was written, 1; date, *ib.*; Introduction to the Gospel of St. Luke, p. 169; the first written of all St. Paul's Epistles, 1; its shortness, 2; character of the converts addressed in it, 3; extraordinary success of the Apostle's ministry in Thessalonica, 4; design and contents of the Epistle, *ib.*; St. Paul's Epistles not mere disjointed fragments, but form a harmonious whole, 5; does not, in either of his Epistles to the Church at Thessalonica, annex to his name the title of *Apostle*, which, with three exceptions, he adopts at the commencement of *all* his other Epistles, 1; characteristics of the two Epistles to the Thessalonians, 2; how the Thessalonians had been made acquainted with the name and character of the Evil Spirit, ii. 18; iii. 5; probably supplied with St. Luke's Gospel, i. 9; iii. 5; v. 2. 21. 27; provision made by St. Paul for the organization of a Christian ministry, v. 12.
- Thessalonians, Second Epistle to the, design of it, Introduction; contents, *ib.*; vindication of the Doctrine of the Second Advent, *ib.*; St. Paul did not *change* his mind, *ib.*; takes occasion from the fabrication of an Epistle in his name, to furnish a *criterion* by which all his Epistles are to be discerned, *ib.*; literal Latin and English translation of i. 3—12; exposition of this prophecy, *ib.*
- Thessalonica, account of, A. xvii. 1; 1 Ti. i. 1; its political condition very different from that of the neighbouring city of Philippi, 6; 1 Ti. i. 1; anciently called *Therme*, *ib.*; why and by whom called Thessalonica, *ib.*; its fitness for the circulation of a written Gospel, i. 9; rapid reception of the Gospel there, ii. 13.
- Theudas, two persons of this name, A. v. 34. 36; origin and import of it, 36; account of the Theudas mentioned in 36.
- Thief, the penitent, peculiar circumstances attending his case, L. xxiii. 42, 43; prays to be remembered at a *future* time, *ib.*
- Thieves, the two, crucified with our Lord, represented respectively the Gentiles and the Jews, M. xxvii. 4.
- "Third day," our Lord's resurrection on it, M. xii. 39; "After three days," the expression illustrated, xvii. 1; cp. xxiv. 22.
- "Third heaven," what, 2 C. xii. 2—4.
- "Third hour, the," A. ii. 15.
- Thomas, derivation and import of the name, M. x. 3; his timidity, J. xi. 16; John alone translates his name, *ib.*; his case and Mary Magdalene's contrasted, xx. 17. 29.
- Thought, anxious, condemned, M. vi. 25.
- Thoughts of men revealed to our Lord, M. ix. 4; xi. 7; xvii. 27; and answered by Him, xxvi. 64; and see Mk. xii. 41; L. vii. 39; xiv. 25; xvi. 4; xviii. 4; xix. 5; J. i. 49; v. 37; xiii. 18.
- Thousand, symbolical meaning of, Rev. xx. 2.
- Three, an arithmetical symbol of what is *Divine*, M. x. 2; Rev. xi. 19.
- "Three Taverns," A. xxviii. 15.
- Three and a half, symbolical meaning of, Rev. xi. 19.
- Three and a half years; see *Forty-two*.
- Three orders of Christian ministry, Introductory Note to 1 Ti. iii.
- Three times, 2 C. xii. 8.
- "Throne of Grace, the," typified by the Mercy-seat of the Ark, Heb. iv. 16.
- Thucydides, specimen of Athenian δεισιδαιμονία in his character of Nicias, A. xvii. 22.
- Thunder, called in Scripture, ὡς, *vax*: i. e. the Voice of God, Mk. iii. 17.
- Thursday, and Monday, days of fasting with the Pharisees, L. xviii. 12.
- Thyatira, its position, Rev. i. 11; infested by the ravages of Montanism, ii. 20.
- Thyine wood, described, Rev. xviii. 12.
- Tiberias, its situation, J. vi. 1; why so called, *ib.*
- Tiberias, the town and lake so called, J. vi. 1; see *Galilee*.
- Tiberius, adopted by Augustus "in partem imperii," M. ii. 20, *note* 7; similarity to Herod, L. xiii. 32.
- "Till," force of the expression, M. i. 25; xvi. 28.
- Time, difference between Divine and human modes of calculating it, M. xxiv. 29; L. xviii. 8.
- Time, mode of reckoning it among the Jews, M. xxvi. 34; xxviii. 1; Mk. xv. 25; see *Watches* and *Hours*.
- Timothy, brief notice of his birth, education, and ministry, A. xix. 22; 1 Ti. i. 1; though he is known to have been with St. Paul when he wrote his Epistle to the Romans, is not joined with the Apostle in the opening address, R. xvi. 21; accompanied the Apostle from Corinth into Asia, along with Sosipater, or Sopater, of Berea, *ib.*; had not, as St. Paul had, a divine commission to address the metropolis of the Gentile world, *ib.*; was with the Apostle, at Rome, in his first, and probably in his second, imprisonment there, *ib.*; why the Apostle did not restore him to health, P. ii. 26; was the Apostle's fellow-labourer from the time of his second Missionary journey even to his death, Heb. xiii. 23; testimony to his steadfastness, 2 Ti. iii. 10; first associated with St. Paul at Lystra, 1 Ti. i. 1; his personal history, 2; joined with Silvanus by St. Paul in writing the two Epistles to the Thessalonians, 1 Ti. i. 1; why circumcised, G. ii. 3; probably visited Colossæ, with St. Paul, when the Apostle passed through Phrygia, C. i. 1; was with him at the close of his first imprisonment at Rome, P. i. 1.
- Timothy, not of Derbe, but of Lystra, A. xvi. 1; why Paul circumcised him, 3.
- Timothy and Titus, Epistles to, Introduction to them; S. Clement's testimony bearing upon St. Paul's release from imprisonment at Rome, *ib.*; and upon his visit to Spain, *ib.*; testimony of Eusebius, Jerome, and Theodoret, to the same effect, *ib.*; the appointment of Timothy to the Episcopate of Ephesus, and St. Paul's First Epistle to him, were posterior to the Apostle's release from confinement at Rome, *ib.*; date of the First Epistle to Timothy, *ib.*; and of the Epistle to Titus, *ib.*; why the Apostle wrote to both on Church regimen, *ib.*; design of the Epistles, *ib.*; peculiar form of religious error against which an antidote is there provided, *ib.*; Judaizing Gnosticism, *ib.*; peculiar phraseology of the writer, *ib.*; the genuineness of these Epistles recently impugned, and ably defended, 2 Ti. iii. 11.
- Tithe-System, the teaching and practice of St. Paul have been the means of its establishment, 1 C. ix. 6; and see M. xxii. 21; xvii. 24.
- Tithes, paid by the Pharisees, M. xxiii. 23.
- Titus, the Epistle to, its date and design, Introduction; personal history of Titus, Tit. i. 4; why the Apostle styles himself "servant of God," 1; his Episcopal Office in Crete, *ib.*; invited by St. Paul to meet him at Nicopolis, iii. 12; meets the Apostle in Macedonia at an earlier period, and accompanies him on his missionary tour into Illyricum, *ib.*; went shortly before St. Paul's death into Dalmatia, *ib.*
- Titus, why not circumcised by Paul, A. xvi. 3; never mentioned in the Acts of the Apostles, xviii. 7; 2 C. viii. 18; Tit. i. 4; the earliest mention of him, G. ii. 1; his circumcision not required, 3; St. Paul's mention of him to the Corinthians, 2 C. vii. 13; visits Dalmatia, 2 Ti. iv. 10.
- Titus, the emperor, singular circumstances attending his capture of Jerusalem, L. xix. 43, 44; cp. M. xxiv. 3.
- Tomb of our Lord, analogy between it and the Virgin's womb, M. xxvii. 60; J. xvi. 21.
- Tombs; see *Graves* and *Sepulture*.
- Tongue, foreign or unknown, in Divine Service, 1 C. xiv. 6—39.
- Tongue, right use of the, Jam. iii. 2—6.
- Tongues of fire, what they typified, A. ii. 3.
- Tongues, the gift of, design and use of it, A. ii. 4; 1 C. xii. 10; R. i. 14.
- Tophet; see *Gehenna*.
- Torture, examination by, Roman citizens not exempt from it after the age of Tiberius, A. xxiv. 8.
- "Touch," full force of the original term, Mk. v. 30; L. viii. 45.
- "Touch me not," explained, Mk. v. 30; J. xx. 17.

- "Touch not, taste not, handle not," explained, C. ii. 21.
 Touch of faith, L. viii. 45.
 Trades, every Jew learnt a trade, A. xviii. 3.
 Tradition, merely human, condemned by our Lord, M. xv. 2. 7-9.
 Trajections, or Hyperbata, G. iv. 25; 2 C. ii. 1; Jam. ii. 1; E. ii. 3; P. ii. 10.
 Transfiguration of our Lord, and his *Agony*, considered in connexion, M. xxvi. 37; the Transfiguration, a type and earnest of the future glory of the risen bodies of Christ's members, M. xvii. 1; see also 2 P. i. 18; scene of it, *ib.*; providentially concealed, L. i. 39; peculiar manner in which this subject is treated by St. Luke, ix. 29; probably took place at *night*, 32; why it occurred on the *eighth* day, xxiv. 1.
 "Transgressions" (παρὰ τῶν νόμων) and "Sins" (ἁμαρτίαι), E. ii. 1.
 Transubstantiation, the Popish doctrine of, confuted by the words of the institution of the Lord's Supper, M. xxvi. 26; not known in the earlier ages of the Church, J. vi. 52. 63; condemned by the terms of the decree of the Council of Jerusalem, A. xv. 20.
 Treasure hid in a field, parable of the, M. xiii. 44.
 Treasury in the Temple, description of it, J. viii. 20.
 Trees; see *Metaphors*.
 Trent, Council of, substitutes the Latin Vulgate for the Original Scriptures, J. viii. 1-11, *note* 2; Rev. xiv. 7; its creed, Rev. xiii. 15; concluded its deliberations with *Anathema*, *Anathema*, *ib.*
 Tribute, on the duty of rendering it to the civil power, M. xvii. 4-7; xxii. 21.
 Trinity, the Ever Blessed, the mystery of the, shown in the baptism of Christ, M. iii. 16; and see xxviii. 19; passages illustrative of the doctrine, Mk. xiv. 32; J. xii. 41; xiv. 16; xv. 26; xvi. 7; cp. v. 19; 1 C. viii. 8; xii. 4; 2 C. xiii. 13; Tit. iii. 5; 1 P. i. 2; how the Three Persons co-operate in man's justification and salvation, Introduction to the Epistle to the Romans, pp. 201-203; R. v. 1; E. iv. 11; and see *Sabelians*.
 Trophimus, account of him, A. xx. 4; 2 Ti. iv. 20.
 Troy, its political condition in St. Paul's time, A. xvi. 8. 11; Luke first meets St. Paul there, *ib.*; xx. 5.
 Trumpets, their religious significance, Rev. viii. 1.
 Truth, all, proceeds from God, as its Source and Author, L. v. 39; not to be propagated by violence, ix. 55; heathen estimation of it, J. xviii. 38.
 Twelve, in Scripture, the Apostolic number, M. xvii. 24-27; cp. M. iii. 9; x. 2; xvi. 18; significant of perfection and universality, and of the blending and indwelling of what is Divine with what is created, M. x. 2; Rev. vii. 2-4; xi. 3. 19; xii. 1.
 "Two and two, and he sent them," divine wisdom of this, L. x. 1; neglect of the precedent in modern Missions, *ib.*
 Tychicus, why public mention is made of him in St. Paul's Second Epistle to Timothy, as sent by the Apostle to Ephesus, 2 Ti. iv. 12; brief notice of his personal history, *ib.*; A. xx. 4; E. vi. 21; C. iv. 7.
 Types, principal ones in the Old Testament; see under *David*, *Elijah*, *Isaac*, *Jericho*, *Jonah*, *Joseph*, *Joshua*, *Law*, *Ceremonial*, *Levitical Ordinances*, *Lot*, *Magi*, *Melchizedek*, *Moses*, *Noah*, *Old Testament History*, *Paschal*, *Patriarchs*, *Rainbow*, *Red Sea*, *Resurrection*, *Rock*, *Sabbath*, *Scenopagia*, *Serpent*, *Seven*, *Seventy*, *Siloam*, *Tabernacles*, *Twelve*; disturbed by the Romish doctrine of Papal Supremacy, M. xvi. 18.
 Tyre, a Christian Church founded there in St. Paul's time, A. xxi. 3; the mother-city of the Phœnicians, Mk. vii. 26.
- Unbelief, its operation and danger, M. xxi. 44.
 Uncial MSS., the best not always to be depended upon, Part i. Preface, p. xii.; L. xxii. 43, 44; 1 C. xiii. 2; P. ii. 1.
 Unction; see *Extreme*.
 Undesigned acknowledgment of our Lord's sovereignty by his enemies, M. xxvii. 28; Mk. xv. 18.
 Unfruitfulness, M. xxv. 26. 33.
 Unfulfilled prophecies, not to be curiously speculated on, J. xxi. 23; 1 J. ii. 18; Introduction to the Apocalypse.
 Unguents, the use of, common at feasts in the East, L. vii. 36-50.
 Unitarians, solemn warning to, J. v. 44.
 Unity, true, is not Unity in *Error*, but in *Truth*, Rev., *Retro-spect* of Chapp. xi.-xvii.
 Unity of the Church of Christ, J. xvii. 21; symbolized by his seamless coat, xix. 23, 24; and by the net, xxi. 11; inestimable blessing of unity, ii. 19.
 Unity of the Faith, the end and purpose of the Christian Life, E. iv. 13; see *Faith*, *Schism*, *Heresy*.
- Unity of the Godhead, J. v. 44; viii. 19; x. 30; xvii. 3; 1 C. viii. 6; and see *Arians* and *Trinity*.
 Universal preaching of the Gospel, Mk. xvi. 15; Introduction to the Gospel of St. Luke, p. 161; and Review of J. vii.; J. x. 16.
 Universal Redemption, deduced from Universal Sinfulness, R. v. 13, 14; viii. 39; ix. 1; xiv. 14; proofs of it, xiv. 15; 2 P. ii. 1; 1 Ti. ii. 3, 4; iv. 2; 1 J. ii. 1, 2; 1 C. vi. 11; Introduction to the Epistle to the Romans; the doctrine of, preached by St. Paul, E. iii. 1; Heb. ii. 9; see *Redemption* and *Justification*.
 Universality of Christ's love, L. ii. 2; iv. 38; J. iii. 16; xix. 23.
 Universe, its dissolution by fire, 2 P. iii. 10, 11; the benefits of the Incarnation extend to it, 13.
 Unknown tongue, Divine Service in, 1 C. xiv. 6-39.
 Unleavened bread, the day of, Mk. xiv. 12; A. i. 13, 14.
 Unprofitable service, practical observation upon, L. xvii. 10; doom of, xix. 20.
 Unthankfulness, the sin of, L. xvii. 11. 15.
 Until; see *Till*.
 "Untutored in speech," explained, 2 C. xi. 6.
 "Upper-room, the large," Mk. xiv. 15; probably identical with that in which the disciples used to assemble after the resurrection, and in which our Lord appeared to them, *ib.*; L. xxiv. 33; A. i. 13; continuous unity of the Church marked by the celebration of the last Passover, and the administration of the first Eucharist, in that room, as well as by the first appearance of our Lord to his assembled disciples after his resurrection, and by the descent of the Holy Ghost upon them there, 14, 15; ii. 1.
 Usury, on the lawfulness of, M. xxv. 27.
- Valentinians, their heresy refuted, J. i. 3; their covetousness, 2 P. ii. 3; charged by Origen with those doctrines which have in modern times been held by the adherents of Calvin, R. ix. 21-23; perversion of, E. iii. 21.
 Vandals, Rev. viii. 9.
 Various Readings of the Greek text, observations on, Pt. i. xxi.; the verbal discrepancies of our MSS. of the New Testament slight and trivial in themselves, but of great importance to us, as evidences of the purity and integrity of the Sacred Text, xxi. xxii.; and of the watchful care of Divine Providence over it, *ib.*; remarks of Dr. Bentley on this subject, xxii., *note* 1.
 Veil of the Temple, description of, M. xxvii. 50, 51; typical of that on the Jews' hearts, M. xxiii. 39.
 Venomous reptiles, purpose for which they are probably designed by Providence, L. x. 19.
 "Verily I say unto you," M. xviii. 18; J. i. 52; vi. 53.
 Vernacular Scriptures, argument for the use of, M. xxvii. 46; and see *Latin*.
 Versions of the New Testament, Tabular View of Ancient ones, Pt. i. xxxvi.
 Via Appia, by whom constructed, A. xvii. 1; reflections suggested by the journey of St. Paul along it, to Rome, xxviii. 15.
 Via Egnatia, its extent, A. xvii. 1; by whom constructed, *ib.*; St. Paul travels along it, *ib.*; xxviii. 15.
 Vials, Rev. xvi. 1-10.
 Villages, our Lord preaches to the *poor* in them, as well as to the *rich* in towns, Mk. i. 38.
 Vine, the Visible Church compared to a, M. xx. 1; J. xv. 1; Christ the true *Vine*, J. xv. 1.
 Vinegar, mingled with Myrrh, why our Lord refused to drink it, M. xxvii. 34.
 Vineyard, the Visible Church compared to a, M. xx. 3.
 Violence, must not be employed for the propagation of Religion, L. ix. 55.
 "Vipers, generation of," probable allusion in the phrase, M. iii. 7.
 Virgin; see *Mary*.
 Virgins, the ten, the parable of, explained, M. xxv. 1-13.
 Vocative, peculiar form of, M. xxvii. 46.
 Vow of Nazarite, A. xviii. 18; xxi. 24.
 Vows, rash, A. xxiii. 12; see *Oaths*.
 Vows, religious, of celibacy, &c., considered, 1 Ti. v. 12.
 Vulgate, the Latin, supplanted, by the Tridentine decree, the Original Scriptures, J. viii. 1-11, *note* 2; influence of upon our Translators, A. xiii. 48; and upon Augustine and his followers, as well as upon some writers of the Reformed Churches, *ib.*
- Walking on the sea, symbolical meaning of this action of our Lord, M. xiv. 25.

- War, riding on a horse emblematical of, M. xxi. 5; and see *White Horse*.
- Washing the feet, a servile act, J. xiii. 4; literal observance of the precept not now required, *ib.*; in Christ symbolical, *ib.*; its figurative significance, 14.
- Washing, mode of, among the Jews, Mk. vii. 3.
- Watches of the night, M. xiv. 25; L. xii. 38.
- Watchfulness inculcated, M. xxiv. 42; xxv. 13; Mk. xiv. 32.
- Water, considered as instrumental in regeneration, J. iii. 5; 2 P. iii. 5; special mention of in St. John's Gospel, J. iii. 4; v. 4; vii. 37; see *Siloam*.
- "Way, the"—the Gospel, A. ix. 2; Rev. xvi. 12.
- "Way in the sea, who maketh a," Isa. xliii. 16; Rabbinical gloss on, A. xxvii. 9.
- "Way of the Sea," M. iv. 15.
- "Way of [to] the Gentiles," M. x. 5.
- Wealth, a load, as well as poverty, G. iv. 5; see *Riches*.
- Wedding garment, what it typified, M. xxii. 11.
- Wells, J. iv. 6.
- White horse, contrasted with the foal of an ass, M. xxi. 5; see Rev. vi. 2.
- "White raiment," Rev. iii. 5; and see *Garment*.
- White stone, its typical significance, Rev. ii. 17.
- Whitened sepulchres, M. xxiii. 27.
- Whitsunday; see *Pentecost*.
- "Whose fan is in his hand," M. iii. 12.
- Widow, the importunate, a type of the Church, L. xviii. 1. 7; does not pray for *revenge*, 7.
- Widows of the Church, 1 Ti. iv. 3—5. 9—13.
- Wild beasts, on our Lord's undergoing his temptation with them, Mk. i. 13; this circumstance inconsistent with the common opinion respecting the scene of the temptation, *ib.*
- Wilderness, journeyings of the Israelites in, their typical nature, M. xiii. 35.
- Wilderness of Arabia, probably the scene of our Lord's temptation, Mk. i. 13.
- Wilderness of Judæa, where, M. iii. 1.
- "Wilderness, the Church in the," A. vii. 38.
- Wilderness, usual meaning of the term in the Gospels, L. xv. 4.
- Will, a twofold in Christ, M. xxvi. 39; denied by the Monothelites, *ib.*
- Will-worship, Introduction to the Epistle to the Colossians, p. 312.
- Wine, the ancient practice of filtering, M. xxiii. 24.
- Wing, emblematical, in Scripture, M. xxiii. 37; xxiv. 15.
- "Wisdom of God, the" = Christ himself, L. xi. 49.
- "Wisdom of God, the manifold," M. xi. 19; E. iii. 10.
- Witchcraft, the phenomena of, in the heathen world, A. xvi. 16; a work of the devil, *ib.*; Rev. ix. 20.
- Wives, duty of, E. v. 26; see *Marriage*.
- Woman, formed out of the man, 1 C. xi. 10; inference from this, *ib.*
- Woman, her relation to man, 1 C. vii. 39; her attire, xi. 4. 10; 1 Ti. ii. 9; her privilege and duties, 15.
- Woman, not allowed by the Jews to put away her husband, Mk. x. 11, 12.
- "Woman," our Lord addresses his mother with this compellation, J. ii. 4; xix. 26; "What have I to do with thee?" explained and fulfilled, J. ii. 4; xix. 26, 27.
- Woman, the, bowed by infirmity, L. xiii. 11.
- Woman, the only intercessor at our Lord's trial, M. xxvii. 19; reverence due to her, L. xvi. 18; the Church compared to a, see *Church*.
- Woman, the, that was a sinner, why she came to Christ, L. vii. 36—50; the only person who is said in the Gospels to have come to him for remission of sin, *ib.*
- Women at the Crucifixion, A. xii. 17; and Resurrection, M. xxviii. 1. 5. 9; minister to Christ, L. viii. 3; part taken by them in the Feast of Tabernacles, J. viii. 12.
- Women not permitted to preach, 1 C. xiv. 34; 1 Ti. ii. 12; enlisted by Heresiarchs in the propagation of their heresies, 2 Ti. iii. 6; Rev. ii. 20.
- Women's names in the genealogy of our Lord, M. i. 3.
- "Wonders," contradistinguished from "signs," A. ii. 19.
- "Word, the," Christ why so called, J. i. 1; the term applied both to him and to the written word, 1 P. i. 23.
- "Word, the," applied to him by other sacred writers, as well as by St. John, Tit. i. 3; see *Λόγος*.
- "Word of God, the," meaning of the expression, L. i. 1; how the Hebrew Christians were made acquainted with it, Heb. iv. 12.
- "Word of the Lord, by the," 1 Th. iv. 15.
- "Word" (written), L. viii. 1.
- Words, idle, forbidden, M. xii. 35, 36.
- Words, their importance; see *Tongue and Speech*.
- Works, dead, what, Heb. vi. 1.
- Works, good, necessity of, M. vii. 22; xxv. 1; R. viii. 39; E. ii. 8; P. ii. 13; Jam. i. 22—26; ii. 14; St. Paul's controversy with the false teachers who disparage good works, Introduction to the First Epistle to Timothy, pp. 433, 434; Tit. iii. 8; see also Introduction to the Epistle of St. James; nothing strictly due for them, M. xx. 3. 15; L. xv. 29; xvii. 7; xix. 16; some only apparently so, J. vi. 29.
- Works, the fruit of faith, R. v. 1; see *Faith*.
- World, future destruction of by fire, 2 P. iii. 10.
- World, governed by Christ, M. xxviii. 18; J. ii. 11; xviii. 36.
- World of Nature and of Grace, sympathy between them, J. x. 22; R. viii. 22.
- World, the whole, subjected to the sceptre of Augustus, L. ii. 1; related to our Lord, who is enrolled in the same catalogue with it, and not with the Jews alone, *ib.*; social and religious phenomena of, at the time of Christ's ascension, Vol. ii. xv.
- "World," used in Scripture in two senses, J. i. 10.
- Worldly anxiety, rebuked, L. x. 40, 41.
- Worldly substance, the proper use of, M. xxiv. 45; see *Money*.
- Worldly wisdom, to be imitated, L. xvi. 8.
- Wormwood, spiritual meaning of, Rev. viii. 11.
- "Would that they were even cut off that trouble you," G. v. 12.
- Writing materials, L. i. 63.
- Zacchæus, derivation and import of the name, L. xix. 2; chief of the publicans, and rich, therefore hated by his countrymen, *ib.*; said to have become first bishop of Cæsarea in Palestine, *ib.*; his case spiritualized, 4; his confession, and vow of restitution, 8.
- Zacharias, the father of John the Baptist, L. i. 5; etymology of the name, M. xxiii. 35; L. i. 5. 72, 73; erroneously supposed to have been the high priest, 9; his dumbness a symbol of the Jewish nation, mute through unbelief, 22; not certain that he was deaf, *ib.*; contrast between his faith and that of the Blessed Virgin, 34; his hymn, 68; replete with Hebraisms, *ib.*; reference in it to the providential Dispensation signified in the names of the Baptist and his parents, 72, 73; his dumbness and Paul's blindness compared, A. ix. 8.
- Zacharias, the son of Barachias, who, M. xxiii. 35; xxiv. 15.
- Zealots, and assassins, army of, by which the Temple of Jerusalem was defiled, M. xxiv. 15; reference to them in Daniel's prophecy of the siege of the city, and in Josephus, *ib.*; on their practices, A. xxiii. 12; and see *Assassins*.
- Zebedee, sons of; see *James and John*.
- Zechariah viii. 23, application of the prophecy, M. xiv. 36; never quoted by name in the New Testament, xxvii. 9; ch. xi. 12, 13; reference to, *ib.*; xii. 10 fulfilled, J. xix. 37.
- Zelotes, Simon, his character and designation, M. x. 4; Zelotes means the same as Cananite, *ib.*
- Zorobabel, meaning of his name, his genealogy, M. i. 12, 13.

INDEX III.

OF

AUTHORS CITED IN THE NOTES.

ALCUIN, on Baptism administered by Christ's disciples during his ministry on earth, J. iv. 1, 2; the Jews acknowledge Christ as a prophet, vi. 14; he follows up his miracles with his sermons, 26; character of Nathanael, vii. 41.

Ambrose, S., on the Evangelic Cherubim, Part i. p. xli.; on our Lord's birth from a Virgin, M. i. 18; on the gifts of the Magi, ii. 11; on our Lord's temptation, iv. 1; on the Beatitudes, v. 3; on secret prayer, vi. 6; on the healing of the leper, viii. 3; on "Suffer me first to go and bury my father," 22; on our Lord's choice of Judas, x. 4; on John the Baptist's mission of disciples to Christ, xi. 2, *note* 1; on "the kingdom of heaven suffereth violence," 12; on the parable of the leaven, xiii. 33; on the *κοφίλους* in the miraculous feeding, xiv. 20; on the equal dignity of St. Paul and St. Peter, p. 49, *note* 10; on "Thou art Peter," &c., M. xvi. 18; "There be some standing here," 28; on our Lord's sorrows in the hours of his passion, xxvi. 38; on the two wills in Christ, 39; on the cross and the crucifixion, xxvii. 35; on "Corban," Mk. vii. 11; on the poor widow's mite, xii. 43; on "neither [knoweth] the Son," xiii. 32; on "many have taken in hand," L. i. 1; on the dumbness of Zacharias, regarded as a symbol of the Jewish nation, mute through unbelief, 22; on the sinlessness of Christ, 31; on the Virgin's words, "How shall this be?" 34; Zacharias's tongue loosed, 64; the various testimonies borne to Christ at his birth, ii. 36; on the force of *προέκοπτε*, 52; why our Lord was baptized, iii. 21; "we have toiled all the night," v. 5; on *θέλω, καθάρισθητι. Καὶ εὐθέως, κ.τ.λ.*, 13; on *ἐδικαίωσαν τὸν Θεόν*, vii. 29; observations on the character and conduct of the woman, a sinner, in the house of Simon the Pharisee, 36—50; thinks it was not Mary Magdalene, *ib.*; Christ is touched by *faith*, viii. 45; the death of Christ, the point to which all the Law and the Prophets tended, as their end, ix. 31; the fiery zeal of "the sons of thunder" tamed, 54; folly and danger of dividing the affections between Christ and the world, 61; necessity of singleness of purpose in missionaries, x. 4; the parable of the good Samaritan spiritualized, 34; different degrees of future glory and misery, xii. 47; the parable of the fig-tree, and the healing of the woman bowed with infirmity, xiii. 11; "left the ninety and nine in the wilderness," xv. 4; "what woman having ten pieces of silver," &c., 8; "I will arise, and go unto my father, and will say unto him," &c., xv. 18; "the fattened calf" emblematical of Christ, 23; the parable of the rich man and Lazarus, xvi. 26; "a great gulf fixed," *ib.*; no works of supererogation, xvii. 7; "he that is on the house-top," &c., explained, 31; "there will the eagles be gathered together," 37; "Why callest thou *Me* good?" xviii. 19; the case of Zacchæus spiritualized, xix. 5; L. xxi. 25—27 explained; our Lord's assumption of our nature, xxii. 48; the soldiers bind Christ, 54; Simon the Cyrenian, in carrying our Lord's cross, becomes a type of the priority of the Gentile world in coming to Christ, and bowing under the yoke of the cross, xxiii. 26; why our Lord chose to die by crucifixion, and publicly, at the Feast of the Passover, 33; our Lord partakes of the bread, in the Holy Communion, with the two disciples, xxiv. 43; Adam and Eve types, respectively, of Christ and his Church, xix. 34; on J. xx. p. 281; "Touch me not," J. xx. 17; "they began to speak with other tongues," A. ii. 4; on the

guilt of Ananias, v. 4; importance of the rite of Confirmation, viii. 14—18; Jacob's prophecy respecting Benjamin applied to St. Paul, ix. 1.

Ammonius on the due form of Ordination, A. vi. 6.

Ammonius, his division of the Gospels into Sections, Vol. i. p. xxvii.; the voice heard by St. Paul, as he was approaching Damascus, A. ix. 7; the right use of natural light, x. 5; St. Peter forbids Cornelius to worship him, 25, 26; superiority of Apostles to Elders, xv. 2; the Jews had no synagogue at Philippi, xvi. 13; Paul at Athens, xvii. 23; and at Miletus, xx. 28.

Andrewes, Bishop, Sermons on the Nativity, M. ii. 1, *note* 2, p. 6; on our Lord's temptation, iv. 1; on swearing, v. 34; on the Lord's Prayer, vi. 9; on temptation, and the petition in the Lord's Prayer for deliverance from it, 13; on "Thou art Peter," &c., xvi. 18, p. 49; on giving Cæsar his due, xxii. 21; on the lawfulness of usury, xxv. 27; on the lawfulness of oaths in Courts of Justice, xxvi. 63; on the Passion, xxvii. 35; on the Resurrection, xxviii. 1; J. v. 25; Sermon on Mk. xiv. 4—6; on L. ii. 12—14; and on ix. 54—56; bishops succeeded the Apostles, and presbyters the Seventy-two, L. x. 1; Sermon on xvi. 25; the procession of the Holy Spirit, J. xv. 26; "Touch me not," xx. 17; on the power of Absolution, 23; on the fitness of the Feast of Pentecost for the effusion of the Holy Ghost, A. ii. 1; "they began to speak with other tongues," 4; on A. ii. 16—21, and 42; *ἐμπνέων ἀπειλῆς*, ix. 1; reflections on the conversion of Cornelius, x. 34; Peter delivered from prison, xii. 12; on the guilt of suicide, xvi. 27; exposition of A. xx. 28, and application of the text to the circumstances of the Church of England, *ib.*; on G. v. 9; exposition, of 1 C. xi. 16; of xii. 4; 2 C. v. 21; the gift of tongues reverses the curse of Babel, R. i. 14; on Justification in the name of Christ, iii. 26; on the Fall of Adam, v. 14; our gain in Christ more than our loss in Adam, 15; the Moral Law known before the time of Moses, 20; justification in Christ's name, 21; refutation of Bellarmine, *ib.*; "let not sin reign," vi. 6; the Law not changed by Grace, vii. 6; on "Abba, Father," viii. 15; on 26; grace resisted by the corrupt will of man, ix. 16; on the hardening of the heart, 18; redemption universal, 23; against private misconstructions of Scripture, xii. 6; Sermon on Heb. i. 1, 2; on ii. 16; and on xii. 2; exposition of xiii. 10; Sermon on 20; on Civil Government, 1 Ti. ii. 2; Sermon on vi. 17—19; and on Jam. i. 5; no temptation from God, 13; on 16; Sermon on 22; faith without good works, ii. 14; on the priest's intercession, v. 13, 14; Sermon on 1 P. i. 3, 4; the trial of faith, 7; on sanctifying God's name, iii. 15; "we have a more sure word of prophecy," 2 P. i. 19; the law of Love in the Gospel is in the law of Moses and of Nature, 1 J. ii. 7; Love and Fear, iv. 19; on v. 6; on Jud. 17—21; on the *sevenfold* Spirit, R. i. 4; the Lord's Day, Rev. i. 10; on "the Two Witnesses," xi. 3, 4.

Apuleius, his testimony to the universality of the worship of the

Ephesian Diana, A. xix. 27.

Aquila, citation from his Version by St. Paul, 1 C. xiv. 21.

Arator, on the miracle of tongues at Pentecost, A. ii. 4; on A. ii. 13; iv. 24; x. 44—46; xvi. 17, 18; Paul, a tent-maker, xviii. 3; the viper at Melita, xxviii. 4.

Aratus, quoted by St. Paul, A. xvii. 23. 28.

Arnoldi, his description of the characteristics of modern Continental exegesis, Pt. i. p. vi., *note* 1; deplores the departure of it from the exposition of the early Church, ix., *note* 5.

Athanasius, S., on the necessity of holiness of life to a right understanding of Scripture, Pt. i. p. vii., *note* 1; on the Incarnation, M. ii. 15, *note* 3; on the baptism of Christ, iii. 16, 17; on flight from persecution, x. 23; on ascribing the miracles of Christ to the Devil, xii. 31, *note* 1; his refutation of the Monothelite heresy, xxvi. 39; on our Lord's last words, xxvii. 46; on his assumption of his mediatorial kingdom, xxviii. 18; on the founding of his Church by Christ in the belief of the Holy Trinity, 19; the testimony of evil spirits to the truth, Mk. i. 25; on the conception and birth of Christ, L. i. 35; exposition of Luke ii. 52; on *ὁ Ἅγιος*, L. iv. 34; "The Son of man came to seek," &c., L. xix. 10; why our Lord chose to die by crucifixion, and that publicly, at the Passover feast, xxiii. 33; "O fools and slow of heart," &c., xxiv. 25; the creative and administrative agency of the Logos, J. i. 1; "the Son can do nothing of himself," v. 19; the reasons why our Lord chose to die by crucifixion, xii. 33; "I am the way, and the truth, and the life,"—implies the eternity of the Son, xiv. 6; in what sense the Father is said to be "the only God," xvii. 3; "That all may be one," 21; Paul's teaching comes in contact with the tenets of the Epicureans and Stoics at Athens, A. xvii. 18; on Acts ii. 35; on the guilt of Ananias, v. 4; on the reading at Acts xx. 28, τὴν ἐκκλησίαν τοῦ Θεοῦ, cites R. ix. 5; error of Meyer here, *ib.*; exposition of C. i. 15; refers to 2 Ti. iii. 15; cites 2 P. i. 3, 4; cites and interprets Jam. i. 18.

Augustine, S., his counsel for the right exposition of Scripture, Vol. i. pp. vii., ix.; observation on the advantages that accrue to Truth by means of Error, xvi.; on the plenary inspiration of Scripture, xix., xx.; on the direct sanction given to the Four Gospels by Christ himself, xlv.; on the varieties in the Gospels, xlvii.; on the acquaintance of each succeeding Evangelist with what his predecessor or predecessors had written, *ib.*; on their respective characteristics, li., *lii.*; on the genealogies of our Lord in the Gospels, M. i. 1, *note* 9; supposes that Jeconiah is reckoned twice, i. 11; on the Jews being entrusted with the Scriptures, ii. 5; the Magi, 9; on the proper mode of ascertaining the sense of the Scripture, M. iii. 11; on the mixture of chaff with the wheat in the Visible Church, 12; on the appearance of a Dove at Christ's baptism, 16; why was our Lord tempted of the Devil? iv. 1; David typical of Christ, 4; the Beatitudes, v. 3; on the operation of the Law before and after the advent of Christ, 17; on "Resist not evil," 39; on "Whosoever shall smite thee," &c., *ib.*; on hypocrisy, vi. 2; on the Lord's Prayer, 9; on our Lord's admiration of the centurion's faith, viii. 10; on Peter's place in the catalogue of the Apostles, x. 2; on the meaning of *grace*, 8; on blasphemy against the Holy Ghost, xii. 31; on "Who is my mother?" 48; on the parable of the Tares, and on the Visible Church, xiii. 30; on our Lord's miraculous walking on the sea, xiv. 23; Peter rescued from drowning, 31; "on this rock will I build my Church," xvi. 18; on the dignity of St. Paul, *ib.*; on the power of the keys, xvi. 19; on the second coming of Elias, xvii. 10; on divorce and fornication, xix. 2; on "Why callest thou me good?" 17; on "Ye shall sit on twelve thrones," xix. 28; on "The Scribes and Pharisees sit in Moses' seat," xxiii. 2; on "One is your Master," &c., 8; on different degrees of punishment in a future state, 15; on "Pray that your flight be not on the Sabbath day," xxiv. 20; on Christ's second Advent, 26; on "whosoever the carcass is, there," &c., 28; on the proper temper of mind to be cherished with regard to the prophecies concerning the second Advent, 48; on our Lord's sorrows in the hour of his passion, xxvi. 38; on two wills in Christ, 39; on "Sleep on now," &c., 45; on the state of the saints that rose after the crucifixion, 53; on the Lord's day, xxviii. 1; on the false testimony of the Jews and Roman soldiers respecting the resurrection of our Lord, 13; on the "touch" of faith, Mk. v. 30; on the sin of heresy and schism, ix. 40; observations on Original Sin, Universal Redemption, and Infant Baptism, x. 14, *note* 1; on the case of blind Bartimæus, 46; on the cursing of the fruitless leafy fig-tree, xi. 13; "neither the Son," 32; on the Gospels of St. Mark and St. Luke, Pt. i. p. 130; on "many have taken in hand," L. i. 1; contrast between Eve hearkening to the voice of the serpent, and the Blessed Virgin Mary believing the words of the angel, with the respective consequences of each act, 38; "that the thoughts of many hearts may be revealed," ii. 35; on the lawfulness of the profession of arms, iii. 14; on the effect of baptism, 38; on vi. 20, 21; on the three instances of persons raised from the dead by Christ, vii. 11, 12; thinks that the woman mentioned vii. 36—50, was not Mary Magdalene, 36—50; "To whom little is forgiven, the same loveth little," 47; on the purifying efficacy of Baptism,

49; the danger of unreservedly following human examples, ix. 54; the rich man declines Christ's call, 58; "suffer me first to go and bury my father," 59; necessity of singleness of purpose in Missionaries, x. 4; "who is my neighbour?" 29; the parable of the good Samaritan spiritualized, 31; Martha labouring, Mary listening, 40, 41; L. xi. 41 explained; the rich fool's boast, and vain resolution, xii. 18; to be "girded," and to "have the light burning," explained, 35; different degrees of future glory and misery, 47; the parable of the unjust steward, xvi. 1; the true use of money, 9; the rich man and Lazarus, 26; "he that is on the house-top," &c., xvii. 31, explained; the importunate widow does not pray for *revenge*, xviii. 3; faith and prayer confirm each other, 8; the deportment and spirit of the praying Pharisee, 9—14; the baptism of infants, 17; the necessity of restitution exemplified in the case of Zacchæus, xix. 8; the penitent thief, xxiii. 42, 43; our Lord sanctifies the Sabbath by resting, during it, *from all his work*, in the grave, 56; "And he made as though he would have gone further," xxiv. 28, *note* 1; on continual prayer, 53; on St. John's design in writing his Gospel, Vol. i. p. 269; on his style, and leading characteristics, *ib.*; "the true light," J. i. 9; "the Word was made flesh," 14; "in the bosom," 18; Christ works continually in the world of Nature, as well as in that of Grace, ii. 11; we must not turn our faces to the works of creation, and our backs upon Him Who made them, *ib.*; on the nature of Divine Grace, 16; "the zeal of thine house hath eaten me up," 18; the character of Nicodemus, iii. 2; the new birth, 3; the Red Sea a type of Baptism, 5; the union of the two natures in Christ, 13; "the Son of man which is in heaven," *ib.*; the brazen serpent a type of Christ, 14; "he must increase," 30; "though Jesus baptized not," iv. 2; who baptized Christ's Apostles? 1, 2; Christ's baptism contrasted with John's, *ib.*; the woman of Samaria a type of the Gentile converts, 7; the porch of Bethesda a type of the Jewish nation, v. 2; the healing of the soul and the healing of the body by Christ, 3; religious retirement, 14; God still works on the Sabbath, 17; "the Son can do nothing of himself," 19; twofold resurrection, 25; "hath given him power to execute judgment," 27; the miraculous feeding of the five thousand, vi. 14; our Lord follows up his miracles with his sermons, 26; works *apparently* good, 29; Christ the great pattern of humility, 38; God draws all who are willing to come, 44; the Sacrament, and the *Virtue* of the Sacrament, distinguished, 50; the efficacy of the Sacrament, 52; our Lord presents his body and blood in those things which are made of *many* into *one*, 53, 54; our Lord's disciples mistake his bodily for his spiritual presence, and suppose that he is speaking of the giving of his *flesh* to be eaten, when he speaks of the imparting of his *grace*, 62; the spiritual receiving of his body and blood, *ib.*; union with Christ the only means and source of spiritual life, 63; "my time is not yet," vii. 6; "out of his belly shall flow rivers of living water," 38; the effusion of the Holy Spirit, 39; "Neither do I condemn thee; go and sin no more," viii. 11; infant baptism, 21; "the servant of sin," 34; "then shall ye be free indeed," 36; "shall never see death," 51; "Abraham rejoiced to see my day," 56; "before Abraham was, I am," 58; oneness of the faith of all believers before and since the advent of Christ, x. 4; "all that ever came before me," 8; "I am the door," 9; refutation of the Arian and Sabellian heresies, 30; "though he die, yet shall he live," xi. 25; ἐτάραξεν ἑαυτὸν, 33; the raising of Lazarus symbolical of the raising from the death of sin, 44; "the Romans will come," &c., 48; the coming of the Greeks [Gentiles] to Christ, xii. 20; "except a grain of wheat fall into the earth and die," &c., 24; "he that loveth his life," &c., 25; "if any man serve me," &c.; these words remarkably fulfilled in St. Stephen, 26; the *reign* of the Devil brought to an end, 30, 31; our Lord washes the disciples' feet *before* supper, xiii. 2; "he that is washed needeth not save to wash his feet," &c., 10; Christians, like Christ, may be troubled by a prospect of death, 21; Judas Iscariot a communicant, 26; "Now is the Son of man glorified," 31; how Peter followed Christ, 36; "I will lay down my life for thy sake," 37; "I am the way, and the truth, and the life," xiv. 6; "greater works than these shall he do," 12; "If ye ask any thing in my name, I will do it," 14; "Peace I leave with you," 27; "not as the world giveth," *ib.*; "ye would rejoice, because I said, I go unto the Father," 28; the devil not the prince of creation, but of sinners, 30; "Ye are clean through the word," he does not say, "through Baptism," why, xv. 3; proof of the two natures in Christ, 4; the perpetual and indispensable use of the Lord's Prayer, 7; *why*, and to what *degree*, Christ loved us, 12; "Henceforth I call you not servants," 15; Christ *makes* good those whom he has *chosen*, 16; the Holy Spirit proceeds from the Father and the Son, 26; change in Peter's public deportment after the day of Pentecost, 27; A. ii. 36; "It is expedient for you that I go

away," J. xvi. 7; to believe Christ, and to believe in him distinguished, 8; "He will convince [convict] the world of righteousness," 10; the Church compared to a woman, 21; patient suffering triumphant, xix. 2; "but Jesus gave him no answer," 9; "He that hath delivered me to thee hath the greater sin," 11; Christ on the Cross, and Christ seated on his tribunal, contrast, 13; "the King of the Jews," 19; the three languages used in the inscription upon the Cross, 20; "What I have written I have written," 22; our Lord's outer garment divided into four parts, *ib.*; his tunic, or inner garment, without seam, emblematical of the Unity of his Church, 23, 24; "Woman, behold thy son!" 26; Adam and Eve types, respectively, of Christ and his Church, 34; "—came Jesus, the doors being shut," xx. 19; "Receive ye the Holy Ghost," 22; the miraculous draught of fishes, xxi. 11; "the net was not broken," *ib.*; upon whom did the Holy Ghost come? A. ii. 3; "they began to speak with other tongues," 4; on ii. 27; on J. xv. 26, 27; A. ii. 36; the sin and punishment of Ananias and Sapphira, v. 1—6; Stephen's martyrdom, vi. 15; viii. 1—4; the consecration of heathen literature to the service of Christianity, vii. 22; Saul the persecutor, 58; Stephen prays for his murderers, 60; comments on his apology and death, *ib.*; effects of his prayer upon Saul, viii. 1—3; the burial of the dead, 1—4; episcopal laying on of hands, 14—18; importance of the rite of Confirmation, *ib.*; the sin of Simon Magus, 18; the employment of human agency in spiritual things, ix. 6; Paul's blindness, 8; derivation of the name Ananias, 10; the great sheet let down from heaven, x. 11; "slay and eat," 13; the gifts bestowed at the conversion of Cornelius, 44—46; the receiving of the Holy Ghost before Baptism, 47; Saul changed to Paul, xiii. 9; abstaining from the eating of blood, xv. 20; on the sin of suicide, xvi. 27; Paul's teaching comes in contact with the tenets of the Epicureans and Stoics, xvii. 18; meaning and derivation of *σπερμολόγος*, *ib.*; Paul's vow at Cenchreæ, xviii. 18; Paul takes the Nazarite's vow, xxi. 24; importance of a good intention and of a good end, xxiii. 1; *ἐκβολὴν ἐποιούντο* (Acts xxvii. 10), xxvii. 18; on mourning for the dead, 1 Th. iv. 13; on the general Resurrection, 16; on 2 Th. i. 3—12; on St. Paul's manual labours, iii. 8; on the design of the Apostle's Epistle to the Galatians, Introduction to the Epistle; on the true character of an oath, G. i. 20; on the circumcision of Timothy, and the non-circumcision of Titus, ii. 3, 4; his refutation of the objections of Porphyry and Marcion respecting St. Paul's rebuke of St. Peter at Antioch, 10; on the real ground of that rebuke, 14; the nature and use of the Law, 19; on the treatment of the Law by the preachers of the Gospel, see Review of G. ii.; on the allegorical sense of G. iv. 24, and 29; on the supernatural grace of God, v. 17; on crucifying the lusts of the flesh, 24; poverty and wealth both burdens, vi. 5; on St. Paul's *stigmata*, 17; on 1 C. i. 26; on the Apostle's claim to Inspiration, ii. 13; on Excommunication, v. 5; on the effects of Baptism, vi. 11; on the Body being made the temple of God, and member of Christ, 18; on x. 2; on the typical sense of the Exodus and wanderings of the Israelites, 6; on "one bread," 17; on the Holy Communion, and especially on the sense in which we are said "to eat the flesh and drink the blood of Christ," xi. 27; on Charity, xiii. 3, 13; on xv. 22; his vindication of 2 C. iii. 6—15, against the Manichæans; the Liberty of the Gospel, 17; on v. 21; on St. Paul's "thorn in the flesh," xii. 7; "from faith to faith," explained, R. i. 17; all men sinned in Adam, v. 12; on the death of Infants, 13, 14; God's design in giving the Law, 20; on the efficacy of Baptism, vi. 3; on the dominion of sin, 6; on the perpetuity of the Moral Law, 15; when God rewards us he crowns his own gifts, 23; on vii. 7, 8; the natural birth and the spiritual one, viii. 1; caution with reference to viii. 7, 8; on "Abba, Father," 15; justification in baptism, 29; on 35; Free-will asserted, ix. 16; exposition of x. 6—9; and of xi. 17; on blindness of heart, 32; on God's decrees, 33; on 35; on xii. 6; obedience and submission distinguished, xiii. 1; the persecutions under Nero, *ib.*; symbolical significance of the Cross, E. iii. 18; exposition of C. i. 15; on "in him dwells the Godhead *bodily*," ii. 9; P. ii. 6 explained; on E. ii. 6, and 8, 9; why St. Paul suppressed the mention of his name in his Epistle to the Hebrews, H. i. 1; on the nature of the Holy Eucharist, x. 12; on 1 Ti. i. 16; but one Mediator, ii. 5; on pious poverty, vi. 6; on the love of the world, 11; on "treasuring up a good foundation," 19; on the term *αἰώνιος*, Tit. i. 2; "depart from iniquity," 2 Ti. i. 19; on iii. 8; on Jam. i. 13; to believe God, and to believe in Him, ii. 19; cites 1 P. iv. 8; on the chastening of the righteous, 17; on 2 P. ii. 4; "some things hard to be understood," iii. 15, 16; on 1 J. ii. 1, 2; love and fear, iv. 18; "He that came by water and blood," v. 6; on the Lord's Day, Rev. i. 10; on the number seven, 11; on ii. 4; comment on Ps. xci. 13; on the Living Creatures, Vol. i. p. xlii.; on vii. 4; on the marvellous way in

which the rage of the Barbarians was restrained from injuring the Christians, viii. 9; and on the infatuation of the Romans in not discerning the judgments of God in the sufferings they endured at the hands of the Barbarians, *ib.*

Bacon, Lord, on the superiority of English divines as expositors of Scripture, Vol. i. p. xvi. and note 1, xvii.; on the gradual and complete fulfilment of prophecy, M. ii. 17; on the true placing of the bonds of Unity, xii. 30; on the symbolical significance of Sarah's laughter, R. iv. 3; on ix. 3; on "reasonable service," xii. 1; on 1 Ti. vi. 20; historical comment on the prophetic visions of the second and third Seals, Rev. vi. 5.

Barrow, Dr. Isaac, on the incarnation of our Lord, M. i. 18; on the Nativity, ii. 1, note 2; on swearing, v. 34, note 7; on the Pope's assuming the title of Spouse of the Church, x. 2, note 4; on xii. 33; on "Thou art Peter," &c., xvi. 18; on the power of the keys, 19, note 1; on the meaning of the phrase to "do any thing in Christ's name," xviii. 20; on the duty and reward of bounty to the poor, xxv. 34; on the Crucifixion, xxvii. 35; on the Ascension, Mk. xvi. 19; on the Incarnation, L. i. 35; on "Praying without ceasing," ii. 37; on the duty of Christian Almsgiving, xvi. 9; Herod and Pilate at once acquit our Lord and condemn him, xxiii. 15; why our Lord chose to die by crucifixion, and publicly, at the feast of the Passover, 33; J. i. 14 explained; Sermon on Acts i. 3; on the fitness of the Feast of Pentecost for the effusion of the Holy Ghost, Whitsunday Sermon on A. ii. 1; Sermon on A. ii. 27; the sufferings of Christ foretold in the Old Testament, iii. 18; God's interposition in behalf of his Church in the very crisis of her need, ix. 3; the right use of natural light—the case of Cornelius, x. 5; on universal redemption, *ib.*; the power of enchantments and witchcraft in the heathen world, xvi. 16; Sermons on Obedience to spiritual Guides and Governors, 1 Th. v. 12; grounds on which St. Paul inculcates the duty of imitating himself, 1 C. xi. 1; on 2 C. ii. 14; on the vicarious suffering of Christ, v. 15; the efficacy of Baptism, *ib.*; the duty and reward of bounty to the poor, ix. 9; on the dominion of Conscience, R. ii. 14; on Justifying Faith, and on Justification by Faith, iii. 26; on viii. 29; on Prescience, Predestination, and Grace, *ib.*; "your reasonable service," xii. 1; on the Unity of the Church, E. iv. 4; portraiture of Wit, v. 4; Christ triumphs on the Cross, C. ii. 15; exposition of iii. 17; on the duty of Prayer, H. xiii. 5; on the words "altar" and "priest," 10; of obedience to our Spiritual Guides and Governors, 17; on 1 Ti. ii. 2; on v. 17; the perfect man offends not in speech, Jam. iii. 2; man's intellectual nature presents an image of God, 9; on "Above all things, my brethren, swear not," Jam. v. 12, 13.

Basil, S., on the power of the keys, M. xvi. 19, note 1; on the message of John the Baptist to Christ, L. vii. 21; against avarice, xii. 33; the parable of the Pharisee and the Publican, xviii. 11; the Pharisee's prayer, *ib.*

Baumgarten, on A. i. 21; on the effect of miracles, v. 28; the Ethiopian nobleman converted, viii. 27; the miraculous light and voice at Paul's conversion, ix. 7; the martyrdom of James, xii. 2; *δειςιδαιμονεστέρους*, xvii. 22.

Baxter, Richard, on the words *Sacrifice, Altar, and Priest*, Heb. xiii. 10.

Bede, on "Thou art Peter," M. xvi. 18; on "the abomination of desolation," xxiv. 15; on the mode in which the prophetic writings of the Old Testament are cited in the New, Mk. i. 1, 2; on our Lord's undergoing his temptation "with the wild beasts," 13; on "in the days of Abiathar the high priest," ii. 26; on the Parable of the Sower, iv. 26—29; on the materials of which the *σπυρίδες* were made, viii. 8; on the alabaster box of spikenard, xiv. 3; L. vii. 37; the character of Mary, xiv. 3; the significance of our Lord's act in breaking the bread at the last Supper, 22; the genuineness of the concluding section of St. Mark's Gospel, xvi. 9; God, the Saviour of the Virgin, L. i. 47; the angelic message to the shepherds, ii. 14; the appointment of the eighth day for circumcision, 21; the Law giving place to the Gospel,—the aged Simeon praying to be permitted to depart in peace, after embracing in his arms the infant Jesus, 28; the illumination of the Gentiles mentioned, L. ii. 32, before the glory of Israel, why, *ib.*; the fact of our Lord's being carried into Egypt omitted designedly by St. Luke, who knew that it had been already explained by St. Matthew, ii. 39; our Lord's words to his mother in the Temple, ii. 49.

Bellarmino, on the imputation of Christ's righteousness, R. v. 21. Bengel, "He shall be called a Nazarene," M. ii. 23, note 7; on the manifestation of the Trinity at the baptism of Christ, iii.

16; on the integrity of the Scriptures, v. 18; on the woe denounced against Capernaum, xi. 23; on "they closed their eyes," xiii. 15; on the unscriptural character of the doctrine of Transubstantiation, xxvi. 26; on the rending of the veil of the Temple, xxvii. 51; on our Lord's tomb, 60; on the dumbness of Zacharias, L. i. 22; St. Luke's reference to the Ascension, peculiar energy of it, ix. 51; our Lord reserves his miracles on *Fire* for the last, 54; the mission of ministers is "actus verè dominicus," x. 1; example of the sternness,—but of love,—with which our Lord instructed his disciples, xii. 5; the vain excuses of those that were bidden to the marriage feast, xiv. 18; the force of ἀναγκάζω, 23; "the fatted calf," xv. 23; "all that I have is thine," 31; "unprofitable servant"—the misery of being so called of God, the blessedness of being self-confessed such, xvii. 10; the atheist's creed, xviii. 4; our Lord's bloody sweat falls to the ground, and so imparts a blessing to it, which had partaken of the curse, xxii. 44; warning against covetousness and over-carefulness about worldly things, xii. 33; "salt is good," xiv. 34; "then shall they begin to call on the mountains," &c., xxiii. 30; parallel between our Lord's tomb and the womb of the Virgin, 53; "the true light," J. i. 9; on the money-changers and sellers of sheep and oxen in the Temple, and their expulsion thence, ii. 16; the Temple a type of Christ's body, 19; degrees in faith, iv. 53; miraculous healing contrasted with ordinary cures, v. 3; "the living bread" given by our Lord in the sacrament of his body and blood, vi. 52; the crown of thorns, xix. 2; on the return of the Apostles, "a sabbath-day's journey," after witnessing the Ascension of our Lord, A. i. 12; on the miracle of Pentecost, ii. 6; on A. ii. 13; on A. v. 28; the eunuch baptized by Philip, viii. 36; St. Luke's silence respecting Paul's visit to Arabia, ix. 23; St. Peter's address to Cornelius a summary of the Creed, x. 36; believes that it is probable that the Christians were confounded with the Jews in the edict by which Claudius banished the latter from Rome, xviii. 2; Paul's vow at Cenchreæ, 18; on τὴν ἐκκλησίαν τοῦ Θεοῦ, xx. 28; Paul's "offerings," A. xxiv. 17, explained; St. James addresses, in his Epistle, unconverted, as well as converted, Jews, Jam. i. 1; warning against Pelagianism, 5; rendering of ii. 7; on 19; iii. 8; punctuation of iv. 5, 6, 8; on the apostate angels, 2 P. ii. 4; exposition of ver. 12; on the Commentary of Tichonius on the Apocalypse, Introduction, note 5; the sevenfold Spirit, Rev. i. 4; the condition of the disembodied souls of the saints, vi. 9—11; on xi. 1, 2; on the importance of an acquaintance with the Hebrew, Greek, and Latin languages, to theological students, xxiii. 38; on St. John's design and plan in the composition of his Gospel, Introductory Note; presupposes many things that had been recorded by the other Evangelists, *ib.*, and comments on facts which they had barely related, *ib.*; God works still on the Sabbath, J. v. 17; the light of John the Baptist quenched by that of Christ, 35; the Jews, after rejecting the true Messiah, have received sixty false ones, coming each in his own name, 43; there is an election of grace, from which men may fall, vi. 70; "with his finger wrote on the ground," viii. 6; "I am the Light of the world," the allusion here, 12; the prophetic character of the name "Siloam," ix. 7; emphasis in the expression, "layeth down his life for the sheep," x. 11; the love of the Father towards Christ in his passion, 17, 18; the posthumous fruits of John the Baptist's ministry, 42; Lazarus buried on the day of his death, xi. 17; Christians are to control their feelings, after the example of Christ, 33; "I will draw all men unto me," xii. 32; the day of the resurrection and the day of judgment will be one and the same, 48; εἶπω and λαλήσω distinguished, 49; "What thou doest, do quickly," xiii. 27; "I have yet many things to say unto you, but," &c., xvi. 12; the singular adaptation of death by crucifixion to the purpose of proving the truth of our Lord's speedy resuscitation, and of the identity of his risen body, xix. 36; the scope of the Gospel, xx. 31; on the "breaking of bread," A. ii. 46; ψεύσασθαι σε πρὸς Πνεῦμα, v. 3; duty and profit of an assiduous study of the Scriptures, viii. 28; τῆς ὁδοῦ, ix. 2; Peter is delivered, and Herod is smitten, by an angel, xii. 21—23; on A. xiii. 20; the principles of Christianity contrasted with those of the Epicureans and Stoics, xvii. 18; why Paul was brought before the Areopagus, 19; why Priscilla is placed before her husband Aquila, xviii. 18; books of magic destroyed at Ephesus, xix. 19; the sacrifice amply recompensed, *ib.*; on A. xix. 38; ἐπέπεσε, xx. 10; διατεταγμένος, 13; answer to the objection founded on xx. 25; Divine grace not irresistible, xxvi. 19; on the practice of the Church of Rome respecting the Apostolic precept concerning the reading of Holy Scripture in public worship, 1 Th. v. 27; on 1 C. iii. 10; on v. 13; on vi. 12, and 18; on xi. 18; on "After having supped," 25; on ἀναξίως, 27; κοιμῶνται ἱκανοί, 30; σοφία and γνῶσις, xii. 8; σπείρεται, verbum amœnissimum pro sepultura, xv. 42; criticism on 2 C. ii. 1; apt

similitude respecting the fulfilment by the Gospel of the prophetic declarations with regard to the union of all nations in one Universal Church, R. xvi. 25—27; on 1 P. v. 10; on 1 J. ii. 10; on the term "Antichrist," 18; children receive an unction from the Holy One in Baptism, 20.

Bentley, Dr., remarks on the advantages arising from the multiplication of various readings of the Greek text of the New Testament, Vol. i. xxii., note 1; on the unfitness of the Latin language for being the universal one of the Holy Scriptures, and of the Church, L. xxiii. 38; St. Paul's speech before the Areopagus, A. xvii. 18; power of the spirit of καπηλεία in the corruption of truth, xix. 24; 2 C. ii. 17; on R. v. 15; ἐπίσκοποι succeed Ἀπόστολοι, xx. 28; on Episcopacy, Introductory Note to Ch. iii. 1 Ti.; on the reading of iii. 16; on the interpolated words in 1 J. v. 7.

Bernard, S., on a single eye, M. vi. 22, note 1; on the necessity of good fruits, vii. 16; the Pharisee praying, L. xviii. 11.

Beveridge, Bishop, on the Visible Church, M. viii. 30; on "Thou art Peter," &c., M. xvi. 18; on works of supererogation, L. xvii. 7; on the VIIth Article of Religion, J. viii. 56; Adam and Eve types, respectively, of Christ and his Church, xix. 34; no community of goods in the primitive Church, A. ii. 44; laymen not to decide in matters ecclesiastical, xv. 23; on the perpetuity of the Moral Law, R. vii. 6; on good works, Jam. ii. 20.

Billerbeck, description of the Sycamore-tree, L. xix. 4.

Bilson, Bp., on Christian Subjection, R. xiii. 1; 1 Ti. ii. 2; on the duties imposed by St. Paul on Titus and Timothy, Tit. i. 5.

Bingham, on χειροτονία and χειροθεσία, A. xiv. 23; on abstaining from eating of blood, xv. 20; on the time of receiving the Holy Communion, xx. 7.

Blunt, Professor, on A. ii. 47; on the question whether the Sanhedrim had the power of life and death in matters of religion, A. vii. 59; the case of St. Stephen, *ib.*; on the long abode of St. John in Palestine, viii. 14—18; on the dismay with which the progress of Christianity was viewed by the heathen priesthood, xvi. 19; on the ἐπίσκοποι and πρεσβύτεροι of Ephesus at Miletus, A. xx. 17—38.

Bull, Bp., on the reverence due to ecclesiastical antiquity, Vol. i. xv.; on different degrees of glory and misery in a future state, M. x. 15; on the Blessed Virgin's low and exalted condition, L. i. 48; on the intermediate state of the soul, L. xvi. 22; xxiii. 42, 43; on the different degrees of happiness in heaven, xix. 17; on the expression, ὁ Λόγος, J. i. 1; "My Father is greater than I," xiv. 28; in what sense the Father is said to be "the only God," xvii. 3; A. ii. 27 explained; the epithet *Mariani* fitly applied to many in these times, A. xix. 35; on 1 C. iii. 12—15; on the ministry of angels, xi. 10; Heb. i. 14; on St. Paul's "thorn in the flesh," 2 C. xii. 7; on his acquaintance with the cabalistic Theology of the Jews, iv. 12; Sermon on 2 P. i. 10; on iii. 15, 16; Summary of Irenæus' remarks on the First Epistle of St. John, Introduction to the Epistle; doctrinal criteria of it, *ib.*, note 4.

Bullinger, on St. Paul's slender success at Athens, A. xvii. 33.

Burgon, Rev. J. W., on J. iv. 5; on J. vi.; "with his finger wrote on the ground," explained, J. viii. 6; the miraculous cure of the man born blind, ix. 7; "neither shall any man pluck them out of my hand," x. 28; on the raising of Lazarus, xi. 44; on J. xii. 39; "He that is washed needeth not save to wash his feet," xiii. 10; on the respective positions of John and Judas, with respect to our Lord, at the Paschal Supper, 27.

Butler, Bp., on the true genius of Christianity, M. ix. 13; Rev. xxii. 11; on the term "hypocrisy" applied to the Pharisees, xxiii. 13; on the genuineness of the book of Daniel, xxiv. 15; on our Lord's teaching by parables, Mk. iv. 12; his declaration respecting the Papacy, 2 Th. i. 3—12; on the dominion of Conscience, R. ii. 14; on the use and abuse of Anger, E. iv. 26; character of Balaam, 2 P. ii. 15; on the import of the word *nature* in E. ii. 3; on Free-will, Rev. xxii. 11.

Casaubon, Isaac, on the Magi, M. ii. 1; on the exact interpretation of L. ii. 2; character of St. Jude's Epistle, Jud. 3; on the duties of Civil Governors, with reference to the Church, 1 Ti. ii. 2.

Chillingworth on the power of the keys, M. xviii. 18.

Chrysologos, on "Take up thy bed and walk," M. ix. 6.

Chrysostom, S., on the peculiar characteristics of the Four Evangelists, and on the substantial concord of their narratives, Pt. i. l. ii.; on the names of women in the genealogy of our Lord in St. Matthew, M. i. 3, note 11; on the conception of our Lord by a Virgin, 18; on the star in the East, ii. 2. 9; on the flight into

Egypt, 13, *note* 4; on the murder of the Innocents, 16; on the garb and ministry of John the Baptist, iii. 4, 5; "whose fan is in his hand," 12; supposes that Christ *instituted* the Sacrament of Baptism at his own Baptism, 13, *note* 4; on our Lord's temptation, iv. 1, 3; on the use of miracles, 23; on "Ye are the salt of the earth," v. 13, 14; on divorce under the Mosaic dispensation, 31; on hypocrisy, vi. 2; on prayer, 8; on "strait is the gate," vii. 14; on the necessity of holiness, 22; on "the rain descended," 25, *note* 1; the leper healed, viii. 3; "for a testimony unto them," 4; on the cure of Peter's wife's mother, 15; our Lord answers not only the *words*, but the *thoughts* of his interrogators, 19; "Suffer me first to go and bury my father," 22, *note* 1; on the call of St. Matthew, ix. 9; "new wine in old bottles," 17; on the duty of supporting the preachers of the Gospel, x. 9; "Behold, I send you as sheep," &c., 16; "Think not that I am come to send peace," 34; on "What went ye out to see?" xi. 7; "Take my yoke upon you," 29; "the Son of man is Lord of the Sabbath," xii. 8; "If I by the finger of God cast out devils," &c., 27; on "he that is not with me," and on blasphemy against the Holy Ghost, 30, 31; "Who is my mother?" 48; on the treatment of the tares, xiii. 26; on the behaviour of John the Baptist's disciples after his death, xiv. 12; Peter rescued from drowning, 31; on the faith of the woman of Canaan, xv. 28; "a sign from heaven," xvi. 4; the difference between the two miraculous feedings of the multitudes, 9, 10; on "Whom say men that I, the Son of man, am?" 13; on the appearance of Moses and Elias at the Transfiguration, xvii. 3, 4; on "It is necessary that offences come," xviii. 7; on the ministry of Angels, 10; on the mode of exercising discipline, and administering reproof, 17, *note* 2; on the power of the keys, 17; on the pronouncing of absolution by the priest, *ib.*; on the efficacy of concord, and united supplication, 19, 20; on the forgiveness of trespasses by God to us, and by us to our neighbour, 28, 34; on the indissolubility of marriage, xix. 3; on becoming eunuchs for the kingdom of heaven, 12; "Why callest thou me good?" 17; the proper mode of interpreting parables, xx. 3, *note* 1; "It is not mine to give," &c., 23; on humility, 27; on the significance of our Lord's riding into Jerusalem on the foal of an ass, xxi. 5; on the praises of the Messiah being lisped by children, 16; on the miraculous withering of the barren fig-tree, 18, 19; on rendering tribute to Cæsar, xxii. 21; on our Lord's confutation of the Sadducees, 32; on our Lord's calling Himself the sole "Master" of his disciples, xxiii. 10; on "whited sepulchres," 27; on "shall come on this generation," 36; "as a hen," &c., 37; on "beginnings of sorrows," xxiv. 8; on the obstructions to, and ultimate triumph of, the Gospel, 14; on the absence of all prophecy of the destruction of Jerusalem from the Gospel of St. John, 22; on the second Advent of Christ, 26; "wheresoever the carcass is, there," &c., 28; on the permanence of the Church, 34; on the ignorance of the angels as to the time of the second Advent, 36; the period compared to two periods of luxury, 37; on the reward of the faithful servant, 45; on the severe punishment due to uncharitableness and self-indulgence, *ib.*; on the parable of the Ten Virgins, xxv. 1; on the irreparable loss which is entailed by unforgiven sin, 9; the punishment of the slothful servant, 26; on the voluntary nature of our Lord's sufferings, xxvi. 2; why our Lord ate the Passover before He suffered, 17; on his treatment of Judas at the last Supper, 21; "when I drink it *new* with you," &c., 29; on our Lord's sorrows in the hour of his passion, 38; on "Sleep on now," &c., 45; and on "Rise, let us be going," 46; on the money for which Judas betrayed our Lord, xxvii. 6; on the dream of Pilate's wife, 19; on the extent of the preternatural darkness at the crucifixion, 45; on our Lord's last words, 46; on the miraculous events that immediately followed his death, 50, 51; on the rending of the veil of the Temple, 51; on the supposed discrepancy in the Evangelical accounts of the resurrection, xxviii. 1; on our Lord's appearance to the women immediately after that event, 5, 9; on the design of the Gospel of St. Luke, Introductory Note; the birth of the Messiah coincides with the subjection of the whole world to Daniel's Fourth (the Roman) Monarchy, L. ii. 1; the angelic message to the Shepherds, 8; on the baptism of our Lord, iii. 21; thinks that there were two *different* women who anointed our Lord's feet, vii. 36—50; different degrees of future glory and misery, xii. 47; parable of the rich man and Lazarus, xvi. 19; the case of Zacchæus spiritualized, xix. 5; our Lord eats the Passover (the last) on the day divinely appointed, which the Jews neglected to do, xxii. 7; why St. John does not record our Lord's predictions concerning the siege and capture of Jerusalem, Introductory Note; his style and general characteristics, *ib.*; answer to the objection of heretics founded on J. i. 1; on the preservation of the divine image formed in us by adoption in Baptism, 12; man, as distinguished from God and angels, called "flesh and blood," 13; "the Word was made flesh," 14;

on the stress laid by St. John the Evangelist on the witness of John the Baptist, 15; "in the bosom," 18; on the mission of the Jews to John the Baptist, 19; and his answer, 26; "who taketh away the sin of the world," 29; Nathanael's confession, 50; our Lord's prophetic office, 21; the character of Nicodemus, iii. 2; the mysterious nature of the new birth, 4; the death of Christ the cause of the grace of Baptism, 14; the brazen serpent a type of Christ, *ib.*; "he that believeth not is condemned already," 18; on the dispute between the disciples of John the Baptist and the Jews about purifying, 26; our Lord's command to his disciples respecting their intercourse with the Samaritans, iv. 9; "living water" = the Holy Spirit, 10; particulars in which the woman of Samaria, in her intercourse with Christ, affords profitable instruction to Christians, 19; spiritual worship, 21; the woman of Samaria brings her townsmen to Christ, 29; reason why our Lord went up to Jerusalem at the time of the great feasts, v. 1; the miraculous cure at the pool of Bethesda, 4, 5; religious retirement, 14; "the Son can do nothing of himself," 19; essential unity, and personal distinction of the Father and the Son, 23; "Search the Scriptures," 39; "twelve baskets full of fragments," significance of this, vi. 13; God draws all who are willing to come, 44; "I am the bread of life," 48; the words in J. vi. 56, refer to the Holy Eucharist; "the flesh profiteth nothing," explained, 63; "if any man will do his will," &c., vii. 17; "out of his belly shall flow rivers of living water," 38; the effusion of the Holy Spirit, *ib.*; distinguished after the glorification of Christ by certain peculiar characteristics, 39; the character of Nathanael, 41; "Will he kill himself?" viii. 22; "When ye have lifted up the Son of man, then shall ye know," &c., 28; "Abraham rejoiced to see my day," 56; Chrysostom believed that our Lord lived forty years, 57; "before Abraham was, I am," 58; sin the cause of physical evils, ix. 2; "all that ever came before me," x. 8; "I am the resurrection and the life," xi. 25; "he that hateth his life," &c., xii. 25; "if any man serve me," &c., 26; "Now is my soul troubled," 27; the drawing of men to Christ the joint act of the Father and the Son, 32; Christ washes the feet of Judas, xiii. 2; does not employ any one in any part of this menial service, 5; Judas a communicant, 26; "Now is the Son of man glorified," 31; "I am the way, and the truth, and the life," xiv. 6; "Every branch in me that beareth not fruit," &c., xv. 2; "As the Father hath loved me," &c., 9; "None of you asketh me, Whither goest thou?" xvi. 5; "He will convince [convict] the world of *righteousness*," 10; "that the Son also may glorify thee," xvii. 1; "My kingdom is not of this world," xviii. 36; "I have power to crucify thee," xix. 10; "He that hath delivered me unto thee hath the greater sin," 11; "bearing his cross," 16; mystery couched in the piercing of Christ's side, 34; the cloth and napkin in the tomb,—observations on the state in which they were found by Peter and John, xx. 6, 7; the miracle on the shore of the sea of Tiberias, xxi. 9; "Simon, son of Jonas, lovest thou me?" xxi. 15—17; on τὸν πρῶτον λόγον, A. i. 1; "for forty days," 3; "not many days hence," 5; our Lord's ascension called in Scripture an ἀνάβασις, 9; σαββάτου ἔχον ὁδόν, 12; ἔδωκαν κλήρους, 26; on the use of the lot by the eleven Apostles, *ib.*; and on the term κλήρος as applied to the Clergy, *ib.*; on the οἶκος in which the disciples assembled at Jerusalem after the Ascension, and after the effusion of the Holy Ghost, ii. 2; upon whom did the Holy Ghost come? 3; "they began to speak with other tongues," 4; the miracle of Pentecost was the antithesis of the confusion of tongues at Babel, *ib.*; on the sin and punishment of Ananias and Sapphira, v. 1—9; on A. v. 29; the Church advanced by persecution, vi. 1; on the due form of ordination, 6; the synagogue of the Libertines, 9; the Church derives strength and expansion from persecution, viii. 1—4; owners of property exhorted to build churches on their estates, 25; example of the blessed fruits of reading the Scriptures, 28; the rapture of Philip, 39; Jacob's prophecy concerning Benjamin applied to St. Paul, ix. 1; on the silence of Luke respecting St. Paul's visit to Arabia, 23; the door opened to the Gentile world at Cæsarea by the conversion of Cornelius, x. 1; on 44. 54; the receiving of the Holy Ghost *before* Baptism, 47; on the fact, that the disciples were called Christians first in Antioch, xi. 26; St. Peter, in prison, sleeps soundly, while the Church is praying for him, xii. 6; human care and labour not superseded by Divine grace, 10; homily on Peter's deliverance from prison, *ib.*; Manaën, Herod's foster-brother, xiii. 1; meaning of λειτουργία, *ib.*; proof of the Divinity of the Holy Ghost, 2; alteration of the name Saul into Paul, 9; "Thou art my Son," &c., 33; observations on the decree of the Council of Jerusalem, xv. 21; "It seemed good to the Holy Ghost and to us," 28; on the parts taken respectively by Paul and Barnabas, 39; God proportions his revelations to the necessity of the case, xvi. 9; truth from the mouth of the Evil One not to be accepted, 17;

18; why Paul was brought before the Areopagus, xvii. 19; *διδασκαλεῖς*, 22; "an altar to the unknown God," 23; Church dedicated to Dionysius on the Areopagus, 34; Paul a "tent-maker," xviii. 3; on xix. 31; the death and restoration of Eutychus, xx. 7; *δεδεμένος τῷ πνεύματι*, 22; on xxi. 24; Paul takes the Nazarite's vow, 24; addresses the people of Jerusalem at the Feast of Pentecost, 40; providentially sent to Cæsarea, xxiii. 33; appeals to Cæsar, xxv. 10; condemnation of the Jews by God and man for their impiety and impenitence, xxvi. 31; *χαλδῶντες τὸ σκεῦος*, xxvii. 17; comparison of the Church to a ship, 40; *τιμαῖς ἐτίμησαν*, xxviii. 10; Paul rendered more illustrious by his shipwreck, 30; on 1 Th. ii. 17; and on iv. 14, and 16; 2 Th. i. 3—12 explained; on the Law and the Gospel, G. ii. 18, 19; on G. iv. 25; on St. Paul's *stigmata*, vi. 17; on Christian unity, 1 C. i. 2; on the administration of Baptism, 13; on 1 C. i. 26; exposition of "comparing spiritual things with spiritual," ii. 13; on the question why the Corinthians are called "carnal," iii. 2; on "Let us keep the Feast," v. 8; on St. Paul's dexterity in retorting opponents' arguments, vi. 12; on "Not I, but the Lord," vii. 10; "I, not the Lord," 12; on Divorce, *ib.*; on 16, 17; on vii. 12; on viii. 1; "meat commendeth us not to God," 8; on ix. 1; interpretation of ver. 5; on the word *κοινωνία*, x. 16; on the ministry of angels, xi. 10; on the Holy Communion, and the *practical* bearing of its *reception* on the daily duties of life, 30; on idolatry, xii. 1; on saying *Amen* in public worship, xiv. 16; on xv. 29; on the Resurrection, 56; triumph in affliction, 2 C. ii. 14; on the tenets of the Judaizers at Corinth, and St. Paul's refutation of them, iii. 6; explanation of 18; on the glorified body, v. 3; Christ made to us the righteousness of God, 21; on the tenderness and amplitude of St. Paul's heart, vi. 12; on St. Paul's prudence in stating certain particulars concerning Titus, vii. 13; on viii. 2; on almsgiving, ix. 5; on xiii. 1; the first birth of Jesus from the womb, as well as the second from the tomb, was by the operation of the same Divine Person—the Holy Ghost, R. i. 4; interpretation of iv. 2; and of vii. 15; explanation of ix. 3; affirms that St. Paul visited Spain, xv. 24; on the sanctification of the lips by the reception of the Holy Eucharist, xvi. 16; on the use of Anger, E. iv. 26; Sermon on P. i. 18; on E. ii. 6; on the nature of the Holy Eucharist, Heb. x. 12; on the Veil of the Temple, 20; on the design and tendency of the discipline of Excommunication, 1 Ti. i. 20; on prayer for civil governors, ii. 3, 4; on St. Paul's citations from heathen poets, Tit. i. 12; on the equality of the Son with the Father, ii. 13; on Divine Mercy, Jam. ii. 13.

Clarendon, Lord, on the sin of Ananias and Sapphira, A. v. 2.

Clemens Alexandrinus, on divorce, M. xix. 9; on the Gospel of St. Mark, Mk. i. 1,—Introductory Note; cites R. viii. 11; exposition of 39; cites 1 J. v. 16; character of St. Jude, Jud. 1; cites 5. 11; refers to Jud. 24, 25; refers to 6. 8—16. 24, and 25.

Clement (Bp. of Rome), on the Dove at the Baptism of Christ, M. iii. 16, *note* 4; "no man can serve two masters," &c., paraphrased, vi. 24, *note* 2; quotes, as Scripture, M. ix. 13; M. x. 16 cited, with additions, from oral tradition; L. xvi. 10 cited; meaning of *λειτουργέω*, A. xiii. 2; his reference to 1 C. i. 12; citation of 31, and of ii. 9; arguments for temperance and holiness, from the consideration of the Resurrection, and of the body being made the Temple of God by Baptism, vi. 14; on Charity, xiii. 7; *τόπος* explained, xiv. 16; exposition of 2 C. iii. 18; on justification by faith, R. v. 1; on St. Paul's preaching, travels, and sufferings, xv. 21; his testimony to the fact of the Apostle's visit to Spain, 24; on St. Paul's sufferings and final triumph, P. iii. 12; probably referred to in iv. 3; refers to 15, to 1 Ti. ii. 3, 4, and to vi. 5; on the primitive foundations of Church-Polity, Tit. i. 5; cites ii. 14, and iii. 1; refers to Jam. iv. 1, and to 1 P. ii. 1; cites iv. 8, and 2 P. ii. 5—7; on E. i. 18; the Church in a city described as sojourning there, Rev. ii. 1; the Nicolaitans, 5; refers to 1 P. ii. 17.

Cosin, Bp., on the unscriptural character of the Doctrine of Transubstantiation, M. xxvi. 26; on communicating in one kind, *ib.*; on the canon of Scripture, L. xxiv. 44; "the book of the prophets," A. viii. 42.

Cranmer, Abp., on the power of the keys, M. xviii. 18; the privileges of bishops and presbyters, A. xv. 23; on the necessity of conforming to the Creeds, R. xii. 6.

Cyprian, S., on secret prayer, M. vi. 6; on the Visible Church, xiii. 30, *note* 1; on the power of the keys, xvi. 19, *note* 1; on the measure of grace proportioned to that of faith in the recipient, Mk. iv. 24; our Lord's inner garment without seam, emblematical of the *unity* of his Church, J. xix. 23, 24; episcopal laying on of hands, A. vi. 6; on the contrast between the behaviour of the Christians and the Gentiles during the plague at Carthage, 1 P. ii. 12.

Cyril, S., of Jerusalem, on "He shall baptize with the Holy Ghost,"

M. iii. 11; our Lord's Baptism, 13; shows how John's Baptism was "the beginning of the Gospel," Mk. i. 4; his testimony to the genuineness of the concluding verses of St. Mark's Gospel, xvi. 9; on the *unique* sinlessness of Christ, L. i. 27; on *πρωτότοκον*, ii. 7; on the appointment of the eighth day for circumcision, 21; on the "sword," as applied prophetically to the Crucifixion of Christ, 35; on Jesus' growth "in wisdom and stature," 40. 52; on the force of *προέκοπτε*, 52; on the message of John the Baptist to Christ, vii. 21. 24; the penitent woman anointing our Lord's feet, 38; Peter's forward zeal in confessing the Christ, ix. 20; the parable of the good Samaritan spiritualized, x. 34; on xi. 33; warning against over-carefulness about worldly things, xii. 33; to be "girded," and "to have the light burning," explained, 35; our Lord vouchsafes to be the guest of the Pharisees, though he knew that he was the object of their malice, xiv. 1; "the fatted calf," emblematical of Christ, xv. 23; no merit in good works, xvii. 10; why the Samaritan cleansed leper is called a "stranger," 18; the kingdom of the Messiah "cometh not with observation," 20; "when ye shall desire to see one of the days of the Son of man," explained, 22; "there will the eagles be gathered together," 37; the case of Zacchæus spiritualized, xix. 5; the "pitcher of water," xxii. 10; Simon, the Cyrenian, carries the cross of Christ—a type of the converted Gentiles, xxiii. 26; "If they do these things in a green tree," &c., 31; the place from which our Lord ascended, xxiv. 50; on J. i. 3; "that cometh into the world," 9; on the union of Deity and Humanity in Christ, 14; "And I knew him not," explained, 33; on our Lord's return to Galilee after his two days' sojourn at Sychar, iv. 43, 44; homily on the miracle at the pool of Bethesda, v. 2; God still works on the Sabbath, 17; "the Son can do nothing of himself," &c., 19; on free-will, vi. 45; "I am the bread of life," 48; Christ a ransom for all, 52; "if ye shall see the Son of man ascend up where he was before," 62; "as the Scripture hath said," vii. 38; *τὴν ἀρχὴν ὃ τι καὶ λαλῶ ὑμῖν*, explained, viii. 25; the enthusiastic reception of our Lord at his triumphal entry into Jerusalem accounted for by the recent raising of Lazarus, xi. 1; *ἐνεβριμήσατο τῷ πνεύματι*, 33; the Godhead of Christ, xii. 41; *ἐκραζε*, 44; the unholy cannot enter the heavenly mansions, xiii. 8; "He who hath seen me hath seen the Father," xiv. 9; "My Father is greater than I," 28; on "the upper room" to which the Apostles returned after witnessing the Ascension, A. i. 13; ii. 1; the receiving of the Holy Ghost *before* Baptism, x. 47; on xiii. 18; Isa. xi. 14 applied to Christian Missions, xxviii. 11.

Didymus, on the necessity of basing a moral life on the foundation of Christian faith, 1 P. iii. 15; on the resemblance of the Gnostic teachers to Balaam, Jud. 11; on the nature and operations of the Holy Spirit, J. xv. 26; Paul's vow at Cenchræ, A. xviii. 18; magical arts give way to Christianity, xix. 19; *δεδεμένος τῷ πνεύματι*, xx. 22.

Epimenides, of Crete, quoted by St. Paul, Tit. i. 12.

Epiphanius, his testimony about the Hebrew original of St. Matthew's Gospel, Pt. i. p. li.; his eloquent homily on the Burial of Christ, M. xxvii. 57; and on the Resurrection, xxviii. 1; his testimony respecting the Gospel of St. Mark, Mk. i., Introductory Note, p. 112; eloquent homily on the Ascension, xvi. 19; on the force of *προέκοπτε*, L. ii. 52; his testimony to the great age of St. John the Evangelist at the time when he composed his Gospel, Introductory Note to St. John's Gospel, *note* 4; his testimony respecting the time and place of the writing of the Apocalypse disputed, *ib.*; his account of the visit of the Emperor Hadrian to Jerusalem, and of the Christian Church found standing amidst the ruins, A. i. 12; Philip preaches in the city of Samaria, viii. 5; but had not authority, being only a deacon, to give the Holy Spirit by the laying on of hands, *ib.*; on the ancient *Proseuchæ*, xvi. 13. Estius, on the efficacy of Christ's sacrifice "once offered," 1 J. ii. 1, 2.

Eusebius, Bishop of Cæsarea, his account of Ammonius, and of his sections of the Gospels, Vol. i. p. xxvii., *note* 1; the personal characteristics of St. Matthew, xlv., *note* 10; testimony respecting the genuineness of the concluding verses of St. Mark's Gospel, Mk. xvi. 9; brief notice of St. Luke, Introductory Note to his Gospel; supposes that Joseph and Mary returned from Nazareth soon after the Presentation, and thence came back to Bethlehem, where, in a *house*, the Magi found them,

L. ii. 22; the words from heaven at the Transfiguration a confirmation of Peter's confession recently made, ix. 35; supposed reference to Exod. xi. 5 at xvii. 35; shows that the Jews ate the last passover on the day *after* that on which it was eaten by our Lord—i. e. the day after that on which they ought to have eaten it, xxii. 1. 7; date of the decease of the Blessed Virgin, Introductory Note to St. John's Gospel; does not relate the incident of the casting of St. John into a vessel of boiling oil, as recounted by Tertullian, *ib.*; his account of the Apostle's banishment to the isle of Patmos, *ib.*; testifies that the Apostle wrote after the three other Evangelists, *ib.*; the appearance of our Lord [risen] to Mary Magdalene as related by the different Evangelists, J. xx. 11—18; tradition respecting the spot from which the Ascension took place on the Mount of Olives, A. i. 12; on Paul's blindness, ix. 8.

Eusebius Emisenus, on the cursing of the fruitless leafy fig-tree, Mk. xi. 13.

Euthymius, on the incarnation of our Lord, M. i. 18; on the dignity of St. Paul, xvi. 18, *note* 10; "Head of the corner," xxi. 42; on "whosoever the carcass is," xxiv. 28; on the Gospel of St. Mark, Introductory Note to St. Mark's Gospel; on the devil's testimony to the truth, Mk. i. 25; on the healing of the leper, 43; on Boanerges, iii. 17; anointing the sick with oil, vi. 13; the cure of blind Bartimæus, x. 46; exposition of xvi. 16; Elijah and Elisha types of Christ, L. iv. 26, 27.

Field, Dr., ministers only have decisive voices in Councils, A. xv. 23; but laymen may be present, *ib.*

Gelasius, Pope, on the nature of the Sacraments, J. vi. 52; on the two natures in Christ, *ib.*

Glassius, on "spoken through the Prophet," M. xxi. 4; his treatise de *Ἀνθρώπων Πάθει* commended, L. xv. 7.

Gregory I., S., Bishop of Rome, on our Lord's temptation, M. iv. 1; on the question, why in *some* cases the Apostles worked miracles, in *others* not, x. 8; "he that receiveth a righteous man," &c., 41, *note* 1; on the character of John the Baptist, xi. 7, *note* 2; on "the kingdom of Heaven suffereth violence," 11; on "the brethren of our Lord," xii. 48; on martyrdom, xx. 23; on the condition of the Visible Church, xxii. 10; on the analogy between the birth and resurrection of our Lord, xxviii. 2; on the parable of the Sower, Mk. iv. 26—29; on the cursing of the fruitless leafy fig-tree, xi. 13; exposition of Mk. xvi. 14—20; on the presence of miracles, considered as a note of the Church, 17; confutes the doctrine of the *Immaculate Conception*, L. i. 27; the angelic message to the shepherds, ii. 11; our Lord catechized at twelve years of age in the Temple, 46. 48; on vii. 36—50; applies the history of Simon the Pharisee and the woman that was a sinner, to Christ's dealings with the Jews and Gentiles, 47; the parable of the Sower, viii. 4—15; Christ is touched by *faith*, 45; Paul bearing his cross daily, and fully, and patiently, ix. 23; excellent homily on x. 1—9; on sending forth missionaries "two and two," 1; on xi. 33; on "My mother and brethren," M. xii. 48; the man who intended to build a tower, and the king going to war against another king, xiv. 28—31; parable of the rich man and Lazarus, xvi. 19; in his exposition of this parable the Bishop of Rome says nothing about Purgatory, 22; the conduct of Zacchæus and his climbing into the sycamore-tree, xix. 4; Christ weeping for the coming overthrow of unbelieving Jerusalem, 42—47; on xxi. 25—27; "Lift up your heads," &c., 28; "If they do these things in a green tree," &c., xxiii. 31; our Lord partakes of the bread at the Holy Communion, with the two disciples, xxiv. 43; fine homily on J. i. 19—28; John the Baptist's inferiority to Christ, i. 26; homily on viii. 46—59; "before Abraham was, I am," viii. 58; homily on x. 11—16; Christ washes the feet of Judas, xiii. 3; exposition of xiv. 23—31; Love the root of Obedience, xv. 9; prayer in the name of Christ, 16; exposition of xx. 11—18; of xx. 19—31; and of xxi. 1—14; "they began to speak with other tongues," A. ii. 4; on the uncured infirmities of St. Paul's friends, 1 Ti. v. 22.

Gregory Nazianzen, S., on the incarnation of our Lord, M. i. 18; on "I have need," &c., iii. 13, 14; on the opening of heaven at our Lord's Baptism, 16; on Christ's sympathy with his people, iv. 2; on divorce, v. 32, *note* 3; "Thou art Peter," &c., xvi. 18; on the different baptisms mentioned in the Scriptures, Mk. i. 4; on St. Mark's connexion with Italy, ii. 4; and St. Luke's with Achaia, *ib.*; on Infant Baptism, x. 13; affirms

that St. Luke wrote for the Greeks, Introduction to the Gospel of St. Luke; on our Lord's connexion with the priestly as well as the Royal race, L. i. 36; his relationship to John the Baptist, *ib.*; Zacharias' tongue loosed, 64; the parable of the good Samaritan spiritualized, x. 34; the ejection of the evil spirit and his fearful return, xi. 24; homily on the duty of Christian almsgiving, xvi. 9; "the Son can do nothing of himself," &c., J. v. 19; Christ the great pattern of humility, vi. 38; on the significance of the number *seven*, A. ii. 1; and on the fitness of the Feast of Pentecost for the effusion of the Holy Ghost, *ib.*; exposition of ii. 1; "they began to speak with other tongues," ii. 4; on the guilt of Ananias, v. 4; Philip baptizes the eunuch, viii. 38; expostulation with those who delay their baptism, *ib.*; the dignity of the appellation "Christian," xi. 26; and the unlawfulness of assuming a designation from any human leader, however exalted, *ib.*

Gregory Nyssen, S., on "the *fall* and *rising* of many in Israel," L. ii. 34; on the guilt of Ananias, A. v. 4.

Gregory Thaumaturgus, S., on the lineage of the Blessed Virgin, M. i. 1; on the day of our Lord's birth, ii. 1.

Gregory VII. (Hildebrand), singular legend placed by him upon the crown which he sent to Rudolphus, M. xvi. 18; raises the Pontifical upon the ruins of the Imperial power, Rev. xvii. 9.

Greswell, on the date of the Nativity, M. ii. 20, *note* 10.

Grinfield's *Novi Test. Editio Hellenistica* commended, Vol. i. Preface xviii.; illustration of M. xvi. 18; citations of the Old Testament in the New, xxvii. 9.

Grotius, on the genealogy of our Lord, M. i. 1, *note* 9; 12, *note* 3; advises Archbishop Laud to escape, x. 23, *note* 1; on fornication and divorce, xix. 9; on the lawfulness of usury, xxv. 27; on the correct interpretation of Luke ii. 2; on the lawfulness of the profession of arms, L. iii. 14; on the "new commandment" of *love*, given by Christ to his disciples, J. xiii. 35; *φωνήν οὐκ ἤκουσαν*, A. ix. 7; bishops to do nothing without their presbyters, xv. 6; on the force of *ἐπιλαβόμενοι*, xvii. 19; on the fickleness of character of the people of Galatia, G. i. 6; on Rev. i. 10.

Hammond, Dr., on Judas being "*given*" to the Son by the Father, J. xvii. 12; importance of the rite of Confirmation, A. viii. 14—18; on Eve's being deceived, and the penalty incurred by her, 1 Ti. ii. 15.

Hasselquist, description of the sycamore-tree, L. xix. 4.

Hegesippus, his narrative of the death of St. James, Jam. v. 9; "which is the door of Jesus," explained, *ib.*

Hilary, S., Four genealogies of our Lord in the Gospels, M. i. 1; the mystery of the Trinity shown in the baptism of Christ, iii. 16; on our Lord's temptation, iv. 1; on divorce, v. 31; on our Lord asleep in the storm, viii. 24; "take no purse nor scrip," x. 10, *note* 5; on the fall of a sparrow, 29; "Art thou he that should come," &c., xi. 2; "If I, by the finger of God," &c., xii. 27; the miracle of the five loaves, xiv. 20; walking on the sea, 25; Peter rescued from drowning, 31; the case of the woman of Canaan, xv. 28; the Son of God, and the Son of man, xvi. 16; the efficacy of concord and united supplication, xviii. 20; the salvability of rich men, xix. 24; our Lord purges the Temple, xxi. 12; the miraculous withering of the barren fig-tree, 20; the superstitious exactness of the Pharisees, xxiii. 24; on "Blessed—that cometh," 39; the abomination of desolation, xxiv. 15; "pray that your flight be not on the sabbath day," 20; on "whosoever the body is," xxiv. 26; the parable of the Ten Virgins, xxv. 3; the bearing of our Lord's cross by Simon the Cyrenian, xxvii. 32; the resurrection first announced to a woman, xxviii. 6; "In the beginning," J. i. 1; why Christ was baptized by John, 31; Christ both in heaven and on earth, iii. 13; God still works on the Sabbath, v. 17; "but what he *seeth* the Father do," 19; essential unity of the Father and the Son, and personal distinction, 29; the efficacy of the Sacrament of the Lord's Supper, wherein it consists, vi. 27; we must believe Christ to be the Son of God as well as the Messiah, ix. 35; "Have I been so long with you," &c., xiv. 9; "The hour is come, glorify thy Son," xvii. 1; in what sense the Father is said to be "the only true God," 2; "And now, O Father, glorify thou me with thine own self," 5; the Church advanced by persecution, A. vi. 1; exposition of C. i. 15; and of 19; comment on ii. 9; on 11, 12; on 13—15; and on iii. 11; on Christ's descent into Hades, 1 P. iii. 18—22.

Hildebrand [Gregory VII.].

Hippolytus, S. (bishop of Portus, and scholar of S. Irenæus), his testimony to the genuineness of the concluding verses of the Gospel of St. Mark, Mk. xvi. 9; beautiful summary on the

manifestations of Christ's humanity, and of his Divinity in One Person, J. i. 14; corrects Irenæus' statement that our Lord lived fifty years, viii. 57; fragment on the raising of Lazarus, xi. 11; on the Noetian heresy, xiv. 9; refutation of the Sabellian heresy, xx. 17; comparison of the Church to the Alexandrine ship in which Paul sailed to Italy, A. xxvii. 40; on *πρωτότοκος*, C. i. 15; refers to Tit. ii. 13; on iii. 5; refers to 2 P. i. 4; cites 17; refers to 20; and to ii. 4; 3 J. 10; quotes Rev. xviii.; xix. 11—13; and xxii. 15; on the Eternal Word, Jam. i. 18; on Jud. 12; cites 18; and Rev. iv. 5, 6; illustrates vi. 5.

Hooker, on the perfection of Holy Scripture, Vol. i. xx.; on the abuse of Matt. i. 25, by Helvidius, M. i. 25; on the use of benedictions in the Church, x. 13; on different degrees of glory and punishment in a future state, 15; on the parable of the tares, and on the Visible Church, xiii. 30; on the power of the keys, xvi. 19, *note* 1; xviii. 18; the gross and grievous abominations of Popery, xxiv. 15; positive command of a ceremonial kind, even of Divine origin, not immutable, if not in order to a permanent end, xxvi. 20; exposition of the words used by our Lord in the institution of the last Supper, 26; refutation of the heresy of the Monothelites, 39; on the inspiration and perfection of the Scripture, Mk. viii. 29, *note* 1; "God approves much more than he commands, and disapproves much more than he forbids," xi. 11, 12; on the nature of, and necessity of guarding against, the Nestorian and Eutychian heresies, L. i. 35; God the Source and Author of all Truth, v. 39; benediction by presbyters divinely authorized, x. 5; the two Sacraments derive their efficacy from the Incarnation of Christ, Pt. i. 264; J. i. 14 explained, and the various heresies, opposed to the doctrine there set forth, refuted, *ib.*; on the character of Nathanael, i. 49; Christ's presence in heaven before his bodily ascension, iii. 13; the typical character of the brazen serpent, in illustration of the doctrine of Divine grace, flowing from Christ's death by means of the sacraments, 14; on the manuductory office of the Visible Church of God, 42; the futility and irreverence of inquiries into the manner *how* we receive spiritual benefits in the Sacrament of the Holy Eucharist, vi. 25; the Church may lawfully appoint Festivals and Holy-days by human authority, x. 22; on the posture, and time of day, of receiving the Holy Eucharist at its first institution, and subsequently, xiii. 25; Christ in three senses a receiver, xvii. 2; in what sense the Father is said to be "the only God," *ib.*; Adam and Eve, types respectively of Christ and his Church, xix. 34; we must not discuss *how* our Lord comes to us in the Holy Eucharist, but gladly receive him into our hearts, xx. 20; the consecration of heathen literature to the service of Christianity, A. vii. 22; importance of the rite of Confirmation, viii. 14—18; laments the neglect of it, *ib.*; the receiving of the Holy Ghost before Baptism, x. 47; on the Church Constitutions concerning *things strangled* and blood, xv. 20; to ecclesiastical persons the devising of ecclesiastical laws is to be committed, 23; on the Apostolic precept respecting the Holy Kiss, 1 Th. v. 26; on St. Paul's claim to inspiration, 1 C. ii. 13; caution against disparaging the Light of Nature and Human Learning in matters of Religion, *note* at the end of 1 C. x. 15; on the aim and end of Excommunication, v. 5; on "This is my body," x. 16; obligation to do all things to the glory of God, 31; on the ministry of Angels, xi. 10; advantages that accrue to the Church from the rise of heresies, 19; on "Have ye not houses to eat and drink in?" 22; derivation of the word "Church," *ib.*; but three orders of ministers in the Church, xii. 28; on the functions of *prophets, evangelists, teachers, &c.*, *ib.*; different degrees of rewards and punishments in the future state, 2 C. ix. 5; on the dominion of conscience, R. ii. 14; on Justification and Sanctification, iii. 26; justifying Faith, 28; v. 1; short history of the Pelagian controversy, 12; on prescience, predestination, and grace, viii. 29; the safety of the Christian in all circumstances, 39; on ix. 3; reprobation presupposes foreseen sin, 13; God's prescience extends to every thing, but causes nothing, 15; his secret will irresistible, 19; statement of the question between St. Paul and the Jews, xi. 1; on xii. 6; and xiv. 13; the will of God—the counsel of his will, E. i. 5; on the Visible Church, iv. 4; Eve and the Church, v. 30; on Civil Government as it affects things spiritual, 1 Ti. ii. 2; on *ὁρθοτομεῖν*, 2 Ti. i. 15; on iii. 15; intercession by the priest, Jam. v. 13, 14; some ancient Christian observances mutable, *ib.*; on mutual confession of sins, 16; Universal Redemption, R. ix. 23; 2 P. ii. 2.

Horne, Bp., on the vicarious sufferings of Christ, and his language about them in the Psalms, 2 C. v. 21.

Ignatius, S., on our Lord's motive in being baptized, M. iii. 13; on the efficacy and loveliness of Christian concord, and

union in prayer, xviii. 19; on the design of the betrothal of the Blessed Virgin, L. i. 27; and on the perplexity of the devil with reference to the birth of Christ, *ib.*; the Christian tried in the fire of persecution, xii. 49; "who-soever shall lose his life shall preserve it," xvii. 33; his thoughts in prospect of his martyrdom, A. ii. 23; on the designation "Christians," xi. 26; the bishop and presbytery at Ephesus, xx. 17; interesting fact in connexion with Puteoli in his martyrdom, xxviii. 13; his citation of 1 C. i. 20; of iii. 1; of iv. 4; of v. 7; employs the term *Εὐχαριστία* to signify the Holy Communion, xiv. 16; on xv. 8; cites 2 C. iv. 18; explanation of R. viii. 29; sense in which he understood the words *election* and *predestination* as used by St. Paul, E. i. 4, 5; on ii. 20; the efficacy of the blood of Christ as an expiation of human guilt an object of faith and wonder to angelic beings, iii. 10; on iv. 3; cites v. 2; refers to vi. 13; on the force of the word *φθαρῆ*, 24; refers to C. i. 23; his desire for martyrdom, P. i. 21. 23; refers to iv. 15; on E. i. 19; 1 Ti. i. 5; Tit. ii. 13; 2 Ti. iv. 6; the case of his martyrdom a parallel one to that of St. Paul, 2 Ti. iv. 13; on 1 P. i. 11, 12; his martyrdom, v. 8; cites 1 J. ii. 20; refers to iii. 5, 6, 9, 10; refers to 3 J. 6, 7; mode of addressing a Church, Rev. ii. 1; on iii. 8; the language of the Apocalypse familiar to him, *ib.*

Irenæus, S., on the Ebionites' use of St. Matthew's Gospel, Part i. p. li.; on the date of, lii.; on the fulfilment of the Law by our Lord, M. v. 17, *note* 2; on treasure hid in a field, xiii. 44; his argument against the Gnostics respecting the identity of the God of the Old Testament with Him Whom Christ reveals as His Father in the New, xxii. 29—32; his testimony respecting the Gospel of St. Mark, see Introduction to the Gospel of St. Mark, *note*, p. 112; Mk. i. 1; and observation on the commencement of it, *ib.*; shows, against the Gnostic heresies, that the God of the Old and New Testament is one and the same, *ib.*; no real discrepancies in Scripture, x. 46; his testimony to the genuineness of the concluding verses of St. Mark's Gospel, xvi. 9; attests that Luke was the companion of Paul, and wrote the Gospel as Paul had preached it, L. i. 4; the harmony of the Law and the Gospel, 8; our Lord in doing works of mercy on the Sabbath day, did, in the highest sense of the word, *keep the law of the Sabbath*, xiii. 16; on the time and place of the writing of the Apocalypse, Introductory Note to St. John's Gospel; "in the beginning," J. i. 1; believed that our Lord lived fifty years, viii. 57; on the use of the gift of tongues, A. ii. 4; cites a large portion of the Acts, 22; reading in A. iv. 25; the appointment of Stephen to the diaconate, vi. 5; account of Simon Magus, viii. 10; on Peter's commanding Cornelius and his company to be baptized, x. 47; cites a large portion of Acts xv. 1; citation of Acts xvi. 8; and comments upon xvi. 8; thinks that there were bishops, as well as presbyters, at Paul's visit to Miletus, xx. 17—38; brief notice of him, Introduction to the First Epistle of St. John; comment on 1 Ti. v. 23; explanation of the prophecy, 2 Ti. i. 3—12; on the supernatural grace of God, G. v. 17; citation of 1 C. i. 26; on 29; on x. 4; on Charity, xiii. 8; on 12; rendering, in the Latin Version, of xv. 8; meaning of *σὰρξ καὶ αἷμα*, 50; practical lessons deduced from the expression, *ib.*; importance of his work as a comment on this portion of St. Paul's Epistles, *ib.*; on 2 C. ii. 14—16; proves the resurrection of the body from iv. 10; on R. ix.; exposition of R. xii. 6; cites E. ii. 7; exposition of ii. 14; perversion of the text by the Valentinian heretics, iii. 21; exposition of C. i. 22; against the sin of self-destruction, P. i. 22; on the *identity* of the risen body, iii. 21; on the true character of Christian almsgiving, iv. 18; why the Decalogue was not given to the Patriarchs, 1 Ti. i. 9; on ii. 15; refers to vi. 3—5; cites 20; on Regeneration in Baptism, iii. 5; on Heresy, 10; speaks of Linus as appointed to the Bishopric of Rome by St. Peter and St. Paul, 2 Ti. iv. 21; on the eternal Word, Jam. i. 18; refers to 1 P. i. 8; on Christ's descent to Hades, iii. 18—22; the heresy of Simon Magus, 2 P. ii. 2; on 2 P. ii. 4; on the design of St. John's writings, Introduction to the First Epistle of St. John; abstract of that Epistle, *ib.*, *note* 5; cites 1 J. ii. 19; and iv. 2, 3; relates an anecdote of St. John with reference to Cerinthus, 2 J. 10, 11; and another concerning S. Polycarp, *ib.*; on Jud. 11; on *ψυχικὸν* and *πνευματικὸν*, 19; brief notice of his personal history, Introduction to the Apocalypse; refers to Rev. iii. 12, *ib.*, *note* 4; the Church the seven-branched Lamp, Rev. i. 11; on 14; the Nicolaitans, ii. 5; interpretation of iv. 4—6; opening of the second seal, v. 3, 4; the state of souls departed, vi. 9—11; on xi. 3, 4.

Isidore, on Paul's taking the Nazarite's vow, ii. 102.

Jackson, Dean, on the words "he shall be called a Nazarene," M. ii. 23, *note* 9; on not confining the Scripture to one sense,

- 1 P. i. 23; on the inscription on the cross, xxvii. 37; importance of the rite of Confirmation, A. viii. 14—18.
- Jerome, S., the *shorter* readings in ancient MSS. preferable, Vol. i. xii.; on the plenary inspiration of the Holy Scriptures, xx.; on the composition, order, and characteristics of the Four Gospels, xl.; on the Evangelic Cherubim, xli.; compares the Gospels to four rivers of Paradise, l.; evidence about a Gospel of St. Matthew in Hebrew, li.; on the names of women in the genealogy of our Lord in St. Matthew, M. i. 1; answer to an objection of Porphyry, on the prediction in Isa. vii. 11. 14; and see v. 23; exposes the sophistry of Helvidius in his comment on M. i. 25; on the star in the East, ii. 2, *note* 7; on Hos. xi. 1, 2, and its citation in M. ii. 15, *note* 8; on the mode of citation in the New Testament from the Old, 23; on the use of locusts as food, iii. 4; baptism with fire, 11; our Lord's motive in being baptized, 13; the mystery of the Trinity shown in the Baptism of our Lord, 16; on the temptation of our Lord, iv. 4; on "Ye are the salt of the earth," 13, 14; "If thy brother hath aught against thee," 23; on the limits to human affections, v. 29; "If thine eye offend thee," 29; on divorce under the Mosaic dispensation, 31; a woman divorced cannot marry, 32; on swearing, and the sin of the Jews with reference to, 34, *note* 6; on Christian *perfection*, 48; on hypocrisy, vi. 2; on secret prayer, 6; on a "single eye," 22; on the worship of Mammon, 24; on "prophesying" [preaching], vii. 22; our Lord asleep in the storm, viii. 24; on the call of Matthew, ix. 9; "new wine in old bottles," 17; on the catalogue of the Apostles, x. 2; on the mission of the Apostles to the Jews first, 5; on their being forbidden to go to the Samaritans, *ib.*; on the duty of maintaining the preachers of the Gospel, 9; on the wisdom of the serpent, 16; on John the Baptist's mission of disciples to Christ, xi. 2; exposition of the argument respecting the Sabbath, xii. 8; on the sheep fallen into the pit on the Sabbath day, 11; on breaking the bruised reed, 20; on "by whom do your sons cast them out?" 27; on blasphemy against the Holy Ghost, and against the Son of man, 32; on the sin of "idle words," 36; on the period during which our Lord remained in the sepulchre, 39; "Thus shall it be to this wicked generation," 45; on the treatment of the tares, xiii. 26; on the teaching of the Apostles, 52; "Whence hath this man this wisdom?" 54; on the miracle of the five loaves, &c., 20; on St. Peter's walking on the sea, 29; Peter rescued from drowning, 31; "Thou art Peter," &c., xvi. 18; on the power of the keys, 19, *note* 1; on the Transfiguration, xvii. 1—4; on the ministration of angels, xviii. 10; on divorce, xix. 6; on fornication, 9; on the salvability of rich men, 24; on "it is not mine to give," &c., xx. 23; on the significance of our Lord's riding upon the foal of an ass, xxi. 5; on the sinfulness of venality in the Church, 12; on the expulsion of the buyers and sellers from the Temple, *ib.*; on "out of the mouth of babes," 16; on the persecution of the prophets by their countrymen, 34; on the expression "Head of the Corner," 42; on rendering tribute to Cæsar, xxii. 21; God calls Himself "the God of Abraham," inference from this, 32; on "the Scribes and Pharisees sit in Moses' seat," xxiii. 2; on proselytes exceeding in wickedness those by whom they are proselyted, 15; on "this generation," xxiii. 36; on "Blessed is he that cometh," 39; on "the abomination of desolation," xxiv. 15; "pray that your flight be not on the Sabbath," 20; on Christ's second Advent, 26; on "wheresoever the carcass is, there," &c., 28; exposure of the Arian perversion of xxiv. 36; on the parable of the Ten Virgins, xxv. 1. 12; on the irreparable loss which is entailed by unforgiven sin, 8; on the institution of the Lord's Supper, xxvi. 26; on our Lord's agony, 38; on "Rise. let us be going," 45, 46; on the scourging of our Lord, xxvii. 26; on the crucifixion, 35—46; on the evidence afforded us of the Resurrection by the vigilance with which the Jews and Romans sought to provide against the removal of the body of our Lord, 36. 66; on the derivation of the word *Jew*, 37; on the alleged error in xxvii. 9; on our Lord's refusal to descend from the cross, 42; on the two crucified thieves, 44; on our Lord's last words, 46; on the miraculous events that immediately followed his death, 51—53; on the rending of the veil of the Temple, 50, 51; on the resurrection of saints at the death of Christ, 52; on the state of the saints that rose at the crucifixion, 53; on the burial of our Lord, 59; on the *supposed* discrepancy in the Evangelical accounts of the resurrection, xxviii. 1; our Lord ministered to by angels, 2; on the effect of Christian Baptism, 19; on the connexion between St. Mark and St. Peter, Introduction to the Gospel of St. Mark, *note*, p. 112; on the genuineness of the last ten verses of St. Mark's Gospel, xvi. 9; on our Lord's charge to the eleven, 15; on the birthplace of St. Luke, Introduction to the Gospel of St. Luke, p. 157, *note*; on "many have taken in hand," L. i. 1; the parable of the good Samaritan spiritualized, x. 34; exposition of the parable of the Prodigal Son, xv. 11; "the fatted calf" emblematical of Christ, 23; exposition of the parable of the unjust steward, xvi. 9. 11; leading characteristics and design of his Gospel, *ib.*; on J. i. 1; why Christ was baptized by John, 31; our Lord's deportment at the grave of Lazarus, xi. 35; parallelism and contrast between the first Adam and the Second, xix. 34; "Touch me not," xx. 17; "Receive ye the Holy Ghost," 22; the miraculous draught of fishes, xxi. 11; tradition respecting the spot on the Mount of Olives from which the Ascension took place, A. i. 12; on the term *κλήρος* as applied to the Clergy, 26; on the fitness of the Feast of Pentecost for the effusion of the Holy Ghost, ii. 1; on the Epistle attributed to Barnabas, iv. 36; the sin of Ananias and Sapphira, v. 1; reply to the objection of Porphyry respecting their punishment, 5; episcopal laying on of hands, viii. 14—18; example of the blessed fruits of reading the Scriptures, 28; on the silence of Luke respecting Paul's visit to Arabia, ix. 23; thinks that James, the brother of John, suffered martyrdom on the second day of the Passover, xii. 2; Saul changed to Paul, xiii. 9; the Apostles possessed the gift of tongues, and continually exercised it, xiv. 11; Paul's temper contrasted with that of Barnabas, xv. 39; on the sin of suicide, xvi. 27; the tenets of the Stoics, xvii. 18; Paul avails himself of the inscription upon the altar at Athens, 23; and cites his countryman Aratus, 28; Paul's vow at Cenchreæ, xviii. 18; the Artemis of Ephesus unlike the Diana of Greece and Rome, xix. 24; Paul takes the Nazarite's vow, xxi. 24; comment on 2 Ti. i. 3—12; on the accord of the Father and the Son in the work of human redemption, G. i. 4; his correspondence with Augustine respecting St. Paul's rebuke of St. Peter, ii. 10; on the Law and the Gospel, 19; St. Paul's sufferings a temptation to the Galatians, iv. 13; the Pelagian heresy, 1 C. ii. 6; on St. Paul's citation of Isa. lxiv. 3, 4, ver. 9; on vi. 18; on the gift of tongues, xii. 10; on the resurrection of the body, and the necessity of confessing it, xv. 50; on the Freedom of the Will, 2 C. ii. 14—16; on the glorified body, v. 2; argument against the Pelagians, R. i. 7; argument for Free-will, ii. 5; justification by faith, v. 1; exposition of 7; historical summary of the Pelagian controversy, 12; why are Infants baptized? 13, 14; exposition of vii. 12, 13; and of ix. 3; the election of Jacob and the rejection of Esau, 14—29; on E. i. 7; and on iii. 1; St. Paul's special mission to the Gentiles, iii. 1; on the symbolical significance of the Cross, 18; on Anger, iv. 26; on 1 Ti. v. 3; on Tit. i. 5; on ii. 13; on *λαὸν περιούσιον*, 14; on Heresy, iii. 10; on 2 P. ii. 4, and 18; design of St. John's writings, Introduction to the First Epistle of St. John; interpretation of Rev. iv. 4—6.
- Jerusalem, Daniel's prophecy of the siege and destruction of, M. xxiv. 15; Josephus' description of the horrors of the siege, 19; derivation and import of the name, L. ii. 25; xix. 42; written by St. Luke in a different form from that of the other Evangelists, why, *ib.*; Christ weeps for its approaching overthrow, xix. 41; his coming thither foreshadowed in its name, 42; singular circumstances attending its capture by Titus, 43, 44; two signs given by our Lord of its destruction, xxi. 20; why the Apostles were commanded to remain there till the effusion of the Holy Ghost, A. i. 4; number of synagogues there at the time of our Lord's ministry, vi. 9.
- Jones, of Nayland, the parable of the good Samaritan spiritualized, L. x. 34; his Edition of Cooke's Exhortation to Ejaculatory Prayer, J. iv. 38.
- Josephus, observations on his silence respecting the murder of the Innocents, M. ii. 16, *note* 1; his account of Herod Antipas, xiv. 1; his exposition of Daniel's prophecy of the siege and destruction of Jerusalem, xxiv. 15; his description of the horrors of the siege, 19. 21; cruelty of Pilate, L. xiii. 1; account of Theudas, A. v. 36; of Judas Gaulonites, 37; of the Cyrenians, vi. 9; and of Bernice, xx. 13; clue to the inconsistencies in his character and writings, xxvi. 28; Sermon on his life and character, *ib.*; his account of his perilous voyage to Rome, xxvii. 27; and of the detention of Agrippa I. there, xxviii. 16.
- Justin Martyr, S., on the *place* of our Lord's Nativity, M. ii. 1; testimony to the fact of Cyrenius having been Governor of Syria at the time of the Nativity, as well as ten years after it, L. ii. 2; applies the term *Λόγος* to Christ, J. i. 1; cites 14 and 15; on the Brazen Serpent, iii. 14; on "the living water," iv. 10; his account of the statue erected "Simoni Deo Sancto" at Rome, A. viii. 9; on the mode of observing Sunday, xx. 7; description of the primitive use of the Christian Church in the administration of the Holy Communion, 1 C. x. 16; excellent comment on xiv. 16; on the mode of administering the Holy Communion, *ib.*; on the Offertory, xvi. 2; the sufferings and consolations of believers, 2 C. vi. 2; meaning of *οἱ προεγνωσμένοι*, R. viii. 39; describes the Christian life, P. iii. 20; refers the 22nd Psalm to the Messiah, Heb. ii. 12; Christ called an *Apostle*, iii. 1; cites 1 Ti. ii. 3, 4; on Christ's descent to

Hades, 1 P. iii. 18—22; the Flood a type of Baptism, 21; the baptismal interrogatories, *ib.*; probable reference to 2 P. iii. 8, and to 1 J. iii. 9.

Lactantius, condemns the employment of violence in the propagation of religion, L. ix. 55.

Lapide, Corn. a., on the Beatitudes, M. v. 3; his comment on A. iii. 18; on the guilt of Ananias, v. 4; the Christian is called to suffer, ix. 1; curious parallelism traced by him between the worship of the Artemis of Ephesus and that of "our Lady of Loretto," xix. 24; the maxim "bellum hæreticorum pax est Ecclesiæ," built by him upon A. xxiii. 6; Paul's discourses before Felix and Festus, xxiv. 25.

Leo I., S., on 1 C. vii. 31; on "not knowing Christ after the flesh," 2 C. v. 16; on Original Sin, R. v. 14; on the true interpretation of Gen. iii. 15, xvi. 20; on the gifts of the Magi, M. ii. 11, note 1; on the flight into Egypt, 15, note 5; on the murder of the Innocents, 16; on our Lord's temptation, iv. 1. 4; the parity of St. Peter and St. Paul, xvi. 18, note 10; on the power of the keys, 19, note 1; the Transfiguration, xvii. 2; the death of Judas, xxvii. 5; the Crucifixion, 35; condemns the doctrine of the *Immaculate Conception*, L. i. 27; the operation of the Holy Ghost in the Nativity and in Baptism, 35; on Paradise, L. xxiii. 42, 43; on Half-Communion, xxiv. 30; "Touch me not," J. xx. 17; the miracle of tongues at Pentecost, A. ii. 4; on iv. 28.

Lightfoot, Dr., on the genealogies of our Lord in the Gospels, M. i. 1; on Galilee and Capernaum, iv. 12, 13; on "he loved him," Mk. x. 21; on the Corban, xii. 41; holds that Siloam and Bethesda derived their waters from the same spring, J. ix. 4; on the period of "forty days" that elapsed between the Resurrection and Ascension of our Lord, A. i. 3; on the Rabbinical acceptance of the term Bethphage, 12; difficulty pointed out by him in the LXX renderings of 2 Sam. xv. 32 and xvi. 1, *ib.*; probable solution of it, *ib.*; the "three thousand," ii. 41, not converted by Peter alone; no inaccuracy in Luke's account of Theudas, v. 36; on the view which the Jewish converts took of the Eucharist, 1 C. xi. 20, 21; note on vi. 1; the condition and character of Cornelius, x. 2; on the situation of the prison from which Peter was delivered, xii. 10; the Jewish notion of the ministration of tutelary angels, 15; the Nazarite's vow, xxi. 24; made terminable at Pentecost, *ib.*

Lorinus, on the period of "forty days" that elapsed between the Resurrection and Ascension of our Lord, A. i. 3; the Church first tried by suffering, then by schism, vi. 1.

Lucas Brugensis, on the genealogy of our Lord, M. i. 1, note 9; on Divine Prophecy, i. 22; on the cleansing of the Temple, xxi. 14.

Lucretius, verses of, which display St. Paul's position at Athens, while contending against the heathen theology, and especially against the tenets of Epicurus, xvii. 22.

Macarius, Homily on the Old and New Sabbath, M. xxviii. 1; on Paradise, L. xxiii. 42, 43; twofold resurrection, J. v. 25; on the typical sense of what befell the Israelites, in their deliverance from Egypt, and their wanderings in the wilderness, 1 C. x. 6.

Magee, Archbishop, on J. i. 29.

Maldonatus, on the term of "forty days," M. iv. 2; on the Apostolic Thrones, xix. 28; exposition of *προσεποιείτο*, L. xxiv. 28, note 1.

Marcion, epitomizes the Gospel of St. Luke, and mutilates it, L. ii. 23; iv. 31.

Mede, Joseph, his paraphrase of the Greek of the petition, "Give us this day our daily bread," M. vi., note 4; on "the abomination of desolation," xxiv. 15; on the temple being called "the house of prayer for all nations," Mk. xi. 17; on the "large upper-room," xiv. 15; on Churches in the first century, L. xxiv. 33; on the legal and prophetic foreshadowings of Christ's suffering, and resurrection on the third day, 46; probable that our Lord's Birth took place in Autumn, at the Feast of Tabernacles, J. i. 14; on the heathen origin and idolatrous worship of the Samaritans, iv. 22; the Incarnation of Christ the Evangelical *Scenopegia*, or Feast of Tabernacles, vii. 52; on the sin of Ananias and Sapphira, A. v. 2; on the ancient *Proseuchæ*, xvi. 13; *οἱ φοβούμενοι τὸν Θεόν*, xiii. 16; *ἄσπιλον τεταγμένον εἰς ζωὴν αἰώνιον*, 48; Essay on Churches, xviii. 24; on the Weekly Offertory, 1 C. xvi. 2; exposition of 2 C. xi. 14, and of 1 Ti. v. 17; on the meaning of *ἐν τῷ λαῷ*, 2 P. ii. 1; on the doom of the Apostate Angels, 4.

Melito, Chronology of our Lord's Life and Ministry, L. iii. 23.

Meyer, on the Genealogies of our Lord in the Gospels, M. i. 1; ii. 6, note 9; on the visit of the Magi, 11, note 2; alleges that

St. Matthew did not know that Joseph and Mary resided at Nazareth before the Nativity, 22; reference to Abiathar considered, Mk. ii. 26, note 1; erroneously supposes that St. John the Baptist faltered in the faith, xi. 2; on the force of *ἐπιβαλὼν*, xiv. 71; his objection to the Evangelical account of the Ascension, xvi. 19; and to St. Luke's account of the *ἀπογραφὴ* by Quirinus, L. ii. 2, note 1; the correct rendering of *ἐν τοῖς τοῦ Πατρὸς μου*, 19; the force of *ἔχω* in certain cases, xiv. 18; the force of *διεγόγγυζον*, xv. 2; remarks on the parable of the unjust steward, xvi. 1; his observations on the Evangelical accounts of our Lord's journey from Galilee to Jerusalem, xvii. 11; supposes that our Lord sent the cleansed Samaritan leper not to Jewish but to Samaritan Priests, 14; on the force of *καίτοι*, xxi. 24; specimen of his objections to the Evangelical narrative, xxii. 54, note 1; holds that our Lord's sojourn on earth for forty days, after his resurrection, was a later tradition, xxiv. 50; refutation of this, *ib.*; the design of the miracle in Cana of Galilee, J. ii. 6; on regeneration in Baptism, iii. 5; objection to this narrative, vi. 21; *διδάσκειν γράμματα*, vii. 15; *τὴν ἀρχήν*, viii. 25; on the derivation and import of "Siloam," ix. 7; *ὅτι*, "in regard to that," 17; "the good shepherd layeth down his life for the sheep," x. 11; summary of the various opinions of German Biblical Critics on the narrative of the raising of Lazarus, xi. 11, note 1; his interpretation of xii. 7; his comment on A. iv. 6; and on v. 16; charges St. Luke with historical inaccuracy, 36; account of the Cyrenian Jews, vi. 9; his objection to ix. 7; supposes that Luke did not know that Paul spent three years in Arabia, 23; objects to *τοῦ* before an infinitive, x. 25; analysis of the construction, *ib.*; affirms that the miraculous gifts at Casarea were different from those of Pentecost, 44—46; objects that Luke does not dilate on the martyrdom of James, xii. 2; the fact accounted for, *ib.*; xiii. 50; explains the comparison of Paul to Mercury as opposed to the apocryphal portraiture of the Apostle in the Acts of Paul and Thecla, xiv. 12; note on that verse; on the force of *ἐπιλαβόμενοι*, xvii. 19; understands the Nazarite vow, not of Paul, but of Aquila, xviii. 18; the disputed rendering of xxi. 16; objects to the reading *μαρτυρόμενος*, xxvi. 22; *στρατοπεδάρχης*, xxviii. 16; interpretation of R. iv. 2; rendering of 17; error respecting the history of the Trinitarian controversy, ix. 5; interpretation of C. i. 15; on E. ii. 20; answer to his objection respecting the fulfilment of the prophetic significance of the death of the paschal lamb, 1 C. v. 7.

Michaelis, on our Lord's divine prudence in retiring, during the evenings of the Holy Week, from the temple to Bethany, M. xxi. 17.

Middleton, Bp., on M. i. 18; v. 32; 1 C. xii. 4; E. ii. 20; v. 5; 1 Ti. i. 9; on our Lord's descent into Hades, 1 P. iii. 18—22; proof of the Godhead of our Lord, 2 P. i. 1.

Mill, Dr. W. H., on the genealogies of our Lord, M. i. 1; refutation of Strauss' exceptions on the subject of *Angelo-phany*, L. i. 19; ii. 13; on J. i. 33.

Miller, Rev. John, "Things after Death," L. xvi. 22.

Milton's accurate description of Moloch and his rites, M. v. 22, note 3; on the gift of tongues, A. ii. 4; on the artifice of Satan, in giving currency to falsehood, xvi. 17; his exposition of St. Paul's doctrine of Justification, R. viii. 2; description of Enoch, Jud. 14.

Mintert's Lexicon, commended, Vol. i. p. xviii.

More, Henry, on the extreme accuracy with which the Apocalypse is penned, Rev. ii. 1.

Nicephorus, his account of the apostolic labours of St. John before and after the death of the Blessed Virgin, Introductory Note to St. John's Gospel, note 3; account of the temple erected by Helena, the mother of Constantine, on Mount Sion, A. i. 13.

Oecumenius, the great sheet let down from heaven, with four corners, a prophetic emblem of the Four Gospels, A. x. 11, 12; St. Paul at Athens, xvii. 23; explanation of *ἐν ὀλίγῳ μὲν πείθει*, κ.τ.λ., xxvi. 28; and of *ἐν ὀλίγῳ καὶ ἐν πολλῷ*, 29.

Origen, observation on the fulness and pregnancy of Holy Scripture, Pt. i. p. xxiv.; on the composition and order of the Four Gospels, xl.; on the temptation of our Lord, M. iv. 4; on "There be some standing here," xvi. 28; on the duties of deacons, xxi. 12; on the expression "Head of the corner," 42; on different degrees of punishment in a future state, xxiii. 15; on the permanence of the Church of Christ, xxiv. 34; a reputed saying of our Lord cited, xxv. 27; on the extent of the supernatural darkness at the Crucifixion, xxvii. 45; on the state of the saints that rose then, 53; testimony respecting the Gospel of St. Mark, Introductory Note to St. Mark's Gospel, p. 112; on "he loved him," Mk. x. 21; observations on the design of the Gospel of St. Luke, Introductory Note to St.

Luke's Gospel; on "many have taken in hand," L. i. 1; on the dumbness of Zacharias, a symbol of the Jewish nation, mute through unbelief, 22; holds that Mary's betrothal was designed to conceal her virginity from the devil, and so keep him in ignorance of the advent of Christ, 27; refutation of the Marcionite heresy, ii. 23; our Lord catechized in the Temple, 46; his obedience to his parents, 51; the duty of submission generally, *ib.*; thinks that there were three different women who anointed our Lord's feet, L. vii. 36—59; the parable of the good Samaritan spiritualized, x. 31; on Christ, the Word, "the true Light," J. i. 9; "the Word was made flesh," 14; John the Baptist's inferiority to Christ, 27; on the miraculous expulsion of the money-changers and sellers of oxen and sheep from the Temple, ii. 15; the nature of grace, 16; the Sanctuary a type of Christ's body, 19; God worshipped in spirit and in truth, iv. 21; the Samaritans expected a Messiah, 25; our Lord speaking the words of life in the Temple, J. viii. 20; death in unrepented sin, 21; "this did not Abraham," 40; "shall never see death," 51; Caiaphas prophesies "that year," xi. 49; perversion of Scripture by evil men, 51; Christ washes the feet of Judas, xiii. 3. 18; reference to Isa. lii. 7, 5; "thou hast no part with me," 8; our Lord's humility singular and exemplary, 14; difference between Satan's "putting an evil thought into the heart," and "entering in" himself, 27; "Now is the Son of man glorified," 31; the Holy Spirit proceeds from the Father and the Son, xv. 26; the office of deacons, A. vi. 3—6; the consecration of heathen literature to the service of Christianity, vii. 22; the baptism of infants received by the primitive Church from the Apostles, xvi. 15; Paul takes the Nazarite's vow, xxi. 24; some of his works written entirely with his own hand, *δλόγραφοι*, G. vi. 11; on the unity of the Church, 1 C. i. 2; instance of St. Paul's prudence, 11; on 26; "comparing spiritual things with spiritual" explained, ii. 13; emendation of the passage, from his writings, iii. 4; Christ is the only Foundation, 12—15; on secret sins, iv. 4; on *τινες*, 18; "Charity envieth not," 1 C. xiii. 4; rendering of *οὐ περπερεύεται*, *ib.*; on xiv. 34; on St. Paul's possession of the gift of tongues, R. i. 14; *Ἰουδαίου πρῶτον*, ii. 9; the dominion of Conscience, 14. 16; on vi. 6; "the wages of sin," 23; on vii. 4; on the self-abasement of St. Paul, 7; effect of the Law upon Sin, 9. 12; on viii. 35; on Free-will and Universal Redemption, ix. 18; xii. 6; on xi. 21—23; ascribes to the Valentinian heretics those doctrines which have been propagated in modern times by the adherents of Calvin, *ib.*; exposition of x. 6—9, and of xi. 28; "give place unto wrath," xii. 19; on E. i. 22; on iii. 1; symbolical significance of the Cross, iii. 18; on the mention of *names* in Scripture, 1 Ti. i. 18; cites 2 P. i. 4, ii. 16. 19, and iii. 15, 16; on propitiation and atonement, 1 J. iv. 10; cites Jud. 6.

Paley, Dr., ground of the argument handled by him in his "Horæ Paulinæ," A. xvi. 6.

Papias, on the four Maries, M. xii. 46; on the relation between St. Peter and St. Mark, Introduction to the Gospel of St. Mark, *note*, p. 112; and see J. vii., Review, p. 309.

Patritius, on the genealogies of our Lord in the Gospels, M. i. 1; on the formula, "that it might be fulfilled," 22; on the perpetual virginity of our Lord's mother, 25; on the day of our Lord's birth, ii. 1; on the day on which our Lord ate the last Passover, xxvi. 17; on the correct interpretation of L. ii. 2; on the *τετραρχίαι*, iii. 1.

Pearson, Bp., on the opening of the heavens at our Lord's baptism, M. iii. 16; on the parallelism between Joshua and Jesus, x. 2; on the Visible Church, xiii. 30; on the word "Church," xvi. 18; on punishment by crucifixion, xxvii. 35; on our Lord's assumption of his mediatorial kingdom, xxviii. 18; on the eternity of future punishment, M. xxv. 46; Mk. ix. 44; on the operation of the Holy Ghost in the conception of our Lord, L. i. 35; on the Blessed Virgin's low and exalted condition, 48; on the right interpretation of L. ii. 2; on *προέκοπτε σοφία καὶ ἡλικία*, ii. 52; the character of Pontius Pilate, xiii. 1; our Lord's tomb, and the womb of the Virgin, parallel between them, xxiii. 53; on the term *Λόγος* applied to Christ, J. i. 1; his presence in heaven before his bodily Ascension, iii. 13; exposition of vi. 22; the doctrine of transubstantiation not known in the earlier ages of the Church, J. vi. 52; the procession of the Holy Spirit from the Father and the Son, xv. 26; the piercing of our Lord's side, in fulfilment of Zech. xii. 10, xix. 37; on xxi. 25; the foundations of local reverence for national deities among the heathen broken down by the Macedonian and Roman monarchies, Vol. ii. xvii.; comment on Gal. ii. 1, xxxv., *note* 2; on the tradition respecting the abode of the Apostles for twelve years after the Ascension of our Lord, A. i. 4. 9; on the tradition respecting "the

upper-room," *τὸ ὑπερφῶν*, to which the Apostles returned after witnessing the Ascension, 13; on the providential prearrangement for the spread of Christianity by means of the *διασπορά*, ii. 9—11; on ii. 27; image of the primitive Church, 42; on *Ἰωάννην καὶ Ἀλέξανδρον*, iv. 6; on the resemblance in sound between *Ἰησοῦς* and *Ἰασις*, iv. 30; and between *πάσχα* and *πάσχω*, *ib.*; on the Epistle of Barnabas, 36; on the guilt of Ananias, v. 5; the Holy Eucharist administered daily in the Apostolic Church, and at the ordinary meal, vi. 2; the institution of the diaconate, 3—6; on the providential dispensation traceable in the existence of the class of Proselytes of the Gate, as a preparatory provision for the extension of the Gospel, 5; Joseph a type of Christ, vii. 9; the carefulness of the primitive Christians of the rites of burial, viii. 1—4; effect which Christianity had upon the national usages of sepulture, *ib.*; importance of the rite of Confirmation, 14—18; Paul's abode in Arabia, ix. 23; the designation "Christians," xi. 26; the Holy Ghost's special office in sending the Apostles, xiii. 1; change of names in Scripture, 9; points in which Paul's teaching at Athens came in contact with the tenets of the Epicureans and Stoics, A. xvii. 18; Titus never mentioned in the Acts of the Apostles, xviii. 7; providential prearrangement for the diffusion of the Gospel by the spread of the Roman arms, xix. 31; the Messiah was to suffer, xxvi. 23; on *ὁ στρατοπεδάρχης*, xxviii. 16; on 1 C. i. 30; derivation of the term "Church," xi. 20, 21; the eternity of Christ's kingdom, xv. 25; meaning of *καταργεῖται ὁ θάνατος*, 26; on the true reading of ver. 51; identity of the raised body, 2 C. v. 10; on our being "reconciled to God," 18; the efficacy of Christ's death proved by his Resurrection, R. iv. 25; exposition of viii. 11; and of 26; the Divinity of Christ asserted, ix. 5; this ninth chapter never interpreted in support of the Doctrine of Predestination and Reprobation by the Fathers of nearly four centuries, 18; a public profession of faith necessary, x. 6—9; on E. i. 7; on ii. 6; on the symbolical significance of the Cross, iii. 18; exposition of C. i. 15; Christ's triumphs on the Cross, ii. 15; on H. i. 2; on the typical sense of the Levitical ordinances, ix. 7; Christ's conception by the Holy Ghost, the belief of it why necessary, 14; exposition of 22; on the emendation or correct interpretation of the Hebrew Text by the aid of the Septuagint, x. 5; blessed state of the souls of the just in the interval between death and the resurrection, xii. 23; on 1 Ti. ii. 6; on presbyters and deacons, Introductory Note to 1 Ti. chap. iii.; on v. 22; on the term "Word," as used by the Jews, Jam. i. 18; "save a soul from death," v. 20; error respecting the state of Babylon in the time of the Apostles, 1 P. v. 13; on Christ's descent into Hades, iii. 18—22; design of the first Epistle of St. John, Introduction to the Epistle; two principal heresies in the Apostolic age, *ib.*, *note* 2; remission of sins in Baptism, 1 J. ii. 12; Antichrist, 20.

Peschito, or Syriac Version, Pt. i. p. 1.

Peter, S., of Alexandria, on the word *παρασκευή*, M. xxvii. 62.

Polycarp, S., explained 2 Th. i. 4; see above, Index of Matters; often refers to St. Peter's First Epistle, 1 P. i. 8. 13.

Primasius, on St. Paul's motive in visiting St. Peter at Jerusalem, G. i. 18; on St. Paul's dispute with St. Peter at Antioch, ii. 17; on the nature and use of the Law, ii. 19; on G. iii. 1; on 1 C. vii. 16, 17; "give place unto wrath," R. xii. 19; exposition of P. i. 17; and of ii. 6; why St. Paul suppressed his name in his Epistle to the Hebrews, H. i. 1; on 2; on *πνεῦμα* and *ψυχή*, iv. 12; on Tit. ii. 13; Rev. ii. 1; xi. 3, 4.

Prudentius, on Alpha and Omega, Rev. i. 8; on the Cross as a trophy, v. 5.

Remigius, on the law of the Sabbath, M. xii. 8; on the institution and design of the Sacrament of the Lord's Supper, xxvi. 17.

Rosenmüller, the fate and fortunes of the series of twenty-six high priests, reckoned backward from the destruction of Jerusalem, L. iii. 2; the dress and badges of freemen, as distinguished from slaves, xv. 22; *τὴν δόξαν*, J. i. 14; *χάριτος καὶ ἀληθείας*, *ib.*; on the Baptism of John, 25; *ἀρχιτρίκλινος*, ii. 8; *οὐκ ἐκ μέτρου*, iii. 34; on the intercourse of the Jews with the Samaritans, iv. 9; *θεωρῶ*, vi. 40; *εἰς καθ' εἰς*, viii. 9; *τὴν ἀρχήν*, 25; on "Siloam," ix. 7; *ὁ υἱὸς τῆς ἀπωλείας*, xvii. 12; the aloes which were anciently employed in embalming, xix. 39; *ἐπικαλεῖσθαι τὸ ὄνομα Κυρίου*, A. ii. 21; limitation of the community of goods in the primitive Church, 42; *ὄνομα Ἰησοῦ*, est Jesus Ipse, iii. 16; *ψεύσασθαι σε τὸ Πνεῦμα*, v. 3; on the due form of Ordination, vi. 6; on the mode of citation from the Old Testament in the New, xiii. 22; the opulence of St. Paul's family, xvi. 37; shows that the worship of Artemis continued at Ephesus for some centuries after his visit to that city, xix. 35.

Sanderson, Bishop, on swearing, M. v. 34, *note* 7; on singleness of purpose, vi. 22, *note* 1; on Herod's oath, xiv. 9; on tradition, xv.

9, note 1; on binding and loosing, xvi. 19; on the lawfulness of usury, xxv. 27; positive commands even of divine origin, not immutable, if not in order to a *permanent* end, xxvi. 20; on the difference between true and false repentance, xxvii. 3; on the Sabbath, xxviii. 1; on the lawfulness of the profession of arms, L. iii. 14; the abuse of "Piorum Exempla," ix. 54; the nature of true repentance exemplified, xv. 21; Conscience hoodwinked by Popery, xix. 20; how Judas was *given* to the Son by the Father, J. xvii. 12; on Acts ii. 23; on sins of presumption and sins of ignorance, A. iii. 17; on the limits of obedience to human authority, iv. 19, 20; on God's employing evil instruments for the accomplishment of his beneficent purposes, iv. 28; on the application of Acts iv. 32, to the doctrine of Christian Unity; on the inhibition of fornication to the Gentiles at the Council of Jerusalem, xv. 20; on the Apostolic restraint from the eating of blood and things strangled, *ib.*; an enlightened conscience alone can be a safe guide, xxiii. 1; no sufficient security in consciousness of good intention, *ib.*; on Paul's words, "I knew not that he was the high priest," 5; on the guilt of assuming a dominion over Conscience, Jam. iv. 12; on Covetousness, 1 Ti. ii. 5; the guilt of the unbelieving Jews, 1 Ti. ii. 16; on the practical duties arising from a consideration of St. Paul's case, as having a special call, G. i. 16; on the insufficiency of Human Examples to serve as Rules of Conscience and Conduct, ii. 13; on the true nature and use of the Law, 19; on Christian Liberty, v. 1; on the supernatural grace of God, 17; on the office and dignity of the Human Conscience, 1 C. ii. 11; on party spirit at Corinth, iii. 4; on the holy and comfortable use of the creatures, 22, 23; on the nature and aim of Excommunication, v. 5. 11; on "all things are lawful for me," vi. 12; on the due regulation of our conduct in the exercise of our Christian Liberty in the use of God's creatures, *ib.*; practical results from the consideration of Christ's right over us, 20; on vii. 24; cases in which we are bound to abridge ourselves of our Christian Liberty in things indifferent, x. 32; on the example of St. Paul as a precedent, grounded on its strict conformity to that of Christ, xi. 1; spiritual gifts a *manifestation* of the Spirit, xii. 7; endeavours must be conjoined with prayer, *ib.*; difference between the graces of sanctification, and those of edification, *ib.*; God teaches us, but dimly, by the eye, in his creatures; and by the ear in his holy Word preached, xiii. 12; the Liberty of the Gospel, 2 C. iii. 16; on St. Paul's self-praise in self-vindication, xi. 17; his confinement in Damascus, and his escape thence, 32, 33; connexion of this incident with what goes before and follows, *ib.*; his rapture into the third heaven, xii. 2; "the day of wrath," R. ii. 5; on the dominion of Conscience, 14, 15; exposition of R. iii. 8; Faith defined, 28; on "I fought with beasts at Ephesus," xv. 32; Christians never released from obedience to the Moral Law, vi. 15; vii. 6; on ix. 3, and 19; public profession of the truth as necessary as true belief, x. 9; on xi. 36; and xii. 5; rule to be observed where one place of Scripture yields two senses, 19; the *substance* of all political power is God's ordinance, but the specification of the circumstances thereto belonging is a human ordinance, xiii. 1; the *jus gladii* defined, 4; Rites and Ceremonies of the Church binding, xiv. 1. 13; the value of our good name, P. iv. 8; on Final Perseverance, H. x. 26; on the persecutions of the Jewish Christians, 32—34; on xii. 1; on the twofold birth, 9; on 1 Ti. i. 14; iv. 3; Corn. a Lapide on Divorce, 1 C. vii. 15; on 18; on the true rendering of Gen. iii. 15; and its bearing on the recent Papal Decree on the Immaculate Conception, R. xvi. 20; on C. ii. 18; on "the Lord knoweth who are his," 2 Ti. i. 19; on Jam. i. 6, and 16, and 25; on the examples of the ancient prophets, v. 12, 13; on 1 P. i. 4; divine caution against the abuse of Christian Liberty, ii. 16; Sermon on 17; characteristics of a good conscience, iii. 16; on *dominari in cleris*, v. 3; the Law of Love delivered in the Gospel is also in the Law of Moses, and of Nature, 1 J. ii. 7.

Seneca, on the word *σπεκουλάτωρ*, Mk. vi. 27.

Severian, on the fitness of the Feast of Pentecost for the effusion of the Holy Ghost, A. ii. 1; *γλεύκος*, 13.

Smith, James, on the Voyage and Shipwreck of St. Paul, A. xxvii. 4.

South, Dr., exposition of 2 C. xi. 14.

Spalatensis, on the genealogy of our Lord, M. i. 1, note 9.

Spanheim, on the consistency of the fulfilment of prophecy with free-will, M. i. 22; on the High Priest's office, ii. 4; on the parable of the Sower, iv. 4; on omissions in some Gospels supplied in others, L. v. 1—11.

Sparrow, Bishop, on the Power of the Keys, M. xviii. 18.

Tacitus, his account of the destruction of the Temple, M. xxi. 13; of Pilate, xxvii. 2; of the Libertini, A. vi. 9; and of Bernice, xxv. 13.

Taylor, Bp. Jeremy, on the power of the keys, M. xviii. 18; on the Blessed Virgin's low and exalted condition, L. i. 48; on the duty of nursing children, 1 Ti. iii. 7; on "the coming in" of the Law, R. v. 20; on vii. 7; on the marriage tie, E. v. 32; on the Eternity of Future punishments, Jud. 7.

Tertullian, on the word *ἰχθῆς*, M. iv. 19; on "our daily bread," vi. 11; on temptation, 13; on the healing of the leper, viii. 3; on the miracle of the destruction of the Gergesene swine, 28; on "the kingdom of heaven suffereth violence," xii. 1; on the power of the keys, xvi. 19, note 1; on the salutary exercise of faith, xxvii. 9; on the supernatural darkness at the crucifixion, 45; testimony respecting the Gospel of St. Mark, Introductory Note, p. 112; Mk. xvi. 9; religion not to be propagated by violence, L. ix. 55; on *τί θέλω, εἰ ἤδη ἀνέφηθη*; xii. 49; on the lost piece of silver, xv. 9; on perseverance and importunity in prayer, xviii. 1; on Paradise, xxiii. 42, 43; interpretation of J. iii. 4; strange calumny propagated in his time with regard to the Resurrection, xx. 15; the Apostles "declare the *whole* counsel of God," xvi. 12; on the indulgence shown by the Roman civil power to the Apostolic Church, A. iv. 6; the Church derives strength from persecution, viii. 1—4; Jacob's prophecy respecting Benjamin applied to Paul, ix. 1; on the parts taken respectively by Paul and Barnabas, xv. 39; his eloquent vindication of the Christians against the charge of disaffection to the ruling powers, xvii. 7; summary of the ethical systems of the Epicureans and Stoics, 18; on 1 Th. ii. 3; on the Second Advent, iii. 13; greater value of his writings, as critical helps in regard to the Text of the New Testament, than those of any contemporaneous Greek Father, *ib.*; on mourning for the dead, iv. 13; 2 Th. i. 3—12, this prophecy expounded; on 1 C. i. 25; and ii. 8; exposition of *ψυχικὸς* and *πνευματικὸς*, 14; cites v. 13; proof of the reality of Christ's human body, against the Marcionites, vi. 20; interpretation of vii. 29; observations on the Holy Estate of Matrimony, 36; on ver. 40; on ix. 24; on the woman "dishonouring her head," xi. 10; on Charity, xiii. 1; rendering of ver. 4; and of *καταργηθήσονται*, 8; on the use of *Amen* in the early Church, 16; the same God wrote the Law on the Tables of stone, and writes His Law by the Spirit on the Heart, 2 C. iii. 6; his vindication of 2 C. iii. 6—15, against the Marcionites; explanation of ver. 18; proves the resurrection of the body from iv. 10. 14; on the glorified body, v. 3; on the word "Paradise," xii. 2—4; on Free-will, R. ix. 18; on "the analogy of the Faith," xii. 6; on E. ii. 3; on the views and feelings of a Christian martyr, iii. 1; exposition of C. i. 19; version of 24; P. ii. 6 explained; on 1 Ti. vi. 20; on Church Government by Bishops, Tit. i. 7; on Baptismal regeneration, iii. 5; on Heresy, 10; refers to 2 Ti. iv. 6; on 2 P. iii. 5; on the design of St. John's writings, Introduction to the First Epistle of St. John; cites 1 J. ii. 19; and iii. 16; character of the Epistle of St. Jude, Jud. 1.

Theodore of Mopsuestia, quoted, Part i. p. xlv.

Theodoret, on "Thou art Peter," &c., M. xvi. 18; on 1 Th. ii. 17; and iii. 3; on the effect of the death of Christ upon that of believers, iv. 14; on the Law and the Gospel, against the Judaizers, G. ii. 18; on 1 C. i. 26; and on ii. 13; against the Roman theory that Peter and his pretended successors are the Rock of the Church, iii. 11; on "all things are lawful for me," vi. 12; on viii. 3; on "that Rock was Christ," x. 4; on the abuse of the Agapæ, xi. 21; present things, in the Sacraments, a shadow of the future, xiii. 12; on the abuse of the gift of tongues, xiv. 1; "but *bare* grain," xv. 36; *ἐπέγνωτε ἡμᾶς ἀπὸ μέρους*, 2 C. i. 13; exposition of i. 17, and 19; on the singing of hymns, ii. 14; on the shining of Moses' face, iii. 18; on the glorified body, v. 3; on almsgiving, ix. 5. 11; interpretation of R. iv. 2; affirms that St. Paul visited Spain, xv. 24; note on C. ii. 1; held that St. Paul visited Colossæ, C. ii. 1; account of Philemon, Introduction to the Epistle to him; on the functions of *πρεσβύτεροι* and *ἐπίσκοποι*, P. i. 3; on H. viii. 4; on the passing away of Levitical shadows, xiii. 10—16; on 1 Ti. i. 16; Christ died for all, ii. 5; "Adam was not deceived," 14; on iii. 16; on the duties of a bishop, Tit. i. 7; on ii. 13; on E. i. 15.

Theophrastus, on the force of *δεισιδαιμων*, A. xvii. 22.

Theophylact, on our Lord's trial of his disciples' faith, M. xiv. 25; on the kings of the earth, &c., xvii. 25; on "where-soever the carcass is, there," &c., xxiv. 28; future punishment eternal, xxv. 46; on our Lord's ready submission to caption when his time was come, xxvi. 5; on the design of the Sacrament of the Lord's Supper, 17; on the Baptism of John, Mk. i. 4; on the disciples' want of faith in the storm, Mk. iv. 40; on "he would there do no mighty work," vi. 5; on anointing with oil, 13; "he shall not lose his reward," ix. 41; on "in my name," *ib.*; on our Lord's riding into Jerusalem upon the foal of an ass, xi. 8; *στοιβάδας*, *ib.*; on our Lord's citing even to his last breath the Hebrew

Scriptures, xv. 34; refutation of the Nestorian heresy with reference to the conception and birth of our Lord, L. i. 35; on the thanksgiving of the Virgin Mary, 48; Elijah and Elisha types of Christ, iv. 26, 27; our Lord evangelizes men by means of their worldly occupations, v. 2; "we have toiled all the night," 5; on our Lord's touching the bier of the widow's son at Nain, vii. 14; thinks that there were three different women who anointed our Lord's feet, 36—50; "he that is not against us is for us," ix. 50; the danger of leave-taking, in a spiritual course, 61; the correspondence between the twelve wells at Elim, and the twelve Apostles, and between the seventy palm-trees there, and the seventy disciples, x. 1; "I beheld Satan fall from heaven," 18; the parable of the good Samaritan spiritualized, 31; Martha's "much serving" rebuked, 34; on xi. 33; the Christian's *barns*, xii. 18; ἀφίεται ὑμῖν ὁ οἶκος ὑμῶν, xiii. 35; "he that is on the housetop," &c., xvii. 31; "there will the eagles be gathered together," 37; the Christian Sabbath how denominated by the Hebrews, xviii. 12; the appellation of διδάσκαλε addressed by the rich man to our Lord, as to a teacher merely human, 18; the case of Zacchæus spiritualized, xix. 4; the sin and doom of the unprofitable servant, 20; "If they do these things in a green tree," &c., xxiii. 31; why our Lord chose to die by crucifixion, and publicly, at the Feast of the Passover, 33; refutation of the Sabellian heresy, J. i. 3; "and I knew him not," 33; danger of the Apollinarian heresy, iii. 13; refutation of the Manichæan heresy, 14; the Gospel not contrary to the Law, *ib.*; the Cross the glory of Christ, *ib.*; reason of the permission of John the Baptist's early death, 24; Christ the bridegroom of the Church, 29; "He must increase," 30; our Lord's command to his disciples respecting their intercourse with the Samaritans, iv. 9; "living water," 14; God to be "worshipped in spirit and in truth," 24; the force of κομψότερον, 50; the miraculous cure at the pool of Bethesda, vi. 1; God still works on the Sabbath, 2; God draws all who are willing to come, vi. 44; "I am the bread of life," 48; "this is a hard saying," 60; "What and if ye shall see the Son of man ascend up where he was before?" 62; the Apostles could, the Prophets could not, give to others grace from the Holy Ghost, vii. 39; "I am from above," viii. 23; "When ye have lifted up the Son of man," &c., 28; "ye cannot hear my word," 43; the devil is the father of falsehood, 44; "Abraham rejoiced to see my day," 56; "Jesus wept," xi. 35; "Now is my soul troubled," xii. 27; the *reign* of Satan brought to a close, 30, 31; Love, the badge of Christ's disciples, xiii. 35; "He will bring all things to your remembrance, whatsoever I have said unto you," xiv. 26; the Apostles pass from a state of sorrow to one of rejoicing, xvi. 21; "My kingdom is not of this world," xviii. 36; "He that hath delivered me unto thee hath the greater sin," xix. 11; "bearing his cross," 17; on our Lord's entering the chamber, "the doors being shut," xx. 19; why the Holy Ghost was given at the Feast of Pentecost, A. ii. 1; "tongues of fire," what they typified, 3; Paul's fasting during his blindness, ix. 9; takes the Nazarite's vow, xxi. 24; the "seven days," explained, 27; comment on 1 Th. iv. 6; on iv. 17; on 1 C. xii. 23; 2 C. i. 6 explained; on ver. 19; on the danger of disconnecting the *means of Grace* from the *Letter of Scripture*, iii. 6; ὁ Πατήρ τῶν οἰκτιρῶν, i. 3; on the glorified body, v. 3; on xiii. 1; interpretation of R. iv. 2; we are more blessed in and by Christ than we are injured in and by Adam, R. v. 15; explanation of ix. 3; example of St. Paul's prudence in government, C. iv. 17; on excommunication, 1 Ti. i. 20; on Tit. ii. 13; on Regeneration in Baptism, iii. 5.

Thomas Aquinas, anecdote of, A. iii. 6; observations on free-will, iv. 28.

Tichonius, his exegetical canons, M. ii. 15, note 6.

Townson, Dr., proves that St. Mark was conversant with St. Matthew's Gospel; St. Luke with the Gospels of both; and St. John with those of the other three, L. i. 1; he also shows that in the Old Testament portions of the earlier books have been embodied in the later ones, 3.

Valckenaer, recommends to students of the Greek Testament the assiduous study of the Septuagint, Part i. p. xiv., note 2; observations on the trivial nature of the verbal discrepancies of our MSS. of the New Testament, xxi., note 2; on the Alexandrine forms of the Greek language, M. vii. 13; on the pro-

phesy of Zacharias, L. i. 76; the prophetic notion of the Messiah, 78; διερρήγνυτο, "in eo erat ut rumperetur," v. 6; on the meaning of the term ἀλάστρον, vii. 37; notice of the Μεταμορφώσεις of Antonius Liberalis, who borrowed much from Nicander's Ἑτεροιούμενα, to which Ovid is indebted, ix. 29; rendering of ἐξοδος, 31; τὸ πρόσωπον ἐστήριξε, explained, 51; περιεσπᾶτο, x. 40; μενούργε, 'Quin imo,' xi. 28; on the ellipsis μᾶλλον, xv. 7; "the fatted calf," 23; on St. Luke's use of the word ἀπολύω, as applied to *divorce*, xvi. 18; on the use and force of the particle ἄν in the Septuagint, xvii. 6; the deportment of the Pharisee and of the Publican in the parable, xviii. 11; ἴσθι ἔχων, xix. 17; the Gospel of St. Luke and the Acts of the Apostles *one* work divided into *two* parts, A. i. 1; distinction between τεκμήρια and σημεία, 3; on the term Κύριος as used by the LXX, and applied in the New Test. to our Lord, 6; ἀτενίζω, 10; iii. 12; ἅπαντες, ii. 1; τὸ ὑπερφῶν, *ib.*; διαμεριζόμεναι, 3; ἐκδόσσε, *ib.*; ἀποφθέγγεσθαι, 4; διαλέκτω, *ib.*; the Apostles knew but one *dialect* of one *language*, *ib.*; on 46; Julian's paronomasia retorted, viii. 30; τῆς ὁδοῦ, ix. 2; ἀκούειν τῆς φωνῆς and ἀκούειν τὴν φωνήν, ix. 7; ἡρχόμεν from ἔρχομαι, rare, 17; the force of συμβιβάζων, 22; καλῶς ἐποίησας, x. 33; ῥῆμα and λόγος, 36; on the reading Ἑλληνιστὰς, xi. 20; the force of δὴ, xii. 2; χειροτονεῖν, xiv. 23; ἀλισθήματα, xv. 20; note on xvi. 12; explanation of a difficult passage in Martial bearing upon the interpretation of xvi. 13; παρεβιάζετο, 15; on xvii. 14,—"to go as it were to the sea," δεισιδαιμονεστέρους, 22; Aquila = Onkelos, xviii. 1.

Victor, of Antioch, on the genuineness of the last verses of St. Mark, Mk. xvi. 9—20.

Victorinus, on the word παρασκευῇ, M. xxvii. 62.

Vitringa, on the Mosaic institution of divorce, M. xix. 7; the striking resemblance of the rich fool to Nabal, L. xii. 20.

Vorstius, on πιστεύειν ἐν, and πιστεύειν εἰς, M. xviii. 6; J. xiv. 1; on καθῆσθαι ἐπὶ πρόσωπον τῆς γῆς, L. xxi. 35; ἐπιθυμία ἐπεθύμησα, xxii. 15; γέννημα, *ib.*; ξύλον = γυν, xxiii. 31; "If they do these things in a green tree," &c., *ib.*; on "to come into the world," J. i. 9; πᾶν—μή, vi. 39; διδακτοὶ Θεοῦ, 45; οὐ μὴ εἰς τὸν αἰῶνα, xi. 26; δωρεάν, xv. 22.

Wake, Archbishop, on the reverence due to the Scripture expositions of the Apostolic Fathers, Pt. i., Preface, p. xiv.

Waterland, Dr., on the reverence due to the expositions of the most ancient of the Fathers, Pt. i., Preface, p. xv.; on the Λόγος, J. i. 1; exposition of St. John's Proemium, *ib.*; refutes Whitby, v. 19; on allegorical interpretation, G. iv. 24; on 1 C. x. 16; the doctrinal use of the Sacraments, *ib.*; 16—21 explained; on the difference between μετέχειν and κοινωνεῖν, 17; evidence of the doctrine of the Trinity from the Baptismal Formula, 2 C. xiii. 13; God alone to be worshipped, R. i. 25; on the difference between Justification and Sanctification, R. iii. 26; Justification by Faith, v. 1; on ix. 3; the Divinity of Christ affirmed, 5; on Distinctions of Sacrifice, xii. 1; on the use and value of Ecclesiastical Antiquity, 6; on the duty of shunning those who impugn the fundamentals of the Gospel, xvi. 17; the true sense of the text defended against the Arians, E. iii. 8; exposition of C. i. 15; on the πλήρωμα, ii. 9; reply to the Arian exposition of P. ii. 6; on the Divinity of Christ proved from his claim to be worshipped, Heb. i. 6; on "We have an altar," xiii. 10; exposition of 10—16; on E. i. 22; on Tit. ii. 13; on Regeneration in Baptism, iii. 5; "baptism saves," 1 P. iii. 21; on 2 P. ii. 2; design and contents of the First Epistle of St. John, Introduction to the Epistle; proemium, 1 J. i. 1; St. John, though loving and gentle, sternly rebukes Heresy, 2 J. 10, 11; on Rev. xix. 17.

Wetstein, on the character of Herod the tetrarch, L. xiii. 32; the fords of the Jordan, L. xvii. 11; on the parable of the ten pieces of money, xix. 12; ἐξεκρέματο, 48; on the origin and import of the term "Paradise," xxiii. 42, 43; its figurative meaning, *ib.*; τί ἐμοὶ καὶ σοὶ, J. ii. 4.

Zumpt, on the correct interpretation of L. ii. 2; evidence produced by him in proof that Quirinus was governor of Syria at the time of the Nativity, *ib.*

Staatsbibliothek
München

WORKS BY CHR. WORDSWORTH, D.D.

CANON OF WESTMINSTER.

THE GREEK TESTAMENT,

With Introductions, Notes, and Indexes. 2 Vols. 4l.

Any Part may be had separately, as follows:—

I. THE FOUR GOSPELS. *Third Edition. 1l. 1s.* II. THE ACTS OF THE APOSTLES. *Second Edition. 10s. 6d.* III. ST. PAUL'S EPISTLES. *Second Edition. 1l. 11s. 6d.* IV. THE GENERAL EPISTLES, THE BOOK OF REVELATION, AND INDEXES TO THE WHOLE WORK. *Second Edition. 1l. 1s.*

The TEXT of ST. PAUL'S EPISTLES, arranged in *Chronological order*, has been printed in the same *large type* as these Volumes, price 5s. 6d.

THEOPHILUS ANGLICANUS; or, Instruction concerning the Principles of the Church Universal and the Church of England. *Eighth Edition. 8s. 6d.*

ELEMENTS OF INSTRUCTION ON THE CHURCH; being an Abridgment of the above. *Second Edition. 2s.*

MANUAL ON CONFIRMATION, with Prayers. 1s. *Third Edition.*

The above three works may be had at the National Society's Depository, Westminster, with an allowance to Subscribers.

ON THE INSPIRATION OF THE BIBLE. Five Lectures delivered at Westminster Abbey. 3s. 6d.

ON THE INTERPRETATION OF THE BIBLE. Five Lectures delivered at Westminster Abbey. 3s. 6d.

S. HIPPOLYTUS AND THE CHURCH OF ROME in the beginning of the Third Century, from the newly-discovered "Philosophumena." 8s. 6d.

LETTERS TO M. GONDON, Author of "Mouvement Religieux en Angleterre," "Conversion de Cent Cinquante Ministres Anglicans," &c., on the DESTRUCTIVE CHARACTER of the CHURCH of ROME, in RELIGION and POLITY. *Third Edition. 7s. 6d.*

SEQUEL TO THE ABOVE. *Second Edition. 6s. 6d.*

ON THE CANON OF HOLY SCRIPTURE, and on the APOCRYPHA. Twelve Discourses, preached before the University of Cambridge. With a copious Appendix of Ancient Authorities. *Second Edition. 9s.*

LECTURES ON THE APOCALYPSE. Preached before the University of Cambridge. *Third Edition. 10s. 6d.*

A HARMONY OF THE APOCALYPSE, Containing a revised Translation of that Book, with Notes. 4to. 5s.

THE APOCALYPSE; or, Book of Revelation. The original Greek Text, with MSS. Collations and Fac-similes of Ancient MSS.; an English Translation and Harmony, with Notes; and an Appendix to the Hulsean Lectures on the Apocalypse. 10s. 6d.

BABYLON; or, the Question considered, "Is the CHURCH of ROME the BABYLON of the APOCALYPSE?" *Third Edition. 3s.*

THEOCRITUS, Codicum MSS. ope recensitus et emendatus, cum Indicibus locupletissimis. 10s. 6d.

ATHENS AND ATTICA. Journal of a Residence there. *Third Edition. Crown 8vo. 8s. 6d.*

GREECE, Historical, Pictorial, and Descriptive. *Third Edition. Royal 8vo. 1l. 8s.*

INEDITED ANCIENT WRITINGS, Copied from the Walls of POMPEII, with Fac-similes. 2s. 6d.

CORRESPONDENCE OF RICHARD BENTLEY, D.D., Master of Trinity College, Cambridge. 2 vols. 2l. 2s.

MEMOIRS OF WILLIAM WORDSWORTH. 2 vols. 30s.

THE HON. MR. JUSTICE PARK'S LIFE of MR. WILLIAM STEVENS. *A New Edition, with additions. 4s. 6d.*

A DIARY IN FRANCE; mainly on Topics concerning Education and the Church. *Second Edition. 5s. 6d.*

NOTES AT PARIS. 1854. 4s.

LATINÆ GRAMMATICÆ RUDIMENTA; or, KING EDWARD the SIXTH's Grammar. In usum Scholarum. *Thirteenth Edition. 3s. 6d.*

KING EDWARD VIth's FIRST LATIN BOOK. The LATIN ACCIDENCE; including a Short Syntax and Prosody, with an ENGLISH TRANSLATION, for Junior Classes. *Third Edition. 12mo. 2s.*

LETTER TO A FRIEND, on the proposed Repeal of the XXIXth Canon, which forbids Parents to be Sponsors to their Children. 6d.

THE CHRISTIAN VOLUNTEER. A Sermon preached in Westminster Abbey. 3d.

ON A PROPOSED SUBDIVISION OF DIOCESES. 1s.

REPLY TO PROFESSOR JOWETT'S ESSAY on the INTERPRETATION of SCRIPTURE. 2s. 6d.

Also, by the same,

OCCASIONAL SERMONS PREACHED IN WESTMINSTER ABBEY.

Contents of the several Numbers :—

FIRST SERIES. Third Edition.

1. COUNSELS AND CONSOLATIONS IN TIMES OF HERESY AND SCHISM.
2. ON PLEAS ALLEGED FOR SEPARATION FROM THE CHURCH.
3. THE DOCTRINE OF BAPTISM WITH REFERENCE TO THE OPINION OF PREVENIENT GRACE.
4. AN ENQUIRY—Whether the Baptismal Offices of the Church of England may be interpreted in a Calvinistic Sense? Part I. The Doctrine of Scripture compared with the Tenets of Calvin.
5. THE ENQUIRY CONTINUED—Whether the Baptismal Offices of the Church of England were framed by Persons holding Calvinistic Opinions; and whether they may be interpreted in a Hypothetical Sense? Part II. Argument from Internal Evidence.
6. THE ENQUIRY CONTINUED. Part III. Argument from External Evidence.
7. THE CHURCH OF ENGLAND IN 1711 AND 1850.
8. THE CHURCH OF ENGLAND AND THE CHURCH OF ROME IN 1850. Conclusion.

SECOND SERIES. Second Edition.

9. DIOTREPHES AND ST. JOHN; On the Claim set up by the Bishop of Rome to exercise Jurisdiction in England and Wales, by erecting therein Episcopal Sees.
10. ST. PETER AT ANTIOCH, AND THE ROMAN PONTIFF IN ENGLAND.
11. THE CHRISTIAN SOLDIER, A CHRISTIAN BUILDER.
12. ON A RECENT PROPOSAL OF THE CHURCH OF ROME TO MAKE A NEW ARTICLE OF FAITH. (The Immaculate Conception. See also No. 43.)
13. ON THE AUTHORITY AND USES OF CHURCH SYNODS.
- 14 & 15. ON SECESSIONS TO THE CHURCH OF ROME. 2s.
16. ON THE PRIVILEGES AND DUTIES OF THE CHRISTIAN LAITY. Conclusion.

THIRD SERIES. Second Edition.

- 17 & 18. ON THE GREAT EXHIBITION OF 1851.
19. ON SECULAR EDUCATION.

20. ON THE OFFICE OF THE HOLY SPIRIT IN EDUCATION.
21. ON THE USE OF THE CHURCH CATECHISM IN NATIONAL EDUCATION.
22. ON AN EDUCATION RATE.
23. ON INTELLECTUAL DISPLAY IN EDUCATION.
24. EARLY INSTRUCTION.

FOURTH SERIES. Second Edition.

- 25—33. ON THE HISTORY OF THE CHURCH OF IRELAND.

FIFTH SERIES.

34. RELIGIOUS RESTORATION IN ENGLAND—Introductory: On National Sins, Judgments, and Duties.
35. CENSUS OF RELIGIOUS WORSHIP.
36. THE EPISCOPATE. On Additional Sees.
37. THE DIACONATE.
38. TITHES, ENDOWMENTS, AND MAINTENANCE OF THE CLERGY.
39. ON CHURCH RATES.
40. ON DIVORCE.
41. RESTORATION OF HOLY MATRIMONY.
42. HOPES OF RELIGIOUS RESTORATION. Conclusion.

SIXTH SERIES.

43. ON THE IMMACULATE CONCEPTION. See No. 12.
44. THE CHRISTIAN SUNDAY.
45. THE ARMIES ON WHITE HORSES; OR, THE SOLDIER'S RETURN.
- 46—49. ON THE ACTS OF THE APOSTLES AS APPLICABLE TO THE PRESENT TIMES.
50. ON MARRIAGE WITH A PERSON DIVORCED.

SEVENTH SERIES.

51. A PLEA FOR INDIA.
52. ON THE ADDITIONAL SERVICE IN WESTMINSTER ABBEY.
53. ON "THE STATE SERVICES."
54. ON THE INSPIRATION OF THE OLD TESTAMENT.
55. ON MARRIAGE WITH A DECEASED WIFE'S SISTER.
56. ON THE ATONEMENT.
57. ELIJAH AN EXAMPLE FOR ENGLAND.

* * * Any Volume, or any Number, may be had separately.

BOUND BY
EDMONDS & REMNANTS
LONDON

Wordsworth, Christopher

The New Testament of our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ In the original
Greek. With introd. and notes by Chr[istopher] Wordsworth

Bd.: 4

London 1862

4 B.gr. 200 h-4

urn:nbn:de:bvb:12-bsb10223933-8